

A TEXT-BOOK

OF

PATHOLOGY

FOR STUDENTS OF MEDICINE

BY

J. GEORGE ADAMI, M.A., M.D., F.R.S.

STRATHCONA PROFESSOR OF PATHOLOGY, MCGILL UNIVERSITY, AND ADVISORY PATHOLOGIST TO THE MONTREAL GENERAL AND THE ROYAL VICTORIA HOSPITALS, MONTREAL, CANADA; LATE FELLOW OF JESUS COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE, ENGLAND

AND

JOHN McCRAE, M.D., M.R.C.P. (LOND.)

LECTURER IN PATHOLOGY AND CLINICAL MEDICINE, MCGILL UNIVERSITY, MONTREAL; SENIOR ASSISTANT PHYSICIAN, ROYAL VICTORIA HOSPITAL; SOMETIME PROPESSOR OF PATHOLOGY, UNIVERSITY OF VERMONT; LATE FELLOW IN BIOLOGY, UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO, TORONTO, CANADA

ILLUSTRATED WITH 304 ENGRAVINGS AND 11 COLORED PLATES



LEA & FEBIGER
PHILADELPHIA AND NEW YORK
1912

MEDICAL LIBRARY, McGILL UNIVERSITY, MONTREAL, Canada Entered according to the Act of Congress, in the year 1912, by LEA & FEBIGER,

in the Office of the Librarian of Congress. All rights reserved.

то

THE MEMORY

OF

WYATT JOHNSTON



PREFACE

It will at first glance be thought that two large publications upon the same subject by the same author within a relatively brief space of time must be alike. We venture to think that the reader will not find in this work any lengthy excerpt from "The Principles of Pathology," but on the contrary will find considerable evidence of modification. Its birth, however, in a certain sense may be laid at the door of the previous work, to be presently explained.

Long ago one of the authors of this work was approached by its publishers, and he agreed to write a text-book of pathology of some seven hundred pages, a book, in fact, the size of this lying open before The result of many years of writing and re-writing was a mass of material sufficient to make two volumes each of one thousand pages or thereabouts, one upon General Pathology, the other in collaboration with our colleague Professor A. G. Nicholls upon Systemic and Special Pathology. The scheme and scope of the manuscript were not what the publishers had sought; nevertheless with rare good-will Messrs. Lea & Febiger undertook publication, and doing this took an undoubted risk. The ordinary medical student could scarce be expected to acquire, still less to master, the two ponderous tomes; it was problematic whether the more ambitious and advanced student and the practitioner would be attracted to them. Fortunately, these two volumes of the "Principles" were well received, and when after the isone of a second edition Messrs. Lea & Febiger asked that the original contract be fulfilled and that we afford a text-book which should within the covers of a single volume contain the gist of our subject, the loyal upport given by them to the previous undertaking rendered it difficult to refuse. Their desire was seconded by appeals from colleagues in not a few schools for something which would embody the main features of the former work without its bulk.

Let us confess that we found ourselves in a quandary. We were averse to what might so easily become an act of commonplace book making. In the larger work a conscientious endeavor has been made to afford a due and ordered presentation of the subject matter. Merely to epitomize would be to produce a "cram" book. On the other hand the larger work represented our matured conclusions regarding the respective value to the student of general, systemic, and special pathology, and upon the orderly treatment of the different sections. From that order we have seen no reason to depart. Superficially, therefore, this text-book must follow the lines of the "Principles," must run the danger of appearing to be an abbreviation of the same, but must at the same time be not an epitome of the different sections, but a selection and dwelling upon what we regard as most important for the student; and this when the subject is so vast and the number of mere facts and names which it has been the custom to expect the student to acquire is so considerable, that the text-book of pathology of the past has often been little beyond a catalogue of terms with the briefest

linkage of connecting letter-press.

But facts and phenomena and their names are only the bricks with which the science of medicine has been built, and is still in the process of building. We have to develop not the mere hodman, whose virtue depends upon the number of bricks he can carry, but the engineerarchitect who, acquainted with materials and their employment, knows the use of each particular room or passage, knows why this construction is called for here, that material there. If our building be somewhat lacking in the elaborateness of its decoration, we trust that the foundations have been so devised that the rooms above will easily support what may eventually be placed within them, and that with no danger of collapse. It is not the number of unit bricks that is of importance so much as a knowledge of the principles of construction. To be brief, we have endeavored first and foremost to make clear and intelligible what is known concerning the deeper meaning of morbid states, and have not hesitated to sacrifice lists of data and their names. The advanced pathologist may look in vain for information that will add to his knowledge in particular subjects; a specialist is certain to find his particular specialty inadequately treated as regards detail; but to him who says that much has been omitted we dare reply that much has been included. The all-important matter is to provide and familiarize the student with the plan and working drawings of our science; once he has these in his head it is a comparatively simple matter for him to pigeon-hole mentally new facts into their proper places as they come pouring in upon him in the wards and dead house, in his reading and lectures.

This has been our aim and this is our apology for the present work.

Those familiar with the previous volumes will recognize that we have departed little from the teaching and order of the first, that upon General Pathology, save that there has been added an elementary chapter upon pain and its significance; on the other hand, from the very fact that it is difficult to be original in the treatment of special pathology we have labored with greater effort to give an adequate presentation of our second part within the space at our disposal, and to that end have written it afresh with little reference to the earlie With like ends in view we have discarded most of the it trations employed in the larger work, introducing some two hundred original engravings from drawings made by Miss E. S. Carrington from the material in the McGill Medical Museum and in our department, and from the collections of our recent Meagues Professor Oskar Klotz, now of Pittsburgh, and Professor L. Thea, now of Harvard. To these, to our colleagues Drs. Colin K. Russei, Hanford McKee, and Hamilton White, for their advice with regard to special subjects, to Dr. Maude Abbott, Curator of the McGill Medical Museum, to Dr. MacLachlin, of Pittsburgh, and not least to our publishers, we would here express our sincere thanks for assistance so willingly rendered.

J. G. A.

J. McC.

MONTREAL, 1912.

t

ı

e

e

o

t

t

h

18 e

r-

S

n

ıt 1it of 80 re at ot d 1ar VS \mathbf{d} . th iis nm

k.



CONTENTS

PART I GENERAL PATHOLOGY

CHAPTER I

Introductory

Cells and Tissues		17
C	CHAPTER II	
THE C	Causes of Diseases	
Disease of Post-natal Acqui Extrinsic Intoxications—Para nal Secretory, Autolysis, and	Disease—Monstrosities and Abnormalities—irement—Physical and Chemical Causes—asitic Causes—Intrinsic Intoxications, Inter-Impaired Metabolism—Predisposition and	55
C	HAPTER III	
The Morbi	D AND REACTIVE PROCESSES	
	-Immunity-Syncope, Shock, and Collapse	118
C	HAPTER IV	
THE PROG	GRESSIVE TISSUE CHANGES	
Overgrowth — Regeneration — To Proper, Teratomas, Teratoble	ransplantation — Metaplasia — The Tumors astomas, and Blastomas—Cysts	185

CHAPTER V

THE REGRESSIVE TISSUE CHANGES

 $Normal\ Histolysis-The\ Degenerations\ and\ Infiltrations-Necrosis-Death \qquad . \qquad 296$

PART H

SPECIAL AND SYSTEMIC PATHOLOGY

CHAPTER VI

THE	CARDIOVASCULAR	System
4 11174	CARDIOVANCULAR	

The Blood -Quantitative and Qualitative Changes-Thrombosis, Embolism,	
Hemorrhages—The Lymphatic System and Edema—The Heart—General	
Considerations and Special Pathology—The Arteries—Capillaries and	
Veins-The Lymphatic Vessels-Blood-forming Organs, The Lymph	
Nodes, Spleen, and Bone Marrow-Certain Organs of Internal Secretion	
Modifying the Blood, the Adrenals, Thyroid, and Parathyroids	333

CHAPTER VII

THE RESPIRATORY SYSTEM

General	Considerations—The	Nose-Pharynx	and	Tonsil:-Larvnx	and	
Trac	chea-Bronchi-Lungs-	-Pleura-Media	stinun	-Thymns		497

CHAPTER VIII

THE NERVOUS SYSTEM

General	Considerations—The	Brain—The	Spinal	Cord—The	Meninges	
	cripheral Nerves—The					475

CHAPTER IX

THE DIGESTIVE SYSTEM

The	Mouth	and	Teeth—Esophagus—Storeach—Intestines—Peritoneum	
	Liver(i	all-bl	adder and Ducts—Pancreas	59

CHAPTER X

THE URINARY SYSTEM

The Urinary	Function—The	Kidney-Ureters-Bladder.				599
	* (11) TILL	timely creters—madder,				

CHAPTER XI

THE REPRODUCTIVE SYSTEM

The	Male	Sexual	Organs—The	Female	Sexual	Organs-The	Products	of	
	Conce	ption, Pl	lacenta, and Co	ord—The	Mamm	nary Gland .			630

CHAPTER XII

THE MOTOR AND TEGUMENTARY SYSTEMS

The	Museles—Tendons	and	Ter	ido	n	She	ath	Ę	Bur	BE-	-T	he	Bos	nes-	-T	he	
	Joints-The Skin, Ha																673

A TEXT-BOOK OF PATHOLOGY

PART I GENERAL PATHOLOGY

CHAPTER I

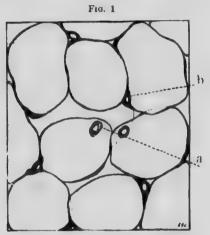
INTRODUCTORY: CELLS AND TISSUES

THE HISTOLOGY OF THE CELL

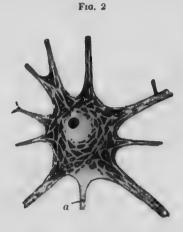
THE human body is made up wholly of cells and the products of cells; it takes origin from a cell, and carries on its life by cell activity; even its food is not available for its use save by the intermediation of It is, therefore, reasonable that in seeking to understand the diseases of the human body one should study the diseases of the individual cell, and not its disease only, but its health. This first chapter, therefore, is devoted to the properties of the cell, and attempts to show how it is constituted, how cell interacts on cell, how a community of cells forms an organ, how community reacts upon community—in short, how the cell is at once a unit and a necessary part of a great aggregation of units. If the cell be regarded as an individual, it will be seen that, like a human being, it is born, grows, eats, casts out excretion, rests, is active, becomes useful, learns the work it is destined to do, fills its place in the community, falls sick, recovers, meets with accidents, is set upon by enemies in the shape of infections, enemies which it conquers or by which it is overcome, grows old, dies, and has its place taken by another like it. So far there is a parallel between a man and a cell; and it may be carried farther. The statement is made upon good authority that no man liveth unto himself, because a man's deeds react not only upon himself but upon others, in however indirect a way; so the cell, as part of a community (the organ), cannot withdraw itself from communication with its fellows, but will bear its share of the labor of the organ, and its ill or well-being will react upon the cells that are near it or that depend in any way upon it.

99

The cell in health lies within the province of the physiologist; but the pathologist, too, must understand, as well as he can, its properties; especially must be attempt to know the cell's abnormal states—its overfed state and its starvation, its over-activity or its sluggishness, the cell attacked, damaged, killed, or the cell attacked, resistant, triumphant, the cell in the growth of its youth, or in the atrophy of its age, the cell in its life and the cell in its death; all these he must study if he is to understand the cell and its place in the community of the organ, for with such knowledge only can he gain a sound comprehension of the disturbed states of the organs, and of the body as a whole.



Vacuolation of nuclei of fat cells. Fat cells of retroperitoneal tissue stained by hematoxylin, and examined under the high power, to show the nuclear vacuoles, characteristic of this order of cell. a, nucleus seen from above; b, seen in profile.



Motor nerve cell from ventral horn of spinal cord of rabbit. The angular and spindle-shaped Nissl bodies are well shown. a, axone. (After Nissl.)

The Constituents of the Cell.—The animal cell consists of two main parts, the nucleus and the cell body, and even if it cannot be agreed that there is in all animal and vegetable cells, a nucleus in definite form, we can at least, say that there is nuclear and cytoplasmic material. In the cells of man the nucleus has a definite form, generally round or oval; a nuclear membrane can frequently be made out, and inside this the substance shows an alveolar or netted arrangement. The nuclear matter can be demonstrated to consist of (1) the linin or achromatic (non-staining) network in which is deposited (2) the chromatin—the material which is stainable by nuclear dyes. In the spaces is (3) the nuclear fluid. Not always distinguishable are the following: (a) The nucleolus, an accumulation of nuclear material which stains differently to the nucleus at large, and is presumed to b of a different, or at least, temporarily different composition; (b) vacuoles, which are rare, but may be seen in the nuclei of fat cells, (see Fig. 1) and

(c) crystals. The last two are products of the activity of nuclear metabolism.

The type cell has but a single nucleus; but at times two or many nuclei may be present, a condition which may be due, on the one hand, to division of the nucleus with failure of the cytoplasm to divide, or on the other, to fusion of separate cells. Both processes evidently occur,

as will be discussed when dealing with giant cells.

Although we say that the nuclear material is confined to the nucleus proper, at times it is found that particles of chromatin appear in the cytoplasm, and there is evidence to prove that these have been discharged from the nucleus; it is of interest to note that many so-called intracellular parasites—notably, "cancer parasites"—are evidently such masses, as again are the Nissl or tigroid bodies (Fig. 2) of the cytoplasm of the nerve cell.

The cell substance gives evidence of structure, to the extent that one sees a condensation of the cytoplasm at the periphery, which condensed plasm is designated ectoplasm and passes insensibly into

the main mass of the endoplasm. The constitution of this endoplasm is a matter of debate, but it may be said to consist of (1) a reticulum, the cytoplasm, in the meshes of which lies (2) the cell cap; there are also (3) the paraplasmic substances. The paraplasm includes (a) food particles ingested, foreign or excrementitious particles that, being unassimilable, are to be cast out; (b) crystals or granules which have been manufactured by the cell; (c) the fluid contents of vacuoles, and (d) inactive substances laid down as a frame work in the cell, such as fibrils or



Fig. 3

Cell bridges of "prickle cells" of epidermis (From a photograph by Schridde.)

calcium deposits. The cytoplasm is the active agent among there although it must not be forgotten that there is also an active part in the nuclear material. Altmann has pointed out the existence of fine granules which are called by his name, but of which the significance is as yet not understood. Lastly, at certain times specially connected with cell division, and preceding this process, a centrosome appears which originates from the cytoplasm. From this centrosome run fine rays of the cytoplasm, and before nuclear division occurs, it divides. As to its function, there is no agreement.

Cell Connections.—There is a definite connection between cells, although it is not an easy thing to prove; the botanists first were able to show that fine connections of protoplasm bridge the space between cell and cell, and the cog-wheel appearance of the so-called prickle cells of the epidermis is due to fine protoplasmic extensions running from one to another, while the endothelial cells that line the blood-vessels have like junctions. We can even go so far as to observe that

but nes; -its ess, tri-

udy the enole.

horn gular s are Jissl.)

nain reed orm, rial. und side The or the

erial b b oles,

the

the

and

in the eggs of sea-urchins, when the cells cleave one from another in the 8- and 16-cell stage, fine protoplasmic threads reach across the intervening space, and, in these, granules can be seen to stream from one cell to another. The detached cell is the exception, not the rule. The leukocyte, it is to be noted, is a wholly independent cell, but if we follow the leukocyte downward into the lower invertebrates, we find that the corresponding cells have series of connecting processes. The nerve cell or neurone is, according to present teaching, wholly detached, at least from other neurones. Granting this, we may say that the individual is not a colony of separate units, as blocks in a pavement, but a connected whole in which the individuals are, in general, semidetached.

The Significance of the Cell.—The cell's most noteworthy character is its minute size; few cells are large enough to be seen by the unaided eye; when they are, we find one of the following circumstances:

1. The cell may contain much stored-up food material, as in the ova of many species; the cytoplasm forms a thin skin over the food material or yolk, and in this "skin" lies the nucleus.





Cell bridges of vascular endothelium. (After Kolossow.)

2. The cell may have its protoplasm developed into radiating processes, as in the infusoria; the nucleus and every part of the cell remains close to the surrounding medium.

3. There may be great enlargement of the cell associated with the development of multiple nuclei.

It will be noticed that in all these cells, large though they become, every particle of the cytoplasm is near to the surface, if not to the nucleus, and that there is a relationship as regards size between the nucleus, the cytoplasm, and the surrounding medium; this relationship is determined by the size of the nucleus. The nucleus is the dominant part of the cell, governing the cytoplasm, and this governance must depend on the contact of nuclear matter and cytoplasm; so that the nucleus which has the largest surface relative to its mass, will, other things being equal, be exerting the greatest effect upon the cytoplasm, will be the most active. If the nucleus be very large it is conceivable that centrally situated nuclear material may be comparatively inactive,

so that we may say that the small cell, whose nuclear mass is small compared with its surface, will be active, and fitted to survive, while the cell whose nucleus is of large mass and small surface, relatively, will be compelled to divide, and so increase its nuclear surface or be handicapped in the race. This is the principes on which is developed the multinucleate cell.

If this be true of the interaction between nucleus and cytoplasm, it holds also for the cytoplasm and the surrounding medium. external surface of cytoplasm can be greatly increased by prolongation into processes, but with the disadvantage that some of the cytoplasm is far removed from the nucleus; the most economical form is the spherical. This indeed is the form naturally assumed by a semifluid or fluid mass suspended in another fluid under the influence of molecular interaction and surface tension. We now recognize with increasing force that this surface tension is of basal importance in cell activities. As the cell absorbs material and the cytoplasm increases, the surface becomes less, relative to the increasing mass, and the efficiency of the cytoplasm with reference to the surrounding medium becomes less. The cytoplasm can now increase its surface only by division, and thus the multinucleate cell leads to the multicellular organism. The multicellular organism is thus to be regarded not as a fusion of separate individuals, but rather as the optimum amount of protoplasmic matter of any particular order capable of economic existence as a single mass in any particular environment, the maximal activity of such protoplasm being attained by nuclear and cell division.

THE PHYSIOLOGY OF THE CELL

The views that we state regarding the nucleus as the dominating part of the cell are not everywhere taught at the present day. But it is fully established that, without a nucleus, growth and reproduction of the cell cannot occur. The cell deprived of its nucleus can be the seat of certain metabolic activities, but the cytoplasm is progressively used up and is not renewed, there being no cytoplasmic or nuclear material formed. On the other hand, the nucleus without the cytoplasm is equally incapable of regenerating the cell, for it has been proved that there is a minimal limit to the amount of cytoplasm necessary for its combined existence. If there be less cytoplasm than this, no growth or regeneration can occur, and we add this statement to what we have already said of the dominance of the nucleus, that nucleus and cytoplasm are equally essential, though not of equal value to the cell. The nucleus cannot treat directly with the medium around the cellbut requires the intermediation of the cytoplasm for its vital processes. We need only refer to the part played by the nucleus in cell division, to the series of processes by which it ensures that each daughter cell obtains its share of the nuclear material, to the part it plays in fertiliza-

the food

er in

the

from

rule.

ut if

, we

sses.

rolly

Say

in a

e, in

acter

ided

procell

the

ome, leus, leus, eterpart pend cleus

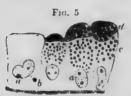
ings

will

that

tive,

tion and the reproduction of the individual, and we shall refer in some detail to the great activity of the nucleus in cell metabolism. In basing its dominance upon these facts, we do not lose sight of the fact that the cytoplasm is able to manifest certain definite, if lower, vital activi-



Relationship of nuclear plasmasomes to symogen granules and secretory substances of secreting cell: a. intranuclear plasmasomes (nucleolar bodies); b, granule (extranuclear plasmasome or chromidial body) in cytoplasm. near nucleus, having same staining reaction, and evidently discharged from the nucleus; c, conversion of same into more feebly staining secretory (presymogen) granules; d, further stage; symogen granules about to be discharged. (After Maximow)

ties, such as absorption, respiration, mobility, and contractility, and these independently of nuclear control.

The Part Played by the Nucleus in Metabolism.—The specific function of certain cells, especially certain secreting cells, seems to be governed largely by the nucleus. The calcareous frame of the foraminifera is not formed if the nucleus be absent; the amæba cannot fully digest, though it can kill living organisms if it have no nucleus; the formation of chitin in insect cells occurs only when the nucleus is present, and the nucleus is essential to the production of slime by

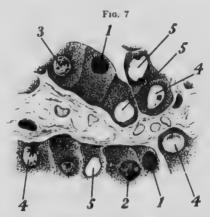
the amœba. In mucous goblet cells and in the cells of salivary glands the process of secretion is accompanied by and probably depends upon the separation from the nucleus, and that more especially through



Developing egg of $Antedon\ bifida$, showing extrusion of nuclear matter. Young occyte, the nuclear chromatin in the form of scattered branching threads. The deeply stained nucleolus is seen in the act of extruding spherules (chromidia) into the cytoplasm. \times 2000.

the nucleolus, of granules, or **chromidia**, which stain deeply at first while they lie near the nucleus, and stain less deeply as they move away, until they appear actually to become the secretory granules. The secretory granules are either actually extruded parts of the nucleus,

or the products of interaction between such extruded parts and certain constituents of the cell body. The "prezymogens" of the cell are given off from the nucleolus, and in the cytoplasm become zymogens, being again given off from the cytoplasm as specific secretions.



Section from the liver of a child that died from acute sepsis, to show various stages of karyolysis of the first order: 1, unaffected nucleus; 2 and 3, paler staining nuclei, with some swelling and diminution of chromatin; 4, nuclei still more swellen, the membrane only and an occasional nucleolar mass taking on the stain; 5, nuclei present as little more than unstained vericles.

The formation of fat in fat cells is evidently a nuclear process, for the vacuoles in their nuclei give the reaction for fat, and have sometimes been fixed at the moment of extrusion into the central fatty globule of the cell. It is long since the changes were described which

the nucleus undergoes in salivary cells during and after secretion, and nuclear alterations have been frequently observed in the nerve cell bodies of vertebrates after natural and experimentally produced fatigue. The changes in fatigue in the Nissl bodies, which are of nuclear origin, are very noticeable. In general, it may be said that nuclear changes within physiological limits, are manifested by (1) changes in size and (2) alteration in the amount, and (3) the disposition of the chromatin. In pathological conditions, still further grades of alteration are seen; such are reduction of the chromatin (karyolysis), abnormal



Leukocytes with disintegrating masses of nuclear material scattered through the cytoplasm (karyorrhexis).

arrangement of chromatin, cedema, and swelling of the nucleus, vacuolization, nuclear disintegration (karyorrhexis), and abnormal discharge of nuclear material into the cell substance.

Summary.—The following summary of our conception of the physiology of the cell may be given: the nucleus is the dominating part of the cell, which cannot act save in association with the cytoplasm;

iclear n the

ome

sing

that

tiviion.

and con-

tion sened carnot the th it ave itin

s is

by

nds ends

ugh

first love lles. eus, the nucleus initiates growth, reproduction, and often function, and reacts upon the cytoplasm, taking substances from it and yielding substances to it, but not acting directly upon the medium which surrounds the cell. The cytoplasm, on the other hand, takes up and acts upon matter from without, and gives out in turn other substances; this it does partly on its own account, and partly as intermediary for the nucleus. These acts it performs in the processes of absorption and respiration, and it can be mobile and contractile, as well. Lastly, we only mention another important class of activity, the production of organic ferments by cell metabolism; these can be discharged from the cell, and can act as intermediate bodies between the external medium and the cytoplasm, and can finally act, through the cytoplasm, upon the nucleus.

THE CHEMISTRY OF THE CELL

All cells possess, in common, water, lipoids, and proteins; the proteins, at least, are to be extracted from all cells as soon as they are dead, and exist in the living cell as such or as proteidogenous substances, which give origin to proteins. There are many other substances to be found in cells, such as salts, alcohols, carbohydrates, and so on, and many of these we regard as products of disintegration of proteins or as going to be built up into proteins. None of them, however, is common to all cells. Although proteins are dead, inert matter, and have undergone change before we obtain them, yet we believe they are bound up intimately with what we call "life," and when we refer to the active, living part of the coll as the biophoric molecule, we mean proteidogenous matter; that is to say, matter which by re-arrangement of its molecules or satisfaction of its affinities, becomes converted into proteins. The lipoids above mentioned are, as will be pointed out later, closely related to the proteins.

Proteins and Lipoids.—The Constitution of Proteins.—Proteins are complex compounds of nitrogen, carbon, oxygen, hydrogen, and sulphur; some, too, contain iron and phosphorus. So large and so complex are the molecules that in general they are incapable of crystallization and remain in a colloid state; some of the simplest proteins, it is true, are crystallizable, and can be obtained pure. The hemoglobins (in the plural, for they are multiple) have been analyzed, and samples from different species of animals have varied between C₆₈₀H₁₀₉₈N₂₁₀O₂₄₀FeS₂ and C₇₁₂H₁₁₃₀N₂₁₄O₂₄₅FeS₂; and they are among the simplest. The molecules of many proteins are far larger, and an average molecular weight for a protein has been estimated as 15,000; it can thus be understood that many protein molecules do not make their way through animal membrane, and do not diffuse.

^{1 3} oc, life; on en, to bear.

Classification. We speak of proteins as free or combined. Free proteins are the albumins (serum albumin of blood, egg albumin), the globulins (serum globulin, fibrinogen), and the vitellins (the "yolk plates" of egg yolk).

and

ing

HIF-

ets es:

for ind

lly,

ion om

nal

mi,

the

ib-

11)-

es,

on

m, ert

we

nd

ic1

ch

es, re,

re

ır:

ex

on

le,

he

m

Sz

he

ar T-

zh

The combined proteins are in combination with various bodies, including other proteins. Hemoglobin, for example, can be broken up into hematin or more accurately hemochromogen—an iron-containing body with protein characters—and globin, an albuminous matter which, according to Gamgee, is not a globulin. The nucleins are compounds of protein and nucleic acid, which, in turn, is a compound of phosphoric acid and the so-called nuclein bases; the nuclein bases are closely related to proteins. The nucleins, again, combine with free proteins to make the nucleoproteins. Yet other proteins combine with carbohydrates to make glycoproteins, important among which are the mucins.

It has been said that if individual specimens of proteins be analyzed they do not give identical proportions of C, H, N, and O. All of them, however, may be broken up into simpler bodies, which, in turn, have proteid characters. This is true not only of the combined but also of the free proteins; for example, proteolytic ferments break down albumin, globulin, myosin, etc., into peptones and albumoses, which are still proteins but with smaller molecules; smaller molecules they possess, because they can diffuse through membrane; the peptones, etc., are degradation products of the proteins, and we can infer that the ordinary protein molecule is a combination of like molecules, and is thus an example of polymerization, or the formation of a large molecule by the aggregation of a series of smaller ones which are alike, or of like order. The peptones and albumoses afford a still further series of degradation products, the group of the amino-acids, which together make up about three-fourths of the albumin molecule. These amino-acids are first cousins of the fatty acids, are indeed fatty acids with qualities tending to be basic by the addition of NH₂ molecules; which again by hydration or by the addition of an OH molecule become the hydroxyl fatty acids. These amino-acids, always present as degradation products of protein, are in reality the basis of proteins; the protein is built up by a linking together of numerous amino-acid molecules.

Chemists have now been able to obtain pure, and to study, a series of these amino-acids, and have been able to obtain optically active forms of them, the significance of which fact will appear. It had been noted for a long period that if a substance were the product of vital processes, it was optically active, but if it were synthetically produced by the chemist, it was optically inactive. The optical activity of the now synthesized amino-acids indicates that they are, so far as human observation can go, absolutely identical with the amino-acids of the body.

The amino-acids are amphoteric, that is, they possess both acid and basic properties, acid by reason of their COOH group and basic by the NH₂ groups, and it is this duality of affinity that permits linkage.

To use a homely simile, let us imagine the place of an amino-acid taken by a man, with two artificial arms; at the end of one is a hook (the basic affinity), at the end of the other, a ring (the acid affinity); if there were a large number of such men they could form a complete circle, hook in ring, hook in ring throughout the entire group. If, now, we imagine the children of each man hanging on to his coat tails, we have a large colony (the compound molecule) depending for perfect cohesion upon the hook and ring men. These rings of varying number of amino-acids are the polypeptids, and a linkage of eighteen individuals has been experimentally obtained to be in a not even necessary that the links should be the same amino-ac. It is not even necessary that the men be of the same race. These synthetic compounds prove by their character to be all but identical, if not identical with the

peptones of the body.

The conception we have here given may be erroneous in particulars, but we have attempted to give the idea that the complete molecule is a ring, and that ring we have suggested by the bizarre simile of the group of men hand in hand or "ring in hook." This, be it remembered, indicates only the simpler molecule; the more intricate proteins, polymerized forms, are aggregations of such rings, and it will readily be seen that a very slight change in the individuality of one sub-group will change the composition of the whole. Reverting to the group of men with the children hanging on to their coat tails, we have to picture these groups as being surrounded by a concourse of individuals, who are constantly moving to and fro; such a picture, for example, as a bird's-eye view of a fair ground would afford; these individuals (ions or radicals) as they pass a group invite (by their unsatisfied affinity) an individual of the group to leave it, and every now and then one of these free individuals is impelled to attach itself to a group. Let us suppose we have twenty such groups, and this compound group (or giant molecule) by actual count has this formula: White200, Negro250, Indian₈₅, Chinese₅₀. If a couple of children stray away the group becomes white200, negro249, Indian84, Chinese60, and the group is no longer the same. This is precisely what is occurring in the giant molecules of the body; the arrival of a new ion of food material, the separation of a few ions of excreted matter make for the moment a new aggregation, and these small changes mean a constant re-arrangement, and constitute the metabolism of living matter.

Lipoids.— During the last few years, the importance of the lipoid in cell activity has been more and more recognized. Under this term we include those bodies which have the common property of being dissolved, like ordinary fats, in ether, alcohol, chloroform, etc. Nearly all of the bodies having this property are fatty compounds, hence the term lipoid, although it is usual to include here also cholesterin,

which has no fatty moiety. They may be classified as:

I. Bodies containing neither phosphorus nor nitrogen: fatty acids, neutral fats, soaps, cholesterins.

II. Nitrogen- and phosphorus-containing lipoids. The phosphatides, such as lecithin (a glycerin phosphoric acid ester of two fatty acids plus cholin) and kephalin (having two fatty acids and two bases), as well as sphingomyelin, the most important constituent of the socalled protagon of bra. a substance.

III. Nitrogen-contrasing phosphorus-free bodies, e. g., the cerebro-

sides, which resemble gracosides in their composition.

IV. Bodies of fatty nature, not yet analyzed, e. g., the lipochromes.

Recent investigation indicates that the lecithins and cholesterins are intimately associated with the development of protective sub-

stances of the body and the production of immunity.

The Chemistry of the Nucleus.—The composition of the nucleus differs from that of the cytoplasm; it contains no potassium, no carbohydrates, and, speaking generally, no fats, but on the contrary, does contain phosphorus and "masked" iron (that is, iron in a complex ion), which appear in the cytoplasm but rarely and in small amount.

The proteins of the nucleus show some peculiar characters; gastric juice will dissolve ordinary proteins, but the nucleus of a cell is resistant to it, because its nucleoproteins consist of albumin and nuclein combined, and the latter is resistant. Nucleins contain 2 to 9 per cent. of phosphorus, can be split up into albumin and a nucleinic (or nucleic) acid, of which there are several. Nucleinic acid can be further disintegrated into the xanthin and other purin bases (uric acid, xanthin, guanin, adenin, and hypoxanthin). These derivatives are important clinically because they exercise a toxic effect upon tissues, especially the kidney, and it is these which constitute the drawback to a protein diet in persons whose powers of elimination are imperfect. The existence of phosphorus and the xanthin-base groups constitutes the difference between the nucleus and other protoplasms. These groups and the "masked" iron and phosphorus are specially concerned with oxidation, the importance of which for the cell is absolute.

Before leaving this part of the subject we would reconitulate our idea that the "biophoric molecule" or mass is the active part of the cell; that it is a huge molecule age regated of many large groups, of which each may be considered a ring of molecules with affinities which are being satisfied by various other groups; that some affinities are constantly unsatisfied; that ions and molecules are being shed off and taken on, and groups are joining groups by new affinities, that groups are breaking off and that this activity means metabolism, means life. It must be understood, too, that while from mount to moment the composition of the biophere may vary, the average com-

position over long periods of time remains the same.

Enzyme Action.—We lay stress upon a proper understanding of enzyme action because we regard it as being a type of much of what we call metabolic processes in the cell; we shall constantly recur to the conception here indicated. We understand first of all, that there

ve he rs, ule

he

ed,

•11

he

if

te f.

В,

ct

P d-

at

ΓŅ

ns, ily up up to us, de. als

ien up. up 250, beger iles

ion

ied

gaind oid rm ing

urly nce rin.

ids,

are enzymes! in the cell and enzymes outside the cell, the latter being elaborated in the cell and discharged. Each enzyme acts upon a particular substance or series of substances in the external mediumptyalin upon starches, making sugars; pepsin upon proteins in an acid medium, making peptones; trypsin upon proteins in an alkaline medium, and steapsin upon fats. It is not possible to obtain the enzymes free from combination with protein bodies; as the protein material disappears from the solution the enzyme action disappears. Finally, an extremely minute amount of combined enzyme and protein can convert a maximum amount of fermentescible substance, and yet the enzyme itself is not used up; the action does cease, however, when the products of fermentation, have accumulated up to a certain point.

It will seem strange to the reader, at this juncture, to say that enzymes do not exist, but such seems to be the case. Enzyme action does, but enzymes as definite chemical entities in all probability do not. Enzyme action is an interaction between a proteidogenous molecule, and a fermentescible substance present in the same medium, part or the whole of the molecule acting on part or the whole of a molecule of the fermentescible substance with the result that a new

substance appears—the product of fermentation.

The Enzymes.—Enzymes are intracellular and extracellular; the former act in such close combination with the biophore, the compound protoplasmic molecule, that we have to conclude that their action is part and parcel of the activity of the biophore. This is proved by the fact that such enzymes cannot be extracted, in fact, are not existent in the molecule unless it be alive. If this be true of the intracellular enzymes, it is also true of the extracellular ones; these enzymes, in fact, are free protein molecules, divorced from cellular relationship, but still manifesting a characteristic of life, viz., that of being able to act upon other molecules and cause their re-arrangement.

Some hold that enzymes act by **katalysis**, but this view we do not advocate. They consider the ferment as a body possessing active molecular vibration, so that, in apposition to molecules of the fermentescible substance, it communicates to them its vibration with the result that their particles are shaken into a new arrangement and the fermentescible becomes the fermented substance. This is the explanation given of the process by which finely divided platinum converts hydrogen peroxide into water and oxygen, and this process is katalysis. A more satisfactory explanation of ferment action seems to be that exemplified by making sulphuric acid from sulphurous anhydride by the mediation of nitric acid; the nitric acid gives up an atom of oxygen which converts the sulphurous anhydride to sulphuric acid, thus:

$$H_2SO_3 + HNO_3 = H_2SO_4 + HNO_2$$

To prevent confusion we employ the term *enzyme* to designate those ferments which are produced by the living cell, to distinguish them from inorganic ferments, $e.\ g.$, gold and platinum.

The nitrous acid, so formed, exposed to the air, combines with its oxygen and forms nitric acid, thus:

$$HNO_3 + O = HNO_3$$

Theoretically, a single molecule of nitric acid can convert an infinite number of molecules of sulphurous anhydride into sulphuric acid and at the completion of the action (if infinity could be completed) still exist as a molecule of nitric acid.

In this process there are three factors—the sulphurous anhydride represents the fermentescible substance, the oxygen the fermentator or complement, and the nitrous acid, which alone is present in both reactions, the ferment. The process can be represented as follows:

Schema of ferment-like action of nitrous oxide in the formation of sulphuric acid from sulphurous anhydride. The completed circle represents the successive stages of activity of the HNO_2 molecule, first attaching to itself an O molecule from an O_2 combination, and then yielding this to an unsatisfied H_2SO_3 molecule. To the left of the diagram it is suggested that the other O molecule liberated from the O_2 combination may also combine with an H_2SO_3 molecule to form a second molecule of sulphuric acid.

If instead of the bodies in the above picture, we consider that we are dealing with protein molecules with their unsatisfied affinities, we can conceive the process as being instigated by their unsatisfaction and concluded by their satisfaction. Enzyme action is one form of the interactivity of the biophores. This being so, one of our compound protein molecules may be intermediary body, or it may be fermentescible substance: or, since each individual part of the huge ring has got its own peculiar characters, and its own unsatisfied affinities, the same huge molecule may be in a sense both at the same

id n,

ng

ee isy, in

en nt. at m do en,

a

he n-eir ed ot a-es, p,

ot ve selt eron

ed on n=

re

ts,

time. If we consider the biophore in activity, reacting thus, let us say, with proteins in the food and discharging fewer metabolites than

it attracts, we find it getting gradually larger. This is growth.

At this point we may review the subject, pointing out that we have now three orders of proteidogenous matter concerned in metabolism:

(1) Nuclear matter, capable of metabolism and growth in a medium of proteins;

(2) cytoplasmic matter, capable of independent metabolism—but incapable of growth save in combination with nuclear matter, and

(3) the free organic enzymes, capable of causing metabolism, but incapable of growth. Are we to admit all these into our conception of what is living matter? This is a moot point. For ourselves, we are inclined to regard growth as the all-important property of living matter; but if this view be accepted, then it may be held that the biophores situated within the nucleus are the only truly living elements within the cell. This is contrary to the usual conception of the cytoplasm as being also living matter; the question must be left open.

The Reversibility of Enzyme Action.—Since we count enzyme action so important for an understanding of metabolism, we must indicate that it is reversible, and in fear of making the subject too complex, we shall merely exemplify this. The enzyme maltase splits up maltose $(C_{12}H_{22}O_{11})$ into two molecules of giucose $(C_6H_{12}O_6)$, but in the test tube the reaction is never complete—there remains a mixture of maltose and glucose. Maltase really can split up maltose into glucose or build up glucose into maltose, and so long as the products of disintegration or of synthesis remain in the solution, neither the glucose nor the maltose can be used up. The enzyme will cease to be tween a stage of equilibrium is reached, when the tendency to distances the expressed

thus:

$$C_{12}H_{22}O_{11} + H_2O + \textit{Maltase} \rightleftarrows C_6H_{12}O_6 + C_6H_{12}O_6 + \textit{Maltase}.$$
Maltase. Glucose. Glucose.

We have at the present writing evidence to indicate that all enzyme action is potentially reversible (although recently it has been shown that the reversed action may require a temperature different from that required for the original action), and this of itself is good evidence in favor of the supposition that an enzyme is not a chemical entity, but a varying state of satisfaction between the affinities of two molecules. What was meant in saying that the enzyme as an entity does not exist may now be better understood. Equilibrium and arrest of enzyme action occurs when the products of that action accumulate up to a certain point, while, if the products be removed, it goes on until all the fermentescible substance is used up. In the alimentary canal, the products of action of the various extracellular enzymes are absorbed, finally reaching the lymph; in health, thus, the proteins, starches, fats, and other food substances become fully disintegrated. In the cells, the action of the intracellular enzymes occurs, and its extent is largely a

matter of diffusion. Take, for example, the glycogenic activity of the liver cell. If the cell in its metabolism has burnt up the glucose it has and becomes deficient in carbohydrates, more glucose will diffuse in; the ferment in the cell will synthesize this to glycogen, and will continue so to do till there is a local equilibrium between the intracellular glycogen and sugar. Glycogen, being insoluble, remains in the cell, stored up. There it remains until one of two things happens: until either the cell is using up glucose faster than glucose can diffuse into the cell from the lymph, and the glycogen-glucose equilibrium is destroyed, when the reverse enzyme action begins to break down glycogen till so much glucose is formed that the equilibrium is restored, or until the glucose in the lymph is reduced, by the tissues using it up, faster than the alimentary tract supplies it, to a point below the amount in the cell. If this happen, the glucose bein, soluble, diffuses out into the lymph, and the glycogen-glucose equilibrium is again destroyed; the ferment action will break down glycogen again, and if the equilibrium be not restored by a fresh supply of glucose, the glycogen of the cell will be

This process we have just described, essentially an enzyme process, is really what we have been accustomed to call metabolism; the cell equilibrium depends upon the enzymes in the cell quite as much as, or more than upon the material absorbed. If the enzymes of the cell be interfered with, the essential agent in absorption is lacking, and we find disturbance of metabolism. As free enzymes in the cell are associated with discharge from the biophoric molecules forming the nucleus, we see how the foreign agents of disease, by disturbing the biophore, strike at the very foundation of metabolism, nutrition, and

the well-being of the body.

S

11

e

1:

đ

it

d

if

d

l.

0

n e

۲,

e

٩t

60

d

n

se

)-

28

ď

1e

'n

ιt

in

ıt

8.

st

ıe

a

ıll

1e

d,

4,

s,

a

Non-protein Constituents.—Water.—Cell activity is associated with the presence of water, water being the medium in which metabolism occurs. If the amount of water be reduced below a certain percentage, latency of activity supervenes, and if the water be removed entirely, molecular death; 60 per cent. of the human body is water, and 80 per cent. of certain organs, such as the kidney. The average cell of the human body may be considered as seven-tenths water, and threetenths proteins and other constituents. It is still debated whether living matter is existing in a soluble state in water, or as solid undissolved molecules suspended in a fluid medium. As to whether the cell is liquid or solid, it may be said that the relation of molecule to molecule is variable, and yet at times is relatively fixed; the truth is that protoplasm is colloidal, that is, the molecules are so large that they cannot enter perfectly into solution, and as a colloid it possesses many of the properties of a liquid together with the persistence of form characteristic of a solid body. Our idea of a solution is that the molecules of the dissolved body lie in the interstices of the solvent-in a colloid, protoplasm for instance, we have to imagine the molecules of water as lying in the interstices of the huge protein molecules.

question is of importance because of what we know of ionization. When NaCl, for instance, is dissolved in water some of the molecules become dissociated into Na and CI and these free constituents are charged, some with positive electricity (anions), and some with negative (kathions); these act as separate molecules, and may be attracted by molecules or by other ions having an opposite charge. By increasing the dilution all the molecules may be thus ionized. Stable chemical compounds are made by the union of such ions -or electrolytesand the energy represented by them is neutralized or liberated. Such compounds may be broken up by heat or electricity or by solution, and the dissociated ions are ready for fresh chemical combinations; the assimilation of food by the cell depends upon the separation and re-arrangement of ions. If this is not to be accomplished by heat it must be done by solution, and water becomes an essential. Enzyme action is largely accomplished by hydrolysis, and the setting free of active hydrogen and hydroxyl ions in a watery solution, and these ions

are most important in the process of metabolism.

Simple Salts. - Certain salts without being built up into the protein molecule are obviously essential to the cell, for the protein molecule does not exert its activity in a pure watery medium, but in dilute The salts usually met are chlorine salts, alkaline saline solution. carbonates, phosphates, and sulphates, and salts of the alkaline earths, especially sodium, potassium, ammonium, calcium, and magnesium. We know little about their disposal, but we assume, from the minute quantities present, that they probably are mostly dissociated into their ions and so help to promote activity of metabolism. The dissociation of salts, and their building-up into the biophore are accompanied by various phenomena which we call endosmosis and exosmosis, which is the diffusing, in or out of the cell, of water and salts in solution. A salt of high concentration in the cell will pass out of the cell to a medium where the concentration is lower, and vice versa, and at the same time a corrective reverse passage of water occurs. The colloidal cell substance is sufficiently permeable to allow the molecules of the salt in solution to pass. We believe, too, that colloids of different composition differ in their permeability, and, therefore, in the time required for the passage through them of solutions. This relative impermeability of the colloidal skin (ectosarc) of the cell explains why the huge protein molecules are kept in the cell while the smaller, partly dissociated ones can escape. There are some of these which are almost small enough to escape, and their retention depends on the state of the cell in relation to the external medium, depends upon the nature of the cell membrane and upon its surface tension. An example of this is found in the red corpuscles, which lose their hemoglobin when the salt in a salt solution reaches 0.47 per cent. If the osmotic pressure be less than this, salts diffuse out and water in, till the ectosarc is ruptured and the hemoglobin is dissolved in the surrounding medium and colors it. But corpuscles do not lose their hemoglobin till the osmotic pressure is much higher than the tonicity of the serum of man (0.9 per cent. sodium chloride). Solutions with an osmotic pressure higher than this are **hyperisctonic**, with one lower, **hypisotonic**. The blood serum must be very hypisotonic before hemoglobinemia, from passage of the hemoglobin out of the cells, can occur purely from this cause.

Carbohydrates.— Free carbohydrates as such do not enter into the composition of the biophore, and when found in the cell are true metabolites; they have been or are ready to be dissociated. It must, however, be recalled that the dissociation of nucleic acid yields a pentose (sugar) according to Levene and Jacobs, a hexose according to Stendel and Halliburton. From the dissociation of sugars energy is liberated, and on the contrary energy is conserved when they are stored as

built-up glycogen molecules.

Fats, Soaps, and Alcohols. This is another group of metabolites, which may possibly be split off from the cell protein; they are not found in the nuclei (save, as already noted, that fat has been found in nuclear vacuoles), and are to be considered as acted upon mainly by the cytoplasm. Certain cells are found to contain insoluble neutral fats of which the most important are stearin, palmitin, and olein; these fats, according to their formula, contain a very small quantity of oxygen with a relatively large amount of carbon, which means that their dissociation and combination with absorbed oxygen is capable of setting free a great amount of energy; hence their value to the cell.

These come from the food almost entirely as neutral fats; they are emulsified by the action of the bile, and, to some extent when emulsified, may be absorbed by the phagocytic action of the intestinal epithelium and leukocytes. But this is by no means all. It would seem that free fatty acids are to some extent split off, soaps being formed and glycerin liberated; while again there may be actual solution of the fats by the colloids of the cells and body fluids. This matter is not yet determined. The presence of the fat-splitting ferment steapsin (discharged by the pancreas) in the intestinal contents favors the division of the fats into free fatty acid and glycerin. The latter is probably taken up by the intestinal epithelium; the fatty acids are partly dissolved by the bile salts, but most of them, in an alkaline medium, are transformed into soaps of sodium, potassium, calcium, and magnesium. As soaps they pass through the intestinal cells and are to be found in the chyle and lymph as neutral fats. Neutral fats are rarely found in the blood, while soaps commonly are; so it is evident that a second conversion occurs; it is as soaps that the fats are ultimately taken up by the cells.

Microscopically, the cells of an organ, e. g., the kidney, may show to fat nor do they yield fat with to ordinary fat solvents; yet the dry substance of such a standard as much to 17 per cent. of

fat; this means that the fats a s not free, but combined.

Soaps are evidently very important as an intermediate stage in the

2

ion.

iles
are
tive
by
sing

uch ion, ons; and

ical

neat yme e of ions

ecule
ilute
aline
rths,
ium.
nute
into
discomnosis.

tion.
to a
t the
oidal
f the
erent

time lative blains aller, which

n the n the imple

when presarc is edium

ll the

utilization and synthesis of fats; lipolytic and fat-forming ferments

have been isolated and designated lipases.

Do proteins give origin to fats or fatty acids? They probably do to a slight extent, but at present it appears as if the fats of the body are almost entirely the fats of the food. Here it is necessary to mention the lecithins, which are almost constant constituents of the animal cell, and form a considerable factor in nerve cells and in the cells of egg volk. They have a fatty portion indicating a relationship with fats; they are nitrogenous suggesting relationship with the proteins; and they are richly phosphorized. The last two facts suggest that they are cleavage products of the nucleins, or combinations of such cleavage products with fats. Parallel to the lecithins as protein-fat compounds are the glycoproteins—or protein-carbohydrate compounds—chief of which are the mucins. These are to be seen in the cell as globules of mucinogen, which by imbibition of water become mucins. are modified, largely inert, proteins; among them are gelatin, elastin, chondrin, amyloid, and mucin, which are poor in carbon and rich in oxygen, and yield on dissociation carbohydrates. A few other "albuminoid" materials occurring in and outside the cell are to be mentioned: such are the products of dissociation of bemoglobin, such as hematin, together with melanin, the pigment of the skin and hair, which recent observations indicate are allied to the lipochromes, compounds of lipoids with protein derivatives; these will be discussed with the infiltrations and degenerations.

GROWTH

In all our previous considerations of the biophore we have dealt with metabolic activity, but we have made only passing reference to rowth. If we think a little it will be seen that the growth of living matter demands a process whereby two molecules exist where there was one before. Our conception of the biophore is as a ring, or a ring of rings, and growth occurs by increase first of the individual smaller These groups, from their very inception present a groups or rings. series of unsatisfied affinities, and each or any of the molecules is constantly attracting molecules of a like order, and on the first of these is built up a second and a third until the group is complete. Along these lines we can imagine the development of a new ring of which each individual component is the reflection of the components of the original ring: in its turn this ring attracts, and so builds up other rings in due order until eventually there is produced a completed compound molecule, reproducing the parent molecule. We use the illustration of the ring to indicate a degree of completeness; the ring can break, it is true, and in its repair, be enlarged or be made smaller, or it can join with another broken one, but the molecules of the formed ring are less likely to be attracted away just because they are in a ring, i. e., in a state of relative completeness.

its

to

re

on

al

of

th

nd

re

ge

ds

of

es

ey

n,

in

n-

d:

n,

nt

ds

ns

alt

to

ng ere

ng

ler

a

1]-

is

ese

ch

ıal

in

nd

of

it

oin

are

e.,

The Relation between Growth and Other Cell Activities.—The consideration of this subject demands a few words on the dynamics of the cell. In the performance of function of whatever kind, the cell is a machine discharging potential energy. The body warmth means that cells are liberating energy in the form of heat; the nerve cell liberates energy akin to electricity. On the other hand, growth and the accumulation of new molecules demand, not the evolution, but the storage of energy, and this comes from the food. The proteins, carbohydrates, and fats are carbon-containing bodies the ultimate result of whose decomposition is a yielding of much energy. The excreta of the organism, carbonic acid, water, urea, etc., on the other hand, store up comparatively little, and the cells acquire most of the difference.

Strictly speaking, energy is not evolved in the dissociation of matter; but dissociation and the freeing of ions mean that combinations immediately occur which liberate far more energy than was lost in the dissociations of a moment before, so that the ultimate result of dissociation is, paradoxically, a storage of energy. The biophores are not to be compared to simple salts, but rather to nitroglycerin. A blow dissociates it, and though there is a theoretical momentary loss of energy, there is a vastly greater immediate production of energy—an explosion—brought about by the reconstruction of the ions of C, O, N, H into more stable compounds. Dissociation, then, tends to the liberation of energy, and growth, or building up, to the using and storing of energy, the conversion of kinetic into potential energy. The energy of the food is thus:

(a) Katabiotic, dissipated in the performance of function.

(b) Bioplastic, stored up in the formation of the complex biophore,

Can these two contrasted processes, growth, and the performance of function proceed simultaneously in the cell? They can, as we shall show.

To digress again, growth is an intracellular affair, governed by conditions in the biophore, while the performance of function is a response to external stimuli of some kind. If the cell has abundant food, and the stimuli to function be strong, all the acquired energy may be used up at once, and no growth ensue. If the stimuli be yet stronger, all the food energy may be used up, and the cell substance be dissociated to supply the further energy required. If the food energy be little, the cell may require to use up its substance to provide the energy needed for function. There is, however, a grade of adequate food supply and of moderate external stimulus, in which the dissociation of the foodstuffs provides more energy than the cell is called on to dissipate and the surplus is used in growth. The development of muscles under proper exercise illustrates this. Conversely, with adequate food, and not enough activity, muscles do not develop, but the contrary; a certain optimum of activity is necessary for the maintenance of nutrition and of growth. There are apparent exceptions to this, in the embryo, in tumor growth, and in the fact that under exercise and adequate nutrition there is a limit beyond which growth cannot go. Whereas growth and function have thus a definite relationship, there are circumstances under which growth is quite independent of function.

Active assimilation and growth with little functional activity characterize the embryonic and fetal stages of existence. The more the cells become differentiated (for their proper function in different organs), the less capacity they show for growth and the more for katabiotic activity.

Growth of the cell and of the individual progresses until the volume of the cell (and of the individual) reaches the point beyond which increase in mass is not only uneconomical, but harmful. There is a relation between surface area and mass, and when the mass exceeds a certain amount, the surface area is too small, and assimilation and discharge are hindered. The cell has now the alternatives of cell division (by which there is a rapid increase of surface area relative to mass) or of lessening its mass by the performance of function, that is, of dissociating some of its cell substance. As long as the cell or the individual is below the economical ratio between its mass and its surface area (relative to its external medium), it chooses the first (cell division); as this ratio is approached it tends to employ the second (functional activity).

The size of the individual is thus a function of the constitution of the biophores; it is the expression of the optimum economy of interaction between the biophores and the external medium. Growth of cells and of individual continues till this optimum is reached. In the developed cell there must be a constant alternation between growth and functional activity; in performing function the cell dissociates some of its substance, and falls below the state of optimum efficiency, and it is in a position to take up new matter, and grow; Weigert's statement is "the katabiotic use of material in function removes the obstruction to growth."

Physiological Inertia and Habit. - A wheel set spinning continues to spin after the hand is withdrawn; a gland stimulated to secrete continues to secrete after the stimulus is removed. A resting muscle continues to rest (during the latent period) before it acts in response to a stimulus. The cell, like matter in general, tends to continue in the state in which it is, whether of rest or activity. This inertia is the precursor of habit. A cell stimulated to perform an act, continues to perform it after the stimulus is removed; on a second occasion, a slighter stimulus suffices to make it repeat the act, until a period is reached when a minimum stimulus will produce an optimum reaction, and the cell, tending to employ its energy in one particular direction, tends to lessen its activities in other directions. It becomes adapted to its work. Once a cell starts to grow it has a tendency to continue to grow rather than to perform function, until its increased size and increasing tension and other external stimuli attain such power that it is com-

pelled to functionate. This, in turn, once started, is apt to continue. We have thus attempted to show the biological process by which one cell becomes many cells, and the many cells attain a certain size by individual growth, and finally, by which the energy that is put into growth becomes, at the proper time, directed toward the performance of function and a continuance of the same.

a, . .

,

e

1

ì

S

1

f

e

1

1

f

e

Ś

e

S

6

e

0 e

O

d

d

ls ts

W

g 1-

RESERVE FORCE

An important character of living matter is what is termed reserve force; upon it depends the process of healing. Just as a wall, a bridge, or a boiler, built on sound mechanical principles, is able to stand a strain several times greater than it is ordinarily expected to carry (the "factors of safety" of the engineer), so are the cells of the organism; there is a large reserve of force or energy in them above that which they exert under normal conditions. Illustrations of this are known to everyone. The patient who seems so weak that he can scarcely raise his arm may become in delirium a match for two men. The heart can do thrice its normal work without overstrain; three-quarters of the rabbit's liver may be removed, and the remaining quarter serve its purpose; the whole of the spleen of the dog may be excised without injury to the animal's health.

In the last case, other related tissues take up the functions of the spleen, exercising a vicarious activity; yet vicarious activity is a pure example of reserve force. Such also is compensatory activity, e. g., one lung will suffice for respiration, one kidney for urinary excretion; even in the brain, one of a pair of centres can take up the work of its destroyed fellow. In short the organism is so constructed as to possess in most of its functions an abundant margin of reserve force. This reserve force 'ies at the root of the healing of injuries and of immunity to disease.

Reserve force is yet one more result of physiological inertia. Life has been defined as the continuous adjustment of internal conditions to external changes of environment. It is more, it is overadjustment; when the cell assimilates, it continues to assimilate more than is needed at the moment; when it starts to grow it continues to grow above the extent of the original stimulus; and the excess remains as reserve force.

THE STATES OF CELL ACTIVITY

The state of the cell at any given moment depends upon the sum total of assimilation, growth, and external stimulus, and this state is variable, and the variations carried far in one or another direction, constitute cell disease.

1. Subnormal Activity. Even in normal tissue the accumulation of reserve force leads to the presence of redundant cells, which, receiving

relatively little stimulation pass into an inert, latent state. These cells, with lack of stimulation, atrophy, and some of them actually disappear. Not only does this occur with redundant cells, but even with normal cells under abnormal conditions; this can be well seen in the atrophy which an immobilized leg undergoes; and the actual disappearance of cells is seen in the cases in which the lower motor neurones atrophy and disappear as a result of lack of stimulation from the upper ones, in cases where the upper ones are destroyed.

2. Vegetative Activity.—Cells in the process of active growth present certain well-marked characters. The nuclei are large, round or oval, staining deeply; paraplasmic granules are not prominent; the cell body is round or oval. Cells of this character are prone to reproductive activity and have been called embryonic cells. The name is not a good one, because such cells occur at all life periods, and a better term for

them is vegetative cells.

3. Functional Activity.—Cells in functional activity show signs of differentiation according to their specific function; in muscle or nerve cells the cytoplasm is highly elaborated; in gland cells, there are paraplasmic deposits, in the form of granules or globules; the nuclei are not large, and their staining differs according to the stage of cell activity.

4. Hyperactivity within the Limits of the Reserve Force of the Cell.—When increased stimulation is accompanied by adequate nutrition, the functional activity of the cell is, to a certain extent, accom-

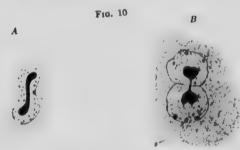
panied by growth, and this constitutes hypertrophy.

5. Excessive Functional Activity.—When the cell work is extreme, the energy used up exceeds the supply from the food, the paraplasmic material disappears, the protoplasm is dissociated, and if the stimulus be continued the cell is exhausted; the nucleus stains poorly; the cytoplasm in the case of cells like those of the 'ney tubules may be disintegrated and partly discharged; or there may be abnormal deposits in the meshes of the cytoplasm; or the cytoplasm may become vacuolated.

CELL MULTIPLICATION

Increase in size of the individual is brought about in two ways: by enlargement of the individual cells, and by intercalation of new cells. We speak of increase in size of the individual as growth, whether it arise from one or the other of these processes, but it is necessary to remember that cell multiplication and cell growth are not synonymous terms. Cell multiplication is of two main types-direct, or amitotic and indirect, mitotic or karyokinetic.

Direct Division; Amitosis.—This is the rarer form of the two, and may be said to occur not at all in the development of the mammalian body, but in fully developed adult tissues it does occur, and is particularly frequent in cells that are multinucleate. In leukocytes and endothelial cells it occurs, and is the rule in the syncytium of the mammalian embryo, and in the rapidly growing envelopes of the embryo. In the last named, it will be noted t'he tissue is but a temporary one. There seems to be a pertain amount of truth in the statement that cells which exhibit amitosis are on the way to degeneration. As far as the leukocytes are concerned, in lymph nodes where cells are being continually produced, mitosis is seen, and it is only in the blood and continually produced, mitosis is seen, and it is only in the blood and in leukocytes in inflammatory areas that we encounter amitosis. Possibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly as we were accussibly we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly as we were accussibly as we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly as we cannot enunciate this view so confidently as we were accussibly as we were accussible to the control of the control of the control of the control of the cont



Amitosis. Stages of direct division in tumor cells: A, from an ovari. ...ancer: B, from an epithelioma of the lip. (Nedielski.)

In amitosis, the nucleus divides without any preliminary re-arrangement of its structure. It becomes elongated, then dumb-bell shaped, the neck breaks, and the daughter cells separate, either followed or not followed by a corresponding division of the cytoplasm. The centrosome plays no noticeable role in this form of cell multiplication.

c

e

al

s: w

er

to

us

tic

nd

an a**r**nd Indirect Division; Mitosis.—In this form of division the nuclear material is divided with exactness between the two daughter cells. If the nuclear material were uniform, it would not be necessary to have the elaborate "quadrille," but each daughter cell would take its half the elaborate "quadrille," but each daughter cell would take its half the elaborate division; that the nuclear material arranges as happens in indirect division; that the nuclear material arranges itself indicates that there is a differentiation of the biophores, so that each daughter cell obtains a group of biophores identical with that obtained by the other. We shall merely indicate the stages in the process.

1. Prophase or Preparatory Stage.—The nuclear chromatin in the resting stage of the cell is an irregular or nodulated network; it becomes a continuous sir—le thread which appears as if in a tangle, and then divides into a demitte number (in man, thirty-two) of short lengths called chromosomes. As this is progressing the nuclear membrane called chromosomes. As this is progressing the nuclear membrane disappears and the chromosomes lie naked in the cell. While this goes on in the nucleus changer appear in the cytoplasm. The centrosome

appears and divides into two halves, around each the cytoplasm becomes concentrated into radiating fibrils, forming a star or aster, and as the two halves of the centrosome separate and journey to opposite ends of the cell, a spindle of fine fibrils is seen to stretch between them.

2. Metaphase. Each chromosome splits longitudinally into two like halves, the daughter chromosome appearing to become attached to the mantle fibres of the spindle. This splitting of the chromosomes is the fundamental process in cell division.

3. Anaphase.- The daughter chromosomes diverge, a member of each pair going to one or the other pole of the spindle. Here the

chromosomes crowd near the centre of the aster.

4. Telophase. The cell body divides into two, the line of division passing through the equator of the spindle. Each daughter cell now contains half the chromosomes, 'alf the spindle, and one centrosome and aster. The two last may persist, as the attraction sphere, or may The daughter chromosomes fuse into a tangle, which becomes irregularly swollen or nodulated and forms the network of the resting nucleus.

ADAPTATION

We have already made the statement that the organism can adapt itself to its surroundings, and the doctrine of the survival of the fittest indicates that where there are many individuals undergoing change to become better suited to their environment, the ones who best meet the new requirements are the ones who survive and their progeny, so modified, force out of existence the fewer, weak progeny of those less well adapted. A large element of chance enters into such a process. This, however, while true, is not the whole truth. Adaptation is not a passive fortuitous modification of living matter in a favorable direction, but an active process, whereby a change in surroundings brings about a change in the composition of the living matter.

Examples of adaptation are numerous; bacteria which ordinarily split up carbohydrates can be made, by growing in special media, to split up proteins; bacteria which can ferment one sugar but not a second may be "trained" till they ferment the second and not the first; bacteria which were not pathogenic can be made to become so. These altered powers are due to the acquirement of new qualities by the bacteria adapting themselves to their particular surroundings; the alteration can occur in so short a time as to make it certain that it is an active process. The acquired immunity in man against disease is an example of adaptation, the cells adapting themselves to one more foreign agent, in this instance the toxin of the special bacterium. This adaptation may remain for a long time after the toxin has ceased to be present because there is impressed on the cell some alteration in constitution

ι πρό, before; μετά, in the middle of; ἀνά, backward; τηλού, afar.

beand site

em. like to mes

of the

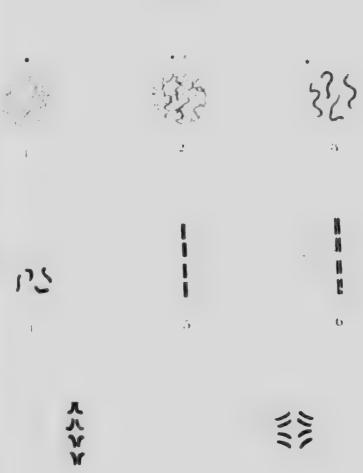
sion now ome may hich k of

dapt ittest iange meet geny, those

ocess. s not direcorings

narily
ia, to
econd
cteria
ltered
cteria
ration
active
ample
agent,
station

resent itution





8

The Phases of Mitosis.



which is passed on even to the progeny of the cell. The capacity to adapt itself is inherent in the molecules of the cell, and the molecules become changed in response to some agent or agency in the environment; it is not that the tendency to vary is inherent, but rather that the power to change in a particular direction is present, the change being in response to the action of a pecific agent. Expressed more concretely, a particular modification in the environment is able to change the protoplasmic molecule in a particular vay. If the cell remain in the same environment with the care kinds of food molecules coming to it, the cell response will be to build up the same side chains within limits; in short, the cell will not vary. But as soon as a new foodstuff is brought to it, and dissociated, an entirely new set of ions may be produced, and new combinations entered into, new side-chains may be built up, and the protein molecules in the cell itself thereby altered. This particular cell has gained a new character by adaptation, by undergoing a molecular re-arrangement; growth goes on at the same time, and the new side-chains may be detached into the surrounding medium or may remain and be built up into the cytoplasmic or nuclear molecules. If then a cell has adapted itself, and has multiplied, the process of adaptation is not over, for its progeny will partake in the altered composition of the molecules in the parent cell.

Adaptations such as these will occur in response not only to the foodstuffs, but likewise to toxins; and changes in temperature, vibration, light, and other physical agents, not introducing any new ions or molecules may yet cause a re-arrangement of the molecules in the biophore, and so an actually altered composition of the cell, with

altered characters.

CELL DIFFERENTIATION

A corollary to this is that a cell becomes adapted to its particular set of circumstances, its food, and so on, and thus becomes different from its neighbor; this is the reason that underlies cell differentiation; if we begin with a cell, which multiplies itself into a mass of cells, it is obvious that the cells on the outside of the group are in a relation to the surrounding medium which differs from the relationship of those on the inside. I' we begin with two separate cells, exactly similar, each of which gives into a multicellular organism, if each be exposed to exactly the same environment the daughter cells will be differentiated in exactly the same way. But if the biophoric composition of these two cells is different, even if the environment be the same, we shall have the daughter cells in the multicellular organism differentiated according to a plan that differs from the differentiation of the last example. To state this otherwise, we would say that cell differenti, tion is due to two factors, biophoric constitution and physical influences, and that in practically every case, both are at work. We could thus understand, albeit in a hazy way, how the one adult individual differs from the other, even if we were to presuppose that the ovum was exactly the same in each case; the more difficult task is to determine why one individual is like another individual, why son is like father, and this leads us to inquire wherein one ovum is different from another ovum. Two ova, side by side, look to our eyes alike, let us say: why is one going to become an elephant and one an insect, and how comes it that the elephant is certain to have a trunk and the insect wings? Is there, in the ovum, a part of the protoplasm that is definitely of such composition that it must form a trunk and not a tail? And where is the protoplasm hidden in one cell which will determine that this particular elephant will have tusks like his grandfather, a trunk like that of his great-grandfather, and the temper of his great-grandmother? Is there a special piece of protoplasm in the ovum which has directly descended from each of his thousand ancestors? No. there is not: and we can prove, from what we know of the protein molecule that there is actually not room for them. The theory of "the continuity of the germ plasm," as it is called, which presupposes the descent from generation to generation of an infinitesimal part of the proto-

plasm of each, is a physical impossibility.

Such "determinants" carrying particular properties derived from one or other ancestor, which shall in due time be distributed to one or other tissue or area of the fully-grown individual and shall endow that particular tissue or area with the properties seen in one or other ancestor demands, it will be seen, that every separate feature in the body, even down to the particular markings of the thumb prints (which are alike in no two individuals), shall be present in the fertilized ovum, demands, in short, that not merely the microscopic nucleus of that ovum, but the chromatin or whatever part of it conveys the hereditary characters, shall be made up of these innumerable determinants. Now, according to Weismann, these determinants cannot be simple molecules of matter, but must be molecular groups, and as we have pointed out that living matter is proteidogenous, each individual molecule must be of a size which, according to physicists, is almost visible by the ultra-microscope. Regarded thus, it is a physical impossibility that the minute nucleus of the impregnated ovum can contain all the determinants demanded by this theory. If, therefore, we cannot accept the idea of determinants, is there any other means by which we can visualize the facts of inheritance and of individual variation? This biophoric hypothesis appears to us to afford the only means of explanation at present possible. The elephant ovum develops into an elephant and not into an insect because the elephant ovum is made up, in the main, of molecules of a certain average composition, a ring made up, let us say, of smaller rings each represented by A:

A bird ovum, on the other hand, may be made up of X rings, thus:

The biophoric molecules of an insect ovum might be represented by

$$\stackrel{R}{\underset{R-R}{\bigcap}}$$

These may thus differ one from another not only in general composition (as A is different from R or X), but also in number, and mode of apposition. The fundamental grouping of the molecule of all elephants is the same, thus:

the biophoric molecules of the ovum of one elephant differ from those of another in certain slight modifications of one or more of the constituent parts of the ring, which may be represented as side-chains; thus for one elephant:

for another elephant:

vum nine

and ther why mes ngs?

y of here

this like ier?

etly

not;

hat

ent

oto-

rom

one

dow

ther the

ints

ized leus the mi-

we lual nost

tain

an-

iich

on?

of

nto

ade

ing

as no two individual elephants are identical or can be represented by the same formula, it is evident that progeny of any two will present a modification of the formula seen in either parent; these modifications arising by elimination, interaction, or summation of the characters represented as side-chains.

Having thus dealt with inheritance and the effects of fusion of the male and female elements in the new individual, let us now consider the modifications acquired by environment.

Acquired Modification.—Passing on to the evolution of the individual from the ovum and the differentiation of his various tissues and organs, it must be clearly realized that when the ovum divides into two, each daughter cell has conveyed to it biophoric molecules, and that so these biophoric molecules while coincidently multiplying by the successive

division and multip! cation of the cells of the growing individual come to be distributed to all the tissues of the body. So far as we can see they pass to the germ cells in an unchanged condition, but in the succession of divisions which give rise to the somatic or body cells, the influences to which the successive generations of cells are exposed in the different parts of the growing embryo differ very greatly. It is due to the difference in position plus the difference in foodstuffs and physical and chemical agencies to which the cells are exposed, that the contained biophores become modified, until eventually, the modification becomes so great that instead of these biophores being able to reproduce the whole individual, they now become capable of controlling the formation of only one particular differentiated order of cell.

Following upon this, the general statement may be made that the more pronounced the differentiation of a cell, the less its capacity for reproduction. Yet there are certain cells that are specialized, and can yet reproduce; but they reproduce only their own differentiated and modified kind, gland cell reproducing gland ceil, muscle cell, muscle; and even this multiplication can occur only after the differentiated cell has "undifferentiated" itself again, that is, has reverted to a simpler, less differentiated stage. The cell that has become differentiated, that is, loses the characters it has acquired, and becomes a "vegetative" cell in form, and yet when this cell reproduces, its progeny assume once more the differentiated type characteristic of the adult cell.

FERTILIZATION

We shall take up very briefly some of the facts concerned with fertilization; that it has not hitherto entered into this text, is due to the fact that growth, adaptation, and cell differentiation can proceed without it; study of the lower invertebrate forms indicates that it is, in them, a means of rejuvenation of the biophore, but that it is not an essential to the continuance of the species through considerable numbers of generations. In its simplest phase, conjugation is the direct union of two like individuals; but even low down in the scale we begin to find a differentiation between the male and the female germ cell; the male tends to show itself motile, invasive, while the female tends to be passive, chiefly because the cell is loaded with the yolk necessary for the support of the new individual after fertilization. Of this food material the male element or spermatozoön shows little; it consists of a nucleus, a centrosome, and a small amount of cytoplasm which appears chiefly as the flagellar tail; the male cell is, in fact, of a disproportionate smallness.

From a very early date in the development of the individual ovum the germ cells become marked off from the somatic or body cells; the germ cells remain rich in chromatin, none of which is east out.

The observations of Boveri and others indicate that the cells destined

n

18

ıt

rd

d

S

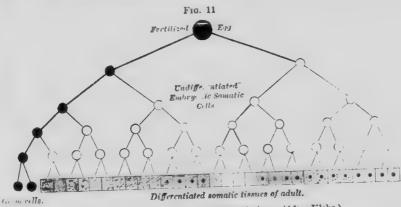
e

n

e

n

to give rise to the tissues in general undergo a process of reduction of their chromatin; very possibly this process of reduction renders them incapable of being totipotential, i. e., of giving rise to the whole individual, leaving them catable only of giving origin to a specific tissue or tissues according to their environment. Nor does it seem that the eventual sexual cells are of necessity absolutely identical in the amount of chromatin which they contain; a study of the spermatozoa, especially of insects, and of the pollen of plants, has shown recently that in any particular instance their spermatozoa may be separated into two approximately equal groups, of which the members of one group contain either one chromosome in excess of the number contained by members of the other group, or one chromosome (accessory chromosome) markedly larger than the corresponding chromosome in that other group. No such difference is observed in connection with the ova, and as these species afford approximately equal numbers



Schema of germ and somatic cell differentiation. (After Klebs.)

of male and female progeny and no other functional difference can be detected or imagined between the two groups of spermatozoa, it is presumed that the one group (that with the accessory chromosome) conveys female, the other male attributes. This conclusion is now becoming generally accepted by biologists.

We have stated that there is no reduction in the chromatin of the andifferentiated germ cells; but we have now to add to this statement. that the generation of germ cells immediately preceding the formation of the ova and spermatozoa does undergo a reduction of chromatin during the process of maturation, so that the mature spermatozoon or oxum contains just one-half he number of chromosomes characteristic of the species (and it will be recalled that this is a fixed number for each species.

In the maturation of the spermatozoön, we may st. oriefly the act that a pair of spermatozoa arises from a secondary spermatocyte, his in turn comes from a primary spermatocyte, this from a spermatogo-

nium, and this from a primordial germ cell, and by the time the spermatozoön is formed it has one-half the normal number of chromosomes. The four cells derived from the primary spermatocyte all become spermatozoa, whereas, in the case of the ovum, the primary oöeyte gives rise also to four cells but only one of them becomes a functional ovum; the other three are degenerate, and are cast out of the cell as polar bodies, and this casting out does not occur till the spermatozoon has entered the oyum. This intracellular occurrence is for the purpose of reducing the chromosomes of the ovum, so that the ovum proper is the only one of the four which remains, and it functionates with its chromosomes reduced to one-half of the number present in the cells of the adult individual. The steps of the process of maturation of the spermatozoon and of the ovum we have omitted, but these intricate "nuclear dances" are evidently a means of ensuring that the chromatin of the original germ cell shall be impartially divided among all the daughter cells-the spermatozoa or ova; and the reduction of the chromosomes brings it about that the fertilized cell, summing the two sets of chromosomes, each reduced by a half, shall begin life with exactly the normal number of chromosomes, and these contributed equally by the two parents. The cytoplasm of the new individual is supplied mainly from the mother, but with the chromosomes (supplied thus with striking equality from both parents) must come the most important of all those factors which we are accustomed to consider in the problem of heredity.

INHERITANCE

Heredity is the conveya . e to the offspring of the properties of the parents and of the parental stock, so that the child inherits familial, racial, and specific characters. But this does not describe the child, because interwoven with heredity is variation, and this of several orders. (1) There is the variation that comes from one's course of life, as is seen in the type that is recognized as the sailor, the farmer, or the undertaker; variations so acquired are known as modifications and can be divided into those acquired in intra-uterine and in postnatal life. (2) There are variations that arise because the individual is the result of amphimixis, i. e., the fusion of the germplasm of two individuals who differ one from the other. The child cannot, on this account, be an exact copy of either parent, but must show variation from each. (3) The molecules of germplasm of two parents are so complicated that their interaction never produces the same result twice; even the thousands of fish from the same spawning differ from one another. Finally, we must admit, that the biophores of the parent which supply the germ cells are prone to variation during the individual life of the parent.

The importance of the problem of heredity in disease is great, and

we make no apology for insisting on its consideration.

The Different Forms of Inheritance (i. e., Heredity Plus Variation). The properties possessed by the individual are these:

1. Individual, i. e., those peculiar to the individual, and not recog-

2. Parental, i. e., properties possessed by and peculiar to one parent nizably inherited. and obviously inherited from that parent.

3. Familial, i. e., properties possessed by and peculiar to the family

1

e

S

8

f

e

e

g

e

0

d

d

e

1.

s.

is

le.

 \mathbf{d}

al

1e

ls

t,

h.

at

1e

r.

Įу

ne

 id

4. Racial, i. e., properties common to a particular race.

One may go farther, and indicate that the individual has specific or ex specie properties, such as those that distinguish him as a human

being from an ape, and even class and order distinctions.

We see that there is an ascending order of fixity in these characters, viz., that, dealing with man, his vertebrate characters are more firmly imprinted on him than his mammalian, his mammalian than his human, his human than his racial, and his racial than his familial characters, and so on. His least imprinted characters (i. e., his individual characters) are those most liable to change, and among them the ones he has possessed longest he gives up least readily.

Racial Characters.-To go no farther back than this, everyone is familiar with racial differences, evidenced by the color of the skin, the shape of the skull, and the stature. In more strictly pathological fields, one may recall the differences in reactive power to certain microbic diseases; thus the Japanese and the native Austrian cattle are less susceptible to tuberculosis than most others; one race of Algerian sheep can scarcely be inoculated with anthrax; negroes and American Indians are highly susceptible to tuberculosis, and so on. In non-microbic diseases, it is a matter of common knowledge that the Hebrew is prone to diabetes; the French, to functional nervous diseases; the English, to gout, and the American to disorders of digestion. To say that these are due to the particular mode of life is precisely what we wish to indicate: primarily they must be regarded as the outcome of particular environment.

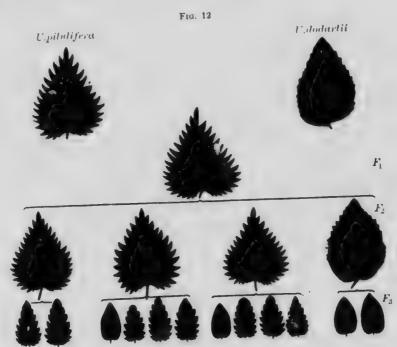
Familial Characters.- Not only do the members of a family tend to resemble one another, but there are certain distinctive traits that are found in many successive generations—a peculiarity of stature, a hape of some special part—"that thou art my son," said Falstaff, "I have partly thy mother's word but chiefly polish hanging of thy nether lip"-or a morbid condition such as albinism (deficiency of cutaneous pigment), color blindness, hemophilis hability to excessive hemorrhage as a result of insignificant injury), r actual malformation such as the possession of an extra digit. When we consider that such peculiarities as the last have been traced in a mily for centuries, despite the constant introduction of new blood, it evident that these are dominant properties possessed by the germplasm particular strains. The further study of some of these characters eveals the fact that there are some of them which appear in one sex and are transmitted by the other. Hemophilia, for example, rarely appears in the females of an affected family, but frequently in their sons. Characteristics may skip a generation or more, so that the appearance of such in children whose parents were free from but whose grandparents or preceding forebears were affected by them, is designated atavism.

Parental and Individual Characters.—The characters that descend from the parents to an individual may be blended, that is, he may possess a mixture of the paternal and maternal features, intermediate between the two, or they may be particulate, that is, he may resemble one and not the other. There are certain parental characters that ordinarily cannot blend, and sex is the most striking of these. Less important is such a character as the color of the eyes; one parent may have blue and one brown eyes; the children generally do not show an intermediate color, but either blue or brown eyes. One of the two parents, in properties that are unlike or antagonistic, is apt to be dominant, and the other is then recessive.

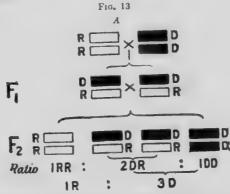
Mendel's Law.-Without going deeply into the particulars of inheritance in the matter of antagonistic characters, we shall indicate the exactness with which nature works, as it was observed by the Austrian monk Mendel, whose work has in this century been revived. Let us take for example, as he did, the flowers of the pea; some strains have white flowers, others colored. Color is a positive acquirement. and whiteness means latency or loss of this acquirement. If now red and white flowers are crossed upon one another, the hybrids which result follow a law in regard to manifesting this particular character and the first generation is red. The red color is dominant, and there is no indication of the white color—the white being recessive. But in this experiment the white color is only latent, and this fact will appear if this first generation (red) be allowed to fertilize itself; among its progeny one-quarter of the individuals will be white, that is, will show the recessive quality. If this white individual be self-fertilized again, all its progeny will be white. Now of this second generation of four plants (three red and one white), of the three red, one will give only red progeny, the other two of this second generation will have the characters of the first generation of hybrids, that is, they will give rise in the next generation to one dominant, one recessive, and two hybrids that again will produce this same percentage of dominants, hybrids, and recessives. This will be understood better from Fig. 12.

The formula may be set down as follows: if D represent a plant with the dominant red and its germplasm and R one with the recessive white and its germplasm, then the first generation of crosses of D and R will all be DR, and if these DR individuals be crossed the result will be x(DR + DR) = x(DD + 2DR + RR), or in other words, a dominant crossed with a recessive gives in the second generation, as regards this one particular feature, one dominant, two hybrids, and one recessive, and of these, each dominant will give nothing but dominants.

each recessive nothing but recessives, and each hybrid the same proportion of dominant, hybrid, and recessive.



Leaf characters of hybrids of *Urtica pilulifera* and *U. dodartii* (Correns): F_1 , of first hybrid generation; F_2 and F_3 , of second and third self-fertilisations. The dentate character of the leaf edge is seen to be a dominant property.



of Mendel's law for a single pair of "antagonistic" properties: A, the results of hybridization of a pure dominant (D) with a pure recessive (R) form. (Bateson.)

The essential point to be grasped here is that while one property dominates, the other is only latent, and may show itself in the absence the dominant property or mingled with it in a blend. The law, too, not hold in the crossing of distinct species, and we quote it only

rely

heir ear-

ınd-

ited

end sess reen and rily ant

olue ternts, **ant,**

of cate the ved. ains ent, now nich

cter

iere

But

will

ong will ized tion

give ave will and nts, 12.

vith

hite

will be

ant

ırds ces-

nts,

to indicate how accurate a basis even with our imperfect knowledge we have for the consideration of problems of heredity in the human species.

Atavism. This is the appearance in a given generation of traits not present in the parent but characteristic of earlier generations, and is seen to be in accordance with Mendel's law. If, however, we find traits appear which are characteristic of an earlier state in the phylogeny of the species, we designate this reversion. In reversionary inheritance or reversion we have always a return to a lower type a development not completely up to the present type but attaining a stage characteristic of an earlier period in the development of the species. An example of such is the appearance of a microcephalic child or of a child with indications of persistent gill clefts; not all such cases are true reversion, for some may be merely examples of intrauterine disturbance. A perfect example of reversion is found in Darwin's experiments and those of others, in which when widely differing breeds of pigeons were crossed, the progeny, disregarding, as it were, all the recent acquirements, have appeared exactly similar to the form of wild pigeon from which all the different varieties took their origin. One seems to see, from time to time, the offspring of parents of widely diverse stocks showing this reversion to a lower type.

Familial Degeneration.—This is a form of degeneration which we ascribe not to the interaction of two antagonistic germplasms, but to a defect in one or both in the degenerates by toxic influences, which modify the constitution of the pare the germ cells. The class so produced we designate degenerates the product of those leading vicious lives. The degenerate is of poor bodily development, the brain is smaller than normal, its convolutions less marked, there is little capacity for prolonged thought, and a lack of moral sense in all these points, there is a resemblance to a lower, less-developed race of our species. Such are apt, in turn, to produce children who are idiots, stillborn, or monstrous.

Spontaneous Variation; Mutation. -- We have previously been dealing with conditions appearing in the ancestor, and conveyed to the offspring; but there appear in the offspring conditions and relationships that are new to the stock, that have arisen, and these are called **sponta**neous variations. The clover has a tri-partite leaf, but a four-leaved clover is occasionally found, and does not mean that the ancestors of the clover plant had a quadri-partite leaf. We describe this as a spontaneous variation. We find the same thing occurring in the human species; supernumerary mammae, fingers, or vertebrae occur, and, once present, tend to be inherited. The first of these in any series to happen, was a mutation, a spontaneous variation; and botanists have been able to show that a new variety will suddenly arise, and self-fertilized, remain true to its new type. Some say that evolution works in this discontinuous way, and that a new variety or new species does not come by slow gradation, but by sudden genesis. It may be, of course, that we have here an example of cumulative inheritance; that is, where a blend instead of showing a feature intermediate between

two differing parental features, shows this feature exaggerated in the direction of, but far beyond that feature in one parent; but we have also to remember that mutations have been obtained by various physical effects, e. g., the influence of chemical agents acting upon ova.

The Theory of Inheritance.—The consideration of fertilization and the processes that precede it leads us to suppose that each parent contributes one-half to the germ cell of the offspring; . If the chromosomes are of paternal, half of maternal origin, and the heritable material is evidently in these chromosomes and any theory of inheritance must deal with the chromosomes and their constituents—that is, with the biophoric molecules conveyed in the chromosomes.

We may group the various forms of inheritance, most of which have been referred to, as follows:

(.1) Presenting itself also in the offspring:

we

ies.

aits

ms,

We

the

ary

e---

ga

the

alic

ich

ra-

m's

eds

the

of

zin. lelv

we

but

lify

ced

res.

ller

for

ere

are

us.

eal-

the

ips

ıta-

ved

ors s a

an

nd,

ries

ists

 ind

ion ies

he,

ce;

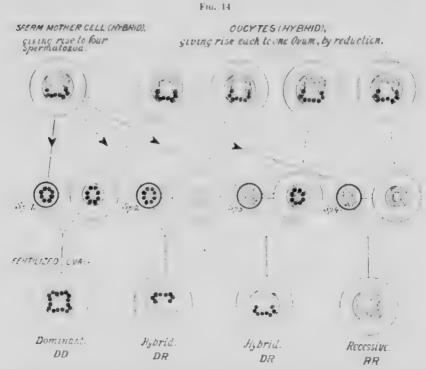
een

- Dominant, wholly replacing the corresponding but divergent feature seen in the other parent.
- 2. Blended, this particular feature in the offspring being intermediate in character between that exhibited in the two parents.
- 3. In mosaic form, in certain cells the paternal, in others the maternal feature being dominant.
- Blended and excessive, the feature being more pronounced than in either parent.
- (B) Unrecognizable in the offspring:
 - Recessive, and replaced by corresponding feature derived from the other parent, but as such latent, capable of reappearing in later generations.
 - 2. Absent, wholly wanting in subsequent generations, the absence being due either:
 - (a) To casting out of an inherited condition, or
 - (b) To the feature seen in the parent being an acquirement and not an inheritance.

Or, on the other hand, considering the individual, we note that as regards any particular feature or group of features, there may be:

- (d) Normal Inheritance: The offspring not being in this respect advanced beyond either parent, but at the same time not fallen behind.
- (B) Progressive Inheritance: The offspring being advanced beyond the more advanced of the two parents and exhibiting either:
 - 1. Excessive development of the condition or conditions already observable in one or both parents, or
 - 2. Spontaneous variation (mutation), i. e., the appearance of conditions not previously noted in either parent or either parental stock.
- (C) Retrogressive or Reversionary Inheritance: The offspring reverting as regards any feature or group of features to a lower stage in the phylogeny of the species.
- (D) Non-inheritance: Apparent or actual.

It will be seen that qualities conveyed by the parental biophores may be retained even if in a recessive, latent condition. The fact that the Mendelian hybrid after a number of generations can produce a purely dominant or purely recessive individual shows this, and conjugation cannot, therefore, be a chemical union of two biophores with a resulting new biophoric substance. Nor can there be separate biophores representing each individual ancestor. The following is our



Schema to illustrate Mendel's law regarding the second hybrid generation to illustrate the effects of reduction of the chromosomes in oögenesis and spermatogenesis. Each germ cell (first row' is originally provided with chromosomes of paternal (black) and of maternal origin (white). The existence of the law demands that in the process of reduction the ovum and the spermatosoon (second row) become provided with chromosomes (and biophores) that are of either paternal or of maternal descent, but not of both; although, as above noted, the biophores may in their growth and development have attracted side-chains formed primarily by the opposed order of biophores, to the exclusion of those originally belonging to them.

conception of the process of conjugation by the fertilized ovum. We may picture these disphores as lying side by side in a common cytoplasm from which they extract and to which they give ions, so that some side-chains are being built up and some dissociated. Of these side-chains many are identical, common to the molecule of each parent; these possess the fixed characters of the species, the race, the order; others are unlike, and these evidently mark the

individuality of each parent. The molecules and their side-chains will have certain affinities for the side-chains of the molecules of the germplasm of the other parent, and with the constant interchange which we consider the essence of the life process, some of these will be incorporated into the ring and others will be cast out completely. There will be a kind of contest between the parental biophores, and as a result a re-arrangement, so that the characters represented by side-chains with strong affinities will appear in the offspring, and characters represented by side-chains with weak affinities will be cast out and will not appear, nor even exist in the new germplasm. Without increasing the number of individual molecules, this semi-chemical process allows a constant number of biophores to bear properties of many generations.

If then one considers a scheme such as that afforded by Fig. 14 it will be seen that in the process of reduction undergone by their chromosomes the mature oöcyte and spermatozoön each undergo a process of casting out of chromosomes derived originally from one or other grandparent. As the same order of chromosomes is not cast out in each ovum and spermatozoön, the data obtained from Mendelian experiments show us that the casting of process evidently in each case involves the biophore derived from one or other of the good-parents. With promiscoous mating of ova and spermatozoo alone can give us the Mendelian formula.

We think such an explanation suffices to show how hereditary characters of many generations may be conveyed in a small number of complex molecules; how these molecules may be altered (being proteidogenous molecules) by amphimixis (that is, mingling with other molecules) and by environment (that is, by interchange with the surrounding cytoplasm); how they may lose entirely certain sidechains, and thereby certain properties, even if these are hereditary.

The Inheritance of Acquired Characters. Are acquired characters transmitted? is a long-argued question. Contrary to the dominant teaching of the morphologists we think that some, but not all, may be. It has been indicated before that we picture the biophoric molecule as in interaction with the cytoplasm that surrounds it, giving up to it and taking from it ions, and this in its turn interacting with the surrounding medium, the lymph. The biophoric molecule weaves into itself, thus, some flavor of its surroundings, and can transmit whatever it has. It will be evident that there are some kinds of acquirement that can be transmitted, and some that cannot. The so-called "maternal impression," by which a pregnant woman seeing or imagining something which mentally impresses her, is supposed to transmit it to the offspring she is carrying, is a myth. "Use acquirements" are probably not transmitted; by this we mean that the blacksmith's arm is not reproduced in an unusually large biceps in his son. We have not as yet definite evidence that acquired immunity can be transmitted, although the offspring can obtain immunity during intra-uterine growth; to prove that immunity can be transmitted, it would be necessary to have only the male parent immunized, and to find the progeny so immunized. It might almost be predicted that immunity would be transmitted according to the Mendelian law, some of the progeny being immune, others not. Mutilations, loss of limbs, etc., are not transmitted. On the contrary, there is a series of retrogressive changes in the tissues, the result of toxic influence, which does seem to be able to affect the progeny. For example, it seems as if the drunkard begets children who are the worse for his habit; we need scarcely point out how difficult it is to prove this statistically, because there are so many factors to consider, such as these: the mother, being sound, may dominate the offspring, and the child be normal; if the child be abnormal, can we say that the father's alcoholism was the prime cause? May it not be that the father's alcoholism and the child's weakness are alike expressions of an hereditary taint in previous generations of the father's family? Or, again, may not the child's incapacity be due to the misery and want that so often go with alcoholism in the homes of the poor? It is not easier in the case of tuberculosis and syphilis; but in all these cases, as well as in poisoning by such chemicals as lead, series of cases do present a high percentage of monstrosities, stillbirths, short-lived, and mentally defective children. While we think that the germ cells of the parent are modified by modifications in the constitution of the parental blood and lymph, we must admit that the germ cells live a relatively latent existence; that in them metabolism must, for considerable periods, be at a low state of activity, and that this low degree of activity will tend largely, but not entirely, to preserve from change the biophores of the germ cells, because the interchange of the side-chains of the biophore with those of the cytoplasm will not be very active, and the environment will thus affect the biophore only to a limited extent. That it affects it even in the slightest degree is sufficient for our contention.

CHAPTER - 1 1

THE CAUSES OF DISEASE

In the cell, the organ, or the individual, any deviation from the normal is a pathological condition.

The normal is the state, customary to a series of individuals, in which they perform their functions easily and unconsciously, and this constitutes health; this normal, naturally, will not be fixed, but will be a varying state, and will be only arbitrarily separated from the state on

which it borders, viz., disease.

2

The diseased state arises in the individual (or the cell or the organ) either from the parent, in which case it is inherited, or as a result of some influence after the genesis of the individual, in which case it is acquired. The genesis of the individual is the moment of fecundation of the ovum; and any pathological state that is entered upon after this, is acquired, unless it be the result of qualities which were in the germplasm of one or other parent or which arose by the junction of these. If it be such a result, the pathological condition is an inherited one, even though the appearance of the pathological condition be delayed for years (as is most often the case with gout); an example of this, indeed, is "old age," an inherited pathological condition which the individual has potentially possessed all his life. On the other hand, an acquired pathological condition may arise while the embryo is still but a few weeks old, and this, arising from an intra-uterine disturbance, is a "congenital" but not an "inherited" pathological condition. In differentiating between inherited and acquired conditions, it is necessary to date the life of the individual from his beginning and not from the comparatively accidental period of his birth, which, even among mammals, is a varying point of time. Yet since birth is the most important change of environment that the individual undergoes, we may distinguish acquired pathological conditions as either antenatal or postnatal, and those few which are due to something happening to the individual at the moment of birth as parturient.

While pathological states may be separated, as above, into groups which differ from one another in the period in which the causative agent acts, it is necessary to indicate what these causative agents are, and it is a perfectly sound method to consider them as direct and predisposing. Fifty years ago, physicians knew many predisposing causes but few direct ones; today we are finding out one direct cause after another (witness the specific microorganisms), and we tend to lose ight of the predisposing or assisting causes. For example, many individuals carry in the throat the germ which we count the direct or exciting cause of pneumonia; the assisting cause apparently must act before a man is attacked by pneumonia, and this assisting cause is not the same in all cases, and frequently is entirely intangible; we hide our ignorance behind the term "lessened resistance," and although this may be as yet only a name, we must not fail to keep in mind that assisting, indirect causes exist. It even happens that the same agent may be at one time an exciting cause and at another a predisposing cause; such is cold, which at one time free 'es a tissue, and at another, paves the way for the inroad of pneumonia.

Predispositions are thus the result of the presence of assisting causes, or of the absence of preventing properties. When we say that there is in an individual a predisposition to tuberculosis, we mean this. We have in our mind a series of generations of a family in which cases of tuberculosis arise more frequently than in the same number of individuals taken at random; in this family we note certain peculiarities of build, of habit of life, of constitution, which we suspect have a relation to this increased tendency to tuberculosis. An individual possessing all these peculiarities may, it is true, escape tuberculosis, but his chance of escaping it we hold to be less on account of his possessing these peculiarities and the history of increased incidence of tuberculosis that has arisen in conjunction with them. We say that such a person possesses a diathesis.

INHERITED PATHOLOGICAL STATES

It may be repeated that the results of all the morbid influences which bear upon the fœtus in the womb are acquired; mutilations are never inherited, and the statement may be safely made that infectious disease in the parent cannot be inherited by the child although it may be communicated to the child in utero. The cases in which children are born with tuberculosis, syphilis, smallpox, or other such diseases, are cases in which the child has contracted the disease while in the mother's womb. These diseases are transmitted by some germ, known or yet to be discovered, and to say that they could be inherited means that the germ must be in the spermatozoön or the ovum as a foreign body, for we cannot imagine it as being incorporated with the protoplasm of the spermatozoon or the ovum and retaining its individual power to cause disease; but it is not conceivable that a minute germ cell with a bacillus or a protozoön inside could perform the delicate function of fecundation. As readily should we look for good time keeping in the hatter's watch, which, it will be remembered, was fall of the best butter. It is true that in animals where there is a large volk with the egg, the yolk may become infected almost immediately after fertilization, as happens in the ticks that cause Texas fever, and as is seen in the eggs of experimentally tuberculous hens; but the human ovum is

so minute, and so free from yolk that infection of it can scarcely happen at so early a moment; nor if it could so happen, would it lessen the truth of the statement that it becomes an example of a pathological

condition, acquired, not inherited. But if we say that such diseases as tuberculosis or syphilis are not truly inherited, we must yet admit that children are born with certain stigmata, such as Hutchinson's teeth, which, while not directly, are indirectly due to syphilis; these lesions exist in the child because syphilis has existed in the parent, and may be called if not syphilitic, at least, parasyphilitic lesions. We may in the same way recognize paratuberculous lesions, such as a thin skin, fine hair, or a weak frame.

Where a parent is constitutionally diseased we may have the effects of that disease manifested in various ways, depending upon the extent of the disease in the one parent, and the relative activity of the germplasm of the other parent:

1. Sterility, no offspring being produced.

2. Imperfect development of offspring, giving rise to (a) intrauterine death, or (b) physical malformation, (c) lowered resistance, of so frequent occurrence as to be called "paraspecific" in its nature.

3. Imperfect development of offspring, appearing later than the succeeding generation.

No apparent effects.

5,

e

e f

n

e

n

e

n

n

١.

e

n

r

1

J

ŧ e

n

An interesting possibility is that, whereas undesirable qualities may thus be handed down to succeeding generations, there may also be transmitted the quality of combating a certain disease, so that while "paraspecific" qualities may appear as a result of inheritance, 'antispecific" characters may also be seen, and the offspring be less liable to a disease because the parent has suffered from it.

The Inheritance of Abnormalities Passed Down from Previous Generations.—If abnormalities can be transmitted, it will readily be understood that the oftener they appear in a series of progenitors, the more certain they will be to exist in offspring. Without attempting abnormality becomes in this way more fixed, to explain its origin ter each appearance; such are polydactylism more likely to 1.03 not yet evident if color blindness and hemoand hypospadia philia be such as a cal inheritances, but they probably are. To go a step farther, there are nervous imperfections that appear to us merely as predispositions or tendencies, that are really dependent upon the anatomical lack of certain nerve-cell groups; some of these nervous imperfections are now classed as instances of ablotrophy (Gowers), a premature exhaustion of nerve-cell groups, but this failure in complete function may really have a strictly anatomical, if yet unseen

Diatheses.-While we deny the transmission of infectious disease by the germplasm, we admit that an attack of infection may modify the next germplasm for better or worse, in the direction of giving the offspring greater protection or greater liability. We are unable to

localize this quality, and probably we shall never understand what it is, but as a result of it there is the existence of "racial" diatheses, or, stated otherwise, the absence of racial immunities. The Hebrew has a certain racial freedom from tuberculosis, and a racial liability to metabolic disturbances such as diabetes and, in the female, obesity: the white rat has a racial freedom from anthrax, and many carnivorous animals from evil results of septic wounds. A man's offspring inherits from him qualities which render it liable to or exempt from a certain disease just as it inherits a likeness of feature. We cannot take two needles and tease out of an ovum the particular piece of protoplasm that possesses these potentialities; but there is something actual in the germplasm, in the relation of one part to another, or in the molecular grouping, that constitutes a real basis for the "diathesis"; and when we go farther and find that diseases such as hysteria and epilepsy, which we frequently name functional diseases, are inherited, we realize that there may be a chemical and cellular basis for the transmission of "nervous diatheses"; but if we cannot find the organic change in the tissues of the diseased individual, it is yet more futile to attempt to find it in the germplasm.

INTRA-UTERINE AND PARTURIENT CAUSES

Morbid Conditions Acquired in the Womb. – Widely varying results accrue from influences acting upon the embryo or the fœtus, and although the morbid states will be discussed from the standpoint of causes rather than results, it is well to indicate what these results are.

1. Death of the embryo, with absorption or "blighted ovum" or

abortion, the fœtus being imperfect: or premature labor.

2. Monstrosities.

3. Malformations of excess or of defect.

- 4. Impaired vitality, with imperfect development, without gross anatomical change: (a) General infantilism, etc. (b) Systemic—especially of the nervous system.
 - 5. Cachexia.
 - 6. Infection.
 - 7. Traumatism.

On the other hand, if we classify the causes that lead to the above results, we find that there are certain influences acting on the embryo, as follows:

- 1. Physical and mechanical causes, including injuries.
- 2. Malnutrition.
- 3. Intoxications.
- 4. Infections.
- 1. Physical and Mechanical Causes. By violent shaking, the eggs of certain invertebrates in the four- or eight-celled stage may have the individual cells wholly separated, with the result that each cell may

give rise to a complete individual, or partly separated with the production of double or multiple monsters. Constant vibration may produce abnormalities, presumably by disturbing the relation of the molecules one to another; but we know of no parallel facts in the care of the mammalian embryo. We do know, however, that when the amnion is incomplete there may be unequal pressure brought to bear upon the embryo, or adhesions may form between embryo and amnion, producing malformations; and that occasionally, the movements of of the cord, so that limbs are thereby the feetus may result in ki amputated. Fætal fractures occur without any external traumatism, and are, in such cases, due to abnormal fragility of the bones.

2. Malnutrition. Beyond the simple statement that malnutrition of the mother may cause puny development and weakly constitution of the child we cannot go. Definite anatomical defects are probably

at

es,

M.

ty

у;

us

ts

in

vo

m

in

e-

ıd y,

ze

n

in

)t

ts

e.

r

When there is disease of the placenta also, nutritional defects in not so caused. the fœtus are very readily seen, because oxygenation of fœtal blood is imperfect, and foetal death may ensue. Even where a monochorial twin pregnancy exists, that is, where there is a common chorion and fused placenta, the more vigorous twin may usurp more than its share of the placental circulation until finally it drives its blood by anastomosing vessels into the umbilical artery of its weaker companion, whose heart fails to develop, and whose weak circulation gives rise to ædema of its tissues; the feebler twin may thus be born acardiac (without a

3. Intoxications.—It has been experimentally proved that poisons, heart). such as lead, mercury, arsenic, carbon monoxide, morphine, and alcohol pass through the placenta and can be found in the fœtal tissues. In lead poisoning the offspring is frequently idiotic, imbecile or epileptic; and it has been shown that where the mothers were exposed to lead absorption, 88 pregnancies resulted in only 12 healthy children; in 32 pregnancies where the father alone had been exposed to lead poisoning only 3 of the offspring survived their third year. In a large series of alcoholic mothers, it was found that the percentage of abortions, stillbirths, and children dying before the third year, was nearly two and one-half times as great as normal. Where the mother became progressively a victim to alcohol, the high death rate of the later offspring and the lowered vitality of the living children became more marked.

4. Infections.—When the mother suffers from an infectious disease, the absorption of toxins by the child in the womb is often sufficiently great to result in its death, a state of affairs identical with the cases just described. But occasionally, though not often, the infective agent finds its way into the fœtal tissues, and the child is born with the disease which afflicted the mother. With doubtful cares carefully excluded, there yet remain instances of the transmission in this way of syphilis (the mother alone being infected), tuberculosis, varicella, variola (though not vaccinia), measles, scarlatina, erysipelas, rheumatic fever, typhoid fever, chotera, epidemic cerebrospinal meningitis, influenza, relapsing fever, malaria, and yellow fever. The explanation of these cases is probably that a gross lesion of the barrier between the maternal and fœtal circulations occurred, and not that the causative agent "filtered through."

The Effects of Placental Disease upon the Fœtus.—The placenta is essentially a part of the fœtus, and is a mass of finger-like projections (the villi) of the outer coat of the fœtal sac into the uterine wall; the epithelium of these finger-like projections has great phagocytic power, and absorbs the tissue of the uterus until each finger-like process comes to lie in a large blood sinus of the maternal organ. Each fing. like process contains a vascular loop and the fœtal blood flowing in this loop exchanges with the maternal blood, oxygen and other diffusible materials through the wall of the villus.

It is obvious that these finger-like processes, with their phagocytic power tend to weaken the walls of the maternal sinuses, so that hemorrhage is apt to occur; in fact, normally, hemorrhages do occur, forming accessory saes into which new villi make their way; with heightened maternal blood pressure or with maternal tissues ill-nourished, extensive hemorrhage may occur. Such blood being effused gives no oxygen or nutrition to the factal blood, and by its very presence prevents, wholly or partly, the normal circulation, so that the foctus may perish from asphyxia. This is a cause of premature labor and stillbirth. If the hemorrhage be not sufficiently severe to bring this about, it will, nevertheless, be followed by thrombosis, and finally, by fibrosis of the areas affected. This will reduce the area available for the nutrition of the fœtus, which will necessarily be impaired. Impaired nutrition of the fortal structures may be exemplified in disease of the fingerlike processes, the villi themselves; they are at times œdematous, cystic, or they may become partly fibrosed, any of which conditions may give rise to pressure upon the vascular loops, with consequent lessening of the efficiency of the circulation. The nutrition and growth of the fœtus thus appear to depend directly upon the amount of good placental tissue, and the more numerous the villi, and the more active they are in phagocytic properties, the better will be the nutrition and the greater the growth of the child.

Of infections of the placenta the most important is syphilis. In this, there is cellular overgrowth of the villi with cedema, and both of these features tend to increase the size of the placenta. Thus in syphilities, the placenta may weigh half as much as the child, although in normal persons its weight is about one-fifth. A puny child, of course, is partly responsible for this altered ratio. Multiple small abscesses are also frequently found in the syphilitic placenta, and the co-existence of these with the changes mentioned above is characteristic. To the eye, the placenta is large, pale, and may have yellowish-white fibroid areas. A further character in syphilis is the leukocytic infiltration of the umbilical cord.

Hydramnios (excess of amniotic fluid) often arises in syphilities, al. bough cardiac defects of the fœtus may also cause it; hypamnios (deficiency of amniotic fluid) is also sometimes a result of syphilis.

a.

se

ıal

nt

ta

('-

11;

ie 0=

h

V-

er.

ic

Γ-

ď

·e

11

s,

h If

l, e

n

3,

S

h

d e

n

n

h

n

h

S

e

e

f

At abnormally long cord may become knotted, and so obstructed; or it may wind around the fœtus compressing or grooving the body or limbs, the compression being associated with the atrophy consequent upon obstructed blood flow; an abnormally short cord may interfere with labor; and, finally, the amnion may be fused to the fœtus, giving rise to bands and so interfering with the growth of some part, or by obstructing veins or lymphatics may even cause a localized giant growth.

The Causes of Pathological States Acquired During Parturition.—
The causes of these are mechanical, traumatic or infectious. Mechanical causes are either shortness of the cord, preventing descent or producing strangulation, or undue narrowness of the pelvic channel causing prolonged labor and the results that arise therefrom. Traumatic causes are the manual or instrumental aids that may be necessary to complete the process of parturition; such also is the pressure that produces hematoma of the scalp; such the accidents that bring about fractures or dislocations of bones, or birth palsies or hydrocephalus. The chief infectious cause is the presence of pathogenic organisms in the genital tract, especially the gonococcus, leading to ophthalmia. Finally, improper treatment of the umbilical cord may lead to hemorrhage, local suppuration, or to general bacteriemia.

MONSTROSITIES AND ABNORMALITIES

The terms denote grave anatomical departures from the normal, either general or local, and the term monstrosity is applied to the more pronounced of these. Departures from the anatomical normal consist of variations either in the direction of excess or of defect, or of altered relative position of parts.

Abnormalities of Excess.—This may show itself in excess of the individual or in numerical excess.

Individual excess may be (a) universal, $i.\ e.$, giantism; (b) lateral, a.., where one side is larger than the other, as if there had been unequal division when the first two blastomeres were formed; or (c) local, where one member or organ is markedly larger than the standard set by the rest of the body. Giantism applies to those human individuals who are more than 200 cm, high, that is, 6 feet $6\frac{1}{2}$ inches, a height that is estally due to the great length of the legs. Giants usually spring from families in which the individuals are of medium height. Lateral lantism cannot well be extreme. Local giantism may either be true of the results of the legs. Thus, localized elephantiasis of a limb or macroglossia or macrodactyly (where a finger is abnormally large) may

be due to obstruction of the lymph channels, and consequent overgrowth of connective tissues. Where, however, there is not only macrodactyly but duplication of fingers or a tendency thereto, it is safe to assume that there has been a redundancy of vegetative matter at the growing point. **Hypertrichosis** (hairiness) and **lipomatosis** (general obesity) are to be explained by a combination of inheritance and metabolic nodifications; precocity in the development of the muscular and general ve systems appears also to be associated with aberrations in development of the ductless glands.

Numerical excess includes a wide range of abnormalities from multiple

births to partial duplication of a phalanx.

Twins. Twins may be dichorial (heteroöphal) or monochorial (mono-ophal). In the former, each child has its own membranes and placenta, although the two placentas may ultimately fuse. The children may or may not be identical in sex; they may or may not closely resemble one another; in fact, they obviously arise from two separate ova fertilized at the same period. Should the dichorial twins be of the same sex, and very much alike in characteristics, it may be that two ova from the same follicle have been fertilized, for multiple ova in a follicle do occur; there is even one other possibility, that a single ovum after fertilization has divided into two, and that the two halves become separately implanted in the uterus. Superfectation, in which the embryos are of different ages, obviously can arise only from ova discharged and

fertilized at different periods.

Monochorial twins are rarer than dichorial. They have the same chorion, the same placenta, are of the same sex, and if equally developed, much alike. As the chorion is the outer wall of the ovum, it is evident that here the same ovum has given rise to two individuals. Such twins may even have identical abnormalities, such as spina bifida or hypospadias or right-sided hydrocele. Experiment upon invertebrates and even upon the lower vertebrates has demonstrated the possibility of one ovum giving rise to two individuals, and the eggs in development may even be shaken apart, when dwarfed individuals arise from the fractions of the original individual. The possibilities to which monochorial twins are due are, then, these: (1) the two nuclei of one ovum may be separately fertilized, or (2) a fertilized ovum may break in two at a very early stage, as for example, when it is twocelled, or (3) a cleavage of the germinal area at a comparatively late period may give rise to two primitive streaks upon the one germinal area.

Unequal Twins.— This covers a number of cases in which a common feature is that one of the twins is normally formed; the other may be a lump of flesh, with smaller warty projections on it (not unlike a potato with small supernumerary tubers upon it), whose only claim to recognition is that the umbilical cord is attached to it; this is the feetus amorphus. Sometimes there is a fair indication of the lower limbs but no head (feetus acephalus), or the feetus may consist of little

more than the cherub-like head (foctus acormus); the absence of a heart in many of these classes leads to their being called acardiac in addition to the other distinctive names. In some cases, like foctus acormus, the foctus li—directly upon the placenta without the intervention of any umbilical cord.

v e

t

ıl

.1

ľ

S

e

y le re a le re a le re a le re

le l, it h

P-

e

15

ls

ei

Ί.

e

al

H

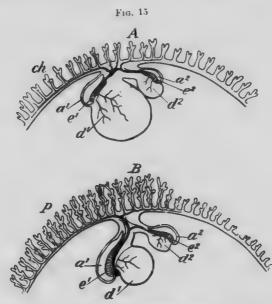
е

a

m

e

er le The cause of these acardiac monstrosities is that the circulation in the fœtus concerned is a reversed one, because the stronger of the twins in time comes to be driving the blood through both; the allantoic and placental vessels become freely anastomosed, and the stronger



Marchand's schema of mode of development of acardiac monsters. In A the chorion ch is already a cloped; the yolk sac has divided into two unequal halves, d^{i} and d^{2} , in consequence of which the one embryo c^{i} receives through the yolk vessels more abundant nourishment than does the other abundance. As a result, its allantoic circulation develops more actively, and the later developing antered after yold the smaller embryo anastomoses with it. B, later stage; the allantoic vessels of surp the whole of the chorion, the smaller embryo gaining its blood entirely through the anastomosis are allantoic artery with that of c^{i} , and this, therefore, in the reverse direction to the normal current and a^{i} indicate the amniotic sacs of the embryos.

twin drives blood progressively into more and more of the anastomosis, tinally, into the weaker embryo's umbilical artery and aorta; hence, it is distributed in the branches and nourishes the tissues of the weaker embryo; it may be sufficient to nourish a part only, and the rest of the weaker embryo's frame undergoes aplasia and atrophy; the heart of the weaker embryo by arrested action, incomplete activity, and relatively impaired nourishment fails to develop, but in its losing battle, it yet keeps as its own province the head end of the embryo, and it nourishes this so badly, that the cephalic end is more prone to be maldeveloped than the caudal end—fœtus acardiacus anceps.

Triplets and Other Multiple Births. Triplets may be monochorial, or monochorial and dichorial, or even polychorial; the rules as to identity of sex and similarity of characteristics which apply to twins, apply also to triplets. Seven children at a birth is reported upon reliable (?) authority. In the cat, the monochorial development of five kittens is recorded.

Double Monsters.—There has been for many years much discussion upon the reasons for diplogenesis, and in a field where so many theories exist, we venture to put forward but one, which we term the "growing-point" theory. This is based upon our knowledge of the growth of a

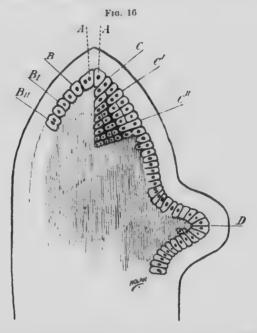


Diagram of section of the growing point of a plant, A, A, the apical cells, which continually divide, giving off backward a series of cells; B, C, which cells divide as in B^1 , B^0 , to form the cells of the vegetative or cambial layer; these cells again, as in C, C^1 , and C^0 , divide at right angles to the former plane to give origin eventually to the functional cells of the stem (or root); D, development of a secondary growing point.

plant. If we consider that the first cell is divided into two and then four, and each of the four again into two, we find that the two poles tend to become separated, one from the other, and each pole is advanced by the cells that are built in behind it. There are in the plant, from an early stage, two primary growing points—the superior forming the stalk and the inferior the root; the entire plant arises from one or other of these "points," and the growing point is the most advanced part of the plant; the plant increases by growth backward and not forward from the growing point, whose position is thus fixed at the apex.

The growing point does not grow forward but is projected forward

by the intercalation of the daughter cells behind it, and the daughter cells are able to divide in a transverse way and give rise to the special tissue cells. Secondary growing points can subsequently arise from the daughter cells, but their vegetative function must be exercised now in a direction more or less lateral, and no longer axial. Similarly in animals there are two "growing points"; the superior growing point is represented in the adult mammal by tissue about the situation of the pituitary body, and the inferior by tissue somewhere in the These two points lie beyond the extremities of the chorda dorsalis, an organ whose prominence in the early embryo and whose apparent unimportance in the formed fœtus, suggest that its function may be partly the keeping of the growth axially, as a scaffolding might do, in the earliest stages. These two growing points from the very origin of the embryo are being projected apart, and the successive daughter cells given off from these give origin to the different organs of the body, and even form secondary growing points for the

There is thus a close parallelism to be noted between the plant and limbs. the animal embryo, nor need this be unduly disturbed by the fact that symmetry in the plant is generally radial, and in the animal lateral, because there are numerous exceptions to both rules, and the lateral symmetry is the fundamental one, because cell division is binary.

But there is a fundamental difference to be observed. Whereas in the plant the primary growing points are active through the whole of existence, in the animal they cease to functionate as such when the anlagen1 of the brain and of the rest of the nervous system have been

If the superior and inferior growing points did not cease their activity, developed. we would have the following state of affairs: the expansions of the neural canal which form the ventricles of the brain would have already formed themselves, and the superior growing point which is situated near the site of the pituitary body would blossom out into a mass of This may actually happen. Where is space to be found for it? There is none available, and it forces its way through the roof of the mouth to the outside as a large pediculated mass, which is called epignathus. These masses have at times been found to contain bone, and tissues representative of all three original layers, epi-, meso-, and hypoblast. The fact of limbs actually developing on such a mass lends additional weight to the supposition that ... is but a continuance of the original superior growing point.

A precisely analogous case occurs at the hind end of the body. A mass of tissue sometimes arises behind the rectum, at the extremity of the sacrum, called congenital sacral teratoms. Among roses one sees a similar happening when an imperfect flower stalk and head develop from the centre of a flower.

de. the

ner

of a

en

les

ed

an

he

ner

art

ard

ard

We have in our language no word to describe the matrix tissue from which organs originate, and so are forced to take this word from the German.

Polar Dichotomy (Branching of the Growing Points). -In plants there is a liability for the growing points to branch, as when a fir

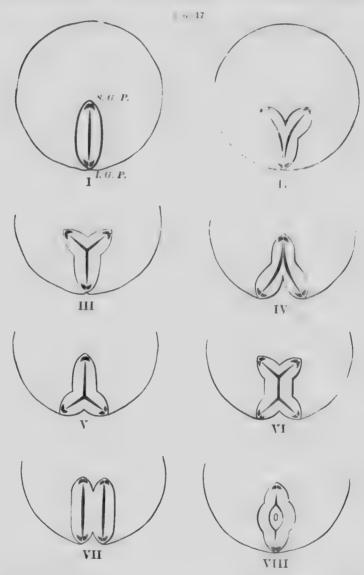


Diagram of various forms of dichotomy or cleavage: I, normal early primitive streak in germinal area with S G.P., superior, and I.G.P., inferior growing point; II, result of early dichotomy of superior growing point, the separation affecting also the lateral rows of cells given off from the inferior growing point; III, late dichotomy of superior growing point, only the cells given off more recently from the two superior growing points affected; IV and V, similar results of early and late dichotomy of the inferior growing point; VI, relatively late dichotomy of both superior and inferior growing points—anakatadidymus; VII, early (complete) dichotomy involving both growing points—fused double monsters, lateral fusion; VIII, mesodidymus, the growing points remaining single—or the series of cells derived from them on either side undergoing—contain.

tree, high up, divides into two or three trunks; the root of the radish may similarly fork. In some plant, a division rato to merous stems is se rule. A plant may to is undergo dichotomy at a v period during its growth because its cowing points are always active, but an

animal a mammal, for example only ... that limited time during which the growing points are active. In the news

it has been experimentally shown t as long as the egg continues to she agreeding points, double monsters can be moduced by partial physical division of the egg, such as may 1 brought about by the pressure of a ha After the growing ied around it. points cease, that -, when the medullary growve appears, this can no lor zer be done.

Even the period, short as it is, during which dichotomy may occur, may be divided into its early and its interpret. If the dichotomy occurs -rly enough that very cell born from the superior graving point diverges from its rellow, set. do lication of the entire animal, as faat an from the mession growing point. There a dichotomy has occurred thus ear , the dive general the two greeps of cells brings it about that two diverging principles aks are for land thus two anlagen will be laid down, and in turn, organs that arise from each anlage will be the duplicate of those that arise from a other.

It, however, a relatively late any of the growing points cours, the enough will have the for the two growing points to par directione a ther by cells, wich give rise to a normal nitive trees and the dichotomy can affect only certain parts of []H ·



" when often vesicle re t. Doub ng attant, d'newten l part . Sipe 's experiments: oran eye of right half into i. "t optic venere with left half of right

as the cells which have

*

Dichotomy of the superior pile that anadidymus and of the inferior r tadidymus; of both, anakatad ways, thus:



in animals, although not yet seen in man, that the cells te projected back from the respective growing points either

untinte. ly of erior ntly imv Wing -ed 1,53

ants a fir fail to unite or become separated, thus causing mesodidymus, which

might be indicated thus:

*

Finally, if the cleavage of both growing points happens very early, two parallel primitive streaks are developed side by side, giving rise to fusional duplication, thus:



a figure which differs from anakatadidymus in that the trunk has two complete lengitudinal axes and the skelettle parts of two complete

There follows a large class of double monsters, to which the lastnamed division is the key; first of all, a complete cleavage has occurred, and a secondary fusion has been brought about between the parts of



Apicopolar fusion: disymmetrical Janiceps (Cephalothoracopagus disymmetros (Schwalbe's case).

The two secondary front or facial aspects are absolutely similar.

the body which are contiguous; the figure last given indicates the "Siamese Twins" form, but it will be understood that there are many possible modifications, as head to head, waist to waist, in an axial direction, buttock to buttock, breast to breast, and so on. Sometimes the directions of growth, and interference of tissues with one another lead to the suppression of certain organs; interesting as this subject is, it is scarcely in place in this volume. Possibly the strangest

of these monsters is the janiceps, in which, as one looks at the monster, one sees a rather toad-like figure, with a face, two arms, and two legs; if one walks around it one sees on the other side an exactly similar

h

у,

as ete

ed,

the

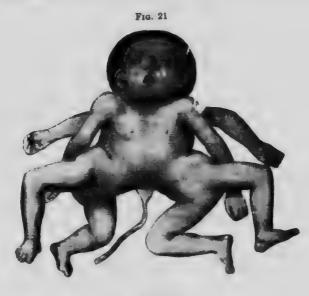
any

axial

me-

one

gest





Apicopolar fusion at an angle less (or greater) than 180 degrees. Monosymmetrical Janiceps (Cephalothoracopagus monosymmetros) (Vrolik's case): Fig. 21, the perfect secondary front view Fig. 22, the defective secondary front view, with synotia (fusion of ears).

face, two arms, and two legs (Figs. 19 and 20). It is to be noted that such fused monsters may be equal, or unequal, in size, until the inequality becomes so marked that one has its frame "parasitic" upon the other, the so-called teratoid.

Duplication of Organs.—Just as there is cleavage of the axial growing points there may be cleavage, also, of the secondary growing points, which ordinarily give rise to the limbs, so that abnormalities of these

These abnormalities of excess may arise in (1) longitudinal series and (2) lateral series. Excess in longitudinal series is shown by the development of extra vertebræ, or extra ribs; extra vertebræ need not have



Thoracic parasite (Gastrothoracopagus parasiticus). (Wirtensohn.)

extra ribs nor need extra ribs arise from extra vertebræ; the ribs even may show excess in lateral series, when for example, the sternal end is bifid. Excess in lateral series is oftenest exemplified by polydactyly, in all grades from a double nail to an accessory digit; polymastia (increased number of breasts), and duplication of internal organs are familiar examples of this abnormality. Accessory organs may exist by true duplication, but more



Cyclops proper, with median single orbit and pupil.
(After Ahlfeld.)

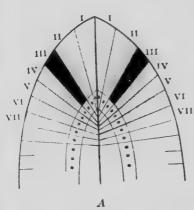
often this is due to segregation of certain cells from the rest of the organ, which develop in some situation often quite remote from the original organ. The spleen and the adrenal furnish the most frequent examples of this.

Abnormalities of Defect.—Just as giantism is the expression of a general abnormality of excess, dwarfism is that of a general abnormality of defect. The minimum height of normal may be given as 4 feet, 11 inches, below which there will be a number of individuals who are dwarfs by the operation of the law of chance. As with giantism, so with dwarfism, inherited disturbances of some of the ductless glands appear to be factors in the production of a certain number of cases.

Defect in Organs or Special Regions.—This may be due to (1) hypoplasia, where an organ is small merely by relative poverty of the amount of matrix set apart for that organ; or to (2) polar hypogenesis, which

is the opposite of dichotomy. Just as excess at the growing point is manifested by a dichotomy, and the existence of two growing points,

Fig. 25



e

n

w e,

od of

is re

he

he

nt

ŧy

et.

re

SO

 \mathbf{ds}

00-

nt ch

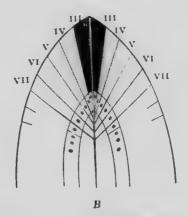
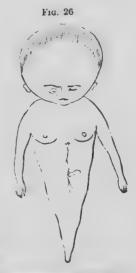


Diagram to illustrate mode of production of polar hypogenesis: A, the normal development of the apical portion of the organism, the daughter cells given off by the growing point controlling the development of the apical parts of the body; B, premature exhaustion of the growing point cells, those controlling segments I and II not being developed. As a consequence, segments III meet in the middle line.

instead of one, so defect at the growing point may result in cessation of its growth, a premature dying out of growth; at the superior pole, if the growing point die out, and the cells behind are constantly pushing it forward, and there is no new growth of cells in the middle to keep the lateral parts away from one another, they never leave their state of approximation, and it may thus happen that two eyes may develop as one (cyclops), or even that no facial parts may develop at all.

Similarly, at the inferior pole we may find a series of defects, which in its simplest form is seen as defect or absence of genitalia, and in its more extreme grades, fusion of the lower limbs or even the representation of the lower limbs by a fused feedless stump (sympus apus). By a similar defect in lateral growing points, arises syndactyly the m of fingers) or reduction in the number of digits.



Sirenomelus. (Sympus apus, Förster.)

Local Malformations.—Imperfect Closure of the Dorsal Groove.— The neural canal originates as a longitudinal depression in the epiblast, the epiblast lining the depression being differentiated into neuroblast, which is the precursor of the nerve tissue. When the heaped-up edges of this depression meet one another they enclose the neural canal. as if the banks of a ditch overhung it more and more until they met over it. At times, this closure fails, either throughout the whole length or in some part of it. If the failure to close be at the head, the vault of the skull and the scalp are absent, and there is exposed congested tissue which appears like a mass of vascular membranes. This constitutes anencephaly, acrania, or hemicephaly. It has been supposed that pressure upon the head by amniotic adhesions at an early period causes some of these cases; parental infection in others is the basis for this vicious development. With such cranial defect there is often associated a failure in the closure of the spinal canal proper-the so-called spina bifida. Exencephaly is the condition in which, while the frontal region of the skull may be developed, though receding, the imperfect brain hangs out through the back of the skull. In iniencephaly the occipital bone is deficient and the spine bifid, so that part of the brain projects while the occiput and the sacrum are approximated, the body being bent backward.

When the laminæ of vertebræ fail to unite the condition is called spins bifids; clinically, the important point in this is to know to what extent the spinal cord is involved in the defect. Cases of spina bifida

may be classified as follows:

1. Complete Spina Bifida.—Here the groove fails to close and the superficial layer of nerve tissue is continuous with the skin on each side, lying as a broad plate. If only a small part of the canal be thus open, the condition is compatible with life until the canal becomes infected or until so much fluid is drained away that the child dies.

2. Incomplete Spina Bifida.—There there is failure of the bony structures, but the skin covers the protrusion or the gap. This form is classified as meningocele, myelocele, meningomyelocele, syringomyelocele, and the least serious form known as spina bifida occulta. The definition of these forms may be left with surgical text-books.

Imperfect Closure of the Anterior Body Surface.—The embryo is at first flat, spread out over the surface of the ovum, and with time the edges curve in to meet, forming the body cavity. For some time this closure does not take place and the viscera actually protrude, as does the allantois. The union ultimately may be incomplete, and according to the region in which failure occurs, we have:

1. Sternal Fissure.— If the defect of closure be complete the thoracic viscera protrude; if the lungs do so, they cannot expand, and birth is death. If the heart alone be left exposed, ectopia cordis results.

2. Abdominal Fissure.—This causes eventration, the protrusion of the viscera.

3. Hernia of the Umbilical Cord.—An incomplete closure of the wall at the umbilicus may result in the proximal part of the cord being enlarged to receive a portion of the viscera. A condition not unlike this arises when the omphalomesenteric duct, which originally connects the gut and the yolk sac, remains open.

4. Vesicogenital Fissure.—The allantois develops from the hind gut and runs through the umbilical region; the part nearest the urogenital sinus widens into the bladder, and the part distal to this closes, and extends as a cord (urachus) to the umbilicus. The urachus may fail to close, and may remain as a tube; the bladder may fail to close, constituting ectopia vesicæ. Associated or not with this, the urethra may fail to close, constituting epispadias.

et

h

lt

 \mathbf{d}

1ed

is

n ie le ie ly ie d,

ed at la

es es cois cois at he his es

cic

th

of

he

ng

ke



Development of the face of the human embryo (His): A, embryo of about twenty-nine days. The nasofrontal plate differentiating into processus globulares, toward which the maxillary processes of first visceral arch are extending; B, embryo of about thirty-four days; the globular, lateral frontal, and maxillary processes are in apposition; the primitive opening is now better defined; C, embryo of about the eighth week: immediate boundaries of mouth are more definite and the nasal orifices are partly formed, external ear appearing, D, embryo at end of second month. (Heisler.)

Imperfect Closure of the Facial Clefts.—The accompanying diagram will remind the reader of the different fusions that occur, with obliteration of clefts, when the face is formed. When the fusion of these apposing surfaces is inhibited totally or in part, we have produced the features of an earlier developmental stage. Of such failures, harelip in

its various degrees, with the accompanying palatal malformations, is the one of most clinical interest. In its simplest form, harelip affects only one side of the upper lip; a severer form is that in which, in addition, there is a lack of union between the maxillary process and the intermaxillary bone extending into the hard or the hard and soft palate — cleft palate — or this may occur on both sides — double cleft palate; or the intermaxillary bone may be wanting — median cleft palate; or e ternally, the cleft may extend along the side of the nose to the orbit.

Imperfect Closure of the Branchial Clefts.— In the embryo the second and lower branchial clefts pass from the outside into what ultimately will be the pharynx. If one of these do not close at all, a complete fistula remains; if it close at the end, a sinus is made, and if it close at both ends a cyst; if the cyst be formed from the part of the cleft nearer the skin, its epithelial lining is squamous, if from the phary ageal end, columnar and even ciliated. The Eustachian tube is the first of these clefts, of which there are five; the second is the one which

oftenest persists.

Rectal Malformations.— The embryonic cloaca in the course of development is transformed into certain external genitalia and the rectum. If the separation between the genital and the rectal parts do not occur, we have the condition of persistent cloaca; if it occur only partially, a fistula is formed, the cavity of the rectum communicating with some part of the genito-urinary tract, such as the vagina, the bladder or the urethra. Also, the septum between the hind gut and the outside may not be broken down, and the condition of atresia ani or imperforate anus may result. There are various grades of this, according to the distance from the surface at which the end of the hind-gut lies.

Hermaphroditism. The matrix tissue (anlage) of the genitalia remains the same in the two sexes up to the fifth week, and alike structures become transformed into the apparently widely differing organs found in the two sexes. Each part of the male tract has thus an analogue in the female. It is not so strange that cases of blended sex should

occur, as that they should occur so rarely.

True Hermaphroditism.—This is very rare; there may be an ovary on one side and a testis on the other, or both on one side, and either or neither on the other, or finally, both on each side. The secondary sexual characters (the conformation of the body and its parts) are mixed.

False Hermaphroditism. This is far more common than the former. In it the genitalia are actually of one or the other type, but the secondary characters are those of the sex other than that to which the genitalia belong. The male individual with feminine characteristics is the more common of these (pseudohermaphrodismus masculinus).

POST-NATAL ACQUIREMENT OF DISEASE

Classification of Causes. The causes of disease acquired after birth are necessarily external. The environment may be altered so as to

cause disease, or injurious substances, living or dead, may be introduced into the system. The agents which thus produce disease are:

1. Mechanical—inducing "trauma."

2. Physical—under which can be included:

(a) Alterations in the pressure of the atmosphere, including both diminution and increase.

(b) Alterations in temperature, local and general, including both heightened and lowered temperature.

(c) Effects of electricity, both atmospheric and induced.(d) Effects of light and of other forms of radiant energy.

(e) Effects of soil and climate.

(f) Sociological effects, habitation, clothing, dwelling, occupation,

and other environmental conditions.

3. Chemical Causes—under which, besides (a) the gross effects of caustic and other agents upon the tissues, we should include (b) the main effects of vitiation of the atmosphere by various gases, and (c) the main deleterious effects of improper food, as again, to some extent, the deleterious effects of certain occupations.

4. Parasitic-under which heading are to be included the deleterious

effects of:

-

r

d

e

e

ft

al

st

h

)-

n.

Г,

у,

ne

or

de

te

he

lia

C-

ns

ue

ıld

ŗy

er

ΓV

ed.

er.

ıd-

he

ics

rth

to

(a) Minute vegetable parasites—bacteria and fungi.
(b) Minute animal parasites—sporozoa, amœbæ, etc.

(c) The larger animal parasites, including worms (cestodes, trema-

todes, nematodes) and arthropods (arachnids and insects).

As one reads the foregoing table, he will be conscious that many of the agents mentioned are things not in themselves hurtful; some are even therapeutic agents of definite value; it depends upon the degree with which a physical or chemical agent affects the tissues, whether the result will be physiological or pathological.

Mechanical Causes of Disease. - Mechanical causes of disease are:

1. Concussion.

2. Puncture, with which may be included the effects of projectiles under high velocity.

3. Section.

4. Contusion, with which may be included lacerations and tearing.

5. Compression.6. Distension.

7. Atmospheric pressure.

1. Concussion.—This is the effect produced upon a soft, fluid or semifluid body by the momentary application of force; familiar examples are blows upon the brain, or upon hollow viscera with gaseous or fluid contents, such as the lung, the bladder, or the stomach. The brain is a soft substance lying in a bath of fluid; if a blow of sufficient force be struck upon the skull, without fracturing it, the brain may be damaged by being propelled against the opposite side of the skull, masmuch as, being denser than the fluid in which it lies, it takes more momentum from the applied blow than does the surrounding medium.

The small hemorrhages that appear in the brain are not necessarily the result of a direct blow, but of the shaking-asunder action applied by the brain being suddenly brought up against an unyielding surface. A similar result is seen in the case of soft tissues bordering upon a cavity containing fluid or air; a blow may be struck upon the thorax, and imparted to the lung; the part of the lung nearest is set in motion away from the blow, and the air within not being set in motion with as much velocity, the conflict of two degrees of force acting upon the tissue tears it. Thus is to be explained the rupture of a full viscus such as the urinary or gall-bladder or the intestine. Inseparable from the conception of concussion is the idea of molecular, if not visible, change

in the tissues affected.

2. Puncture.—A stab wound is a familiar example. The damage may be wrought in various ways; there is a certain destruction of tissue in the path of the blade; there may be great damage done by the weapon piercing a large artery or an important nerve trunk; bacteria may be introduced into the tissues by the instrument, or from a hollow viscus opened up, or along the track of the blade from the air. The puncture of tissues by projectiles is to be considered here; generally speaking, the higher the velocity the more a bullet wound approximates to a "puncture"; with low velocity the character of the wound is more of the nature of a contusion. It will be obvious to the reader that in discussing these mechanical causes, one can rarely adduce examples that are purely of one character; with a punctured wound there may be contusion, and nearby tissues may be compressed against other more solid tissues; and with projectile wounds there will often be concussion.

3. Section.—This consists in the cutting asunder of tissues by an edged instrument, and as it occurs surgically, entails a minimum of

effect upon tissues other than those cells actually injured.

4. Contusion.—Differing from the condition of concussion, we have here the effect of force applied directly to the tissue concerned, forcing cells as under from cells. The disintegration may be slight as in contusion, where, it is to be noted, the resulting hemorrhage is mainly responsible for the visible signs; or more sever, as in laceration, or separation of one part from the rest may be brought about. In this form of lesion, also, the injury may afford opportunity for the intro-

duction of bacteria from without or from within.

5. Compression.—Compression tends to affect rather the fluid part of the tissues than the solid, and we thus search for its effects in changes in the nutrition of the part; compression made by the weight of the body when blood force is low may so empty the capillaries that the tissues are ill-nourished, and a bedsore is produced. In the part beyond a tight bandage, the stagnation of the body fluids may induce necrosis, and the tissues actually compressed are even more liable to suffer. The effect of the gradual pressure exerted by tumors upon neighboring organs causing poor nutrition in them is well known.

6. Distention.—The principle here is the same as in the last case; a familiar example is the destruction of renal tissue in hydronephrosis, where the increasing urine acts as the distending force, until the kidney

becomes a large thin-walled cyst.

7. Atmospheric Pressure.—Differences in the tension of gases in atmospheric air bring about changes in the tension of gases in the blood and the tissues. If the atmosphere be much rarefied, the amount of oxygen taken up is so reduced that asphyxia supervenes. Where the atmospheric prescure is greatly increased, as in caissons, there is a greatly increased amount of air taken up. As in a soda-water bottle the greater the atmospheric pressure to which a fluid is subjected the greater the amount of gas that can become dissolved in it. Remove the cork and so remove the pressure and the excess gas becomes liberated. This increased absorption at the moment does no special harm, but when the subject is exposed to ordinary atmospheric pressure, much of the nitrogen so taken up is suddenly liberated in the form of discrete bubbles which may mechanically interfere with the circulation in the capillaries. The oxygen of the air, it may be added, has become

fixed in the tissues.

d

e

e

e

e

of

a

W.

ie \mathbf{y}

i-

ıd

er

ce

ıd

st

en

an

of

ve

ng

n-

ıly

or

his

"0-

art

ges

he

the

nd

sis,

er.

ing

Physical Causes of Disease.—Temperature.—By reason of a very responsive heat-regulating apparatus, the human body can stand exposure to great extremes of temperature, from 100° F. below freezing point to 50° F. above the boiling point of water. Protoplasm will freeze at the one, and coagulate at the other; but the body is protected in the case of cold by a layer of warmed air, and in the case of heat by a layer of air cooled by the evaporation of moisture given off on the surface. If the air be so moist that this evaporation cannot occur, the high temperature at once becomes effective upon the body cells and, therefore, dangerous. The dangerous effects of heat and cold are manifested in local change, which may be called primary, and in certain subsidiary changes affecting the whole system which are These secondary changes are remarkably similar in the case of heat and cold. Following the initial paralysis of the vessels which are the heat-regulating mechanism, the vitality of the cells is arrested, and they may die, or at the best may throw into the circulation deleterious materials; in addition the sensory nerves of the part are profoundly irritated.

It is thus evident that while heat or cold may cause death, yet short this the effects are primary and secondary; while the disease-causing cont operates, the primary effects are produced, and after it ceases to operate, we have yet to reckon with a train of secondary effects. Here exists the difference between physical and parasitic causes of disease; in the latter we have the continued effect of a constantly present agent, while in the former, we have to meet the after-effects of

a temporarily applied disease-causing agent.

Light and Radiant Energy.—The most definite evidence that radiant energy can cause disease is connected with cases where the tissues are affected by the x-rays and radium emanations. It has been estimated that if an ounce of radium could be collected in one mass, merely to pass within a certain distance of it would cause death, and this, of course, without there being any sensation of heat. Such action we do not yet understand. Where sunlight appears to cause conjunctivitis and inflammation of the skin, it is combined with ultraviolet and other spectral rays, and these last are perhaps the more potent agent of the two. In sunstroke, these along with radiant heat, are beyond question the active cause; in heatstroke, the rays are not a factor, but this is due to accumulation of body heat in conditions where proper loss of heat from the body is prevented.

The absence of light cloes not seem to be an active factor in the causation of disease, although its combination with certain frequent accompanying conditions, such as impure air, do in time produce deleterious

effects upon the human system.

Electricity. - It is as yet difficult to give much definite information about the effect of electricity upon the tissues. The effects of the constant current are different from those of the alternate; it seems that the former produces less nervous and muscular excitation than the The constant current of considerable strength can produce decomposition of the tissues in the neighborhood of the negative pole, apparently just as it produces electrolysis of water and other fluids. Alternating currents of high potential, the ordinary "live" wire of commerce, appear to cause death by inhibition of respiration. It is a necessary thing for every house physician to know that in case of accident from electricity the worst thing that can happen to the patient is that he should be carried off to a hospital. Artificial respiration should be begun at once and persisted in; the loss of time involved in moving the patient may be fatal. It is to be remembered that alternating currents of extremely high rapidity and very high potential can be passed through the human body without injury, although less rapidly alternating currents cause death.

Chemical Causes. - Under this heading are included all those causes in which a direct molecular interaction occurs between the noxa and

the cells of the organism.

This interaction may be of the nature of a gross effect, as in the action of a caustic, or of a more indirect effect by which the cells, although not destroyed, have their functions disturbed. Any solid, liquid or gas which is capable of being incorporated with the body fluids, and thereby coming to act deleteriously upon the cell substance,

may give rise to morbid changes, and thus be a poison.

Poisons. -We have just stated that chemical substances that act deleteriously may do so, either as causties, that is, as substances that injure and kill cells by direct contact with them, or as intoxicants, that is, as substances that act harmfully upon cells by reason of being incorporated with body fluids and exerting their influence upon cells anywhere in the body, even at a distance from the point of first contact. Intoxication is the process by which such indirect action is brought about. The term poison is so wide, that it includes not only substances that we consider noxious in their very nature, but also substances in themselves harmless which by reason of their amount can interfere with the orderly and proper performance of the duties of the cell. A poison is not only that which induces molecular disturbance and disorderly chemical change in the cell, but also that which interferes with or inhibits the normal molecular changes in the protoplasm. An example of this poisonous action by a substance in itself no poison, is found in the case of water, which is essential to existence, and constitutes 70 per cent. of the body weight; if it be introduced into the tissues above a certain amount (60 c.c. per kilo of body weight) it may kill. This will indicate how wide a meaning we bestow upon the term poison.

Poisons may be at once divided into two groups, exogenous, arising outside the system, and endogenous, arising within. In defining what is exogenous and what is endogenous, we must be careful; food material in the alimentary canal has not yet become a part of the organism, and is as yet external to the lining epithelium of the body; yet many wrongly speak of the absorption of decomposition products of it as auto-intoxication, as if such poisons were endogenous instead of being, as they are, exogenous. The strict and useful definition of the two terms must be held to be: endogenous poisons are substances actually derived from the cells; exogenous those set up by substances foreign to the cells. This latter will include even the products of bacteria in

the tissues.

The intoxications then may be grouped as follows:

I. Exogenous Intoxications.

1. Non-parasitic.— Intoxications due to the actions of poisons not produced in association with the organism, which gain an entrance into the system through the skin, digestive, respiratory, or urinary tracts.

2. Parasitic.—(a) Parasitic proper, due to the introduction into, and growth within the tissues of parasites of various orders, animal

and vegetable, which, growing, give rise to toxic substances.

(b) Saprophytic, due to the growth of parasite of various orders on one or other surface communicating with the exterior of the organism, the products of growth becoming absorbed and diffused into the tissues.

H. Endogenous Intoxications.—Of pure type; auto-intoxications

proper.

f

S

r

9

11

f

-

18

11

1e

at

Э£

66

e,

s.

of

18

of

nt

on

in

erial

ess

ses

ind

the

Ils,

lid,

dv

ice,

act

hat

nts,

eing cells

act.

1. Internal secretory, intoxications due to altered internal secretions on the part of the body cells affecting (a) the secretory cells and tissues themselves, and (b) the other tissues of the organism, through diffusion of the altered products of cell activity.

2. Disintegrative, due to the absorption of the products of disintegration of dead cells (e. g., in burns, internal hemorrhages, etc.).

3. Metabolic, the results of impaired metabolism and imperfect exerction.

EXOGENOUS INTOXICATIONS- NON-PARASITIC

Foreign - distances entering the body or absorbed by it act (1) locally, at the point of application, and (2) in a general way. Wherever sufficient time elapses, there is a local change, degenerative or necrotic; this may be followed by inflammatory reaction. If a poison like hydrocyanic acid be taken in sufficient amount, the general effects are produced so quickly that the local effects have no time to assert themselves.

Poisons may bring about their general effects in the following ways:

1. By arrest of cell activity.

2. By increase of cell activity, followed by exhaustion and paralysis of function.

3. By increase of cell activity, followed by disintegration.

To classify the poisons under such groups would be merely to catalogue them; it is better to realize that toxic agents have selective effects upon different tissues, and in connection with each sort of tissue to attempt to arrange the poisons with some reference to the modes of

Poisons Acting upon the Nervous System.- The nervous system, action stated above. on account of its delicate organization, is liable to be relatively often affected by poisons, and we find, therefore, great differences according to the intensity of the dose. By reason, too, of the high degree of development of the nervous system in man, we find that animal experimentation often fails to give us correct analogies, for severe cerebral disturbance (delirium) may be created in man by substances that have little or no effect on lower animals.

Poisons acting upon the nervous system may be grouped as follows:

1. Those causing arrest of cell activity: (a) Immediate, e. g., hydroeyanic acid; (b) not immediate, c. g., hypnotics and sedatives.

2. Those causing increase of cell activity followed by diminution of function, e. g., alcohol, aldehydes, atropine, etc.

3. Those causing increase of activity, followed by exhaustion and at times disintegration; e. g., strychnine, tetanus and rabies toxins.

It is notable, also, that many of these poisons select particular parts of the nervous system as the sites of their greatest activity. Areas so selected are:

1. Higher cerebral centres: Hypnotics, carbon dioxide.

2. The medulla: Picrotoxin, apomorphine.

3. The spinal cord: Strychnine, brucine, quinine, thebaine, salts of potassium and ammonium.

4. Peripheral nerves: Ether, chloroform, carbon dioxide (altering electromobility), diphtheria toxin, and, possibly, lead and alcohol.

5. Nerve terminations: Curare, cocaine, veratrine, nicotine.

Confronted by the question how this selective action is brought about, we may say that it is suggestive that the hypnotics, as a group, are soluble in fats and lipoid substances, and the abundance of cerebrosides, cephalins, etc. (which are lipoids) in the nervous system, seems to account for the amount taken up by this particular class of tissue.

Poisons Acting on the Muscular System. - Apart from the effects produced upon striated muscle by the mediation of the nerves, there yet remain some poisons which appear to act directly upon the muscle cell; these either excite increased contraction or make the contraction more feeble. Of the former, the irritative examples are quinine, caffeine, veratrine (small doses), hypoxanthine, and creatine, as well as the toxins of the Bacillus coli. Of inhibitive poisons may be mentioned the potassium salts, the alkaline earths, and copper.

It is supposed, too, that certain poisons produce definite effects upon unstriated muscle, and it is with this idea that atropine is administered to excite peristatsis in cases of so-called "paralytic distension of the intestines" occurring in peritonitis; morphine appears to arrest peristalsis by a direct action, while ergot is considered to stimulate unstriped muscle to contract. Adrenalin and barium chloride seem to cause the muscle of the arterioles to contract. These points still require

complete verification.

1:

1-

ts

to

of

n,

en

ng

of

11-

ral

1ve

S.

r()-

ion

and

ular

ity.

salts

Poisons Acting upon the Blood Corpuscies. -The blood corpuscles are protected from many injurious substances by the alteration that such substances undergo in the process of being absorted but if injected

directly into the blood stream these are effective.

1. Hemolytics (Hemoelastics).—The destruction of temps blood corpuscles may be brought about by physical mean with as altering the tonicity of the plasma by the injection of wate. See the Areezing or by thawing. Some drugs, such as saponin, abrin, and ricin are effective, and many bacterial toxins and animal venoms. Also dangerous to the body, though without there necessarily being hemolysis, are those stable combinations of hemoglobin with carbon monoxide, carbon dioxide, cyanogen, and the cyanates which prevent the proper absorption of oxygen and carbon dioxide in the normal process of respiration, and so cause asphyxia.

2. Leukolytics.—There are some poisons which can cause destruction of white blood corpuscles, but one must be careful to note that leukopenia (lessened number of leukocytes in the circulating blood) a ay not be due to destruction of leukocytes so much as to altered distribution in the body at large. Pancreatin can, however, cause their destruction in the body at large. tion, as also can the presence of bile salts in excess. Where the destruction can be recognized, it is quickly followed by the appearance of a leukocytosis, which is, again, at first not so much due to regeneration as to

redistribution.

Poisons Acting on the Organs of Circulation.—Poisons may affect (1) the heart, or (2) the vessels, particularly the arterioles, or (3) the nerve centres that control the cardiac mechanism; it is extremely difficult for the observer to know which of these is being acted up in the

most, because their relationship in function is so intimate.

Poisons Acting upon the Heart.—It has been determined, however, that certain substances such as digitalin, digitalein, digitoxin, strophanthin, and the barium salts cause stoppage of the heart in systole, whereas arsenic, antimony, potash, chloroform, and alcohol in sufficient doses can cause stoppage in diastole—which last is perhaps the reason for the occurrence of acute dilatation of the heart in drunkards. The heart whose ventricle stops in diastole fails not because of inhibition, but because of paralysis of the accelerator nervous mechanism.

Poisons Acting upon the Vessels.—These cause (1) contraction or (2) dilatation, by direct action. Ergot and ergotin cause contraction of the arterioles by direct action, apart from their influence upon the heart. Adrenin and barium chloride do the same. Dilatation, on the other hand, is directly produced by the nitrites, chloral, quinine, and atropine (small doses). It is a strange fact that some of the drugs mentioned have a selective power upon the vessels of certain organs. Quinine acts especially upon the spleen, digitalein upon the kidneys, amyl nitrite upon the superficial facial vessels and upon the respiratory tract. Adrenin, while it causes the vessels of most organs to contract, when applied to the surface of the pancreas causes vasodilatation.

Poisons Acting upon the Digestive System.—It is necessary when examining the effect of a poison upon the digestive tract to ascertain its effect when introduced into the digestive channel, (a) with the vagi and sympathetics intact, and (b) with the same divided, and also, when introduced subcutaneously. It will be seen that, by reason of the intricacy of the mechanism, the possibilities of error are great. Apomorphine, to induce emesis, must be injected subcutaneously, ipecacuanha must be put into the stomach with the vagi intact. If the vagi are cut, even large doses are ineffective. Magnesium sulphate introduced into the blood or subcutaneously will cause only moderately increased peristalsis; introduced into the bowel it causes abundant, watery evacuations.

Poisons Acting in the Mouth.—All the poisons which cause increase or diminution of salivary secretion require first to be absorbed, and

their action is thus reflex.

Poisons Acting upon the Stomach. Vomiting is a process in which the nervous system is dominant whether the impulses be originated from the medulla or upon the nerve endings in the stomach. There are many irritant poisons which can set up irregular peristalsis, contraction, and relaxation of the stomach walls.

Poisons Acting upon the Intestine.—Diarrhoea is to be recognized as a term which may refer to two distinct processes. These are: (1) the premature discharge of the contents of the small intestine without due

absorption and modification, and (2) the discharge of excessive secretion from the mucosa of the intestine. The first of these is due to increased peristalsis Croton oil produces this directly; rhubarb or senna injected into the veins will cause it, and aloes when injected, only when there is a free flow of bile. The second process, the increase of secretion, is produced by the saline purgatives.

Actual lesions of the intestinal wall are produced by poisons in two ways: (1) by direct effect, and (2) in the process of being eliminated into the bowel after being absorbed there or elsewhere. The former are most likely to be situated in the upper part of the tract, and, in the case of caustics, at narrow places. The latter, the eliminative lesions, may occur in any part of the tube where the secretory structures are numerous. Duodenal ulcers, as they are observed in burns, may be of this nature; the so-called uremic ulcers undoubtedly are. Ulcerations and other lesions seen in the colon after the ingestion of corrosive sublimate may be reproduced if the poison be introduced by other paths, and thus are definitely due to elimination.

Poisons Acting upon the Liver.—One of the most important, if not the most important, of the functions of the liver is to stand between the toxins of the alimentary tract and the body. By its site at the head of the portal system it comes in contact with, neutralizes or eliminates the toxins that load the portal blood. This it does sometimes at a heavy cost to itself. Nor is it only with portal blood that it has to deal, for sulphindigotate of sodium introduced into the circulation entered the bile one minute later, and must have gone in directly by the arterial supply. In the case of the liver, then, we are dealing with the effect of toxins directly upon the tissue. The various poisons with which the liver has specially to deal, and which are, therefore, prone to cause damage to it, may be grouped as follows:

1. Metals and metallic salts, phosphorus, arsenic, lead, mercary, and copper. After ingestion, upon analysis, these substances will be found in greater quantity in the liver than elsewhere; and as they are excreted in the bile they are in part again absorbed by the bowel, and carried once more to the liver.

2. The toxic products of digestion, indol, skatol, and the toxins from bacterial growth in the bowel. When these are in excess, the liver cells cannot handle them, and the overplus goes into general circulation, to the detriment of the body.

3. The toxins of pathogenic bacteria. It is one of the most frequent of observations that the liver suffers in acute infections, either showing cloudy or more severe degeneration, or even actual cell death focal or general necrosis).

4. The products of destruction of the red-blood cells (hemolysis). It has been found that as a consequence of certain toxemias the liver becomes incapable of dealing with the excess of blood pigment given to it; and although the original toxemia may be partly to blame, the excess of pigment itself appears to take a part in causing the damage.

IS

le

Poisons Acting upon the Kidneys.—The general statement just made, that the organ whose duty it is to handle toxins must itself suffer, applies to the kidneys as it does to the liver; the kidneys must bear the brunt of the toxic substances in the systemic circulation; certain of the metals mentioned in the case of the liver are equally effective upon the kidneys; while certain other substances, such as cantharidin and uranium nitrate and the toxin of scarlet fever evince a distinct predilection for these organs.

EXOGENOUS INTOXICATIONS—PARASITIC CAUSES

The parasitic causes of disease are: (1) microparasites of vegetable nature; (2) microparasites of animal nature, and (3) larger animal parasites. Some of the intoxications so caused are from toxins manufactured outside the body, as for example, where the parasite infests the alimentary tract (strictly outside the body tissues), and the toxins manufactured by it are absorbed. By far the most, however, are intoxications caused by parasites living within the tissues.

Bacteria as Causes of Disease. Bacteria are the most minute forms of vegetable life, some of them too small to be seen by the microscope; they seem of uniform consistence, have no nucleus, do not conjugate, but multiply by fission; some are motile, by means of flagella, and some have a resting stage of distinct character—the spore; according to their shape, for purposes of description, they are separated into the spherical or bluntly oval cocci, the rod-like bacilli, and the spiral

or curved-in-more-than-one-plane spirilla.

Bacteria grow between widely separated limits of temperature, and in widely diverse media; of pathogenic bacteria in general it may be said that they grow best at a temperature near the body temperature of the host, and in faintly alkaline media containing organic matter. Most bacteria grow best in the presence of free oxygen (aërobes); many can exist also in the complete or almost complete absence of free oxygen (facultative anaërobes); some can grow only in the absence of free oxygen (obligatory anaërobes), obtaining the necessary oxygen by breaking up organic material. Bacteria take their food by absorption, and secrete enzymes, by means of which they can bring about in various substances the changes necessary to render those substances capaole of absorption. The enzymes are of different orders in different species, proteolytic (protein splitting), diastatic (carbohydrate-splitting), glycolytic (sugar-splitting), and so on; and the distinctive power possessed by a species may at times be changed, so that bacteria in a proteid medium, which are capable of forming proteolytic ferment, may, by being grown in a carbohydrate medium, in course of time, become capable of forming a diastatic ferment; and forms which are inert toward certain sugars may in course of time become capable of fermenting them. important of all, the pathogenic bacteria produce toxins, substances that exert a poisonous action upon other living things.

Having in view this power of producing toxins, bacteria are divisible into three groups:

1. The non-toxic.

Š

e

e

(0)

al

 $^{\mathrm{1d}}$

he

re

er.

5);

of

ce en

rp-

nut

ces

ent

g),

sed

ım,

WII

rm-

gars

ost

ices

2. Those ordinarily incapable of multiplying within the tissues, but grown outside the body capable of producing toxins which, if absorbed, are injurious. Here belong many saprophytic and putrefactive bacteria, which may become lodged in wounds and set up irritation there, and may give off for absorption their toxins, without themselves gaining entry to the tissues. Here also belong some of the normal inhabitants of the intestine, which, in excess, may give off toxins that are dangerous to the host if absorbed. Some of these last, at times, are converted into members of the following group:

3. Bacteria capable of growing in the tissues (and giving off toxins) and there setting up infection. From the foregoing it will be apparent that a bacterial intoxication is the condition in which the action of the products only of bacterial growth is considered; while an infection is that condition in which in addition to the intoxication, the bacteria

themselves are in the tissues, and are multiplying there.

Toxins.—The term toxin is used somewhat laxly to indicate the poisons which owe their existence to the bacteria; but this does not mean that they are necessarily manufactured by the bacteria. An example will make clearer this statement. In diphtheria a highly toxic all-umose is found abundantly in the spleen and other tissues. but very little is to be found in the membrane in the throat. The membrane is toxic enough, it is true; the mode of happening is, probably, that an enzyme manufactured by the bacilli, and present in the membrane, diffuses out and acts upon proteid substances, which become converted into toxic albumoses; these it is which constitute the poisons of the disease. This idea we would emphasize, viz., that in many cases at least, the bacterial product is an enzyme which is not itself the real toxin, but by acting on proteid materials produces out of them the active toxic substances. It is only right to say that this view is not yet universally accepted, but there is much reasonableness in it. Like enzymes, very small quantities of the primary toxin suffice to produce maximal disturbances; action is not immediate and is cumulative. The primary toxins, too, are precipitated like enzymes, are thermolabile, are rendered inert by temperatures of 56° to 60° '., and they diffuse slowly.

The discharge of toxin in the active metabolism of some pathogenic bacteria is very small in amount. If cultivated outside the body, these organisms set free but little toxic material; but if the bacterial bodies are broken up, toxin is set free in adequate amount. Such toxins are evidently truly intracellular, and are directly comparable to intracellular enzymes that have been discovered in tissue cells. We thus divide the pathogenic bacteria into (1) the endotoxic, such organisms as those of typhoid, tuberculosis, cholera, etc., and (2) the ectotoxic under which are included the b. diphtheriæ, the b. tetani,

b. pyoeyaneus, b. botulinus of meat poisoning, etc.

The Normal Defences of the Organism. -It is necessary to consider the ways in which bacteria gain entrance to the tissue, and the means possessed by the body of defending itself against them. The human body has a continuous external covering, one purpose of which is to prevent the entrance of organisms; this means not only the skin, but also the lining of every cavity or space that opens directly or indirectly upon the surface. The only break in this continuity of covering in the human body is in the case of the opening of the Fallopian tube to the peritoneum; this has so fine a channel and is so deeply situated, that it is, to all intents and purposes, closed. Yet this opening has proved, even in apparent health, the port of entry for organisms, peritonitis being set up. With this single exception, the human body is a "close corporation." On the outside, on the skin, in the mouth, in the upper air passages, in the intestines, in the female genital tract, are countless billions of bacteria. Do these never succeed in getting past the barriers? A small proportion of them do so constantly, but there are many mechanisms waiting to deal with them, and in health their tenure of existence within is a very short one.

The mechanisms referred to are these:

1. Surface Washing .- The bacteria on the skin are being constantly removed by washing or by friction, and those in the mouth are washed down by the saliva to the stomach, where the acid gastric juice kills the majority of them. The mucus in the mouth, the respiratory tract, the alimentary tract, and the female genital tract, while it catches bacteria as a flypaper catches flies, offers a physical barrier to their contact with the surface cells, and is itself by gravity or by peristaltic movement or by ciliated epithelium apt to be carried away. It is con-

sidered by some that mucus, itself, has bactericidal power.

2. Gastric Juice. The action of the gastric juice has been mentioned. The food contains countless bacteria; yet the duodenal contents at times are almost, if not quite, sterile. It is a common observation that most peritoneal infections from perforation of the stomach or the upper part of the intestine are less virulent than from perforation of the ileum or colon, which is doubtless due to the killing of many and the attenuation of other bacteria in the stomach. With diminution or absence of the hydrochloric acid in the gastric juice this no longer is true, because the bacteria unkilled in the stomach pass down living to the more alkaline, and, therefore, more suitable medium in the lower bowel, where their multiplication may do damage. In the feces, of course, enormous numbers of bacteria are removed from the body. As an indication of the extent of bacterial growth in the intestines it may be said that on an average 25 per cent, of the dried feces has been found by competent observers to be composed of bacterial bodies, the vast majority dead -killed it would seem in the progressive concentration of the intestinal contents which takes place in the colon. According to Mattill and Hawke the average daily amount of dry bacteria discharged per anum is 8.27 grams, or otherwise, over 2 drachms.

3. Physical Hindrance in the Respiratory Tract.—If air containing dust and other particles impinges upon a moist surface, the solid particles adhere to it; the breath that is drawn through the nose, passing through the devious maze of the turbinate bones and reflected by the pharyngeal surface is very thoroughly purified before it reaches the trachea, and in health the expired air is again relatively free from organisms. It has been pointed out that the varying caliber of the larynx and trachea induces a spiral motion of the inhaled air, thus bringing each successive portion of it in contact with the lining mucosa, so additionally ensuring the arrest of solid particles. The particles that lodge on the surfaces are either expelled again with the nasal mucus in blowing the nose or by expectoration, or they are swallowed, or, in the case of a small percentage of them, absorbed into the tissues that surround the upper respiratory tract. particles are of many sorts-bacteria, dust, smoke, and so on. Among them there are sure to be many that are a menace to the individual, and it is for the disposal of these, in part, that nature has provided so large a mass of lymph tissue in the neighborhood of the upper respiratory tract. Between the level of the roof of the pharynx and the top of the sternum there are very numerous collections of lymph nodes, varying in importance from the tonsils to the smallest cervical nodes, all together constituting a large amount of tissue. Just as a country places most garrisons near the frontier that is most open to attack, the body has its garrisons of protective lymph nodes around the road by which the invaders are most likely to come—the upper air passages. Particles on the surface are constantly being deported by the mucus and saliva, in which they lie, being carried toward the entrance by the cilia of the epithelium lining the tract.

1. Protection by Leukocytes. — On mucous surfaces there are frequently free leukocytes that have wandered from the blood stream between the superficial cells. These engulf particles of dust, bacteria, etc., and wander back with them into the tissues. Apart from the digestant or solvent effects of the cytoplasm of the leukocyte upon its captive, the foreign body is thus imprisoned, and for the time being not capable of doing hurt to the body. No commonwealth fears very greatly criminals or other enemies, if each criminal is handcuffed to a policeman. The leukocytes which wander back to the tissues are carried by the lymph stream to the nearest lymph node where the intruder, if a bacterium, is killed by the leukocyte or if the leukocyte he weakened by its struggle with the bacterium both are engorged by one of the large endothelial cells—the macrophages—which line the Bacteria are, therefore, constantly finding their way lymph sinuses. into the tissues, but under such circumstances do not cause infection.

In health they are destroyed soon after their entry.

3

S

ir

ic

1-

d.

at

m

or

on

пy

111-

no

WIL

in

es,

dy.

nes

ces

rial

sive

the

dry

ms.

This process is going on constantly in the tissues underlying all the moist surfaces of the body, and in none to a greater extent than in the intestines. It is scarcely credible that the absorption of so many

and various substances from the bowel cavity takes place without there being included many bacteria; these have to run a triple gauntlet before they are free to do harm- first, the lymph tissue which is so abundant in the submucosa; second, the mesenteric and retroperitoneal lymph nodes; and third, the liver itself. Finally, bacteria which escape these may become free in the blood, and although we have hitherto said nothing of the bactericidal property which the blood and the

body fluids possess, yet these are of the very first importance.

The impression is widespread that the systemic blood is sterile, but this is probably only relatively true. Evidence seems to indicate that bacteria enter the blood, but are quickly attenuated and killed, whether they exist for this short time free in the fluids or engulfed by leukocytes; the solid internal organs- spleen, kidney, etc.--have been proved to contain bacteria, but appreciable growth from them is slow, presumably because most of the bacteria in a given organ at the moment at which the animal is killed are in an attenuated state, and probably die in the culture medium, while those deposited there at the latest moment before death are the only ones that are viable, and they are in so small number that appreciable growth in the culture medium is delayed for a time. This is the reason why cultures made from such organs, if observed only for two or three days, are reported as sterile, and in any case, appear to grow but sparingly. As an illustration of the protective mechanism of the b dy, may be quoted the experiment that if large quantities of bacteria, even pathogenic, be injected into the blood stream, a few minutes later only a few colonies can be grown from the circulating blood, and after an hour probably none at all. The endothelium of the blood vessels of all the organs has been active in removing the bacteria, the leukocytes have been engulfing them, and the bactericidal substances of the blood killing them. A few hours later, however, the blood is again teeming with them. This is because some attenuated, half-killed, or uninjured bacteria, tucked away in some corner with insufficiently powerful cells opposed to them, have waited their opportunity, have won their local battle, and multiply, soon flooding the tissues now exhausted of their protective forces. If one uses a homely example, the inroad of the bacteria is like a prairie fire, attacked and beaten out by an army of fire fighters; some spot left smouldering bides its time, and blazes up; the fire fighters exhausted by the previous struggle cannot cope with it, and it sweeps everything before it. It is possible to find in microscopic sections of the liver dots, single, double, or treble, which are the remains of bacteria, and often whole bacteria themselves. Granting all the foregoing evidence, nevertheless, the healthy tissues are potentially sterile.

Modes of Infection. - Since there are many ways by which bacteria enter the tissues, it is evident that there are many ways by which infection can arise. Infection implies not the mere presence but the successful multiplication of bacteria in the tissues. The factors that make

possible the latter are these:

1. Traumatic Solution of Continuity of the Surface Layers.—Here an ingress is provided for the bacteria, and the damaged tissue is a favorable ground for them in which to multiply. This lowered vitality of tissue is most important. The result is familiar to everyone who has seen an infected wound. Let us follow the process in a wound of the skin; lying deep down in the layers of the skin, and in hair follicles, is the Staphylococcus epidermidis albus-perhaps an attenuated form of the ordinary staphylococcus, but leading a harmless saprophytic existence. Let a tight suture in a wound lessen the blood supply of the underlying tissue, this organism, so weakly pathogenic that it cannot live within the tissues, has power to grow, to increase its virulence and to break down the tissues already weakened by the trauma of the knife cut. This is the genesis of "stitch-hole" abscess. Further, the organism which infects the wound need not be a local inhabitant of the tissues; we have pointed out that there are bacteria of many sorts leading a brief existence in the circulating blood; one of these in the few moments of life that would, under normal circumstances. remain to it, may be carried to the damaged area of the wound, where it finds the tissues in a state, not only not inimical, but even favorable to its growth. Such is the genesis of some wound infections. Everyone who has followed the work of a busy surgeon has seen "aseptic" operative cases become infected, and die; heart burnings and selfaccusations, and suspicion of the assistant's fingers, and of the instruments, and of the ligatures have followed, all of which tends to keep an operating staff eternally vigilant. This is a good result following a tragic affair; we would not lessen, for an instant, the mental effect of such cases, but we cannot refrain from indicating the method in which such an accident may occur.

2. Alteration of the Surface Discharges and Secretions.—When in a fever the salivary secretion is lessened, the mouth becomes foul and bacteria instead of being swept away remain in situ and multiply; their toxins cause necrosis of the underlying surface epithelium, and an ulcer results, so that there is now provided a suitable medium for growth of the bacteria in the damaged tissue and an entrance into the body. Similarly in the bowel, if an obstruction occur, the bacteria in the contents above the obstruction multiply, give off increased toxic products, and rapidly increase in virulence, an observation that is

readily verified by experiment.

3. Growth of bacteria and infection in an internal organ with no recognizable solution of continuity of the surface—"Cryptogenic infection."

An osteomyelitis of streptococcic nature, for example, is seen to arise without any surface injury or recognizable trauma, or a joint in rheumatic fever is aspirated and a coccus is cultivated therefrom. This is clearly a case of cryptogenic infection. Why, then, if bacteria are in the circulating blood, is it not a constant occurrence? There are doubtless several factors which must be concurrent, but one of them is that there must be the requisite quantity of infection. Just

as one swallow does not make a summer, one bacterium does not make an infection. An organism, carried into the tissues or the blood stream by a leukocyte, unless it be exceedingly virulent, can hardly set up an infection, because the tissues, if not the leukocyte, are able to overcome it. We suppose that a number of associated circumstances are necessary: (1) the presence of a goodly number of bacteria upon some mucous surface; (2) a congestion with many leukocytes passing out and returning with many bacteria; (3) accumulation of so many bacteria at one spot that the tissue resistance becomes exhausted, and probably (4) lowered vitality of the tissue at this area before the bacteria were introduced. Infection is thus the outcome of a contest between the

bacteria and the tissues, in which the former win.

How Bacteria Enter the Body.—Pathogenic bacteria have different habits of growth; some require the animal body for their nidus, others the human body, and such, if discharged from the body, do not multiply, although they may for a long time retain their vitality. It is essential for such bacteria that when discharged from one body, they find another in which to grow. They can be carried by direct contact, or by the air, or through the medium of fomites (i. e., in garments, in dust, in scales of shed skin), or by the discharges of one person getting into the water, milk, or food taken by another. Insects, too, may carry the bacteria, but they act only in a passive way, that is, the bacteria do not actually undergo any definite cycle of life while in the body of the insect. There was a time when "contagious" diseases meant something essentially different from "infectious" diseases; the distinction is now a useless one, since we know that it was not the "contact" that made a contagious disease contagious, but the infection. Infectious is

the better term to apply to all these diseases. The habitat of a bacterium will be of some effect in determining the portal of entry to the body; thus (1) organisms floating in the air are likely to be taken up by the respiratory tract, especially the nose, pharynx, or tonsils. (2) Any bacterium entering the upper respiratory tract may be entangled in saliva or mucus and swallowed. Bacteria which can multiply in water, like the Spirillum choleræ and the Bacillus typhosus, are liable to gain entrance by the intestinal tract in food or drink; similarly, any bacteria which, though not able to proliferate in the water or in milk, yet gain entrance to such supply, and are ingested before they die, may infect by way of the intestinal tract. (3) The organisms which normally inhabit the skin, and others whose presence on the skin is adventitious, may be carried into a wound, or an instrument or weapon may itself carry in bacteria, as occurs, for example, in tetanus following a wound from a dirty, often rusty instrument. Further, (4) bacteria infesting the genital passages may be conveyed to the other sex in sexual intercourse, and (5) infection of the placenta may pass to the fœtus by the umbilical vein. With these various facts it is also necessary to remember (6) that the bacteria may pass the portal of entry and manifest themselves at some point of lowered resistance in an entirely different part of the body. Recent observations have shown that a normal lymph node is not a perfect filter and that within a very few minutes after inoculating bacteria into the tissue of the leg these bacteria may be found in the circulating blood, past the inguinal nodes; if, however, a preliminary inflammation of the lymph nodes be caused, the bacteria are wholly arrested, not appearing in the blood. The inflamed node is then a perfect filter by reason of the complete

filling of its sinuses by cells.

e

n

t

g

e,

ia

us

or

te

11-

he

ce

u-

le,

nt.

to

ay

is

tal

nce

The Virulence of Bacteria.—The virulence of a bacterium is measured by the amount and the quality of the toxic substances it liberates either in its growth or in its disintegration, for there are bacteria which keep their toxins shut up in their bodies (endotoxins), to be set free only when the body breaks up. These toxic substances—united under the term "toxins"—are the protective substances of the bacterial body, comparable to the protective substances of the animal body. From what has been said previously, it will be inferred that virulence depends upon three variable factors—the quality and the amount of toxins and the number of bacteria.

The quality of toxin is specific in a two-fold sense: different species of bacteria produce different toxins, and toxins are active upon some species of animals and not upon others. Regarding the first of these statements, it is true that bacteria of allied species produce multiple toxins, some of which are common to all the members of that group of allied species; yet others are specific for each member of the group. With reference to the second statement, it is necessary only to mention the gonococcus which is active for man but not for the lower animals, and members of the group of the hemorrhagic septicemias of various mammals and birds which are without effect upon man.

Nor are these the only variations. If the same organism be isolated from two individuals, the virulence of the one strain is never, or hardly ever, experimentally identical with the virulence of the other. Further, alterations of virulence can readily be produced experimentally by "passage" through the bodies of animals susceptible to the bacterium concerned. If inoculation of a pathogenic dose be performed, and if as soon as symptoms of disease present themselves, the body fluids containing the bacteria be inoculated into a second animal, and so on, the virulence can be heightened in a very short time, so that a much smaller dose will cause disease in a much shorter time than was at first the case. It has been occasionally noted that this procedure, while increasing the virulence for the species concerned, lessens the virulence for certain other species.

In a manner contrary to the above, there are certain methods at our disposal by which the virulence of a bacterium can be lessened. Thus, by prolonged growth upon media, with transference at long intervals, the virulence of all pathogenic bacteria is lessened; bacteria "stewing in their own juice" rapidly lose virulence. Certain other procedures effect the same end, such as prolonged growth at a tempera-

ture near the maximum at which vitality can be preserved, exposure to sunlight, exposure to small quantities of antiseptic substances and increased atmospheric pressure. It may be broadly stated, that for bacteria as for men, within certain limits, the struggle for existence improves the breed; if circumstances be made too easy the breed ceases

to advance; if too difficult, it becomes enfeebled.

Other Pathogenic Vegetable Forms. - Biologically higher in the scale than the bacteria or schizomycetes, but of lesser pathogenic importance are sundry hyphomycetes, and blastomycetes, simple forms of vegetable life characterized, the former group by the development of long-branching filaments or hypha, the latter by the presence of rounded or oval elements much larger than cocci, multiplying by budding as well as by sporulation. These forms are closely connected; thus the organism of blastomycetic dermatitis, a skin affection which was first observed in North America, when within the tissues, exhibits only the rounded, budding form, although when grown in media outside the body it develops distinct hyplae. Intermediate between these and the bacteria proper are the so-called streptothricæ, forms much more minute than the ordinary hyphomycetes, of which the ray fungus or actinomyces may be taken as type. These are forms which, while having the same diameter as the ordinary bacilli, unlike those bacilli, exhibit true branching and tend under favorable conditions to form a mycelium or felted mass. These, indeed, are very closely related to the tubercle bacilli and "higher bacteria" which also under favorable conditions may exhibit true branching. The more highly differentiated are these forms, the less frequently are they found as causes of disease. The moulds, for example, have rarely more than a superficial development, and that upon the skin or in the passages communicating with the exterior, especially the respiratory tract, and with rare exceptions their growth is purely local, setting up little general reaction, and exhibiting little or no power to form toxins. Among these may be mentioned the organisms of ring-worm, favus, pityriasis, thrush, and aspergillosis.

Yeasts" or blastomycetes may be found multiplying within the stomach and urmary bladder, there showing no tendency to invade the tissues. It is only in connection with the skin and subcutaneous tissues that these set up a low intractable form of inflammation, though eventually the organism of blastomycetic dermatitis may grow in all the tissues of the body. The most serious local and generalized lesions , e set up by members of the intermediate group which cause lesions of a tubercular nature resembling in many respects those induced by

the tubercle bacillus. Filtrable Viruses.- In passing we may note that quite a number of diseases are now regarded, where they have not been surely proved, as being due to the growth within the tissues of forms so minute that they cannot be seen under the microscope save as minute specks, which further are so small that they pass through the pores of a Pasteur or Berkefeld filter. Of these diseases we may mention yellow fever, pleuropneumonia of cattle, vaccinia, scarlet fever, and probably measles. It is possible that here we deal with ultramicroscopic organisms of more than one order. Thus, the carriage of yellow fever by mosquitoes suggests that this disease is caused by an organism of protozoan nature, while, on the other hand, recent researches upon the cultivation of the organism of bovine pleuropneumonia indicate that this is allied to the schizomy cetes.

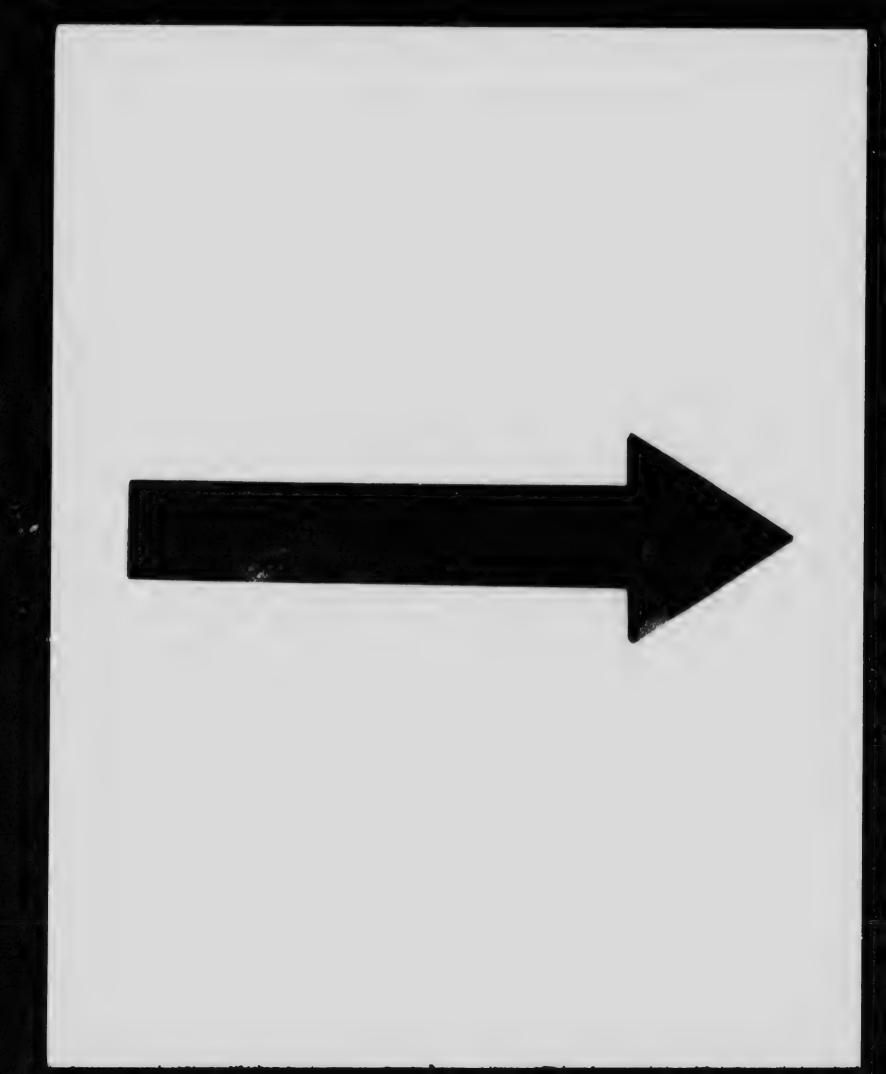
PROTOZOAN PARASITES AS CAUSES OF DISEASE

There are certain parasites belonging to the division of the protozoa which can cause disease in man; these belong to different orders of protozoa; thus, for example, the entamæba is one of the sarcodiniæ, the trypanosome of the flagellata, the malaria organism belongs to the sporozoa, and Balantidium coli to the ciliate infusoria. One is tempted to try to find analogies between the protozoan parasites and the bacteria, but the development of toxins by the protozoa is so slight and the toxins are of so low an order that it has not yet been possible to develop antitoxins or passive immunity by experimental means. Here certain possible exceptions must be noted. There is now no doubt that the Treponema pallidum (Spirocheta pallida) is the causative agent in syphilis, a disease exhibiting a well-marked immunity. The balance of evidence at the present moment seems to be in favor of regarding this as an animal form, although there are those who hold that it is more nearly allied to the bacteria. So also protozoa have been described as the causative agents in smallpox and vaccinia, two disorders presenting remarkably well-defined immunity. There is, however, increasing consensus of opinion that these disturbances, along with scarlet fever, are induced by members of the group of ultra-microscopic microbes.

We have not yet enough knowledge of protozoan parasites to allow us to make general statements about them as a class, and we must be content to set forth individual points about the most important of these.

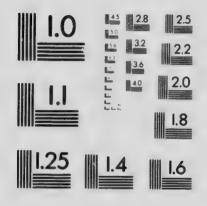
Order Sarcodinise.—Entamoba.—The Entamoba histolytica¹ is a motile mass of protoplasm with a nucleus and a contractile vacuole, which in appearance is identical with the amoeba that inhabits ponds of stagnant water. They are not, however, the same species. The entamoeba gains entrance to the colon where it may set up dysentery; it attacks the mucosa and submucosa, ingests cell debris and red blood cells, and may exist in great numbers. When it infests the bowel, its action is aided by pathogenic bacteria, which constitute a secondary infection. The entamoebæ are carried to the liver, where they often

¹ Recent workers, following Schaudinn, make a distinction between the entamæba coli: a normal harmless inhabitant of the lower bowel, and the entamæba histolytica, the causative agent in tropical dysentery.



MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

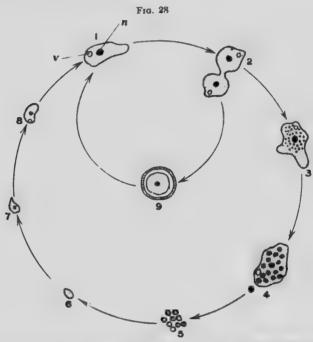
(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)





APPLIED IMAGE Inc

1653 East Mar treet R. hester New 11th 14619 SA 116 482 TGC Phone 1716) 288 5989 Fax set up abscesses. In the colon the entamœbæ are found in a round, encysted state, with the development of spores which in turn form new entamœbæ. It is not known if these develop entirely extracellular, or if they enter into cells for their development, nor is it known that there is a toxin produced by the organism; the remote toxic effects seen in amæbic dysentery may be due to the secondary infection, or to the effects of cell disintegration.



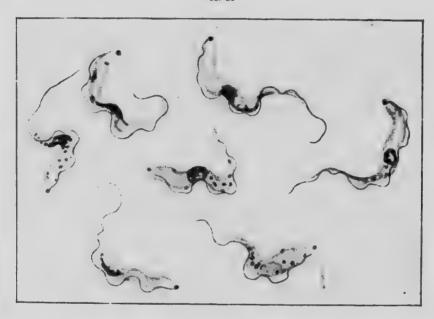
Schematic life cycle of the Entamæba histolytica: 1, the adult amæba with nucleus (n) and contractile vacuole (v); 2, the same, multiplying by amitotic division; 3, appearance of chromidial granules in cytoplasm, which enlarge and become the spores in 4; these spores become discharged or liberated (5) and develop (6, 7, 8) into the adult amæba, or (9) under other conditions the amæba passes into an encysted stage. (After E. L. Walker.)

Order Flagellata.—Of these, the trypanosome is the most important type. This is an elongated, spindle-shaped parasite, with an undulating membrane along one side, which is connected at the head end with a refractile granule, the micronucleus, and beyond the tail end is elongated into a flagellum. There is a nucleus, and sometimes a contractile vacuole; multiplication occurs by longitudinal division. The dimensions of this protozoan may reach 30 or even 50μ , with a breadth of 2 or 3μ ; and in freshly drawn blood it may be seen lashing to and fro in the field among the blood corpuscles like a wounded snake among dry leaves.

Its importance is great. Civilization might overlook the 30,000 blacks who are estimated as the annual victims of sleeping sickness in

West and Central Africa from T. gambiense, but deplores the millions of dollars annually lost from T. evansi, and T. brucei infecting horses and cattle. The forms of disease so caused are sura in Assam, India, and the Philippines; n'gana or tse-tse fly disease in Southeast Africa; dourine or mal de coit in Algeria and Southern Europe, and in North America by importation, and mal de Caderas in South America. The so-called Donovan-Leishman bodies found in the enlarged spleen in kala-azar, or dumdum fever of man, have been proved to be a stage of a trypanosome, as is the allied body found in the sores known variously as Delhi boil, Aleppo button, etc.

Fig. 29



Trypanosomes (T. gambiense) from the blood in sleeping sickness. × 2000.

So far as is yet known simple longitudinal fission is the only mode of multiplication; only this mode has been seen in trypanosomes grown in media, but it is quite possible, even probable, that other stages in the life cycle do exist. Without dealing at length with the evidence that already exists in favor of this view, it may be said that in **Halteridium**, a parasite found in the blood of the owl, a free trypanosome form has been found in the fluid part of the blood, and an amœboid, non-flagellate form in the corpuscles. There is evidence that the trypanosomes of disease have a minute latent intracellular stage.

These forms of protozoa are conveyed to man and warm-blooded animals by the bites of insects. Tse-tse fly disease, which a quarter of a century ago invested this insect with all the fatality and mystery

of a mediaval dragon, is conveyed by Glossina morsitans, sleeping sickness by Glossina palpalis—both flies of the "horse fly" type. These take the trypanosomes into the stomach, whence they reach the tissues and are discharged with the fluid lubricating the mouth parts into the flesh bitten by the fly. No experimental means have yet demonstrated the presence of toxins, and the symptoms are anæmia, moderate fever, the existence of ædemas, depression of cerebral activity and, finally, coma.

Other flagellata—the trichomonas and megastoma—are found in the intestine, but the cases in which they have been proved to be

Fig. 30

associated with disease are distinctly rare.



Glossina palpalis (× 33), the carrier of the trypanosome of sleeping sickness.

Order Sporozoa.—These organisms are characteristica'ly intracellular. The parasite enters an individual cell, arrests its function and causes its death, the cycle of life of the parasite being such that the spore formation roughly corresponds with the time of death and disintegration of the host cell. The spores set free grow into small amœboid forms, which enter other cells and repeat this asexual process. But a sexual cycle also exists, especially in the process of transmission from host to host, and this sexual cycle is carried out in the body of the carrier, which is of another species. In malaria, for example, the asexual cycle is carried out again and again in the human body; the mosquito (Anopheles) sucks infected blood, and the sexual cycle occurs in the body of the mosquito, the

sporozoites, the products of the sexual cycle, being introduced into another human host with the proboscis of the mosquito, there to enter once more into a series of asexual cycles. Transmission by insects, though the most frequent, is not the only mode of transmission of sporozoa, for coccidia enter the digestive tract, and others supposedly oy the respiratory tract.

Hematosporidia.—The parasite of malaria is the type of this suborder, and our knowledge of it has been greatly assisted by the study of allied forms in birds and other animals. The most important facts

relating to malaria are these:

S

le

 d

Γ,

in

e

lar.

its

ion

ıost

iter

ists,

cual

ries.

and

cted

the

1. The disease is transmitted by the Anopheles mosquito, and is

endemic or epidemic only where these are.

2. The Anopheles lays its eggs in still water, and the larvæ are aquatic; the mosquito does not travel far, save with high winds, and malaria is thus largely confined to the neighborhood of swampy or hadly drained regions.

3. The Anopheles does not bite in broad daylight. Infection, there-

fore, occurs in the evening or at night.

4. The asexual cycle of development requires different periods of time for the different species of hematozoan—forty-eight hours for the organism of tertian fever; seventy-two for that of quartan; forty-eight (with irregular variations) for that of the estivo-autumnal type. The periodic chills and fever coincide with the maturation and sporulation of the parasite, the damage being probably wrought by the liberation of cell debris and pigment rather than by any specific toxin of the parasite itself.

5. The cell debris and pigment so liberated are carried to the spleen and there set up the changes that lead to the enlargement of that organ.

6. Prolonged asexual reproduction seems to weaken the parasite, so that if re-infection does not occur the disease gradually passes off; young children seem relatively resistant to the disease. Yet it appears that the parasite may lie latent in the tissues for long periods and then become active again; clinical experience seems to show this

especially in the case of the estivo-autumnal type.

Other sporozoa are unimportant, so far as the human race is concerned. But it must be pointed out that forms very like stages in the sporozoan life-cycles have been found in the cells in vaccinia, small-pox, and scarlet fever. The relation of these to the diseases in which they are found is not yet clear. Pathologists, in general, are doubtful whether they are of protozoan nature. Bodies of a supposedly sporozoan nature have been from time to time demonstrated in the cells of malignant growths, especially cancer, but the idea most prevalent at present is that these are not sporozoa, but that they arise by degeneration of cytoplasm or of nuclei.

Order Ciliate Infusoria.—The Balantidium coli is found in the alimentary canal, associated with inflammation of the colon, but its

causative relation is not, as yet, definitely proved.

Spirochetes.—Great interest has centred of late upon the spirochetes, organisms causing European and African relapsing fever, certain diseases of geese and other birds (spirillosis), frambosia (or yaws), and syphilis. These organisms are minute, elongated spiral bodies, differing from spirilla proper, morphologically, in the absence of terminal flagella, spirilla proper, morphologically, in the absence of terminal flagella, these being replaced by a gradual tapering of both extremities. They are actively motile with a corkscrew-like motion. There is still some



Spirochetes in lives of congenital syphilis (oil immersion); a, spirochete; b, nucleus of degenerated liver cell.

uncertainty as to their mode of division, there being positive observations that this is longitudinal, but this does not wholly exclude the statement, by other equally competent observers, that transverse division obtains. Their behavior toward salvarsan is so similar to that of the trypanosomes to other arsenic compounds, to that of the piroplasma, trypanosomes to other arsenic compounds, to trypanroth, and the the intracellular parasite of Texas fever of cattle, to trypanroth, and the organism of malaria toward quinine, as to weigh down the scale in favor of their protozoan relationships.

METAZOAN PARASITES AS CAUSES OF DISEASE

The parasites of the metazoan order which are of importance as causing disease are of the classes of the *Platyhelminthes* or flat-worms, the *Nemathelminthes* or round worms, the *Insecta* and the *Arachnida* (spiders).

The metazoan parasites, in general, take their food in a prepared state from their host, so that their digestive system need be only of

s, es s. m a, ey ne

ervae the
vision
of the
asma,
and the
favor

nce as worms, chnidæ

repared only of

PLATE II

Fig. 1.-Tertian Malarial Plasmodium.

- 1. Hyaline form.
- 2. Pigmented ring form.
- 3 to 6. Pigmented forms.
- 7. Segmenting forms.
- 8. Flagellate form. Microgametocyte.)
- 9. Non-flagellate form. (Macrogamete.)
- 10. Segmenting form after destruction of red corpuscle.

Fig. 2.-Quartan Malarial Plasmodium.

- 1. Hyaline form. 2 to 5. Pigmented forms,
- 6 and 7. Segmenting forms.
- 8. Segmenting form after the destruction of red corpus-
- 9. Fiagellate form. (Microgametocyte.)
- 10. Non-flagellate form. (Macrogamete.)

Fig. 3.—Tertian Æstivo-autumnal Malarial Plasmodium.

- 1 and 4. Hyaline ring form. 2, 3 anc., Pigmented ring form, 5 and 6. Pigmented forms.
- 8 Young intracorpuscular cres-
- 9. Segmenting forms.
- 10. Flagellate form. (Microga-
- 11 to 14. Crescentic forms.

Fig. 4.-Quotidian Æstivo-autumnal Malarial Plasmodium.

- 1 to 4. Hyaline ring forms. Some cells show intection with more than one organism.
- 5 to 7. Pigmented forms. In 6 one hyaline form.
- S. Segmenting form. Segmentation complete within in-fected red blood corpuscle.
- 9. Flagellate form. (Microgametocyte.)
- 10, 11, 13 and 15. Crescentic forms.
- 12. Ovoid form.
- 14. Non-flagellate forms. (Macrogamete.)

Note. Mark the larger size and greater amount of pigment in the tertian activo-autumnal plasmodium,

Fig. 1

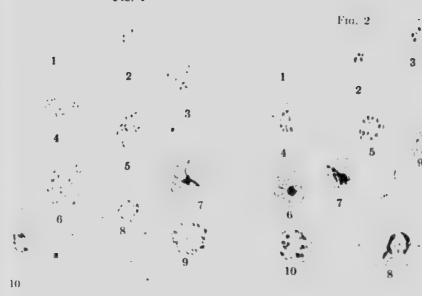
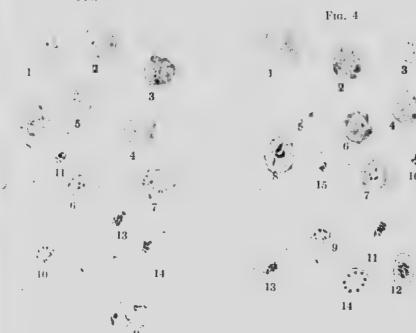


Fig. 3

role. de.

ntic

Malium,



s. F. Craig, Del



the simplest sort; some, as the tape-worm, dispense with an alimentary tract and feed by absorption; their organs of locomotion need not be complicated; their organs of offence are only such as enable them to penetrate the body of the host to their food; their organs of defence are such as to protect them from digestion by the body juices of the host. A certain power to live apart from the host assures the continuance of the species, but this last is safeguarded best by their enormous reproductive capacity. Some of them are merely animated masses of reproductive glands, the quantity of ova being great, because most of it is destined to fall on barren ground. The simplicity of structure tends to greatly lessen the adaptability of the organism, so that we find that in the process of time a species becomes able to grow actively only in a particular species of hosts. It follows, thus, that each particular species of host has a particular set of parasites.

The capability of causing disturbance in such forms is not great, a state of affairs which is to be expected with parasites of comparatively slow development. Such disturbance, too, is brought about in several

different ways, as:

1. Displacement or Pressure Due to the Presence of the Parasite.—Although this is in general negligible, a Filaria nocturna may block a lymph vessel and cause elephantiasis of a member. A cysticercus in the brain may cause death, or the cyst of Tænia echinococcus in the liver may be very large, and may menace life.

2. Injury Caused by Migratian.—The filaria migrates through the tissues but causes little or no damage in doing so; however, on the contrary, there may be much pain and inflammation of the muscles

caused by the passage of larval Trichina.

3. Destruction of Tissue.—This is of very slight importance, and only to be considered in the case of a parasite like Ankylostomum opening up a large capillary, causing hemorrhage, or where a parasite like Trichocephalus boring through the bowel wall leaves a hole through which infection may pass.

4. Loss of Food Material Used Up by the Parasite.—Contrary to a

common belief, this loss is so slight as to be negligible.

5. Disturbance Caused by the Excretions of the Parasite.—It has been supposed that the metazoan parasites excrete toxins as do bacteria; some of them certainly produce substances which protect them against the digestive juices of their hosts, and in many cases the bodies and body juices of the parasites themselves are toxic, but this is to be expected, and does not give any additional proof upon the questional issue. More important is the fact that all verminous parasites et up eosinophilia, an increase in the number of eosinophile leukowites in the circulating blood. This undoubted fact is evidently due an excitation of the bone-marrow tissue by some irritant produced the parasites, and it may be surmised that the anemia and the addition of ill-being are due to the same or parallel intoxicants.

6. No. vous Irritation or Discomfort Brought About by the Presence of the Parasites.— This refers mostly to the Insecta and Arachnidæ, and is an obvious, though unimportant effect; yet the presence of seat-worms and other migrating intestinal parasites may cause itching, grinding of the teeth, nervous irritability, and even convulsions in the very young.

THE ENDOGENOUS INTOXICATIONS

Internal Secretions. -There are certain glands, such as the liver, with external secretion, which form and discharge into the blood a further



Cretin, male, aged twenty-one years.
(Bourneville and Bricon.)

secretion, having no or little connection with the first. There are glands like the thyroid which, having no obvious secretion, and no duct, have been found, nevertheless, to discharge internally into the body juices secretions of great importance to the body. There are even structures that are not recognized as glands at all, such as certain sympathetic ganglia, which appear to form an internal secretion. And the end is not yet, for we know that certain portions of the mucosa of the alimentary tract have secretions, called hormones, which are necessary for the full activity of other digestive glands, even those situated at a distance. As distinct from enzymes, these hormones can be isolated in a state of relative purity and are unaltered by heat. In this class we include such bodies as adrenin and iodothyrin. Much of the information we possess about the internal secretions is yet fragmentary and we are not able to lay down general rules. but must be content to indicate ... me

of the most important facts bearing upon the defect or excess of the same as factors in the production of morbid states.

Disturbances Related to the Thyroid Secretion.—Deficient thyroid secretion may show itself in the child as cretinism, or in the adult as myxodema, the latter arising from mechanical removal of the gland (cachexia thyreopriva) as well as from more obscure causes leading to its atrophy, or intertering with its proper action. Cretinism is congenital; the cretin is physically and mentally in a state of retardation: the adult in years remains a child in intellect, or even an imbecile;

dentition is late, and the sexual organs and functions delayed and imperfect; the stature is small, the limbs short and thick, the features

coarse and expressionless.

Myxordema developing in adult life has many similar features; there is a mucoid ordema (hence the name) of the subcutaneous and other tissues, gradually robbing the face of its expression; the features become heavy, and the subcutaneous tissue suffers a connective-tissue overgrowth. The skin becomes dry, the hair coarse, thick, and tending to fall out; the mentality becomes slow and the memory defective. The same train of symptoms may be set up by complete removal of the thyroid gland. Thyroid extract can cure myxordema, and cretinism in the child, but requires to be given from time to time to prevent recurrence. It is to be noted that in some cases of myxordema and cretinism, the thyroid, far from being absent, is enlarged; despite its size, we do not suppose that it functionates properly. It may be that the vesicles are expanded by secretion as the air sacs by air in emphysema, so that the walls and the bloodvessels are compressed, with resulting arrested absorption.

The opposite condition, clinically, to myxcedema is exophthalmic goitre, known also as Graves' disease and Basedow's disease; here one finds too much thyroid, or too active thyroid tissue, with resulting nervousness, tachycardia, tremors—features opposed in character to those of myxcedema. The striking features of the disease are the exophthalmos (probably due to irritation of the sympathetics), and the goitre. Tremors, great nervousness, and tachycardia may be present, indicating a nervous energy far different from the placidity of the myxcedematous patient. There is heightened metabolism and increased discharge of the products of tissue disintegration. Thyroid-

ectomy often produces good results.

Disturbances Related to the Secretion of the Parathypoids.—Situated in or near or under the thyroids, varying in number, are small pealike glands called the parathyroids, which histologically look not unlike the immature thyroid. Their removal in animals is followed by tetany, cophthalmos, rapid respiration, etc., which symptoms are ameliorated or removed by the use of calcium salts. In many operations for thyroidectomy in the human being they are doubtless removed, without any apparent change being wrought, although the frequent presence of accessory thyroid and parathyroid nodules in the neck tegion makes it difficult to be sure in any individual case whether here has been complete ablation.

Disturbances Related to the Secretion of the Pituitary Body.—The stion of the pituitary body is related in some obscure way to that the thyroid. Acromegaly is a remarkable disease which arises in smection with disturbed function of the anterior glandular part of a pituitary body, supposedly in the direction of overactivity. The case is characterized by great enlargement of the members; the exillary bones become thick, the nose broadens, the lips, the ears

with ther necands no have earge ecreody.

of d is

rms

g of

ing.

such which etion. know ucosa secreare other uated n enolated are

nass we nand nation secrewe are rules. e . . me of the

thyroid dult as e gland ding to is condation:

and the eyelids enlarge, the hands and feet become big and clumsy. The progress of the malady is slow, and the extract of the pituitary body is of no benefit to the patient. The extract from the intermediate and posterior portions of the pituitary body causes a rise of blood pressure similar to, but more prolonged, than that of the extract of

the adrenal, and, in addition, induces a marked polyuria.

Disturbances Related to the Secretion of the Adrenal and of the Chromaffin System.—The medulla of the adrenal, apparently the more important part of the organ, is related embryologically to the sympathetic ganglia. The extract of it (adrenin) leads to great increase in blood pressure; it acts directly on muscle, even if the nerve endings are degenerated. extract of the sympathetic ganglia has the same effect upon blood pressure, and the effect of adrenin upon a part is identical with the result of stimulating the sympathetic fibres to that part. Both in the medulla of the adrenal and in the sympathetic ganglia is to be found a remarkable series of cells of sympathetic-nerve origin, the chromaffin cells, so-called because of their affinity for chrome salts, the cells taking on a strong yellowish-brown color after immersion of sections in potassium bichromate. The indications are that wherever those cells are present, adrenin or a body having like effect upon the arteriole is also present. We use the term adrenin rather than adrenalin or epinephrin because the latter are names of proprietary substances.

There are several pathological states which, acting upon and destroying the adrenal, give rise to the disease known as Addison's disease. It is characterized by great physical weakness, feeble heart action and pulse, nausea, vomiting, and pigmentation of the skin. pigmentation is most marked upon exposed surfaces, and in regions normally pigmented, and varies from a yellowish tint to a deep brown. Fibrocaseous tuberculosis, atrophy, malignant growths, hemorrhage, and inflammatory changes of the adrenal may produce it, and it has even been known to exist where the adrenals are healthy but the sympathetic ganglia diseased. It may well be imagined that the lack of blood-pressure-raising material due to the destruction of the organ accounts for the cardiovascular depression. As regards the cortex of this gland, it is interesting to note that just as overdevelopment of the glandular portion of the pituitary body is found associated with acromegaly and increased growth of skeletal tissues, so there are several cases on record in which hyperplasia and tumor growth of the adrenal cortex has been found associated with excessive and premature obesity, precocious muscularity ("the infant Hercules"), and premature virility with precocious development of the external organs of generation.

Disturbances Related to Secretions of the Testes and Ovaries .- It is known that in castrated animals the secondary sexual characters fail to develop, and this is due, in the male, to the loss of large interstitial cells in the testes and of their internal secretion; there are homologous cells in the ovary, although the proof of the effect of their secretion is by no means as clear as in the case of the male. "Heat" in castrated animals can be produced by the injection of the ovarian extracts. Not only do internal secretions of the testes and ovary affect sexual maturity, but they are also evidently concerned in the full physical development of the body. The function of the corpus luteum is of another sort; the secretion of the interstitial cells that lie external to the Graafian follicle is evidently potent to stimulate the uterine mucosa to respond to the presence of the ovum and permit its fixation; where the ovaries are removed after the fertilized ova are set free, these do not become adherent in the uterus. A secretion acting in this way is a good example of a hormone.

Disturbances Related to Various Other Internal Secretions.—The Fætus and the Mammary Gland.—It has been proved, according to Starling and Claypon, that the hypertrophy of the mammary gland in pregnancy is due to the internal secretion, so to speak, of the foetus. Watery extracts of rabbit fœtus injected into a virgin rabbit caused in a few weeks hypertrophy of the mammary gland and the formation of a thin fluid secretion; in multiparous, unimpregnated rabbits this was To disprove the supposed effect of nervous influences, true milk. a mammary gland in the guinea-pig was transplanted to the region of the ear, where it underwent hypertrophy in pregnancy, and, finally, produced milk. It is thought that the substance in the fœtus which does this acts upon the mammary gland causing anabolism and growth; when the child is born, lactation begins because this substance is no longer present, and the cells which before, under its influence, manifested anabolism and growth, in its absence break down and form milk. Thus lactation is apt to cease with the onset of a new pregnancy.

Doubt has recently been thrown upon these observations, other observers associating the growth and activity of the mammary gland

once more with the corpus luteum of pregnancy.

Disturbances Related to Secretions in the Intestinal Tract.—It is but recently that we have discovered how intricate a system of internal secretions exists in the alimentary tract, and we shall rather try to indicate what these are than to deal with their derangements. acid contents of the stomach passing into the duodenum cause an increase in the flow of pancreatic juice; this happens not because of reflex nervous stimuli, but because of a chemical substance which is recreted by the duodenum and carried by the blood to the pancreas. If the mucosa of the duodenum is scraped off and an extract made It with hydrochloric acid added, this extract, which has been called secretin, if injected into the blood of a mammal, causes an abundant ceretion of pancreatic juice. In a somewhat similar way the secreon of pyloric glands stimulates certain glands in the cardiac portion the stomach; these instances enable us to surmise that not only nervous mechanism stimulate the flow of digestive juices, shown the mouth "watering" at the sight or smell of food, but also that re exists a series of secretions developed by the mucosa of one part for another, each of which secretions can, if absorbed by the blood,

od of fin int lia.

y. ry

ıte

cts
The
ESSI of
Illa
IrkElls,

ing

in ells iole or .

The ions own. age, has npa-k of

rgan ortex nent with weral renal esity, rility

It is ail to cells cells by no imals

excite to secretion some neighboring part of the tract. Of diseased conditions of the tract due to absence or perversion of these secretions,

we can as yet only conjecture.

Disturbance Related to the Internal Secretion of the Pancreas.—Apart from its digestive secretion, there appears to be an internal secretion of the pancreas; without recapitulating the proofs that exist, we may state that this secretion, a true hormone, being put into the blood enables the liver and the muscles to properly handle carbohydrates. We are able to say this much: (1) the normal pancreas forms a secretin; (2) the liver and muscle are the main seats of deposit and utilization of carbohydrates; (3) that, unassisted, they cannot break down these carbohydrates; (4) that with help they can convert soluble carbohydrates into insoluble glycogen and rice versa; (5) that it is the secretin of the pancreas which acts as a hormone and activates or renders capable these tissues. This explains why the extirpation of the pancreas in dogs leads to glycosuria, and why certain lesions of the pancreas in the human being are followed by diabetes; but there remain many cases of diabetes that are not as yet at all explicable.

To recapitulate briefly the points we have been considering, we have, in all these disturbances due to improper action of internal secretions, a problem into which two or more factors enter; there is first, the internal secretion, second, the substratum or substance on which it acts, and third, in many cases, a hormone by virtue of which it acts. Disturbance may occur (1) by diminished secretion with normal amount of substratum; (2) by normal secretion with excess of substratum, and (3) by absence or diminution of the hormone without which the interaction cannot happen. Thus in (1) the lesion may be in the organ supplying the secretion, in (2) in the organ supplying the substratum, and in (3) in the organ supplying the hormone, and it is conceivable that in all three cases the symptoms might be the same. Further, it deserves note that the work of the last few years is indicating that the healthy state of the body is largely dependent upon the interaction of the secretions of the ductless glands; that, to a certain extent, one ductless gland and its secretion can replace another. We have already called attention to a certain parallelism between the functions of the pituitary and those of the adrenal; but, also, several observers have noted that atrophic disease or removal of the thyroid is followed by distinct hypertrophy of the glandular portion of the pituitary. Pancreatic diabetes has been found associated with hyperactivity of the chromaffin system, and Addison's disease with hyperplasia of the thymus. We are not prepared as yet to explain what these data signify, but they certainly support the view that there is much interdependence between these organs.

Non-eliminated Products of Katabolism.—Intoxications may be caused by these in two ways: either the excretory organs, being diseased, fail to eliminate products of katabolism or even if the secretory organs

eliminate, there may be resorption of the excreted material owing to obstruction in the ducts.

The Resorption of Excretions.—There is a normal resorption of excreted material constantly going on in the body; the feces solidify in the lower bowel because of resorption of fluid; the increase in solids in gall-bladder bile over that of hepatic-duct bile indicates absorption, while some physiologists hold that urinary water is reabsorbed as it passes down the tubule; this suggests that there are many series of cells which work in two directions, that is, which excrete in one direction, and absorb in the reverse direction. An example of this resorption to a serious degree is found in obstructive jaundice; here the bile is not discharged, and is re-absorbed by the lymphatics and the blood. Accompanying such jaundice are certain cerebral symptoms, slowed pulse, itching of the skin, lessened coagulability of the blood, and a tendency to hemorrhage. Some of these symptoms can be set up by the experimental injection of bile salts, although normally these bile salts are re-absorbed in the alimentary tract, whence, however, they are carried once more to the liver by the proper channel. It is the resorption at the wrong place of such an excretion as the bile salts that causes the disturbance, rather than their deleterious nature, per se. same statement holds with regard to the pancreatic juice, which, if re-absorbed by reason of the obstruction of the pancreatic duct, can set up pancreatitis; while, if bile be absorbed by the pancreas from a blockage of the Ampulla of Vater by a calculus, a yet more severe pancreatitis may ensue.

Certain cases of uremia are to be viewed in the same way. Uremia may be due to renal incompetency, where dangerous constituents fail to be abstracted from the blood, but in other cases, the kidneys perform their part, but the ureter or the urethra is blocked, and the urinary epithelium passes back into the blood materials from which it had previously freed the blood. What the substance or substances may be that cause uremia is yet unknown, though many different

ones have been suggested.

Disintegrative Intoxications.—Autolysis.—This is the process of self-disintegration that tissues undergo; if, for example, liver tissue be removed from the body and protected from septic infection, it becomes oft, by reason of enzyme actions, the most important of which is that the which breaks up proteids. To illustrate this, one may take the folicing figures (Wells): a liver in which only one-tenth of the nitrogen in a soluble form, after being kept twenty-two days aseptically, stained six-tenths of its nitrogen in a soluble form. The enzymes lich bring about this change are elaborated within the cells themes, and all soft tissues behave in this way, the liver and renal cortex ong the most active, the brain substance and skin among the least Autolysis occurs most readily in a slightly acid medium and at imperature slightly higher than that of the body. The tissues are rally alkaline in reaction, and the process begins only when this

art ion nay ood tes.

tin;

tion

sed

ns,

rbothe s or the

the

here

nave,
ions,
the
ch it
acts.
ount

tum, h the organ itum, vable rther, t that action t, one ready

of the have ed by Panof the ignify, adence

ay be seased, organs alkalinity has been neutralized by the production of carbon dioxide and organic acids, such as lactic and butyric, which are formed in dying tissues. This process of autolysis takes place in the living Thus, if a piece of liver have its blood supply cut off, autolysis will occur in the most central parts, but not in the peripheral because the alkaline lymph diffuses into this part of it. is, however, an exception even to this, viz., wherever leukocytes gain entrance in large numbers. Leukocytes possess enzymes, the leukoproteases, which act most powerfully upon the leukocytes themselves, but once liberated act also upon other tissues. This explains the softening of septic infarcts, and of the outer zone of simple infarcts, into which areas great numbers of leukocytes migrate; it explains also the softening and absorption of the exudate in a pneumonic lung. The softening of a tissue by the effect of this leukocytic enzyme is called heterolysis, as opposed to autolysis, where the cells themselves supply the enzyme. But, to prevent this universal heterolysis wherever there are leukocytes, there is an antibody in blood serum which tends to neutralize the enzyme of the leukocytes, provided these be not present in overwhelming numbers (Opie).

Autolysis is seen in the liver in cases of acute yellow atrophy, phosphorus and arsenic poisoning, chloroform poisoning, and in the group of cases characterized by pernicious vomiting (oftenest cases of piegnancy). In these the end-products found in autolysis are present, viz., leucin, tyrosin, etc. The operative toxin has evidently destroyed

the cells without destroying their ferments.

There is a partial explanation possible at this point of gangrene as it occurs in diabetic cases. Acidosis, as it is called, is a condition of heightened acidity or lessened alkalinity of the tissues, with the production of acetonuria; such is frequently present in diabetes, and this lessened alkalinity permits the occurrence of autolysis, although

the gangrene is probably precipitated by some active toxin.

Autolysis is able to cause certain disturbances of body mechanism, which can be classed as (1) disturbances due to liberation and diffusion of the enzymes, and (2) disturbances due to toxic action of the diffused products of autolysis. It is quite likely that in some cases both actions are at work. Albumosuria is an indication of such a diffusion, the albumoses appearing in the urine when there is extensive aggregation of leukocytes, with its accompanying heterolysis, such as happens in the resolution of pneumonia or in empyema; albumoses appear also when large tumors undergo softening or necrosis. Fever, too, as it occurs in infarcts, internal hemorrhages, burns or suppuration, is an indication of the liberation of intracellular enzymes; the experimental production of fever by ferments of all orders injected into the blood has been often demonstrated. Rarely the production by autolysis of acutely toxic substances occurs. Cholin is liberated in the autolysis of nerve tissues; it is not highly toxic, but it is readily converted into neurin which is. Cholin has been found in the cerebrospinal fluid of cases of nerve degeneration and softening, and it is suggested as the cause of convulsions and other serious disturbances that happen in these cases. (Mott.) Perhaps a similar formation of toxin from the disintegrated c lls is accountable for the toxic manifestations seen in cases of severe superficial burns.

ide

in

ing

off,

er-

ere

uin

ko-

es,

the

cts,

ılso

ng.

e is

ves

ver

nds

not

nos-

oup

reg-

ent,

yed

rene

tion

the

and

ough

ism,

ısion

used

tions

the

ation

ns in

also

as it

is an

ental

olood

sis of

olysis inte

fluid

Impaired Metabolism as a Cause of Disease.—At times the cells of certain organs of the body do not carry out the process of metabolism to its normal termination, and discharge substances that are toxic, or, through deficient oxidation, there may accumulate in the system, bodies not themselves toxic, but obstructive to the proper activity of the tissues. At other times, although metabolism can scarcely be said to be impaired, yet the metabolites fail to be excreted, and by their accumulation tend to cause disease.

Gout.—Gout is a condition characterized by attacks of acute arthritis and other constitutional symptoms, clinically, by the excess of uric acid in the blood, and anatomically, by the deposit of sodium biurate in the cartilages and elscwhere. It must not be imagined that this excess of uric acid in the blood is the cause of the disease, for uric acid in excess exists in the blood in a number of different states without gout being present. The urates are inert bodies, and the most that can be said is that they are an indicator; that is, the faulty metabolism which produces them produces also substances that are toxic. These substances we do not know with any exactness.

Uric acid is one of a group of substances called purin bodies, of all of which, purin (C3H4N4) is the nucleus. These bodies are uric acid, xanthin, hypoxanthin, guanin, adenin, and so on. By some they are termed the alloxuric bodies, and (with the exception of uric acid) sometimes the xanthin, purin, or alloxuric bases. These bodies are derived from nuclein, which shows that they originate from the disintegration of nuclear substance. This nuclear substance may be from the food (meats), in which case the purins are exogenous, or it may be from the nuclear substance of the tissue cells of the body, in which case they are endogenous. There is normally a certain small output of endogenous purin bodies which represents the natural wear and tear of tissue. The muscles are constantly putting out hypoxanthin, and exercise increases the output of uric acid, suggesting that one purin body is readily converted into another in the body, as happens in itro. If the pancreas be chopped up and allowed to act on guanin, can convert guanin to xanthin by means of a ferment which has en called guanase. Similarly, adenin can be converted into hypoanthin by the adrenal, the thymus, the pancreas, or the liver, by the tion of the ferment adenase. The different glands, in fact, contain ments or groups of ferments; and in this series a ferment, an oxidase, ound in the lungs, liver, muscles, and spleen, which can convert alloxuric bases into uric acid. Yet another oxidase, found in the meys, the liver, and the muscles, can oxidize uric acid into urea. ally, or perhaps one should say firstly, there is in cells generally

a nuclease by which nucleoproteins are disintegrated, liberating the

purin bases.

Step by step the following process can be seen to occur: (1) nucleoproteins, exogenous from foodstuffs, or endogenous from the body cells, acted on by nuclease, yield (2) purin bases, which, acted on by quanase or adenase, yield (3) xanthin and hypoxanthin, which, acted on by an oxidase, yield (4) uric acid, which, acted on by an oxidase, yields

There are other much more important sources of urea; but this will indicate the variations in the amount of uric acid that may be derived from the same diet, and the importance of the action of certain

ferments that are constantly present in the body.

It is necessary to know, more fully than we do, the toxic effects of the purin bases, for they are toxic, and it is perhaps the purin bases that are responsible for gout. Gout, therefore, is probably the outcome of insufficient oxidation, whereby the precursors of uric acid, and similar bodies, are not fully oxidized, and by their accumulation and their toxicity, set up morbid changes; and the uric acid formed is in its turn imperfectly oxidized, and accumulates; this diminished oxidation is due to a constitutional deficiency of oxidases, inherited or acquired.

Cystinuria.—The appearance of cystin in the urine is an unimportant matter, save that it may lead to calculus formation; but it is worthy of note at this point, as somewhat parallel to gout. It tends to be a familial disease, characterized by the appearance of cystin in the urine. Cystin is a sulphur-containing amino-acid, and the evidence seems to show that it arises from an abnormal disintegration or conversion of

the sulphur-containing part of the protein molecule.

Alkaptonuria. - This condition, in which the urine turns dark on exposure to the air, is due to the absence or deficiency of a specific oxidase with the result that final oxidation of the aromatic constituents of the protein molecule is imperfect. It, again, is unimportant clinically.

Obesity.—The accumulation of fat in the tissues is not a toxic manifestation, but follows an incomplete oxidation of the foodstuffs; when it brings about impairment of locomotion, the oxidation process becomes yet more incomplete, and the ill is cumulative. The normal fate of fat in the body is to be burnt up, yielding ultimately carbon dioxide and water, and a fixed amount of heat and energy; in obesity fat is stored up to such a degree that 38 per cent. of the total weight I as been found to be fat. This state of obesity is due either to (1) excessive absorption of food, either fats or substances, like carbohydrates, whose kataboism yields fats, or to (2) inadequate combustion of the fats so acquired. A given case of obesity may be due to both; but in those cases of obesity which show anemia, deficiency of hemoglobin and corpuscles, it seems likely that deficient oxidation is to blame.

In the plethoric, obese man, who has no such deficiency, the explanation is either overeating or an hereditary tendency to store up fat upon a normal diet; such an hereditary tendency is often combined with goutiness, and just as the goutiness means imperfect oxidation of one group of the products of metabolism, the proteins, so the obesity may

mean imperfect oxidation of another group, the fats.

Acidosis, Acetonuria, etc.—The group of cases which show lessened alkalinity of the blood, and the acumulation of acetone and the acetone bodies (3-oxybutyric and diacetic acids) in the blood, is characterized, in general, by grave intoxication, air hunger and nervous symptoms, leading even to come and death. We cannot as yet say definitely what is the origin of these bodies, whether from the amino-acids of the protein molecule, from the fatty acids or from the carbohydrates; perhaps in different discases, the source may differ for acetone and the acetone bodies appear in diabetes, in hyperpyrexia, in wasting diseases, in cancer, and in starvation; carbohydrate starvation seems to be a constant factor, whether this arise from actual lack of carbohydrates or from impaired ability of the body to use what it does receive.

The accumulation of β -oxybutyric and diacetic acids in the blood of diabetics seems responsible for the main symptoms of diabetic coma, for herbivorous animals to which they are administered develop the same group of symptoms—the blood is less alkaline, they are stuporous, dyspnæic, the blood is bright red and contains less carbon dioxide than normal. If alkalies be given the symptoms pass off, just as may occur clinically in diabetic coma. The explanation is that normally the alkalies of the blood take up carbon dioxide from the tissues, carry it to the lungs, where by the help of the oxidase present, the carbon dioxide is split off, and the salt, once more basic, is prepared to take up more carbon dioxide from the tissues. Where there is excess of acids in the blood these combine with the basic salts, and as a result the carbon dioxide remains in the tissues, causing symptoms of asphyxia.

Before leaving this subject, it may be recalled to the reader's mind that this condition of acidosis seems to underlie the disturbances found not only in diabetic coma, in certain cachectic diseases, and in starvation, but also in the pernicious vomiting of pregnancy, the cyclic vomiting of children, chloroform poisoning, and certain other less common states where grave hepatic disturbance has been determined; at the present time we can do no more than state the observation.

Dyspnœa and Asphyxia.—These symptoms, it will be seen, depend upon acidosis. It was for a long time debated whether they were caused by deficiency of oxygen or excess of carbon dioxide, and the decision is in favor of the latter. The tension of oxygen in the inspired air may be reduced from 20 to 8 per cent. without inducing dyspnœa, but an increase of tension of 0.5 per cent. of carbon dioxide in the inspired air and so in the blood, leads to such increased activity of respiration that the volume of inspired air is doubled. Be it noted that the increase is not in the amount of carbon dioxide in the blood, but in the tension of free carbon dioxide in it; for in diabetic coma, as has been said, acids

ls is oe

in

e

of es ne nd on

 ed

red

or int hy e a ne. to

of
on
ific
nts
lly.
niin it
nos
fat

and ored und orpataas so nose and

ana-

combine with the alkalies present in the blood plasma, and less carbon dioxide is actually taken up; but it still diffuses in the blood, and is

present in a free state, giving rise to the asphyxia.

Eclampsia.—There is a most grave condition which occasionally shows itself during the last few days of pregnancy or in the few hours immediately following parturition. It appears in the form of convulsions, followed by coma, and frequently is fatal. Postmortem examination shows that there are two orders of cases; in the one there is extreme degeneration of the kidneys, in the other, the brunt of the disturbance is seen to have fallen upon the liver, which exhibits areas of degeneration even to complete necrosis of the parenchyma of the The condition is essentially associated with childbearing, is not of infectious nature, but has all the ear-marks of a grave intoxication, but as to what is the exact nature of the intoxication, we are still wholly in the dark. While some attribute it to the fœtus, others bring (inadequate) evidence that the toxic material originates from the placenta. Others, again, ascribe it to want of balance between the internal secretions of the maternal organism. We are not, therefore,

in a position to classify properly the condition.

Ptomaines.—These form a large class of substances obtained from the decomposition of animal matter; they are the results, although not the ultimate results, of the disintegration of proteins, for if the decomposition be continued beyond a certain time the ptomaines diminish in amount, giving place to simpler substances. The wellknown ptomaines are methylamin, di- and trimethylamin, cholin, neurin, and muscarin. While some of them are non-toxic, others are intensely toxic. It is possible that the symptoms of constipation may be due to absorption of small quantities of these toxic ptomaines from fecal matter fermented by the agency of bacteria; bacteria are necessary, for these substances have never yet been obtained from foodstuffs without the action of bacteria. The same holds true for a group of substances of a lower toxicity than the last, which are formed from carbohydrates by the action of bacteria; these are the organic acidsformic, butyric, lactic, etc., and the interesting point about these is that if they are repeatedly administered, they cause disturbance of a chronic type such as cirrhosis of the liver. This is evidently not the sole cause of cirrhosis of the liver, because it can arise from some such circumstance as this; the obstruction may tend to increased bacterial activity in the intestine, which irritates the mucosa, permitting to enter the portal system bacteria of low virulence, whose endotoxins are liberated, causing hemolysis and irritation of the liver. From what has been said, it will be gathered that these intoxicants-ptomaines and indol and such others—are rather exogenous than endogenous.

INTOXICATIONS NOT PURELY EXOGENOUS OR ENDOGENOUS

Gastro-intestinal Intoxications. -- Constipation. -- It is a common observation that constipation, in a person whose habits are regular, induces a feeling of lessened well-being, and in some, actual headache or malaise. What is the actual toxin or toxins at work we cannot yet say. In acute obstruction of the alimentary tract, where vomiting, weakness, or collapse is present, we are in a position to be more explicit, although not dogmatic. Obstruction of the upper bowel is more grave than that of the lower, and the possible causes of this severe intoxication are two: either (1) the blockage lets unusual bacteria bring about abnormal fermentation, or the bacteria produce their own toxins, or (2) there are elaborated in the stomach toxic materials, .nich are in normal digestion modified lower down. Both these may be true, although the better evidence is in favor of the former; obstruction does permit increase of virulence and increased multiplication of the bacteria above it, though it has to be admitted that the toxins of intestinal bacteria grown outside the body do not produce the marked symptoms found in obstruction. It is true that one group of toxins—the indol group does show some toxic power, but in the intestine it is as likely to be an indicator of a high degree of intestinal putrefaction as to be the efficient toxin itself. Indol, however, if ingested, sets up irritability, mental dulness, and headache; it can be formed in the test tube from peptone by Bacillus coli—the commonest inhabitant of the intestine—and is found in the urine, in small quantity, it is true, in obstruction. One may sum up by saying that part, but not all, of the toxic manifestations of obstruction, are probably due to indol, skatol, and related decomposition products of proteins.

BODILY STATES AS DIRECT AND PREDISPOSING CAUSES OF DIREASE

Overstrain.—Overstrain and fatigue are the results of work, with the difference that while fatigue is the natural, physiological sequel of activity, overstrain goes a step farther and indicates an abnormal degree of fatigue or a pathological effect wrought by activity; exhaustion goes farther yet, and implies overstrain carried to such a point that continued activity is impossible unless a period of rest intervene. Everyone knows by experience that fatigue is a natural consequence work and demands rest; if adequate rest be obtained, fatigue dispears, and the worker is left better able to work than before—the the being that in course of time that maximum state of ability to k is reached in which we term the worker or the athrete "trained." however, the rest be not adequate, or if work be carried to such extent that the fatigue is excessive, or if the work be of the nature iolent effort—the return to the normal is secured only after a rest

on is

lly ars onem ere the eas the , is

are the the ore,

ca-

rom
ugh
the
ines
vellarin,
sely
due
ecal
ary,
tuffs
p of

ds—
se is
se of
t the
such
cerial
g to

oxins what aines unduly prolonged, because we have gone past mere fatigue and have got "overstrain." Further, the person or organ that has experienced the overstrain is the worse for it, is not stronger from the exercise, but is less capable of responding to a given demand. Practically, this is becoming daily of more importance to the physician, and an understanding of the principles of work, fatigue, overstress,1 and rest is essential to him. Whether work and fatigue concern more the nervous or the muscular mechanism matters not; in either case, if the work done equal in units of energy the food taken in, the body does not suffer, because the energy that the body possesses is like a bank account, to which there is a daily income and from which there is a daily draft; if day by day the amount drawn out exceeds the income, the account diminishes, and a sudden large call upon the account will require many days of income with careful expenditure before the amount of the account is restored. The reader can supply other analogies in the same line of thought; and we may be forgiven for the digression if we recommend every practising physician and every student to read the classic "Rest and Pain" of Hilton, which excellently demonstrates how

de a therapeutic principle is judicious inactivity. results of overstress are various according to the organs involved and to the degree of overstress; there is either direct production of a

morbid state, or an increased susceptibility to disease.

Direct Production of Morbid States by Overstress.—The degrees of overstress have been classified as superacute, acute, and subacute; they

will be considered in this order.

Superacute overstrain has not lacked examples since the soldier dropped dead at Athens after gasping out the news of Marathon. There are all gradations from this down to the few moments of suffocating breathlessness of the "commuter" who has had to run hard to catch his morning train. The symptoms of the lesser grades of superacute overstrain seem largely due to cardiac inadequacy, the heart not being able to pass on the blood as rapidly as the muscles demand. The cases in which death follows intense prolonged strain suggest in many ways that there are discharged into the blood toxic products of muscular activity. Cadaveric rigidity immediately follows death; the dark venous blood fails to coagulate; the capillaries are dilated. The acute degree of overstrain may be excited in such a case as where a man not in training is severely indisposed after a mountain climb; he has anorexia, fever, pain in the limbs, and is restless and sleepiess. From longer-continued, but less extreme effort, come such results as writers' and pianists' cramp, and the labioglossal paralysis of flute players; and there are undoubtedly local and general manifestations of disturbance from overstress of the ocular muscles in their attempts to keep accommodation perfect.

Overstress as a Predisposing Cause of Disease.—It is long known to clinicians and experimenters that overstress makes the subject of it

¹ Overstress, is the physical cause; overstrain, the bodily state produced by it.

more liable to infection, that hard work, long hours, and inadequate rest make men more liable than normal to acute diseases, such as influenza and pneumonia. If resting animals and animals undergoing forced labor are subjected to the same doses of bacterial cultures, the resting animals resist much the better; if into any such animal, along with the culture, lactic acid be introduced, the bacteria grow the more readily; this is interpreted to mean that the acid produced by the muscular activity of the exhausted animal assists the growth of certain bacteria in the tissues.

In a way entirely local, also, overstress renders the organ concerned specially liable to disease, and this is true not only of overstress, but also of stress; in the fœtus, the right heart bears the brunt of the circulatory work, and in the fœtus cardiac disease is right-sided; subsequent to birth, the stress on the left side of the heart is greater, and heart disease tends to be left-sided. It is notable in this connection, too, that vegetations grow on the heart valves as a result of infection plus stress; the entire surface of the valve is exposed to the insult of the infection, but the entire surface of the valve does not develop vegetations; the area near the valve edge where one valve strikes the other in closing is the part that is exposed to both the insult of infection and the insult of stress, and here it is that the vegetations develop.

The last-named principle works in both directions, so that not only are "strained" organs, or parts thereof, liable to infection and other damage, but infected or damaged areas are more liable to overstrain than healthy ones, or, stated otherwise, what is merely stress for healthy tissue is overstress for damaged tissue. It is the subjects of chronic intoxications, such as syphilis or alcohol, in whom the ordinary work of the circulation produces aneurysmal and other evidences of vascular apprenticip.

Muscular Fatigue and Overstrain.-Muscular fatigue has been considered by some as fatigue of the muscle fibre; by others, as fatigue of the nerves concerned; it is one or the other or both. The muscle itself can be fatigued by direct stimulation, because the substances produced by contraction inhibit further activity; when the nervous mechanism is considered we cannot experimentally fatigue the conbeeting axone; nor can we fatigue perceptibly the reflex centres in the word; but what we do observe is this: if a reflex centre for a particular truscle he selected, a centre that is amenable to influences from several elerent tracts, and we stimulate one of these tracts, we produce in the the phenomenon that the muscle no longer responds; if, now, ther afferent tract be employed, the muscle at once responds. shows that the muscle itself is not exhausted, nor is the axone justed; what is exhausted is the synapse, the junction between the event nerve tract and the nerve cell of the reflex centre; these two parts of different neurones. Let us here digress to give a "working of the connection between neurones. One nerve cell does not andly join another nerve cell, but we may say that it is in contact or

ct of it

ve

æd

se,

uy,

an

t is

ous

ork

fer,

ınt,

aft;

unt

any

the

the

f we

the

how

dved

of a

es of

they

oldier

thon.

focatcatch

racute

being

cases

Ways

ıscular

dark

acute

an not

ne has

From

vriters'

layers;

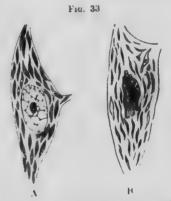
of dis-

npts to

own to

by it.

almost in contact with it; terminal filaments of one cell are in "almost contact" with the dendrites of another, like the branches of one tree intermingling with but not actually touching the branches of another; impulses skip across the space from twig to twig, when they are in a state of "almost contact." Fatigue of a nerve cell may be practically thought of as a shrinking, by which the twigs or branches of one are drawn away from the other, so that impulses have farther to jump from one to another than before, and do so less readily; if cells are fatigued, the impulses pass poorly because of this withdrawal from contact; with sleep we may suppose that the rested dendrites or axones are expanding out once more to a position of almost contact; so that on waking, the impulses (or thoughts or whatever they may be bass readily once more. Reverting to the specific example we are considering, we may imagine that the constant stimulation of one afferenc tract



A, resting nerve cell with large rounded nucleus, showing chromatin network, the Nissl bodies in the cytoplasm (derived from the nuclear material) also large and prominent; B, exhausted nerve cell of same order, with strunken trregular nucleus, chromatin network indistinet, Nissl bodies diminished in size and poorly staining. (After Gustav Mann.)

makes the processes of that neurone draw away till the impulse no longer readily jumps the gap, and the neurone governing the muscle is no longer stimulated; the state of "almost contact" is lost, the "synapse" fatigued; when a new neurone is used, which is in "almost contact" with the neurone governing the muscle, the impulse passes readily, and the

neurone and the muscle respond.

Fatigue of the muscle itself appears to be due to the formation of products of muscular activity-sarcolactic acid, carbonic acid, and These substances have effect probably also on the nerve mechanism; and finally, we have to admit that nerve cells themselves are capable of organic change through use—that even the process of reasoning tires-although the experimental proof is not to be obtained. This exhaustion of the neurone has been well demonstrated by Hodge and others by comparison of the staining power of nerve cells and nuclei in rest and after-prolonged activity.

Lack of Activity and Disuse as Causes of Disease.—Tissues atrophy if unused, and the atrophy so produced is not in any sense different from the atrophy that follows diminution of blood supply to a part; the most that can be said is that tissues in activity tend to have a good circulation, adequate nourishment and prompt removal of waste All this is lacking in muscle whose nerve supply is cut off, and amid these various coincident circums ances it is not possible to say which is most responsible. A word in necessary here about so-called trophic nerves; these were supposed to be fibres which had special governance over the nutrition of the tissues; but the atrophy or other derangement of tissues separated from central control need not be due to the section of trophic nerves, but may surely arise from lack of properly governed activity, from consequent inadequate food supply because vasomotility is not rightly governed, from delayed removal of waste products. Since perfect health of tissue depends upon the right coördination of nutrition, vascular supply and cell activity, it seems reasonable to suppose that the lack of this coordination may be attended by actual tissue alterations and by increased liability to infections.

PREDISPOSITION AND SUSCEPTIBILITY

By these terms we mean an abnormal liability to be influenced by some environing factor, whereby a morbid state is set up. Living under different conditions, it has come about that no two of us respond in exactly the same way to the same external influence; even in an individual, different tissues respond with varying degrees of reaction to the same stimulus. Sensitiveness above the degree that is usual is susceptibility or predisposition. As was shown earlier, this predisposition may be inherited or acquired.

Inherited predisposition may be (a) specific or ex specie, as is shown by the predisposition of cattle to pleuropneumonia, dogs to distemper, man to gonorrhœa and typhoid. Or i may be (b) racial, as seen in Europeans and yellow fever, Hebrews and diabetes, or it may be (c) familial, as in certain exanthemata, particularly neuroses and gout.

it is necessary to digress at this point, to indicate that error may easily occur here. A family may really be comparatively immune to a disease because, by survival of the fittest, the stronger members of the family have, by virtue of some characteristic, been able to resist a disease to which they were liable and have been enabled to hand this characteristic strengthened. But where a disease has been demic, there are many individuals who have acquired, in an unnoticed much, their immunity. They have had unrecognizable or unrecognizable attacks of the specific disease which have sufficed to protect the This is seen in the apparent immunity of the natives of many stries to malaria, the children when examined having the malarial

the Nisslent; B, exwork indis-

almost

e tree

other:

e in a

tically

ne are

jump

ells are

1 from

axones

so that

" TASS

. ...ler-

nc tract

no longer no longer fatigued; with the and the

nation of cid, and he nerve semselves of obtained by Hodge nd nuclei

parasites in their blood. Nay, more, they may only have taken in minimal amounts of the infection, which their tissues have overcome, and in this very act they have manufactured an immunity because they have been constantly attacked by minimal amounts of the toxin. In an infectious hospital it is often noted that where diphtheria is being cared for, attendants are liable in the first few days to sore throat, but should no actual attack of diphtheria supervene, they are often found to be subsequently immune. The presumption is that they absorb a small number of diphtheria bacilli frequently, and that these stimulate them to build up an immunity to the disease.

Classification.—Predisposition may be classified according to:

1. Sex.—The female is exposed to a series of disorders connected

with menstruation, childbirth, and the menopause.

2. Life Period.—Infancy.—Disorders of maldevelopment and inanition (to the end of first year); athrepsia, various forms of enteritis with diarrhœa; meningitis.

Childhood.—Rickets, measles, scarlatina, diphtheria.

Puberty and Adolescence.—Chlorosis (in female); acute rheumatism and rheumatic heart disease (ten to fifteen); typhoid; tuberculosis.

Adult.-Typhoid (twenty to twenty-five); tuberculosis (twenty to

Middle Age. - Gout, lithiasis, and chronic Bright's disease (thirtythirty). five onward); arteriosclerosis, aneurysms (thirty to fifty); cancer (forty to sixty).

Old Age.—The same continued, along with atrophic conditions.

3. Habit of Life at Different Life Periods.—In the years of infancy when growth is proceeding rapidly, the digestive system is under most stress; limited power of locomotion prevents much exposure to infectious diseases, which occur at a later time when the child mingles freely with his fellows; the age of work produces often a more sedentary life in more confined and often less well-ventilated surroundings (the period of tuberculosis); with increasing age, lessened exercise and yet more sedentary life tend to constipation, gallstone formation, etc.

4. Previous Infection. - Although in some diseases an attack confers immunity, there are others in which there remains a greater liability to a second attack; such are erysipelas, furunculosis, acute rheumatism, and influenza. It may be that the germs of the disease are not destroyed, and that a low state of general health permits them to flourish once more. Not only this, but an attack of one disease is frequently followed by an infection of a different kind, as when one exanthem is immediately followed by another.

5. Malnutrition. To exemplify how malnutrition predisposes to disease, it is necessary only to cite the severe epidemics of infectious disease that, at different times, have followed upon famine in Russia,

India, and Ireland.

The Susceptibility of Particular Tissues. - Reference is made here not to the susceptibility of an area that is injured or badly nourished, for this has been already dealt with, but to the fact that certain tissues are prone to permit the growth of certain infectious agents. The channel of entrance has something to do with this, so that inhaled germs often attack the respiratory, and ingested germs the digestive tract. foci that are clearly secondary, and evidently selective, we find the tubercle bacillus growing readily in the pia-arachnoid, but infrequently in the brain; infrequently in the stomach, and often in the small intestine. Even if injected into the blood stream, colon bacilli are apt to set up enteritis. The fact of the susceptibility of special tissues remains, but we have no adequate explanation for it. Consideration of these data brings us to an important conclusion that an infection does not involve the whole body. Coincidently with the growth of the specific germs in individual organs, there tends to be a reaction to and destruction of the same in other parts. We find typhoid bacilli in a patient suffering from that disease, in the spleen, liver, skin, and kidneys, but with much difficulty in many other organs; yet we know that the infection is a universal one, and that these other organs have their chance to become infected. It seems that in susceptible regions the bacteria are winning, and in others losing their battle with the tissues.

Idiosyncrasy.—This term is applied to the exhibition of extreme susceptibility to the influence of substances that are not hurtful, and even beneficial to the average of people. Strawberries, shell fish, certain fish, in some people cause urticaria or other skin eruption, headache, and in fine, indications of an intoxication; idiosyncrasy to drugs is familiar to every physician. Hay fever is an idiosyncrasy to one or more particular kinds of pollen; and the presence of a cat in the room, although unseen and unthought of, produces in some people a state of nervous apprehension, explicable by some unperceived olfactory impression; these as yet are curious facts lacking explanation, save that the recent study of the phenomenon of anaphylaxis has introduced us to a possible explanation of at least some cases. The administration of minute doses of protein followed, after a few days, by larger doses of the same protein, results in a general systemic disturbance resembling that seen in some of these cases of idiosyncrasy-malaise, profound depression, coryza, erythematous and other emptions on the skin, or even in some cases severe respiratory distress of an asthmatic type, the phenomena, in short, of "serum sickness." It is evident that the system may develop an extraordinary susceptibility toward one or another protein, by the exhibition of relatively minute quantities of the same. The food idiosyncrasies, hay fever, and the cases of asthma seem thus to come into line with serum sickness and anaphylaxis in general.

ancy most infecfreely y life (the d yet onfers ability atism, royed, n once llowed imme-

in

ne,

use

kin.

is

oat,

ten

hev

iese

cted

in-

ritis

tism

irty-

forty

ses to ectious Russia,

ere not ed, for

III CHAPTER

THE MORBID AND REACTIVE PROCESSES PROPER

THE LOCAL REACTION TO IRRITATION—INFLAMMATION

It is very necessary for the student to obtain a clear understanding of what inflammation is, and how it begins, progresses, and ends, because a large fraction of all the pathological specimens he will ever see and a majority of the clinical cases he will be called to treat involve in some way this process. He can become conversant with the thousand special cases of inflammation only by knowing that the same general laws underlie them all, even those most diverse in appearance.

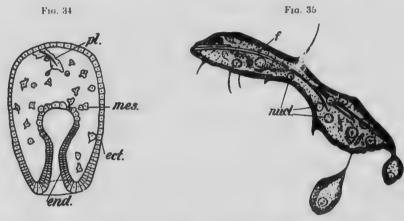
In whatever member of the animal kingdom we examine it, the response to an irritation is similar; if we scratch the tissue of an invertebrate with a needle, certain effects are produced; if we scratch the skin of a human being we find effects that at bottom are similar; in other words, the tissues from their simplest to their most complex type have learned only one way to behave when they are irritated or injured; the complex body has more ways of exhibiting its reaction because it has more differentiated tissues, but the process we see in the simplest animal we find also in the most complex animal, and it is this unity that makes it possible for us to construct certain rules which underlie

every case of inflammation.

Inflammation is the series of local adaptive changes in tissu- that result from actual or from referred injury. By injury we mean all grades of stimulus, from a mere irritation which only quickens the activity of the cells, to a damage which kills or all but kills them; and we insist upon some such understanding of the term inflammation; because those who work in a special field are apt to restrict the term, and here the physician, the surgeon, the physiologist, and the medical student must meet on a basis common to all; the tissues behave after the same manner whether they are injured by the aseptic knife of the surgeon, the poison of the Staphylococcus aureus, the flame or the frost, and it would be wrong for us to lay down restrictions that nature has indicated so definitely to be false. There are those who say that inflammation of a wound occurs only when infection invades it; not so; the wound itself implies inflammation; and this broad view of the case, having priority and right upon its side, has two good reasons for being admitted. There are those, on the other hand, who go even farther than we, and say that inflammation includes not only the changes at the site of injury, but every other change in the body at large that accompanies this; this is apt to confuse the learner, and the distant changes will be dealt with by us in considering general reaction to injury and infection; so that we restrict the term inflammation to the local

changes in any tissue that reacts.

The process of inflammation, occurring in the invertebrate animals, we shall touch upon merely to illustrate two fundamental principles, two modes of defence against injury, and at the same time two modes of repair of the damage inflicted, for thus early in our consideration of the subject, it is necessary to show that the processes-inflammation and repair—are inseparable. These two principles are (1) that sooner or later a proliferation of cells of the part concerned occurs, and (2) that there is a determination of wandering cells to the injured area.



Larva of one of the simplest metazoan forms tstropecten) to show ect., ectoderm; end., endoderm; mes., wandering mesodermal cells which at pl. have attached themselves to a foreign body and formed a plasmodium around it.

The plasmodium of fused mesodermal cells seen in the previous figure, higher magnification; nucl. nuclei of individual cells. (After Metchnikoff.)

If we take the simplest form of coelenterate, we find a differentiation into ectoderm, endoderm, and mesoderm, as in Fig. 34. mesoderm cells are formed from the other layers, and represent what will become, in higher forms, the supportive structures of the body; it will be noted that in this simple form they are either relatively fixed or free, some being joined loosely by cell processes, others wandering. If an irritant body be introduced into this cavity the cells travel toward it and stick to it; its very presence irritates to reproduction cells in contact with which it lies, and thus new cells are born; these cells, new and old, surround it and if it be digestible, they digest it; if not, they tence it off and render it as harmless by this isolation as they can. Here are both principles illustrated, positive chemiotaxis, or attraction, and cell proheeration. This must be kept in mind later on when we find that the wandering cells, mesoblastic in origin, are the cells that

nding ends,

ever volve usand eneral

t, the vertee skin other e have jured; ause it mplest unity nderlie

that grades ctivity and we pecause nd here student ie same urgeon, st, and as indilammaso; the he case,

or being

farther

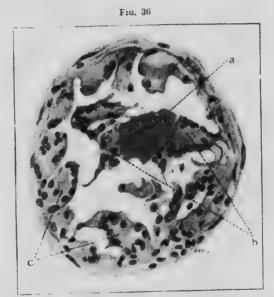
anges at

rge that

exhibit chemiotaxis and rally to the site of injury, whereas the fixed

cells of the body tend to proliferate and regenerate.

As we advance farther up the zoölogical scale to those animals that have an open vascular system, but no proper vessels, we find another fundamental principle illustrated; if the ectoderm be punctured, the lymph which bathes the cells of the body coagulates and temporarily seals the hole; this is to be remembered when we find in our studies on the human body that a scaffold of fibrin is constructed throughout the injured area. As we advance once more to the higher animals, which have a closed vascular system, we find that these same simple features persist, and that the vessels serve to convey more readily and more rapidly lymph and wandering cells to the injured part, there to carry out their functions—the same functions that we find their counterparts performing in the lowly organized coelenterate.



Foreign body giant cells in thyroid vesicle, to show similar plasmodium formations surrounding foreign body, or its equivalent, in man: a, remnant of mass of colloid in centre of vesicle; b, giant cells attacking the colloid; c, giant cells that have already dissolved colloid. (From case of chronic interstitial thyroiditis, Dr. Rhea.)

The detail of the inflammatory process must be dealt with farther

on with more particularity.

The Causes of Inflammation.—1. Bacterial.—Bacteria are most frequently the exciting cause of inflammation, whether by their direct action in originating the process, or as an adjuvant to trauma, as in infection after a wound, or as in secondary infection after a burn or after the action of some corrosive. It becomes at once evident that this admits a very large number of bacteria to our consideration; there

are the pathogenic organisms, such as the Bacillus typhosus or the Streptococcus pyogenes, which can inaugurate inflammation; there are the saprophytic organisms which cannot grow in the body normally, but which can multiply in surface discharges or on mucous membranes, and there liberate toxins which can be absorbed and cause inflammation; the non-pathogenic forms are able to do nothing of this kind and for our purposes are negligible.

If we are dealing with a microbe capable of setting up or of assisting to set up the process of inflammation, it is by no means certain that the inflammation will be of a definite, fixed degree of severity; every case of bacterial inflammation is a problem in which it is necessary to gauge the virulence of the organism and the resistance of the patient; and we shall see that varying grades of intensity and rapidity of the

process are thus set up.

Bacteria may attack the body directly, being carried to and implanted upon it from the outside, or from the mucous surfaces of the throat or intestine, just as the Æsopian viper bit the countryman who warmed it in his bosom. Another form of infection is of great clinical importance. It sometimes happens that an operation wound, made with the most careful asepsis, becomes infected: it is possible that there may have been some fault in technical work, and the bacteria may thus have come from the outside; but it may also happen, and does happen, that the patient supplied the infection himself, and that bacteria were carried from some of his storehouses, the throat or the intestine, by way of the blood to the wound, because the wound is at the moment the part of least resistance in the body. This implies that there are bacteria in the blood; such we believe actually to be the case. It is true that blood cultures of the healthy yield no growth; nevertheless, there are indications that from time to time bacteria are being picked up from the upper air passages and from the intestine, and that under ordinary conditions these are rapidly destroyed by the agency of the blood and endothelium; but if living bacteria be carried to a part where the resistance is low, as a wound, then in place of undergoing destruction they are able to make a foothold and multiply. One very important function of the liver is to kill off the bacteria carried from the intestine in the portal blood; for the portal blood picks up not only food particles from the bowel but also organisms, whose remains can be found in the liver at any moment. It is true that the buteria which escape into the blood are quickly destroyed by several exencies, and the internal organs are potentially, if not actually, sterile. is these "chance" organisms which cause the latent infections the terminal infections, which last so often supervene upon some closic disease; an example of this is that a case dying slowly of heart sise is generally found to harbor some inflammatory process such oneumonia, which arises not by infection due to highly pathogenic tobes brought in from without, but from bacterie often of low dence, which hitherto have been impotent to c'

Junding b, giant chronic

xed

that

ther

the arily

dies

hout

nals.

nple

idily

here

their

arther

st fredirect as in irn or t that : there within the tissues. In such a case the resistance is at a low ebb, and a small is unber cf bacteria of low virulence doubtless suffices.

The process of inflammation is caused not by the mere presence of bacteria but by the effect of the toxins given off from them. To use a homely example, one may think of each bacterium or group of bacteria as surrounded by a little halo of toxin which it gives off either during its life or after its death through the action of the tissue juices; the tissues lying within the influence of this toxin becoming inflamed. The cells which face the toxin in its least diluted form suffer the most severely

and the cells further away in a constantly lessening degree.

2. Traumade. Inflammation may be set up by a very numerous class of physical agencies; the surgeon's knife, a blow, a crush, a puncture, friction, movement (reëxciting an inflammation that has subsided), electricity, heat, and cold are all capable of injuring or killing cells; the cells, once killed, have to be got rid of and their dead bodies, themselves, are irritant by reason of the chemical products of the disintegration of protoplasm; so that in every case of trauma we have two factors assisting one another in the production of inflammation. When the minimum of destruction is wrought, as in an aseptic wound, we have the process of inflammation in a simple form, viz., the series of events which we call repair.

3. Chemical. Strictly speaking, the products of bacteria are chemical causes of inflammation, but under this heading we deal with substances or gases which have a destructive effect on tissues; it is a familiar fact that antiseptic solutions have the power to kill and injure cells to a certain depth; and the action of certain products of the animal and plant body is well known, e. g., the venoms of insects and reptiles,

cantharides, mustard, and croton oil.

3. Nervous.—Nerves can not only stimulate tissues, but can irritate them, and we find tissues that undergo inflammation solely from this cause. Herpes zoster is a well-known example; this follows upon irritation and inflammating of one or more posterior root ganglia; again, at times the cheek becomes swollen, red, and painful, in short, inflamed, because a tooth in the area of distribution of the same facial nerve is the seat of trouble; this is the form of inflammation we had in mind when we defined inflammation as a reaction to referred injury; here the injury is elsewhere, but is referred to the part concerned.

The Different Grades of Irritation.—It was stated that the cells exposed to the most undiluted toxin are most damaged, and those farther away are less damaged, so that in the same field of inflammation there are cells reacting in different ways; it may be further said that if the same grade of toxin be applied to two cells of different orders they will react in different degrees. Thus there is found the very greatest variation in grades of response to irritation, even in the same limited area.

This question of the different resisting powers of different kinds of cells will repay closer consideration. We are able roughly to divide the cells of the body into the parenchymatous and the supporting; the former are specialized to do special work, and are exemplified by the nerve cells, liver cells, kidney cells, and so on; the latter perform more lowly functions, and are concerned in no skilled work, as it were; such tissues are the fibrous connective tissue, subcutaneous, or as the framework of organs, tendons, ligaments, fasciæ, and so on. The body may be likened to a community of which the parenchymatous cells are the professional and the skilled members, and the supportive structures the "laboring classes." In a general way, the professional classes are more highly trained, less robust, do not reproduce readily, and if one die, his place may be filled only by a person trained like himself. So it is with the parenchymatous cell in each of these particulars. On the other hand, the laborer does relatively simple work, reproduces readily, is unmoved by the ordinary turmoils of public questions, and if he die, his work is done by a neighbor who needs no special training to take his place. So it is with the supportive cell, in all these particulars. If now we have a poison of a certain intensity acting upon a parenchymatous cell and a fibrous connective-tissue cell side by side, the former is more damaged than the latter, and what is sufficient to kill the former may only irritate the latter to proliferation.

At this point we shall consider the effects of irritation on the individual cell of whatever kind. Let us suppose a toxin of very slight severity. It will irritate the cell, stimulate it to greater activity: if a secreting cell, to secrete; if a supportive cell, to reproduction. If now the poison be a stronger one, it has the power of producing change in the cytoplasm of the cell:-first, the change we are accustomed to call cloudy swelling or cloudy degeneration; the cytoplasm swells, the outline of the cell may become less distinct, the plasm may appear more opaque; if the degenerative process goes farther the cell becomes granular, like ground glass, and it may show fatty, hyaline, or other degeneration (although we do not know exactly what circumstances determine one form of degeneration and what another), and finally may die. This gradual adv nee toward death we have designated as a bionecrescent process; if the toxin be yet stronger the cell may be instantly killed. We can thus picture to ourselves a toxin killing at once the cells nearest, causing the bio-necrescent process with subsequent death in those a little farther away, the same process with recovery in those yet farther away, and cloudy swelling in those still more remote, while those farthest removed, yet within the sphere of influence of the toxin, are merely irritated to activity of function, phagocytosis, chemiotaxis, or reproduction. In every composite picture of inflammation, the student must keep in mind that although we may lay stress upon wier more macroscopic features, yet in each field there may be cells in all stages of "sickness."

Inflammation in a Vascular Area.—Let us consider what happens is such a tissue as the ordinary lax subcutaneous tissue, plentifully sapplied with blood vessels. In this, let us suppose that the irritant—

and

e of se a eria ring

the The rely

elass ture, led),

eells; hemegra-

ctors n the have vents

mical ances r fact s to a d and ptiles,

ritate n this irritaagain, lamed, nerve had in injury;

ed.

ne cells

le those

mation

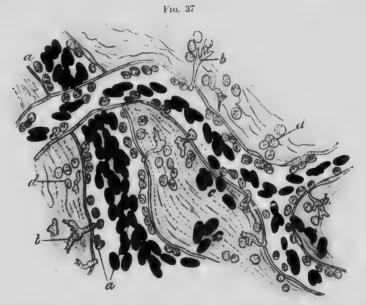
id that

orders

ne very

ne same

sinds of divide say a clump of bacteria is multiplying; the toxins are being given off in all directions. The first step which is observed on the part of the tissues is that the capillaries dilate, and the stream, though larger, becomes slower; at the same time the leukocytes begin to drop out of the blood current and lag along the walls of the capillary, where presently a whole row of them is seen. These begin to progress through the capillary wall, by a flowing movement of the protoplasm—diapedesis—and soon some are to be seen outside the vessel. Serum has also been exuding at the same time, so that the connective-tissue cells come to lie well apart; many of these last are noted to be in a swollen state.



Inflamed mesentery of frog: a, margination of leukocytes in the dilated capillaries; b, migration of leukocytes; c, escape of red corpuscles; d, accumulation of leukocytes outside the capillaries. (After Ribbert.)

What is now going on is a struggle between bacteria and serum aided by leukocytes and sometimes by tissue cells, for if the last are not too severely injured they will proliferate, urged thereto by the irritation of the toxin. The leukocytes and the newborn cells of the part are actively "phagocyting" the bacteria, and many microbes are thus destroyed. In the meantime the blood in the capillaries is circulating, and the lymph outside of them is also, in its own slow way, circulating, so that it will readily appear that there is great activity in such an area; the area in question is now a mass of leukocytes, of cells of the part, old and newborn, soggy by reason of the excess of lymph which has exuded from the capillaries. Up to the present moment, then, we have a preliminary dilatation of vessels, margination of leukocytes,

diapedesis of the same, exudation of serum, and phagocytosis. At this stage the part inflamed will show the classic signs of inflammation, dolor, rubor, calor, tumor; dolor, or pain, because of the irritation of the nerve endings, rubor, or redness, because of the excess of blood which is present by reason of the dilated vessels, calor, or heat, because of the increased flushing of the part by the warm blood, and tumor, or swelling, because the tissue is bulkier than it was by reason of the excess fluid, by the leukocytes newly brought in, by the tissue cells newly born, not to mention the greater bulk of blood in the vessels. This mass of leukocytes and other cells is now on the point of becoming

an abscess; if, however, the resistance of the body be successful, the bacteria become eaten up by the cells, or attacked by the lysins of the serum, and the leukocytes, which have not died, wander away again or are carried by the lymph, the excess lymph itself disappears, the bodies of the cells which have died are disintegrated, and the pieces "scavenged" or cleared away by their living fellows, and the tissue becomes as it was at first, with the exception of the proliferated cells of the part, which remain. These fibroblasts in time become true functioning connective-tissue cells, and the total result of the inflammation is that there is a fibrosis, an increase of these fibres at the spot where the inflammation existed. This constitutes the process of repair or absorption in an inflamed area.

ed area.

1. adhesion of leukocytes to the walls of a capillary in an inflamed area; 2, mode of migration of a polynuclear leukocyte seen under higher magnification. (Lavdowsky.)

by the cells but by the bacteria, let us consider what happens. We revert to the stage at which we have a soggy mass of leukocytes, new cells of the part, bacteria and serum, in fact, "the inflammatory mass." As the bacteria multiply and give off more toxins, more and more leukocytes die by reason of bacteria ingested or of toxin absorbed; especially those leukocytes and cells that are most in the centre of the mass are apt to die, because their oxiden and food supply is cut off by the dense crowd surrounding them, and their excretion is not carried away freely from them for the same reads: when they die, we find that the centre of the inflammatory mass becomes a mass of dead and living leukocytes and bacteria floating serum—in other words, pus, and the whole area with its contained

igration (After

t of

ger,

out

here

ough

desis

also

ome

tate.

aided e not rritapart thus ating, circusuch of the which then,

cytes,



pus forms an abacess. The tissues yet alive bordering on this liquefied centre are in a case that is little better, and suppuration spreads, and the tissues bordering the abscess, as it were, melt into it until the abscess either breaks to the outside, is opened by incision, or stops by virtue of

the tissue resistance.

Before we consider how such a lesion is repaired, let us glance a moment at the varying grades of cellular implication we meet. At the edge of the tissue bordering on the pus, the cells, leukocytes and tissue cells alike, are in a bad way; many are severely hit by the toxin and are dying; as we progress outward where the toxin is less strong we find cells that are severely but not fatally "sick"; farther out, cells that are perhaps in the state of cloudy or granular swelling, only slightly "sick"; whereas on the outside is a ring of cells only excited, called in by chemiotaxis, irritated, and these form a kind of leukocytic ring like policemen surrounding the area of disturbance to see that none of the offenders—the bacteria—escape; and, once the disturbance has subsided, to carry off the maimed or dead. In every "inflammatory mass" we can find cells showing every grade of damage, and generally speaking, the connective-tissue cell will suffer less than any of its

fellows, parenchymatous cells or leukocytes.

The Repair of an Abscess. - If the pus be evacuated, it remains for the tissues to fill in the gap; this is done by the cells of the part; the connective-tissue cells, irritated to reproduction, bring forth fibroblasts, large, soft, vegetative cells, which heap up, taking their nourishment from the lymph and from the slips of new capillaries that begin to grow between them. These cells in the mass form granulation tissue (in the words of the laity "proud flesh"). If the abscess be drained, there is no great amount of severe toxin in contact with them, and they rapidly proliferate and fill up the cavity; if the pus still remain in contact with them, this acts as a permanent irritant and they are prone to be killed by its toxins; if the wound be much washed, the washing is apt to float them away; in either case the process of filling up is retarded. If, however, they get a chance, the space is quickly filled up, even overfilled by these big, soft, young cells; in the course of time these cells become more fusiform, throw out processes which anastomose with one another (see Fig. 43), and later give off or control the formation of fine fibrils which appear in the intercellular spaces, gradually grow smaller, firmer, more like adult fibrous connective tissue, till finally each fibroblast has become a connective-tissue cell, tightly bound to its fellows, strong, and smaller in bulk than when it was younger and softer. This is the scar; it occupies less space the. did the granulation tissue it represents, and therefore occurs the contraction which characterizes the scar; it is dense, and this accounts for its hardness and unvielding character; it is also relatively bloodless, through pressure upon the previously abundant capillaries. If the pus has not been evacuated, it remains as a kind of foreign body; its serum drains away, and from being liquid it becomes of the consistence of butter, then of the confied

and

CERS

e of

e a

At

and

oxin

rong

out,

only

ited.

evtic

that

urb-

lum-

ener-

of its

s for

; the

ibro-

rish-

pegin

155110

ined.

they

con-

prone

shing

up is

d up,

these

mose

rma-

lually

inally

to its

ofter.

tissue

erizes

elding

n the

nated,

from

e con-

sistence of cheese, and finally, dry or inspissated. Meantime, the surrounding tissue has been forming granulation tissue about it, and this granulation tissue becomes in time scar tissue, and the scar in of filling up the gap where the original loss of tissue occurred, surrounds the dried-up pus, as with a wall. The remains of the pus in time frequently become permeated by calcareous material deposited from the lymph, so that such an abscess may be finally represented by a mass of calcification, surrounded by a wall of fibrosis.

The various changes noted in an inflamed area call for a more precise description than we have given, and some particulars may be outlined.

Circulatory Changes.—With the advent of the irritation, the vessels momentarily contract, and then dilate; and yet at the same time the flow of blood is not quicker, but rather slower, and the serum of the blood flowing out of the part is more abundant and contains a higher percentage of solids than is ordinarily found. The change in caliber of the vessels is not due to the influence of the central nervous system, but is probably brought about by some local effect on the vessel walls. The margination of the leukocytes is not so much an active quality of the leukocytes themselves as caused by a change in the endothelium of the capillaries, by which it gains an agglutinative quality.

The exudation of serum is not merely an accompaniment of the dilatation of the vessels but is an indication of some change in the endothelium; the exuded serum is more bacteriolytic than normal blood serum, although most of this quality is gained at the site of inflammation, where it picks up proteolytic, antitoxic, and bactericidal substances, the products direct and in rece of cell dissolution, especially of leukocytes.

In all the preceding paragraphs we have said nothing about fibrin formation, which is so obvious an accompaniment of inflammation on a serous or a mucous surface. Yet even in deep tissues it may exist. The serum supplies fibringen, the leukocytes fibrin ferment, the body ids the necessary calcium in the medium, and fibrin is deposited in actissue, where ordinarily its existence is but a short one, because of the presence of proteolytic ferments which, readily produced by the pyogenic organisms, quickly dissolve it.

The Endothelium of the Bloodvessels.—We have indicated that the endothelial cells lining the bloodvessels and constituting the walls of the capillaries are not "tiles" laid in, as in a mosaic, but are active cells joined to one another. They can expand and contract, they can govern to some extent the quality of fluid passing between and through them; they have even been seen to send out pseudopodia and seize hacteria in contact with them, and they are active phagocytes. It is possible, though not proved, that the large mononuclear cells of the ble of are the progeny of these endothelial cells. Whe the capillary is contracted, the spaces between them are small, but when the vessel is dilated, they are large, and it is through these spaces that diapedesis of leukocytes occurs; it may occur that red blood cells are pushed out

through these large openings, especially those which have been stretched by the previous passage of a leukocyte; but the existence of red-blood cells outside the vessels in an area of inflammation is no essential part

of the process.

Closely related to these endothelial cells are the endothelial cells lining lymph spaces and the body cavities. These are capable of reproduction; and the cells that we see born from them are large, acidophilic, hyaline cells that are actively phagocytic. These cells we find lying amid the tissue cells, and they are of the same order as the large hyaline cells given off by a serous surface. The fibrous connective-tissue cell which we picture as the basis of supportive tissue is actually lining a potential lymph space; and the cells that we recognize as lining lymph channels and lymph sinuses are the same kind of cell; the capillary endothelial cell is the same cell directing the flow of blood instead of lymph, and the serous surface cell is once more the same cell with a special function of protection. Therefore, it matters not whether the progeny of these cells be set free in the blood stream, the lymph stream, the tissue spaces, or the serous cavities, for they, the progeny, are like cells, playing a like part in protecting the body during inflammation. This part is to perform phagocytosis, and as fibroblasts, to be the cells that will fill up the gaps that have occurred in the tissue, and ultimately to be the cells of the scar.

The Blood Cells .- The leukocytes are called to the part that is inflamed by the process of chemiotaxis. This implies that there is a passage of fluid not only from the vessels to the tissues, but from the tissues to the vessels, and the leukocytes are impelled to the part where certain substances are in greater or less concentration; it implies, too, a considerable diffusion of the toxins from the spot where they are manufactured. We do not mean to say that a call reaches the leukocyte in a distent part of the body, but we do think that of the leukocytes that pass by way of the inflamed area the greater number are held, caught by the agglutinative quality of the endothelium, and remain

to assist.

The leukocytes that take part are the polynuclear (properly polymorphonuclear) cells, the lymphocytes, and the eosinophiles. The first of these, the polynuclear, with a horseshoe-shaped or, more conmonly, a partite nucleus, are the most common in the affected area in a case of acute inflammation; they are active phagocytes, liberate during disintegration, possibly in life and certainly in death, antitoxic, proteolytic, and bactericidal substances, move away into the lymph stream again or remain to be eaten whole or in pieces by the endothelial cells, and take no part in tissue formation. These originate most frequently from the bone marrow, although sometimes from the spleen, liver, and hemolymph nodes. The lymphocyte plays a much more subordinate part in acute inflammation, though an important part in later stages and in more chronic disturbances; weakly amœboid and ched lood part

cells e of arge, cells order prous rtive that e the cell irface ction. e set es, or ing a art is

damed assage sues to certain a conmanucyte in cocytes e held, remain

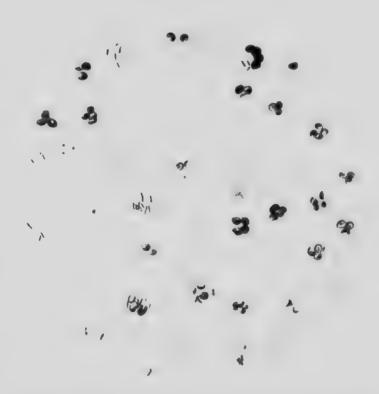
t will

to be

y poly. The
re ct nred area
liberate
ntitoxic,
lymph
lothelial
te most
e spleen,
h more
part in

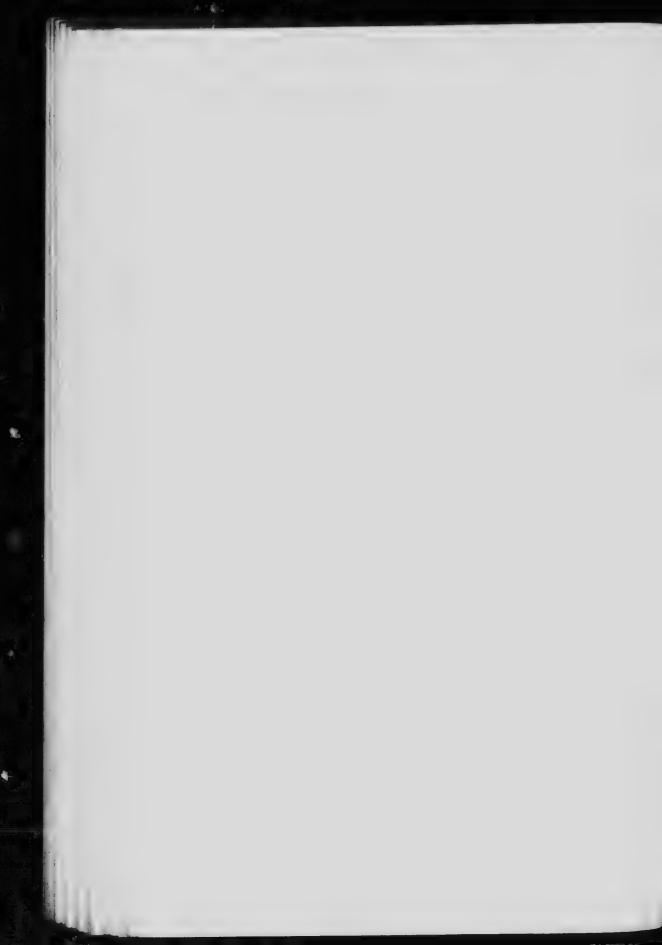
oid and

PLATE III

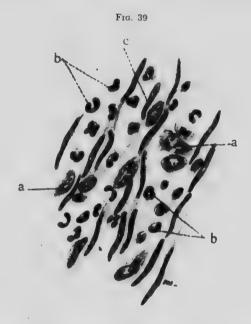


Wandering Cells in the Peritoneal Fluid of a Rabbit Twentyfour Hours after Injection of B. coli into the Peritoneal Cavity. (Beattie.)

-how the relative proportion of polynuclear and eosinophile leukoto the mononuclear (histogenous or hyaline) leukocytes. There is by some phagocytosis, polynuclears, eosinophiles, red corpuscles by monuclears, along with bacillary phagocytosis by the polynuclears.



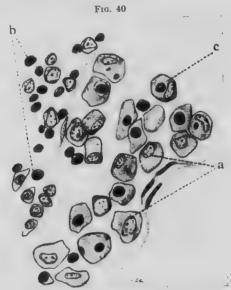
weakly phagocytic, it yet has been seen to wander through the vessel wall, and to ingest particles, but not the bacteria of suppuration. It may be that the lymphocyte can give rise to the plasma cell, of which more anon. The important point to note is that while in a very acute inflammation, the result of virulent toxin, they are rare, in a low grade inflammation, caused by a less active toxin, they are common. So much is this the fact, that in a serous-sac inflammation we are in the habit of counting the cells in the exudate, and of concluding that a large percentage of lymphocytes speaks for an inflammation of second-grade intensity like tuberculosis, and not for one of first-grade virulence like that set up by the pyogenic organisms. The lymphocyte originates



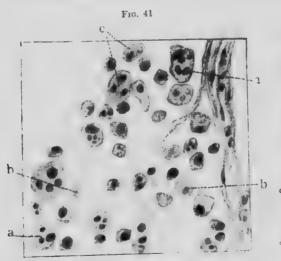
nuclear leukocytes infiltrating the circular muscle layer of an acutely inflamed appendix: a, a, endothelial cells; b, b, polynuclear leukocytes; c, nucleus of muscle cell.

in greatest abundance from the lymph nodes; it has, however, to be kept in mind that in the sheaths of most veins there is normally present a zone of lymphocytes, and that those which accumulate in an area of inflammation are not necessarily all derived from a blood, but some at least are the result of proliferation of these local lymphocytes. The eosinophiles we cannot yet rank in their proper place; they have the same power of migration as the ordinary leukocytes, less power of plagocytosis, and appear early in some acute inflammations. Like the olynuclears they originate mainly in the bone marrow and they have no part in the formation of new tissue. We may say here that no ed with multiple nuclei or a partite nucleus does enter into tissue

building; these cells, as we stated before, are marked for an early death, and are already on the downward road.



Acute lymphadenitis, showing a lymph sinus containing (a) large endothelial cells, some breaking down, others (c) acting as phagocytes. To the left are numerous lymphocytes (b) for comparison,



From a typhoid lymph node to show the swollen endothelial cells or macrophages (a,a) acting as phagocytes, c, different stages in development of same; b, the same undergoing disintegration.

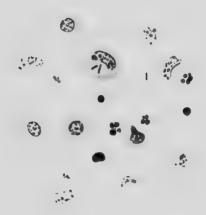


Fig. 42

Splenic sinuses from a case of typhoid fever, to show phagocytosis by swollen endothelial sinus cells (a, a). These contain red blood corpuscles, in various grades of decoleration and disintegration; b, smaller endothelial cell; c, sinus cell undergoing disintegration.

PLATE IV

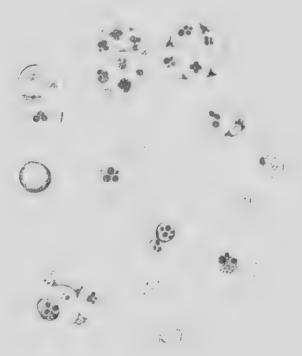
FIG. 1



Wandering Cells from the Peritoneal Fluid of a Rabbit Thirtysix Hours after Intraperitoneal Injection of B. coli. (Beattie.)

fo show large phagocytic mononuclear cells ingesting polynuclear leukocytes, red corpuseles, and bacteria.

FIG 2



iring Cells (Mononuclear Hyaline Histogenous) from o Peritoneal Fluid Forty-eight Hours after Intraperitoneal Injection of B. coli. (Beattie.)

ow phagocytosis and digestion of polynuclear leukocytes and digestive vacuoles. (Later stage.)

eath,

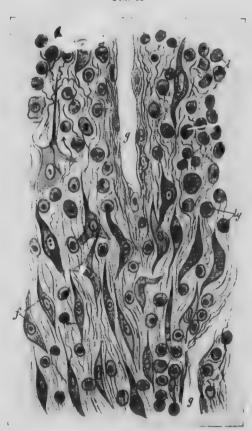
breaking arison,

a case of hagocytosis sinus cells red blood les of decoltion; b, c, sinus celi



The Fixed Tissues.—These play a very important part in inflammation, despite the fact that their cells are less prominent than the leukocytes; if the irritant be one of slight degree, proliferation of the stroma cells appears from the first; if of high degree, the stroma cells at the centre of activity may be killed, but those in the surrounding areas are excited to phagocytosis and to proliferation, and the degree of toxin that is





Granulation tissue seen from the deeper toward the upper surface: f, spindle cells (fibroblasts), t abundant in deeper portions, where they also are becoming ahrunken; ly, lymphocytes; g, enallaries. (Ribbert.)

a le to kill a leukocyte is probably not able to kill a stroma cell, or a fill rous connective-tissue cell as we have called it previously. In the area of inflammation and appearing there as a result of the process, we find three sorts of cell, which we will describe one by one. (1) the hyaline-mononuclear cell, which is like the cell appearing in the blend, which, too, we have stated above to originate, in all probability, it is the tissues; (2) the fibroblasts proper, oval, becoming spindle-

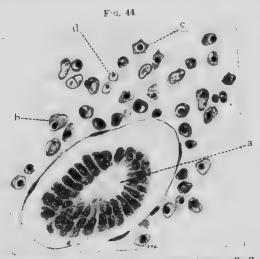
shaped, originating from the fibrous connective-tissue cells, and (3) the

so-called plasma cells.

The Mononuclear Hyaline Cells. These are especially numerous on inflamed serous surfaces, and are definitely known to arise from the endothelium of those surfaces; some observers studying other areas of the body consider that they come from the lymphocytes, but this we are inclined to doubt. Their functions of phagocytosis we have already mentioned and they appear to enter into connection with the surrounding cells and to build up new tissue.

The Fibroblasts.—These are born as large, round cells becoming oval, and in time they form fine fibrillary connections with the cells nearby, become spindle-shaped, and ultimately form connective-tissue

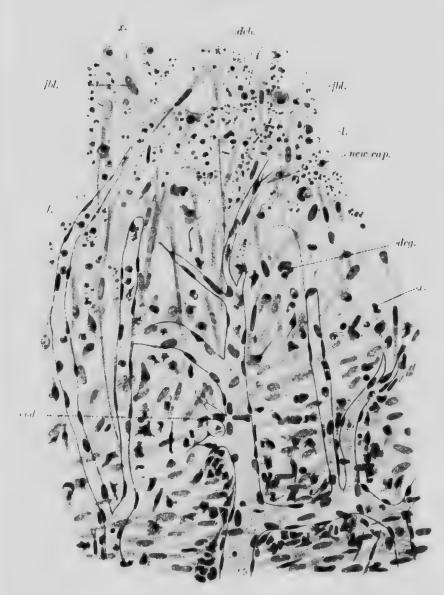
cells such as their parents were.



From a case of subacute colitis, demonstrating abundant plasma cells (b, c, d) surrounding a degenerating follicle of Lieberkühn (a) in which the columnar cells have become detached from the basement membrane.

Plasma Cells.-We here approach a topic still causing considerable confusion. An important group of observers regard the plasma cell as of lymphocytic origin. It is a cell, found in the tissues in cases of subacute rather than of acute inflammation, rounded or polygonal in s' pe (Fig. 44) with eccentric nucleus and basophile cytoplasm, often exhibiting a clearer space or zone at one side of or around the nucleus. Once recognized it is quite characteristic. It shows little or no phagocytic powers, nor, according to these observers, does it play any part in the development of fibroblasts. These considerations coupled with its frequent presence, not to say abundance, in cases of inflammation of moderate grade have led observers to promulgate that it acts by affording an excretion.

On the other hand, Maximow, a very capable observer, has a con-



Granulation Tissue. The Upper is toward the Outer Surface. (Maximow.)

od., capillary endothelium; new cap., endothelium of newly forming topillary; fbl., fibroblasts; l., polynuclear leukocytes; z., the polyblasts of teneral (including plasma cells); deb., debris of leukocytes; deg., a depending "polyblast."

on

the eas this ave vith

ning cells

ssue

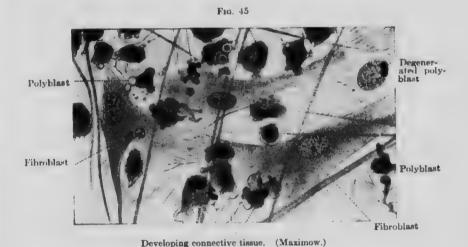
unding a from the

derable
na cell
ases of
onal in
n, often
nucleus.
phagony part
ed with
nmation
acts by

a con-



siderable following in support of the view that the plasma cell is but one phase in the life history of what he terms the "polyblast," a cell that is, which may originate either from lymphocytes or connective-tissue cells, which may develop into fibroblasts and so into connective tissue, or into clasmatocytes, large cells with pronounced processes, which are constantly shed, into "mast cells" of the tissues, or cells filled with large basophile granules or into cells of the above-described plasma-cell type. The matter is still under debate.



Inflammation of a Mucous Surface.—In putting together the details

which characterize an inflammation of a mucous surface we have to consider not only the surface itself, but also the tissues that underlie it for a short distance, because these also are attacked by the irritant. In them the process is that which we have just described. In the milder conditions what we observe is a swelling and active proliferation of the epithelial cells of the mucous surface, and the production both by these cells and by the small mucous glands of the part of abundant mucin. There is thus produced a surface discharge of serous fluid mixed with abundant mucin, loosened columnar cells, some few leukocytes, and where these are more abundant, there may be present in this discharge scattered threads of fibrin. This is what is termed catarrhal inflammation. Where the irritation is more extreme, there the columnar epithelium of the part may be completely cast off, and with this the character of the exudate is changed from a mucinous to a more serous one with abundant leukocytes, and with the formation and deposit of fibrin this forms a moist layer of interlaced fibrils that entangle in their midst leukocytes, often bacteria, while the interstices are full of serum. Add to this, there are generally superficial cells that, ttacked by the toxin, damaged or killed, have become separated and

now lie in the exudate, for such is the name applied to the material, solid and fluid, which is given off by the surface. If the exudate contain much fibrin and lie upon the surface, its tough consistence has

given to it the name of a membrane.

We are accustomed to use many adjectives in describing an inflammation of a mucous surface, designating it by that term which expresses its most striking feature. Thus, if there be plentiful clear secretion, we call it serous or catarrhal; if the leukocytes be relatively numerous in proportion to the amount of fluid, so that the latter is slightly opaque, we use the term seropurulent or mucopurulent; if the leukocytes are so numerous that the fluid is yellow or white, we call it purulent; if there be much fibrin, fibrinous; if less, but still an appreciable quantity, serofibriz vus; if there is much fibrin and also pus, fibrinopurulent; if a membrane appears, membranous; if the surface sloughs away, necrotic or ulcerative; if abscesses under the surface do not burst, or until such time as they do burst, phlegmonous; if bloodvessels be ruptured, either on the surface or under it, hemorrhagic. It will appear that there are many modifications of the same process; if one judged merely by the salient feature, one might think that we had to deal with many different kinds of disease, yet in each case the same march of events is happening, with the difference that in one it is this character which predominates, in the other that. Let us designate each feature in process by a letter—thus, let a represent the hyperemia; b, the exucation of serum; c, the diapedesis of leukocytes; d, the proliferation of the cells of the part; e, the formation of fibrin, and so on. Each case of inflammation is represented by a, b, c, d, e, f, etc. If, now, we represent each salient characteristic by the large letter, we find a particular case represented thus: a, b, C, d, e, f, or A, b, c, d, e, f, or a, b, c, d, e, F. Looked at carelessly or from a distance, it might seem as if these were different cases, the salient feature only being distinguished; but looked at closely, all are at bottom the same familiar process. Thus, it has come about that we speak of so many apparently different forms of inflammation; the truth is that the tissues are not educated to distinguish different irritants, and respond to all in precisely the same manner, showing differences of degree but none of kind.

Inflammation of a Non-vascular Area. - The non-vascular areas of importance are cartilage, the lens, the cornea, and the outer half or twothirds of the cusps of the heart valves. Of these the cornea affords the most favorable region for study of the process. Here, in the slighter grades of inflammation, the main change seen is a swelling with subsequent proliferation of the corneal corpuscles. The leukocytes are necessarily few in number because only the lymph has access to the tissues; while few, it can be seen that these gather, attracted by chemiotaxis, in and around the injured area. In severer grades of irritation, such as can be produced experimentally by inoculating into the cornea with a fine needle a small amount of pure culture of one of the pyogenic organisms, successive stages may be made out. As in the course of a few hours the inoculated microbes begin to proliferate, it can be obserted that the surrounding corneal corpuscles become distinctly swollen and show evidences of degeneration. With this there is a similar accumulation of leukocytes out of the surrounding lymph spaces toward the focus of irritation. In a few hours more, the circular vessels at the periphery of the cornea become dilated, and with this there sets in a migration of leukocytes from the vein. While this is proceeding the corneal corpuscles in the immediate area of bacterial growth break down, and the proliferating bacteria infiltrate over a larger area until such time as the accumulation of leukocytes from all sides forms a barrier arresting their further escape. From this point on, the inflammation is similar to that seen in a vascular area with this notable exception. that obviously the chemiotactic influence which led to the migration of the leukocytes, exerts itself also upon the wall of the circular vein, so that now buds or processes pass inward toward the affected area and then become developed into true capillaries, which may persist weeks and months after the acute inflammation has subsided.

In the heart valves a process similar to that in the cornea is seen; the area here is exposed to the double insult of a toxic or bacterial irritation, and seventy-two blows per minute, so that ulceration is likely to ensue. On this is laid down fibrin and in it leukocytes, for in addition interaction ensues between the ulcerated surface and the blood which bathes it. There are thus produced fibrinous vegetations, and the fibrin, in the course of repair, is replaced by fibrous tissue. In those cases in which the irritant is not very powerful, it seems that there is a proliferation of the connective tissue of the valve, without anything else, so that a heap of new fibrosis arises from the edge of the valve, and constitutes a vegetation of a fibrous kind from the very outset.¹

Chronic Inflammation.—From the way we have insisted upon the uniformity of the process of inflammation so far, it may be inferred that we are not in favor of building up a barrier between so-called acute and so-called chronic inflammations; and such is the case. Are we to call an inflammation acute if it reaches its height in one, two, three, or four days, and chronic if it takes five or ten or fifteen? We do so, but it will be seen that the distinction is arbitrary. Or, if we are in doubt, as clinicians, whether an inflammation is acute or chronic, are we to compromise and call it subacute? As clinicians, yes. But from the pathological standpoint, it is unnecessary, because in all we the same mode of reaction, a, b, c, d, e, f, as we have said above. If the irritant be of low degree of strength, there will be less killing of tissue and more proliferation, if of high degree, more killing and less proliferation, more serum, it may be, and less diapedesis, but in every case the procedure a, b, c, d, e, f, runs through all, as the theme runs in a piece of music all but hidden under variations.

nasses ion, ous que, are

ial.

on-

nas

i; if a rotic such there by by

nany

rents

e were booked it has ms of o dissame

eas of or two-ds the lighter h sub-tes are to the hemio-itation, cornea yogenic

se of a

I frequent mistake of the student is to confuse fibrous and fibrinous. The term mous can be employed only to designate the result of deposition of fibrin.

The salient feature of an inflammation caused by an intense irritant is exudation; diapedesis occurs but little, because chemiotaxis is negative, and the leukocytes, wise in their day, remain away; proliferation can occur only at the outskirts, where the toxin is well diluted; at the centre, even the strongest cells are killed. The striking feature of an inflammation caused by a gentle irritant (such an one as we often clinically call chronic) is proliferation, because there is a minimum of killing of cells, of irritation such as calls forth abundant exudation and diapedesis. Between these two extremes occur many grades.

But there remains a frequently made error to correct. Too often we speak of adhesions between the layers of the pericardium as chronic pericarditis instead of correctly calling it the results of a past pericarditis. Pleural adhesions, nine times out of ten, do not indicate a chronic pleuritis, that is, a disease yet active, but indicate merely the repair of a disease active long ago and now healed, as far as may be. Yet adhesion might be slowly set up by a mild process of irritation, and such would be correctly enough called chronic pleuritis, but this occurs rarely in comparison to the rapidly produced pleuritis. Another similar mistake is to speak of a heart as the victim of chronic fibroid myocarditis, when we should say a heart with fibroses which have resulted from old myocarditis. The terminology matters comparatively little, if it be understood that the process is essentially a uniform one; the student should take heart from the consideration of the simplicity of the inflammatory process; if he understand the invariable reaction of the tissues he will see it in every case of the disease, even if it be for the moment

concealed by the predominance of some one feature.

The Vascularisation of New-formed Connective Tissue.—In addition to the proliferation of the cells of the part, that is the formation of fibroblasts and, it may be, of plasma cells, and large hyaline cells, it must be recalled that the vessels play an active part in the later reparative stages of an inflammation and this particularly where there has been active destruction of tissue. In all such cases what is termed granulation tissue is formed. This name is taken from the appearance of a healing superficial wound, the granulation being due to the presence of closely set new capillary loops. On such an inflamed surface at first is merely a layer of leukocytes with, it may be, a few fibroblasts and large hyaline cells, but immediately beneath these it can be made out that the dilated superficial capillaries show tiny buds or thickenings of their endothelium directed toward the surface, and presently these buds" elongate, sending processes outward, which processes from adjacent capillaries join, become more prominent, become thicker, are hollowed by the blood stream and rapidly assume all the characters of a new capillary. From these new loops other loops are formed, advancing into the area which is to be filled up, until this area is filled with a framework of new vessels, which are supported and separated by the tissue cells which have continued to be simultaneously proliferated in the meshes of this framework. This constitutes granulation tissue, or, on a surface, what the layman terms "proud flesh." Only those who have watched a large deep wound heal in a healthy, growing child can appreciate the truth of the adage, "There is in the tissues an almost insuperable tendency to heal." The physician may succeed in overcoming this tendency if he be meddlesome and foolish. If there be a granulating surface, remember that antiseptics will succeed in killing

n

n of n

n ic s.

on ld in isis, ld be nt mies

on of it ranas ned nee nee at asts

ade

en-

itly

sses

ker,

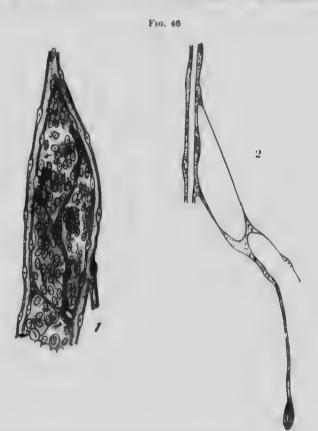
ters

æd.

lled by

ited

sue,



Formation of new vessels in granulation tissue: 1, from a Ziegler's chamber (formed of two coversities) left in the peritoneal cavity of a rabbit for forty-eight days; portion of field bounded by two formed new capillaries; between them can be seen the solid buds and processes of developing to a capitaries; 2, from a similar preparation to show formative cells, or fibroblasts, in direct connection with the endothelial processes. (Ziegler.)

these tender, newborn cells, that a stream of water may wash them away, and nature may have to do her work over again on your account. If you see pus on the surface give it a chance to drain away if possible, but remember that granulation tissue presents a very strong barrier to all orption, and the pus may do less harm than the clumsy sponge that removes it. The pus from a granulating wound was called by our forefathers, who understood the drainage of wounds as well as we do,

"laudable pus"; and when you speak of "exuberant granulation" do not without thought run for the silver-nitrate stick; granulations

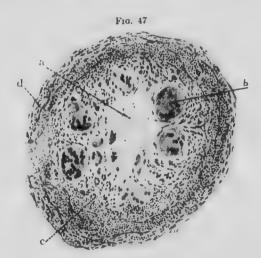
cannot help being exuberant.

The Infective Granulomas. — The infective granulomas are the local effects wrought by certain protozoa, certain bacteria or other forms of plant life, such as the B. tuberculosis, B. lepræ, B. mallei, actinomyces, blastomyces, Treponema pallidum, and even the larvæ and eggs of certain parasitic worms; the tissues build up a wall around the irritant, so to speak, and this mass of new-formed tissue we call the tubercle, the gumma, or the nodule, as the case may be. It is evident at once that the process of formation of such a "lump" is a conservative one, and tuberculosis, the disease, does not so much consist of the presence of the tubercle as of the destruction of the tubercle or

other tissues by the bacilli and their products.

A word as to the classification of these diseases is in place. Long ago it was realized that the result of the irritant of tuberculosis was a "lump," the tubercle; this was aforetime called a tumor, and was classed among tumors; when it was found to be of fibrous tissue, i. e., of granulation tissue, it was called a "tumor of granulation tissue," or a granuloma, using the termination-oma which we have made to signify the idea of a tumor. When it was discovered that the B. tuberculosis was the cause of this granuloma, it was designated an "infective granuloma." Thus, one by one, the class has grown, as each infective agent has been discovered; and now we are able to state that the process is purely an inflammatory one, and that the granuloma is merely the lump that results from the proliferation of the cells of the part in response to the toxin of the organism concerned. In fact, all that has been said of the "inflammatory area" above is true for the formation of the granuloma, although the process is a longer one in time; the toxin of the B. tuberculosis causes a dilatation of the bloodvessels, a moderate exudation of serum, a slight diapedesis of leukocytes, and a great proliferation of cells of the part-the so-called epithelioid cells, which term we mention only to reject; they should be called the endothelial cells or the proliferated cells of the part; while the centre of an acute inflammatory area, rich in serum and badly damaged by toxin, breaks down rapidly into pus and an abscess is formed, the centre of the granuloma breaks down slowly into a formless mass of dry necrosis - cascation- and a cascated granuloma is the result. Tuberculosis is, clinically, a chronic or at times, a subacute inflammation. Another point of parallelism between these agents and those causing acute inflammation is this: if tubercle bacilli are in sufficient numbers they can excite an acute inflammation not to be distinguished from the results of the pyogenic bacteria. The same has been shown to be true of the glanders bacillus, while in man, the nodule of actinomycosis has very commonly a central area with abundant polynuclear leukocytes; in fact, contains true pus, while around this is a zone of proliferated tissue cells.

The tubercle, the gumma, or the nodule, thus, is a mass of new-formed connective-tissue cells, and these cells are the essential part of the tubercle; the trained microscopist must become used to recognize the granuloma by this; the giant cell, of which more anon, is unessential; the caseation is an unessential, save that if sufficient time be given it is an almost inevitable sequel, at least in cases of tuberculosis; the ring of leukocytes external to the mass is also unessential, although the more acute the process the more likely it is to be present; the proliferated tissue forming the "lump," the tubercle, the gumma, the nodule is the essential, and the only essential. And in most cases of these maladies the unit is the granuloma, and a cavitated lung is merely the final result of necrosis, secondary infection and what not on an aggregation of small granulomas.



inherele from a case of tuberculosis of medium severity of the lung: a, central caseation; b, a giant cell; c, endothelial cells; d, connective-tissue sone infiltrated with lymphocytes.

Giant Cells.—Although not a necessary character of a tubercle, the liant cell is very frequently found therein; this is characterized by a large body, made up of ill-staining, acidophilic, necrotic material, with crescent, a ring, or a group of ordinarily stained nuclei; this is sometimes clearly the result of fusion of a group of cells to form a plasmodium round a small mass of necrotic material or of bacilli—in other cases here are indications of actual nuclear multiplication with incomplete toplasmic division. The giant cell is often found close to the necrotic art of the tubercle, and in this edge, or in the giant cells themselves, he bacilli are to be most readily found. Interspersed, too, with the rolliferated cells of the part are lymphocytes and rarely leukocytes—the former are the "small, round cells" of inflammation—and on the taide is a more or less pronounced ring of lymphocytes which have a contacted to the area of inflammation by chemiotaxis.

ne ne er ei,

nd he ent vaof

ong osis nor, rous muwe ered was class we one,

the
nmaough
ulosis
erum,
ells of
only
erated
ich in
s and

the

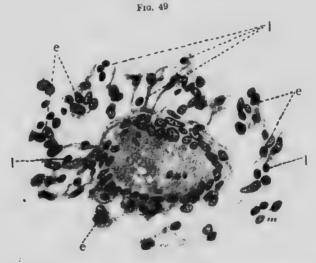
ich in is and slowly granutimes, a these bacilli not to e same a man, a with

, while

Here it may be useful to recall that the presence of the giant cell is by no means limited to tuberculosis: we encounter similar giant cells in other infective granulomas, in syphilis, actinomycosis, blastomycosis, and glanders. A somewhat similar type of cell is seen filled with the



Giant cell or cells from a case of inflammation of the subcutaneous tissue: a, a, cells of endothelial type; b, b, the same in process of fusion into the mass. (Dr. Rhea.)



Giant cell from centre of tubercle, showing processes and peripheral arrangement of nuclei, and surrounding endothelial cells (e, e) and occasional lymphocytes (l, l).

lepra bacilli in leprosy. Wherever foreign bodies occur in the tissue, as shown in Figs. 36 and 48, plasmodial giant cells may be encountered. Another type is seen in the osteoclasts of normal bone, and apparently similar to this are the giant cells of myeloid or giant-celled sarcoma.

Yet other multinucleated giant cells are not infrequent in other forms of sarcoma, while in certain cases of Hodgkin's disease we may encounter relatively huge cells which are truly giant cells, but have only one or two nuclei.

Diffuse Inflammation.—Sometimes the organisms of the infective granulomas do not set up the localized nodule, but we find a diffuse fibrosis such as happens in the pia mater in syphilis; nor is this confined to the group of organisms which cause the granulomas, for a good example exists in cirrhosis of the liver, where there is a general increase in the connective tissue of the part without there being any particular localization. It may be, however, that this diffuse fibrosis





Section from a syphilitic liver which presented gummata along with extensive cirrhosis. The new-tormed connective tissue is seen extending between and cutting off in the of liver cells, which as a suit are shrunken and atrophied.

elial

lei, and

sue, as stered. rently rcoma. and die, the fibrous tissue filling up the space left by them; the two processes just referred to occur simultaneously, the same irritant causing degeneration of the higher-class cells and proliferation of the

Fibrosis and Inflammation .- So frequently has the proliferation of lower-class supportive cells. connective tissue been dealt with in connection with inflammation, that the question arises, "Is fibrosis always the result of inflammation?" The answer is in the negative; the formation of a fibroma or a new growth is, of course, a case in point; the occurrence of fibromatosis, of elephantiasis, of macroglossia all indicate the readiness with which fibrosis occurs if there be an obstruction to the exit of the lymph by its ordinary channels. The obstruction of the lymph prevents the free drainage away of the toxins of the cells, which toxins, remaining, may excite the fibrosis; this becomes thereby a case of inflammation; a though, on the other hand, with the absence of obstruction of the veins there may be free diffusion away of any such toxins, and the process may be regarded as a result of stress, to be presently mentioned. Finally, there is the difficult problem that is presented by fibrosis of the intima of a bloodvessel in arteriosclerosis. Here we find two forms: in one, the intima is primarily the site of change, and this we may attribute to irritation, but the others are adaptive, to strengthen the wall at a place where the media has degenerated; such fibrosis occurs without any leukocytic infiltration or formation of new vessels, and may be partly explained by what we have not previously adduced as a cause of proliferation, namely, stress. If cells are put upon a constant not excessive stretch, or even are intermittently exposed to such a stress, if they be well nourished, proliferation ensues, the distension acting as a stimulant. Here we have no injury; it is too great a stretch of the imagination to consider this as an inflammation.

We feel that this is a principle of wider application than is generally appreciated, the principle, namely, that mechanical force exerted either as pressure or traction upon a cell, is able to cause the growth and proliferation of that cell, so long as, at the same time, there is no interference with its nutrition, and the force acting on the cell is not excessive. Overstress or diminished nutrition will lead to the opposite condition of atrophy. What applies to the cell individually applies to cells in the mass; thus, as a matter of experience, it is found that the constant pulling of a tendon upon a bony ridge is followed by increase in the size of that ridge, i. e., increased bony growth.

We may thus classify the fibroses:

I. OF INFLAMMATORY ORIGIN.

1. Replacement fibrosis, in which the fibrous tissue takes the place of other tissue that has been destroyed. The "scleroses" of the nervous system, arising from glia, are here to be included, as well as in part the fibrosis of "nephritis" and "hepatitis."

2. Proliferative fibroses, such as (a) the fibroses of the granulomata, and those around foreign, inert bodies, and (b) post-inflammatory fibroses in which the fibrous tissue continues to grow even after the irritant has ceased to act, as in keloid.

3. Post-fibrinous fibroses, which replace fibrin in a thrombosed blood vessel or on a serous surface (adhesions); these partake of the nature of both the above groups. They are replacement fibroses in that they replace the fibrin, and proliferative in that they occur where previously no tissue proper existed.

II. OF NON-INFLAMMATORY ORIGIN.

f

N.

3,

h

V

g, a-

on

ıs,

lly

ed

we

ge,

ve,

ed;

ion

not'

ells

itly

ues,

too

on.

ally

rted

wth

re is

cell

the

ually

ound

ed by

ace of

rvous

1 part

mata,

natory

1. Due to strain, as in some cases of fibrosis of the inti: of the vessels.

2. Neoplastic, e. g., fibrous tumors.

THE SYSTEMIC REACTION TO MICROBIC INJURY—INFECTION

The term infection is used in different senses by the pathologist and the hygienist. For our purposes, infection is a process; it consists not in the mere presence of pathogenic bacteria in the mouth, skin, or intestine, but in the growth of those bacteria in the tissues, in the diffusion of their products, and in the reaction brought about in the body by their presence. Infection is the interaction between the body and the microörganism growing in it. This interaction may be local, and the process will, in that case, be one of infective inflammation already discussed; but we are now concerned with the general disturbances which follow such local growth, or the effects of a widespread proliferation of the microbes.

The hygienist, on the other hand, considers infection as the mere presence of the harmful microörganism; thus water, air, or a community may be infected; he distinguishes (1) sporadic infections, where isolated cases occur; (2) endemic, where a notable number of cases of a given disease occurs year after year in a certain area, and (3) epidemic, where the disease suddenly affects a large number of people. Similarly, diseases of animals are sporadic, enzoötic, and epizoötic.

Causation.—We have already considered the question of susceptibility to infection; it may be repeated that there are various ways in thich susceptibility, inherited or acquired, may show itself, so that the opposition to the bacteria is less than normal; on the other hand, the bacteria may be of so great virulence that a normal power of opposition on the part of the body is not enough to protect it. Each case of intection is, therefore, the resultant of forces which are always varying; the is, there may be great susceptibility and virulent microbes, or great repetibility and microbes of low virulence, or great power of resistance put ted against highly virulent microbes, or great power of resistance as inst lowly virulent microbes. The result differs in every case.

The Course of Infection.—To indicate the course of an infection a second in the course of an infection a second infection.—To indicate the course of an infection a second infection.—To indicate the course of an infection a second infection.—To indicate the course of an infection a second infection.—To indicate the course of an infection a second infection.—To indicate the course of an infection a second infection.—To indicate the course of an infection a second infection infection.—To indicate the course of an infection a second infection.—To indicate the course of an infection a second infection infection infection a second infection inf

 $^{1 \}delta \tilde{\eta} \mu o \varsigma$, the people.

² Çŭov, animal.

For a few days nothing is noted till symptoms of malaise appearlassitude, slight but persistent headache, constipation, pain in the back, and so on. These grow worse instead of better, and ten days or so after the ingestion of the bacilli the patient is so weak and feverish that he takes to bed. This period has been the stage of incubation, during which prodromal or premonitory symptoms declare themselves, the stage continuing until the onset of a definite febrile state. For clinical purposes, it is customary to date the illness from the first prodromal symptoms, which generally correspond with a recognizable rise of temperature. The patient r in has fever, general weakness, and various symptoms or signs remable to the different systems; (a) in the nervous system, there may be irritability or dulness, headache, and chilly sensations; (b) in the circulatory system, a rapid pulse, vasomotor disturbances, such as flushing; (c) in the digestive system, dryness of the mouth, by reason of diminution of salivary secretion, loss of appetite or a positive distaste for food, abdominal discomfort or pain, constipation, or at times diarrhoea with foul stools. Day by day the fever rises, and the symptoms grow worse; change of the urinary secretion is evidenced by diminution of the salts, notably the chlorides, and increase in other constituents, notably the urates; the characteristic eruption may show itself. In the early part of this stage the bacilli can be found in the circulating blood, and later the serum begins to gain the property of being able to agglutinate the typhoid bacilli. This is the stage of fervescence. Following this is the stage of high, continued fever, or fastiglum, with persistence of all the symptoms and increasing weakness and loss of flesh. This may last for a couple of weeks, after which the fever begins to fall day by day-the stage of defervescence, which in turn is followed by convalescence, with a gradual return to health and strength. Complications, which are morbid conditions, either associated with the original cause or of other causation, may occur during the course, and sequelæ may follow. These latter are morbid states due directly or indirectly to the original infection, and are such happenings as abscesses due to B. typhosus or inflammation of the gall-bladder from the same cause; the latter may be a complication or a sequel.

The Period of Incubation.—The period of incubation is that time during which the growth of the bacteria is local and the disturbance local, and that time which follows during which the diffusion of the toxic products of the bacteria is not sufficiently great to give rise to general symptoms; as soon as these products have accumulated sufficiently they give rise to the prodromal symptoms. It is to be remembered that the prodromal symptoms may be due not only to the toxins of bacteria themselves, but to the toxic bodies (albumoses) made from body proteins by the enzyme action of the bacterial toxins. The period of incubation will be understood to vary according to the toxicity of the germ, the amount of toxin produced (that is, the number of germs

present), and the resistance of the organism.

Grades of Infection -It might appear as if a line of demarcation were drawn between local infections and general infections, and yet the differences between the two are differences of degree, rather than of kind. The bacteria which by hoice are of local occurrence may be found in the blood; lately, the diphtheria bacillus which was supposed to be strictly local in its habitation has been repeatedly found in the blood; the seat of election of the pneumococcus is the lung, but it also is found in the blood; the typhoid bacillus works its local effects in the bowel, but is found in the blood stream. It may be considered that every organism capable of local proliferation is theoretically capable of being found in the blood stream, and that in the case of organisms like the pyococci their presence or absence is due to the number of them that escape at a given moment, and the antagonistic power of the blood and the tissues. Further, with regard to the toxic products of bacteria, we are accustomed to designate their presence by the term intoxication, sapremic intoxication, or sapremia. This, again, is a matter of degree of intensity of the toxic products; thus, a mild local infection gives off a certain amount of toxin, and this is carried into the blood and tissue fluids, but is so diluted that we see no general bodily change wrought thereby; we neglect such a mild intoxication, but it is nevertheless present.

Before leaving the subject of terminology, it is necessary to define the terms generally used; bacteria multiplying locally, and giving no visible signs of their presence in the blood, even if there be indication of toxemia, constitute a case of localized infection. If the bacteria not only multiply locally, but are also evidently in the blood, and are getting foothold in the tissues (metastases) the case becomes one of bacteriemia. Each of the metastases now becomes a centre for the production and diffusion of more toxin, so that with the bacteriemia the toxemia advances equally.

For clinical purposes we are in the habit of making certain rough distinctions, dividing infections into: (1) fulminating; (2) acute; (3) persisting; (4) subinfection.

1. Fulminating Infection.—This type of infection is characterized by so great a flooding of the body by toxins, and presumably by the infective organisms, that the resistance of the tissues is notably ineffectual. The symptoms are those of great intoxication with depression of the functions; the heart beat becomes rapid and feeble, the blood pressure is lowered, the respiration is shallow and rapid, the patient

ie

76

şh.

n,

38,

or

st

ole

SS,

ns:

ad-

se,

m,

on,

or

day

ary

des.

ter-

the

gins

cilli.

nigh,

and

le of

ge of

idual

ondition,

er are

, and

ation

mpli-

time

hance

of the

rise to l suffiemem-

toxins e from

period

city of germs

In our experience there is such painful confusion in the minds not only of students of medical men in general between the terms septicemia, sapremia, pyemia, and general sepsis or blood poisoning, that for the sake of clearness we prefer use them. There can surely be no doubt as to what is meant by toxemia and riemia; they explain themselves. For the instruction of the student, we would as popularly employed, localized septicemia is equivalent to localized on, (generalized) septicemia to bacteriemia, sapremia to toxemia. Pyemia many used as a term to describe septicemia with metastatic abscesses, and poisoning" as a euphemism for any or all of the above.

becomes dull or comatose, and the temperature falls, becoming subnormal. If the disease is one ordinarily presenting a leukocytosis, a leukopenia is present. Such an overwhelming rapidity depends on a virulent organism, or a large number of such organisms, or a low resistance, or all these influences working together; but it has to be remembered that there are only certain bacteria which have the necessary virulence. It has never been possible, for example and the virulence of the tubercle bacillus to so great an extent as to produce this fulminance of symptoms. General bacteriemia, scarlet fever, and epidemic cerebrospinal meningitis provide striking examples of it. So rapidly is the toxin produced, and so potent is it that it produces a degeneration of the mals of the capillaries, so that they burst, and petechie are produced; hence the purpuric rash that may be seen on the skin, and after death on the internal surfaces of such a case of intense infection; a marked hemolysis is also present.

It is a notable fact that these cases tend to exhibit, not only no rise of temperature but even a subnormal one; this means that the cells of the body are not stimulated to that resistance which is evidenced by an increase of heat production, and metabolic processes instead of being rendered more active than normal are reduced to a low ebb.

2. Acute Infection.—This is the familiar form of infection which has been described, where in a non-fatal case there is a period of incubation, of fervescence, of continued fever, and of defervescence. The gradual defervescence is called lysis; at times, as in acute pneumonia, the temperature falls suddenly, by crisis. The course of convalescence may be interrupted by relapse (a repetition of all or some of the symptoms of the primary infection); if this relapse occurs before the temperature has reached the normal level, we call it an intercurrent relapse.

3. Persisting Infection.—This is the form of infection generally called chronic, which is characterized by long continuance, during the whole of which time the infective agent appears to be at work. Examples of this type of disease are found in tuberculosis, syphilis, etc., as well as in occasional cases of infection by the ordinary pyogenic cocci. At times the smouldering infection bursts up into a blaze, and we note an exacerbation. Clinically, it is often the custom to divide these infections into stages, as is done in syphilis, but these have no special usefulness in the present connection, and it seems that, even among clinicians, this mode of classification of symptoms is falling into disuse.

Closely allied to the above infection, is the **remittent** infection, as it is seen in rheumatism; at present it seems as if more than one organism were able to cause this malady, but the characteristic to which we refer here, is that there is not with defervescence complete recovery or total destruction of the organism; the germ seems to lie latent, lighting up

of bacteriemia. Coming from the Greek $\beta a\kappa\tau p\mu m$, a staff, the latter is correct, but if it be earnestly desired to curtail the word, we suggest that there is the alternative bacternia, from $\beta a\kappa\tau p\sigma v$, another form of the same word.

from time to time into an acute form of infection. The germs appear to work comparatively slowly and to develop neither a very high degree of intoxication nor so active a resistance cathe part of the body as we are accustomed to see in the acute infections. We now recognize more and more f 'ly the frequency of latent infection, of conditions, that is, in which for months and it may be years, pathogenic bacteria persist in the tissues or cavities of the body, setting up no disturbance, but capable at any moment of so doing. We may instance the now

well-known "typhoid carriers."

Subinfection. This term indicates a slight degree of infection such as is expressed by the presence of bacteria in the blood, which are not potent enough to cause gross symptoms of infection, yet which do actually wear out the cells whose duty it is to combat with and kill them. Normally, of course, bacteria are being carried away from the intestine and killed in the mesenteric nodes and in the liver; when, in addition to this constant action, we find that bacteria are locally active, and that there is a local inflammation in the bowel, if we examine the mesenteric node cells and the liver cells we find remnants of bacteria, often mere granules; the constant destruction of more than ordinary numbers of these means the more than ordinary wear and tear upon the cells; liver cells, for instance, are thus the more quickly destroyed, and in many cases of cirrhosis of the liver, we believe this is a cause of the condition, though not the only one. It is not necessary that the organisms be very virulent; we think, in fact, that the ordinary bacteria of the intestinal tract can and often do constitute the agent in these instances of subinfection.

Terminal Infection.—It must have struck everyone who has had moderate amount of experience at the post mortem table that es of chronic disease, such as heart disease, where death has been gradual, there is frequently present some infection, such as a lobular : cumonia, or turbidity, from infection, of a long-present ascites, or so at not. These infections we call terminal; and they arise not so much by virulence of the organism as by weakness of the body. We mean to designate by the words "terminal infection" those cases in which reason of failing vitality a germ, powerless at ordinary times, is erabled to fasten upon the tissues and set up an acute inflammation. such a process means that by reason of weakness of the body, a subin ction becomes an acute infection, the terminal infection being set up by the chance microorganism which may be temporarily circulating in the blood.

THERMOGENESIS AND PYREXIA

Firexia is a heightened bodily temperature; the state of body in ni a pyrexia exists, with all its concomitants, we shall call the febrile state or, briefly, fever.

rise cells nced id of). ı has

or-

(()-

nt

Of

nat

ce.

the

e of

-010

the

ı of

are

and

ion;

tion, idual temmay otoms ature

called whole mples s well cocci. e note infecusefulicians,

1, as it ganism re refer or total ting up

a instead rect, but alterna-

Heat Production .- Heat is liberated from the organism under the following conditions:

1. From the food, i. e., from the recombination of dissociated food-

stuffs.

2. From katabolism, i. e., from the oxygenation of tissue products. Metabolism breaks down the cell substance, and the products so

obtained combine with oxygen, giving off heat in the process.

Fever is accompanied by increased heat production, and since the intake of food is generally diminished and the output of heat greater than normal, this increased heat production must be due mainly to tissue disintegration and oxidation. The student may well think of the febrile state as one in which the tissues are being "burned up."

Heat Discharge.—Heat is lost from the body by radiation and by evaporation from the surface, and by the passage of excreta. discharge may be increased, and the body temperature lowered by cation of the surface vessels, by increased amount of sweat, and by increased respiration, in which more air than usual is passed over the respiratory surface and warmed, and the evaporation in the lungs thus increased. This increased respiration (panting) is the means by which the dog, unable to perspire, cools itself.

We express heat frequently in terms of calories, a calory being the amount of heat necessary to raise 1 gram of water 1° C. at normal atmospheric pressure; of the total diffusion from the human body, less than 2 per cent. is lost in the urine and feces, less than 4 per cent. in the expired air, 7 per cent. by evaporation from the lungs, 15 per cent. in evaporation from the skin, while 73 per cent. is lost by radia-

tion and conduction from the body surface.

The lower the temperature of the medium in contact with the body, the greater the loss of heat; if the external temperature be higher than that of the body, and the air be so saturated with moisture that

evaporation is prevented, the body actually gains heat.

In spite of the variation of heat production and of heat discharge at different times, the temperature of the warm-blooded animal is very constant (save in hibernating animals during hibernation), whereas cold-blooded animals have a temperature varying with the external medium (poikilothermic). The adult healthy man has a temperature (rectal) that varies little from 98.9° F. A bodily temperature of 107.5° is generally considered the upper limit of temperature that is compatible with continued life, although, of course, instances to the contrary are here and there met. The lower limit is considered 93° F., with similar qualifications.

Heat Regulation .-- With conditions of heat production so complex, a constant temperature maintained speaks for a heat-regulating mechanism, even if we did not know that there are two sets of sensory nerves, one for heat and one for cold; also, injury or stimulation of certain areas of the brain or medulla raises or lowers the bodily temperature. In short, there is good reason to suppose that there are in the brain, or the cord, or in both, cells, some of which on stimulation cause an increased production of heat, others an increased loss of heat; these cells are affected in various ways, for example, reflexly, or by the temperature of the circulating blood, or by substances in the circulating blood that act upon them. So perfect is the result that it seems hard to think of the mechanism otherwise than as controlled by one centre or a pair of closely connected centres. It must always be remembered that the thermometer gives us information only as to the balance or resultant between heat income and heat expenditure at a given moment in a particular part of the body; we gain, therefore, by the use of this instrument, no accurate measurement of the amount of heat developed or lost.

FEVER, THE FEBRILE STATE

Fever, or the febrile state, is the train of symptoms and changes in the organism which constitutes the reaction to infection, which changes, although associated with increased heat production, may occur with or without rise of temperature (be febrile or afebrile), and the rise of temperature itself is best known as pyrexia. The febrile state is associated with changes in the circulatory, nervous, muscular, respiratory, digestive and excretory systems, which we shall take up in order.

Pyrexia.—In an infection we can frequently recognize the fervescent or pyrogenetic, the continued febrile, and the defervescent stages; the last named may be very short, the temperature descending sharply,

by crisis, or gradually, by lysis.

We are wont to distinguish the varieties of fever as continued, in which the changes between maximum and minimum are as slight as in health, but at a higher level; as remittent, where the changes in a day may range over several degrees, as happens in bacteriemia, suppuration, and tuberculosis with secondary infection; and as intermittent, where a succession of febrile attacks, each with its fervescent, continued, and defervescent periods, occur separated by a continuous interval of normal temperature of a day's or more duration—as in malaria. Where several days elapse the fever is called recurrent, as in relapsing fever.

The Associated Disturbances.—Disturbance in the Nervous System.—

Is and Chilly Sensations.—It happens often in the fervescent stage of infections that the patient feels cold, the teeth chatter, and yet, in both, the surface may be hotter than normal, and the temperature and increasing in height. The face and extremities may be pale. It pallor or local anemia suggests that the blood is attracted to other has, making a corresponding congestion somewhere, and that there storage of heat in the body for the time. The chill is evidently a chomenon incited from the central nervous system; in fact, the may occur without exposure to cold or infection, in which case it

dts.

80

he

ter to of

by The by and over ings

the rmal ody, cent.

adia-

oody, igher that

harge nal is hereas ternal rature 107.5° patible ry are similar

mplex, ulating sensory tion of mperain the appears to be wholly a part of the function of the nervous system Closely associated with the phenomenon is the rigor, in which fi fibrillary contractions of the muscles of the surface occur, involuntary in nature. Clinically, the term rigor is used to denote the entire occurrence, including the chill. No visible muscular action results from the rigor; in fact, opposing muscles synchropously contract, with the total result of a stiffening of the muscle as a whole (which is the strict significance of the word rigor). When the muscle fibrils are active, just like the flapping arms of the chilled coachman, these rapid contractions mean work, and muscular work means the giving off, into the body,

Other Febrile Nervous Disturbances. Here we refer to the effects of heat. produced upon the whole mechanism, indicated by the state of the central nervous system. These are periods of nervous irritation and nervous depression. In some cases of fever, there are headache, irritability, photophobia, sleeplessness, hallucinations, and active delirium; in others, apathy, mental dulness, prostration, inability to control or notice the passage of exercta, quiet delirium, and coma. We may consider that these phenomena are the result of the toxins acting upon the cells of the brain and cord, especially as we know that certain toxins

have a direct affinity for the nerve cell body and its parts.

Disturbance in the Circulatory System. The febrile state, in general, is accompanied by a marked increase in the rate of heart beat, evidenced by increased pulse rate. With this there may be a softer pulse, with dicrotism, indicating arterial dilatation and lowered blood pressure. or a full bounding pulse, so that it is even still a custom to divide fevers into the sthenic--those characterized by a morbid excess of vital, especially circulatory energy and the contrary asthenic. These determinations are usually made only by observation of the pulse, which is affected in any given case by so large a number of factors that our deductions are not of much value. One thing we do know, however. is that many toxins of infective disease directly inflorece the cardiac muscle cells to degeneration, and not only these, but the nerves which control them, so that a toxin such as that of diphtheria is able to cause sudden death.

Disturbance in the Blood.- Infection each of a mild grade is able to cause a 1 sis of red corpuscles; the effect upon white corpuscles is variable. Most kinds of infection are attended by a distinct increase in the leukocytes in the peripheral blood, but some, like typhoid fever, are attended by a lowering of the number. In such a disease, a rapid rise in the leukocyte count indicates that a secondary infection has supervened; but it must also be remembered that a secondary infection may supervene without a leukocytosis, because the reaction of the body may be insufficient; in such a case, the very absence of a leukocytosis in the presence of a secondary infection is of bad prognostic import. Similarly, in an infection in which we are accustomed to fina leukocytosis, its absence is not of good import because it suggests lack of reaction on the part of the patient. The increase in the white cells is usually in the polynuclears in acute cases, in the lymphocytes in the slower, less intense infections, such as tuberculosis, and in the cosinophiles in certain states where animal parasites are present, and in certain infections of the skin and also in whooping-cough

Disturbance in Respiration. The respiratory movement is quicker in infections. This quickening is brought about by anything which increases the temperature of the blood bathing the respiratory centre. The rapid breathing has the effect of increasing the evaporation in the longs, and diffusing more heat than usual because more air is being warmed. The increased temperature of an infected patient and the effection itself favor increase of metabolism, and the increase of metabolism, and the increase of metabolism, in turn, is again one of the important causes of the increased rate of respiration.

Listurbances in the Urinary System. The effect of to r is to din ish he water of the urine, and the chlorides and phosphates, and to intense the degree of coloration, the urea, the uric acid the state and the potassium salts. The diminution in water is he lowered blood pressure and partly to the increased so retion by the skin and evaporation from the lungs; the diminution in chlorat satisfactorily explained. The increase in potassium alts is must the large number of red cells that he we been broken up; the urea and ic acid and other natrogenous derivatives are the result of metabolism that is more active than usual and of the breaking down of proteins, which proteins are not all food and reserve maters. But are artly those of the tissues, in this sense, an infection liter. "but up" the patient.

1

1

1

r-T

ch

ur

er.

ac

ch

180

to

18

asc

er,

 pid

has

fee-

the

iko-

stic

fin-

ests

In most severe infections the urine contains albumin, and the kides the seat of a cloudy swelling or worse; is parenchymatous clothe kidney is probably due to change rought on the epithon, the tokins themselves and also the parameter products of the sum of the parameter is get ally described as "februal buminuria," and the urine secret is during at the office of the secret is during at the office of the secret is during at the secret is appointed in the secret is appointed in

Disturbance of the Digestive System.— It is well moren that etite and distaste for food are frequent results—infection in loopy of the process is not yet clear; the glandular secretioned in amount, as is seen in the Tryness of the mouth and the essory digestive glands, in fact all the glands of the body, are enced by the toxins, and cloudy swelling a sults with, no doubt, responding tack of efficiency of the gland for the time being.

The Causes of Pyrexia.—The most promite cause of febrile temperature is infection, but there are an experimental causes of pyrexia which through their toxins, for pyrexia can be produced experimental by ins, as well as by enzymes

and ferment-like bodies. The hemolysis following upon an internal hemorrhage, or upon the injection of blood into the system or upon the injection of a large quantity of water, is accompanied by pyrexia. The sterile extracts of tissues or tissue juices are similarly capable, as occurs with the formation of infarct, though uninfected, or after burns and scalds; even the injection of the extract of thyroid may be followed by a febrile temperature. According to Vaughan, all foreign proteins gaining entrance into the system induce pyrexia as the result of their absorption and dissociation by the cells, and the bacterial proteins are no exception. Drugs, such as hydrogen sulphide and sometimes strychnine, have the power of raising the temperature, and continued exposure to a high surrounding temperature will also prove effective. Irritation of the heat-producing mechanism by way of the nervous system induces pyrexia of another order. We have already referred to the experimental evidence of the existence of this form. Clinically it is to be observed after certain injuries to the central nervous system, and possibly it explains the pyrexia of sunstroke. We are not yet able to supply the explanations necessary for the grouping together of all these varying cases, but the infective, the enzyme, and the tissue-extract reactions are somewhat similar, and all of these are cases where reaction leads to the production of antibodies; just as inflammation is the reaction to local injury, fever is the process of adaptation to such toxic agencies as can be neutralized by the development of untabodies. If the toxin be so strong as to kill quickly, and without strong systemic reaction, we find that death is preceded by arrest of the febrile reaction and by a falling temperature; the apparent exceptions, in which death occurs in hyperpyrexia, may be cases in which a specific action on the heat centre is produced.

It is perhaps unwise to attempt to find a purpose for every morbid phenomenon when our ignorance is still so abysmal; nevertheless, in the febrile state, knowing how increased heat stimulates the cells to more active metabolism, it is difficult not to suggest the opinion that both the nervous disturbances leading to heightened bodily temperature and the direct action of the toxins upon individual tissues, in fact, all the phenomena of fever, lead up to and favor that increased activity of the body cells which results in the production of specific antibodies, and that at an accelerated rate, so that thereby the specific toxins

are neutralized and recovery is aided.

IMMUNITY

In the course of infections and diseases set up by certain organic substances, the body develops certain antibodies by which the toxins are neutralized, so that the disturbance comes to an end. This is the process of immunization. It has already been indicated that the body has a certain immunity, absolute or relative, to deleterious outside influences of many kinds, which immunity is only another name for the

accustomance to surroundings; the body, further, has immunity which is inherited. We know of certain acquisitions of immunity which are gradual; and when we study the question of immunity experimentally, it is only those cases in which the immunity is produced in the course of a short time that lend themselves to our experimental study. We thus know little about immunity, save as it is produced in connection

with some toxins, enzymes, and tissue juices.

ıal

on

ia.

as

ns

ed

ins

eir

are

eh-

ure

ion

ces

ıtal

ved

v it

the

ses,

me-

pro-

ury,

lized

kill

h is

the

y be

 $\mathbf{r}\mathbf{b}\mathbf{i}\mathbf{d}$

s, in

ls to

that

pera-

fact,

ivity

odies,

oxins

ganic

toxins

is the

body

influ-

or the

Non-specific Immunity.—In our discussion of the defences of the body we pointed out that if microbes of various orders be introduced in small numbers into the tissues, unless they be of extraordinary virulence, they are destroyed in a very short time. In other words, the cells of the body have a defensive power which may be used indifferently against various intruders. And even where we deal with the development of an acute specific disease, we notice this striking fact, that the microbes of that disease are not to be found growing throughout the whole body. Take, for example, a case of malignant endocarditis; the very fact that the heart valves are singled out, is in itself an indication that the microbes, streptococci, or what not, have been circulating in the blood, and the very nature of this disease necessitates that the microbes are from time to time being swept off the valves into the blood stream and carried now to this, now to that organ elsewhere in the body. But the remarkable fact is that in such cases we never find abscesses forming in the muscles, and very rarely in the brain, or in the mucous membrane of the alimentary canal; and yet all these tissues have an abundant blood supply. Numerous similar instances will be called to mind, and the only conclusion that we can draw is that while certain tissues or organs are peculiarly susceptible to the inroad of one or other species of bacteria, coincidently other tissues are characteristically insusceptible, or, in other words, are engaged in destroying these organisms and preventing their growth, or in yet other words, possess a local immunity. The muscular tissue or the endothelium of the vessels supplying the muscles may be cited as a well-marked example of this non-specific immunity, because no matter what bacteria attack the body they do not make a foothold here, bacterial infections of the muscle being very rare. We mention these facts because it seems that this capacity on the part of these tissues of destroying bacteria, without and previous apparent education, must be the foundation upon which built or developed the specific immunity toward particular species bacteria, which we shall immediately discuss. Or, otherwise, the de elopment of specific immunity is not to be regarded as a new property or acquirement, but as an exaltation of properties already possessed the tissues, and if this be so, it must be kept in mind that in each the ase that attacks the body this non-specific immunity is constantly at work, hand in hand with the specific immunity that is gradually being developed.

Immunity against Substances of Known Constitution.—It is known that the so-called "arsenic eaters" of Styria can, after a few years'

addiction, consume without ill effects four times the ordinary fatal dose of the drug, and while this has not been confirmed with animals, nevertheless, there is evidence of a certain grade of immunity that can be conferred on them. If an arsenical salt be injected into the peritoneum in suspension or solution, a fatal dose is accompanied by a diminution of the leukocytes that are found so abundantly in the peritoneal fluid- a negative chemiotaxis is excited. If the dose be not fatal, there is at first a reduction, followed by a great increase in the number of the leukocytes, so that the peritoneal fluid may appear milky, and the leukocytosis in the circulating blood becomes very evident. Whether a suspension or a solution of arsenic be employed, the leukocytes are found to take it up, and the larger the dose, provided it be not fatal, the more pronounced is the leukocytic increase. In time, fixed phagocytes also take up portions of the arsenic, which, in fact, specially tends to find its way to the liver. The fatal effects are evidently wrought upon the nervous tissue, which is susceptible to such an extent that one one-hundredth of the subcutaneous dose is fatal if injected into the brain. In producing immunity, a rabbit is taken of such body weight that 10 c.c. of a given solution produces death in forty-eight hours; 2 c.c. of this solution is injected at night, followed by 10 c.c. (the fatal dose) next morning; but no ill results ensue. Arsenic is slowly eliminated; the animal has 12 e.c.- more than a fatal dose in its body; death does not occur because the first dose has excited an excess of leukocytes, which are, so to speak, lying in wait for the second dosc to be injected. This is, if not true immunity, at least a form of positive protection, comparable to the protection to be spoken of later in discussing "Issaeff's resistance period" and to the non-specific immunity that has just been discussed. But there is more to be said. If after six or eight days this animal be bled, the serum of the blood is found to have acquired a new property; 8 c.c. of it, injected into a fresh rabbit along with, or slightly before a minimal fatal dose of arsenic, prevents the death of the animal. This prevention is the conferring on the fresh animal of passive immunity; a substance not made by the animal itself, but introduced into its body, acts as an antidote—aids the body tissues in neutralizing or destroying the poison. The scrum of the actively immunized animal contains something that it did not contain before the immunization. What is this something? We do not know; but we do know that it is not arsenic containing, is not a combination of the arsenic and the cell substance of the animal. The cell substance has elaborated something which is capable of combining with or neutralizing arsenic, something which is capable of solution in the serum, and of remaining in it for eight days at least. We are not unaware of the criticism to which the interpretation is open, but for clearness, we refrain from stating the full argument for and against.

Immunization against Albuminoid Vegetable Poisons—Phytotoxins.— There are certain vegetable poisons of a proteid nature, distinct from the alkaloids and glucosides, extremely toxic, to wit, abrin, ricin, robin, tal

ıls,

nat

the

by

the

not

the

ky,

nt.

ko-

be

me,

act,

evi-

uch

atal

ken

h in

wed

enic

lose

l an

eond

n of

n of

ecific

said.

od is

fresh

enic,

ig on

the the

-aids

erum

l not

'e do

not a

The

ining

on in

e not

it for

ns.

from

robin,

ıst.

and others. Of ricin, one grain is sufficient to kill a million and a half guinea-pigs, and this not suddenly, but after a period of four or five days, subsequent to which ordema, inflammation, and necrosis of the tissues near the point of injection set in; this suggests the existence of a ferment-like action with formation of some second substance able to act upon the cell substance. If animals be fed cautiously upon slowly increasing doses of ricin, they gain such immunity that they can take a hundred times the fatal dose with impunity, and by injection the immunity can be made so active that they can take five thousand times the fatal dose. If the serum of such an animal be mixed with the poison, the injection of the mixture into an animal produces no ill effects, the poison being rendered inert.

Ricin has two properties—its toxicity, and the power in toxic doses to cause agglutination of the blood corpuscles; outside the body it can cause agglutination of the corpuscles; but by the action of pepsin and hydrochloric acid this agglutination power is destroyed without the toxicity being diminished. Either ricin is a mixture of two substances. or, what is more likely, it consists of a very complex molecule which can undergo slight chemical change without its specific functions being destroyed. We may assume the latter, and show what some of these changes are; if heated to 100° C. for two hours, it loses all its toxic powers, yet animals treated by it become immunized. The so modified toxin (called a toxoid) is no longer toxic, but is capable of setting up the changes in the body necessary to the formation of an antibody. If, again, ricin be added to the serum of an immunized arimal with its antiricin, so that the mixture is inert and unable to produce toxic cife is, and if the mixture be injected into an animal of the same species as yielded the antiricin, it still has the power of producing active immunity; from this it is evident that in the mixture of toxin and antitoxin the toxin is not destroyed.

Once an animal is immunized against ricin it may be bled again and again and the blood remains antitoxic; the tissues seem to have acquired the power of discharging the antitoxin, so that it does not seem likely that the antiricin is derived from the ricin. The vast preponderance in quantity of the antitoxin over the toxin also tells against such a supposition. Evidently the antitoxin is a substance wholly new to the mism, produced primarily by the cells as a reaction to the presence, in them, of the toxin.

Immunization against Substances of Unknown Constitution.—
Enzymes and Anti-enzymes.— If a foreign enzyme be injected a partially into the body, a tolerance of it is acquired, by means of an enti-enseme which is formed. For example, goats injected with cennet produce a serum which has the power of neutralizing rennet, and this in quantitative degree, so that a fixed amount of serum neutralizes a finite amount of rennet of a known strength. But just as an animal in emized against a certain microörganism is not rendered immune to ther, although closely related, microörganisms, so in the above

case the blood serum will not neutralize the effect of "rennets" obtained from plants. Thus the anti-enzyme is strictly specific. The process of immunization against animal and vegetable enzymes seems at first sight very like the process that exists in immunization against bacteria; but here is this important difference, that the development of anti-enzyme is limited. The supposed reason for this is that the anti-enzyme is the free in the body stimulates the cells to set free an anti-anti-enzyme.

Anti-enzynces exist in the body in the normal state; an antirennin is present in normal blood, and antipepsin exists in the stomach mucosa, and an antiferment to the digestive action of the pancreas can be isolated from that organ. If it were not for these antiferments the juice of the stomach would digest the coat of the stomach as it digests meat and the pancreas would digest itself in life as it does after death. Despit: the existence of antipeptic and antidiastatic enzymes, they cannot be artificially produced by the use of pepsin and diastase, nor does the injection of fibrin ferment result in the production of an antifibrin-terment. The reason for this probably is that the enzymes that are produced all through the body (for pepsin, diastase, and fibrin ferment can be produced by the cells of all organs) are so usual to the

cells that they do not excite any antagonistic action.

Toxins and Antitoxins. One of the early discoveries in bacteriology was that of the bacteria-produced toxins; this was made out especially for diphtheria and tetanus bacilli, which we now know are able to produce and give off diffusible toxins, the ectotoxins. Most bacteria produce endotoxins, which are not diffusible. The injection into animals of the diffusible toxins was found to produce immunity; the serum of an animal, so immunized, contains substances which neutralize the diffusible toxins, either outside or in the body, and these are the antitoxins of medicine and commerce. It became necessary to arrange a standard by which to measure these antitoxins, and this was done by determining how much would neutralize the unit of toxin, which is the smallest amount that suffices to kill a 250-gram guinea-pig within four days. The production of antitoxin is a vital process, while the neutralization of the toxin appears to be purely a chemical one of the nature of a loose molecular union; toxin by itself can pass through gelatin hlters, but when acted upon by antitoxin fails to do so, that is, the resultant of the interaction is a larger (compound) molecule.

It is not possible to define the term toxin accurately; toxins are substances that act in minute doses, that diffuse with difficulty, that are products of cell metabolism, and that have not yet been separated in a pure state. We can define them as poisons against which it is possible to obtain immunity by the production of antibodies, and we can state that they appear to be colloids, and that they are allied to proteins, but are not proteins. They may, however, be dissociation products of proteins. Whatever toxins be, it is nevertheless possible to speak quite definitively of toxin action as a process similar to enzyme

action; toxin action is a physical property, dependent upon molecular arrangement and shared by some, at least, of the dissociation products of the cell.

Toxin action is the first essential in the production of antitoxin. If a non-lethal dose of toxin be injected into an animal, it disappears in a few minutes, because it is taken up by the cells of different organs and by the leukocytes, and can in most cases be recovered from the organs. And here is the crux of the experiment. If tetanus toxin, well known to act upon the nervous system, be injected, it disappears, and can be recovered from all the organs, except the nervous system. Does this mean that the nervous system has none of it? Quite the contrary; all the other systems give it up readily because their cells have not entered into a hard and fast combination with it, whereas

those of the nervous system have. This close binding or anchoring of the toxin in a tissue is the condition necessary to the production of the antitoxin, and it seems to be the case that the tissues that bind the toxins closely are those that

develop the antitoxins.

ined

ocess

s at

ainst

ment

: the

anti-

nnin

cosa,

n be

the

gests

eath.

they

, nor

anti-

that

ibrin

o the

ology

cially

le to

eteria

mals

ım of

the

anti-

ige a

e by

eh is

four

trali-

ature

elatin

s, the

s are

that

rated

it is

d we

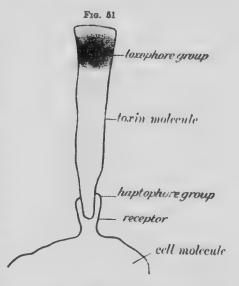
ed to

ation

ssible

zyme

It is not necessary for the production of antitoxins that the toxins produce disease; the toxin may by heat be rendered harmless (toxoid), and yet when injected can cause the production of antitoxin. This means that there are in a toxin molecule at least two parts, one of which is concerned with producing the toxic effect. If this



toxic part be rendered inert by heat, of what does the remainder of the molecule consist, and what does it do? Since such a modified toxin can set up immunity it is clear that it must have attained close union with the cell protoplasm; therefore, Ehrlich concludes that there is a part of the cell devoted to the function of fixing the toxin molecule to the tissue molecule, and this part of it is called the haptophore; the part of the molecule which is actually toxic to the cell body when fixed to it is called the toxophore. This is represented graphically in Fig. 51.

It is evident from proof that we need not here give, that the cells which thus become combined with the toxin molecules are those that presence the antitoxin, and that the toxin is not in any sense changed in cantitoxin. It is evident that the haptophore of the toxin molecule does not do all the "binding" by itself, otherwise it could fasten upon ang orll of the body, and this power it obviously does not possess. There must be a degree of receptivity on the part of the cell. A shunting engine may have a coupler, but it cannot couple to a car unless the car also has a coupler. Ehrlich has devised a conception in graphic terms of the process. If we say that a toxin molecule has a certain coupler, it follows that the cell must have one to fit it; but the complex cell has to provide couplers adapted not only to the coupler of the toxin molecule, but to various other molecules other toxins, foodstuffs of different sorts, and so on.

These adapted couplers of the cell molecule, adapted to many different forms of couplers on foreign molecules he has called **receptors**, or side-chains. From one's chemical study, it will be recalled that we depict these side-chains as reaching out for certain substances to satisfy them—they are **unsatisfied affinities**. To go back to the picture of the toxi: molecule, it will be seen that the side-chain is reaching out to satisfy its affinity for the *haptophore* part of the toxia molecule, that coupler attracts coupler. It does not matter whether there be a toxo-



Ehrlich's conception of the cell molecule. Molecules with various receptors or haptophorous groups of the first order (a) adapted to combination with the haptophorous groups (b) of various chemical compounds brought to them. It will be noted that there is no mechanism by which the toxophorous elements (c) of the compounds can be directly attached to the cell. (McFarland, after Ehrlich.)

phore part of the molecule or not; the toxophore part of the molecule has no power of satisfying the side-chain, and cannot couple with it; but if the haptophore part join with the cell the toxophore part is brought into direct connection with the cell, and the toxin can thus become part of the cell; in other words, can attack it. To apply this to a practical case, let us take that of diphtheria antitoxin; the toxin molecule fastens on a cell by its haptophore part and its toxophore part acts upon the cell; as a consequence the cell throws out many additional side-chains, antitoxin molecules, which become free in the blood; the toxin molecules pick these up, couple with them, and so are satisfied without reaching the cell at all.

There is a normal discharge into the blood plasma of a large number of potential antitoxins, quite apart from the stimulus of special toxins, so that one is tempted to think antitoxins may not be so purely specific as has been stated. Ehrlich's "side-chain" theory supposes that a cell once stimulated to perform a certain act does not necessarily cease

ting
the
phic
tain
plex
the
ood-

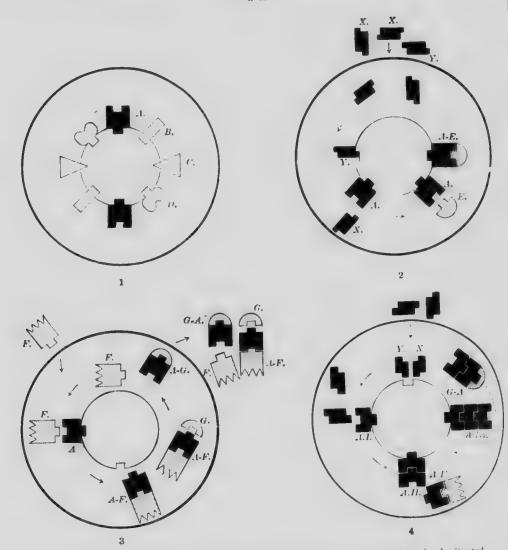
difs, or
t we
tisfy
the
t to
that

groups hemical phorous

lecule with art is thus v this toxin phore many in the so are

oxins, pecific hat a cease

doing so when the immediate need is past, but keeps on producing them continually even after the stimulus has been removed. The toxin molecule stimulates the ell to throw out receptors like the receptor which first fixes it. It is supposed, in terms of the theory, that these fresh receptors are continually thrown off and constitute the antitoxin. It is convenient, but difficult, to understand how this thing happens, and at this point we propose to indicate a modification of the side-chain theory as it is ordinarily understood. As we have indicated before, the cell consists of cytoplasm and nucleoplasm, not to lay stress upon the paraplasm. When a toxin becomes absorbed into the cell, we do not picture it so much as fixed to the biophoric molecule, as lying loose in the cytoplasm and combining with the side-chains of the biophoric molecule, dissociating them from the molecule. If there are enough of such toxii: molecules, the biophoric molecule loses side-chains so rapidly as actually to be destroyed, "pulled to pieces." This does not mean that there must be a toxin molecule for every side-chain detached, but rather that enzyme action, as we have explained it, must play a part, and that a toxin molecule, having detached a sidechain is free to break itself away from it, and at once fix upon and detach a new side-chain and another and yet another. Only upon some such assumption, we think, is it possible to explain satisfactorily the cases where a minute amount of toxin can kill large animals. We think that poisons, other than toxins, wreak their effects by a single act of union with the biophoric mass, while the toxins must be able to act like ferments, with a repeating action. If we were to suppose that the toxin molecule made a single act of union with a side-chain, it is hard to see why the dissociation of a single side-chain should at once cause the biophoric mass to set free a large number of similar sidechains; but if the toxin molecule should be able to repeat this act in quick succession again and again and yet again, we can imagine the cell establishing a habit in the production of the new side-chains. It will be understood that this implies activity of a high order in the biophoric molecule: it is precisely this activity that marks the resisting cell as different from the cell against which the toxic attack is at once successful in causing cell death. Let us digress here to give an example: instead of the abstract toxin molecule, read tetanotoxin, instead of the biophoric molecule consider a single cell of nerve tissue; the tetanotoxin joins with the receptor for it and detaches it, and freeing itself from the receptor it has taken up, there begins a race between to in and cell, as to whether the cell can produce more receptors than the toxin can detach; if it can, the excess of them, continuing to be thrown off, constitutes tetano-antitoxin, and thus a relative immunity is the result of an unsuccessful toxin attack, just as the soldiers of a a rison become more efficient by reason of each occasion on which the ider attempts but fails to capture their stronghold. It will be seen in the above that our conception of immunity depends upon the hovering, so to say, in the cytoplasm, and not upon it being part



The authors' conception of side-chain and antitoxin production: 1. A biophoric molecule situated within the cell, and possessing side-chains of various orders, A, B, C, D, 2. Mode of formation of side-chains; free molecules (X, Y) diffuse into the cell (or are produced within the cell by dissociation of more complex molecules, also absorbed); these are attracted by an unsatisfied affinity of the biophore. and are built up by it to form the side-chain A; such side-chain, when formed, may become satisfied by attracting to it other (foodstuff) molecules such as E, having the right order of haptophorous grouping; it is conceivable (but not shown in the diagram) that molecules of the E order may not merely satisfy the side-chain, but detach it so that the compound A-E becomes free in the cytoplasm, or discharged from the cell (active katabolism). 3. A toxin molecule F, diffusing into the cytoplasm has a stronger affinity for the side-chain A than has the biophore, combines with it and detaches it; but when detached and free in the cytoplasm other molecules (G) present in the cytoplasm have now a stronger affinity for the A moiety of the compound A F and combine with it, liberating the toxin moiety F, which again becomes free in the cytoplasm and capable of dissociating another side-chain A; or the compound G/Λ may become discharged from the cell (circulating antitoxin), and then in the altered surroundings the extracellular toxin molecules F may exert the greater affinity and joining with the A moiety become neutralised; it is the G-A compound, and not the side-chain A alone, that constitutes the extracellular antitoxin. 4. In the presence of abundant X and Y molecules the sidechains A become built up in series, and this whether attached to the biophore or free in the cytoplasm; the more there are freed by the action of the toxin, the greater under these conditions will be the production of antitoxins; thus the presence of the toxin molecule F stimulates the cell to the production of increased numbers of the molecules of the particular side-chain order upon which it exerts specific action.

of the biophoric molecule. Our idea of antitoxin production is expressed graphically in Fig. 53, the thorough study of which we would counsel.

The Mode of Union of Toxin and Antitoxin. If toxin and antitoxin be allowed to unite, neither is necessarily altered in the process, because at least one of them can be separated unchanged from the mixture; further, toxin neutralized by antitoxin may be neutral for animals of one species and poisonous for those of another, which may be explained by the statement that there are, in the blood of the second animal, substances with so strong an affinity for the antitoxin that they unite with it, detaching it from the toxin, which is thus left free to act. If toxin and antitoxin be allowed in vitro to act one upon the other, they become more closely bound one to the other, and in vivo the longer the toxin acts in the cell the more firmly does it become fixed to the receptors, and the more difficult is it for the antitoxin to detach it; thus the later in the course of the disease the antitoxin is injected, the less chance it has of being effective. The very fact that antitoxins can enter the cell and arrest the infective process bears out the supposition that the toxins when they are setting up cell disturbances are not actually fused into the biophoric molecule, but are acting upon it from without, that is, in the cytoplasm. The action of antitoxin seems to be that: (1) it neutralizes free toxins in circulation, so preventing their action upon the cells, and (2) it gains entrance to the cells and there detaches toxin molecules, thereby setting up the excess of receptors necessary, as well as neutralizing the toxin molecules temporarily set free.

Just as enzymes cause the development of anti-enzymes, so other diffusible-cell products, particularly proteins, have a similar power. Precipitins .- If the culture fluid, in which certain germs have been grown and from which they have been removed, be injected into the animal body, there appears a substance—an antibody—in the blood serum, so that it, added to the original culture fluid, causes a precipitate of the proteins in that fluid. These antibodies were originally called coagulins and, later, precipitins. This power is possessed not only by germ-free culture fluids, but by many proteid substances of animal and a cetable origin, such as milk, egg albumin, horse serum, globulins from blood, albuminous urine, pleural exudate, vegetable proteins such as edestin, hordein, etc. The action of these is remarkably specific; for example, if human blood serum be a ected into rabbits, the rabbits' serum causes a precipitate in human serum, but not in dogs' or goats' serian, and this constitutes a valuable medico-legal mode of deciding if a blood stain be caused by human or by other blood. But, still dealing with this example, although the treated rabbits' serum might not a precipitation in dogs' or goats' blood, it may in that of the ger a or the orang, because of the relationship that exists between and these animals. The more nearly two animals are related, reater likelihood is there that the proteid substances in their are the same, or similar, and that they will give rise to the same 11

ation of ociation iophore. satisfied s groupmerely or disasm has s it; but e now a he toxin chain A; n in the i joining one, that the sidetoplasm;

the pro-

roduction to specific

situated

or similar antibodies or precipitins. Nevertheless, the precipitation is most marked with the homologous serum, that is, the serum of the species originally used in the experiments, and one may go farther and note that the most marked precipitation of all will occur with the serum of the individual that supplied the original serum.

The different proteins in a blood serum have something in common, so that the precipitin developed by the injection of one protein may act upon other proteins in the blood; thus if serum, free from blood cells, be injected, the antibody so produced, when added to whole blood,

can produce hemolysis (see p. 163).

In these experiments, the precipitable substance is considered to be the main proteid substance of the fluid that is used, and we suppose that the action is definitely specific for each protein, even though this implies that there is an enormous number of proteins, each different from another. As there are toxins and toxoids, so there are precipitins

and precipitoids and even antiprecipitins.

Agglutinins. Agglutination consists in the clumping of free bacilli in a fluid medium when there is added to that medium the serum of an individual previously inoculated with bacteria of the same species. With this clumping, the bacteria, if previously motile, become motionless. This constitutes the Widal reaction which is in common use, with this difference that in the latter the converse procedure is carried out, so that the result shows whether the individual affording the serum has or has not been infected with typhoid bacilli. Agglutination tests can be done with non-motile as well as with motile organisms, and are obtained with the organisms of typhoid, dysentery, tuberculosis, plague, anthrax, cholera, and with Bacillus coli, pyocyaneus, pneumococcus, streptococcus, and staphylococcus. Agglutination is specific to this extent, that with relatively high dilutions of the homologous serum, the particular organism concerned is the only one to show clumping. The reaction can be observed under the microscope or in bulk, where in small tubes the formation of a flocculent sediment is seen; living and dead bacilli alike produce the phenomenon, and the injection of dead bacilli causes the formation of agglutinins. The power of eausing agglutination may remain in the serum for a long time after the infection is past.

We cannot say what agglutinins are, but we know that they are resistant, that they withstand drying, light, and putrefaction and a considerable degree of moist heat (62° C.); like antitoxins they may be present in normal scrum; the fact that they are not effectively present in fætal blood or in the first years of childhood gives weight to the

supposition that they may be caused by "subinfection."

Agglutinins, it may be briefly stated, are not the same as precipitins, nor are they bacteriolysins (bodies that cause the destruction of bacteria). It is further evident that one organism can give rise to more than one agglutinin, and in the case of bacteria must are related to one another, some of these agglutinins are the same. We think, thereon

the he**r**

the

on, iay

ж

oul,

- be

nse this

rent

tins

ıcilli

n of

cies. tion-

with

t. so

has tests

lare

ague,

ccus,

this

the The

re in

g and dead

using

er the

y are

and a

· may

resent

to the

pitins,

f bacmore

ted to

there-

iore, that a species of organism can give rise on the one hand to an agglutinin that is specific to itself, and to others that are also capable of being formed by other related organisms. Thus bacillus I can lead to the production of agglutinins A, B, C, D, and E, whereas bacillus II can form D, E, F, G, and H, and so on. The nature of the agglutination process is probably that the agglutinins bring about an alteration in the molecular attraction or tension between the bacteria and the fluid medium. We would correlate with this the gathering into rouleaux of the blood corpuseles, and the physical experiment in which matches to represent bacilli) or disks of cork (to represent red-blood cells) are coated with hard soap and floated in a tub or water; they float about free till the water is faintly acidulated, and then they gather together into clumps; if the water be rendered alkaline, the clumps if broken up do not reform. First, there is probably a junction between the agglutinins and the bacterial cell, and as a consequence a physical change is wrought in the medium in which they lie and in the surface tension of the bacteria, a change with which the salts are concerned.

Cytolysins.- The blood of one person injected into the body of another may lead to the dissolution of corpuscles of the latter individual or to coagulation in his vessels. If an animal A be inoculated repeatedly with small amounts of the blood corpuscles of an animal B of another species, within a few days the blood serum of A gains the power of "laking" the blood of B, that is, of destroying the red-blood cells of it with liberation of the hemoglobin. The injection of the corpuscles leads to the formation in the blood of A of a cytotoxin or cytolysin. When this was discovered, a series of similar lysins were determined, including leukolysins, which are made by the injection of leukocytes, the leukolysin being specific for the kind of leukocyte introduced. Similarly, nephrolysins and hepatolysins were discovered, able to set up degenerations in the kidney and liver cells respectively; in fact, the cells of every organ seem to have their specific lysin able to act especially upon that organ. The destructive effect is most marked when the animals used are of widely different species, in which case the lysins are called heterolysins, but there is some interaction even between animals of the same species (isolysins). But it is not possible to manufacture experimentally autolysins, that is, substances derived from an animal which can break up its own cells. This observation is in keeping with the impossibility of making anti-enzymes to the common enzymes of the body. Before leaving this part of the subject it is necessary to note that while a cytolysin acts most powerfully upon the cells of the special kind which constituted its antigen, and in reaction to which it was produced, it may have a certain lesser effect upon other cell and this is not wonderful when we consider the common origin of the cells of the body and the likelihood that they will, therefore, have

in qualities in common. Just as occurred with precipitins, if cytolycautiously injected anti-cytolysins can be obtained, and these will neutralize the action of the cytolysins. The Mechanism of Cytolysis. If a guinea-pig has rabbits' corpuscles injected into it, its serum quickly becomes active in breaking up the rabbits' corpuscles, and is then called immune, but if we heat it to 55° or 60° C, the hemolytic action is arrested, and such serum is said to be inactivated. If we mix rabbits' corpuscles and heated (inactivated) guinea-pig serum (which calls forth no hemolysis) and add to it normal guinea-pig or rabbit serum hemolysis does take place. This means that heating the guinea-pig's serum has destroyed something which the normal serum can restore or that there is something present in unheated immunized guinea-pig serum and again something in normal serum that is necessary to hemolysis. There must be more than one body present, because non-immune guinea-pig serum is not able by itself to produce the effect. In every case of cytolysis the existence and combined action of these two factors can be shown. The substance development



Combination of cell a, amborer ptor b, and complement c. The amboreptor may unite with the cell, but by itself cannot affect it. The complement cannot unite with the cell except through the amboreptor, having no selaptation to the cell directly.

oped in the serum of the immunized animal is called the immune body or the intermediate body or amboceptor; and the body present in the normal (and in active immune serum) is the complement or alexin. Both are present in the cytolytic serum, and in fact it is by virtue of their presence that the serum is cytolytic. From experiments we deduce that the immune body can attach itself to the cell, but cannot disintegrate it, while the disintegration is done by the complement acting with the immune body. Graphically we express this by Fig. 54, in which it will be seen that the immune body is imagined as capable of a double attachment, hence the name amboceptor,1 to complement on the one hand and to cell on the other. Nor must it be thought that complement and

amboceptor are merely theoretical names, for each has a definite existence and is as real as if it were a chemical enclosed in a bottle and visible to the eye. Further, in the interaction of complement, amboceptor and cell, an exact amount of each is necessary for a perfect reaction; an excess or lack of one or another leads to an imperfect reaction.

The Existence of Different Kinds of Amboceptors.—If a goat be doubly immunized to both guinea-pigs' and rabbits' red corpuscles and this goats' serum be used upon guinea-pigs' corpuscles until no further hemolysis can be obtained, we find that there are yet amboceptors in it capable of hemolysing rabbits' corpuscles; the goats' serum thus contains two distinct sets of amboceptors, and many other such experiments lead us to deduce that there is a multiplicity of immune bodies (or amboceptors).

1 Ambo, both; capio, I seize.

()

1

1)

ú

S

h

al

e

V

l-

al

in

8.

18

m

ce

he

nt

liv

 ill

ed

ce

on

nd

stnd

)()=

ect

ect

oly

his

10-

it

eri-

ies

The Existence of Different Kinds of Receptors. —It follows from the last statement that the cells must have multiple "couplers" or receptors, and while each cell may have a large series of these, the series is not an identical one for the cells of different individuals of the same species; for corple, if we inoculate a goat with serum from another goat, the serum obtained from it will be molyse the corpuscles of some but not of all goats. We may express this graphically by saying that if goats' corpuscles are capable of having a full series of receptors, a, b, c, d, e, f, and we use for experiment a goat whose cells have receptors a, b, and c, its serum will come to contain amboceptors for a, b, and c, but not for d, e, f. If this serum with amboceptors a, b, and c, it will destroy them wholly; but if with corpuscles possessing receptors a and c, it will only partially destroy them; if with corpuscles possessing receptors d, e, and f, it will have no effect on them.

The Existence of Different Kinds of Complements.—Much debate has taken place upon the question whether in a given blood different complements exist, and without recapitulating the lengthy evidence we may state that it seems likely that there is multiplicity of complements. We may say that there is in every normal serum a series of complements, as I again that, in different animals there exists a certain number of identical complements, identical at least in their haptophore (or coupling) parts, although the toxophore (or destructive) part may be different. Just as was the case with the toxin molecule, so the complement may be imagined as of two parts; just as the toxin could be modified to a toxoid, so the complement may be modified to a complement of, which will still have its old affinities but will have lost its cytolytic powers; still, such altered complement can join with the immune body, and the toxophoric or cytolytic part being powerless, no damage to the cell results, but other and active complement is prevented from joining.

Lastly, it may be pointed out that the amount of complement present is a variable quantity, and it may by various experimental means and by disease be reduced, or may, by the injection of substances like blood plasma and broth, be increased.

Bacteriolysinz.— As inoculation of animal cells leads to the production of bodies causing the destruction of those cells, so has the inoculation of vegetable cells, bacilli for example, a like result; thus to obtain perfect immunity against bacteria which develop endotoxins, two di finet processes have to be carried out: (1) the development of he teriolysis whereby the endotoxins become liberated, and (2) the fermation of anti- (endo) toxins. Nor is it by any means easy to attain two results; it not infrequently happens that having gained the first a dose of the living germs will cause death in a relatively short be becaused; the bacteriolytic power that has been acquired, destroying the harteria, liberates rapidly so large a quantity of endotoxin that the harterial dies of intoxication. To combat such an endotoxin, it is necessing to employ a method different from that used in neutralizing a

diffusible toxin. If, for example, a guinea-pig by successive injections of one of certain pathogenic organisms be rendered immune, and what would ordinarily be an abundantly fatal dose of that organism be injected into the peritoneal cavity, it will be seen by removing peritoneal fluid from time to time that the bacteria are undergoing destruction, and this apart from the process of phagocytosis; the bacteria are seen to become motionless, to swell, to become rounded and then melt away by a process of gradual diminution, like a grain of sugar in water (Pfeiffer's reaction). What is happening is that the immunization of the animal has produced amboceptors and the normal serum supplies complement, and the bacteriolytic effect is produced upon the bacterial body.

The amboceptors and complements are called antibodies, and exist in the serum, and even in the plasma of normal animals, although not in large amounts; inoculation by a specific germ is needed to call forth amboceptors abundantly; the amboceptors, as we have said, are multiple, as appears from the fact that an animal immunized against cholera and typhoid provides a serum that will destroy cholera, and subsequently also typhoid organisms. The appearance of the amboceptors is not immediate, but occurs after the lapse of several days; once there, however, they may exist in the serum for a long period, even for more than a year in some cases, and when they disappear, a relatively slight inoculation of the specific organism suffices to produce them in abundance. They can be produced by successive inoculations of the living or by larger doses of the killed germs and in this way immunity may be obtained against cholera, plague, typhoid, and streptococcus infections.

When the complements come under consideration, it is seen that those of different animals are not identical, and, therefore, the immune serum of one animal will not necessarily protect another; when one adds to this that the amount of complement is reduced in disease we can partly understand failures to immunize, and can foresee that mixed immune sera will have a better chance of being efficient than the immune serum of one animal; further, human serum is most likely to afford the right order of complements for human patients, and a relatively small amount of human serum contains enough complement for a large bulk of amboceptors.

Diversion and Fixation of Complement.—Diversion of Complement.—We have already called attention to the fact that for proper immunization there must be no excess of either amboceptor or complement. If a suspension of bacteria be made in a normal serum, which has been found to contain sufficient complement to cause bacteriolysis when a known amount of inactivated serum is added (an amount containing say x amboceptors), then if ten times this amount be added, instead of bacteriolysis being hastened, it may be wholly arrested. This is explained as being due to "diversion of the complement," and it is supposed that the excess of unattached amboceptors have a greater affinity or attraction for the complement molecules than have those

amboceptors that have become partially satisfied by attach sent to the bacteria, or, conversely, that the avidity of the bacterial receptors is greater for amboceptors, pure and simple, than for the amboceptor plus complement.

Fixation of Complement. We owe to Bordet the observation that ensitized red corpuscles (i. e., corpuscles which having been previously placed in immune serum have taken up amboceptors from the same) when placed in normal unheated serum take up all the complement present in that serum, so that now this serum becomes wholly inactive for bacteriolytic or cytolytic purposes. Bacteria similarly sensitized act in the same way, fixing all the complemental substance present in normal serum. It is evident that the amboceptor-laden cells absorb or render inactive much more than the amount of complement necessary for the cytolytic process, and absorb or fix indifferently all orders of complement. Gengou expanded these observations, showing that a like fixation of complement takes place under conditions in which the complement is not an essential for the main process. He found, in short, that any serum in which antigen and antibody undergo union,

has any complement that it contains rendered inactive.

The Wassermann Reaction.—If this be so, then the determination whether in a given serum the complement has become fixed or no, renders it possible to determine the presence or absence of either antigen or antibody in a given fluid. If either of these be present, then the addition of the other, in the presence of complement-containing serum leads to the fixation of that complement. If the complement does not become fixed, we can conclude that antigen or antibody respectively is absent from the mixture, and we can determine this point by adding to the mixture sensitized red corpuscles. If the complement has become fixed, no hemolysis ensues; if either specific antigen or antibody be absent, the complement does not undergo fixation and hemolysis occurs. This is the basis of the now widely employed Wassermann reaction for the diagnosis, more particularly, of syphilis. The test is not a little complicated in description, but the above gives its rationale. Wassermann first obtained what he regarded (as we now know wrongly) as a syphilitic antigen, viz., the tissue of a syphilitic fœtus. To an extract of this is added the serum to be tested, diluted and heated to destroy its complement, and normal unheated guinea-pig serum containing complement. If the serum to be tested is from a case of syphilis, and contains the syphilitic antibody, then in its union with the antigen the complement will undergo fixation. Coincidently there is prepared a mixture of washed red corpuscles of some animal, and heated (immune) serum from a rabbit which has been injected with the red corpuscles in question. If this latter mixture be added to the previous mixture and no hemolysis ensues, it is evident that the complement has been final; it is evident then that the suspected serum contained the syphilitic artificities. If, on the other hand, hemolysis ensues, this is an evidence the serum tested is negative, containing no antibodies.

However, more delicate reaction can be obtained, if in place of Wassermann's so-called syphilis antigen, there be employed the alcoholic extract of a normal organ, or even soluble soaps, lecithin, or bile salts. Fixation of complement there certainly is, but the reaction is not precisely of the same order as the Bordet-Gengou phenomenon. Syphilitic blood serum is round relatively rich in globulins, and it is the combination between these and lipoids that binds the natural complement of the guinea-pig's blood present in the mixture.

Animal Venoms and Antivenins.—An extensive study of snake poisons has led to the conclusion that the raw poison contains several separate toxins, such as a hemolysin, a neurotoxin, a nephrotoxin, and so on, and that some of these attack the cells directly, while others require the intermediation of a complement; this complement is sometimes present in the blood serum and sometimes exists in the cell that is acted upon, in which case it is known as an endocomplement. By the repeated injection of minute quantities of venom into lower animals, antitoxins—or antivenins, as they are called, can be obtained for all the animal poisons; the best-known forms are those against the venoms

of the cobra, scorpion, spider, toad, salamander, and eel.

Opsonins.—The opsonins are substances in the blood serum which stimulate phagocytosis. If opsonins are not present, phagocytosis of bacteria by leukocytes occurs only to a slight extent, whereas if opsonins be present, it occurs very abundantly. For example, if a person suffering from chronic furunculosis be taken, and his leukocytes removed by centrifugalizing from his serum in which they show little phagocytic power, and added to the serum of a normal person, they take up bacteria very rapidly, because the normal person's serum contains that abundance of opsonins in which the patient's serum was lacking. The normal person's leukocytes placed in the patient's serum show scarcely any phagocytic activity, so the activity depends not upon the leukocytes but upon the serum; the substances upon which this depends (opsonins) are not readily altered by heat, and become fixed by the bacteria, not by the leukocytes. The bacterial body is in some way acted upon so that the leukocytes can subsequently ingest it; the extent of this action can be gauged by noting under the microscope the average number of bacteria ingested by one of thirty or forty leukocytes observed, and comparing it with the number ingested by normal leukocytes in normal serum. Certain precautions are necessary in the utilization of this phenomenon. (1) The bacteria must be in an emulsion, so that malividuel pricrobes are separate and not clustered. (2) The emulsion must not be thick, lest bacteria, overlying but not in leukocytes, may appear to be actually contained. (3) The counter should have considerable training before trusting his results. (4) The same pipettes should be used for the same stage of the procedure, so as to insure accuracy of measurement.

The opsonins are considered to be protective and by their action upon bacteria are used up, so that if bacteria are added to a serum and after

of

lco-

bile

n is

on.

t is

ıral

ake

eral

and

ners

me-

rt is

the

als,

all

ems

hich

s of

nins

re-

ittle

hey

conwas

nt's

ends

hich

ome

s in

gest

ero-

orty by

sary

e in

red.

not

nter

(4)

ure,

pon

fter

their removal the serum be used with a second lot of bacteria, it is inert. This last depends upon the fact that there is actually combination with or absorption by the bacteria, because bacteria so removed are found to be readily taken up by leukocytes even in an inactivated serum. Opsonins are multiple; there may be, probably is, a common one in normal serum, and specific inoculations give rise to other specific opsonins. If small measured quantities of dead cultures of Staphylococcus aureus, the gonococcus, B. coli, or B. tuberculosis be injected into an individual his opsonins are, for a short period, reduced in amount (the negative phase), after which they increase (positive phase).

Since phagocytosis is an important mode of protection of the organism against infection, Wright, whose work drew attention to these phenomena, concluded that the relative amount of opsonins in the blood furnishes an indication of the defensive powers of the individual, and has established an "opsonic index." This is the ratio borne by the average number of bacteria per leukocyte in the patient's serum, to the number found per leukocyte in the same emulsion with a normal serum, the latter being taken as 1.0. To obtain a normal serum it is often well to "pool" the serum of half a dozen apparently healthy individuals.

In most infections the index is found to be less than 1.0. By carefully judged inoculations of dead microbes of the sort that cause the infection it is possible to bring up the index to more than 1.0, and this is frequently coincident with a marked improvement in the patient's condition. Excellent results have been obtained in many forms of infection by staphylococcus, in certain cases of infection by gonococcus and Bacillus coli, as well as of Bacillus tuberculosis. As time progresses, the value of the method seems to increase, but there is a growing tendency to employ larger amounts of the killed microbes and to lay less stress upon the technical observation of the index and more upon the signs of reaction as they are observed clinically.

Aggressins.—As the animal cell acted upon by bacteria produces antibodies, so the bacteria on their side are stimulated to produce reciprocal antibodies, and these have been named "aggressins."

This action will be understood better if a concrete example be given. If cholera spirilla be injected into the peritoneal cavity a local infection ensues; the inflammatory fluid containing the bacteria is removed and the bacteria taken out by centrifugalizing, and the few remaining organisms killed by sunlight, heat, or antiseptics; the resulting clear fluid has no toxic effect, and can be injected into another individual of the same species with impunity. If, however, along with it a less than fatal dose of the spirilla be injected, death shortly ensues. There is something in the inflammatory exudate (aggressin) that has paralyzed the protective agencies of the body. The presence of these aggressins explains why the exudate produced by the local growth of a given minimable has no opsonic power; the opsonins may be present but are heater lized. Finally, it may be suggested that the aggressins are to the bacterium what the opsonins are to the animal.

By taking these into account we explain the well-known phenomenon of "exaltation of virulence" by passage through a succession of animals. The virulence of an organism does not depend only upon the production of toxins; increase of virulence does not mean increased production of ectotoxins, for a filtered culture of a virulent strain of cholera or anthrax does not produce more symptoms than does that from an attenuated strain; but if the attenuated bacilli be injected there is phagocytosis, if the virulent, none. It appears as if the virulent bacilli excrete or discharge substances which are not toxins, but which have an inhibitive or "anti" action upon the body cells, substances which do not necessarily combine with the body cells to destroy them, but either neutralize the opsonins or directly repel the body cells, the repulsion being greater than the attraction exerted by other bacter al substances.

Anaphylaxis.—Anaphylaxis or allergy, is a phenomenon connected with the injurious effect that is occasionally wrought by serum—the so-called "serum sickness' and "serum death." From the early days of the employment of antidiphtheritic serum, there have been occasionally reported cases of death following suddenly the injection of the serum. Collapse, unconsciousness, and convulsions have occurred, death ensuing with startling suddenness. Less severe symptoms, the urticarial rash, with or without systemic symptoms of lack of well-being, and other milder manifestations following the use of serum, are familiar to all. These untoward effects are produced not by the toxins or antitoxins but by the serum, and it may be said, by the way, that the risk of these is the price mankind has to pay for the blessings

of serum therapy.

This sensitization appears at first to be opposed to our general ideas of immunity, but we have attempted to show that it is not necessarily so. As shown by Vaughan, the bacterial proteins can be split up into a poisonous and a non-poisonous portion; the same is true even of egg albumin, and its poisonous portion kills an experimental animal just as does the poison of a pathogenic bacterium. The same is true, also, of most vegetable proteins. One may sensitize an animal with

the poisonous portion, or with whole albumin, but not with the nonpoisonous portion, that is, the cell substance has affinity for the nonpoisonous part, and forms and discharges receptors suited to this non-poisonous part. Still referring to egg albumin for illustration, ten or twelve days later when the cells are habituated to the non-poisonous part, if we inject whole egg albumin, the cells with their excess of receptors attract the non-poisonous pertion of the serum to which they are accustomed and set free the poismous portion in the circulation, which acts upon the nervous system and produces death. The second dose must be large enough to supply a fatal dose of the poisonous part after splitting up. It seems, further, that the poisonous portion has a special affinity for certain cells, and it is this local, rather than general, action that explains the anaphylactic phenomena. In the guinea-pig, for example, as shown by Auer, the fatal result is due to direct influence upon the plain muscle fibres of the bronchi, causing a spastic contraction with arrested respiration. In other animals also it is plain muscular fibres that appear to be specially implicated. What is true of the egg albumin is true of the protein-containing horse serum, which forms the basis of the antitoxic sera of commerce.

This does not explain why a small dose sensitizes while a large one does not; and here we must go farther, and remind the reader of what is called the dissociation of ions; if a minute quantity of salt be put into a large quantity of water it is dissociated into its Na and its Cl ions, whereas, if a large quantity be used it remains as an NaCl molecule. Similarly, the minute dose of protein may be dissociated into its poisonous and non-poisonous parts, of which the former is in quantity too minute to produce any symptoms, and the cells are able to react only to the latter. If the preliminary dose be large, the dissociation does not occur, and the body cells become accustomed to the whole protein molecule; the poisonous action is thus expended upon the cells, where its effects are not so serious as when it is free in the circulation.

It may be recalled that in our chapter upon predisposition (p. 117), attention has been called to the similarity between certain cases of liosynerasy, asthma, hay fever, etc., and these anaphylactic phenomena.

THEORIES OF IMMUNITY

Everyone who is in the slightest degree familiar with medical literaare knows that the amount of material given out upon the subject of amunity in the last few years is mildly described by the word stuindous. It is evident that we can give as briefly as possible not an dication of the various arguments in favor of various theories, but ay a very brief explanation of a single practical one. We shall trend to outline a workable plan by which immunity can be undertood, based largely upon Ehrlich's views.

We have seen that all the substances that can induce the production

of antibodies (i. e., all antigens) are either cells or the products of cell activity, and that the antibodies, too, are the products of cell activity, and that one group is a kind of looking-glass reflection of the other. If we were bacteria we would regard the antibodies as toxins, and our own toxins as protective antibodies. Two living organisms, the animal and the microbe, are pitted against each other, and the increase of virulence of the latter may be the result of its developing anti-antitoxins (which, from the microbe's point of view, are simple antitoxins), corresponding to the development of antitoxins by the animal and tending to neutralize them. The problems of immunity narrow themselves down to special problems bearing upon the assimilation or digestion of unusual or foreign proteid matter, the products of cell metabolism.

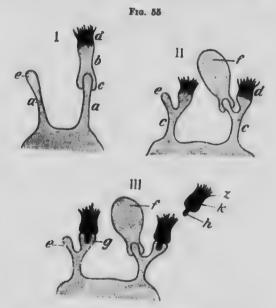
We have given the basis of Ehrlich's theory referring to simple toxins, but when we reach the cytolysins we are met by a new phenomenon in which there is not simple union of the molecule of the cell and the toxin or the complement, but where this is brought about by the intervention of an intermediate body or amboceptor. We may here recapitulate the various forms of antigens and antibodies with which we have dealt:—

Ensymes	.leading	to the	production of	Antienzymes	}
Phytotoxins .		84	44	Anti (phyto) toxin,	
Bacterial ectotoxins		**	4.5	Antitoxins	
Proteins animal vegetable			11	Precipitins	
(vegetable)				a recipiting	
Bacterial proteins (?)		**	4.0	Agglutinins	Acting singly.
Bacterial aggressins (?)		* *	8.6	Opeonins	
Animal venoms (simple)		11	**	Antivenins	
Animal venoms (complex, requiris	IK			A 455 1 . 7	
intermediation of complement for action)	1	*		Antihemolysins, etc.	
Vegetable cells (bacteria)		**	**	Bacteriolysins	Requiring in-
Animal cells of various orders .		**	4.6	Cytolyaina	teraction of
				Hemolysins	1 amboceptor
				Leukotoxins	(specific),
				Hepatolysins, etc.	2 complement
					(non-specific)

Reviewing this table, one notes that there is a progression from a simple structure of the absorbed body to a very complex one. According to the nature of the body to be absorbed, the binding apparatus must differ. To tie a simple substance to the biophoric molecule we may presume that a single, simple side-chain is enough. When, however, we come to the giant molecule of a protein, this will not be enough. Giant molecules, as such, are useless for the cell, and must be broken up, dissociated, by fermentative processes. This could be if the "seizing arm" were of a nature complex enough to seize the molecule and to bring into contact with it the requisite ferment; to borrow an example from the vegetable world, the tentacles of the Drosera seize the object, and cover it with a juice that is digestive. Such a complex side-chain we can predicate in the case where the body to be "lysed" consists of

complex proteins, such as we find in bacteria, in blood corpuscles, or in cells. If there be such a complex side-chain, the process of immunization will cause a reproduction of such side-chains, and the side-chain with its complexities will be elaborated and cast off as a complete whole—as an immune body.

Ehrlich's Three Orders of Receptors.—Following up this idea, Ehrlich supposes that there are three orders of receptors for food or toxin molecules. (1) The simple toxin (I, b) is anchored by a receptor (I, a) of the first order, that receptor being a side-chain with a haptophore e to which the toxin molecule becomes coupled by its haptophore c. (2) For protein molecules, a different order must be imagined. The side-chain must have an arm for seizing (II, e) and one (II, d) for



The three orders of side-chains, according to Ehrlich.

supplying the ferment by which the molecule must be dissociated, that is, a haptophore and a symophore (or ferment-carrying portion). This kind of receptor is figured in Fig. 55, II, in which e is the haptophore, d the zymophore; as soon as coupling occurs, the zymophore is free to exert its ferment effect upon the body seized. It will be seen that the toxin molecule in Fig. 55, I, is the counterpart of the attached receptor of Fig. 55, II. (3) For the yet more complicated case of an interaction between the biophoric molecule and a foreign cell, we must presuppose a complex receptor as in Fig. 55, III. The receptor must be capable of attaching the cell to be acted upon (f) and the complement (k); the complement is figured as possessing a haptophoric part le, and a zymophoric part (z), which latter corresponds to the toxo-

phoric part of the toxin molecule. When both these are fixed to the original cell, the communication between the zymophoric part and the two cells permits the enzyme action upon the attached cell (f) to begin. When the cell receptors are produced in excess and discharged, they have the same powers of attachment as when fixed to the biophoric molecule and when free are termed by Ehrlich haptines. Haptines are thus of three orders, those with a single haptophore, such as antitoxins and anti-enzymes; those with a haptophore and a zymophore group, the agglutinins and the precipitins, and lastly, those with two haptophores, which are the amboceptors or immune bodies proper, and constitute the cytolysins and bacteriolysins.

There is a word of warning to be given to the beginner in interpreting the diagrams which we have reproduced. We are not sure that the toxin molecule becomes anchored on to the biophoric molecule and so becomes a part of it. The interaction of toxin on haptine is direct: the toxin acts upon the biophoric molecule in a way that is less direct; we differ from Ehrlich in not regarding it as becoming firmly attached to the biophoric molecule, but as dissociating, by its affinity, the receptor, the toxin and receptor becoming temporarily a free unit, and imagine that thereby the condition of unsatisfaction, in which the biophoric molecule is left, leads to the formation of a new

side-chain or recentor.

When we consider the processes by which bacteria are destroyed, and their cell products neutralized we realize that these are but special examples of assimilation and digestion. The process by which an ingested microbe is dissolved in the vacuole of the leukocyte, or a bacterium melted in the body fluids is probably brought about by a procedure of the same order as when fibrin is digested in the gastric juice.1 In no part of the whole subject can we neglect the importance of enzyme We readily admit-nay, we cite—the different grades of enzyme action with which we are familiar; how ptyalin acts directly on carch, and enterokinase requires the mediation of trypsinogen. We think, in short, that toxins and cytolysins are of enzyme nature. Indicating the similarity between toxins and enzymes, we have antitoxins and anti-enzymes, we have natural and experimentally acquired anti-enzymes just as we have actual and experimentally acquired antitoxins, we have evidence that a minimal amount of enzyme may convert a maximum amount of the substance acted on, and a minimal amount of toxin cause dissociation of the cell substance, even unto death, or that, under favorable circumstances either process may be arrested; we see, too, that the action of both is arrested by the products of dissociation; both work with chemical exactitude, so much enzyme neutralizes so much anti-enzyme, and so much toxin so much antitoxin.

Or perhaps, more accurately, in the pancreatic juice, for such digestion is lytic and we now recognize that for the activation of the trypsinogen a second body is necessary. Trypsinogen is inert save in the presence of enterokinase, which may be regarded as the complement, the trypsinogen as amboceptor,

We do not know the structure of enzymes or of toxins, and we must, therefore, express the process by symbols as Ehrlich has done. If we are speaking of enzymes, the enzyme molecule (corresponding to the toxin molecule of our previous illustrations) has a haptophoric (coupling) part, and a zymophoric part, and instead of the cell body we have this time the substance to be fermented (the fermentescible substance). Now let us digress to the consideration of the chemistry of fermentation; for example, dextrose gives rise to glucose thus:

$$C_{12}H_{22}O_{11} + E + H_2O = C_6H_{12}O_6 + C_6H_{12}O_6 + E$$

One molecule of dextrose $+ H_2O =$ two molecules of glucose. In the presence of enzyme (E) hydrolysis occurs.

The molecule of dextrose cannot be split into two equal parts, but divides unequally, thus:

$$C_{12}H_{22}O_{11} \ = \ \left\{ \begin{array}{l} C_6H_{11}O_6 \\ C_6H_{11}O_6 \end{array} \right.$$

and the hydrolysis gives us a free basic HO ion, and a free acid H ion. The next step is that we expand our last formula thus:

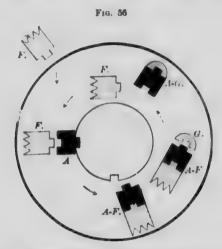
$$C_{12}H_{22}O_{11} + H_{2}O = \begin{cases} C_{6}H_{11}O_{6} + OH = C_{6}H_{12}O_{6}. \\ C_{6}H_{11}O_{6} + H = C_{6}H_{12}O_{6}. \end{cases}$$

The dextrose molecule splits into two parts, one of which has positive, the other negative affinities, and when these are separated one attracts a basic ion, the other an acid ion. Our conception is that the enzyme which thus splits up the molecule into a basic and an acid part, must itself be acid or basic; thus, if acid it detaches the basic complex $C_6H_{11}O_6$, but the hydrolysis has left free an H ion, which now exerts a greater attraction for the $C_6H_{11}O_6$ than does the cazyme; the two combine, and the enzyme is set free to break up another molecule of the dextrose. We have indicated this graphically in Fig. 56, the term recipient indicating the substance (in this example G) which has affinity for the broken-off molecule, greater than has the ferment.

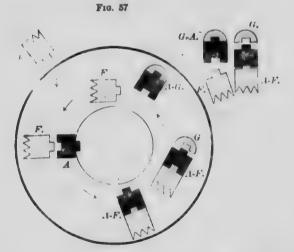
In more complicated enzyme action such as occurs in the proteinplitting digestion of trypsin, the enzyme is a compound of kinase and trypsinogen; the latter has a suitable haptophore group, but its zymophore group is unable by itself to split the protein molecule and requires the assistance of the kinase.

When we liken the action of enzyme to that of toxin, we recognize that there is a frequent source of confusion in the conception on the part of the worker that enzyme action results ordinarily in the production of substances which are certainly not anti-enzymes, and there appears at first sight to be no similar action on the part of toxin molecules. These, we are apt to imagine, produce only antitoxins. This, however, is a mistaken idea. The process of junction between toxin and antitoxin is associative and self-limiting, and there is an identical process occurring between enzyme and anti-enzyme. What we wish

especially to point out is that, corresponding to the process manifesting itself between ferment and fermentescible substance which is dissociative and recurrent, there is, we hold, an exactly parallel dissociative



Simple ensyme action: F, the ensyme molecule, has affinity for and detaches A, a side-chain of a protein molecule, forming a temporary combination with it. When A-F is free the recipient G has a greater affinity for the side-chain moiety A-F and combines with it, the ensyme molecule F becoming detached and ready to dissociate a second similar side-chain.



Schema of toxin-antitoxin action: G-A (the side-chain A combined with the recipient G, as in Fig. 56, when discharged from the cell into the surrounding fluid as an antitoxin molecule, is dissociated by the ensume or toxin molecule F, which thus joining with A becomes neutralized.

and recurrent process occurring between the toxin and the biophoric molecule. The one essential difference is that the enzyme may mani-

fest this dissociative activity outside the cell, the toxin can manifest a only within the cell and in association with living matter.

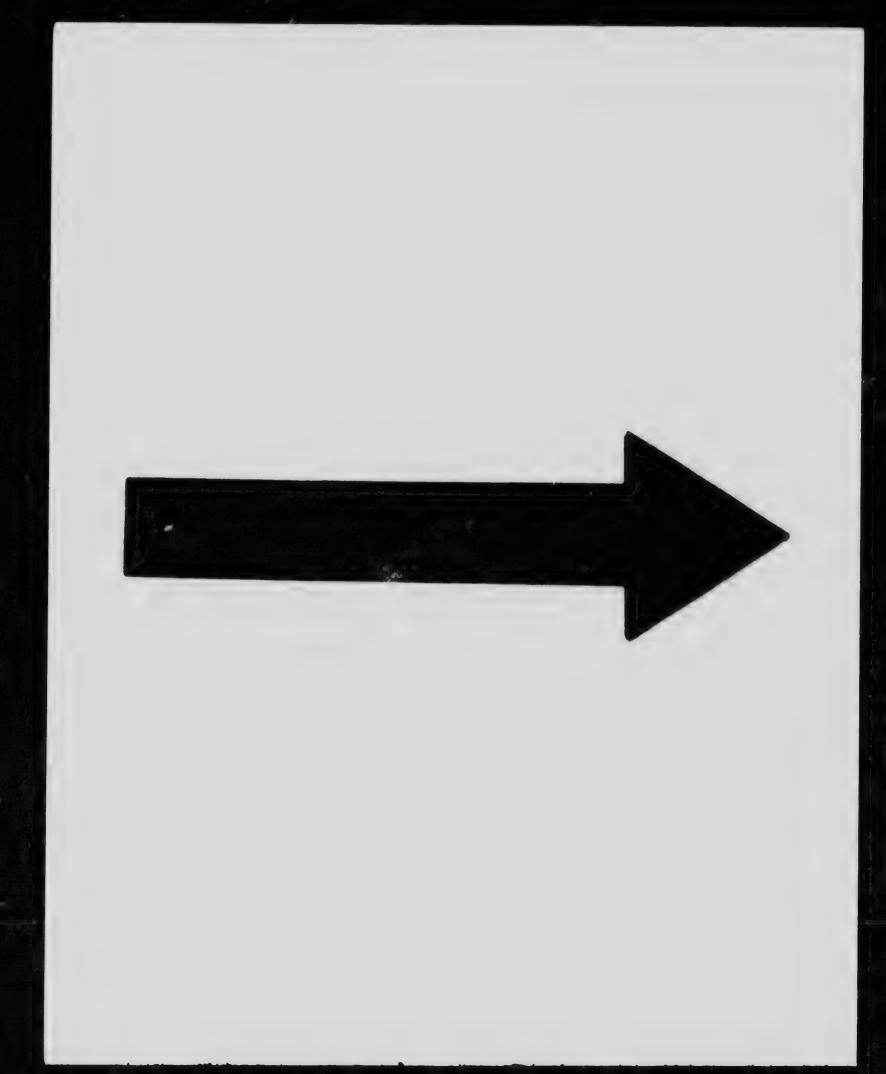
It is when the enzyme acts upon the living cell that anti-enzymes are produced, just as antitoxins are developed under like circumstances. And to explain the relationship between the fermentescible or dissociative and the antibody or sociative activities of both orders of substances, we suggest an addition to Professor Ehrlich's conception of side chain activities. In toxins and antibodies he takes no note of the group of junction with the biophoric molecule; when dissociated, there must be here in the side-chain complex (which in our diagram, Fig. 57, is solid black) a satisfiable affinity. If now we picture the toxin molecule, not as becoming attached to the biophoric molecule by one of the side-chains of the same, but as detaching the side-chain, we can solve the difficulty; that is, we can regard the toxin as acting like an enzyme, detaching the side-chain, giving it up to the stronger affinity of the recipient G, and being free to detach another side-chain. This side-chain plus recipient is the antitoxin (Fig. 57).

In the cell this antitoxin cannot act because the toxin has affinities for the similar side-chains of the biophoric molecule still adherent, unless the point is reached at which equilibrium occurs by the accumulation of the products of the enzyme action and by the overproduction and discharge of side-chains of the particular order into the paraplasm. But when the excess of side-chains plus recipient is discharged into the blood stream, then circulating toxins, not having the greater attraction of the intracellular molecules, are free to join them and be neutralized.

In this consideration of the subject, we have called in no external factor save the "recipient," some simple but active ion present in all solutions in which the enzyme or toxin is able to act.

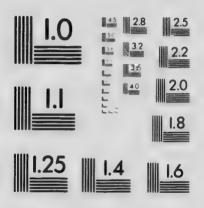
SYNCOPE, SHOCK, AND COLLAPSE

Syncope or fainting is the state in which the face suddenly becomes blanched, the pulse small, rapid, and at times imperceptible; a brief giddiness or a moment of mental helplessness is followed by unconsciousness, the individual falling "as a sail falls the mast being broken." This arises in various ways: by the sudden assuming of the erect from the supine position, by the emptying of a full bladder (with probably a mechanical filling of abdominal vessels), or by strong stimulation of asory nerves, in other words, pain. Unconsciousness is usually brief, again, syncope may be purely of emotional origin; many medical tudents will recall cases of syncope occurring among their own number at sight of some operation, especially if the surgical procedure be one that is undertaken without an anesthetic; the ready mind of the sympaticatic one attributes to himself all the sensations (and more) undergone by the patient. Personal memory recalls vividly a football match, with the scattered falling, like pole-axed steers, of nearly half a score



MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)





of undergraduate onlookers, consequent upon the loud, sharp snap of

a l g bone of one of the players.

Shock and Collapse are obviously more severe conditions. First, there is the emotional shock that may produce death. The case is cited of a mock trial conducted by some students of a Scottish University upon an obnoxious janitor; he was led to the block, struck on the neck with a wet towel, and picked up dead. In less extreme cases, recovery may take days or weeks, instead of minutes as in syncope. There is blanching, with a weak, feeble pulse; the eyes become sunken, the cheek bones prominent; the muscles are lax; the breathing is irregular, the temperature lowered. Retching and vomiting are frequent; the patient lies limp and regardless of his surroundings, but not unconscious; upon being aroused, the answers given by the patient may be slow, as if brought from a distance, difficult to obtain, but they are rational; volition is largely abolished and there is extreme general depression of all bodily function. Shock and collapse occur in the following circumstances:

1. After operation, or wounds associated with injuries to nerves. These may be (a) peripheral, in which the terminations are affected as in the shock after burns, after a sharp blow upon the testicle, exposure or irritation of the peritoneum, or of the periosteum; (b) in continuity, as after severance of a large nerve such as the sciatic; (c) central, as after operations upon or removal of brain substance. Pain in all these is not an essential; shock may occur even if the procedure has been conducted under anesthesia sufficient to abolish sensation.

2. Pain or fight, without gross injury to peripheral nerves.

3. Severe hemorrhage, either external or internal.

4. Loss of fluid, as in persistent vomiting or excessive diarrhea. We are apt to count the two latter as collapse, the others as shock.

In syncope, shock, and collapse, there is a combination of cardiovascular disturbance with grave arrest of cerebral activity. The primary vascular disturbance is sometimes easily understood. The vessels of the splanchnic area, or even of the liver, are capable of holding all the blood, but they do not ordinarily do so because of the tone of the abdominal walls, compressing the viscera, and the tone of the vessel walls, by which arteries and veins are in a state of partial contraction. If from any cause there is rapid dilatation of the abdominal veins, the blood in the upper half of the body may gravitate there in increased amount, with corresponding anemia of the brain. One can even produce unconsciousness by compression of both carotid arteries. This abdominal vasodilatation may be caused by a blow upon the abdomen, which produces inhibition of the splanchnic vasoconstrictor influences, whereby the abdominal veins become dilated, or stimulation of the cardiac inhibitory centre (vagus) whereby the heart beat is arrested. One or both of these influences may be at work to constitute the effect of the "solar plexus blow," known to the prize ring. Where by any of these means there is produced merely a temporary cerebral anemia, we have the condition of syncope.

PAIN 179

When an attempt is made to define the condition of shock, it must be remembered that depression or cessation of function is a prominent feature. This seems to apply to the individual cell; for it has been noted that drugs like alcohol, ether, and strychnine, administered during shock, are inert, although they diffuse perfectly; yet with recovery of the cells, the physiological effect has been seen to assert itself, indicating that the actual metabolism of the cell was, for the time, suspended. It has been observed, too, that in shock the specific gravity of the blood falls, and that of the tissues rises, indicating a passage of tissue juices to the blood, which accounts for the rapid production of the "sunken" appearance of the eyes and the prominence of the cheek bones. Precisely the same relationship between the blood and the tissues has been found to occur in cases of large, rapidly produced hemorrhage. If a clinical distinction is to be made between shock and collapse, it is that in shock we regard the nervous disturbance as initiating the circulatory depression, and that in collapse we consider the depression as being caused by the continued cerebral anemia.

Acapnia.—Yandell Henderson ascribes the sequence of changes in the blood pressure, the filling of the splanchnic veins, 'he rapid and weakened heart action seen in shock, not to primary vasomotor influences, but to acapnia, or the effects of diminished carbon dioxide in the blood. Exposure of the viscera and the mere aëration of the abdominal cavity by this means is accompanied by exhalation of carbon dioxide, and affords the anatomical and clinical picture of shock. If the exposed viscera be bathed with salt solution saturated with carbon dioxide, the condition is arrested. This may well explain certain cases of surgical shock, and, indeed, applying these views, supervention of shock has been prevented by individual surgeons. We doubt, however, whether acapnia and shock are identical and whether this diminution of carbon dioxide is to be encountered in all cases. The rapid oncome of the condition in some cases is evidently a reflex act, and a general inhibition of the activity of the higher herve centres must, in these cases at least, precede any change in the carbon dioxide content of the blood.

It deserves to be noted that it has been determined practically that in the course of surgical operations the exhibition of carbon dioxide arrests the development of shock, even more surely than does Crile's elementation of the old method of compressing the extremities and successors as to bring about filling of the more central vessels. There is that of any evidence that in shock the arteries undergo dilatation.

ļ

1

1.

PAIN

rts and expresses them by crying; equally the tissues have no of expressing to the individual that something is wrong, save presence of the sensation that need not be defined because

universally experienced—pain. Paradoxical as it seems, pain cannot exist in the tissues; a pain in the foot is a disturbance of those nerve cells in the brain whose function is to receive stimuli conveyed to them

by the afferent nerves from the region.

In this connection we mue, recognize two orders of tissues, irritation of either of which may set up the sensation of pain, but in the one this process is accurately localized, while in the other the sensation is localized by the brain as originating in some other area or areas. Of the former may be mentioned the skin, the mucous membrane of the mouth and pharynx, the skeletal muscles, the periosteum, and the tunic vaginalis of the testis; of the latter, all the viscera, with the exception of the testis, or more accurately, of its serous coat. This may seem to be a sweeping and unfounded statement and one contrary to personal experience, but as a matter of fact, the individual viscera may be handled with impunity and even be cut in the unanesthetized individual without any sensation being induced. In such organs there are no sensory nerves for pain, no direct paths whereby the consciousness is informed of disturbance in those particular viscera. Stating this, we do not mean to indicate that pain may not originate from the viscera; every schoolboy knows a stomach-ache as a very real thing, and undoubtedly a dull heavy pain follows pressure or serious traction upon these viscera, though here again we are unable to localize the pain in any particular area. At most we have an obscure localization of something wrong inside. When, for example, the œsophagus or stomach, or the colon is overdistended, there may be painful sensations behind the sternum, in the upper or lower abdominal areas respectively.

If we analyze the pain associated with disturbances of the internal viscera, we encounter some points of remarkable interest. Take for example, the organ just noted—the stomach. An ulcer or other acute lesion of this viscus is found to afford a pain which, if the patient be asked to localize it, is situated in the abdominal wall in the epigastric region. We may even observe that if the lesion be in the cardiac part of the stomach, the pain is in the upper part of this region, if toward the pylorus in the lower, and this irrespective of the fact that the cardiae and pyloric regions lie somewhat transversely, rather than vertically one above the other. In addition, the patient endeavors, and if he be at all stout, endeavors in vain, to touch an area in the dorsal region between and rather below the shoulder blades; more accurately on either side of the seventh and eighth dorsal vertebræ. With the heart, as, for example, in angina pectoris where the pain is extreme, it is noteworthy that it is complained of as existing, not in the organ itself but over it. There is frequently felt a o a sense of extreme constriction along the line of the second rib, and with this, further, a pain extending down the inner side of the left or occasionally the right arm, or both, most often as far as the elbow, and occasionally

as far as the little finger and the ulnar side of the ring finger.

PAIN

181

It is to English-speaking observers more particularly that we owe the study and elucidation of these so-called referred pains. Hilton, in his well-known lectures on "Rest and Pain," published in 1863, had a very clear realization of their existence; their full study, however, we owe to James Ross, Dana, James Mackenzie, Head, and Hertz.

e

1

e

f e e e is y a d

e

3-

g

e

g,

n

ne or a-

al or te pe ic rt rd he in

S,

he

re

æ.

is

in

Of

18,

ly ly

F1g. 58



Representation of primitive vertebral animal—the amphioxus—divided for convenience into three segments for the head, seven for the neck, twelve for the dorsal, nine for the lumbosacral region, and an indefinite number for the coccygeal region: SPD, the superior primary divisions of the nerves supplying the surface over the neural canal; IPDd, the dorsal trunks of the inferior primary division supplying the lateral surface of the body, and IPDv, the ventral trunk of the inferior primary division supplying the ventral surface. The parts supplied by the dorsal trunks of the inferior division are alone lined. (Ross.)

Fig. 59

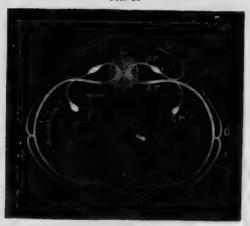


Diagram showing constitution of a spinal nerve: C, spinal cord; Pr, ar, posterior gangliated and according root of nerve respectively; SPD, superior primary division; IPD, inferior primary division; d, v, the dorsal and ventral branches respectively; Sr, sympathetic (gangliated) root. (Ross.)

Each segment of the body has in the earliest vertebrate types, e. g., amphioxus, its segmental nerves, and marked as has been the evolution of the nervous system of the higher vertebrates this segmental arrangement still persists, the segments being composed of the neurones of the posterior ganglia (sensory), the neurones of the anterior horns theory), and the neurones of the sympathetic system. Each segment of the body has thus its system of sensory, motor, and sympathetic

nerves, these latter being of both orders, sensory and motor. In the process of development the various groups of nerves come to lie in different planes, the sympathetic motor neurones, for example, becoming grouped into ganglia, some of which, e. g., the cervical, represent the fusion of the neurones of several segments. So also the superficial sensory nerves do not necessarily lie in the same plane as do the muscles supplied by the motor nerves of the same segment; every schoolboy should know, although he may not have analyzed the fact, that the region of the buttocks is supplied he sensory nerves originating from a singularly large number of spinal segments; while as regards the internal viscera such as the heart, stomach, and intestines, these with their associated nerves come to lie widely remote from their original segmental position, both actually and relatively. Thus to explain the instances given, the stomach is innervated from the level of the seventh, eighth, and ninth dorsal; this region also affords the sensory nerves which on the posterior aspect of the body supply the lower dorsal region between the shoulders and in front innervate the abdominal wall of the epigastric area, the anterior muscular branches innervating the corresponding intercostal spaces.

The sympathetic nerves of the heart are relatively abundant and vary for the different regions; thus the auricles are innervated from the fifth to eighth dorsal segments, the ventricles from the second to fifth dorsal, the ascending arch of the aorta from the third and fourth cervical, and the first, second, and third dorsal. The referred pains vary according to the part involved, and it appears also that if the right heart be involved they show themselves on the right side of the body, if the left heart, then on the left. The referred pains in angina pectoris are most frequently along the superficial area of innervation of the ventricles, notably along the superficial sensory area belonging to the second dorsal, extending also when severe into the first dorsal segment. We are accustomed to regard the auricles as the beginning of the cardiac region, and so would expect that they should be innervated from the higher, the aorta from lower segments. If, however, we study the development of the heart we find that this begins as a simple tube which becomes bent upon itself in an S-shaped manner; it is the inferior or "caudad" portion of this tube that gives rise to the eventual auricles, the superior or "cephalad" that becomes the first part of the aorta.

What happens, therefore, in those cases where pain is experienced, is that stimuli proceeding from these internal viscera to the neurones of a particular level of the cord, do not extend thence directly to the cerebral cortex; no mechanism exists for this direct communication; but where the stimulus is above a certain grade there is an irradiation or expansion of the stimulus to other neighboring neurones which do possess this communication with the optic thalamus, and as a consequence, the brain localizes the seat of disturbance, not in the viscus originally disturbed, but in the areas innervated by these neighboring neurones. It deserves note that painful sensations have their seat, not as might

be expected in the cortex of the hemispheres, but in the thalamus. The cortex may be cut into without giving rise to any sensation; irritation of the thalamus of one side leads to pains referred to the other side of the body, its destruction to anesthesia of that other side.

In the

becompresent

perficial

muscles hoolboy

that the

from a

internal

th their

gmental estances

eighth, which

l region

wall of

ing the

rom the

to fifth

cervical,

accordheart be

, if the

toris are

to the

egment.
of the

ted from

udy the

ple tube

inferior

auricles,

e aorta.

erienced,

neurones

y to the nication;

adiation

hich do

a conse-

s origin-

eurones.

as might

This, however, is not everything. If long continued, this segmental irradiation induces a condition of heightened irritability in these neighboring neurones, the result of which is that minimal stimuli reaching them have maximal effects, so that the areas supplied by their sensory branches become hyperesthetic; and the irradiation affects the neurones also of segments above and below, and thus not merely is the sense of pain localized in these other areas, but these other areas become the seat of actual hyperesthesia, so that now a stimulation of these areas, as by pricking or pressure or traction, gives the sensatior of acute pain. More than this, as has been pointed out in the discussion of inflammation, there may be a general vascular disturbance of such an area, giving a so-called sympathetic inflammation. Further, as we have already indicated, the area of cutaneous supply does not correspond absolutely with the segmental innervation of the underlying muscles. In the first place we may recognize with Mackenzie, a superficial and a deep cutaneous hyperesthesia, possibly corresponding to the differing distribution of the tactile and painful senses, of which the latter at times is found present without the former (although it seems that when superficial hyperesthesia is elicited, the deep is always present), and in addition a yet deeper muscular hyperesthesia. To give an example, where there is enlargement of the liver, the commonest pain felt is over this organ, and inasmuch as this is markedly increased by pressure, the ordinary impression is that this is an actual splanchnic or visceral pain. If, however, the area be mapped out over. which pressure causes pain, it will be found to extend considerably below the edge of the liver, and if the abdominal wall be picked up over this rea the muscle is exquisitely painful. There is here not a superficirl out a deep muscular hyperesthesia of the abdominal wall.

We have here but touched upon the outlines of the subject, but feel that both for comprehension of disease and as an aid in diagnosis this study of painful areas is of the very first importance, even if hitherto it has not been discussed in any text-book of general pathology known to us. We would conclude by giving an indication of a few important areas of referred pain without exact anatomical description. The "stitch" of pleurisy is not due to the presence of sensory nerves on the pleural surface—experiment shows that the pleuræ are insensitive—but it is due, according to Mackenzie, to spasm of the intercostal muscles: it is thus a referred muscular pain. None of the serous surfaces have sensory nerves proper, with the exception of the tunica vaginalis testis. As the testis descends into the inguinal canal, it carries before it certain elements of the abdominal wall, the cremasteric muscle, etc., and along with these the genital branch of the genito-crural nerve. In

From which it follows that in cases of obscure visceral disturbance the mapping out of hyperesthetic zones is of prime diagnostic importance.

those having a long cord it as asy to determine that pressure upon the testis causes immediately acute pain localized in, or more accurately upon the testis, and following upon this a referred pain is felt in the groin. So also the lower end of the ureter is innervated by the genito-crural nerve, and, per contra, with arrest of a stone in the verter there is a referred pain in the testis. We have said that the other serous membranes are insensitive; this statement is made with a full recognition of the fact that traction upon the peritoneum in the unanesthetized person may be attended by pain; but this pain, again, is not accurately localized but is referred. We may lay down that traction upon or injury to the stomach is referred to the epigastric portion of the abdominal wall, of the small intestir to the umbilical area, of the large intestine to the hypogastric area . 'he localization of appendical disturbance is well known to be me en felt at what is known as "McBurney's point." Irritation of the madder, as in vesical calculus, is characterized by pain felt in the urethra, especially at the extremity of the penis, by reason of their common innervation by the third sacral nerve. The rigidity which is observed in the abdominal wall accompanying intestinal lesions, is another manifestation of the "visceromuscular" reflex. Deeks has recently called attention to the existence of a doughy inelastic skin over the abdominal wall in almost every chronic inflammatory lesion of the abdominal viscera.

Finally, the brain itself is devoid of sensation; headache is not pain of the brain, but, as will be recognized upon consideration, is a superficial phenomenon, due to irritation to one or other of the cranial nerves, or in the case of occipital headache, of the spinal accessory and second cervical nerves. The brow-ache experienced after an ice has been eaten in haste is due to the fact that the sensory nucleus of the fifth nerve has been stimulated by irradiation, the afferent nerves of the cesophagus being in the main vagal, and the vagus nucleus being situated

close to that of the trigeminal.

In short, to quote James Mackenzie, "the sensation of pain from whatever source the stimulation arises, is referred to the peripheral distribution of sensory nerves in the external body wall." This source may be (1) in the brain itself, as, for example, where an epileptic attack, due to cerebral irritation begins with pain in the distant part (aura); (2) in the cord, e. g., the girdle pains of tabes dorsalis; (3) in the posterior root ganglia, e. g., the pain of herpes zoster; (4) in the viscera, of which numerous examples have been quoted, or (5) in the external body wall and skeletal muscles, where only (with the exceptions noted) the pain informs us of the actual seat of the disturbance.

Finally, while speaking thus broadly of pain it must be kept well in mind that there are various and distinct orders of sensory nerves, disturbance of any one order of which gives rise to the sensation of pain, namely, nerves for the tactile sense, for the muscular sense, for heat, for cold, not to mention yet other orders the existence of which

is evidenced by the researches of Head and Mackenzie.

CHAPTER IV

e upon urately felt in by the ureter cother

a full he un-

gain, is t trac-

ortion rea, of

appen-

known

lculus,

remity

sacral

ccom-

iscero-

stence

every

t pain

super-

erves,

econd

been

e fifth

of the

uated

from

oheral

ource

ttack,

(2)

terior

ra, of

body

l) the

well

erves.

on of

e, for

which

PROGRESSIVE TISSUE CHANGES

GENERAL CONSIDERATION OF TISSUE CHANGES

HAVING considered morbid changes from the standpoint of the irritant, it becomes necessary to view them with reference to the alterations produced in the tissues. Looking at the individual cell, we see that the factors determining its health or normality are: (1) the nutrition of the cell, and (2) its functioning or activity, and these two are intimately dependent upon one another. The process of nutrition is an active one; only that food which is of the proper quality tends to be assimilated, and assimilation is needful before the nutrition can occur. Function is necessary as well; the more active the function, within limits, the more active the absorption of new material, and the less the function the less the demand for assimilation. The two factors, food and function are seen to be inextricably bound to one another.

Although the subject has been previously discussed, there are certain general principles to be remembered, which are here recapitulated; that inadequate nutrition or lack of exercise of function may lead to inanition and shrinkage until arrest of function or even death ensues; that excessive activity may so rapidly use up the cell that assimilation pace and death may ensue; that so perfect a balance may between assimilation and disintegration by activity that any for a long time remain in health, unaltered; that stimulation and activity even above the normal, if accompanied by adequate nutrition may lead to growth, and equilibrium be once more reached, this time on a higher level, just as a mercantile business increases the scale on which it works without loss of efficiency; that there is a relation between cell mass and cell surface, and nuclear mass and nuclear surface, so that increase becomes self-inhibitory unless cellular and nuclear proliferation occur; that growth and function are opposed processes, which can occur simultaneously only within narrow limits; that specialization of the cell for and through the performance of function limits growth and proliferative capacity; that the highly developed cell does not proliferate, and that the active vegetative cells of the organism are those that have never been highly differentiated, or if they have been differentiated, have reverted to the undifferentiated type.

If we pass from physiological to pathological growth or overgrowth, arises at once the question as to the cause of that growth. Some think that such growth originates wholly in the cell, and that an effective

stimulus to growth outside the cell does not exist, a point of view which we cannot share. It seems likely that growth depends somewhat upon tension of sucrounding cells, or better that growth is restrained by the effect of surrounding cells, but it appears that this cannot be all, for, more powerful than the restraining effect of the surrounding cells, an external stimulus may arise that is powerful enough to more than neutralize these influences.

We find that there is a considerable number of circumstances or combinations of circumstances that may lead, on the one hand, to cell overgrowth, or, on the other, to cell shrinkage and degeneration.

Thus overgrowth may arise from:

- Normal activity with increased nutrition.
 Increased activity with increased nutrition.
- 3. Reduction in the external forces inhibiting cell growth, i. e., diminished tissue tension.

These changes in tissue we call **progressive**. Shrinkage and degeneration may arise from:

1. Normal activity with reduced nutrition.

- 2. Normal activity with perverted nutrition, the food material being of the wrong kind.
- 3. Increased stimulation or overstimulation and activity with relatively insufficient nutrition.

4. Arrest of function.

5. Increase in the external forces, arresting growth.

These changes are regressive.

But these classes do not cover all cases. It will be remembered that there is a group of cases in which the changes are not so evident in the protoplasm as in the paraplasm (a single example is the so-called fatty degeneration), and since these changes are either due to or lead to regressive changes in the protoplasm, they are included among the regressive changes. On the other hand, there is the important series of the neoplasms in which one cannot state what is the primary cause of the excessive overgrowth; these are naturally included among the progressive changes.

OVERGROWTH

Overgrowth of a tissue in which the individual elements preserve their physiological relationships and functions may be shown by an increase in size of the individual element—hypertrophy—or by an increase in number—hyperplasia—or by both together. Pseudohypertrophy is something entirely distinct; here exists an actual atrophy of the individual elements, with replacement in excess by another tissue

¹ Some prefer to call these simple and numerical hyperplasia respectively, which is more accurate but less widely used.

(Fig. 60). In the so-called "pseudohypertrophic paralysis," the increase in size of the muscle is due to an excessive interstitial development of fat cells, while the muscle fibres are degenerated, and diminished in size and in number. It must be understood that hypertrophy and hyperplasia should be referred to only in connection with the specific elements of the organ concerned—the liver cells in the liver, the muscle cell in the muscle (anatomically defined) and so on. Hypertrophy, itself, is a misleading term, etymologically it means "overnutrition,"

but scientifically it means nothing of the sort; the term is so widely used in its generally accepted sense that it would be inadvisable for us to employ it otherwise.

Kinds of Overgrowth. - 1. Physiological Hypertrophy.—The type of this is the pregnant uterus, which enlarges by hypertrophy and hyperplasia. The total size in cubic content, of the hypertrophied muscle, is many times in excess of the normal; a great increase in blood supply also occurs, and muscular contraction begins from an early period of pregnancy. Increased nutrition cannot be said to be the chief cause of this overgrowth, because the presence of a fibroid in the uterus for example, unaccompanied by any marked increase in vascularity, may be associated with great hypertrophy. The excessive development of muscles by exercise, as in the blacksmith's arm, is certainly due partly to activity, but with increased nutrition, because a muscle during exe-

Fig. 60

Longitudinal section through muscle of calf of leg in pseudohype-trophic paralysis. The muscle fibres exhibit atrophy; the increase in bulk is due to the excessive development of fat cells. (Orth.)

cise obtains an increased circulation through it. Muscle is not the only tissue that undergoes growth as a result of increased function (plus nutrition), because the bone shows like capacity, becoming thickened, in those of active athletic habits, along the illess and over the tuberosities where muscles are attached, the increased stress inducing increased growth.

2. Adaptive Hyper phy.—Largely the result of functional activity, are the hypertrophies of hollow viscera following upon an obstruction to outflow. Such are the overgrowths of the heart or bladder in which, just as in the uterus, the fibres become larger than normal; the normal heart weight is 250 to 300 grams, and the hypertrophied heart has been known to reach nearly 2000 grams in weight. The overgrowth occurs relatively more readily in a young person than in an elderly one. A parallel case is the hypertrophy of the media of an artery where there

, i. e.,

which

newhat

trained

not be

unding

o more

ices or

to cell

naterial v with

mbered evident the sodue to neluded portant primary among

oreserve n by an r by an dohyperophy of er tissue

ly, which

is an habitually heightened blood pressure, in which case the increased work is of the nature of stress. This adaptive hypertrophy is sometimes called compensatory, a term which ought to be restricted to the

form of overgrowth with which we are about to deal.

3. Compensatory Overgrowth.—This is overgrowth to make up for loss of tissue, as where one of a pair of organs is removed or destroyed; the other may grow to the size of the original pair. It may be stated that in all the paired organs of the body, one is capable of doing the work of both, and in performing it, hypertrophy ensues, but the statement ought to be modified slightly, because the perfection of the compensation and its extent vary with the age of the tissues, the younger they are the more complete being the compensation. At this point, it is of service to point out wherein these cases are examples of true overgrowth, and not of regeneration; in a case such as that in which a part of the kidney is removed, there is not a new formation of units, e. g., tubules, but a growth in length, size, and the number of their cells in those that have remained undestroyed. Similarly, the hypertrophying liver does not produce new lobules, but only new cells. It might be said that the production of new cells is itself a regeneration, strictly speaking, but we think it needful to apply the term only to those examples in which a cell complex is budded off from an already existent mass of cells.

4. Vicarious Overgrowth.—This is the condition in which one organ fails through disease or destruction, and organs of another order, apparently of allied function, undertake the work, and overgrow as a result of the extra call made upon their resources. The pituitary gland is thus the site of vicarious overgrowth when the thyroid is atrophied or removed; it is said too, that Brunner's glands in the duodenum have a similar relation to the pancreas. The bone marrow and the hemolymph glands appear to be able to perform the work of the spleen.

5. Irritative Overgrowth.—It is a familiar observation that in cases of inflammation there is an irritative stimulation of the supportive tissues to replace destroyed parenchyma. There is evidence to show that a productive overgrowth of supportive tissues may occur not secondarily to inflammation, but primarily; examples are found in the increased growth of bone when phosphorus is given in minute doses; the distinction between this and real inflammatory overgrowth

is, we admit, unimportant.

6. Nutritional Hypertrophy.—When a weak toxin stimulates cells to overgrowth, it is possible that it does so by increasing the absorption and assimilation of which the biophoric molecule is capable. Even if such be the case, we must yet continue to include those cases among irritative overgrowth, for we are not yet certain that there is such a thing as nutritional hypertrophy, pure and simple. Mere hyperemia, due to increased arterial blood passing to a part is occasionally found to lead to hypertrophy; but even here the cells must be called into increased activity (as by the increased warmth of the part) before they

can utilize the excess of nutrition that is around them. There is experimental evidence that increased temperature of a part stimulates growth; a rabbit's ear, kept warm, becomes of a greater size than its fellow which has been kept at a normal temperature. What then will all them into the required activity? Many stimuli are able, and some of these relatively slight ones, such as the constitution of the fluid that bathes the cell with reference to its oxygen and carbon dioxide content, to say nothing of the external nervous and other stimuli which we are

more accustomed to bear in mind.

1

e

d

g

of

5,

n.

re

ot

ze,

d.

ut

is

oly

off

an

ar-

ult

is

or

ave

no-

1565

tive

low

not

in

nute

wth

s to

ven

ong

mia,

ound

into

they

There must be included in this group the by ertrophies occurring in myxcedema and acromegaly, diseases which .. ise in persons whose internal secretions are disturbed; myxœdema sees when the thyroid secretion is deficient or absent, and exhibits an excess of interstitial mucin in the tissues, and subsequently a real overgrowth of the supportive tissues. Similarly, acromegaly is an overgrowth of the bones of the head and the extremities, associated with disease of the pituitary body. These are evidently cases of nutritional overgrowth, which are instituted by some stunulus, ordinarily held in check by an internal secretion and possibly .. a chemical nature. Not far removed from this, is the form of overgrowth which is called sympathetic, such as the overgrowth of breast tissue in pregnancy; this vould be frankly classed among the physiological overgrowths, save for the fact that it is due to something of the nature of a hormone, as shown by the enlargement of the breast that occurs in the non-pregnant animal inoculated with an extract of fœtal tissue or corpus luteum.

During the consideration of nutritional overgrowth, we must not lose sight of the fact that abundant nourishment is most effective when coupled with some activity, but that occasion lly the stimulus to activity is given by the increased nutrition itsethis, however, is not to be depended upon, and generally the oppose is true, that the activity of function must precede the overgrower; this activity, too, must not be excessive or the result will be not overgrowth, but the

contrary, atrophy.

Simulated Overgrowth.—Somet. ..e. we seem to see examples of excessive overgrowth, which are not really such; an example is seen in the occasional enormous development of certain teeth in animals. These teeth, ordinary opposed to other teeth, are by attrition kept to a certain size; if the opposing tooth be lost, the result may be an enormous growth, which, however, speaking strictly, is not a real hypertrophy.

REGENERATION

Loss of substance, not so great nor affecting so vital a part as to cause death, is remedied by regeneration of the lost part or by compensatory overgrowth and increase in the functions of other parts. Speaking generally, one finds that regeneration is slight in higher forms,

and indeed it is safe to say that among the lower and simpler forms of life the capacity for regeneration is the greatest and most complete. The illustrations of this statement are familiar, and need not be reiterated. The hydra and allied forms will regenerate in any direction in which the opposing cells have been removed, but this within limits, for geotropism is a factor. In a tubularian the head will grow only upon the upper end, the foot only upon the lower end. This is valuable as indicating the power of influences external to the body, and shows us that the capacity of the cell to proliferate is a function of its relation to other cells, and of the action upon it of certain physical influences. We say its relation to other cells; for it has been noted that the planarian (a flat worm) head undergoes perfect regeneration only when the ventral nerve ganglion has not been destroy d. A parallel instance is seen in some crustaceans, where, if an eye be removed, there develops in its place not a new eye but an antenna-like organ, unless the ganglion cells connected with the eye have been left intact, in which case an eye is redeveloped. Thus it seems that while nerve cells do not initiate the regenerative process, they yet influence, or even control the ultimate cell relationships and functions. Nor is it the active functioning of the cells that initiates the regenerative process, for in the earliest stages of a regenerating eye or limb of an arthropod, the new parts are entirely incapable of function.

In the higher vertebrates and in man, the capacity to reproduce lost parts and organs is wholly wanting. We can, however, recognize the capacity to reproduce lost tissues, but this only within certain limits.

1. If an organ be completely removed or destroyed, it cannot regenerate. If only a part be taken, the rest may proliferate and bring about regeneration; if a whole bone be removed, it is not replaced, but if the periosteum be left, a regeneration may occur.

2. The higher and more specialized the tissue, the less is its capacity for regeneration. A part of a nerve cell or a fibre may grow again after

destruction but not the whole neurone.

The muscles regenerate, but imperfectly. Nor is it remarkable that regeneration in the higher kinds of tissue should be a difficult matter, because not one, but several, orders of cell develop side by side, and the more rapidly developing new-formed connective tissue, for example, is apt to bring pressure to bear upon the new acini. or lobules, and to cause their atrophy. The salivary glands and the thyroid regenerate moderately well by a process of budding from the ducts, but most of the other complex organs and glands can scarcely be said to regenerate.

In the liver it is to be noted that the part most ready to proliferate is the bile duct, and this is quite in accordance with our knowledge, for we find that where different cells of the same order are differentiated to varying degrees of perfection, the less differentiated are more apt to regenerate than the more differentiated; in an ordinary gland, for example, the cells in the neck or in the duct are more likely to pro-

liferate than those of the acinus.

3. Tubules in the kidney, and lobules in the liver of the adult regenerate only to the extent that lost cells are replaced. Only in the very young are there indications that new tubules or lobules may be formed. Regeneration is the more complete the younger the animal.

of

e.

ж,

c-

in

W

is

n

al

ď

n

A

е

ce

ft

le

e,

is

re

m

ce

ze

s.

te.

ut

he

or

er

le

ılt

Ŋ

or

35,

11-

st

e.

te

or

ed

pt

or

0-

There has been a good deal of discussion as to why regenerated tissues so often atrophy in a comparatively short space of time. The reason is, probably, that where tissues of widely different degree of differentiation exist side by side in the same organ, the less differentiated gain so great a lead over the more differentiated and regenerate so much more rapidly that active pressure is brought to bear upon the latter to their detriment.

Regeneration of the Various Tissues in Man.—Connective Tissue.—White Fibrous Connective Tissue.—This is the most active of all regenerating tissues in the body. The fibrous connective-tissue cell, under stimulus, swells, becomes larger, gains more cytoplasm, and gives off a rather round, plump, soft cell, which shortly becomes somewhat more fusiform—the fibroblast. There has been considerable discussion as to the derivation of this cell, and there seems no reason to doubt that it arises alike from the endothelium of the vascular channel and the supportive connective tissue, two kinds of tissue whose close similarity, even whose absolute identity we have previously upheld. Going farther, many hold that the plasma cell also takes part in regeneration.

There are several different cells found wandering in the tissues, which Maximow includes under the term **polyblast**, and following his observations, there is an increasing tendency to believe that all such cells, having a round or oval nucleus, as distinguished from those having a partite nucleus (polynuclears and eosinophiles) may take part in tissue upbuilding.

Elastic Connective Tissue.—There is no doubt that elastic tissue regenerates. It is to be found, newborn, in areas of new connective tissue, and in such places as the intima of arteries; but we have not yet settled what kind of tissue gives rise to it, nor do we think it likely that its origin is different from that of the white connective-tissue fibre. It is to be kept in mind that elastin, the component of the clastic-tissue fibre, is a relatively inert protein differing but slightly from the more active albumins of the supportive cell.

Fatty Tissue.—It is uncertain whether we should speak of the regeneration of fatty tissue, because we are not yet certain if fatty sue is a distinct entity or is a modification of connective tissue; re is much evidence in favor of the belief that it is not a distinct ane. What is the fat cell? It is chiefly considered to be a connective-tissue cell, or a number of connective-tissue cells, which have rectipited in the neighborhood of a capillary; in the cytoplasm of a cells fat droplets appear, fuse, and push the nucleus to one side, if we see, histologically, the huge fat droplet, surrounded by cell membrane, which shows at some part of its circumference that tened nucleus, representing the seal in a signet ring looked at

from the broad side. Some say that this large cell arises by fusion of smaller cells, and in places where the fat is disappearing one can sometimes see a number of closely aggregated cells. In view of the difficulty of settling this primary question of the existence of the true fat cell as an entity it would be wrong to make any statement stronger than this, that, at the present time, evidence of the regeneration of fatty tissue in any way comparable to the regeneration of the tissues we have dealt with, is wanting.

Cartilage. - Cartilage has the power of regeneration, although its growth is slow. This occurs in two ways, distinct one from the other: (1) perichondrial regeneration, and (2) regeneration direct from the

cartilage.

In the former the perichondrium is swollen and broken away from the cartilage, and the space between perichondrium and cartilage is filled with fibrin. A great multiplication of cells is seen on the inner aspect of the perichondrium, and these cells, which look like ordinary connective-tissue cells, come to replace the fibrin. The oldest, which are farthest from the perichondrium, become rounded, or polygonal, and lie in a transparent matrix; this obviously is new cartilage. Sometimes, however, the matrix is not transparent, but entirely fibrillar, the fibrils originating from previous cartilage. Between these fibrils are seen cartilage cells, which at first are uncapsulated and single, but later develop a capsule, and become multiple; the fibrile, too, in time disappear, leaving the ordinary cartilage matrix. In the second method, the cartilage proper, when about to regenerate, undergoes a softening of the matrix, and division of the cells, so that a single cartilage cell becomes a group of daughter cells, which group seems to be responsible for the subsequent formation of new hyaline matrix around it.

Bone. - Clinically, the regeneration of bone is an extremely important matter, and it is well to appreciate that the regeneration of bone, like the regeneration of cartilage, is merely the regeneration of a somewhat modified connective tissue. The new cells in each are, in the earliest stages, exactly like the fibroblast. This is not remarkable, when we remember the relationship between the three tissues; cartilage becomes converted into bone, and periosteum may give rise to fibrous tissues, as happens when a fibrous union occurs instead of an osseous one. Further, although we are accustomed to speak of bone arising with, and without, the previous interposition of cartilage, both kinds of bone are actually modified connective tissue, and no distinction is to be made in their forms of regeneration. Regeneration of the medulla is of the same order as that of the periosteum. The long bones have remarkable qualities of regeneration, not only in the periosteum, but also in the medulla, and even in the lamellæ of the bone itself. The lamellæ are constantly being renewed, the old tissue being taken up by the osteoclasts, and the new bone being laid down in its place, so that the position of a lamella is constantly being shifted. In addition, there is a constant deposit from the periosteum, as well as the medullary cavity during the entire process of growth; all these forces which are thus seen to build up the bone in the first place, take part in regeneration after injury or destruction.

Periosteal Regeneration.—A. as of bone denuded of their periosteum have been seen to obtain a new layer by continuity from the adjacent periosteum; mere stripping of the periosteum from the bone does not necessarily render the bone liable to necrosis. When periosteum regenerates, it occurs firmly attached to the bone, and separated from the overlying connective tissue; the direction of the fibres, too, suggests that the growth is from the periphery of the area destroyed.

The Regeneration of Medulla.—Injury to the marrow cells is quickly followed by the usual degenerative changes, which quickly give place to mitosis and proliferation; equally readily the connective tissue around the capillaries begins its proliferation at the margin of the injury, whence fibroblasts are pushed into the injured area. It is remarkable, however, that there is little migration of leukocytes; new capillaries form and a new fibrillar network pervades the area of injury, in the meshes of which are the constantly increasing young marrow cells. Pieces of injured bone are seen surrounded by osteo-clastic giant cells.

The Healing of Fractures.—It is scarcely necessary to deal here with the mode of repair in bone because this is so fully considered in works upon surgery, but it may be noted that considerable variation in the process occurs, depending on whether the apposition is good, and the nutrition of both fragments preserved. The more perfect the apposition, the quicker is the repair; the greater the amount of riding of one fragment upon the other, the greater the irritation, the exudation and the callus. A poor blood supply will mean a delayed or arrested union. The callus forms as follows:

(a) Hemorrhage and exudation around the fracture, with coagulation.

(b) Invasion of the coagulum by cells—polynuclear from the surrounding soft tissues, fibroblastic from the periosteum and marrow.

(c) Absorption of the fibrin and replacement of the clot by tissue from the periosteum and medulla, which

(d) Becomes converted into cartilage, a step that may be lacking if the callus is small.

(c) Then begins the process of laying down the osteoid tissue with deposit of calcareous salts in the matrix, either with or without the preliminary intervention of cartilage, the subsequent absorption of the same and its replacement by lamellar bone. In the lapse of time, the excess of bone is removed, and the callus remains just sufficiently strong to secure stability of the part.

Regeneration of Lymphoid Tissue.—The specific cell of lymphoid tissue is the lymphocyte, which is constantly regenerating, and the supportive structure is made up of the comparatively unspecialized to include, which we have indicated as the most readily proliferated

of

e-

ty

as

ilS,

in

alt

its

er:

the

om

is

ner

ary

nich.

nal,

me-

llar,

orils

but

ime

hod,

ning

cell

sible

tant

like

what

rliest

n we

omes

sues,

one.

with,

bone

made

of the

kable

n the

æ are

osteo-

sition

nstant

luring

of all tissues. New lymph nodes appear in various sites in the subperitoneal tissue where they have not been previously recognizable; this is doubtless due to lymphocytes coming to rest in areas suitable, as regards food supply, to their proliferation, or perhaps to a sudden accession of growth on the part of lymphatic tissue that has been hitherto latent.

Leukocytes. - Our ideas of the leukocytes tend to the supposition that they cannot regenerate; they arise in bone marrow from the myelocyte, but are unable themselves to institute any process of reproduction, and their appearance in numbers apparently greater than usual in the blood, is not always or necessarily due to increased reproduction, but may be due to a different distribution of leukocytes aiready in existence. The production of new leukocytes is a process that goes on constantly throughout life under physiological stimuli, and thus can scarcely be properly included among pathological regenerations.

Regeneration of Blood-vascular Tissue. In the embryo there are two methods by which new vascular tissue can arise: (1) an intracellular formation of blood channels, by which cells hollow out and give rise in their interior to blood corpuscles, the spaces later becoming connected; (2) a process of budding, in which certain endothelial cells of capillary walls give off long protoplasmic processes, without nuclei, which connect one capillary with another; these processes hollow out, and blood passes into and through the process; ultimately mitosis of the original endothelial cell occurs, and the new nucleus passes into the wall of the tube, which places the cells of the new vessel on an equality with the old. In regeneration of tissue, the second method is the one found, and it has been already described in the process of vascularization of granulation tissue (see p. 136).

Regeneration of the Mother Cells of Red-blood Corpuscles. The redblood corpuscles arise from nucleated, hemoglobin-containing cells in the bone marrow, the hematoblasts. Whether these hematoblasts are able to arise from preformed hematoblasts- a true regenerationis doubtful; it is more likely that, under the stimulus of necessity, there may be an increased production of hematoblasts from less differentiated "mother cells" in the marrow; as again, more rarely, in the

spleen and, it may be, the lymph or hemolymph nodes.

Regeneration of Epithelium. Epithelium can regenerate, and new epithelium arises only from pre-existent epithelium. The apparent exception in which epithelium appear; in the midst of granulation tissue is explicable by accidental transplantation of epithelium, or by the persistence of epithelial elements deep down, as in the depths of a hair follicle. Another apparent exception occurs in gliomata—new growths arising from the supportive tissue of the nervous system-in which cysts come to be lined by a regular layer of rather columnar cells; it is not certain that this is true epithelium, for one searches in vain for a basement membrane, the cells lying closely upon the less modified individuals of the next layer. Were it proved, however, to be true epithelium, it would not prove the origin of cells of one order from forebears of another order, for the glia is of epiblastic origin.

The epithelium, like the endothelium of bloodvessels and serous cavities, can regenerate completely. If the epithelium of the skin be broken, the lower layers (not the keratinized cells, which are inert, because degenerated) become active, and these cells, becoming clongated, slide over one another, still preserving protoplasmic connection, until they form a somewhat flat skin over the denuded surface, the new skin forming at the expense of the old, which can be seen to be thinner than normal at the edge of the injury. Mitosis quickly

begins in these flattened cells. There is as yet no basement membrane, but this is soon supplied, evidently by the fusion of fibrils from the underlying connective tissue. Until this forms there is free passage of leukocytes through the superficial cells, and even phagocytosis of leukocytes by the epithenium.

sub-

able:

table.

idden

been

that

ocyte,

ction,

ıal in

ction,

dy in

t goes

thus

itions.

re two

ellular

e rise

g con-

ells of

nuclei,

w out,

osis of

es into

on an

nethod

cess of

he red-

g cells

oblasts

ation--

cessity,

s differ-

, in the

nd new

pparent

n tissue

by the

of a hair

growths

n which

ar cells;

in vain

modified

be true

Hairs, sweat, and sebaceous glands may grow again if their deeper parts have not been destroyed, and it is interesting to note that in such cases there is sometimes a downward growth of the superficial epithelium to meet them, an observation that suggests that tissues of the same nature have a reciprocal attraction for one another. If the root bed of the hair be destroyed there is no regeneration; and the same is true of the nail bed in the fingers, although

Fig. 61

"Pseudo-epithelium," or secondary epithelium without basement membrane lining a cyst in a glioma, formed by modification of the superficial layer of glioma cells. (Saxer.)

this extends back farther than is commonly supposed, and a portion of it being left accounts for the appearance of a nail after a terminal phalanx has been removed. This can scarcely account for the appearance of a new nail—or an attempt at such—when two phalanges have been removed. Here we are compelled to admit that it seems as if the conditions had stimulated a metaplasia—a change of nature of cells—of the ordinary skin to a nail-producing matrix.

Regeneration of Mucous Membrane.—The process described for the idermis is found to exist in the mucous membranes, to the extent it cells at the edge of an olderated area may lose their cilia, become maded and ultimately flattened to cover the denuded surface, and on simple gland follicles, like those of Lieberkühn, are reproduced. The extensive regeneration necessary in the uterus after menstruation, lover the placental site after parturition, is said to be assisted by persistence of the remains of the deeper portions of mucous glands.

Regeneration of Endothelium.—In a way similar to that seen in epithelium, endothelium by a method of translation and proliferation quickly covers over a denuded area; even fibrin or the cells of a new growth transplanted in the peritoneum may be covered by it. The view usually accepted is that the new covering arises from preexisting superficial endothelium, but considering the close relation existing between endothelial cells and fibroblasts and connective tissue, it is not impossible that endothelium of such a denuded area may arise from the underlying connective tissue, especially as endothelium has been seen to give rise to underlying new connective tissue.

Regeneration of Glands -In general, glands undergo but little The glands of the simplest structure, such as the Lieberkühnian follicles of the intestine, the uterine and salivary glands, do present instances of the process; in more complex glands the ducts are mainly or entirely the source of new tubules, yet with the modification previously noted, that such regenerated glands have a great tendency to atrophy by reason of the accompanying regeneration of the

supportive structures which compress them.

Liver.—Where, as in poisoning an animal in the laboratory by chloroform, there is induced a state of necrosis of the liver cells of the centre of a lobule, regeneration occurs by proliferation with simplification of the more peripheral cells, and these new cells with subsequent growth come to occupy the spaces from which the cells have disappeared, so that in the course of a few weeks there may be complete regeneration. So also, where complete lobules have undergone no rosis from one or other cause, there has been observed the formation of new buds or branches from the bile ducts, which, advancing into the framework of the destroyed parenchyma, give origin to new liver cells. Where, however, there has been complete destruction or removal of an area of the liver, the destroyed portion is not regenerated; at most, the remaining liver tissue exhibits some hypertrophy.

Kidney.—A tubule partly denuded of epithelium may be reclothed by the cells still left in that tubule, but no new tubules are developed. Attempts at the formation of a new tubule invariably stop short of the construction of a new glomerulus, so that such a tubule remains imperfect and without function. But in young animals, not in the injured, but in the opposite kidney, new glomeruli and tubules appear to arise, because the kidney is found to contain more than the normal number, and groups of cells near the cortex are considered to be the

anlagen of new glomeruli.

Thyroid.—A certain amount of regeneration occurs in the thyroid, chiefly by a process of budding and separation of new follicles from the old.

Pancreas, Spleen, Testis, Ovary.—In these organs, evidence is in favor

of the view that regeneration does not take place.

Muscle. Plain Muscle. In the stomach, the muscularis mucosæ and the uterus, abundant mitoses may occur after injury, and in some animals, new fibres have been seen to form,

Striated Muscle.—If the substance of a muscle fibre be partly destroyed, but the sarcole ama sheath left, a complete regeneration may occur; but where there is actual injury wrought to the fibres, these contract away from one another, and the regeneration of the interfibrillar connective tissue tends to check the regeneration of the injured muscle. Yet in any given case some fibres will succeed in preserving the sarcolemma and other not. When it is preserved, some nuclei still remain with cytoplasm around them, and these gradually multiply

e,

3e

le he ls, ets eaeat

rotre
of
vth
so
ion.
or
or
of
the
ning

thed ped.

t of

ains

the

pear

rmal e the

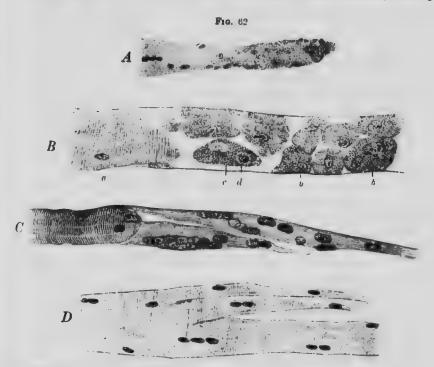
hiefly

favor

e and

some

ıld.



Successive stages in the regeneration of voluntary muscle: A, formation of bud of cytoplasm with loss of striation and multiplication of muscle nuclei; B, the nuclei acquire cytoplasmic territories and cells, uninucleate and multinucleate, separate from the bud (sarcoblasts); a, unaltered end of muscle fibre; b, sarcoblasts; c, multinuclear sarcoblasts, one nucleus at d showing mitosis; C, early stage of new muscle fibre, multinucleate and exhibiting longitudinal striation, becoming fused with the original fibre; D, regeneration complete but irregular, the original fibre being continued into three processes. (Mter Volkmann.)

and are surrounded by constantly increasing cytoplasm, lying aggregated in clumps; from such a clump individual mono- or multinuclear cells separate themselves, and absorbing the remains of the old striated substance, they attach themselves to one another or to the undamaged part of the muscle, and gradually become first longitudinally then transversely striated; the old sarcolemma sheath becomes absorbed and a new one appears. When the sarcolemma is ruptured, as in a cut or a laceration, the capillaries are also ruptured and the picture

becomes more confused. The ruptured fibres contract into clumps, as before losing their striation, of which the nuclei undergo rapid division, until a chain of many nuclei results; the nuclei tend to collect in the unstriated elumped end of the fibre, where they form terminal "buds"; similar buds may appear laterally on the fibre; these buds elongate, the number of nuclei becomes reduced, the cytoplasm increases,

and transverse striations begin to appear.

Regeneration of Nerve Tissues. Neuroglia. The neuroglial tissue is peculiar in that it is a connective tissue and yet is of epiblastic origin, being in fact so closely related to nerve tissue that at an early stage of development one cannot tell which cells will become nerve-cell bodies and which glia. Even in the adult there is no doubt that glial cells regenerate, and they are able to form not only tumors but replacement gliosis in the case of loss of nerve cells. Some observers have thought they have seen them giving rise to cells which take the function of nerve cells, but this can be determined only in the very young and even then seems to offer ground for doubt.

Nerve Cells.—It may be definitely stated that the nerve-cell body does not regenerate in either man or the higher animals. Mitoses have been seen, it is true, but it is not proved that cell division follows

them.

Peripheral Nerves (Nerve Fibres) .-- It may be definitely laid down that any new development of the axis cylinder always originates from a pre-existing axis cylinder, and then only when in connection with a

nerve-cell body.

If a nerve fibre or its axis cylinder be severed there is degeneration -the so-called Wallerian degeneration - distalward throughout the entire axis cylinder, and on the proximal side, as far as the next node of Ranvier or even higher. We may recall here, also, that as the result of section of a nerve the function of the nerve-cell body is apt to be discontinued, and gradually there may show itself a disuse atrophy of the nerve-cell body, and the proximal portion of the axone. Regeneration may occur in the distal part of a divided nerve, provided (1) that the parent cell be intact and undamaged; (2) that the organ or part innervated is not atrophied or degenerated, and (3) that a cicatrix does not block the track of the regenerating fibres. With regard to the third of these conditions an imperfect regeneration may in these cases show itself, such as is seen in the so-called amputation neuroma, which may form at the end of a divided nerve, in which the growing nerve fibrils become twisted through the fibrous connective-tissue overgrowth of the peri- and endoneurium.

It will be realized that regeneration is most complete when the sheaths of Schwann are intact; this is exactly parallel to the condition seen in the muscle, the neurilemma and the sarcolemma being both very near to the specific nuclei of the myelin sheath and the muscle, the nuclei in fact lying and multiplying close underneath the sheath.

If a fibre be injured the axis cylinder stains imperfectly, becomes

fibrillated and disintegrated. The myelin sheath divides up into irregular masses. Now the nuclei of the sheath of Schwann begin to proliferate; they pass between the masses of myelin and pick up from it their cytoplasm. Some of these new cells degenerate and die, and others become elongated and spindle-shaped, and give rise to the new sheath of Schwann and the myelin. The axis cylinder meantime prolongates from the central end of the damaged nerve and has at its tip a nodular mass of protoplasm, which is apparently motile and creeps ahead, laying down the axis cylinder like a telegraph line behind it, its general course being along the lines of the old sheaths of Schwann.

Regeneration after Section.— Regeneration under these circumstances is brought about in the same way, but the new spindle-shaped cells and one new end of the axis cylinder being no longer guided by a remnant of the original sheath may take a tortuous course, especially if the two ends of the nerve are widely apart. Time is lost in the process on this account and quicker regeneration is obtained if a guide of some sort be placed between the two ends; such a guide may be a hollow piece of bone or a bundle of catgut threads. In spite of a considerable distance between the two ends and the piling up of scar tissue as an obstacle very remarkable regeneration of peripheral nerves has occurred, gaps of 10 and 12 cm. in the dog having been bridged, the process requiring a couple of years.

GRAFTING OR TRANSPLANTATION

Transplantation means the inserting of living tissue into living tissues and may be *autoplastic*, that is, when individuals' own tissues are grafted on themselves, *isoplastic*, where the tissue of another animal of the same species is used, or *heteroplastic*, with tissues of another species. Implantation, while a similar process, does not demand the use of a living tissue as a graft.

The remarkable results obtained by grafting in arboriculture and gardening are familiar, and low forms of animals show a great readiness for growth if they are grafted; with the warm-blooded animals, however, this is by no means the case. One may make a general statement to the effect that immediately after grafting the tissue inserted may grow, yet in a comparatively short time the planted tissue becomes absorbed and a cicatrix alone may remain, although sometimes the graft forms a framework upon which the regenerated tissue fills in the area. Even in this short period of growth after transplantation it is often notable that the proliferation of the transplanted tissue occurs through generations of cells that gradually become less and less specific. Expressed in other words, there is at once a reversion in the type of the cells transplanted. Considering this fact one would naturally conclude that if embryonic vegetative tissues were taken in the first place, transplantation would be much more likely to succeed, and such is

nps, apid colninal buds ases,

issue

rigin, stage e-cell glial blacehave action g and

body itoses ollows

down
from
with a

entire

ode of result to be trophy Regenled (1) gan or cicatrix gard to n these euroma, growing e-tissue

nen the ondition ng both muscle, sheath. becomes

the case. But even in these cases, as where portions of chick embryos are transplanted to chickens, the graft in a few weeks begins to show signs of becoming absorbed. In this connection the reader may recall that John Hunter transplanted a cock's spur to its comb, with the result that at first the spur grew to large dimensions, but with an

inevitable tendency to atrophy and subsequently fall off.

When we note the results of transplantation of the thyroid we see rather more successful examples. It is now a good many years since the cat's thyroid was transplanted into its abdomen, in which experiment it was noted that the central portions of the transplanted tissue underwent the usual degeneration, but the peripheral parts remained to some extent, grew, and were absolutely essential, by reason of their function, to the life of the animal. From many observations we know that transplantation of the thyroid can be complete and perfect. Experiments with the mammary gland have been equally successful, the transplanted glands becoming enlarged and secreting

milk with pregnancy.

The transplantation of the ovary has met with almost as great success, although the central portions again are subject to necrosis; we are not in a position, however, to state how long the ovaries so transplanted continue to functionate. Experiment has actually succeeded in having ovulation follow an isoplastic implantation of ovary in a hen whose ovaries had been removed, and one case is on record of a similar happening in the human female, although the case has been given another explanation. From these and other experiments it seems proved that the continued growth of the grafted ovary will occur only if functional activity be demanded of it; should an isoplastic implantation of the ovary be made where there is still original ovarian tissue functionating, the transplanted tissue will be ab orbed; if, however, the transplanted tissue be called upon to functionate it will live. It will, of course, occur to the reader that autoplastic transplantation is likely to be more recessful than isoplastic, because we know that in many cases the tissue juices in one animal are cytolytic to the tissue of another, and this antagonism will hasten the absorption of the graft.

The Skin and Skin Grafting.—The facts with regard to skin transplantation are well known; the capillary layer or part of i; must be transplanted to obtain the best results. Although a certain proportion of mere surface parings will become the centre of new growth, the greater part of the graft, of course, dies, but very soon after transplantation the cells of the Malpighian layer are seen to show mitosis and multiply, spreading out from a centre of activity, the cells so spreading having actually amœboid properties. The new skin so formed, however, does not contain any of its more differentiated constituents, that is, hair follicles and sweat glands are not reproduced. We suppose that this skin is somewhat permanent, but we are met by such an experimental observation as this: if unpigmented skin be grafted into a pigmented area it may take, and will be at first unpigmented, n-

to

ay th

an

see

ice

ri-

ted

rts

by

va-

ete

illy

suc-

are

ited

ring

lose

pen-

ther

that

onal

the

ting.

nted

ccur

more the

, and

rans-

st be

oporowth,

rans-

itosis

read-

rmed, uents,

ppose

ch an

rafted

ented,

but subsequently will become pigmented. This may mean that there is a subsequent replacement of the graft, piecemeal, by cells derived from the original epithelium of the host, that is, that the permanence of the graft is only apparent and not real. In support of this it may be said that in no case is the skin of another species successfully grafted on man; nevertheless, the mere presence of an animal graft seems to stimulate the skin cells of man, causing them to spread more rapidly than usual over the denuded surface. This may be another instance of that phenomenon to which we have previously referred, namely, that cells of like order attract one another; that is, that the presence of epithelial cells in the centre of a denuded area by homotropism attract the epithelial cells of the host around the edge of the denuded area. It may be that the diffused products of activity of the grafted cells act like allantoin (Macalister) as cell proliferants or auxetics, Ross having shown that the dissociation products of proteins stimulate cell proliferation.

Transplantation of Mucous and Serous Membranes.—The mucous membranes are quite as apt as the skin in transplantation, and the mucous membranes of the lips and of the mouth have been used to supply denuded areas on the eyelid. Similarly autoplastic grafts of the great omentum have been employed successfully to cover peritoneal wounds as also, recently, of fascia and tendons.

Transplantation of Teeth and Bone.—Transplantation of teeth and of bone properly speaking does not occur, being really implantation. It is of interest that the Romans understood the implantation of artificial teeth, and for many centuries in India teeth have been taken from one person and implanted in the jaw of another. The results are equally good, whether the tooth be newly drawn or one in which the pulp has been removed, or one that has been out of the body for many years; in other words, it is not an organic union, but rather that vessels, nerves, osteoblasts, etc., penetrate into the pulp cavity, the tooth proper continuing to be an inert substance, which in some cases becomes absorbed, with failure of the procedure. Much the same state of affairs is found in the implantation of bone, sterilized bone or decalcified bone; such bone, like any other porous material, is merely a framework which fulfils the functions that the fibrin fulfils in the blood clot with the additional quality of rigidity and consequent preservation of the contour of the part.

Transplantation of Periosteum and Perichondrium.—Osteoplastic transplantation of these is very successful, especially if the periosteum be retransplanted upon an old bone, or into an area where bone has existed. Even isoplastic transplantation may be successful, but it is notable that in any experiment a good many of the periosteal cells may die, the burden of proliferation remaining upon those that survive. The bone marrow lends itself perfectly well to autoplastic transplantation, giving rise in its new site (e. g., experimentally, the anterior chamber of the eye or the abdomen) to true bone.

Transplantation of Vessels. In the last few years with improved surgical technique, numerous observers have successfully intercalated short lengths of arteries or veins in the course of other vessels. They have even obtained apparently successful results where the introduced segments have been killed by the action of formalin and other agents. Where the living tissue has been employed and the operation has been autoplastic there has been persistent vitality and even growth of the introduced tissue indeed, portions of the autoplastic vein introduced into the course of the artery show pronounced connective-tissue hypertrophy, especially of the adventitia. Dead tissues, on the other hand, become surrounded by the new connective tissue of the host a undergo gradual absorption. This condition is one, not of transpiantation, but of implantation.

Carrel's Experiments. No consideration of transplantation at the present time would be complete if mention were not made of the surgical wizardry of Carrel in the transplantation of organs and even of limbs. Not only has he transplanted fresh organs with success, but even organs that have been preserved for many hours on ice, the vascular anastomoses being made with so wonderful a degree of skill that success has been attained; however, it must be admitted that save under the most favorable conditions of auto- or isoplastic grafting, there is an almost insurmountable tendency to subsequent atrophy and degeneration.

METAPLASIA AND HETEROPLASIA

Metaplasia. Metaplasia is the post-natal production of specialized tissues from cells which normally produce tissues of other orders, and is an adaptation on the part of cells to an altered environment. It is a constant physiological process, as is shown by the conversion of ordinary connective-tissue corpuscles into fat cells, or the transformation directly of cartilage cells and cartilaginous tissue into bony cells and bony tissue. Yet metaplasia is bounded by certain rigid laws; epithelial tissue can be converted only into other forms of epithelial tissue, mesoblastic tissue only into other forms of mesoblastic. Epithelium and gland cells for example, can never become converted into bone or cartilage, or vice versa; and even in the transformation of one form of epithelium into another we do not find that very wide gaps are bridged, as, for example, that simple epithelium should give rise to complex glands, nerve cells, or to the formation of hair roots. Fibrous connective tissue has never been seen to change into muscle, striated or non-striated.

A striking example of metaplasia is that if an eye be rendered functionless by trauma there will often develop from the choroid coat a deposit of true bone. Of course, bone in this region is normally absent, and its presence has been accounted for variously. We mention three theories, the first of which we consider the most acceptable. These theories are: (1) that the bone formation is due to modified function and nutrition of certain choroidal cells; these cells have normally a definite function connected with the receiving of light by the eye; this function being interrupted, the vascularity of the choroid is modified and certain of the choroidal cells give themselves over to the production of bone; (2) that in the process of formation of the eye a few cells destined to form bone, being accidentally carried into the eye, remain latent so long as the eye performs its proper functions, becoming active when these functions are interfered with; (3) bone-forming cells are carried to the part by the blood. The remarkable frequency with which this bone formation occurs in the choroid of eyes which have been rendered useless by injury is strangely opposed to the two latter hypotheses.

Before discussing metaplasia specifically, it is necessary to separate one or two conditions which are not true metaplasia, but which might be confounded with it. The first of these is heterotopia, which may be congenital or acquired and consists of the abnormal snaring of cells of an organ from the organ proper, and their subsequent growth in another place. Examples of the congenital form are the various cell rests of Cohnheim, aberrant adrenals and accessory spleens; examples of the acquired forms are periosteal and bony growths from displaced periosteum. It is to be noted that in none of these cases is there tissue transformation, for the tissue continues to grov along the ordinary lines; further, one sees the same process in the invasion of one tissue into the territory of another, in such a case as where, after tracheotomy, the epidermis may not only cover the wound but grow some little distance into the trachea.

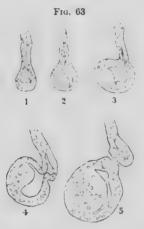
Heteroplasia.—This is the condition in which we find in the middle of the œsophagus normally lined by squamous epithelium, islands of columnar epithelium like that of the stomach. No conversion has occurred from one type of epithelium into the other, but where is merely a persistence of misplaced and ordained tissue. The same explanation holds for the occasional islands of squamous epithelium found in the respiratory passages, and the stomach, without any evidence of past inflammation which might account for the change.

Anaplasia or Reversionary Atrophy ("Undifferentiation").—To be distinguished from metaplasia is the loss of differential characters by cells which have become subject to abnormal conditions, for example, the simplification of the tubular cells of the kidney in nephritis, or the cubical form of the lining cells of the pulmonary alveoli in interstitial oneumonia. The same process is illustrated by the development of mucoid tissue in the adult body, for mucoid tissue developmentally an intermediate stage in the growth of another mesoblastic tissue. A similar process is the morphological change of cells due to mechanical action, e. g., the flattening of a cubical or cylindrical epithelium in a 1st on account of the pressure of it. contents. Again we must not infound with true metaplasia the differentiation of a tissue under codified environment without any change in the function, as occurs,

for example, in the cornification of the epithelium of the prolapsed vagina. Metaplasia, in opposition to this, comprises both a morpho-

logical and a functional change.

Epithelial Metaplasia.—The mucous membrane of the uterus is a columnar epithelium; if the organ be everted so that it projects from the vagina, its mucosa becomes smooth and dry, and in place of the columnar there is a stratified squamous epithelium with horny change of the external layers. Here, it will be observed, there is a change of function as well as of structure. In the bladder we find changes of two sorts; normally it is lined by polygonal epithelium in several layers. We may find over an enlarged prostate, as a result of inflammation, areas of typical squamous epiderm, with prickle cells, or, on the other hand, we may find papillomas developed with epithelium that is now distinctly columnar.



Stages in the metaplastic regeneration or formation of a new lens from the iris, in the larval newt: 1, edge of iris becoming swollen; 2, 3, 4, progressive overgrowth of the edge; 5, separation of the hypertrophied mass of cells to form the lens. (Fischel.)

In cases of ectopia vesieæ simple glandular crypts may form from what was a many layered epithelium. Even more remarkable is the metaplasia observed in the regeneration of the lens. In the larval newt, if the lens be extirpated, a new lens may be developed from the iris, as will be readily understood from Fig. 63. This is not very remarkable when we remember that the normal lens and the iris though differently

formed are both epiblastic.

Mesoblastic Metaplasia.— Here may be seen the metaplastic formation of bone from cartilage, as occurs in the tracheal cartilages in advancing age, the one tissue being merely converted into the other. A similar process is the replacement of cartilage by bone in the callus of a fracture. A more striking example is the formation of bone by metaplasia of connective tissue (Fig. 65), as occurs in the formation of masses of true bone in the lung, or of plates of true bone ir old pleural and pericardial

adhesions, where there has been an excessive formation of granulation tissue. Both bone and cartilage further have been met with in

ed

10-

a

om che ige of wo ers. on, ner

rval

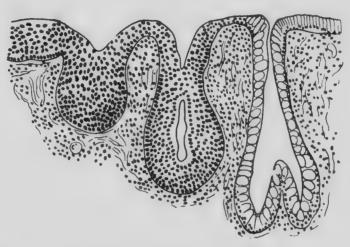
om the wt, as ble tly

nancilar

onone

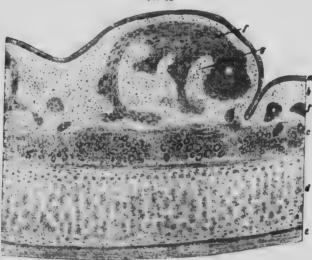
lial

F1a. 64



Metaplasia from a case of ectopia of the bladder; the ordinary stratified epithelium becomes replaced by a columnar epithelium. (After Enderlen.)

Fig. 65



Oscous metaplasia in the wall of a bronchus (so-called "osteoma"): a, mucosa; b, submucosa; d, cartilage; e, connective tissue; f, f, masses of bone in submucosa; g, fat cells.

arterial wall and in the thickened valves of chronic endocarditis.

bone of the tendons of origin or insertion of the muscle, as in the so-called "rider's bone" of cavalrymen. This is purely local, but the same process is probably at work in the production of that remarkable condition mistakenly called **myositis ossificans**, in which the tendons and bodies of one set of muscles after another become replaced by bone until finally the patient is unable to move his limbs, rotate his head, or bend his back.

As has been referred to above, the development of the provisional callus of long bones after fracture is an example of cartilaginous metaplasia, and the same is seen in the occasional islands of cartilage found in new growth derived from the connective tissue, especially in the mixed tumors of the parotid and the testis. We are fully aware that this is generally ascribed to the presence of cell rests, but there seems

no reason to separate it from other cases of metaplasia.

Hitherto the examples given have dealt with the metaplasia of less specialized into more specialized tissues, but the reverse occurs, as when in an inflammation of the joint with immobilization, the cartilages disappear from the joint surfaces and are replaced by fibrous connective tissue. This is not a purely degenerative change, because inactivity of the joint would tend to atrophy, but results from a change of function, the immobility of the joint doing away with the necessity for cartilage.

In true metaplasia, finally, we have no new process, because bone arises first in the fœtus from mesoblastic cells; even in the periosteum of the adult the future bone corpuscles may be indistinguishable from fibroblasts and in delayed union they may actually be converted into connective-tissue cells. In fœtal life it is their environment and relationship to the vessels which lead certain mesenchyme cells to become osteoblasts and marrow cells. Why may not the same reason be in existence later? A lifficulty does present itself in the idea of fully formed cells of one order becoming directly converted into cells of a different type, but this does not happen; metaplasia is not direct, but can be brought about only by a preliminary reversion to a vegetative type of cell, or, where mother cells are present, by the development of cells modified by environment. When we speak of the direct conversion of cartilage into bone cells we mean that in these histologically simple cells there is at least a functional change; that this is not merely a supposition is shown by the change in the matrix which they govern, and by its exhibiting a regressive modification.

THE NEOPLASMS

The term "tumor" is properly applied to any unusual swelling in the body, and includes (1) dislocated parts; (2) collections of fluid or gas; (3) tissue growths, either physiological, as the pregnant uterus, or hypertrophic, and others such; obviously, then, it can have no useful specific meaning applicable to the class of growth we wish to describe,

a class which Thoma called the "autonomous tumors," that is, tumors which are, or possess a law unto themselves. These are now generally named the neoplasms, or new growths, and the process by which they arise is known as neoplasia. But even these terms are not satisfactory, since there may be new growth set up by known agents. The tubercle, for example, is an inflammatory neoplasm due to the action of the B. tuberculosis. Despite these limitations it is usual to employ the term "neoplasm" to indicate the autonomous tumors and "inflammatory neoplasm" to indicate tumors due to the action of known agents, and in the following pages we shall fall in with custom. The neoplasms proper, therefore, are to be distinguished from inflammatory neoplasms by this autonomy, by their growth independent of function and of the needs of the organism in which they grow and from which they derive their nourishment, and by the fact of their arising independently of any known stimulus. In the matter of terminology we employ the suffix -oma which cannot be exactly translated, but which conventionally carries with it the idea of a swelling, and more specifically, of a swelling of the above-described neoplastic nature, although exceptions occur in the case of such words as hematoma. With more propriety than in the last named, the termination bears some of its full meaning in terms like granuloma and tuberculoma, for these are "tumors of granulation tissue" and "of tuberculous tissue" respectively.

To gain an idea of what neoplasms are, it is by no means a bad method to read over some of the various definitions that exist. Cohnheim described neoplasms as "circumscribed atypical productions of tissue from . . . embryonic elements," stating thus that they arise essentially from "cell rests," an idea largely given up at the present day. Ziegler states that "a tumor is a new formation of tissue, possessing an atypical structure, not exercising any useful function, and presenting no typical limit of growth"; Lubarsch counted them to be "growths of apparently independent origin, histologically corresponding with the cells of the matrix from which they arise, but atypical in form . . . "; von Rindfleisch characterized them as "local degenerative excess of growth." Perhaps these ideas are best grouped in White's definition, that a neoplasm is "an (abnormal) mass of cells, tissues, or organs, . . . resembling those normally present but arranged atypically. It grows at the expense of the organism without subserving any useful function."

THE TERATOMAS

These are neoplasms which show a tendency to the formation not only of irregular cell masses but also of fully formed organs such as brain, teeth, skin, hair, bone, or secreting glands; for example, a cyst-like mass containing many of these tissues may be found in the ovary—the ovarian dermoid. All monstrosities are terata, and such have been discussed in series down to the case in which, of two individuals from

the ark-lons by

onal
etaound
the
that

less ages necvity tion, lage. cone eum from into rela-

fully
of a
but
tive
at of

vercally erely vern,

ig in id or s, or seful

ribe,

a common ovum, the feebler of the two becomes infolded into the stronger, and takes its nutriment from it. Such a fœtal inclosure is a typical teratoma. It is not an independent individual; it is incomplete; it is nourished from its host; but it began its existence as a separate individual, from a separate primitive streak. It may quite well be that both host and parasite arose from a single act of fertilization, but at an early period of development two independent centres of growth showed themselves, and it is the autonomous growth of one of these within the other that has given rise to the mass of tissue constituting the parasite. The teratoma is thus "an autonomous growth, the product of the continued development within one individual of another individual of the same species," the term "continued development" being inserted

to exclude the normal foctus.

Before considering teratomas specifically, it is worth while to note what kinds of cell in the body in its different stages are capable of giving rise to all the orders of cells that go to make up the individual. At first glance one would say that the fertilized oyum alone can do this, but totipotentiality is more extensive than this. A totipotent cell is one that is capable of giving origin to an individual, that is, one that can give origin to cells of every order; a unipotent cell is one that can give rise to cells of only one order. The following are totipotent cells: (1) the primordial blastomeres, which, even among vertebrates, if broken off, can give origin to individuals, though dwarfed; (2) the cells of the primitive germinal area; (3) the cells of the growing point, so long as they remain in connection with the ovum (this by reason of their containing no yolk); (4) the germinal blastomeres, that is, the forerunners of the ova and spermatozoa, and (5) the mature ova and spermatozoa after fertilization. We have to consider, then, that there are, subsequent to the fertilized ovum, these various sources from which a teratoma can arise; the forms that can arise, some of which have already been dealt with, are as follows: (1) development of two germinal areas on one germinal vesicle, giving rise to double monsters, one of which undergoes inclusion in the other-fætal inclusion. (2) The production of excess or misplaced totipotential cells which become included in the growing individual; these cells may develop early and grow elaborately, giving rise to inclusions recognizable at birth, or may lie latent and at a subsequent time grow actively, as abdominal inclusions, teratomas of the genital glands, and certain "mixed tumors." These various teratomas require more particular note.

Feetal Inclusions.—These inclusions may be complete or incomplete and projecting; the weaker and smaller embryo is carried into the body of the larger during the process of closing of the great anterior

Epignathus and Congenital Sacral Teratomas.—Some wonderfully complicated cases are found under this class, such as where there is inserted into the roof of the mouth of one foctus the umbilical cord of the second, more or less well developed, or where definitely formed organs, lower he

is

n-

rte

be

ut

th

ese

ing

uct

ual

ted

ote

of

ual.

his,

one

can

give

(1)

ken

the

g as

con-

ners

ozoa ibse-

tera-

eady

ninal

ne of

The

come

z and

may

inclu-

iors.''

nplete

o the iterior

com-

serted

econd, , lower limbs, or sexual organs project from the mouth; less curious are those where projects a mere mass of flesh in which can be distinguished tissues of the various kinds that are ordinarily derived from all three layers of the embryo—the most common form of epignathus. Sometimes there is merely a tumor of the roof of the mouth, in which the tissues are simpler, and do not represent all three of the primitive layers. This last may have arisen not from totipotential cells separated at an early stage, but from multipotential cells separated at a later period.

Teratomas of the Genital Glands and Sporadic Teratomas.—This class comprises some cases that are clinically very curious. The cases mentioned above of cysts containing hair, teeth, etc., being found in the ovary, are surpassed by the discovery of similar tissues in the testis of the male. Of such neoplasms we find that some grow in parts of the body bearing no relationship to the fissures or to the poles of the body, or to the generative glands, as, for example, in the neck, the anterior mediastinum, the abdomen, and elsewhere. No rule can be laid down for these, and we are able to say only that there must have been a development of displaced totipotential cells. teratomas—called sporadic embryomas—consist generally of tissues from all three germinal layers; sometimes the tissues are of adult appearance and of limited growth, and these are called typical; more frequently, however, they are atypical, appear about puberty, grow rapidly, and tend to form secondaries. This, it will be noted, is exactly parallel to the occurrence of benign and malignant blastomas to be hereafter mentioned. Sometimes a tissue in a typical teratoma of this sort will begin to grow inordinately, the result being a neoplastic growth in a neoplasm (tumor in tumore). A tumor of this order may give rise to distant metastases in the body of the host.

Most commonly teratomas are found in the ovary, and are of two forms: (1) the large-cystic teratoma, commonly called the "ovarian dermoid," and (2) the solid or small-cystic teratoma. The former is the commoner and may attain the size of several inches in diameter; its contents are fatty debris and long hairs lying in a varying amount of fluid. It is lined by squamous epithelium with sebaceous and sweat glands, with bone frequently to be found in the walls and an area which has been called the "island," representing the head; from the island arises the tuft of hairs (in our experience, always red), and in it may be bone in which are fastened teeth. In a small number of cases the extremities and genitalia have been recognized. Typical ovarian teratomas of this kind may be found in young children. The solid ovarian teratoma is like the sporadic teratomas already spoken of, and is very

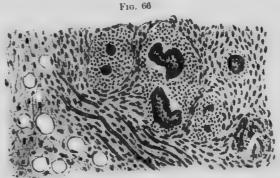
With regard to teratomas of the testis, it remains to be said only that the so-called mixed tumors of the testis have frequently been found to bolong to this class, and close study is apt to reveal tissues germinal areas. These are evidently the product of totipoten-

14

It is difficult to account for such peculiar freaks as these when they appear elsewhere than in the ovary and testis without calling to our assistance, as an explanation, the disappearance and displacement of some of the germinal blastomeres, because we know that these in the process of development do not all find their way into the ovum or the testis; they may be carried and deposited in different parts of the body. We need not imagine any carrying away to account for the teratomas of the genital glands, because this is the natural site of these totipotential cells.

TERATOBLASTOMAS

These are neoplasms which are not true teratomas, because the tissues in them do not represent all three germinal layers; they include the most striking examples of the "mixed tumors," although not all of them. A very familiar form will occur to the reader if one mentions the so-called "sarcomas of the kidney," which have been noted so frequently, growing to large size in the infant. In this and in mixed tumors of like order arising in different parts of the body one must make the broad statement that one finds in such a tumor only tissues



Section of a "mixed tumor" of the kidney, showing gland tubules with surrounding sarcoma-like cells of the plain muscle type, fat cells, etc. (Ribbert.)

such as might develop from the original anlage of the organ; by this we mean that just as the kidney arises from certain myotomes which give rise to various structures in the neighborhood of the kidney, it is impossible to find in a renal mixed tumor a tissue that is not potentially represented in the myotome. Such a tumor has originated from the misplaced myotome cell which, developing, later, gives origin to all the orders of tissue which would have developed from it had it undergone growth in its normal position.

¹ It must be kept in mind that there are several orders of "mixed tumors" to be distinguished: (1) the teratomas, (2) the teratoblastomas, (3) the transitional lepidomas (0. 276), and (4) the carcinoma sarcomatodes proper (p. 266).

It is obvious in such a tumor as this, that is, one arising from the myotome, that all the contained tissues are necessarily mesoblastic. These neoplasms are large, localized, soft, sarcoma-like, and bleed and necrose readily; on section, the body of the tumor is sarcoma-like, but there are in it elements that recall a kidney tubule, as well as muscle, fibrous and elastic tissue, fat, cartilage, and so on. Mixed tumors of a like nature in which the tissues vary according to the situation, are found in the parotid gland fairly commonly, less so in the submaxillary gland, in the vagina in children, in the cervix uteri later in life, in the mammary glands, the lacrimal glands, the cheeks, and the gums.

TERATOGENOUS BLASTOMAS

By this term we indicate tumors formed of one order of cell, but originating not from the tissues of the host but from that of another individual or potential individual within the host. The simplest example is that of an adenoma or carcinoma developing from an ovarian teratoma; the most interesting and important are those developing from the placenta, viz., placental moles and chorio-epithelioma. To use simple language at the cost of being slightly inaccurate one may explain that the latter is an interesting form of tumor arising where the rapid cellular growth of the placenta is not checked at the birth of the fætus, but continues growing in the uterus, producing a most malignant and fatal neoplasm. One might say that feetal structures habituated to rapid growth continue in the uterus after their physiological purpose is fulfilled, and become to all intents and purposes a

neoplasin of the blastoma type.

The fœtal membranes include the fœtal placenta, which is an organ developed primarily from the chorionic villi; being epiblastic, it comes, with the development of the allantois, to gain a vascular mesoblastic core. Before the placenta develops, the outer cell layers of the fortal chorion have "eroded" into the uterine mucosa. The actively growing cells of the outer layer of the villi are phagocytic and penetrate into the sinuses of the uterus below the mucous membrane. Normally, these cells, when they have penetrated into the sinuses, have done their work and the outer layer becomes inactive, fuses and forms the syncytium; below this at the time of birth there are still layers of active the so-called Langhans' layer—but these also undergo degeneration and in the due expulsion of the placenta at parturition they come cleanly away from the uterus. But in cases of abortion it sometimes happens that these placental changes, usually complete by the time of full term, have not yet occurred and when the immature fœtus expelled, there remain chorionic cells which have not degenerated and are still actively growing. These constitute the evil agent, and they carry on their growth in the uterus and constitute a neoplasm.

Placental Mole. It sometimes happens soon after conception that the feetus dies and is absorbed, leaving the placenta and membranes trafted upon the uterus, and these form an irregular fleshy mass, the

iixed must ssues

eу

our

of

the

or

the

the

iese

sues

the

ll of

ions

fre-

na-like

y this which ney, it is not ginated s origin had it

rs" to be nsitional fleshy mole, prone to hemorrhage (the hemorrhagic mole), and to subsequent putrefaction (the putrefactive mole). Again, i., similar cases the chorionic villi being nourished by the maternal blood grow actively

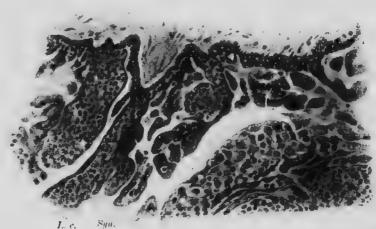


A small portion of a hydatid mole; natural size.

and absorb fluid so that a villus becomes a vesicle or series of vesicles of small or large size distended by an ordematous mucoid fluid, these vesicles being aggregated together in enormous numbers, the mass distending the uterus as much as does a full-term foetus (hydatid mole). The vesicles are yellowish and translucent. Even in an otherwise normal placenta a small portion of it has sometimes been found to consist of such a mole.

Chorio-epithelioma. — In the case last mentioned it will be seen that the growth remained within normal limits, and was, therefore, of benign nature, but this is not always the case. Such a mole may continue to grow and fill the maternal uterine sinuses with polypoid masses, the so-called "destructive placental polypi," which show a kind of transition to the full-blown chorio-epithelioma malig-

Fig. 68



Chorio-epithelioma growing within the uterus: V, wall of uterine sinus; Syn., multinucleate cells of syncytial type; L. c., cells of Langhans' type. (Teacher.)

num. We have said that the outer surface of the villus, consisting of $f\alpha$ tal epiderm, becomes fused to form syncytium, which is made of deeply

staining cells whose bodies have fused, the mass remaining multinuclear. Below the syncytial layer the cells of Langhans' layer remain unfused, individual, and less deeply staining. The syncytium possesses erosive phagocytic properties, and it is these masses of cells that tend to be swept away in the blood of the maternal sinuses and to be deposited in the capillaries of the lungs and elsewhere. Thus we have these syncytial cells growing actively either in the uterine sinuses or in tissues elsewhere, the active growth of the syncytium being seconded by the activity of the cells of Langhans' layer. The chorio-opithelioma malignum is thus seen to be a neoplasm entirely cellular, formed of large actively vegetative cells growing entirely within the vessels, not requiring an individual blood supply by vessels of its own, not capsulated, liable

to induce hemorrhage by erosion of the vessel walls and very readily tending to have particles carried away to grow elsewhere. With such characteristics it is no wonder that we have here perhaps the most terribly fatal of all neoplasms. Although the formation of this neoplasm generally occurs shortly after an interrupted pregnancy, yet cases have been reported occurring years after abortion, no intervening pregnancy having occurred.

ubse-

s the

ively

s be-

es of

y an

sicles

mous

iterus

s (**hy-**

owish

erwise

of it

onsist

case

that

tormal

benign

rs the

nue to

iterine

he so-

olypi,"

to the

malig-

ate cells of

of factal decoly The difficulty of understanding such a process of growth is increased by the finding of this growth in the testis of the male. Here the explanation must be that cell masses of this type have developed, not as the outcome of the fertilized ovum and uterine pregnancy, but from a teratoma. The teratoma must develop or tend

Fra. 60

Cells of a chorio-epithelioms malignum, higher magnification: a, syncytial cell mass; b, cells of Langhans' type; c, broken-down erythrocytes. (Von Franque.)

to develop a chorion and so gain its nourishment through this chorion, invading the veins of the testis; the chorionic cells so developed may proliferate in the testis just as they would in the uterus.

In like manner, a few cases have been described within recent years in which sporadic teratomas in various regions of the body have been found on examination to afford chorio-epitheliomatous areas.

THE BLASTOMAS (ORDINARY TUMORS)

blastomas include all tumors, that are not teratogenous, which an independent, localized growth. This growth is practically of one order; yet neoplasms contain a stroma (just as do the

normal tissues) in which stroma run capillaries and lymph channels, with the exception of those tumors which arise from simple connective tissue like that which forms the stroma of organs. With this exception, the blastomas are growths formed of one order of tissue, and are in number as many as and more than the different tissues; for example, fibromas of fibrous tissue, chondromas of cartilaginous, and osteomas of bony tissue; myomas of muscle fibres, gliomas of glia cells, adenomas of (secreting) glands. There are many more forms of blastoma than there are forms of individual tissue, because the cells of a neoplasm, originating from a special kind of cell, may not present the characters of the original cell fully differentiated. They present different degrees of approach to the fully formed and fully differentiated cell of the original tissue. When the neoplasm approaches closely the form of the adult normal tissue, we speak of it as typical; when the neoplasm copies this but imperfectly, when the cells are but partially differentiated, when the neoplasm is like no adult normal adult tissue (but has for its counterpart cells seen only in the embryo) it is atypical. Further, as a general rule, the blastomas that are of the type of normal adult tissues, the typical tumors, are also the benign tumors; and the cells that copy very imperfectly the normal adult tissues, and sometimes copy faithfully enough the growing embryonic tissues, the atypical tissues, are also the malignant neoplasms.

Benign Neoplasms.—The typical blastoma is composed of cells and tissues that are like the cells and tissues of the normal adult body. They are neoplasms in that there was a time when they did not exist, and they have arisen for no apparent reason and in response to no known stimulus-they are new growths; but they are like normal tissues because they reproduce the differentiations of normal tissues, and, as such, have grown slowly, and this slowness allows the body to react by producing a wall around them, a capsule, which is essentially a part of the body tissues, and not of the neoplasm. Some tissues, such of free fibrous overgrowths, and do not as brain or bone, are incap: readily produce a capsule, b..., as a general rule, most tissues are able to circumscribe the growth, so that such neoplasms can often be shelled out. The tissues being "typical," and like those from which they sprang, there is nothing essentially harmful in such a growth, save that it may by pressure or otherwise, mechanically disturb the tissues in which it lies. Growth, in such a neoplasm occurs in all its parts, central as well as peripheral, and thus there is a tendency to increase in a globular shape, with gradual enlargement in the same form.

Malignant Neoplasms.—Atypical blastomas, on the contrary, are formed of imperfectly differentiated tissue, and because they are less differentiated, are more actively vegetative. They spend little energy on function or in the direction of differentiation and, consequently, have the more to expend on mere growth; active proliferation is, therefore, one of their main characters. Such rapidity of growth gives time for little reaction on the part of the surrounding tissue, and there is little

sign of encapsulation; even if a capsule appear to the naked eye, it is apt to be infiltrated by the actively growing neoplasm; the rapid growth, meantime, by pressure causes atrophy of the cells of the organ concerned, as these die, the connective tissue may remain as a scaffolding on which the neoplasm builds itself. The active growth, too, tends to invade capillaries or lymph channels, so that cells or groups of cells may break off from the neoplasm, and be carried elsewhere in the body, where, finding suitable resting places, they go on with their growth and form new masses or tumors like the parent growth. Such new growths are denominated metastases or secondary

The impression gained from the above that the atypical tumors are malignant is almost correct; but it is only fair to add that the above characters, which are those of malignancy, do not belong to all atypical tumors, for there are malignant tumors (such as the malignant mouse c uncers) that do not readily form metastases and, on the other hand. there are tumors of benign type that form secondaries; we have, in fact, all grades of transition between typical and atypical neoplasms. Yet it is useful to gain the general idea that tumor-cell differentiation (or specialization of form) has a definite relation to benignancy, and the lack of it, that is, a tendency to the vegetative type of tissue, has a relation to malignancy. It is upon such evidence that the decision is made which determines the removal or otherwise of the tumor concerned. This being so, it is very essential to have a clear knowledge of what is the adult type (ell from which a particular tumor springs; for example, the so-called giant-celled sarcoma arising from the bone marrow, exhibits cells of a vegetative, undifferentiated type, and might on that account be called very malignant, until one recalls that the adult bone-marrow cells are of this type; this sarcoma, as a matter of fact, is one of the least malignant of all sarcomas; whereas, a melanoma appears to be made up of more differentiated spindle cells, and on this account might be judged of mild malignancy, yet is one of the most malignant of tumors. Emphasis must, there are, be laid on the necessity for knowledge of the adult tissue from which a neoplasm is supposed to arise.

Malignancy.—It must be understood at the outset that it is not possible to lay down working rules by which a student may surely know whether a tumor is malignant or benign; such knowledge can come only from experience—from the "mental pigeon-holing" of a number of cases in each of which one correlates his ideas of the clinical history, the macroscopic appearance, and the microscopic picture, and his theoretic knowledge of location of tumors; these the observer mentally puts together as one ties up papers in an elastic band, and after he has correlated a number, he begins to reach a state in which his intuition tells him that a tumor is malignant or the contrary. Some

of the rules that are of use are these:

tive
ion,
e in
uple,
mas
mas
there
inatt ne
es of
ginal

this

n the

nter-

neral

iels,

s, the copy faith-s, are ls and body. exist, to no

tissues
and, as
a react
ially a
s, such
do not
re able
shelled
th they
h, save
tissues
s parts,
increase

ary, are are less e energy cly, have herefore, time for

e is little

Malignancy is associated with:

1. A vegetative character of the cells, that is, the cells are like the corresponding cells of the embryo.

3. Peripheral extension, with lack of capsule, and infiltration of the surrounding tissues.

4. Tendency to develop metastases. All of these four qualities are related, and are the expression of a

vegetative activity beyond that of the surrounding tissues.

5. Tendency to Central Degenerative Changes.—This can be readily understood, for the pressure of surrounding parts tends to constrict blood vessels, and the outermost cells obtain the best of the oxygen and food supply, while the inner ones are deprived of these, and also of a free outlet to their own end-products; the degenerative changes are atrophic, or necrotic, or at times autolytic, so that the central part of a tumor may become to id. Similarly, in a surface tumor, the most superficial cells are farthest from the blood supply, and are therefore liable to necrosis.

6. Liability to Recurrence after Removal.—This arises from the fact that the removal is not complete; the infiltrating character of the growth leads to the extension along lymph channels of chains of cells in contiguity beyond the apparent boundary of the neoplasm. This is the reason for the modern radical and extensive operation under-

taken, for example, in carcinoma of the breast.

7. Cachexia.—Cachexia is a lowered, impoverished state of the system, indicated by a marked degree of wasting and bodily weakening, with the characteristic yellowish-gray color of the skin, which is

8. Anemia.—This goes hand in hand with cachexia, for which indeed readily recognizable. anemia is partially responsible. There is a constant loss of red corpuscles, and sometimes the signs of regeneration show that the blood picture is not very different from that of a severe Addisonian anemia. Cachexia, however, is not necessarily in proportion to the size or the rate of growth of the tuo or; a very small carcinoma may be accompanied by very severe cachexia, and certain, though small, neoplasms, if situated in the œsophagus, may interfere with nutrition in a physical way, so that the cachexia is thereby increased. This is not true cachexia, but rather starvation; nor is it correct to use the term "cachexia" to describe those cases where absorption of the foul products from the tumor surface have occurred; yet leaving these aside we still have the true cancerous cachexia.

Have tumor cells an internal secretion? The question is of importance because cachexia and anemia have been long considered as results of a specific toxic secretion of the tumor cells. Presumably these in their growth and in their degeneration discharge soluble substances into the body fluids. These are of the nature of enzymes, and as such are hemolytic and probably in some cases cytolytic as well, so that we may assume that the cachexia is directly the outcome of

poisonous products of cell activity.

In the above paragraphs we have given at least eight characters which have to do with malignancy, but we would once more add the caution that all of these may not be present, that the reverse of some of them may be found, and that some of these very characteristics may be seen in a benign growth, so that we have yet the essence of malignancy to discover. Is this something in the nature of the cell itself? We think so, although some scientists have declared on the contrary that there is no such thing as a malignant cell per se; but that cells have malignancy per se is proved by the fact that mouse cancer being passed through generations of mice can be rendered more and more malignant, so that there is a constantly increasing number of "takes," until finally 100 per cent. of animals injected develop the mouse cancer which has been conveyed to them. The malignancy of cells is determined by the grade of vegetative power they show; the malignancy of any given tumor is the resultant of the interaction between cell malignancy and the resisting powers of the rest of the organism.

There are yet other forms of malignancy (so-called) to consider. We have sometimes been tempted to define a malignant neoplasm as a new growth that tends to kill; if this be true, we are prepared to understand that there is malignancy in virtue of site, and malignancy in virtue of size. For example, a benign tumor that in the liver might be harmless, in the brain might cause death, or a large ovarian tumor benign in its nature may so press upon other organs as ultimately to kill the patient. This is obviously accidental malignancy. It must not be forgotten that a tumor typical and benign for a long period may suddenly assume in any one of its parts rapid growth, a statement which can be understood when we recall that malignancy is a function of the rate and extent of the cellular reproduction rather than of cellular proliferation

itself

Metastases.—We have become accustomed to consider as metastatic, inflammations in which the agent, bacteria for example, is carried to a distant part of the body where the tissues react to its presence, so that the metastatic inflammatory overgrowth is made up of the body cells; with neoplasms this is not the case, for the metastatic overgrowth is made by the multiplication of the cells of the original tumor in the new area. The migrating cells are the parasites.

It does not follow that the secondary growth need faithfully reproduces the parent growth. As a matter of fact it generally reproduces the type, but is often more actively growing, more vegetative and

simpler in structure.

Modes of Origin.—Metastatic growths may originate in four ways:

1. The cells of the original growth penetrate into the lymph spaces and are carried in the lymph stream a greater or less distance and lodge in the lymphatic system, oftenest in the nodes. Sometimes in the neighborhood of the tumor small nodules may be found con-

fact the cells This ider-

e

ie

8

ily

ict

ren

dso

ges

art

ost

fore

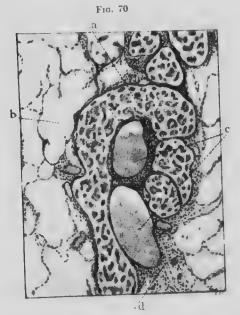
the ikench is ideed

scles, ure is hexia, rowth very in the at the rather escribe tumor

imporered as umably soluble nzymes, as well,

e true

nected with the original tumor by an unbroken chain of tumor cells; what has occurred is that the tumor cells have grown out continuously along a channel until they have arrived at some spot, often at quite a distance, where conditions of lessened pressure and good food material encourage them to grow as a localized mass (Fig. 70).



Carcinoma advancing along the perivascular lymph channels of the lung from a pleural growth secondary to carcinoma of the breast. (Dr. Rhea.) a, perivascular lymph vessel distended with cancer cells; b, alveolus of lung; c, blood vessels, d, secondary leukocytic infiltration of the perivascular connective tissue.

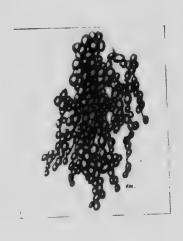


Fig. 71

Group of nodular secondary growths of round-celled sarcoma peeled off from the surface of the peritoneum in a case where a general "seeding" of the perineal cavity had occurred.

2. The tumor in its growth may erode a vein and the cells may thus pass directly into the *blood stream* and be carried elsewhere. Such cells will be liable to arrest in the first capillary into which they are carried. Neoplasms whose cells are thus carried into the branches of the portal system are apt to form secondaries in the liver; those in the main venous system are apt to be carried to the lungs. Rarely cases arise which seem to indicate that here and there tumor cells may be carried through the lung capillaries without arrest.

3. By transplantation. This form of conveyance is but a modification of the first, because it occurs in the serous cavities, which are lymph spaces. If a tumor erodes the lining membrane of one of these sacs some of its cells may become free and be carried elsewhere in the same cavity, as is especially well seen in the peritoneum (Fig. 71). Transplantation has even been known to occur from tumors in the mouth

cavity being carried to the stomach, and tumors in the stomach being carried to the intestines. It is not safe to jump to the conclusion that a secondary in the small intestine has found its way there by transplantation even though the primary growth be in the stomach, for even here the extension may have taken place by the lymphatic channels.

4. Transplantation also occurs by apposition. Cases are recorded in which (a) one is being involved in cancer, the corresponding point on the other lip has become infected; (b) the skin of the arm in contact with an ulcerating corcinoma of the breast has become involved; and in which (c) the projects, e.g., the pleural, opposite a superficial malignant growth have become the site of transplantation even when no adhesions between the two have existed. The process of rubbing has bared the second surface, on to which the cells from the first have become engrafted.

Retrograde Metastasis.-While the cells are generally carried by the force of the lymph or blood stream and the secondaries are thus situated farther down the stream, nevertheless, it may occur that such growth or carrying of neoplastic cells is in the direction precisely opposite to that which might be expected. Thus, in cancer of the breast one may find the head of the humerus of the same side infiltrated. Yet the head of the humerus sends lymphatics to the axillary nodes and not away from them, so that part of such extension must have happened against the stream. The explanation of this anomaly probably lies in the supposition that some direct channels are blocked and the neoplastic cells seek out collateral routes. We have to remember the possibility that the extension may occur by direct contiguity of growth which we can imagine prevails against the lymph stream as well as with it; while where there exists a negative pressure in the inferior vena cava, the cells may actually fall back from the inferior vena cava into the hepatic veins.

Unicentric and Multicentric Primary Growths.—It is ordinarily not possible to follow a tumor to its earliest beginnings, but we have good reason for supposing that most blastomas arise from one cell or from a group of cells in juxtaposition, and neoplasms which thus grow from a single focus are unicentric. Others, however, appear to be pluricentric, that is, it seems that of a number of cells or of groups of cells near one another, each gives origin to an independent mass of new growth. This fact tells against the theory of cell rests, in that the adult cells an organ are sometimes seen undergoing change into the neoplastic t, pe.

18

re

of

16

es

be

a-

re

of

ere

1).

ith

We have also to admit that it is possible for one body to be the seat of multiple neoplasms of different kinds at the same time. It is hardly likely that these depend one upon another; more likely is it that a lowered bodily resistance permits cells of various kinds and in different parts of the body to undertake active proliferation. It is perhaps due to the same condition that we sometimes find bilateral organs affected by new growth of the same or similar kind. It is, of

course, possible that one of these is primary and the other secondary, the other organ being the organ selected because of what has been referred to as tissue predilection. There is a certain amount of evidence

which suggests that in such a case both growths are primary.

Tissue of Predilection.—It is notable that in metastatic tumors some tissues are very likely to be affected, while others are almost sure to escape; an example is seen in the readiness with which melanotic growths appear in the liver, and the secondary tumors of the thyroid in the bones; the muscles are rarely involved in metastatic growths. The meaning of this is that not all cells carried to different parts of the body are able to proliferate, for often the ordinary cells of the body react against the newcomers, and it becomes a trial of strength between the two tissues, the proliferative power of the parasite being matched against the reactive power of the host. The vegetative powers of cells broken off from a benign tumor are not remarkable, and so in general the metastases from such a tumor do not eventuate; this antagonism, too, is not merely a local matter, but becomes a character of the body fluids, as is shown by the observation that in transplantation of tumors there are stages, during some of which retransplantation can be made, while during others such an attempt fails, owing, no doubt, to the existence of antagonistic, presumably cytolytic, substances in

the body fluids.

The Production of Metastases by So-called Benign Tumors.—Certain tumors of benign type are able to cause metastases, e. g., the chondromas. Here we have multiple - condary tumors in the lung, clinically not dangerous. It is not possible that fully formed cartilage cells make their way into the pulmonary capillaries, but rather that the perichondrium cells (small actively growing cells that surround the periphery of a chondroma) which are small, are carried to the lung and there give rise to their normal product—cartilage. A like example occurred in the Royal Victoria Hospital, Montreal, where an arm had been removed for an osteomatous growth, and the axillary nodes were found converted into nodules of solid bone. Here it was the osteoblasts that had been carried by the lymph stream to the lymph nodes, where they had fulfilled their normal function. It will be at once evident how like this phenomenon is to true malignancy, although our clinical knowledge compels us to recognize it as essentially nonmalignant. Even a stronger example is seen in connection with the thyroid gland; in the bones have been found masses of thyroid tissue, actually producing colloid, replacing extensively the bone, having malignant properties, yet clearly benign in histological type, and strangest of all, careful search through the thyroid may have revealed no primary tumor. All of these cases cited above indicate a want of correspondence between structure and properties, and indicate that there are cases on th. border line between malignant and benign tumors, which conform fully to neither group. A classification of tumors based upon the existence or non-existence of malignant properties cannot satisfy; however important it be from a clinical standpoint, it is necessary to find some other basis for classification.

Latency in Metastases.—It is seen from time to time that a neoplasm, successfully removed, may break out in metastases years after the operation. We have lately seen a case in which recurrence appeared eight years after removal of a melanotic sarcoma of the choroid. Have cells from the origin in neoplasm lain latent all this time? Presumably so, for the same phenomenon has been observed in transplantation experiments; the transplanted cells of neoplasms evidently either (1) grow immediately in their new surroundings, or (2) lie latent for a long time, with or without eventual multiplication, or (3) degenerate and are absorbed. The variance of these happenings indicates that metastasis depends not only on the inherent growing qualities of the neoplastic cells, but also upon the resistance of the tissues; the latter may be merely another way of saying, as was said above, that there is a predilection in tissues.

a

f

n

S

r

n

t,

in

in

n-

ly

ke

ri-

ry

ere

:ed

en

ere

60-

les,

nce

ugh

on-

the

sue,

ring

and

aled

t of

that

ors,

ased

nnot

The Nature of the Stroma.—The blastomas gain their nutrition from the host and possess a blood and lymph supply. In what degree the intervening tissue belongs to the host and in what degree to the neoplasm is a matter for consideration. The capsule of the typical blastoma is formed by the tissues of the host; even in a typical blastoma the cells at first make their way between the supportive cells of the host, and the connective tissue of the host thus becomes the stroma of the neoplasm, and its cells grow side by side with the neoplastic Just as in inflammation, a neoplasm infiltrating an organ may kill off the specific cells of the organ and at the same tim the more lowly connective-tissue cells to proliferation, a. . this at times to so great an extent, as in scirrhous carcinomas, that the connective-tissue overgrowth acts as a direct check on the neoplastic In an atypical connective-tissue growth (sarcoma) a double process is at work; the stroma itself multiplies, and again, as the surrounding tissue is infiltrated, its stroma becomes part of the stroma of the growth.

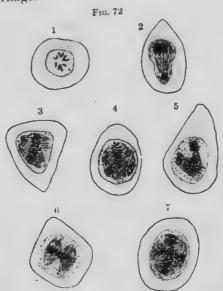
Blood Vessels and Lymph Vessels.—The blood vessels and lymph channels of the host are retained by the growing tumor, by which means the tumor is nourished and gets rid of its excretions. As the tumor grows, the vessels also grow, but never beyond the stage of capillaries; there is never formation of muscular walls, or of arteries or veins proper, and even perfect vessels that become enclosed in a growth are simplified and lose their specialized characters. Thus it is evident that a blastoma has no power of regulating its blood supply.

Nerves.—The host supplies no nerves to the blastoma. A few fibres may be seen to pass into the periphery of a tumor, but they evidently quickly undergo destruction and absorption, and the deeper parts of the tumor are without nerves. There is thus no trophic or vasomotor control exerted on the tumor by the body, and the activities, vegetative and other, of the neoplasm can be influenced only through

the composition of the body fluids and by alterations in the resisting

powers of the surrounding tissues.

Degenerative Changes. - Degeneration is very likely to occur in a neoplasm, especially since the tumor can to so small an extent control its own nutrition; apart from imperfect vessels the tumor cells have no other source of nourishment than the fluid of the surrounding tissues, and of this the peripheral cells of the neoplasm obtain the best and most, leaving the centrally situated parts badly off for foed and oxygen. Not only this, but the peripheral cells may get rid of their by diffusion into the surrounding tissues, whereas the must "stew in their own juice," and be damaged or killed thereby. Necrosis and absorption of the deep-lying parts of an internal neoplasm, and of the most superficial part of a superficial tumor, are, therefore, liable to occur; and the bloodvessel walls being thin and exposed also to the same deleterious influences, are liable to rupture and permit hemorrhage.



Irregular mitoses in cancer cells: 1, hypochromatic mitosis; 2, asymmetric mitosis, the upper daughter nucleus hyperchromatic; 3 to 7, various forms of multipolar mitoses. (Galeotti.)

Nuclear Changes.—Much work has been done in the observation of the process of mitosis in neoplasms, and while no rules have resulted by which we can determine the degree of malignancy possessed by a given tumor, yet many strange deviations from normal have been observed. The mitotic process is at times hypochromatic (that is, the number of chromosomes is reduced below that normal for the species), at times hyperchromatic (the opposite of the former), or pluripolar, in which there are more than two centrosomes, each centrosome attracting chromosomes so that multiple nuclei may be produced. Retrogression and Healing.—It is by the help of these degenerative changes that retrogression, and even disappearance and absorption of tumors occur, although this result is an unusual one. Many cases of disappearance of tumors, even the most malignant, have been reported, and it is upon this possibility that we can base hope of attaining ultimately a means of cure; even now we know certain means that have met with a measure of success, such as the use of arsenic and salts of selenium and tellurium; of Coley's inoculation fluid of sterilized cultures of streptococcus and B. prodigiosus (based on the experience that intercurrent erysipelas may lead to the absorption of malignant growths); of extirpation of the ovaries in mammary carcinoma; of electropuncture in uterine myomas; and of ultraviolet and the Röntgen rays upon superficial growths.

CLASSIFICATION OF THE AUTOCHTHONOUS BLASTOMAS

It may be here repeated that the autochthonous blastomas are neoplasms which arise in a body by proliferation of cells belonging to that body; this is to distinguish them from heterochthonous (teratogenous) blastomas which arise in a body from cells belonging to another individual. There is perhaps no word in the language which conveys precisely this meaning and we are compelled to use this clumsy term. In devising a classification it is necessary to remember that finality of knowledge of tumors is far from being attained, and it would be unwise to attempt to claim finality for any classification made at the present day; the intention is to construct a working classification along the lines of the origin of the various tissues affected, that is, an embryogenetic classification, and this because our microscopic diagnosis is dependent upon cell characters.

This is not the place to deal particularly with already existent classifications.

Each tissue in the body has a definite origin and mode of development, and if neoplasms are derived from definite tissues, and their component cells represent stages in the development or the retrogression of these tissues, it becomes necessary to distinguish and possible to classify tumors according to the tissue from which the neoplasm springs. Considering the earliest stage that has been recognized in the development of the fertilized ovum after it has begun to segment, that is, the morula, we have merely a cluster of undifferentiated cells. Rapidly these cells arrange themselves into two layers, the epiblast and hypoblast. Between these the hypoblast and, to a less extent, the epiblast giv rise to a poorly differentiated mass of cells hardly to be celled a layer, the mesoblast. The reader must correct the old idea that connective tissues and connective dissues only arise from mesoblast; and that epithelium and glands and nerves, and these alone, from epiblast and hypoblast. From the epiblast, for example, there

per

on

ed

. a

en

is,

the

or

TO-

ed.

is developed along the dorsal groove a mass of cells of which those away from the surface are no longer stratified. As the dorsal groove becomes infolded this portion becomes cut off from the rest, the only part recalling the original epiblast being the ependymal layer around the central canal, these cells having originally been outer layers of

Fig. 73



Diagrammatic representation of section through vertebrate body to show ontogenetic relationship of the various orders of tissues. A. Of lepidic type: 1, epiderm and its glands (epiblastic); 2, mucous membrane of digestive canal and its glands, liver, etc. (hypoblastic); 3, endothelium lining serous cavities (mesoblastic) and glands, like renal cortex, of mesothelial origin: 4, vascular endothelium of late mesoblastic origin. B. Of hylic type: 5, spinal cord, brain, and nerves (epiblastic); 6, notechord (hypoblastic); 7, connective tissues of the body (mesonchymatous); 8, myotomes, striated muscle of body (mesothelial). C. Cavities: 9, lumen of digestive tube; 10, body cavity.

the dorsal groove. A similar ingrowth of cells occurs from the hypoblast to form the notochord. We find that these ingrowths from the epiblast and the hypoblast come into most intimate relationship subsequently with mesoblastic structures. The mesoblast in its turn undergoes changes; when it splits to give origin to what will ultimately be the primitive body cavity, or coelom, the cells lining that cavity

become arranged in a layer, the mesothelium: the remaining part of the mesoblast, which does not become so differentiated, constituting the mesenchyme. From the mesothelium again, there occur ingrowths into the mesenchyme which are comparable to the ingrowths from the epiblast and hypoblast; these are the myotomes, the anlagen of the future striated muscles of the body. Further, a mass of mesenchyme which will ultimately be recognizable as the heart and trunk vessels are seen to develop a central cavity, and the mesenchyme cells lying upon this cavity become differentiated into a definite layer, the endothelium. We thus find that the embryo becomes divisible into collections of two orders, which may be termed "lining membranes" and (for lack of a more expressive word) "pulps," the lining membranes being persistent epiblastic, hypoblastic, mesothelial, and endothelial layers, the pulp being the main mass of the neuroblast (of epiblastic origin), the notochord (of hypoblastic), and the mesenchyme (of mesoblastic). Briefly expressed, each layer in the original embryo becomes differentiated into lining membranes and pulps. To the former we apply the term "lepidic," (from λεπις, a rind or skin), and to the latter "hylic" (from "λη, crude material), both words being used as adjectives.

The characteristic of the lepidic tissues is that the cells are arranged in layers or clusters in direct apposition; they are not separated by lymph or blood vessels, and they possess a supporting framework or stroma of hylic tissue in which run the nutrient vessels. The features of hylic tissues are the opposite; separating the cells there is a matrix of intercellular substance, either homogeneous or fibrillated, while lymph spaces and vessels and blood capillaries tend to separate and run between the individual cells. If in the lepidic tissues there is a stroma of hylic tissues, so in the hylic tissues there is lepidic tissue in the shape of the endothelium of the blood and lymph vessels, in each case the elements

of the other order being subordinate.

On this basis we obtain the following classification of normal tissues: I. Lining Membrane or Lepidic Tissues, in which the blood vessels do not penetrate the groups of specific cells and in which there is an absence of definite stroma between the individual cells, although such stroma, of mesenchymatous origin, may be present between the groups of cells:

1. Epiblastic: Epidermis. Epidermal appendages, hair, nails, enamel of teeth, etc. Epidermal glands. Epithelium of the mouth and salivary glands. Epithelium and glands of nasal tract and associated spaces. Epidermal (anterior) portion of hypophysis cerebri. Lens of eye. Epithelium of membranous labyrinth of ear, anus, male urethra (except prostatic portion).

2. Hypoblastic: Epithelium of digestive tract and glands connected with it. Specific cells of liver, pancreas, tonsils, thymus, thyroid. Egithelium of trachea, lungs, bladder, female urethra, male urethra

(prostatic portion).

Lining cells of pleuræ, pericardium, peritoneum. . Mesothelial: reific cells of adrenals, kidneys, testes, ovaries (Graafian follicles). Epithelium and glands of Fallopian tubes, uterus, vagina, vasa deferentia, vesiculæ seminales, etc.

4. Endothelial: Lining endothelium of blood vessels and lymphatics.

II. Hylic or Primitive Pulp Tissues. Organs and tissues in which the special characteristic is that the specific cells lie in, and are separated by, a definite stroma, homogeneous or fibrillar, in which there may or may not be blood and lymph vessels:

1. Epiblastic: Nerve cells, neuroglia.

2. Hypoblastic: Notochord.

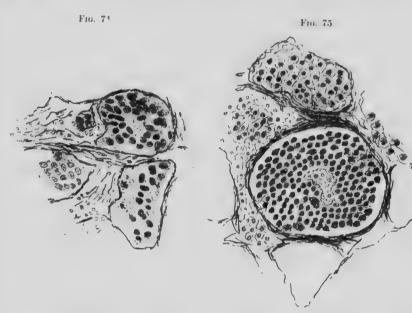
3. Mesenchymatous: Fibrous connective tissues, cartilage, bone, reticulum of lymph glands, bone marrow, fat cells, involuntary muscle tissue, spleen, blood vessels, blood corpuscles.

Mesothelial: Striated muscle, including cardiac muscle.

Following this scheme of classification of the normal tissues, we may now divide the tumors arising from the specific constituent cells of the various tissues into two main genera—the lepidic tumors, or lepidomas, originating from the above "lining-membrane" tissues and the hylic tumors or hylomas, originating from tissues derived from the embryonic "pulp." We can further distinguish two broad groups of lepidic tumors, the primary, those whose cells are derived in direct descent from the original epiblast and hypoblast; and secondary, or transitional, whose cells are derived in indirect descent from the same, i. ϵ ., have passed, in the course of development, through a mesoblastic or mesenchymatous stage before coming to form portions of a lining membrane.

The coinage of new terms in a subject is undesirable, but, if new ideas or new relationships are to be expressed, unavoidable; this is the case in the circumstances under which lepidic and lepidoma and hylic and hyloma were suggested. They are necessary for the expression of this conception of tumor relationships, but at present, we regard them as a framework on which the idea of tumor growth is to be built, rather than as terms for every-day employment; in fact, we do not personally use them for daily clinical purposes, for which terms like carcinoma, sarcoma, and endothelioma are adequate. These terms (carcinoma, arcoma, etc.) must be given a purely morphological significance, because we recognize that tumors of identical type may originate from any of the germ layers; thus, a lepidic carcinoma can arise from epiblastic, hypoblastic, or mesoblastic structures, and, what is more, can vary in its malignancy according to its origin; we think it necessary, therefore, to apply an adjective which will indicate its tissue relationship, thus, epithelial carcinoma, mesothelial carcinoma, or epithelial adenoma, endothelial adenoma, and so on. We are aware of the academic arguments which can be urged against this method of nomenclature, but may be allowed to state its chief advantage, viz., the recognition of the secondary or transitional groups. It is exactly these secondary lepidic tumors which are liable to present transitional characters, and to cause thereby the greatest confusion. For example, a tumor of the adrenal, a "hypernephroma" of the kidney, an "ovarian tumor,"

may, if of slow growth, present all the characters of a carcinoma—a glandular tumor—and if rapidly growing and actively vegetative, may be morphologically a perfect sarcoma. Such a tumor was often called **carcinoma sarcomatodes**, and in some instances has actually been proved to possess certain characters, supposed to be distinctive, of each; for instance, sarcoma cells are separated by fibrils of stroma, carcinoma cells are not, yet a comparison of Figs. 74 and 75 will show that Fig. 75 shows a tumor that is in this regard at once a carcinoma and a sarcoma.



S tion of carcinoma simplex of breast, to red with Mallory's connective-tissue stain, monstrate a complete absence of passage of terediular fibrils between the individual ters of the alveolar cell groups. (Woolley.)

f

Section of an endothelioma similarly treated. The alveolus below reacts almost wholly like an epithelial cancer, that above exhibits intercellular connective-tissue fibrils, like a sarcoma. (Woolley.)

The reason endotheliomas (for example) are transitional seems to be this. We have insisted before upon the fact that the earliest acquired proceeds of cells, or of individuals, are the last to be lost; properties of later acquirement are yielded up with greater ease. The primary lepidic turnors are derived directly from cells that from the earliest embryonic period, have been lepidic and of the nature of lining membranes; while the transitional or secondary lepidic tumors are derived from cells which, from being lepidic (in epiblast or hypoblast) have become hypothesis when the mesoblast was formed) and yet later have again taken the bidic characters. These cells, or their progeny in neoplasms, revert received to the hylic, sarcomatous type, which the primary lepidic tumor cells vill not, because these last have been continuously lepidic. This

is not to state that primary lepidic tumors never revert, for they do, notoriously in the case of the so-called "basal-celled carcinomas," which greatly resemble sarcomas; but the contention is that the reversion is so frequent as to be a distinguishing feature of the secondary lepidic tumors, while it is an exception in the case of the primary.

It may be laid down as a rule in all tumors that the more rapid the growth, the more do cells lose those features that were formerly specific



"Pseudo-epithelium," or secondary epithelium without basement membrane lining a cyst in a glioma, formed by modification of the superficial layer of glioma cells. (Saxer)

to them as the constituent cells of this or the other tissue; the individual cell may thus afford little or no clue to the tissue of origin, but by the general arrangement of cells it is possible to see at least resemblances to connective tissues or to glandular tissues, and thereby to know what kind of tissue gave origin to the tumor. We note, in any case, a reversion to a simpler, earlier, more "embryonie" type of tissue, in which proliferative or vegetative activity has replaced functional activity and caused the tissue to lose those features that are distinctively connected with the performance of function. With this loss of power to perform its function, we believe the tissue to be incapable of regaining the same; a hylic tumor, being composed of tissues of less specialized type, cannot take

on lepidic characters. An apparent assumption of such characters is seen in Fig. 77, but even here, although the cells which line the cyst cavity that has developed in a glioma, have the appearance, at first glance, of epithelium, they are not so; there is no basement membrane and the case is merely one of adaptation of glioma cells to fulfil the function of lining cells.

TYPICAL HYLIC TUMORS OF MESENCHYMATOUS ORIGIN

Before dealing with the large question of causation, we shall pass in review the various forms of tumors. Here it is necessary to draw a distinction between blastomas proper and blastomatoid growths. The blastomas are well-defined and autonomous independent new growths; the blastomatoid growths are conditions intermediate between simple hypertrophy and these true tumors. In connection with tumor formations from a great variety of tissues, we encounter these intermediate growths, and while we realize that in time some of these forms

of overgrowth may be better understood and may come to be included among simple hypertrophies, yet at the present we have to group them as having many resemblances to tumor formation. These overgrowths or blastomatoid nature (of which lipomatosis, fibromatosis, neurofibromatosis, gliosis, etc., are examples), as a class (1) affect one particular tissue; (2) are multiple; are of congenital, if not hereditary, origin, frequently being manifest in early life and affecting several members of a family; (4) may be diffuse, or if not diffuse, at least merge into the surrounding tissue; (5) may appear to be encapsulated, but this apparent encapsulation is merely the limit imposed by the boundary of the tissue affected; (6) are of slow growth, extending over, it may be, years; (7) eventually may take on malignant characters, which is not a characteristic but is merely an example of the principle that tissue which has developed in excess of function is already more than half-way toward aberrancy, that is, the stimulus, whatever it is, that led to blastomatoid growth may lead to true blastomatous growth.

Fibroma.—The fibroma is a typical tumor of fibrous connective tissue; typical, in that the copy (the tumor) is a good imitation of the original (the fibrous connective tissue); the original tissue lies widely scattered throughout the body, so that such a tumor may arise in many situations. Just as connective tissue varies in its composition, being in some regions loose and areolar, with relatively frequent cells, and in others, dense and firm, with relatively few cells, which are necessarily compressed, so the tumors vary, and we have soft and hard fibromas from these tissues respectively; the soft arise, for example, from subcutaneous tissue, the hard from dense tissues such as tendons, fascire, and periosteum. All alike, however, are composed of connective-tissue cells, connective-tissue fibrils, some elastic tissue, and blood vessels. Lymph spaces are seen in greater or less prominence according to whether it be a soft or a hard fibroma. The fibroma generally forms a well-defined nodule which grows slowly, and presses upon and replaces the tissues near it; if there be rapid growth, however, the cells, instead of resembling fully developed connective-tissue cells, are like fibroblasts. The greater the tendency to resemble fibroblasts, and the less differentiation there is in the direction of perfection of the connective-tissue cells, the more does such a growth approach in structure a sarcoma; the only sure differentiation between the benign and the malignant (sarcomatous) growth is the absence or presence of infiltration, and invasion of surrounding tissues. Lest one should be mished it is well to remember that all fibromas are more cellular than is normal adult connective tissue, and the growth of a fibroma of the most innocent kind occurs by the proliferation of such fibroblasts, and not of fully formed connective tissue.

The fibroma is pale on section, and the firmer ones are glistening, with a appearance that recalls watered silk; this is due to the bands of the rest that run in all varying directions, each band being originally

laid down parallel to or around a blood vessel. A section through the tumor will show some bands cut transversely, others longitudinally, and others obliquely. In the gross, the fibroma is generally sharply circumscribed, and can readily be enucleated, but the sharp boundary line cannot be so well seen under the microscope, because the surrounding tissue is of the same order, and the normal and tumor tissues pass readily into one another.

Degenerative changes are prone to occur in fibromas, and by arrest of blood supply, or by tension they undergo necrosis, and in the necrosed area is much cholesterin and fatty material, which subsequently may become converted into calcareous nodules. If the lymph outlets be obstructed, the tumor may become ædematous, lymphangicetatic,

eystic, or mucoid.

In certain situations, as in the mammary gland, a fibroma may be found to have in its midst glandular elements; this probably means that an inflammatory fibrosis has taken on tumor formation, and the localized fibroma thus formed has included glands that were originally normal; such a tumor is a pure fibroma, and not a fibro-adenoma; it is a fibro-adenoma only when there is a proliferation of the included glandular elements. As a matter of fact, there is a good deal of looseness in our use of the term fibro-adenoma; some of these are pure fibromas with gland tissue included, and others are not actually true fibromas at all, because the fibrous tissue is not circumscribed (blastoma), but is general, and diffuse, of the nature of a blastomatoid growth. True fibromas do not form metastases and do not recur after removal; if recurrence does happen, it means either that the growth was originally sarcomatous or was fibromatoid, in which latter case the recurrence is simply the expression, once more, of the diffuse overgrowth which was originally wholly or partly removed.

Hard Fibromas. Hard fibromas are found in many different situations but most often in connection with tendons or fascine; this rule is not absolute, for we find them in soft tissues such as the kidney. A variety occurring in connection with the jaw is epulis, a term often improperly given to osteoid and osteosarcomatous grow^{*1}'s in this situation; it develops from the periosteum in connection with the root of a decayed tooth. Uterine fibromas and "fibroids" will be dis-

cussed with the myomas of that organ.

Soft Fibromas .- These are frequently multiple, and many of them are fibromatoid. They are most frequent in the skin, pharynx, and digestive tract, at 1 those in the nose and throat are apt to be soft

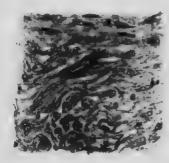
masses—mucoid p.1, ps—of the true myxofibromatous type.

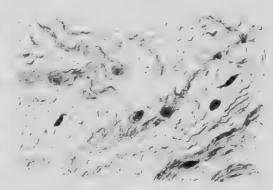
Fibromatoid Growths .-- Most commonly these occur in the submucous connective tissue of the posterior nares and pharynx; and to be included among them also are some cases of "neurofibromatosis," the so-called "von Recklinghausen's disease," which is a blastomatoid overgrowth of the medullated peripheral nerves; it is asserted that the optic and olfactory nerves, which are devoid of sheaths of Schwann and of the

cells that are precursors of the sheaths, are never involved in cases of multiple neurofibroma, yet the optic nerve is the seat of true fibromatosis. In these cases, there is some relationship between the tumors

Fig. 77

Fm. 78





Hard fibroms. (Ribbert)

* oft fibroma

and obstruction of the lymph channels, which in nerves are distinct from the system of the tissues they traverse; that disturbed nutrition seems to be due to some vice of development because many, if not all,

of the hundred or more reported cases of fibromatosis of the optic nerve occurred in early life or were familial.

Cheloid.¹ Although distinct in its etiology, and somewhat in its histology, cheloid is closely related to fibromatosis. It consists in an excessive development of subcutaneous fibrous connective tissue, sometimes or great as to produce large overlapping masses of the algorithm growth covered by startched skin. Two fac-



Section from a growth in a case of cheloid to show the coarse, hyaline connective-rissue bundles. (After Ribbert.)

are present in its occurrence: (1) a congenital predisposition, and critation or injury. It is especially common in negroes, and in c who suffer from it, a slight cutaneous injury is liable to be folded by its development. In a case studied in our own laboratory,

ine authorities write this keloid, from kylic, a crab's claw (from the canceriv in which the processes spread into the surrounding corium); others cheloid, a scar (from the relation of the growth to scar tissue). The latter is the neifful derivation.

gh the mally, marply ndary e surtissues

arrest crosed y may ets be ectatic,

nay be

means
nd the
ginally
oma; it
icluded
oseness
bromas
bromas
stoma),
growth.
emoval;
iginally
urrence
which

t situahis rule ney. A n often in this ith the be dis-

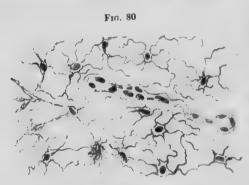
of them
nx, and
be soft

mucous included so-called rgrowth ptic and I of the the mere running of a pin point along the forearm with a force sufficient to cause reddening but not bleeding, was followed by the development of little fibroid nodules along the track of the pin. Although some cases are spoken of as spontaneous, it is probable that in all cases it follows irritation, even so slight as the pressure of a shirt stud on the

Microscopically, there is no capsule and the overgrown scar passes imperceptibly into the normal connective tissue. The fibrous tissue of the cheloid often shows thick, homogeneous bundles or strands of a hyaline appearance, between which lie fibroblast-like cells; elastic

Cheloid is liable to spontaneous absorption, and steady pressure may tissue is absent.

be followed by disappearance. Myxoma. Some pathologists doubt whether we ought to regard the myxoma as a tumor, and consider that we should speak of myxoma-



Section from typical portion of a mucoid polyp. (Collection of Royal Victoria Hospital.)

tous degeneration of some one of the various forms of connective-tissue neoplasm - of lipoma, chondroma, or fibroma -using the term lipoma myxomatodes rather than myxolipoma, etc. This is, to a great extent, true but pure myxomas of the endocardium have been described, and myxomas are recognizable sometimes The mucoid birth. polyps, so frequently called myxomas, follow chronic inflammation of the nose, and are often not mucin-contain-

ing, but merely ædematous; as soon as the ædema is sufficient to weigh down the mass of inflammatory tissue, its draining is prevented, and the condition becomes progressive, the ædema cumulative. Some

few, even nasal polyps, however, are mucin containing.

The tissue which the myxoma most resembles is not to be found in the adult body, but is the tissue of the umbilical cord known as Wharton's jelly, and the developing subcutaneous fatty tissue of the fœtus. In pathological states, we find, in the regions around inflammatory areas, fibroblasts lying in a mucinous matrix; we realize, in fact, that mucin, which is a "low-grade" protein, has some obscure connection with the development of fibrous tissue, and we recognize a connection with this development not only in the localized myxoma, but in the generalized mucinous condition called myxœdema.

A true myxoma is composed of isolated stellate cells, or polyhedral cells with processes (the so-called "spider cells"), which are separated from one another by a mucin-containing matrix, the mucin taking a differential stain with thionin. In the matrix run large, thin-walled vessels.

nt

ent

me

it

the

ses

sue

of

stic

nay

gard

ma-

one

con-

— of

oma

DYXO-

vyxo-

great

omas

been

are

e at

nasal

called

ic in-

e, and

ntain-

ent to

ented,

Some

found

wn as

of the

inflam-

lize, in

obscure

gnize a

yxoma,

yhedral

parated

aking a

The tumor is slowly growing, soft, and fluctuating, so as to seem at times cystic. It forms no metastases; a certain number of myxomas do become sarcomatous, and when they do the metastases are purely sarcomatous, and show no myxomatous characters.

Lipoma.—The lipomas are sharply defined tumors composed of fatty tissue; even if situated in the midst of fat there is no difficulty in recognizing the tumor, even if its color be not paler than the surrounding fat, as it often is; there exists some difference between normal fat and the fat of a lipoma, for where a large lipoma is present the body may progressively emaciate and yet the fat of the lipoma will not be taken to supply the bodily needs. The lipomas are usually single but may be multiple, and vary in size from the very minute ones observed in the kidney to the 63-pound retroperitoneal mass which has been Generally rounded, they may have finger-like processes radiating into surrounding tissues. They grow slowly and do not recur after extirpation. Modifications may occur, such as that part of the tumor which becomes jelly-like and mucinous, the lipoma myxomatodes; an unchanged lipoma may even be so fluctuant as to be taken for a localized collection of fluid; at times a kind of necrosis is followed by the development of oil-containing cysts; cartilage and even bone have been found in lipomas, a phenomenon which is probably to be accounted for by metaplasia.

Most frequently the lipoma is subcutaneous, especially in the region of the shoulder and arm; a curious clinical fact is that one of these tumors under the influence of gravity may change its position and lie, for example, lower down upon the arm than was at first the case. Internally, they occur in the submucosa of the intestine, in the kidney, in the brain, in the omentum, and as enlarged appendices epiploicæ; lipomatous processes may develop in connection with the joints, projecting into the synovial cavity, as in the knee.

Lipomatoid Growth.—More or less generalized, often regional, lipomatosis occurs. Steatopygy, an excessive development of the fatty tissue of the buttocks is counted a point of beauty among the Hottentots, and is so frequent that it must be counted racial. Lipomatosis affecting certain areas may be familial; and the good results sometimes obtained from the use of thyroid extract suggest that the occurrence is due to a nutritional disorder; and in fact, a diseased pituitary has been found in at least two cases of adiposis dolorosa, a disease in which the presence of the excess fatty tissue is associated with severe pain.

Xanthoma.—The xanthoma is a small, benign, fatty tumor of a yellow color, subcutaneous, sometimes multiple (X. multiplex), often found near the inner canthus of the eye (X. palpebrarum). Formed of connective tissue, it contains yellow fatty globules, in which the pigment is of the nature of a lipochrome. It is probable that the xanthoma is not a tumor but a fatty or lipochrome degeneration of

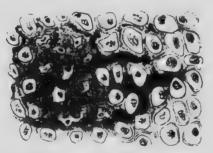
tissue. The multiple form is found associated with diabetes (X. dia-

beticorum).

Chondroma.—Chondromas are tumors of cartilage, hyaline (hyaloenchondroma), fibrous (fibro-enchondroma), or reticulated (reticulated enchondroma). They may be single or multiple, and in general have a distinct fibrous capsule. There are two varieties, the ecchondroma, and the enchondroma, of which the former is an outgrowth of cartilage where such is normally present, as in the costal cartilages, the larynx, the trachea, and elsewhere; they are truly local hypertrophies, and

are to be considered as chondromatoid. In the chondroma proper, or enchondroma, we have to deal with a mass of cartilage having no connection with a parent matrix. Such occur in many regions, notably in connection with the bones, the parotid, the submaxillary glands, the testes, the mammary glands, the lungs, and more rarely in the ovaries, the corpora cavernosa, and other organs. They do not arise from the cartilages of joints, although they may develop in the fringes of the synovial membranes, forming the "loose cartilages" of joints.

Fig. 81



Enchondroma exhibiting calcareous infiltration
(E. petrificum). (Ribbert.)





Ecchondroma of finger. (Shepherd.)

As in normal cartilage, few or no blood vessels are found in the substance of the tumor, and for this reason, if large, the mass is lobulated, the intervening connective tissue carrying the blood vessels. In the large growths, the deeper parts give place to bone (osteo-enchondroma), or calcareous infiltration occurs (enchondroma petrificum). There is also considerable tendency to central necrosis, and if a necrotic area opens to the exterior it is apt to be very intractable, and even

(X. dia-

(hyaloiculated al have idroma, artilage larynx,

es. and

to give rise to general sepsis. Occurring in the parotid and testes, the chondromatous formation is part of a teratoma. Mucinous change occurs frequently, the tissue becoming so perfectly transformed as to justify the use of the term myxo-enchondroma.

Benign and slowly growing and the control of the term of of th

Benign and slowly growing as these tumors are, nevertheless they may form metastases; nor is this only in the case of those mixed tumors where there is more than a suspicion of sarcoma, for metastatic enchondromas may show absolutely no malignant characters. We have here an example of a benign tumor showing one of the most characteristic features of malignancy, and the explanation is a difficult one; it may lie in the high grade of vegetative activity possessed by the superficial chondroblasts which become free in the blood stream, and are carried elsewhere.

Without undertaking to discuss the etiology of these tumors, it may be said that they are prone to develop in early life, especially those occurring in bones, and there they are often connected with rickets, a disease in which there is undue preparation for the formation of cartilaginous bone, and a tardy formation of the same. In the region of the epiphyses, this excess of cartilage rojects into what is destined to be the shaft of the bone, and pieces become isolated which may give origin to enchondromas or osteomas. In some parts of the body, there is a fair likelihood that "rests" form the source of origin of these tumors; for example, chondromas in the parotid may arise from the cartilaginous remains of the hyoid arch, and those of the mammary gland from included parts of the sternal cartilages, but it is more likely that metaplasia of connective-tissue cells is the cause. Many cases of enchondroma furnish instances of trauma being a preceding factor.

Osteoma.—Osteomas, defined as tumors having a growth of their own, independent of the tissue in which they exist, are rare. Osteomatoid conditions, in which a regional overgrowth occurs, of unknown origin, connected with previously existent bone, are very common. A metaplastic formation of bone in another tissue, whose ramifications alternate with the ramifications of that tissue, is not a tumor proper, but nevertheless occurs frequently, and after dealing with the tumors we shall cite some of the numerous examples of this process.

The true osteoma may occur in connection with pre-existing bone homoplastic), or apart from it in other tissues (heteroplastic). In the former case it may be superficial, derived from the periosteum, or may be within the bony substance (endosteal), and then originating either from (a) a misplaced piece of epiphyseal cartilage, or (b) from the bone marrow, in which case it exhibits no cartilaginous fore stage. It may be dense and hard or spongy and soft, but in any case it does not merge imperceptibly into the surrounding bone, so that it leads to disorption and weakening of the host bone.

Of heteroplastic osteomas, the simplest type is the isolated tumor sing from displaced periosteum in the neighborhood of a bone; this

pherd.)

l in the mass is vessels. -enchon-rificum). necrotic nd even

often shows no cartilaginous fore stage. Ossifying chondroma serves

as a further example of the heteroplastic form.

Osteomatoid.—This, as was stated above, includes all cases of localized or general overgrowth of bones in which the growth is not defined from the normal bone, is not independent, and is of unknown cause (save, perhaps, that heredity plays a part).

Such are:

1. Idiopathic hyperplasias affecting one or several bones, especially the long bones.

2. Enostoses, localized and circumscribed growths within bones, not

independent of the surrounding bone.

3. Exostoses, processes of various grades arising from the surface of a bone, not of traumatic origin. The ivory exostosis of the skull, or the ossifying ecchondroses at the ends of long bones serve as examples. It is difficult to separate from these, conditions such as myositis ossificans, in which bone gradually replaces set after set of muscles. This last should perhaps be considered as an example of the following.

Metaplastic Ossification.—This is an alteration of some part to bone, accompanying inflammation or senile changes in a tissue; examples are: (1) the "riders' bone," where bone is laid down in the adductor muscles of cavalrymen, from repeated trauma of the muscle; (2) the like case in the deltoid of the infantryman, from pressure of the rifle; (3) in the choroid; (4) in the pia, after inflammation; (5) the bony plates developed in the dura are even better examples; (6) in the heart valves and arteries; (7) in the lungs; (8) in old pleural and pericardial exudates, where bone formation often follows calcareous infiltration; (9) in various tumors—lipoma, fibroma, etc.

Odontoma.—Pure odontomas are rare, and odontomatoid conditions commoner, the growth not being independent of the cement substance.

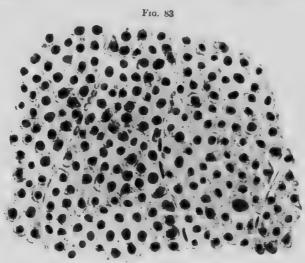
of the dentine or the alveolar periosteum of the tooth.

Bone-marrow Tumors.—Myelomas.—The myelomas are tumors of one or more parts of the bone marrow; morphologically they are like the sarcomas, but they are not malignant, do not form metastases, do not infiltrate; they are made up, not of cells that have become undifferentiated, but of cells that at their highest development are of a relatively simple type. Because the tumor tissues do not depart from the type of the original bone-marrow cells, the myelomas are typical blastomas.

The different elements in the bone marrow are these: on the one hand the cells directly concerned with the bone—the osteoblasts and the osteoclasts (or myeloplaxes); on the other hand, the erythroblasts, megalocytes, myeloblasts, and lymphoblasts—the mother cells of red-blood corpuscles and leukocytes. The cells of these two orders, widely divergent in kind and in function, can give rise to corresponding tumors, and not only this, but each kind of cell can give rise to its own overgrowth. If we realize this, and apply the principle that each kind of tissue can give origin to three orders of growths, viz., (1) typical blastomas, (2) atypical blastomas, and (3) blastomatoid,

diffuse overgrowth, we can reduce the various overgrowths of bone marrow to some show of order.

Typical Blastomas.—The Giant-celled Myeloma ("Giant-celled Sarcoma").—These grow locally, oftenest in the marrow of the long bones or of the jaw; they may be of periosteal origin, as in the giant-celled epulis of the jaw; they grow expansively, causing absorption of surrounding bone, are vascular and do not form metastases, save in the cases where sarcoma springs up in a hitherto benign growth; they do not recur; nor do they require to be very "widely" removed. Histologically, the body of the tumor is formed of short spindle cells of fibroblast type, sometimes polygonal, and giant cells are abundant. These giant cells are the "typical" overgrowth of the myeloplaxes; bony spicules and lamellæ may grow in the tumor, although the more abundant the giant cells the less likely is bone formation to occur. Finally, atypical blastomatous growth (sarcoma) may supervene in such a tumor.



Section of myeloma of vertebra. X 600. (8. Saltykow.)

Atypical Blastomas.—These are, of course, the sarcomas, which may arise (a) primarily or (b) from typical blastomas, such as the above, or (c) from blastomatoid overgrowth, such as the following:

Blastomatoid Overgrowth.—Myelomatosis (Myeloma Multiplex).—This a peculiar form of growth that affects the red marrow of bones, such the vertebre, ribs or cranium, converting it into a dark red or eldish-gray, or gray h-yellow tumor mass. It is a primary multiple beess, arising simultaneously in bones widely apart; at times the owths are soft and pulpy, at times firm; they may project up to through the periosteum, and fractures are thus common, or in vertebræ, distortion. There is no sharp definition to the areas

erves

alized efined cause

cially

s, not

ace of all, or aples. ossifi-This

bone, mples luctor 2) the le; (3) plates valves dates,

litions tance,

arious

ors of re like ses, do differtively e type tomas.

ne one ts and blasts, ells of orders, corres-

ve rise le that s, viz., natoid, of hyperplasia. Yet with this progression the gco vth remains confined to the bones, and there are no metastases in tymph nodes or elsewhere. Clinically, there may be fever, pain, and severe anemia, with albumosuria. Some of the names under which this temarkable condition has been known are malignant osteomyelitis, myelogenous pseudo-leukemia, sarcomatous osteitis, lymphadenia ossium; and our contention is that even "myeloma" is incorrect, in that it is a myelomatoid.

Histologically, there are the pure cases in which there is no overgrowth of the myeloplaxes nor any indication of the osteogenic elements of the bone being implicated. The tumor cells are derived from the cytoblastic elements of the marrow, and are myeloblastic or lymphoblastic in type; this means that we may have localized blastomatoid overgrowth of the lymphoblastic elements of the marrow without

leukemia.

Myelogenous Leukemia.—The cell growth in the above is local, but we have similar diffuse overgrowth of the bone marrow with abundant discharge of the cells into the circulation-myelogenous leukemia. Here there are in the blood great numbers of large mononuclear cells with neutrophile granulations, coupled with the presence of increased eosinophiles, "mast cells," and normoblasts. The ordinary red cells are reduced in number, the white cells greatly increased, and the myelocytes may be one-third or more of the total white cells. The bone marrow is seen to show hyperplasia, and is reddened. The main elements present are myelocytes, nucleated red cells, and numerous cells with eosinophilous granules. The great enlargement of the spleen is not primary, but is due to an accumulation of blood cells. Sometimes in the liver and kidneys there are tumors due to active growth of the myelocytes outside the capillaries; in fact, there is an overgrowth of the "leukoclastic" elements of the bone marrow, sometimes confined to their natural site and at times elsewhere in the body.

Chloroma.—This peculiar tumor, which is multiple, affecting the bones of the face, especially the orbit, the skull, the vertebræ, and more rarely the ribs and marrow, is characterized by a striking greenish or greenish-yellow tint, which fades as the specimens are kept; the pigment is said to be a lipochrome but this is not certain. The tumor is a medullary overgrowth, associated with which is a leukemia in which the prevailing cell is of the myeloblast type; evidently this is an

aberrant form of myelomatoid.

Lymphoma and Lymphomatosis.—It would be unwise to plunge into the vortex of the numerous terms employed to describe the various lymphomatous states, and to lay down what seem to us the right interpretations of these various terms. We prefer to state: (1) that just as we recognize that the lymphocytes and the leukocytes (the polymorphonuclear and eosinophile cells) have distinct origins, so we have distinct series of blastomatous and blastomatoid overgrowths originating from the tissues that give origin to these two orders of cells; (2) that just as among the overgrowths of fibroid tissue, there

con-

es or , with

eondi-

eudo-

ntenatoid.

over-

c ele-

from

npho-

natoid

thout

ut we

ndant cemia.

r cells

reased

cells

d the The

main

nerbus

spleen

Some-

rowth rowth

nfined

ng the

e, and

eenish

ot; the

tumor nia in

s is an

plunge

zarious

right

) that

es (the

so we

rowths

ders of , there

is a series of overgrowths from chronic inflammatory hyperplasia to typical fibroma and farther to atypical sarcoma, so here is an identical series. Now we can clear away the overgrowths of the "leukocyteproducing" tissues, as distinct from the "lymphocyte-producing" ones, and this we have already dealt with, since the leukocytes originate from the myeloblasts. The myeloblasts have their seat in the bone marrow; the marrow contain specific cells of different orders, viz., osteoblasts (and osteoclasts), and myeloblasts, along with other cells that are not specific-lymphocytes (lymphoblasts) and connectivetissue cells (fibroblasts). Tumors derived from these specific cells are myelomas, and of these we recognize the giant-celled myelomas and the various diseases due to overgrowth of the myeloblasts and myelocytes, namely, myelomatoid (myeloma multiplex), myelogenous leukemia, and chloroma. This leaves us free to deal with the lymphoid overgrowths proper; and in doing this, to extend beyond the overgrowths of lymphoid tissue in the bones alone to those of lymphoid tissue in general.

1. Chronic Hyperplasia (comparable with chronic inflammatory fibrosis).—This is seen in connection with tuberculosis, where there is a diffuse enlargement of lymph nodes, with or without caseation. This hyperplasia of the lymph cells present, even where bacilli are not demonstrable, is especially well shown in cattle.

2. Hodgkin's Disease (comparable with cheloid).—In the last group we dea't with cases where a known irritant is the cause of the lymph hyperplasia; here we have a hyperplasia of the same sort where the cause is unknown (despite the clinical observations in some cases pointing to tuberculosis).

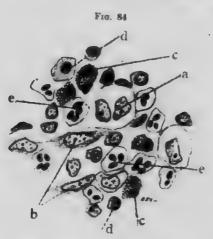
The lymph-node groups of the body are successively enlarged, often beginning with the cervical, and finally, the spleen follows suit. There is diffuse lymphoid proliferation in areas where anatomically nodes are not described. The lungs remain free, and the blood shows no pronounced change. Histologically, the characters are different from those of leukemia; there are no signs of infiltration, as occurs in lymphosarcoma; there is connective-tissue overgrowth, as occurs in the previous group, and a relative if not actual reduction in the lymphocytes and cells of the germ centres.

The same characters are found in the spleen, there being no excess of lymph cells noticed. But in areas where lymph cells are not normally prominent, there is great excess, the lymphocytes being laid down thickly around the vessels. These collections are provided with a reticulum of connective tissue, and do not infiltrate, though they may presupon and cause to atrophy the surrounding tissues. We have, in fact, a lymph hyperplasia and not a metastasis.

on hand, and the secondarily involved organs on the other, strongly that in the one we are dealing with reduction of the lymphoid chants, in the other with compensatory hyperplasia. It has been

seen that in the early stages there is in the lymph nodes a similar lyn hyperplasia, followed by exhaustion or atrophy as the connecti tissue overgrowth progresses. The picture is thus not one of malignation growth. Hodgkin's disease is not a form of lymphosarcom. or lymp matosis. It approaches much more nearly the results of chronic irri tion; it may be compared with heloid and regarded as an overgrow of the lymph tissues secondary to an unrecognized irritation.

3. Lymphatic Leukemia (Lymphocythemia). — There may be ov development of typical lymph tissue, the reticulum, the sinuses, a



Section of enlarged lymph node from case of Hodgkin's disease to show various orders of cell present, many of them of irritative or inflammatory type: a, large endothelial cell; b, fibroblast, c. eosinophi' d, occasional lymphocyte; e, polynuclear cukocyte. (Immersion lens.)

the cells being developed prop tionately—a real lymphomate overgrowth. At times this is stricted to the spleen or certa groups of lymph nodes, at tim more widely developed, even fecting secondarily the liver a other organs. Of inflammato overgrowth the indications a slight; the capsules of nodes me by distension be thickened, but the reticulum shows no correspondir overgrowth. The hyperplasia r spects its boundaries and shows r signs of infiltration. This can exi without escape of the lymphocyte into the blood, a lymphomatos without lymphocytosis; only whe an excess of lymphocytes appear in the circulation do we have tru lymphatic or lymphocytic leuke mia. It is conceivable that some cases go part of the way and ther

recede, there being, for example, a splenic tumor with temporary lymphocythemia which disappears.

4. Lymphoma (comparable with typical fibroma).—By analogy, we

know that typical lymphoma exists, although reported cases are few it is, of course, difficult to distinguish this from mere localized hyper-

plasia of a lymph node.

5. Atypical Lymphoma; Lymphosarcoma.—Since the lymph follicle contains tissues of more than one order, vessels and endothelium, along with the specific lymph cells, it is evident that there may be several forms of sarcoma originating from it-round celled, spindle celled, etc. Round-celled sarcomas of this order may be histologically indistinguishable from lymphosarcoma, and the cells of such a tumor may represent either a reversion from a differentiated connective tissue or else a lymphoma that has not greatly departed from the type of its original tissue.

milar lymph connectiveof malignant or lymphoaronic irritaovergrowth

y be oversinuses, and ped propornphomatoid this is reor certain s, at times d, even afliver and flammatory ations are nodes may ed, but the responding erplasia red shows no is can exist mphocytes ohomatosis

alogy, we s are few; ed hyper-

only when

s appears

have true

tic leuke-

that some

and then

temporary

oh follicle othelium, e may be l, spindle ologically a tumor onnective from the 6. Lymphosarcomatosis.—However widely a lymphosarcoma infiltrates the condition should not be called lymphosarcomatosis, because it is essentially by nature a localized growth. The term lymphosarcomatosis should be used to define a malignant, multiple, lymphomatoid overgrowth, of which cases have been described.

All these divisions, it will be seen, fall into three main classes: (1) productive lymphadenitis; (2) lymphomatoid (with and without leukemia); (3) lymphoma (typical and atypical).

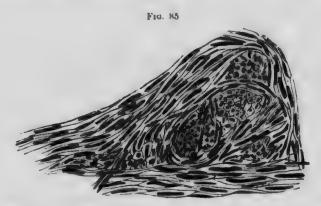
Lymphomatoid Conditions Affecting the Spleen.—Hemolytic Splenomegaly or Splenic Anelois.—Splenomegaly occurs under several clinical types. The splenic enlargement may be the only sign; there may be accompanying secondary anemia, and cirrhosis of the liver (Banti's disease), or it may be familial; or the splenic enlargement may be coupled with cyanosis and a great increase in erythrocytes, which may number 10,000,000 per c.mm. In all these cases there is a local blastomatoid overgrowth of the spleen, and in the last, it seems as if the spleen reverted to its foetal state, and became once more an active producer of erythrocytes. Endothelial splenomegaly (Gaucher's type) is a rare condition in which general enlargement of the spleen is associated with a remarkable overgrowth of the endothelial cells lining the splenic sinuses, these sinuses becoming densely filled with large mononuclear cells.

Nothing is known about the causation of either of these diseases, though Banti called attention to the fact that in the former condition there is evidence of active breaking down of the red corpuscles in the spleen, with accompanying anemia and icteroid state which may be recovered from completely when the spleen is extirpated.

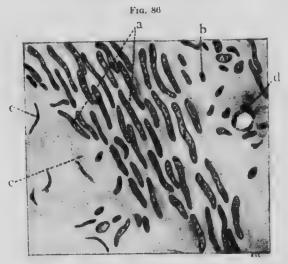
Myoma (Leiomyoma).—The uterine fibromyoma or "fibroid," is the commonest of tumors. Very frequently they are multiple, existing sometimes in large numbers, and in situation (a) interstitial, (b) submucous, or (c) subserous; in the last two situations they may become pedunculate. The individual tumor is sharply defined, and some shell out easily while others are firmly anchored by a diffuse capsule. There are two general types and all stages of transition between them: (1) the pure myoma, reddish gray and softer than (2) the "fibroid" proper, almost white, and showing the watered-silk appearance on section. Variations and modifications occur, the following being seen: i) telangiectatic tumors, in which the blood vessels are greatly dilated; 2 lymphangiectatic, in which the lymph channels are distended, leading sometimes to cedema, or to cyst formation; (3) occasionally, though rarely, hemorrhagic; (4) necrotic, an actual liquefaction at times occurring; (5) calcified, so that the mass can be cut only by the this state being preceded by fatty or hyaline degeneration.

licroscopically, all grades exist from pure myomas to what are sost pure fibromas. The beginner generally finds difficulty in dismishing the two tissues, but if the nuclei be examined, it will be that those of connective tissue are short and spindle shaped, of muscle larger, longer, rod-like, and with blunt rounded ends.

Cut transversely, too, the connective-tissue nucleus has a naked appearance, while the muscle nucleus has around it a fair amount of cytoplasm. The small tumor is preponderatingly muscular, the larger fibroid, a change due to the fact that the relatively poor blood supply causes the gradual effacement of the higher tissue. These tumors



Section of portion of a pure myoma, showing the character of the nuclei and the appearance of the cells cut longitudinally and transversely. (Perls.)



Section from a uterine fibromyoma (high magnification) to show: a, muscle cells with rod-like nuclei cut longitudinally; b, a bundle of muscle cells cut transversely; c, fibrous connective tissue around bundle, with (e) spindle-like nuclei of the same; d, a capillary.

are essentially benign, grow locally, and sometimes throughout a long period of years; clinically, they are often associated with menorrhagia or metrorrhagia, they obstruct pregnancy, and the demand for their removal is by no means so negligible as their histological nature might suggest.

It is not possible, in the present condition of our knowledge, to offer any accurate supposition as to the etiology of these tumors.

"Adenomyomas."—These are diffuse myomas of the uterus containing scattered gland tubules that exhibit no sign of active growth. Although they have led to much debate there seems considerable reason to suppose that these glandular elements are merely inclusions of uterine glandular tissue, and the tumors not true adenomyomas.

Myomas of Other Regions.—The uterme myomas have been discussed because of their overwhelming frequency and importance compared with myomas elsewhere. The sites in which they are especially seen are: (1) other parts of the genito-urinary system, the Fallopian tube, the broad ligament, the testis, prostate, kidney, ureter, and mammary gland; (2) the digestive tract, especially the stomach and intestines; (3) the skin, where they are sometimes multiple, not associated with occurrence in other parts of the body. Whether they arise from the muscle of the arteries or the erector muscles of the hair follicles is debatable, but when the universal distribution of the artery muscle is considered it seems more likely that they arise from the latter.

TYPICAL HYLIC TUMORS OF MESOTHELIAL ORIGIN

Rhabdomyoma.—Neoplasms of striated muscle fibres are found usually combined with growths of other tissues in tumors of the tera-



Imp. - - - formed striated muscle fibres from a rhabdomyoma of the ecophagus. (Wolfensberger.)

tomatous type, especially in the kidney, vagina, testis, etc., but pure rhat comyomas are found, generally small and capsulated, yet still

ance of the

appear-

of cyto-

larger

tumors

th rod-like

t a long erhagia or their e might in areas where mixed tumors are common; apart from this, however, they exist in areas where striated muscle is normally present, such as the heart, the extremities, the nates, the orbit, constants

In all these cases the fibres are of embryonic, imperfectly differentiated nature, sometimes showing only longitudinal striation, or transverie striation of only a part of the cell, and other characters, all of which point to the likelihood that they arise from cell rests

In some of these tumors the cells are comparatively undifferentiated, and these are naturally difficult to distinguish from sarcomas; in fact, malignant chabdomyona has been reported, in which the metastases showed structed nuscle elements; in both these last forms there is considerable likelihood that the tumors arise from sarcoblasts, although they may have originated from cells of a yet carlier type.

TYPICAL HYLIC TUMORS OF EPIBLASTIC ORIGIN

The Neuroblastomas. Galy such tumors as contain nerve cells should be classed as neuromas; further, if there be nerve fibres in a tumor which are in connection with a nerve cell outside the tumor, these are not independent, and so far as they are concerned, the tumor



Cells from a remain and a malignant neuro-viona for true neurona), — occively, from the sacral region, the latter from the erroperitoneal region at the — el of the portR. Beneke)

is not a neuroma. Although the true neuroma or ganglioneuros is one of the rarest of tumors, verifit must be remembered that her constituents of the nervous system originate from the same of of cells as the neurones. Just as in the overy the interview and

the cells of the Graeman foucles have a common eagin, so in the received system the positive neuroblast gives origin to four distinct for of cell. These are:

1) the neuroblast gives origin to four distinct the epondymal cells ining the cannot fithe spinal cord and the streets, in the cells of the sheath of Schwann of the medullated-instant types of blaston much found: (1) the found the cannot ganglioneuroma, or neurocytoma; (2) the glioma; the epondymoma, and (4) the neurinoma.

Neuroma. True Neuromas. amors a lar a size have been found aris g in the abomen, for example, from t solar plexus and the

medulla of the adressel, and abovin conetie with the brain, work contain ellse the type of vm athetic ganglion lls, with xones. deadrit . Found orly in lift they · avider develop ntal ano malies · ng segre. of part of the true go iglionic ro in mel h. beer and of t-macal origin other : of a coma is formed gregat or of round or pear-shaped of the glance not unlike an alveo-- 7 running from which can tire ished by special stains fine fibri (a nes); despite this fact such found to give metastases, re are practically neurosar-

roma, n it the proximal end erve becomes swollen into a mass, often strongly united by fibrost to its surroundings. This mas consists of bundles of nerve fibrils, curving upon themselves, and embedded in an overgrowth of the mido- and perineurium. The mils generally lack medullary



Still more "embryonic" neurocytoma from a child, aged sixteen months. (Drs. Tileston and Wolbach.) The bail-like arrangement of the cells with central fibrils is characteristic of an early stage in the development of a sympathetic ganglion. (Professor J. H. Wright.)

not a true tumor formant an aberrant regenerative

process, yet it has about it certain features that show relationship to a horizontation, and (2) the development does not follow all cases of ampetation, and (2) where it has once developed and been removed there is liability for a second tumor to form at the freshly exposed end of the prevention.

owever, it, such

differtion, or
racters,
s
ntinted,
in fact,
tastases

there is

Ithough

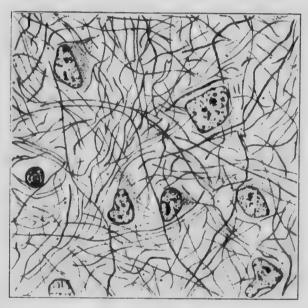
ve cells res in a tumor, e tumor

8 91

re is

of and Glioma.—The glia cells are small, round, cr oval, with a single nucleus and a small amount of protoplasm, having radiating fine processes running from one to another in all directions. These processes, like those in ordinary white connective tissue, are probably true processes of the cells that later may become separated and independent as fibrils. Tumors formed of these glial cells are found (a) in the brain, (b) along certain cerebral nerves, (c) in connection with the retina, and (d) over the coccyx, from the remains of the neural canal. In syringomyelia is found glial overgrowth that is to be regarded rather as gliomatosis (gliosis) than as glioma. Gliomas are hard or soft; the former, as found in the ventricular walls, are well defined; the latter

Fig. 90



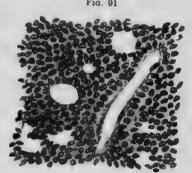
Glioma; numerous neuroglia fibrils surround the cells and run in all directions. (Mallory.)

are diffuse, infiltrating growths, not capsulated, very vascular, and liable to be the seat of hemorrhages. To the naked eye they are areas of greater translucency than the surrounding brain tissue, with a bluish tinge, and pulpy by reason of the glairy fluid in the matrix. These last are found in the cerebral hemispheres and the corpus callosum, and may be of large size, replacing and compressing the brain tissue. Neither hard nor soft forms give rise to metastases; and recent studies go far to prove that many are strictly forms of gliomatosis rather than gliomas arising from a single focus.

Retinal gliomas show more definite signs of malignancy, both in their capacity to infiltrate and to give rise to metastases. They are a single fine proprocesses, true proependent he brain, e retina, mal. In ed rather soft; the he latter small, soft, gray masses projecting from the retina into the vitreous, may invade the sclera and extend into the orbit; or filling the bulb, the tumor may erode the cornea and project externally as a fungating mass. Histologically, they are formed of small cells, without processes, arranged peculiarly around the vessels; glial fibrils may or may not be present. The perivascular arrangement suggests a perithelioma in appearance. In addition to this grouping of the cells, there are "rosette"-like groups around an apparent lumen (recalling an adenoma); but be tween the cells and the lumen is a clear layer from which minute

conical projections into the space suggest the retinal cones. These retinal gliomas are formed of cells little differentiated, and are, we hold, properly gliosarcomas.

In attempting to determine the etiology of gliomas, we are helped by the fact that in the newborn there are occasionally to be found microscopic areas formed of glia with included nerve cells. Since they are found in the white as well as the gray matter, they seem to be misplaced inclusions or overproductions of nerve tissue, evidently developmental. This, and the liability of the young to the



Section of retinal glioma, showing relationship of cells to vessels and formation of "rosettes." (Ribbert.)

tumor, indicates that some, at least, of the gliomas originate from rests, even if many are of the type of diffuse gliomatoid.

Ependymoma.—There are cysts, found in the gray matter, or in gliomas, lined by a true, often ciliated, epithelium (to be distinguished from those described upon p. 228 and shown in Fig. 76), which are evidently feetal inclusions caused by the branching of the neural canal or by the cutting off of neuroblast which in its new site goes on to form epithelium of the nature of that which lines the neural canal. That neurones and glial cells develop alike from neuroblast explains why the ependymoma is never pure, because the neuroblast so separated gives rise to not only the ependymal cells, but to the glial and neurone cells as well, so that the ependymal cyst appears as an inclusion in a tumor of gliomatous nature.

Neurinoma and Neurinomatosis.—There is a very remarkable kind of tumor which appears as multiple nodules upon the stems of peripheral nerves, associated with subcutaneous nodules, from the size of a pinhead to an orange or larger, which may reach several hundred in number. This condition has been variously known as molluscum fibrosum, fibromatosis, von Recklinghausen's disease, and many other

The general appearance of the individual tumors is that of a true file ma, moderately firm, but on microscopic examination, it is seen

allory.)

lar, and are areas with a matrix. us callone brain d recent omatosis

both in hey are

that interspersed among the fibroid tissue are individual nerve fibres, and this relationship has necessarily caused a great deal of debate. Regarding the tumors as brought about by overgrowth of the perineurium, they have been considered fibromas and wrongly termed neurofibromas. Others have recognized that the fibroid tissue is due to a proliferation of the cells of the sheath of Schwann, and believing these cells to be mesoblastic, have again held to the fibromatous theory. It has, however, been fully established by Kohn and Veroçay that

Fig. 92

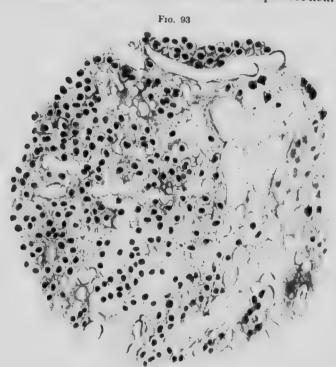


Multiple fibromatoid overgrowths along the course of the cutaneous nerves. (Hercsel.)

these cells are of neuroblastic origin, that the growths are formed from a neurogenous tissue, and are derived either from the sheath of Schwann or from precursors of the same. These tumors, therefore, are to be described as neurinomas¹ or, more accurately, as neurinomatoid, because characteristically the tumors are multiple, they occur without sharp delimitation, and along the course of the peripheral nerves. There may indeed, in some cases, be a coincident increase in the true connective-tissue elements just as occurs in a uterine fibroid: there may also be

¹ perpor, a nerve; iç, iroç, a sinew or fibre.

exhibited, as in most of these cases of blastomatoid, a tendency for one or more of the tumors to manifest malignant sarcomatous characters. Along with this condition, there is often coincident existence of gliomatous areas in the brain and spinal cord, a condition of general vegetative activity in the nervous tissue. Just as neuroblast gives origin to neurones, glia cells, and these fibre cells, so in such tumors may be found the simplest form of neurocyte—small cells like lymphocytes—and various gradations up to cells of the imperfect neurone type.



Section of a chordoma. To the right the cells are of the benign type, not unlike in arrangement to those of cartilage; to the left through active multiplication the cells are taking on a more sarcomatous type and the growth is becoming malignant. (Fischer.)

OF HYPOBLASTIC ORIGIN

Chordoma.—This is a tumor of little or no importance which repreots an overgrowth from the remains of the notochord. Occasionally small collections of large vesicular cells, separated by a homogeneous inter titial substance, are found in the intervertebral disks; most common! an abnormal growth of these cells occurs just behind the pituitary body the site of the upper end of the notochord, at the spheno-occipital synct ondrosis, in the bone, through which and the dura mater it may project as a small mass of the size of half a pea, often intimately attached to the basilar artery.

ibres, bate. perirmed due eving eory. that

rom zann be ause

ause narp may tiveo be

ATYPICAL HYLIC TUMORS

Sarcomas.—While it is logical to discuss the atypical tumors with the typical tumors of each tissue, it would be cumbersome, by reason of the multiplicity of the sarcomas; they are, therefore, here dealt with as a class, the members of which have certain characters. The term has primarily a histological significance of which these characters

are the basis. The sarcomas are richly cellular tumors of the connective-tissue type, the cells being vegetative, imperfectly differentiated, resembling the embryonic mesenchyme, and developing a characteristic interstitial substance—the "hylic" arrangement. This arrangement can apply not only to tumors derived from the mesoblast (whether mesenchymatous or mesothelial), but also to certain tumors of epiblastic and hypoblastic origin; that is, some atypical epiblastic tumors must also be regarded as sarcomas, and actively growing tumors of transitional lepidic characters are also to be considered as sarcomas. Such tumors are infiltrative and malignant, but the malignancy depends upon more than the mere form of cell present, for two tumors of equally small round cells may differ greatly in malignancy; the tissue of origin is of the greatest importance, and it may be said that the more nearly the cell approaches the cell of embryonic mesenchyme, the greater is the presumption of malignancy, but more important yet is this: that of two such tumors, the one that has departed the farther from its adult type of cell to reach this state, the one that has "reverted" the more, is the more

malignant.

The sarcomas are not capsulated, but grow peripherally and invade the surrounding tissues by growth along tissue spaces. This leads to progressive destruction of the preëxisting tissue, and absorption of all that tissue save a supporting framework around the vessels and capillaries. Thus, the tumor cells are frequently arranged in masses separated by well-marked strands of connective tissue. The sarcoma cells grow in the immediate neighborhood of the capillaries, and the vessels are composed of a single endothelial layer beneath which are the tumor cells; the capillaries are wide and the tumor abundantly vascular. It is probable, but not certain, that there is a new formation of capillaries, and that the sarcoma cells grow along these, just as the fibroblasts appear to extend outward among the growing loops of granulation tissue. In some sarcomas there are channels that have no endothelium, so that the blood seems to make its way directly between the tumor cells. It will thus be seen that hemorrhage into the tumors is apt to occur, and that sarcoma cells are liable to become free in the blood stream, so that metastases along the blood stream are characteristic of these growths, and the lung is apt to be a common site of secondary sarcoma. Of course, metastasis can occur also along the lymphatics, so that involvement of lymph nodes is not diagnostic of carcinoma.

Some observers consider that sarcomas possess no lymph vessels proper, but only occasional spaces and channels. Tumors growing as rapidly as do the sarcomas necessarily present abundant mitoses; cell inclu-

vith son ealt. The ters

the itial not tous ypo-e re-pidic ltra-cells atest uches

on of

nors, ell to more

ds to on of and asses reoma essels cumor r. It laries, blasts lation lotheen the

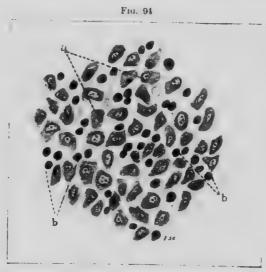
umors

in the *teristic*

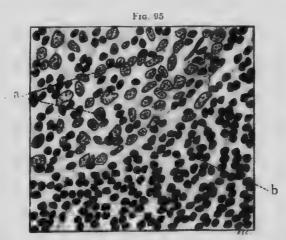
ndary

haties,

noma.



Primary malignant lymphoma of stomach: a, predominating larger cells of lymphoblastic type; b, smaller lymphocytes. (High power.)



Portion of centre of active lymph node to show relationship of proliferating "mother cells," or "phoblasts, to the lymphocytes to which they give origin: 6, lymphoblasts of large size; lymphocytes, (High magnification.)

sions, signs of degeneration, the so-called "sarcoma parasites" occur, but are not so frequent as the corresponding occurrence in carcinoma, and a frequent incident is the wholesale necrosis of a part of the tumor.

Forms of Sarcoma. -- Although lack of cell differentiation is to a large extent accompanied by retention or acquirement of increased vegetative activity, yet the stages of undifferentiation or anaplasia are not entirely identical. A cell in its neoplasia can never reproduce a stage through which it has not passed in its normal development. Thus, a glia cell never passes through a spindle-celled stage in its development, and consequently, vegetative glia cells never produce a spindle-celled sarcoma; again, the lymphocyte is a smaller cell than the lymphoblast which produces it (Fig. 95), and a lymphosarcoma formed of vegetative lymphoid cells may be of a larger cell type than the adult lymphocyte (Fig. 94); it, also, may not be of the spindle-celled type. Only those cells which in the course of their (normal) development pass through a spindle-celled stage can give origin to a spindle-celled sarcoma; such cells are the connective-tissue rell and the plain muscle fibre. The statement has been made without sufficient justification that a typical, fully differentiated tissue or a typical blastoma cannot give origin to sarcoma tissue pure and simple; to say that this process cannot occur is equivalent to stating that fully differentiated cell arises from fully differentiated cell; but this, of course, is not the case. Either there are undifferentiated mother cells normally present from which the differentiated cell arises, or as in muscle and other tissues, the differentiated cell loses its specific features and becomes vegetative, in which state it is ready to proliferate. In a highly differentiated tissue, or in a typical blastoma, cells may lose their specific properties and become simpler; they need not revert all the way; regenerating muscle fibre reverts to the sarcoblast, or again it may revert all the way and resemble the primitive mesoblast. It follows, therefore, that a tumor may show any stage from the very lowest vegetative form up to the not quite perfectly differentiated cell. Being unable to function normally the tumor cell actually never does acquire perfection in differentiation.

The vegetative types of cell are simple and alike, from the small round cell to the larger round cell, to the oval cell, to the spindle cell; thus there are to be distinguished several forms of sarcoma: (1) small round celled, (2) round celled, (3) large round celled, (4) oat-shape celled, (5) small spindle celled, (6) large spindle celled, and (7) mixed celled, which last we employ when we are not able to say that one form of cell is the predominant type. These are pure sarcomas, but there are also the intermediate sarcomas in which the cells have not become absolutely undifferentiated, so that certain tissue characteristics are preserved here and there in the tumor. As examples of this form might be mentioned fibrosarcoma, osteosarcoma, and chondrosarcoma. These more differentiated cells necessarily indicate a lesser degree of malignancy, and, on the other hand, the more vegetative the type, the greater the malignancy; since the stages through which cells pass in becoming undifferentiated differ according to the cell concerned, it may, therefore, happen that cells which look alike may have become so through much or little undifferentiation, and thus, to repeat, the malignancy of superficially similar cells may be very different.

Small Round-celled Sarcoma.—The most malignant and infiltrative growths to be found belong to this class. The cells are closely packed, stain deeply, and possess round nuclei with little cytoplasm; the

Fra. 98

large

geta-

e not

stage

us, a nent, celled

blast ative ocyte those agh a cells ment fully saroccur fully there h the differwhich

or in

ecome fibre

tumor to the n norn dif-

small e cell; small-shape mixed at one s, but ve not

ristics

s form coma.

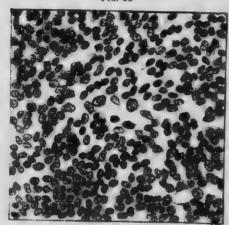
ree of

type,

s pass

ned, it

ecome

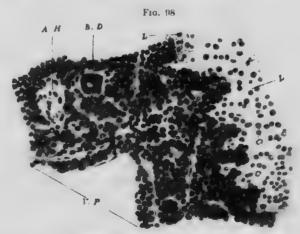


Small round-celled sarcoma from skin, (High magnification.); (From Professor Klota.)





Round-celled sarcoma infiltrating the heartwall. (High magnification).



• ind-celled sarcoma, infiltrating liver, advancing along a portal sheath: V,P, portal vein; B,D, bile duct; A,H, hepatic artery; L, liver cells.

is restitual reticulum is at a minimum. These growths are vascular readily undergo hemorrhage; metastases occur by the blood stream as the lymphatics.

--e cells are considered to arise from connective tissue, the growths, theing not unlike a cellular granulation tissue; it may be recailed

that the simple vegetative neuroblast cells, as seen in a retinal sarcoma, were of this sort, and it may well be that this is the least differentiated

and the most actively vegetative of all cells.

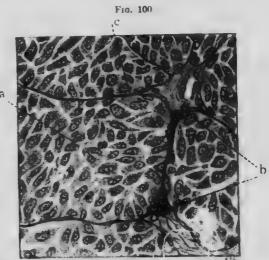
The ordinary round-celled sarcoma, specified neither as large nor small, is merely an arbitrary group whose cells are of any size midway between this and the fol-

Large Round-celled Sarcoma. Although evidently related to the two forms already mentioned, the large round-celled sarcoma is quite a different tumor. The cells are fairly large with abundant cytoplasm, not necessarily round but

Fig. 99

Large round-celled sarcoma. (Ribbert.)

sometimes oval and even polygonal. There is a fairly marked reticulum, and there may be in parts of the growth a definite connectivetissue stroma. They do not destroy and cause absorption of other tissues as readily as do the last-named forms. Such tumors are often found in connection with striated muscle; the most active, vegetative form of lymphoma presents also this kind of cell.



Alveolar blunt spindle-celled sarcoma (secondary, non-pigmented growth of melanotic sarcomaor chromatophoroma-of skin): a, cell with two nuclei, recently divided; b, pigment containing leukocytes in stroma; c, septum between alveoli, (High power.)

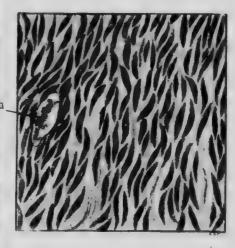
The Oat-shape Celled Sarcoma .- It is perhaps overcare which seeks to differentiate this sarcoma from the spindle-celled sarcoma, but in contradistinction to the latter members of this group have long oval nuclei lying in blunt cells. We are not prepared to state that they originate from any special form of tissue.

Fig. 101

Fig. 102



Oat-shape celled sarcoma of unknown origin.
(High power,) (McGill collection.)

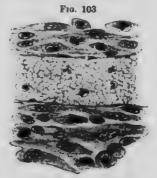


Spindle-celled sarcoma (recurrent, from forearm); a, delicate-walled blood vessel in tumor. (From Professor Klota.)

The Small Spindle-celled Sarcoma. — The cells of this form are relatively small spindles, 15 to 20μ long, with oval or spindle nuclei, the cells appearing in bundles around the capillaries just as occurs in

true fibromas. The relationship of these to connective tissue is so marked that their source is evident; in fact, the fibrils which occur in connective tissue may be found in these tumors, which, compared with round-celled sarcomas, are far less malignant.

Large Spindle-celled Sarcoma (Fig. 103).— The nuclei are large and clearer than in the last case, are often vesicular and the cells vary greatly in their size and shape. Some arise from the periosteum, recalling the large spindle cells which occur in the siant-celled myeloma; this is to be expected considering that both originate from the



Large spindle-celled sarcoma. (Ribbert.)

It will appear that there are not very sharply cut distinctions between different groups of cells that have just been dealt with; this is due the fact that undifferentiation has gone on to a different stage of

rcoma ntaining

coma.

tiated

tative

l sarlarge itrary y size ne fol-

ma.—
to the
d, the
quite
ls are
cytod but
reticucetiveother
often

seeks but in completeness in each case, just as the growing cells attain different degrees of differentiation in their formative processes.

Intermediate Types of Sarcoma. - Fibrosarcoma. - It becomes largely an individual matter with the observer as to when a given tumor will be called fibroma and when it will be called fibrosarcoma; the fibroma itself shows far more numerous cells than does ordinary fibroid tissue. It is often difficult to say when the cells become so numerous in a given area as to justify the expectation that a tumor will become infiltrative and metastatic.

Myxosarcoma.—This name is given to tumors in which the myxomatous cells with their characteristic processes are a feature, but in which also there are islands of closely packed round cells without processes, which are evidently less differentiated and more rapidly growing.

Liposarcoma.—An obvious lipoma growing slowly for a long time may take on rapid growth and show sarcomatous areas where the fat cells are replaced by a tissue that is richly cellular. Such a tumor may, of course, give sarcomatous metastases.

Chondrosarcoma.— In a rapidly growing chondroma there is sometimes found a rapid transition from unmistakable cartilage to richly cellular tissue that is evidently sarcomatous; this is a gradual transition from highly differentiated cells to those less differentiated, the reverse of what occurs in the normal growth of cartilage. As the vascular sarcoma tissue becomes formed it can be seen to advance into and replace the more typical cartilage, so that we have the picture of cartilage formation and, superimposed upon the neoplastic cartilage, a sarcomatous modification.

Osteoid Sarcoma, Osteochondrosarcoma, and Osteosarcoma.—These three terms indicate different types of sarcoma exhibiting varying grades of the process of ossification.

The osteoid sarcoma is malignant, grows rapidly, and forms metastases; in it are areas intermediate between cartilage and bone, that is, there is a homogeneous matrix in which the cells are more like bone corpuscles than cartilage cells; sometimes there are several in one space. These cells are seen to surround thickly the osteoid lamella or mass; they are polymorphous, and sometimes giant cells occur; in studying such a tumor one is convinced that the osteoid tissue is part of the tumor, and that the tumor cells have laid down the imperfect bone.

The osteochondrosarcoma is more perfectly differentiated, and there may be a deposit of calcareous salts in the lamellæ, while yet other cases show both true cartilage and true bone.

The osteosarcoma proper shows lamellæ and masses that consist chemically of true bone. Histologically it is imperfect, the bone being in isolated spicules or in thin, spongy irregular masses. Or, again, especially where the periosteum is concerned, radiating osteophytes appear. This is true bone, although in a tumor, just as there may be true muscle cells in a myoma.

largely r will be na itself e. It is a given litrative

lifferent

nyxomn which ocesses, g. me may fat cells

may, of

s somebrichly transited, the the vasnce into cture of tilage, a

These varying metasthat is,

that is, se bone in one nella or cur; in is part apperfect

d there
t other
consist

consist
e being
again,
ophytes
may be

There are some authorities who are unwilling to admit that true bone can thus exist as a part of a tumor, but the fact is actually so. Of α urse, the more perfectly and considerably this bony substance is laid down, the less malignant is the tumor, and we actually find in this series of growths widely different powers of malignancy, just as we find widely different histological pictures. The sarcoma elements may be spindle cells, polygonal cells of various sizes, giant cells (especially in central growths), and over the growth there is generally a periosteal formation of bone which is thin and readily broken, giving rise to the familiar "egg-shell crackling." As a rule, they do not form metastases until the superficial periosteum is broken through.

Rhabdomyosarcoma.—This form appears in the kidney and elsewhere, especially as part of the pluripotential tumors that have been mentioned. They may show imperfect muscle fibres, transversely striated, spindle cells with longitudinal fibrillation, or large polymorphous, often multinucleate cells of sarcoblastic type, although it is not necessarily safe to say that all such tumors arise from sarcoblastic cells only.

Gliosarcoma.—We have referred to these tumors in connection with the retina, and it will be recalled that the determination of such, as distinct from a simple round-celled sarcoma, often depends upon the retention of a few imperfect glial fibrils and cells.

PRIMARY LINING MEMBRANE OR LEPIDIC TUMORS (LEPIDOMAS)

It must be understood at the outset that while these tumors show a combination of tissues yet the essential part of them is the epithelial or glandular, that is, the lining-membrane element. It is essential to have a stroma, and the very presence of the lining-membrane elements render the stroma more proliferative, but this growth is not necessarily more than irritative, that is, it is not truly blastomatous.

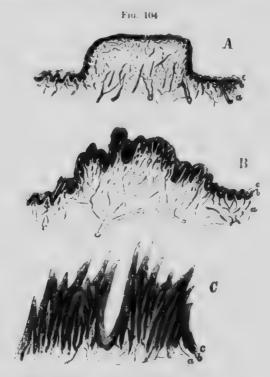
TYPICAL LEPIDIC GROWTHS

Papilloma.—The term papilloma conveys to the mind nothing but an anatomical description of the form of the tumor, and makes no statement about its histological nature, yet for the class of tumors so described there is no term which is more used by the clinician, and we have therefore to utilize this term, coupled with a qualifying adjective to indicate the nature of the papilloma under discussion. Papillomas are outgrowths from surfaces covered by epithelium, whether squamous or columnar, having a connective-tissue core to each individual process.

of Irritative Origin (incorrectly called Papillomas).—There are certain growths of irritative origin which fulfil in a sense the foregoing definition:

(a) Warts.—These are outgrowths of the corium covered by a thick hypertrophied epiderm; they arise apparently from irritation, are

common in childhood and youth, and tend to disappear. Some consider then infective, and there is considerable evidence in favor of their being transmissible (Fig. 104).



The various grades of warts and cutaneous papillomas. (Perls.)

(b) Molluscum Contagiosum.— This is a definitely contagious skin disease arising as small red masses, becoming warty, undergoing central necrosis, and discharging cheesy matter. The epiderm is not greatly overgrown, and there is as yet no definite evidence as to a parasitic origin; some interest attaches to the condition because in it have been described intracellular bodies, like the so-called cancer bodies, which at present are counted to be of degenerative origin.

(c) The Condyloma.—Condylomas are warty, nodular, or cauliflower-like growths, occurring as a multiple development on the external genitalia, in the anal region, or in the mouth. They occur as a sequel to uncleanliness in the presence of venereal infection. It is probably safe to say that syphilitic infection is always present, although the condyloma must not be confounded with the so-called simple venereal wart. The condyloma shows an outer wall of thickened overgrown epithelium lying upon hypertrophied connective tissue, which is the seat of inflammatory infiltration; essentially benign in itself, the condyloma may become the seat of a true blastomatous growth.

d) Cutaneous Horns (Hyperkeratosis). There are strange-lookin, processes of horny constitution which project tenest from the scalp

and the face; they are movable, the base being soft. The born is an overdevelopment of the keratinous material in the skin, along with a failure of the same to be rubbed off, so that an accumulation occurs. More than this, however, the cells throughout the entire epidermis may become keratinized, while the vascular core of the papilla or horn is preserved; it seems therefore, as if we had to do with a degeneration rather than a true blastoma, or even a purely irritative phenomenon. (See later under Degeneration.)

(e) Coccidiosis. To indicate how papilles matous growths may arise from irritation we may note the occurrence of papillomas due to the coccidium, which is one of the sporozoa. This parasite appears to be almost devoid of marked irritative power, and yet, as a result of its very slight irritation, there is excessive proliferation of cells, especially of



Condylomata of the vulva. (Orth.)

the epithelial type, with scarcely any tendency to necrosis. Its stimulus, therefore, appears to be little stronger than a physiological one. In the

F10, 106



tection of the wall of a coccidial cyst in the liver of a rabbit: a, fibrous capsule; b, pro- \sim d epithelium of bile duct, with papillomatous outgrowths; c, coccidia free in lumen.

the rabbit cysts are found, and in these cysts the epithelium of entire nally a bile duct becomes papillomatous, and projects

in disentral reatly rasitic e been ich at

e con-

vor of

OWergeniuel to bably h the nereal

gr /Wn is the

. oh-

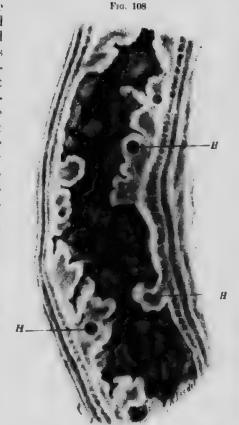
11.

in dendrifying masses; at first glance such a condition appears to be truly new growth, but the continuance and the further growth of the papillate masses occur only with the continued presence of the coccidia, and metastasis never occurs.

(f) Bilharziasis.—Even more blastomatous in character than the last is this condition, in which (Fig. 107) growths in the rectum and the bladder are initiated by the ova of Bilharzia hematobium. The eggs

of this parasite having a spike, are able to travel through the tissues and in the bladder and rectum induce hematuria and melena. In both these organs we find papillomatous proliferation of the mucosa and not infrequently this irritative overgrowth gives place to definite carcinoma. It is evident that the stimulus to growth and the habit of growth are acquired by the epithelium during the longcontinued presence of the parasite, and that the final assumption of carcinomatous process is the expression of this habit of growth, and is not dependent upon the continued presence of the egg.

Blastomatous Papillomas. — (a) Soft Papillomas. — Of these growths there are many forms,



Bilharsiasis of the rectum, to show papillomatous overgrowth of the mucosa: H, cavities filled with blood. (Looss.)

Fig. 107

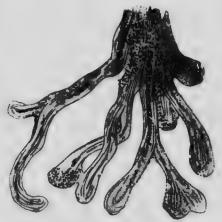


Ova of Bilharma (Schistosoma) hematobium, to show a, terminal, b, lateral spike. (Perls.)

from a mere nodular protuberance of the mucous membrane to a mass of delicate long finger-like processes; the nodular process, and each of the finger-like growths alike, has a framework or stock of connective tissue, in which run the vessels, while on the outside the covering is of the epithelium of the part, often with abundant mitoses and often, too, showing the utmost specialization, as when, in the intestine, it shows abundant goblet cells; on the other hand, it may be modified by

its position (Figs. 109 and 110) so that a growth in the bladder may be covered by round-celled epithelium like that normally found in the deep layers of the vesical lining.





Papilloma of bladder to show the long, finger-like papillomatous outgrowths. (Ribbert.)

Fig. 110



One of the fine processes of a papilloma of the bladder more highly magnified to show the central fibrous core or stock with vessels.

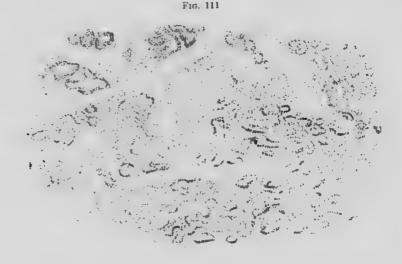
(b) Intracystic Papillomas.—These are similar papillary growths, forming an infolding and reduplication of the inner lining of a cyst or of the acinus of an already-developed adenoma, the branching processes tending to fill up the cavity of the cyst. Each of these processes has the customary core of connective tissue, and this core of connective tissue and vessels is secondary to the epithelial overgrowth; this, in fact, is to be considered as the mode of origin of all papillomas, the epithelial activity appearing to stimulate the increase of the supportive tissue. Sometimes papillomas give place to malignant growth, the cells growing inward instead of outward, infiltrating the underlying tissues.

Adenoma.—An adenoma is a new growth of glandular epithelium, typical in that the copy reproduces closely the original, or, expressed differently, having its epithelium arranged similar to the arrangement of the epithelium in the organ from which it grows; if that tissue be composed of glandular acini with definite lumina the adenoma is in the form of acini with lumina; if, as in the liver, the epithelial cells form in solid masses, then the adenoma is of solid masses without lumina; if developing from the epithelium of a duct, then the adenoma t kes on the character of a duct. There is thus a well-marked variation among the adenomas, and before being able to state how typical or atypical a tun or is, it is necessary to know from what tissue it originally sprang. Some features, however, are common to all alike.

The power of growth being relatively slight, that of function is not entired in abeyance, and the secretory cells in an adenoma are apt to one power of secretion. Adenomas of the intestine may exhibit

goblet cells and discharge mucus; of the thyroid, some form colloid, and of the liver some produce bile; and as such growths are sometimes encapsulated within the tissues, and are incapable of discharging their secretion, the secretion is apt to accumulate, distend the structure or the tubule, and form cysts, the cyst-adenomas.

In studying such a growth as the adenoma we come at once to the difficulty presented by such a fact as this, that two tumors of the same organ may develop histologically similarly, and yet one will form at the most a benign cystic growth, and the other a solid tumor



Adenoma of bile ducts, formed of acini resembling those of normal bile ducts. (Wätsold.)

mass, having some of the characteristics of the carcinoma. We have, in fact, to recognize that in the adenoma we have a grade of overgrowth, different only in degree and not in kind from the inflammatory or irritative hyperplasia of epithelium on the one hand, and a malignant glandular carcinoma, on the other. As we have done before, we can divide the overgrowths of glandular tissue into (1) irritative and congenital glandular hyperplasia, (2) adenoma (encapsulated), and (3) adenomatosis (non-encapsulated).

We have said that two adenomas may grow from the same organ, one being cystic, the other not; one being capsulated outside of the mother-tissue, another being capsulated within the tissue; one may have ducts that open and allow secretion to be discharged, while the other is closed up and may become cystic. Because some of these adenomas, like normal glands, connect with the ducts of the organ, it becomes very difficult to separate them from inflammatory hypertrophies of the organ. For example, a diffuse fibroid induration of the mammary and

may histologically exactly resemble a section taken from the middle of an encapsulated adenoma; and the same is true of the liver, where by the process of regeneration, new masses of liver cells spring up, which exactly resemble the adenoma of the liver arising without definite cause.

These similarities arise from the fact that irritative and regenerative hyperplasia, adenoma, and carcinoma are three stages which can be shown in succession by the same tissue, the differences being differences of degree and not of kind.

The cell-rest theory fails to explain satisfactorily the occurrence of the adenoma; it is more rational to think that if cells (in cell-rests) which have never attained full differentiation, may under simple stimuli take on independent and blastomatous characters, the same can be done by fully differentiated tissues. In inflammation we see these cells reverting quickly to the vegetative stage, and an atypical arrangement. Why may not the same cause that sets up independent growth in cell-rests set up independent growths in cells produced from differentiated tissues?

Histologically, the stroma is an important part of the adenoma. Typical adenomas show basement membrane between the cell layer and the stroma; when growth is rapid and atypical, that is, when the growth is carcinomatous, the basement membrane may be absent. While the gland cells and the stroma are dependent, one upon the other, the former is the more important; in fact, the growth of the stroma follows that of the epithelium, and in transplantation of adenocarcinomas in mice it is the transplanted gland cells that form the tumors, the stroma being furnished by the new host. The growth of stroma secondary to the growth of epithelium is a phenomenon of chemiotactic nature, and this secondary overgrowth is to be regarded as a reaction on the part of the body for its protection against the invader, the overgrowing epithelium. This reaction on the part of the body is a factor in the arrest of new growths, the arrest occurring in two ways. If, on the one hand, a given cell entering a tissue induces no reaction, its proliferation becomes arrested because it has no vessels and no stroma; if, on the other hand, there is excessive reaction, then the connective-tissue overgrowth may cut off the nutrition of the developing neoplasm. This merely bears out what we have previously noted, lamely, that the development of a blastoma depends upon the realiant of two factors, the proliferative capacity of the growth, and the scaetive property of the organism. We shall here deal one by one wire the different degrees of overgrowth.

Congenital Glandular Hypertrophy. An example of this is the comparing the growth of the mammary gland which may follow upon the comparing development of puberty; such glandular overgrowths have been confirmed in the confirmed mammary gland.

iritative Hyperplasia. This is evidenced by increase in size of and, due mainly to fibrosis, as occur frequently in the breast.

Glandular overgrowth, though to a moderate extent, does apparently here exist. A similar condition is the overgrowth of the mucous membrane of the digestive tract at the edge of an ulcer; prostatic hypertrophy probably belongs to the same category.

3. Adenomatosis.—This is the condition, closely related to the last mentioned, in which portions of a gland or a surface become the seat of adenoma, the overgrowth occurring, not from a single focus, but simultaneously from many foci at the same time. Examples of this form are the multiple polypoid adenomas of the alimentary tract, or multiple adenomas of the liver.

4. Adenoma Proper.— These are the demarcated, encapsulated, benign overgrowths of glands. They are not numerous compared with the examples of adenomatosis, and they appear to originate from cell-rests. Wher the cell-rest is formed of gland tissue normally communicating with the exterior, complete encapsulation results in cystic formation, and the cyst may become the seat of intracystic papillomatous growth. An absence of secretion indicates either origin from non-secreting cells, or a highly marked grade of anaplasia. Here also belong the encapsulated cystic adenomas of the mammary gland, as well as the large group of adenomas which arise from the remains of the Wolffian duct, although repail and adrenal adenomas are related very closely to the transitional lepidomas.

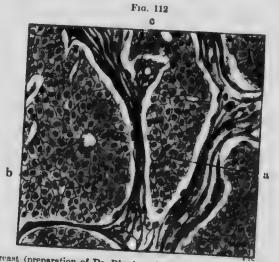
THE ATYPICAL LEPIDIC GROWTHS-CARCINOMA

Up to the middle of the nineteenth century, any malignant growth was designated a cancer. With the development of morbid histology, pathologists came to use the term cancer as synonymous with carcinoma and as sharply contrasted with sarcoma. Within the last few years, with the development of "cancer research," and with workers in this department studying both carcinomas and sarcomas, we are reverting to the older use of the term. We shall thus employ the term cancer indiscriminately to indicate a malignant growth of any order, the term carcinoma to denote only cancers of epithelial and glandular origin.

Carcinoma. We here consider atypical growths of both covering epithelium and of gland tissue, and point out that the properties of both are alike, to such an extent that the most atypical forms are scarcely distinguishable. Here if anywhere are found exceptions to the rule that the greater the degree of anaplasia, of departure from the adult normal histological type, the greater is the malignancy, for some of these carcinomas in the primary growth depart but little and are exceedingly malignant, while some that are greatly anaplastic are of relatively mild malignancy. A good example of the latter is rodent ulcer (called basal-celled carcinoma), a very anaplastic kind of growth which for months or years shows a local malignancy, but which in many cases fails to form metastases. Of those apparently slightly anaplastic.

yet very malignant, as exemplified by some adenocarcinomas, careful examination will show slight departures from the normal, such as the absence of a basement membrane, and some slight tendency to infiltration. We thus regard as carcinomatous all cases in which there is infiltrative, and apparently independent growth of epithelial or gland cells into the surrounding tissues, and this whether of slightly atypical or markedly atypical cells.

Relations of Tumor Cells and Stroma.—As in the adenomas, the primary tamor element is the epithelial cell; it makes its way into the tissues and in so doing sets up a reaction on the part of the tissue so invaded. Such reaction is often very well marked at the growing edge of squamous-celled carcinomas, where it may be evidenced by a distinctly inflammatory appearance, with a small-celled infiltration (Fig. 113). Many of

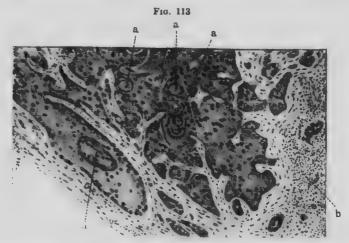


Carrin and of breast (preparation of Dr. Rhea), stained by Mallory's connective-tissue stain, to show plationship of gland-cell masses to stroma: a, mass of infiltrating, anaplastic, or aberrant gland point the normal relationships; c, the connective-tissue stroma.

these cells are leukocytes, and actually penetrate the growing tumor cells, especially if these latter are degenerated; they are often taken up and appear as inclusions in the tumor cells. By the poor staining reaction shown by the leukocytes in the region of a rapidly growing carcinoma, they are evidently themselves undergoing disorganization. There are including tissues, and apparently by phagocytosis, by extracellular ferments, and by preparatory solution, the tumor cells replace the tissue cells and use them as food-tuffs. But, on the other hand, the strong of the tissue is used to form the strong of the tumor, and the probability of the tumor may stimulate such strong to proliferate; this probability of a higher

order of tissue, as is seen in the production of new bone in a secondary carcinoma situated in a bone; or yet further, the stroma may be excited to an atypical overgrowth itself, giving rise to what is a true carcinoma sarcomatodes.

According to the degree of reaction we are accustomed to use certain descriptive words to denote carcinomas of different consistence: (1) medullary, where the cell growth is abundant, and the stroma inconsiderable, the resulting tumor being cellular, soft, and like marrow (medulla); (2) acirhous, in which the stroma is abundant, the tumor cells being scanty and compressed; and (3) carcinoma simplex, where no marked predominance of one over the other is noticeable.

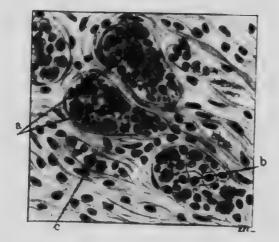


Epithelioma of lip: a, a, epithelial "pearls;" b, small-celled infiltration of surrounding tissue at periphery of new growth.

At the edge of a carcinoma the cells generally stain deeply and are intensely vegetative, and while less so centrally, there may yet in this position be mitotic figures, indicating that the growth is not only peripheral. Generally, degeneration progresses fairly rapidly in the deeper parts, and this degeneration sometimes varies according to the function of the tissue from which the tumor is derived; thus fatty changes are common in mammary gland tumors (recalling the active part taken by the cells of that gland in supplying absorbed fats to the milk), and mucoid changes in tumors of the alimentary canal (in evident relationship to the normal function of the goblet cells of the mucous membrane).

"Cancer Bodies."—These are bodies, found in and between carcinomatous cells, which have often been supposed to be parasites, and the cause of tumor growth, but which are at present considered to be cellular degenerations. Thus we encounter small, hyaline, spherical bodies of varying size, the mean size being that of a red corpuscle—which stain intensely red with fuchsin, and lie singly or in little groups attached

PLATE VI



Aiveoli from Edge of a Carcinoma of the Mammary Gland.

socied by Sudan III and hematoxylin, to show the retention of fatmany gland (specimen of Professor Klotz). a, cells distended with tatty globules; b, another cell devoid of them; c, remains of



to one another, both intracellular and free in the stroma. They are known as "Russel's bodies," after their discoverer, are met with not only in malignant growths, but also in inflammatory areas, and are considered to be examples of hyaline degeneration, but whether of red corpuscles, of cells, or of albuminous matter is still unsettled. Other intracellular bodies are of various forms. There may be a single, round, homogeneous mass pushing the nucleus aside; or such a body with a metachromatic central part, or surrounded by a clear space or a peritheral ring staining differently from the rest of the body, or a peripheral ring with processes connecting it with the cytoplasm, or, again, a central body may be surrounded by a ring of smaller globules; or through the cytoplasm may be scattered abundant small bodies lying in apparent vacuoles; or even large, amœboid, gregarine-like forms are seen, sometimes in the cell and sometimes outside it. With so many forms, and such failure to correlate results on the part of many observers, one may be forgiven for some scepticism as to these bodies being causative. Although the



Intracellular bodies of the type of Rus-1's fuchsin bodies from a case of canrous leukoplakia, in cells of the plasmail type. (Krompecher.)

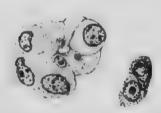


Fig. 115

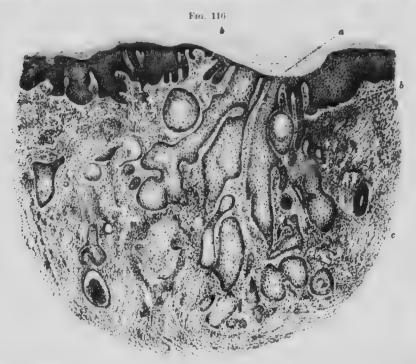
Cell inclusions in cancer cells—the supposed parasites. It will be seen that the bodies are to the inner side of the cell toward the lumen; in the position, that is, of modified secretory products. (Greenough.)

descriptions recall the successive stages of a protozoan, with progressive enlargement and final setting free of spores, yet the study of the microchemical reactions of mucin, hyaline, amyloid, keratin, and other degeneration products shows that the same reactions are obtained in the case of these bodies. It is, of course, possible that some one or more of these bodies may eventually prove to be protozoan, but in the present state of our knowledge, there is no sufficient ground for supposing that in them we have discovered the cause of malignant growths.

Site of Origin.—It is often impossible to determine the first site of a malignant growth, because by the time of operation or death it has become too extensive; but in the case of superficial growths it can often be determined that the origin is from a single point; yet even this does not mean that the tumor is necessarily the progeny of a single cell. By serial sections it has been possible to see that although in a single section the alveoli of tumor cells appear separate, yet in different lanes they are all connected in a series, or a set of series, for it may be assible to determine that there are more centres than one of origin,

that the growth is pluricentric, arising from several cells in the same region simultaneously.

Occasionally several primary growths, widely separated, are encountered, as occurs in the multiple superficial growths of chimney-sweeps or of workers in paraffin, and best of all, in the frequency with which both ovaries are affected by carcinoma. Fairly frequently, too, an individual may exhibit two or more distinct forms of primary growth in different parts of the body, although both of these may not be malignant, as for example where uterine fibromas or thyroid adenomas coexist with carcinomatous growth elsewhere. It is not possible to



Early epithelioma of tongue, to show (a) region of origin by down-growth from preëxisting epithelium; b, b, epithelial pearls; c, small-celled infiltration in surrounding tissue. (Petersen.)

go farther than to state that the same instability of tissue that permits the overgrowth of tissue in one place in a typical (benign) way, affecting numerous tissues, allows atypical overgrowth in another, or even subsequently in the same place; that is, the multiple growths arise as a sequence of a vice of development or from the development of multiple cell rests. The development of now single now multiple tumors is paralleled by the state of affairs we find in infection. There, generally, we find a single focus of origin, although in some cases there appear to be multiple simultaneous developments; the single focus (remaining single) is explained upon the presumption that the resistance of the

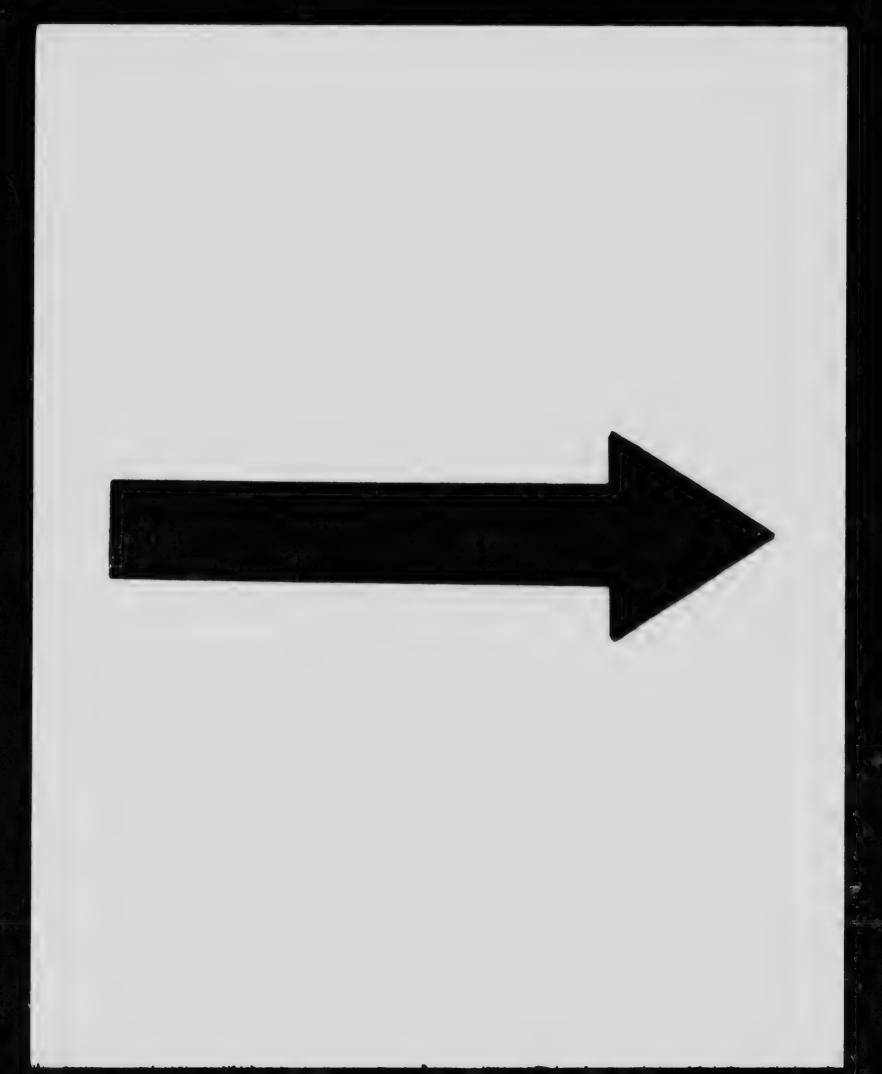
body is raised, and further invasion at other points is resisted. In a like way, when tumor growth originates, the body resistance is sufficient to prevent further development elsewhere, although not strong enough to overcome the tumor growth already instituted. That this resistance is real is shown by the fact that a mouse inoculated with carcinoma is immune to a second inoculation, but if the primary growth be removed this immunity is quickly lost.

Squamous-celled Carcinoma (Epithelioma). Tumors of this order originate from squamous epithelium, and are, as such, chiefly of epiblastic origin; but since hypoblastic lining membrane may be of squamous type, as in the æsophagus, this also may give rise to squamous-celled carcinoma, and as the skin glands of epiblastic origin can give rise to gland carcinomas it is evident that no absolute distinction can be made in the way of considering one of epiblastic and the other of hypoblastic origin. According to its relationships and its functions, a given lining membrane develops squamous or columnar or cylindrical epithelium, and according to the type of the mother tissue is the malignant growth that arises from it.



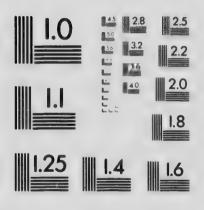
Epithelial pearl from section of epithelioma of tongue to show structure, (Immersion lens)

The squamous-celled carcinoma presents solid columns of cells passing in various directions, and in sections cut now transversely, now longitudinally, now obliquely, lying in a relatively abundant, vascular stroma, which may show considerable "small-celled" infiltration (Fig. 116). In the typical column there is an outer layer of closely set cells, staining deeply, which represents the Malpighian layer. Within this may be several layers of "prickle-cells," which, as the centre is approached, become less well stained, flattened, and finally keratinized. Thus the centre of the column comes to be formed of concentric, flat, keratinized cells, staining strongly with eosin, and constitutes on section the epithelial pearl. The formation of the pearl can be understood if we amagine that the skin, instead of growing down in a solid column, is independent of the projected part would be those of the Malpighian layer,



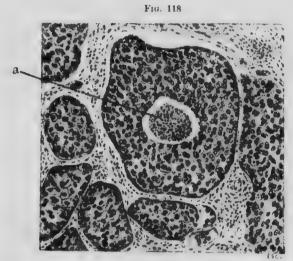
MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)





and the innermost ones the normally keratinized cells of the surface. If the imaginary finger were now withdrawn, and the projection laterally compressed to oblite at the space left by the finger, the solid column so resulting would show precisely what is seen in a down-growing process of epithelium. In less typical growths, the differentiation between the cells of different layers is by no means so clear, and with greater degrees of anaplasia the cells may be round, polygonal, or even spindle-shaped, as may happen in rodent ulcer (Fig. 119), and in this connection it is to be remembered that the extreme anaplasia is not necessarily a sign of extreme malignancy. These tumors which show a failure of differentiation toward flattened and keratinized cells have been called the basal-celled carcinomas, on the ground that such arise wholly



Impure or transitional epithelioms of antrum of Highmore ("basal celled carcinoma"), in which instead of central keratinization and pearl formation, there is central necrosis and autolysis (a), with production of lumen-like space,

from the basal cells of the Malpighian layer, although, as a matter of fact, as this is the actively growing part of the epithelium, all the tumors arise from it; it is the degree of anaplasia, the incapacity to develop beyond a certain point into the flattened and keratinized cells that determines the existence of such tumors. There are certain differences to be seen in the squamous-celled carcinomas according to the site of their origin. Skin and tongue tumors are apt to give well-marked pearls; esophageal tumors are not so apt to show them, just as normally in the esophagus the keratin development is not marked. The more rapid, too, the growth, the more atypical it is, and the less apt are the differentiations to appear, just as the process of keratinization on the skin requires the lapse of considerable time, and a constant slow progression of removal from the deeper, better nourished layers below;

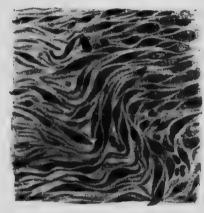
where the growth is rapid and the cutting-off of the cells from their nutrition correspondingly hastened, more active degenerations (even necrosis) are liable to occur (Fig. 124).

F10. 119



Portion of edge of a rodent ulcer.

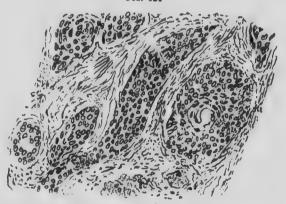
Fra. 120



Part of the same at a more highly magnified, to show assumption by the epithelial cells of a spindleshaped type. (Krompecher.)

Squamous-celled carcinomas are found occasional in regions which normally possess columnar epithelium, such as the larynx, bronchus, stomach, uterus, and gall-bladder. It is in these very regions that we encounter, either as the result of metaplasia or otherwise, islands

Fig. 12



Aberrant squamous epithelioma of gall-bladder. (Von Hansemann.)

these tumors originate. They are not infrequently mixed, showing epitheliomatous and glandular carcinomatous constituents.

in which dysis (a),

surface.

n later-

e solid rowing

itiation

or even in this is not show a ve been wholly

tter of numors evelop s that erences site of narked rmally e more tre the on the

w pro-

below;

Gland-Colled Carcinoma.—These tumors differ somewhat according to the structure of the mother-tissue; from tubular glands we are apt to obtain tumors that show, or attempt to show a tubular arrangement; from acinous glands, tumors that have a grape-like arrangement; from the liver, a tumor of cells arranged in solid masses running in irregular strands. As before stated, it is necessary to consider the tissue from which it arose, before one can say how typical or atypical is a certain tumor. In the tumors which show a distinctly glandular form, there may be a relatively orderly arrangement, with an attempt to form lumina or, on the other hand, there may be no such attempt, so that we arrive at the forms in which the gland formation is lost and solid masses of cells occur with more or less abundant stroma, according





Adenocarcinoma of rectum (from preparation of Professor Klotz): a, section across tubular downgrowth with large lumen; b, more solid mass of aberrant gland cells forming multiple lumina

to the amount of which, as already stated, we call the tumor medulary, scirrhous, or simple. To make any farther-reaching classification of the gland carcinomas is hardly necessary; at most it may be convenient for descriptive purposes to define a tumor by an adjective descriptive of the form of its cells, as columnar, cubical, etc.; the same carcinoma may, in different sections, show pictures so diverse that one is in danger of laying too much stress upon the characters that appear predominant in this or that section.

Degeneration.—The superficial carcinomas tend to ulcerate, by reason of the ill-control exercised upon the blood supply and the exposure to trauma or infection against which they are unable to protect themselves. Extensive mucoid change, "colloid" degeneration, occurs, especially in the carcinomas of the digestive tract; the tumor cells seem

Fig 123



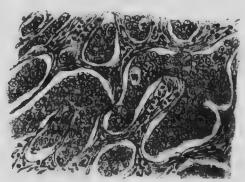
Medullary cancer. (Ribbert.)





Searrhus of breast. The cells are compressed and degenerated and the stroma relatively abundant. \times 250.

Frg. 125



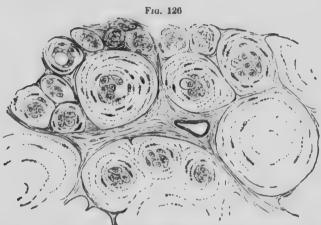
Carcinoma simplex. (Ribbert.)

ılar downlumina.

ording are apt ement; ; from irregutissue al is a r form, mpt to tempt, ost and cording

medulfication be conljective ne same hat one appear

ate, by xposure t themoccurs, lls seem to retain the power of producing mucin, but are apparently unable to properly excrete it, so that it becomes heaped up in the cells, distending and eventually killing them. Whole alveoli may suffer from this change, so that careful search is necessary to discover cells to give a clue to the nature of the tumor.



Colloid cancer, showing large alveoli with cell remains, within which is contained the gelatinous colloid material. × 300. (Rindfleisch.,

Of all tumors, caremomas or malignant epithelial growths are the most important, both to the pathologist and the clinician. Judging from statistics they are rapidly increasing in their frequency, and when not recognized early are so hopelessly fatal, that it becomes of the highest importance to recognize them at the earliest possible moment and so permit of their removal before they have infiltrated too extensively.

THE TRANSITIONAL LEPIDOMAS (MESOTHELIOMAS AND ENDOTHELIOMAS).

It will be recalled that our classification grouped together all those lining membrane tissues of mesothelial and mesenchymatous origin, derived secondarily from the mesoblast, and determined that tumors arising from these should form a separate class, the secondary or transitional lepidomas. Of these there are four groups: (1) tumors arising from the developments and vestiges of the Wolffian and Müllerian ducts; (2) those arising from organs which, while they come into intimate relationship with these, nevertheless as regards their essential constituents, are of separate mesothelial or mesoblastic origin (ovaries, testes, kidneys; with this group may be included the adrenals); (3) other mesothelial tumors derived from the serous surfaces, and (4) the endothelial tumors.

able to istendm this give a

latinous

d when of the coment exten-

those origin, cumors ary or cumors llerian timate netitutestes, other

endo-

1. Urogenital Duct Tumors.—Whether the urogenital ducts gain a secondary lining of hypoblast or epiblast or whether, because of their very early differentiation, the properties of their mucous linings are relatively stable and fixed, certain it is that the tumors derived from them are usually of a purely lepidic type—true adenomas and true carcinomas—with very little tendency to take on secondarily hylomatous (sarcomatous) development. Thus, in the uterus and prostate, for example, we get pure adenomatous and carcinomatous growths. Yet, though rarely, it does happen that a tumor of one of these areas may show most marked hylomatous characters (as in one of our cases of prostatic tumor where the primary growth was typical carcinoma, but the extension sarcoma-like, in the judgment of some well-known pathologists). Such tumors have clearly transitional properties.

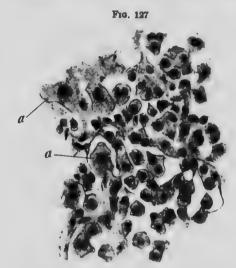
2. Tumors of the Ovary, Testis, Adrenal, and Kidney.—In considering the tumors of the kidney, it is necessary to remember that the Wolffian duct provides the distal, collecting part of the tubule, and the mesenchyme the glomerular epithelium and that of the main part of the tubule. In the ovary and testis the primitive kidney, intimately connected with the Wolffian duct, is involved, along with the germinal mesothelium. Thus it comes that, while in these organs we meet pure adenomas showing no sign of reversion, we also find a series of transitional tumors which in places appear to be adenomatous and in other places sarcomatous, and yet other areas where one passes into the other, and the cells in the sarcomatous areas may even be spindle shaped. Such tumors, once for all, dispose of the idea of the strict bounds that were formerly supposed to exist between carcinomas and sarcomas, and that such tumors can exist is due to the common embryogeny of the primitive tissues.

Adrenal Tumors.—It has been said that there are in the ovary, testis, and kidney, tumors of fixed type, which fixity is perhaps due to the stability of the Wolffian epithelium. In the adrenal, however, there is no such doubtful origin, and yet we find in it transitional tumors.

The adrenal, it is true, arises from two sources: the medulla originates in connection with the sympathetic nervous system, the cortex from mesothelial elements. In the medulla originate tumors that are true meanings, with rudimentary ganglion cells and non-medullated fibres, which evidently arise from cell rests of the sympathetic system; the cortical tumors, however, are entirely different.

First, there are accessory adrenals; they are composed of cortical tissue, lying in the adrenal capsule or in the adrenal itself or outside it, or even in the kidney and more rarely in the liver, while at times they have been carried down in development and appear in the ovary or testis. When such are found to hypertrophy, we deal with an adenomatous phenomenon. These tumors show the typical cortical tissue, columns of cells lying in a meshwo k of capillaries, the cells containing that and myelin droplets. At times, instead of small growths, we find tumors of large size, in which we have the normal appearance of

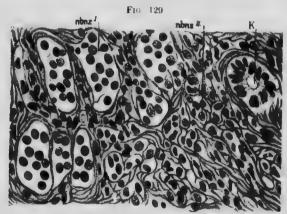
columns of cells, the cells large, and crowded with fat and fat-like globules and glycogen, which last is constantly present in the growing adrenal. Such tumors, again, are evidently adenomatous. But



From the edge of a small nedule of new growth in the adrenal cortex, showing every transition from a, cells undistinguishable from the surrounding cells of the cortex to small cells with deeply staining nuclei of sarcomatous type. (Adami.)



Similar conversion or modification of cortical cells of adrenal into tumor cells. (Woolley.)



Hypernephroma of kidney. Transition from adenomatous to sarcomatous type of growth: $nbnz^1$, adenomatous overgrowth of solid columns or masses of cells of adrenal type; $nbnz^1$, transition to sarcomatous arrangement; K, a kidney tubule involved in the growth. (Debernardi.)

there are other tumors which in parts may be like these, and in other parts show cells smaller, less fatty, more deeply stained, with transitions from adenoma to sarcoma, and definite sarcomatous tissue; these may

d fat-like e growing ous.

show metastases that are clearly sarcomatous. All these, to use the modern expression, are homotopic hypernephromas (hypernephros, the The name hypernephroma is more commonly employed in connection with a remarkable tumor of the kidney, in the belief, first propounded by Grawitz, that tumors of this order found in the kidney, originate from adrenal cell rests, that they are heterotopic hypernephromas. It cannot be said that there is a complete consensus of opinion as to the nature of these renal growths. Possibly some of those which are found in the kidney cortex arise from the kidney instead of the adrenal, that is, are nephromas instead of hypernephromas. The two cortices, that is, of the kidney and the adrenal, are somewhat related embryologically so that tumors arising from them must possess closely related characters. This view is supported by the latest workers on the subject, namely, Wilson and Davis. When such a tumor of the kidney tends to form tubules instead of solid columns of cells, its renal origin is a reasonable supposition.

These tumors are apt to be vascular, the cells being in close contact with the capillaries, and they are prone to hemorrhage; metastases by the blood stream readily occur, and especially is the tumor apt to grow by continuity along the veins to the vena cava.

A useful term to describe all these transitional tumors of the adrenal, kidney, ovary, and testes is mesothelioma.

A mesothelioma is thus:

I. A tumor arising from tissues which, while of mesothelial origin, possess in the adult state lepidic characters.

II. When typical and of slow growth, it is an adenoma.

III. When atypical and of rapid growth, a sarcoma, although transitions between adenoma and to be seen.

IV. The secondaries are matous.

3. Mesotheliomas Surfaces.—These are flat, nodular tumors, spreading locally er the pleura, more rarely the peritoneum or pericardium, looking to the naked eye like a localized inflammatory thickening, and under the microscope, like a carcinoma. They evidently arise from the endothelium lining the serous cavity affected. A relatively abundant stroma is present, containing elongated acini, formed of irregular, swollen, often cubical cells. Here we deal with a carcinoma-like tumor that has originated from the part of the mesoblast that has taken up a lining-membrane function.

4. Endothelioma.—The endothelioma is a tumor arising from the lining cells of a vessel, and may be a hemangio-endothelioms, from a blood vessel, or a lymphangio-endothelioma, from a lymph vessel; in a tumor of long establishment it may be difficult to make the distinction. In discussing overgrowths of blood vessels, we have to consider first the typical ones, and this leads us to the consideration of some tumors

that are not blastomas, along with some which are.

Angiomas.—Most so-called angiomas (tumors having vessels as their main constituent), whether hemangiomas or lymphangiomas, are not true

tion of cor-

umor cells.

with: nbn21. ransition to

in other ansitions ese may

blastomas; they possess no power of independent growth. Mere dilatation of spaces, even if preceded by aplasia and followed by atrophy of the surrounding tissues, is not growth; nor is the increase in length of a vessel (as in a cirsoid aneurysm), nor increase in the thickness of walls (as in cavernoma) to be considered as more than physiological. We find widening of preëxistent vessels, either congenital, due to a lack of coördination between the amount of tissue to be supplied and of vessels to supply it, or postnatal, due to obstruction (as in hemorrhoids) to compensate for which the capillaries undergo dilatation. But this is not blastomatous growth. Properly, most of what are called angiomas are angiectases, or dilatations of vessels produced, not by virtue of independent cell growth but by some physical force or other stimulus. The angiomas proper will be dealt with later.

Blood Vascular Tumors ("Hemangiomas") which are not Blastomas.—
1. Obstructive Telangiectases.—The best-known example of this is the hemorrhoid. The hemorrhoidal veins of the anal region communicate with the main and with the portal venous system; situated close to the surface and poorly supported externally, obstruction to the onward passage of blood leads to dilatation. Similar capillary and venous dilatation occurs in "nutmeg" liver, in the vessels of the nose and cheek,

and in the frequently observed varicose veins of the legs.

2. Aneurysm.—This is the dilatation of an artery produced as a result of weakening of its wall. The only form of aneurysm which might at all be considered as angioma-like is the form known as cirsoid, which may show itself at birth and grow rapidly afterward, having a tortuous, worm-like appearance, and sometimes reappearing in the same region after removal. It is probably due to a combination of congenital weakness of the wall with inadequate discharge of blood from the vessel.

3. Congenital Telangiectases.

(a) Telangiectatic Nævi.—Some nævi (pigmented moles) are purely cutaneous outgrowths with melanin-containing cells; the majority contain, in addition, dilated capillaries or may indeed be areas of simple telangiectasis ("birthmarks"). The "blue nævus" is an extreme grade of the same condition, often very extensive. The association of telangiectasis with congenital pigmentary disturbance suggests that we are dealing with a vice of development; the simple birthmark is a capillary dilatation, and the same state may be found in bone, muscle, or even in the brain. The blue nævus has larger spaces, where, by pressure atrophy, septa hav been broken down, while the septa that yet exist and the containing capsule indicate overgrowth from pressure—stress hypertrophy.

(b) Cavernoma.—This form can scarcely be separated from the foregoing, and is a frequent abnormality of the liver, in which it is found most frequently of the size of a pea, although occasionally as large as an orange. It is supposed but not certainly known that some are congenital, while in others it may be that a localized atrophy of

liver cells is followed by compensatory dilatation of the capillaries. Microscopically, a cavernoma consists of large irregular blood spaces,

communicating one with another, lined by endothelium and having septa of a fibrous nature, in which often are seen pigment particles. Thrombosis or calcification with formation of phleboliths occurs in them. Their congenital origin is ascribed to the failure of the original capillaries to become clothed with or to

atation

of the

th of a

of walls

l. We

a lack

and of

rhoids)

this is

giomas of inde-

mulus.

stomas.
s is the
unicate
l close

to the

venous

cheek.

d as a which

cirsoid,

wing a

in the
tion of
blood

purely ajority reas of xtreme ciation aggests hmark bone, spaces, ile the growth

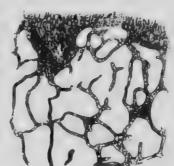
m the

h it is

illy as

some

shy of

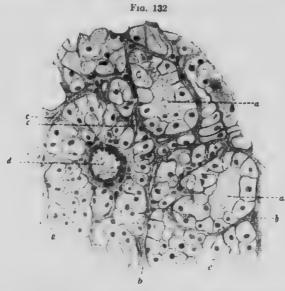


Section of small cavernoms of liver, showing the cavernous and communicating vascular spaces, from which the blood has been removed. (Ribbert.)

Fig. 130

Cavernoms of liver. Gross appearance. (After Ribbert.)

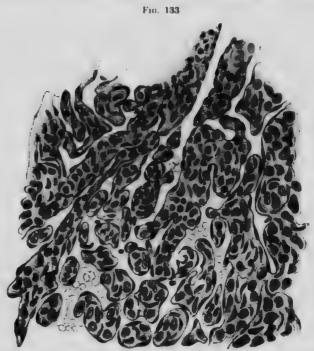
enter into connection with liver cells; and a strange fact has been noted, namely, that they are not connected with surrounding capillaries, and,



trom a hemangio-endothelioma of bone: a, large vascular spaces filled with erythrocytes and c, ended by large, clear, cubical endothelial cells, which in parts, as at c, form solid masses; t, larger and c, smaller bloodvessels. (Driessen.)

often they show no sign of independent growth and are not blastomas.

True Typical Blastomatous Hemangiomas.—Angioma Simplex.—The true angioma shows an actual proliferation of capillaries with some ectasis, and the striking feature is the endothelium, which is largerich in cytoplasm, and often more than one layer deep. These have been found in the skin, chorion, and muscle, and the tumor consists of a congeries of such proliferated endothelial tubules—sometimes called the benign angioma. Cases which show departure from the type event to the extent of showing columns of cells instead of tubules ought to be classed with the hemangio-endotheliomas—the atypical angiomas much more so when they exhibit metastases. In the endothelia growth we see the one main factor which makes these blastomas.



Section from a case of hemangicina simplex, exhibiting progressive enlargement and extension.

Lymphangioma.—Here, as in the hemangiomas, the majority of tumors called lymphangiomas are really lymphangiectases. These may be independent or may occur in connection with tumor growth, in which case the angiectasis is subordinate to the tumor growth dilated lymph channels are often seen in connection with all forms of overgrowth. When independent and unassociated with neoplasms of other orders, lymphangiectasis may be inherited or acquired, and is one of three grades, between which occur all stages of transition.

1. Simple Lymphangiectasis ("lymphangioma simplex").—These occur congenitally as slightly raised areas upon the skin breaking through

easily, and when broken, "weeping" persistently (lymphorrhos). They occur most frequently on the face and neck, and vary greatly in the depth they extend into the tissue. Anatomically like these, but acquired, are the dilatations of lymph channels secondary to obstruction that are found in elephantissis (filarial).



Section from a lymphangiectatic polyp of the nose, showing the greatly distended lymph channels lined by delicate endothelium and the codematous interstitial tissue. (High power.)

2. Covernous Lymphangiectasis ("Lymphangioma cavernosum").—These correspond to the cavernomas but contain lymph, not blood; mostly congenital, they include examples of macroglossia (enlargement of the tongue), macrocheilia (enlargement of the lip), and other forms of congenital elephantiasis, brought about by a defective ability of the tissues to discharge the lymph.

3. Cystic Lymphangiectasis.—The most striking examples of this are found in cases of "cystic hygroma," where multiple large, clear cysts occur below the ear, or submaxillary, or above the clavicle. The swelling is tense, and the large cysts often do not communicate with one another; they a e lined with endothelium and have strong, fibrous walls. This is not due merely to obstruction, but the secretory activity of the endothelium is likewise responsible. Not to be confounded with it is "cervical hydrocele," where a cyst, lined by epithelium, arises from part of a cervical duct or fissure. A true hygroma may appear in the sacral region, a form of the congenital sacral tumor.

Atypical Angiomas.— Hemangio-endothelioma.—The most characteristic example is that developing beneath the dura mater, where it forms

d extension.

plex .- The

with some

h is large.

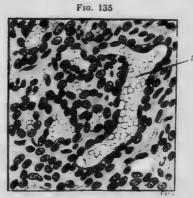
These have

consists of

mes called type even s ought to angiomas; endothelial tomas.

ajority of es. These or growth, or growth; I forms of oplasms of and is one

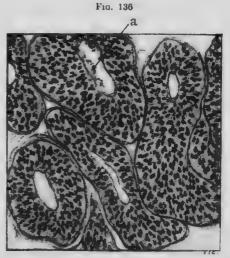
hese occur g through nodules that displace brain substance or spread as sessile masses. The appearance of the microscopic field is striking; the tissue consists



Hemangio-endothelioma from nose of child (Dr. Klotz), showing development of new capillaries (a).

numerous whorls of concentrical disposed cells, which are flattene but not tightly packed, especial at the centre, where one may ofto distinguish the lumen of the bloc vessel. If cut in a direction ne perfectly transverse, the mass appear oval or curved, and in an case there may be between them good deal of cellular fibrous tissu The whorls may show hyaline calcareous change, in which last car the tumor is called a psammom The psammomas, sometimes mu tiple, appear to have always th endothelial origin and the rapidl growing ones are sarcomatous.

Lymphangio-endothelioma.—When there is no perfect whorling of cells around the capillaries, growths of this nature may be considered as arising from the endothelium of lymph channels.



Section from a perithelioma or perithelial angiosarcoma (from the collection of Dr. Rhea), showing the relationship of the central blood vessel a to the new growth.

Perithelioma. Tumors are sometimes found showing capillary channels cut in various directions, lined by endothelium, around each

¹ Many object to this term: it is permissible if understood as an abbreviation for "perivascular lymphangio-endothelioma."

of which channels is a collection of cells, many layers deep, arranged radially. This arrangement in rows at right angles to the capillary axis is characteristic, and has led to the supposition that they arise from the endothelium of the perivascular lymph channel. The cells farthest from the vessel are evidently the oldest and probably from this cause are the most likely to degenerate; hyaline change in such areas gives perfect examples of the cylindroma—a term used to designate these and allied tumors that are formed of a collection of cylinders, each cylinder being a mass of cells surrounding a lumen, and themselves surrounded on the outside by a zone of hyaline change.



Section from an alveolar melanoma or chromatophoroma of the great toe. The cells in general archere seen to be free from melanin granules, but these are present in occasional cells both of the tumor (a) and of the stroma (b). At c, some of the melanin-containing cells are drawn separately.



Pigment-containing cells from a spindle-celled melanoma. (Ribbert.)

Melanoma.—There is a great deal of uncertainty about these tumors, which are characterized by the presence of chromatophores, that is, coals which bear pigment, whether they be in the skin, the mucous membranes, or the choroid of the eye. These cells are found, normally, in the skin of the anal region or the pigmented areola of the breast, and exist in the pigmented warts that are so common on the skin. The pigment is melanin, an iron-free protein or protein derivative, often can always a sulphur. We do not know surely if these cells are epiblastic for a subblastic in their origin, whether they are epithelial or supportive

Rhea), showing

asses. The

consists of

ncentrically

e flattened

, especially

may often

f the blood

rection not

he masses

and in any

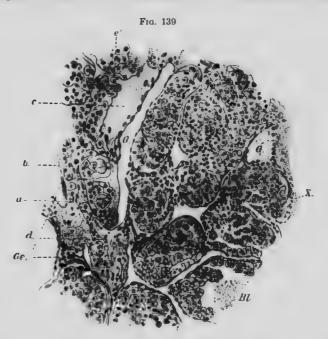
een them a rous tissue.

hyaline or ich last case premional times mulalways this the rapidly latous. whorling of considered

capillary ound each

reviation for

in their nature, and some of the tumors are alveolar, suggesting a carcinomatous origin (Fig. 137), others, more particularly those arising from the choroid of the eye, are non-alveolar, with cells of the type of a spindle-celled sarcoma (Fig. 138). The tumors vary in color, from white (especially secondaries) to brown or black according to the amount of pigment present; they are highly malignant, and the secondaries are apt to be exceedingly abundant. Microscopically, as above noted, the growths differ greatly. The most likely explanation of their varying properties is that one kind of cell, the chromatophore mother cell, of lymphangio-endothelial origin, gives rise under different conditions of vegetative activity to carcinoma-like or sarcoma-like tumors.



Tumor of peritheliomatous type of the carotid gland: G, vessels; Bl, hemorrhage into a column of cells; at d the cells of the growth are taking on a more connective-tissue type; at c, hyaline degeneration.

Other Tumors of Doubtful Relationship.—Cholesteatoma.—This is found especially related to the membranes of the brain, and is characterized by the presence of pearly nodules. The cells are of epithelial or endothelial type and among them may be cholesterin crystals. They are by most considered as endotheliomas, but the finding of hair follicles makes this not so clear. The name is, unfortunately, most commonly applied to a tumor found in the external auditory meatus and the middle ear, which is not a blastoma, but a condition allied to hyperkeratosis, an accumulation of flattened epithelial cells, which have not been cast off.

g a cararising type of or, from to the seconds above of their mother t condi-

mors.

tumors of the Carotid Gland.—The nature of the "carotid" gland being obscure, it might be expected that the acture of the tumors arising from it would also be obscure. These are at times like the peritheliomas and the sarcomas. Similar difficulty is found in the case of the coccygeal gland, and the perithelioma-like tumors that arise from it.

A THEORY OF NEOPLASIA

It will be evident from the foregoing that some growths owe their origin to cell-rests; such are the teratomas and the teratoblastomas, the tumors originating from persisting rudiments of embryonic structures (gill clefts or branchial cartilages), and from cells displaced during the course of development (aberrant hypernephroma, columnar carcinomas in regions where squamous epithelium normally exists, etc.).

The idea of cell-rests has been known for long by Cohnheim's name, but, useful as it is, it gives no clue to the reason why tumor growth springs up from one cell-rest and not from another; even on Cohnheim's line we may go farther and say that new growths arise also from cells which have undergone not congenital, but postnatal displacement, as happens i squamous-celled carcinoma arising in a scar, or in columnar carcinoma from the edge of an ulcer. But cell displacement is not the essential. Indeed, certain neoplasms arise from provedly undisplaced cells, and by actual transformation of the tissue cell into the tumor cell. Thus has been described the change of liver cells, the cell losing much of its nuclear chromatin and becoming granular, then an enlargement of the nucleus, and a final acquirement of abundant protoplasm, no longer granular; and all this happens while the cell is still connected to its fellows. This is the process we have referred to as undifferentiation or anaplasia. It is by a process of change like this that we can understand the blastomatoid growths, which develop not from a single cell but by a generalized proliferation of the specific elements of a tissue. the blastomatoid cells showing all gradations from simple hypertrophy to pronounced malignancy. A general theory upon which to base neoplasia has been, for example, to consider it as the result of the removal of tissue restraint, while less widely-reaching suggestions have been the attempt to show a parasitic origin for all neoplasms. All these factors may be present, but no one is adequate to explain all cases. An adequate explanation will have to show some influence always present in the cell itself, rather than an external stimulus or a series of external stimuli.

The Habit of Growth.—We have attempted to show that cell life is dependent upon the never-ceasing activity of exchange between nucleus and cytoplasm, between cytoplasm and food, between nucleoplasm, cytoplasm, and the detached ions that mean ferment action; energy can be expended in the direction of growth, of function, and of proliferation, the last occurring when a certain physiological degree of growth has been attained. If now cells be placed so that no function

o a column c, hyaline

This is characpithelial. They follicles mmonly and the hypernave not is demanded of them or permitted to them, while they continue to gain nourishment, they may remain vegetative or become vegetative, and acquire a habit of growth, losing the habit of function mere existence of immature cells or of cells that have passed from t differentiated form to a less differentiated form, is not enough; cells must assume this habit of growth and lose the habit of function before they can originate a neoplasm. A cell that is ready to be the starting-point of a neoplasm differs from an embryonic cell; the latter has the potentiality of differentiation still before it, the former has lost it. As suggesting how the cell has lost it, we put forward Oertel's hypothesis that as in the protozoa we find in some cells two nuclei, one associated with reproduction and the other with the functional activity of the cell, so in man and the metazoa there is chromatin of two orders. of which one governs the proliferative, the other the functional capacity of the cell. A tumor cell is a cell that has largely lost the latter; when lost the cell is unable to replace it. Such a cell can give rise only to daughter cells that lack this power of differentiation, but are still endowed with full vegetative properties. That such is the case is not yet proved, but the idea is worthy of preservation in the present state of our knowledge. It seems necessary to recognize among the blastomas some change in the biological properties of cells as an essential for neoplasia. It is not something outside the cell. neither an external stimulus nor a diminished external resistance: it may be that an external stimulus starts the cells on that path which leads eventually to their assuming neoplastic properties; it may even be that the malignant growth affords a secretion which depresses the vitality and inhibits the growth of surrounding tissue cells, but these are subsidiary. The essential point is that the cells giving rise to an autochthonous new growth are so modified that the energy acquired by the accumulation of food is not discharged in the performance of function, as in the healthy cell in normal relationship, but is retained and accumulated only for purposes of growth and multiplication. This is far from denying that various stimuli assist the modification of the cell; it may be that in one case the cell's position, displaced as it is. tends to retard its function but not its vegetation, or in another case that a microbic or parasitic agent begins an inflammation that acts similarly, or in yet another case that a senile loss of function paves the way, the change being accompanied by an alteration in histological characters. There is not one specific agent, but many and these at the most begin the process. The end-result is a cell mutation.

What is the practical bearing of this? It is that the cure of cancer does not lie in the discovery of a parasitic cause, for, judging by what we know of the nature of malignant cells the mere removal of a microbic or parasitic cause will not suffice to stop cell activity and the propagation of the properties that the cells have assumed. We have rather to seek agents that will influence the growing powers of these cells. Two

possibilities, at least, lie open.

CYSTS

287

The first of these is an apparent parallel to bacterial immunity. In the inoculation of mouse cancers, it has been found that successful inoculation with a cancer is followed by subsequent failure to inoculate again the same mouse; two simultaneous inoculations may be successful, but if one be successful, a subsequent inoculation fails. Some such inoculated tumors subsequently shrink and disappear, and the animal is immune to inoculation with the same or an allied tumor. These phenomena are evidently due to the production of antibodies by the tissues, parallel to that seen in various infections, and it seems possible that tumor or even normal cell extracts might exalt the defences of the body against tumor growth. Yet we must not be blind to the fact that many inoculable tumors induce but a very slight general reaction.

inue to

etative,

from & h; cells

unction

be the

e latter

has lost Oertel's

elei, one

activity

orders.

nctional

ely lost

cell can

ntiation, such is

ation in ecognize

of cells the cell,

ance: it

h which

ay even

sses the

ut these

se to an

equired ance of retained lication.

ification

l as it is.

her case

nat acts

aves the

cological

these at

cer does

ve know

or para-

ation of

to seek

. Two

The

The second mode of destruction of new growths is parallel to the employment of the agents that produce passive immunity. It may be that drugs or animal substances, or mechanical agents like radium or the Röntgen rays, chemicals such as salts of selenium and tellurium, or body ferments may be found, to which the neoplastic cells are more sensitive than are the normal celes, their growth being arrested and atrophy and absorption ensuing. As a matter of fact it has been fully demonstrated that radium and x-rays especially arrest the activity of vegetative cells. As this work has been passing through the press, Wassermann has announced partially successful inoculations with compounds of selenium and tellurium with anilin dyes: these have resulted in the destruction and disappearance of the cancer cells in mouse carcinoma without injury to the tissues in general. We say partially successful: the experiments were wholly successful in the case of small tumors; with larger growths, while the tumors disappeared, the animals died, apparently poisoned by the products of tumor-cell disintegration.

CYSTS

A cyst is a sharply limited, abnormal collection of fluid unprovided with a channel of outflow, possessing a well-developed boundary wall. It is round or oval, and the fluid fills it. We do not count the serous cavities as cysts if they contain fluid, although we regard those serous sacs, called bursæ, as cysts if they contain a marked excess of fluid over the normal amount. Cysts are tumors only in the sense that they are swellings; they are in no sense neoplastic, and the wall grows in direct relationship to the amount of the fluid content, and the tension exerted by it.

According to their causation, cysts may be divided into the following groups: (1) retention cysts, due to abnormal dilatation of preëxisting cavities of the organism as a result of secretion outstripping absorption 2) hemorrhagic cysts, due to escape of blood into the tissues and subsequent encapsulation; (3) necrotic cysts, due to the death and lique-

faction of tissues with subsequent encapsulation; and (4) parasitic cysts, due to the development (in itself normal) of metazoan parasites within

the organism, such parasites possessing a cystic stage.

A. Secretory or Retention Cysts.—This group may be subdivided according to the nature of the cells lining the cysts into (1) cysts with cubical or columnar "glandular" epithelium, (2) endothelial, (3) ependymal, (4) squamous epithelial, and (5) composite cysts.

In all of these, when cellular activity leads to secretion into a cavity unprovided with an outlet or when the outlet is obstructed, the fluid

Section through a retention cyst of mucosa of under aspect of epiglottis, due to obstruction of a mucous gland. (Professor Klots) (low power.) a, blood vessels; b, compressed acini of a mucous gland; c, cartilage; d, artery.

is secreted against pressure, which, while low, is above that in the capillaries; as the secretion is continuous and the absorption less rapid, the cavity is gradually distended, and under this gradual, not excessive strain, cell multiplication is favored,



From the same section under higher magnification to show the flattened epithelium lining the cyst.

and not only the lining cells multiply but also the underlying connective tissue. Eventually the lining cells become flattened by pressure, (Fig. 141), and ill-nourished by reason of the pressure on the vessels in the walls, so that atrophy and final disappearance may result. The watery contents of the cell are absorbed, so that the less diffusible products of secretion become more and more concentrated, until the cyst may be filled not with watery fluid but with inspissated, thick, jelly-like, or colloid content.

within ivided s with

cysts.

epencavity e fluid essure. e that secrehe abvity is

under strain, vored.

er magnipithelium

iective ; (Fig. in the watery ucts of nay be ike, or

I. OF ANTENATAL ORIGIN.—Congenital Cysts Due to Persistence of Parts of Embryonic and Fatal Ducts.—This is a large group. In the growth of the embryo and foctus, certain passages that ordinarily become closed and atrophy, may not become completely absorbed; these remain isolated in other tissues, and either immediately, or after years have elapsed, their cells may take on secretory activity, giving origin to cysts. Some of these are as follows:

(a) Thyrolingual cysts in the median line of the neck, from the thyrolingual duct leading down from the foramen cœcum of the tongue

to the thyroid.

1) Branchial cysts on the side of the neck, between the angle of the iaw and the sternoclavicular articulation, from the branchial clefts. The contents of this series vary from mucous fluid to sebaceous material according to whether they originate from the inner end, lined with mucous membrane, or the outer end, lined with squamous epithelium.

(c) Vitello-intestinal cysts, near the navel, from the omphalomesenteric duct which communicated between the small intestine and the yolk

(d) Urachal cysts, in the hypogastric region, from persistence of

parts of the urachus.

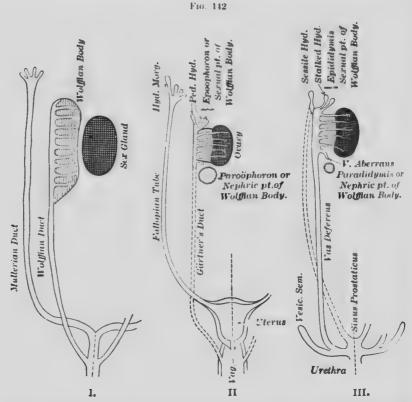
(e) Cysts of the Primordial Genito-urinary Passages in the Female.— Fig. 142 will serve to recall the relations of these ducts and the changes by which they arrive at their finally destined purpose; cysts are liable to arise from unabsorbed portions of those that atrophy. Cysts of the Wolffian body are apt to be multilocular, growing in the broad ligament. Cysts arise from the lateral (free) tubes of the paroöphoron; they are of small size. The cysts that arise from the connecting tubes of the paroophoron (connecting with the ovary) may be of large size; they are often single, and are lined by various kinds of epithelium, though this may be lacking in the larger ones, where also cholesterin may be found. Cysts of Gartner's duct occur in the broad ligament and in the vaginal wall. Hydatid of Morgagni is the term which describes the cystic dilatation of the long fimbria of the Fallopian tube.

(f) Cysts of the Primordial Genito-urinary Ducts in the Male. Stalked hydatids are found at the upper pole of the testis arising from Wolffian tubules. Encysted hydrocele of the testis may arise from the vasa efferentia, while from the Müllerian duct may arise at its distal end a sessile hydatid, a cyst in connection with the globus major of the

epididymis.

(g) Congenital Cysts Due to Arrested or Imperfect Development of Glandniar Organs.—This class is well exemplified by the congenital cystic kidney. In the formation of this organ, the glomerulus and the tubule proper arise from the mesoblastic nephrogenic tissue, while the collecting tubules take origin from the Wolffian duct. When a proper junction between the tubules from these two sources fails, the secretical from above distends the upper parts of the tubules and cysts result.

II. OF POSTNATAL ORIGIN.—1. Originating in Tubular Glands through Obstruction of their Ducts.—These are the ordinary "retention" cysts, arising from plugging of the duct by mucus, or a calculus, or from stenosis of the duct from previous injury or by the pressure of surrounding fibrous tissue or of near-by new growth. Examples are very numerous; ranula of the floor of the mouth from obstruction of the sublingual duct or that of the glandula incisiva somewhat in front of it; salivary cysts from blocking of a salivary duct; mucous cysts



Relationship of the sexual duets and their rudiments in the two sexes: I, the indifferent primary type, II, the differentiation in the female, III, the differentiation in the male. Hyd Morg., hydatid of Morgagni. Ped. Hyd., pedunculated hydatid. Vag., vagina; Sessile Hyd., sessile hydatid.

of the intestinal mucosa from blocking of the crypts; pancreatic cysts (ranula pancreatica); cysts of the mucous glands of the epiglottis, the trachea, of Cowper's glands, and the glands of Bartholin; bile cysts of the liver; cysts of the kidney, of the bladder mucosa, of the glands of the cervix of the uterus (ovula Nabothi), of the lacrimal gland (dacryops), of the ducts of the mammary gland (galactocele); wens and sebaceous cysts of the skin. Here also belong cystic dilatations of hollow organs, such as the gall-bladder (hydrops vesices felless), of the appendix, and

the Fallopian tube (hydrosalpinx); the retention of uterine discharges by occlusion of the cervix gives hydrometra.

lands

tion"

is, or

re of s are

on of front

cysta

imary datid

vsts

the

s of

the

ps),

ous

ans,

and

2. Originating in Ductless Glands.—Glands like the thyroid and pituitary, being formed of closed vesicles, are liable to distension of these vesicles, so that thyroid cysts (thyroid goitre) or pituitary cysts occur; and in the ovary, cysts of the Graafian follicles and cysts of the corpora lutea may arise. In some of the former an ovum may persist, though generally it undergoes disintegration.

III. Of Neoplastic Origin.—1. Cystadenomas.—Adenomas of tubular glands by the continued production of (abnormal) secretion become distended and cystic; especially is this true in the ovary and the mammary gland; and in such cysts there is a tendency to the multiplication





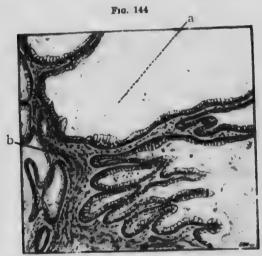
Constituted cysts of the kidney from a newborn child dying shortly after birth. Each organ, greatly collection of an agglomeration of elongated cysts as shown here. (From the collection of the Royal V. St., Hospital. Zeiss objective DD without ocular.)

of the lining membrane, so that papillomatous ingrowths of great complexity occur. It will be readily understood that here the border-line of pure proliferation is readily passed and neoplastic growth, even of a carcinomatous nature, instituted.

2. Endothelial Cysts.—The second group of cysts (classified according to the partire of the lining membrane) is a relatively small one. The best examples are serous cysts—sacs distended with serous fluid or lymph. These sacs are normally lined by endothelium, either of a cut-off partion of a serous cavity or of the lymphatic system. Examples of the former are scrotal hydrocele and cysts of the canal of Nuck,

of the latter, bursal cysts, and "ganglia" (cysts formed by the cutting-off of hernial protrusions of the synovial lining of the tendon sheaths). Bursal and lymph cysts in general owe their origin to a combination of circumstances; there is increased activity and lessened absorption, and in many there is no doubt a low grade of inflammation, which, tending to a progressive thickening of the wall, yet further interferes with the proper degree of absorption.

Of serous cysts of congenital origin the most striking are the hygromas, which are most common in the neck (hygroma colli). Yet the hygroma is generally not a simple cyst but by reason of plentiful endothelial reproduction may be recognized to be a lymphangio-endothelioma.



Section through a portion of a large multilocular ovarian cyst (c_b . . . · papilliferum), showing cysts of various sizes lined by columnar epithelium, some large, as at a, others small, others with papillary ingrowths; & fibrous stroma.

3. Ependymal Cysts.—Imperfect development, or intra-uterine inflammation leading to stenosis, may cause a localized closure of some part of the spinal or cerebral canal, or of the channels of communication between that canal and the external lymphatics. Either happening will lead to accumulation of cerebrospinal fluid and cystic dilatation of the ventricles or of the spinal canal, giving rise to hydrocephalus internus, hydrocele of the fourth ventricle, or cysts of the spinal canal such as syringomyelocele (to be distinguished from cystic states of the meninges). A snaring off of portions of the ependyma during development may lead to the appearance of simple cysts in the gray matter; they may be lined by a ciliated epithelium.

4. Squamous Epithelial Cysts.—As already noted, the cysts lined by squamous epithelium and having sebaceous contents may show themselves on either side of the neck, as the outcome of persistence of the outer epithelial portion of one or other branchial cleft. A fair y common

CYSTS

TS 293

form of acquired epithelial cyst is met with in the fingers of sewing women, and, more rarely, as the result of other forms of trauma. As the result of small portions of the epiderm becoming driven into the deeper tissues, the cells persisting grow into a globular mass, the actively proliferating cells being on the outside, the cell debris accumulating within, as indicated in Fig. 145.

Fig. 145

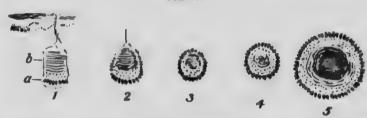


Diagram to illustrate mode of formation of an implantation cyst of skin: 1 shows a fragment of skin depressed into the underlying tissues; the actively growing cells of that fragment are upon its under aspect at a (the palisade layer of the rete Malpighii); the stratified flattened cells of the epidermis (at b) have lost the power of growth; 2 and 3 show the continued growth of the cells of the rete Malpighii, which from the want of growth of the cells at b must come to surround those cells, and form as at 4 a solid, and later, as at 5, a hollow sphere.

5. Composite Cysts.—These are cysts whose walls are composed of more than one kind of epithelium, whose contents are from glands discharging into the cyst; sequestration cysts of the skin are such, as is hydronephrosis.

Sequestration cysts occur in the line of fissures of the body, where in the process of joining, some cells of one or both surfaces become depressed, and sequestered in the underlying tissue, there eventually giving rise to a cyst. This may occur at the dorsal groove, the thoracicabdominal cleft, or the facial clefts, and in the part cut off there are generally sweat or sebaceous glands, and hair follicles, which determine the nature of the cyst contents. Such cysts may not only be superficial but deep, and because of the comparatively late development of the skull, they may be found attached to the dura mater. Hydronephrosis occurs when the urinary passage is obstructed; the kidney continues to secrete, and the urinary canal to be distended, especially the pelvis of the kidney, so that ultimately the kidney itself may be transformed into a thin-walled sac. Of the nature of composite cysts, too, are those inclusions of tooth sacs or remains of the enamel germ that are found in the jaw. These may be lined by epithelium, and may even have teeth projecting into them, in which case they are true dentigerous cvsts.

B. Hemorrhagic Cysts.—In the brain, as a good example, we find cyst formation following upon a hemorrhage; the blood outpoured acts as a foreign body and the tissue makes an attempt to wall it off its a abrous capsule, while at the same time leukocytes and autolysis at responsible for the removal of the corpuscles. The blood pigment,

howing rs with

-ofi

18).

ion

on.

ich.

res

oma elial

flamening ation phalus canal of the velop-

ed by themof the mmon

atter;

too, is gradually removed, so that a small amount around the capsumay be the only indication of the fact that blood has been present and even this ultimately disappears. The cyst finally contains a cleaserous fluid. A like process occurs in the goitrous thyroid and in t

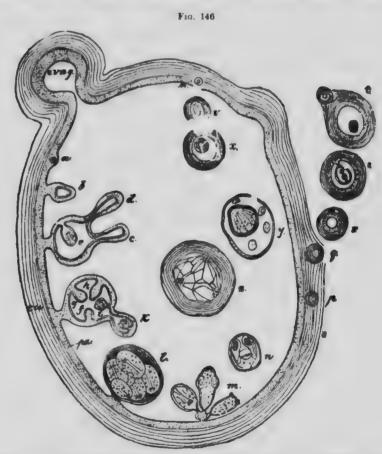


Diagram of an Echinococcus hydatid: cs, thick external cuticle; pa, parenchymal (germin layer; c, d, e, development of the heads according to Leuckart; f, g, h, i, k, development of the heads according to Monies; l, fully developed brood capsule with heads; m, the brood capsule has ruptur and the heads hang in the lumen of the hydatid; n, liberated head floating in the hydatid; o, p, q, r mode of formation of secondary exogenous daughter cyst; l, daughter cyst, with one endogenous one exogenous grand-daughter cyst; u, v, v, formation of exogenous cyst (after Kuhn and Davain v, v, formation of endogenous daughter cysts (after Naunyn and Leuckart); v, at the expense of head; v, from a broad capsule; v rag, constricted portion of the mother cyst. (R. Blanchard, sligh modified.)

scalp of the newborn (cophalhematoma), and sometimes in the corpiluteum, although the metamorphosis of the last-named has, of cours a much deeper significance than the mere formation of a cyst.

C. Necrotic Cysts.—Wherever there has been a necrosis of tissi without infection, as in a large infarct, it may happen that, after the

tissue has become liquefied by autolysis, the soluble products diffuse out, the lymph diffuses in, and a cyst is formed. Such a formation may be seen in the centre of a large cancerous nodule.



Necrotic cyst of liver due to necrosis and autolysis of the central region of a secondary carcinomatous nodule.

1). Parasitic Cysts.—Certain metazoan parasites pass one cycle of their existence in a cyst within the tissues of their host. Those occurring most notably in man are Tania echinococcus and Trichina spiralis, the cysts of the latter being very small, containing each a coiled-up individual trichina. The cysts made by the former are, however, of large size, and occur most often in the liver, although many other organs may be found to contain them. The wall of the large cyst is supplied, in part, by the parasite, although the irritation of its presence leads the surrounding tissue to build a shrous capsule on the outside of the hyaline cyst wall proper.

This so-called hydatid cyst may be single or multiple; its wall is hyafine and laminated, lined internally by a granular (cellular) byer from which project the heads of new individual parasites, with characteristic hocklet. Secondary heads are constantly being budded off from the wall and thrown into the fluid; these it is which render the fluid likely to infect the peritoneum if allowed to come in contact with it during removal. The secondary heads may give rise to the formation of daughter cysts in the primary sac, or less frequently, the daughter cysts may form on the outside of the mother cyst inot ad of the inside, causing a multilocular cyst.

ymal (germinal) nent of the heads ule has ruptured. latid; o. p. q. r. . endogenous and n and Davaine); the expense of a anchard, slightly

the capsule

en present.

ains a clear. and in the

the corpus s, of course, st.

sis of tissue at, after the

CHAPTER V

THE REGRESSIVE TISSUE CHANGES

NORMAL HISTOLYSIS AND CYTOLYSIS

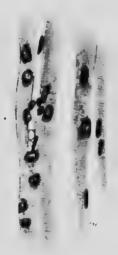
For a proper understanding of the regressive tissue changes, it is necessary to consider how the tissues naturally decay, for however rarely we pay attention to this phenomenon, it is going on constantly. Tissues and organs in the embryo, representing ancestral structures, appear and disappear. The thymus reaches its maximum during the first two years of life, and undergoes absorption; the lymph nodes, at their largest in youth, become smaller; the milk-teeth disappear before the inroad of the permanent set; after pregnancy the uterine tissue undergoes involution, that is, the cells which were hypertrophied, atrophy; the ovaries atrophy at the menopause. Red blood corpuscles and leukocytes have a life of but a few weeks; they disintegrate and are eaten up by other cells; even so solid a structure as bone is undergoing constant change. All this is but the analysis of the popular saying that the tissues are renewed every seven years; the particular definite length of time has no foundation, but the principle is true.

The destruction of cells in the ordinary wear and tear of tissues is doubtless a complex process, the result being due to changes in the cell itself, as well as to forces acting outside the moribund cell. We are not in a position to recognize the signs of approaching cell death by any special histological change, but we can tell sometimes that cells are growing old; in senile atrophy, for instance, the cells grow smaller and often lose finer details of structure, such as the transverse striations of muscle fibres. A cell in this state of senility is not as capable as it once was of carrying out its functional duties, and substances which it absorbs are not properly or completely converted and tend to be stored up; the products of its own cell disintegration, if not soluble, in a similar way tend to be stored up, so that by the presence of paraplasmic material in the cell we may recognize its senility, either natural or premature. An excellent example of this is seen in the so-called brown atrophy of the heart muscle cell, in which the cell is seen to be smaller than normal and to have at each pole of the nucleus a deposit of fine reddish-brown granules, which are thought to be the final insoluble product of the breaking down of myohemoglobin. (See Plate VII, Fig. 1.)

Equally good as an illustration is the change wrought in the muscle of the uterus after parturition. During pregnancy the muscle fibres have undergone immense hypertrophy, and during the first week after delivery they shrink in a degree no less remarkable; from 1 ing on an

PLATE VII

F16 1



Brown Atrophy.

Brown alrophy of heart, from section stained by hematoxylin, to show the accumulation of reddish-brown pigment granules at either pole of the nuclei of the atrophic muscle fibres.

FIG 2



Fatty Degeneration.

Ourse of heart from case of pernicious anemia, stained by 9 and hematoxylin to show fatty degeneration involving groups things.

ges, it is however nstantly. ructures, aring the nodes, at ar before ne tissue trophied, orpuscles rate and

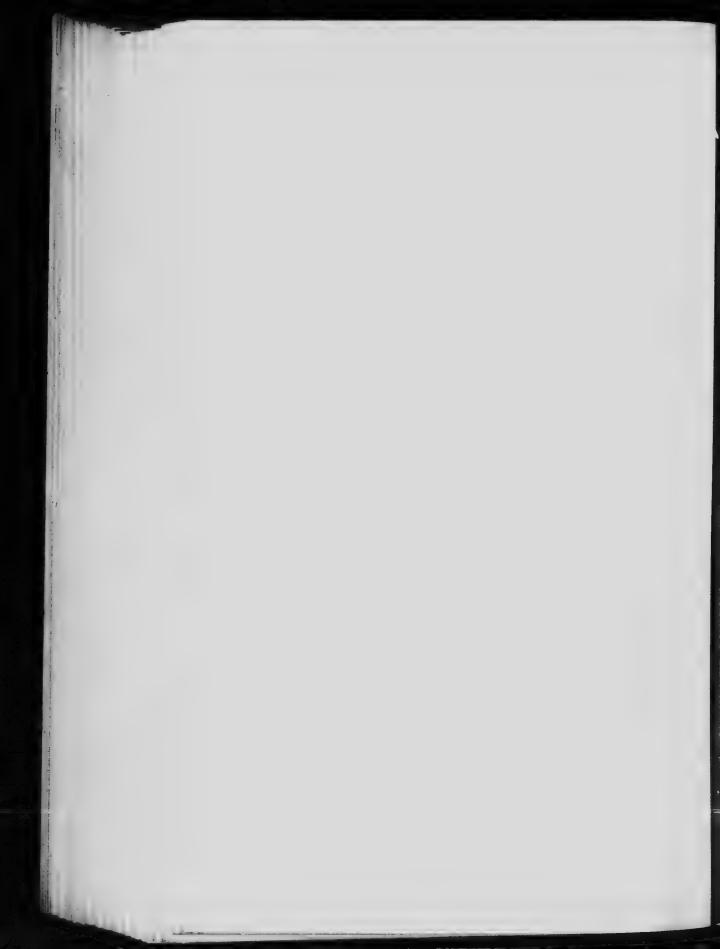
is underpopular
articular
crue.
tissues is
the cell

e are not a by any cells are aller and ations of as it once which it d to be able, in a aplasmic all or pred brown e smaller

e muscle ele fibres eek after

it of fine ble prod-, Fig. 1.)

ng on an



average 208 μ long, they become reduced to 24 μ . (Sänger.) In addition, they look more cloudy, and sometimes show refractile globules of fat. This is fatty degeneration, and a simultaneous fatty infiltration is visible between the deeper muscle cells, this fat disappearing with considerable rapidity. We have in this example cloudy and fatty degeneration and fatty infiltration all occurring in a process which we regard as normal.

The factors which are most potent in determining the state of a cell are nutrition and the performance of function; if nutrition be good and there be loss of function, atrophy will supervene from disuse; if there be excessive function with normal nutrition, there will also be atrophy.

Causes of Atrophy.—Briefly, we find various orders of atrophy:
(1) disuse atrophy; (2) atrophy due to excessive function; and (3)

atrophy due to lack of nourishment.

1. Disuse Atrophy.—The enforced rest of muscular tissue brings about true atrophy, that is, not necessarily a reduction in the numbers of the cells but a reduction in the size of the individual cell; this will result from the immobilization of a limb by mechanical means, or if the nerve be severed. Disuse atrophy is very well shown in the nervous system, in which it was for long thought that when an axone was severed, a degeneration only in the distal severed part occurred; but there is more than this, for a disuse change occurs even in the nerve cell body, and this is especially so in areas where, in health, there is a constant succession of stimuli reaching the cell; in the absence of these stimuli there is atrophy.

2. Atrophy from Overwork.—Overwork, carried beyond a given limit, tends to induce cell-exhaustion, if continued, to produce cell atrophy. It is difficult to bring forward clear examples, but we would suggest

that certain of the professional palsies belong to this category.

3. Atrophy from Malnutrition.—The alteration of the body from general starvation is a case in point, as well as the atrophy of special areas whose arterial supply is pressed upon and lessened; even the atrophy caused by pressure is another example of the same, the most dense tissues, like bone, undergoing atrophy when subjected to constant

pressure even by a fluid mass.

Senile Atrophy.—A closely-allied form is senile atrophy—the natural wearing out of the tissues; but there is another factor concerned, for in some people the process begins at an earlier period than in others. Some tissues, too, grow old more quickly than others, and as a general rule the first to atrophy are those that become functionless during the catural life; next to these come the lymphoid structures—lymph nodes, Malpighian bodies of the spleen, and the red bone-marrow—which undergo great diminution; next to these come "store-house" tissues, which as the fatty tissue. Nervous tissue, ordinarily, shows atrophy at of all.

When fatty tissue atrophies, the fat gradually melts away until the has once more become a connective-tissue cell, but sometimes

instead of this the place of the fat is taken by a serous fluid, so that a large mass of fatty tissue so altered appears translucent and jelly-like. This so-called **serous atrophy of fat** is not definitely known to be a purely senile change, but may be so regarded. When the cells of the active tissues atrophy, we have first the diminution in size, true atrophy, then in more extreme stages a diminution in number (hypoplasia), and along with this the deposit of pigment, especially in those cells that normally contain pigment. This pigmentation occurs in brown atrophy of the heart, as we have already indicated, and it happens similarly to a marked degree in the liver.

In bone the process of atrophy is a rarefaction whereby there is an actual loss of bony substance, the individual bones become lighter, and there is an increased liability to fracture. The loss of substance is largely central, the medullary cavity and the Haversian canals being increased in size, and the trabeculæ and lamellæ thinned; the red cellular marrow becomes replaced by fat, which again may undergo the before-

mentioned serous change.

The characteristic changes in the senile skin are due not so much to any epidermal changes as to a loss of subcutaneous fat and fluid, accompanied, of course, by actual tissue shrinkage; the elastic tissue of the dermis is also altered, becoming less resilient. This elastic tissue change becomes very important in the senile degenerations that occur in the arteries and the lungs. In the arteries, as the walls lose their resilience. the arterial tube dilates and is unable to recover itself, remaining permanently expanded. At this stage, when the expansion is permanent, we may find so diffuse an enlargement as to constitute a fusiform aneurysm, or if localized, a saccular aneurysm, although these rarely if ever arise from senility alone. In either case, the wall is found to be thinned and atrophied, and some layers, especially in the muscle, may disappear. The increased caliber of the vessels causes a slowing of the blood stream and the consequences of the same in the tissues supplied. But along with this atrophy of the wall proper, we have a series of important compensatory changes; as the arterial wall gives way, there is a connectivetissue overgrowth in the intima, as a result of which the lumen is restored; this process is arteriosclerosis. Although the compensation may be in bulk equivalent to the tissue lost, and may ultimately come to contain elactic fibrils, yet the wall has lost in elasticity, so that the pulse waves are conveyed with greater force, or at least with less modification, into the arterioles, which in turn undergo a similar change to the detriment of the tissues supplied. A like loss of elasticity in the tissue of the lung gives origin to emphysema—dilatation of the air sacs; with the lung tissue in this relatively non-elastic state, suddenly increased intrapulmonary pressure, such as occurs the moment before a cough "explodes," tends to rupture the weaker interalveolar walls, so that several alveoli are thrown into one, and the distension thus produced, which ordinarily is rectified by the elasticity of the lung tissue, remains permanently. When the alveoli are thus distended, the

d, so that and jellyknown to he cells of size, true ber (hypoy in those occurs in thappens

here is an ghter, and ostance is nals being ed cellular he before-

much to d, accomue of the ue change ur in the resilience, ning peranent, we meuryum, ever arise thinned lisappear. od stream But along tant comnnectivelumen is pensation ely come that the ess modihange to ty in the air sacs; suddenly at before ar walls,

ion thus

the lung ded, the

capillaries in the walls are pressed upon, and flattened, and a greater amount of work than normal is thrown upon the right ventricle. Coincident with the distension of the alveoli, there is a deposit of connective tissue around the arteries and bronchi.

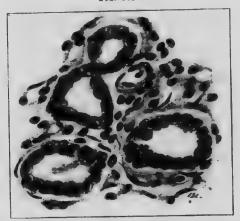
Throughout the tissues of the body, with the exception of the nervous system, there is everywhere to be seen, along with the senile atrophy of the specific tissues, this relative increase of the lower, supportive tissues. This is partly relative, that is, as the other tissues abate, the fibrous tissue comes into greater prominence; but more than this, there is actual increase, a replacement fibrosis; and this is more pronounced in the perivascular (periarterial) regions than elsewhere. The nervous system was stated above to be an exception; here, it is true, there is periarterial increase, but there is relatively little or no gliosis; the place of lost substance is filled not by tissue, but by fluid, a hydrops ex vacuo, which is the reason for the ædema of the pia so often observed at autopsy in those far advanced in life.

Abiotrophy.—A condition allied to senile atrophy, called by Gowers abiotrophy, requires mention. There are certain familial paraplegias. diseases like Thomsen's disease, and the so-called parasyphilitic diseases that lack explanation, as well as paralyses developing in the most exercised limbs. Certain cells and systems of cells degenerate, and ultimately become disorganized, the rest of the system remaining unchanged, and this often in a way that suggests that the trouble is connected with heredity. The conception of abiotrophy is that these cells begin life with less resistance, with less potential energy than others, so that the stress of a toxin, such as that of syphilis, uses up a considerable part of their energy; later on, they quickly become exhausted under a stress that is no greater than normal, even although this stress be no other than the usual work that is demanded of such cells. experiment that exemplifies such a general abiotrophy is to expose frog spermatozoa to the x-rays; the ova are fertilized, but the larvæ, after a few days' growth, expire prematurely, cell-exhaustion having supervened.

Reversionary Metamorphosis; Kataplasia.—While studying atrophic changes, it is necessary to mention a regressive process that may sometimes be found accompanying them. In this, highly organized cells are seen to change to a less specialized state, to become more embryonic, a condition of affairs that has been well observed in muscle fibres; just as the sarcoblast by slow transition becomes the muscle cell in a progressive way, so the muscle cell may become the sarcoblast in a regressive way. The most commonly seen example of the process is in the liver, in which the bile-duct cell and the liver cells have a common origin, and a tubular arrangement of cells is the earliest grouping that is seen; in the developing liver there is a time during which the liver cell and the bile-duct cell are not to be recognized one from the other. When, as happens in cirrhosis of the liver cells begin to atrophy, the transition from liver cells to the cells become gradual, and cells

or groups of cells isolated by the connective tissue at the edge of a lobule are of an intermediate type, smaller than liver cells, and larger than bile-duct cells, in fact, a reversion to the period in which the two were not differentiated. These groups of cells are often called proliferated bile ducts, but they are not true bile ducts by reason of the imperfect arrangement of the cells. In this very instance, it must be kept in mind that the process just described may well be associated with the opposite process, that of a compensatory hypertrophy, the still persistent bile ducts, as the lower type, proliferating to supply the lack of liver cells, and it may be quite impossible to say whether an individual intermediate cell is in progression or regression.





Reversionary atrophy from a case of fibrosis of the lun; the alveoli shrunken by the growth of the surrounding connective tissue have become lined by a cubical epithelium, resembling that seen in the lung of the foctus.

Another oft-seen example, is the assumption of a cubical shape by the cells lining lung alveoli in compression of the lung or interstitial fibrosis, which is a reversion to the type of cell seen in this situation before pulmonary respiration began; similarly in the kidney, in nephritis, the epithelium of tubules and of glomeruli may be seen to take on the embryonic cuboidal shape.

THE DEGENERATIONS AND INFILTRATIONS

Even in simple atrophy we are dealing with more than a mere progressive reduction in the volume of the cell-constituents, for we have also certain changes in the nature of the cytoplasm itself. This very heaping-up of what we term by-products must tell deleteriously upon the cell and its activities. It was thought, but now seems less certain, that we could distinguish two processes, which might accompany each

other, one the change wrought in the cytoplasm itself leading to the appearance in the cell of such changed products, and the other characterized by the appearance in the cytoplasm of substances obtained from outside the cell, and, it may be, imperfectly handled by the cell. It was thought that the former were degenerations proper and the latter infiltrations, but further study shows that it is becoming increasingly difficult to separate the two, that, in fact, they are too closely related to permit of being considered apart. Especially does it seem to be that true infiltration, by itself, is a rare occurrence. Cells, it is true, become infiltrated with or contain the substances in question, such as fat or gly cogen, but it is doubtful if this is sequent to a process of absorption of the fat or glycogen as such; it is more likely that these materials are the result of synthetic processes, the activities of the cytoplasm being responsible for their appearance. For example, fat as such is not to be detected in the blood, for it is to a great extent saponified before its absorption by the intestinal mucosa, where it is converted into a soluble compound. This the liver absorbs from the blood, and reconverts, by its ferment activity, into fat. When globules of fat appear in the diseased cell, it is not likely that these arise from the breaking down of the protein of the cytoplasm, but rather they appear, perhaps in excess, as a sign of the lack of competency to deal with them on the part of the cytoplasm. Whatever be the source of these paraplasmic substances, degeneration and infiltration are so closely linked that they may well be considered together; in many cases, in fact, they are inseparable.

Cloudy Swelling.—Perhaps the most common morbid change seen at autopsy is that of cloudy swelling or albuminous degeneration, in which the cut surface of the organ has a dulled appearance, as if, to employ a much-used phrase, it had been momentarily dipped in boiling water. With this, there is a certain amount of swelling, which, in the kidney, causes the cortex to rise above the level of the medulla and makes the cut edge to evert. The individual cells have lost transparency, and an unstained section will show, by transmitted light, the cells or groups of cells that are cloudily swollen as shaded with gray, contrasting with the clear white of normal tissues. On close inspection, the nuclei look as if obscured by the deposit of a finely granular material in the cytoplasm, and they stain less readily than usual. Weak acid or weak alkali clears up this cloudiness, apparently by dissolving out the

precipitated proteid or albuminous material.

Cloudy swelling is found in the cell under many different conditions, chief of which are acute infections and high fevers; it is seen also in various intoxications, after chemical poisons, in burns, and even in starvation; the granular material which appears is evidently a product of altered cytoplasm, and seems like the granular material ordinarily described as Altmann's granules, but with this distinction, that it seems aggregated into larger masses, and there is none of the regular linear arrangement seen in the normal. It is not possible to say definitely

owth of

oule

han

vere

ated fect

t in

the

per-

k of

dual

pe by stitial nation hritis, on the

e proe have s very upon ertain,

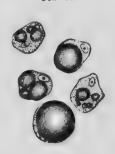
v each

what this material is; according to Martin Fischer, it is to be regarded as the result of conversion of certain colloids of the cytoplasm from the soluble into the solid or "gel" state. It is evidently either material disintegrated from the cytoplasm or material absorbed and not completely "handled" by the cell; or finally, it may be both. The increase in size is partly due to the increase in these paraplasmic materials, but mainly to a hydropic condition and increase in the watery constituents.

Cloudy swelling is not to be confounded with granular degeneration, which is a disintegrated state of protoplasm, and a precursor of cell death; the droplets, at least the larger of them, are due to liquefactive necrosis. The process of cloudy swelling thus seems to be the expression of overstimulation of the cell, with disordered metabolism and the heaping-up of paraplasmic matter of an albuminous nature; apparently it is not a necessary cause of cell death, is frequently recovered from, and yet is probably the earliest stage in what may be the progressive deterioration of the sick cell.



Cloudy swelling of cells of convoluted tubules of kidney. × 400. (Ribbert.)



Fra. 150

Liver cells in various stages of fatty accumulation. × 300. (Rindfleisch.)

INTRACELLULAR FAT ACCUMULATIONS

As was said above, two states are to be considered—fatty infiltration and fatty degeneration; pronounced examples of the two are readily distinguishable, but in many cases the two seem to be blended.

"Fatty Infiltration."—Neutral fat is a constituent of most of the tissues of the body, but in a state unrecognizable by ordinary microchemical means. The kidney tissue may be demonstrated to possess fat to the extent of 23 per cent. of its solids, yet may by staining reactions show no trace. On the other hand, certain regions such as the subcutaneous connective tissue, the omentum, the appendices epiploicæ, the cardiac grooves, and the area around the kidney, normally contain fat in large amount, the cells being distended with it. This is not fatty infiltration; that term should be confined to describing connective tissue elsewhere, especially in the interstices of tissues, which

becomes thus laden. True fatty infiltration may thus occur between the cardiac muscle fibres, in skeletal muscles, or in an organ like the pancreas. The liver cells, too, may become the seat of a notable fat-deposit, for example, during pregnancy, and this is perfectly properly spoken of as fatty infiltration; it may be very extreme in such states as chronic alcoholism, where four-fifths of the total solids and 41 per cent. of the cell substance (including water) in a given case have proved to be fat. It is to be remembered that in all other parts of the body fatty infiltration affects the connective tissue; in the liver, the connective-tissue cells are not involved, but the liver cells proper.

Fatty infiltration may thus arise from a number of causes:

1. Physiological.—There may be a heaping up of fat in the liver during pregnancy and lactation apparently as a preparation for the

2. Overnutrition.—The "foie gras" of the overfed Strassburg goose is

a familiar example of this.

3. Substitution.—Fatty infiltration, and not cirrhosis, as pop larly supposed, is the most common affection of the liver in alcoholics, notwithstanding the fact that the confirmed alcoholic is not a heavy eater; alcohol, being a foodstuff capable of easy oxidation, probably replaces the fats, and these, not being oxidized, remain and accumulate in the

4. Diminished Oxidation.—(a) Congenital.—There are some people naturally obese just as there are others naturally spare. The former perform their metabolism slowly, and the defective oxidation of their fatty acids leads to a gradual accumulation of neutral fats in the cells. Thyroid extract lessens obesity in such people, probably by reason of

its accelerating the oxidative processes.

the Through Disease. Fatty infiltration, of the liver often, and of the other tissues sometimes, occurs in those ill of a wasting disease (noted in tuberculous cattle), because lowered vitality and low functional activity of the tissues mean lessened burning-up of the fats taken as food, while fat from the subcutaneous and other tissues may be

transposed to the liver.

"Fatty Degeneration."—In the cases of fatty degeneration that appear to be truly such, there is primarily a cell degeneration, the fat being deposited as a result of depressed cell activities. The nuclei may stan poorly, and in the cytoplasm are minute, dust-like fatty bodies which stained with Sudan III or Scharlach R, give to the cell a diffuse orage red color, the high power showing that this is due to abundant minute fatty dots. The tissues so affected are: (1) those liable to cloudy swe mg igland cells, especially of the liver and kidney (see Plate VIII, and muscle fibres, especially of the heart) (see Plate VII, Fig. 2); 12 dothelial cells of blood vessels, and (3) certain cells undergoing ne regressive changes (cells of the sebaceous glands, of the mam-

at first sight appears to be a like accumulation of fat in the form

of fatty dfleisch)

arded

m the

aterial

com-

crease

ls, but

uents.

ration,

of cell

factive

ression

nd the

arently from,

ressive

filtration e readily

t of the y micropossess ing reach as the ices epinormally

This is bing cones, which of minute globules, but without any nuclear degeneration, occurs normally in the cortex of the adrenal, and in the muscle cells of the uterus undergoing involution after parturition. On the contrary, with nuclear

Fig. 151



Section showing fatty degeneration of the epithelium of the renal tubules. The fine fatty globules are accumulated in the main toward the outer aspect of the cells, close to the basement membrane.

Fra. 155

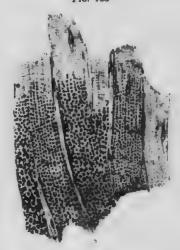


Fatty degeneration of liver cells: b, fresh cells, cloudy and granular, nuclei not clear; a, the fine, fatty globules seen more clearly after treatment with acetic acid. (Ribbert.)

degeneration there may be large globules of fat in the ceil, as happens in phosphorus poisoning. Histologically, it is therefore not safe to say that the minute globules indicate a degeneration and the larger ones an infiltration; there are evidently intermediate states.

Typical cases of fatty degeneration can be divided into: (1) those

F10. 153



Fatty degeneration of heart-muscle fibres, showing different grades of involvement of the individual fibres; fresh specimen. (Ribbert.)

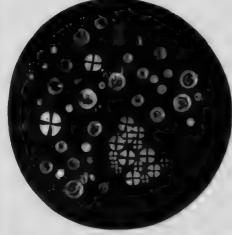
following cloudy swelling, therefore the second stage in parenchymatous inflammation of organs, and (2) simple uncomplicated fatty degeneration, (a) physiological, and (b) pathological. The first is exemplified in bacterial intoxications. Physiological fatty degeneration is seen in the cells of the sebaceous glands, and in the formation of the fat droplets of milk from the cells of the mammary gland, in which there is a multiplication of cells, those nearest the lumen becoming fatty and being disintegrated off as a mass of fat globules. Pathological fatty degeneration is seen in certain cases of acute intoxication that is not bacterial, such as poisoning by certain chemicals, and in the malnutrition of starvation or of the extreme anemias. There is no certainty,

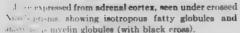
of course, that any or all of these fatty degenerations are not preceded by cloudy swelling.

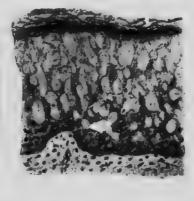
Lipoid "Infiltration" and "Degeneration."—We have said that the appearance of the cells of the cortex o.—adrenal appears at first sight to resemble fatty degeneration (see Plate VIII, Fig. 2). The work of the last few years upon the lipoids has demonstrated that here we deal not with the accumulation of neutral fat, but with globules which, unlike those of the neutral fats, are found doubly refractive under the polarizing microscope. Some neutral fat, it is true, may be present, but these characteristic globules are, according to recent investigations, formed in the main of cholesterin esters, more particularly of cholesterin oleate. Similar doubly refractive granules are found in very many

Frg. 154

Fig. 155







Hydropic degeneration; epithelium from a smallpox papule. The epidermal cells greatly swollen, distended by large vacuoles. × 300. (Ribbert.)

of the body in degenerative processes, notably in the atheromasuches of the aorta, in degenerating cancer cells, and in areas of teil, action in the nerve tissue. In fact, more than one of the lipoids the . ord the appearance of double-refraction. One of the simplest -st examples of the existence of these doubly-refractive so-called 1111 1111 droplets to study is in the sputum of adults coughed up firthe morning. It seems, therefore, that just as we may have l-fatty "infiltration" and "degeneration," so also we may have 9 . lipe nfiltrations" and "degenerations." This subject is being Hetti. tudied at the p. sent time, its chief interest lying in the rel etween the lipoids, and the proteins, many of the former

ele fibres, ent of the tibbert.)

ccurs

terus

ıclear

large

l, as

oison-

here-

t the

a de-

ones

evi-

enera-

those

matous egenerinplified seen in t dropere is a ty and if fatty is not mainu-

tainty,

¹ See also p. 26 for classification of lipoids.

resembling the nucleins in possessing both nitrogenous and phosphoric radicles, and suggesting strongly, stages either in the building up or

dissociation of bodies of the latter order within the cell.

Glycogenous Infiltration. - We have little knowledge of the significance of glycogen in the tissues in abnormal situations or amounts. It is found in a considerable number of rapidly growing cellular neoplasms, as again in Henle's tubules of the kidney in cases of diabetes. It has

been found also in pus cells.

Hydropic Degeneration.—Cloudy swelling being associated with an increase in the watery contents of the cell, there are extreme grades of this in which actual vacuoles appear in the cytoplasm; these watery vacuoles may increase in size till the cell bursts; the accumulated fluid from the bursting of several contiguous cells may then form vesicles. The most extreme examples of this are the "pocks" in smallpox, where the deeper layers of the epidermis become hydropic, swollen, and disintegrated.

The explanation of such absorption is that the colloidal outer layer of the cell, which represents the cell membrane of plants, ordinarily prevents the diffusion of crystalloid molecules; that crystalloid molecules do appear by some disorganization of the cytoplasm, and as long as these exist in the cell body in greater concentration than in the surrounding medium, water will diffuse inward until equalization occurs. Thus the cell swells up and becomes hydropic. In addition, Martin Fischer calls attention to the fact that increased acidity of a colloidal

menstruum leads to an increased imbibition of water.

Vacuolar Degeneration is seen in muscle and nerve cells, and is characterized by the appearance in the cytoplasm of vacuoles, which are presumably caused by an osmotic absorption.

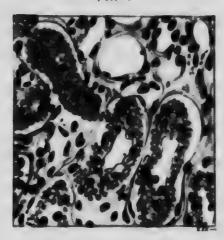
Serous Atrophy.—This has already been dealt with under atrophy cells and intracellular tissue alike absorb a serous fluid which replaces

preëxisting fat.

DEGENERATIONS ASSOCIATED WITH THE DEPOSIT OF COMPOUND PRO-TEINS.—There is a series of ill-understood degenerations in which appear in the tissues material that in the unstained condition is translucent or glassy; when colorless and firm, we call this hyaline; when colorless and fluid or semifluid, mucoid; when semisolid or solid and of the appearance of glue, colloid. Hyaline and nucoid were once regarded as specific substances; but we know now that what is called hyaline for example, may be produced in different ways. Amylold is an excep tion, and from its staining reactions seems to be a separate entity These substances are proteins; and in a molecule as large as even the simplest protein molecules are, it will be readily understood that comparatively small change such as a few more or less carbon atom or a few more or less oxygen atoms may be the cause of a considerable change in properties; and these lower proteins are only thus far remove from ordinary protoplasm.

PLATE VIII

FIG 1



Fatty Degeneration.

FIG 2

Fatty degeneration of cells of the convoluted tubules of the kidney, from the solute supervening upon chronic nephritis, stained by Sudan III of actualoxybin

Lipoid Infiltration.

human adrenal treated with Sudan III, to show accumulation tobules in the cells of the zona fasciculata. These globules are factive a, cells free from lipoid globules; b, cell columns in globules are abundant

nosphorie ng up or

e signifiunts. It soplasms, s. It has

I with an ne grades se watery ated fluid vesicles. ox, where ollen, and

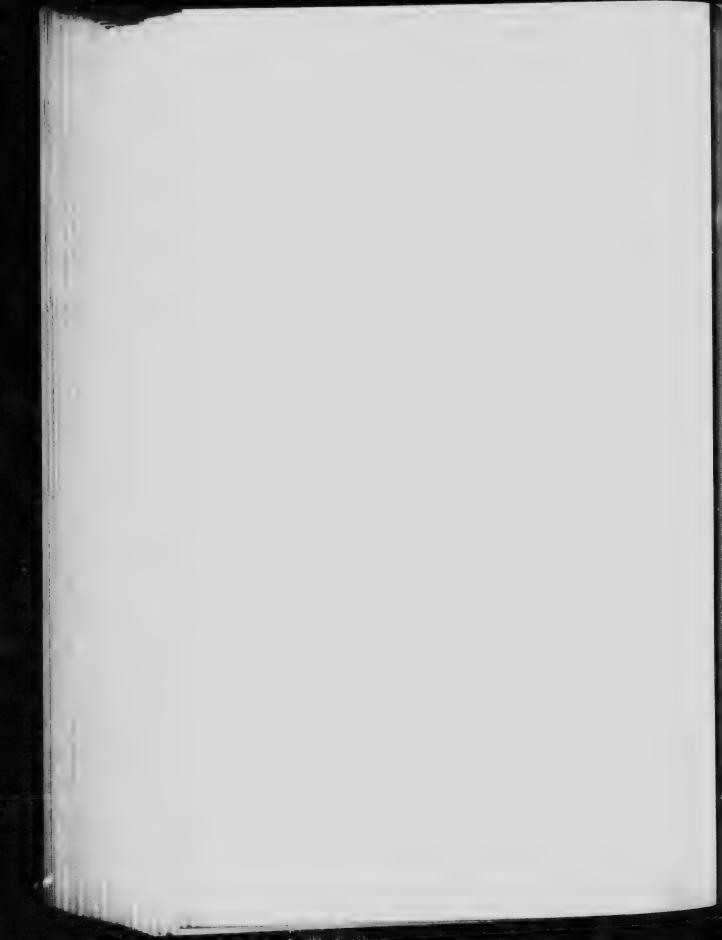
uter layer ordinarily loid moleid as long an in the on occurs.
in, Martin a colloidal

nd is charwhich are

r atrophy; ch replaces

ound Proich appears cranslucent en colorless and of the eregarded ed hyaline, s an excepate entity, as even the cod that a chon atoms onsiderable

ar removed



Mucoid Deposits.—Mucoid Degeneration and Mucinous Deposits.—The mucins are glycoproteins, compounds between protein and carbohydrate; they are laid down in the body intracellularly and intercellularly. Examples of the first are seen in the salivary glands and the goblet cells of the intestines, and of the second in Whorton's jelly in the umbilical cord and in the mucinous intercellular matrix of embryonic tissues in general. In either case, mucin is visced, swells up with water, is soluble in weak alkalies, and is precipitated by acetic acid or by

alcohol. Basic dves stain it.

Intracellular Mucin Formation.— Mucin is thus production of mucous membranes, in which not only is there active production of mucin by goblet cells, but also a degeneration of individual cells, including the nucleus, by which the entire cell substance changes to mucin. Mucin as such does not appear in the healthy cell, but mucinogen, its precursor, may, and mucin production occurs with a previous process of cell division which is like that seen in secretion in the mammary gland. A more active production is that seen in the so-called colloid cancers, an unfortunate term, as the material is inspissated mucin; these growths originate from the intestinal mucosa, the tumor cells undergoing a complete transformation into mucinous matter.

Intercellular or Interstitial Mucin Formation.—This may be found

pathologically in:

1. Senile atrophic tissues, as in the cartilages and bones of the old.

2. The connective tissues in the early stages of myxœdema. It was at first thought that increased interstitial mucin was a constant change in the subcutaneous tissues in atrophic diseases of the thyroid, but in long persisting cases the mucin is found to diminish with coincident development of fully formed connective tissue.

3. Actively developing tumors of the connective-tissue type, sarconas, fibromas, and in the interstitial tissue of carcinomas. Mere

ordema of tumors is often mistaken for a mucoid degeneration.

4. Developing granulation tissue.

In all these circumstances it will be seen that we deal with either active tissue, or with immature tissue, or with tissue reversion.

Colloid.—Dense colloid deposits are relatively rare. The typical example is the gluey or almost solid accumulation within the distended ieles of the enlarged colloid goitre; similar material may show itself exicles of the pituitary. The next most common site is in the ary tubules in certain eases of chronic nephritis, the tubules oning plugged with dense hyaline, or more accurately, colloid casts in take on a deep stain with the ordinary staining reagents.

imyloid. This is a material allied to the matricial matter of cartilage, of found in normal tissues. When it is present, it has a character-appearance and well-marked individual reactions. It may be calized, affecting several organs, or localized, affecting a relatively

area of inflammatory or neoplastic growth.

Generalized Amyloid; Amyloidosis.—When advanced, this affects a large number of organs, especially the spleen, liver, and kidneys. The only tissues that have not been found affected are the epidermis the cutis, bone, lung tissue, and nervous tissue proper. If the spleen and liver be free, it is useless to search other organs for it. The affected spleen is enlarged and more dense and firm than usual. On section it has a semitranslucent, waxy appearance (hence the terms waxy or "bacon" spleen), this being diffuse; or rounded areas are seen on the cut surface of the size and appearance of sago grains ("sago spleen") the affected parts being the Malpighian bodies. The appearance of the liver and of the kidney is by no means so characteristic, but the reactions can be readily demonstrated.

Fig. 156



Amyloid degeneration affecting the liver; slighter grade; the cells are still present with but moderate atrophy; the irregular deposit of amyloid around the capillaries is well marked. (After Ribbert.)

Fig. 157



Amyloid degeneration of liver, advanced: a, atrophied liver cells; b, transverse section of a capillary surrounded by a broad ring of amyloid material; c, a capillary cut longitudinally. (Ribbert)

Reaction.—On the cut surface of the organ washed free from blood is poured diluted tineture of iodine. When the surface has assumed a pale yellow tint the amyloid will have a brownish-red color; if now a 5 or 10 per cent. solution of sulphuric acid be poured on, the amyloid becomes violet or black, the rest of the tissue remaining relatively unaffected. The same method may be applied to the microscopic examination of sections cut from the frozen tissue, the affected parts showing clear and yellowish by transmitted light. Even more distinctive in sections is the use of watery methyl violet, followed by washing in very dilute hydrochloric acid; this applies to fresh or alcohol-preserved material, and shows the amyloid as a rose-pink mass against a slaty background.

The deposit of amyloid occurs in the walls of the capillaries, just external to the endothelium, and in the larger vessels the connective tissue of the media is the part affected. The amyloid is laid down quite irregularly, so that a vessel may look lop-sided by reason of this inequality. The results to the tissues of the laying down of amyloid

he

he

nd

ed

it

or

ut

he

ne

ne

are twofold: the lumen of the vessel is encroached upon, and the tissues are thus ill-nourished, as well as subjected to pressure by the physical presence of the amyloid; ultimately the original tissue may be almost destroyed. Amyloid deposits are made in the body during the course of long-continued drains upon the system, especially when this is a sociated with an excessive production and an excessive waste of leukocytes, although a protein discharge of any sort will produce the effect. Chronic bone tuberculosis with cold abscess, osteomyelitis, syphilis, leukemia, Bright's disease, or even prolonged lactation are some of the states that produce it.

Localized Amyloid.—This is seen in localized granulomatous masses of tuberculous or syphilitic origin and in connective tissue tumors, especially of the head and neck region. In such sites the small bloodvessels are relatively unaffected, the amyloid being laid down in the interstitial tissue, perhaps along the lymph channels.

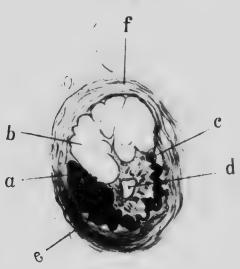
The Nature of Amyloid. The blue color with iodine and sulphuric acid led to the supposition that amyloid was related to starch, whence its name; but its protein nature was soon shown, although the name persisted. It is a glycoprotein, containing chondroitin-sulphuric acid. This material, brought by the blood or lymph, probably diffuses out through the walls of the vessel and meets a local protein with which it combines. In composition it is somewhat allied to the chondrin of cartilage and yellow elastic tissue, which also contain chondroitin-sulphuric acid. Thus chondroid, rather than amyloid, would be the accurate term.

Elastoid. We have separated off from the group of hyaline degenerations another form seen often in the uterus after delivery and involution, in which, especially at the region of the placental site, arteries more or less obliterated are to be recognized as glistening, hyaline masses. The recent studies of our colleague, Dr. Goodall, have shown that, associated with the narrowing of the lumen of the much-dilated vessels, the internal elastic lamina undergoes a most remarkable process of swelling and folding upon itself. At first the swollen elastic tissue reacts with Weigert's elastic-tissue stain; in a later stage it no longer gives this reaction. The remarkable fact is that within these swollen masses a newer, smaller arterial lumen is developed, which may become surrounded by all the arterial coats, intima, media, and adventitia, whereas to the outer side, the previously hypertrophied media undergoes complete degeneration and absorption. In this way the arteries adapt themselves to the lessened demand for blood by building what may be an entirely or partially new artery within the lumen of the old.

Hyaline.—Of the other orders of hyaline, which still retain this name, the commonest is that found, apparently as a persistent necrobiotic stage, in association with connective tissue, though other tissues also may be involved. Examples of this are to be seen in the connective-tissenframework of the thyroid and kidney in cases of so-called chronic intercritical inflammation. Here relatively large tracts of thickened fibrated tissue may assume a glassy appearance with great paucity of

nuclei. Some of the largest areas are seen in the myocardium in cases of so-called chronic myocarditis in the form of irregular areas of hyaline matter interposed in the mass of still unchanged muscle tissue; possibly

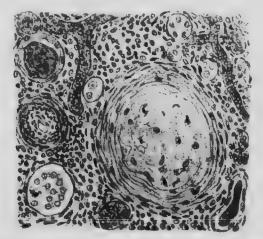




Elastoid degeneration: Section of small artery from beneath placental site of uterus exhibiting subinvolution. The patient suffered from renal and hepatic disturbances, and died seven months after delivery. Section stained by Weigert's elastic and Van Gieson's stains. (Dr. Goodall.)

Vitreous hypertrophy of elastica interna at a_i vitreous degeneration of the same at b_i at c_i transition from stained hypertrophic to unstained degenerated elastica; d_i lumen of the new vessel surrounded by irregular new muscular and intimal tissue; at c_i remains of old media with hypertrophy of its elastic fibres; outside the degenerated elastica interna at f the atrophy o^* , he media is more extreme.

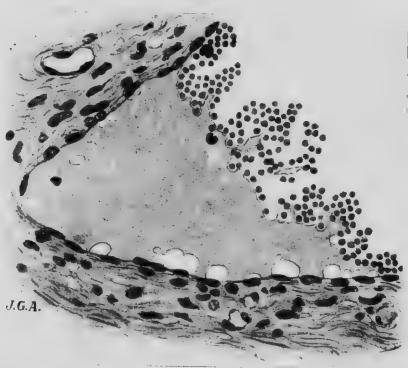
Fig. 159



Hyaline degeneration of a glomerulus, from a kidney showing chronic interstitial nephritis.

here we deal not merely with a change in the fibrous tissue which has replaced dead muscle fibres, but with a hyaline transformation also of muscle cells whose nutrition has been cut off through obliteration of the arterioles. In several orders of tumors there is a similar hyaline necrobiosis of cells farthest removed from the nutrient vessels; these tumors then assume the appearance known as cylindromatous. A like hyaline change may also affect the organized fibroid deposits on serous surfaces, the new connective-tissue growths of granulomas and even capillary walls. Of this last, the most noticeable example is seen in the hyaline clumps which represent the glomeruli in cases of chronic interstitial nephritis (Fig. 159).





Hydine thrombus in dilated venule of hemorrhoid. This was perfectly homogeneous. Reichert, obj. 7a, ocular 4. Camera lucida, reduced one-third.

Hematogenous Hyaline (Hematohyaloid).—Of this form the type example is seen in hyaline thrombi due to the intravascular and intraviacion conglutination, either (a) of the entire red corpuscles, as under the action of agglutinin, or (b) of the same after a preliminary disintegration in smaller globular masses, or (c) of blood-platelets. Occasionally, a marinegen-containing serous exudate, instead of forming the characteristic fine fibres of fibrin, undergoes coagulation in the form of homogeneous hyaline masses. This seems to be an allied condition.

Hyaline Casts.—There is still debate regarding the mode of origin of the transparent, scarce visible casts seen in the urine. Some authorities regard them as the result of coagulation of constituents of the blood escaping into the tubules, and in favor of this view there is that at times these have been seen in parts to take Weigert's fibrin stain. Others regard them as more commonly the result of fusion and inspissation of discharges or broken-down matter from the epithelium of the tubules. Where there is more extensive disintegration with liberation of coarser portions of the cell, a granular cast is produced; where the entire cells in the course of acute inflammation become cast off, there is formed the cellular or epithelial cast. Where the disintegrated material detained within the tubule undergoes progressive inspissation, there is developed the colloid or waxy cast.

Intracellular Hyaline.—Especially in the study of cancers there have been noted small globular or irregular masses within the cells, having the appearance and reaction of hyaline. A series of cases has been described showing various gradations of staining power (and therefore of chemical composition). Of these the most familiar examples are the Russel's fuchsin bodies (Fig. 115), so-called because they fix fuchsin with considerable intensity. These originate, apparently, within the cell in cases not merely of cancer but also of chronic inflammation. Often through degeneration of the cells they come to be extracellular.

Pathological Keratinization.—This is an allied condition. normal epithelial cells of the skin, as they come to lie farther and farther removed from the Malpighian layer, exhibit when they reach the level of the stratum granulosum fine granules of keratohyaline. These stain blue with hematoxylin. In the stratum lucidum these become translucent and are seen to be evenly diffused throughout the cells (eleidin). Further outward is to be seen a second development of granules of keratin which take on a purprish-blue color with Gram's stain. Passing still farther outward, as the cells become completely necrotic, with nonstaining nuclei, they become represented by flattened scales of compact keratin; this stains yellow with van Gieson's stain. Occasionally we encounter massive accumulations of these keratinized cells, as for instance in the middle ear, forming pearly masses known as cholesteatoma, and in the cutaneous horns which may show themselves on one or other area of the body surface. These are not true hypertrophies, but abnormal collections of matter not properly cast off. At most, the underlying rete Malpighii may show hypertrophy and indications of increased cell proliferation.

Rare allied conditions are those of hyperkeratosis and ichthyosis, acquired and congenital imperfect growth of the skin accompanied by thickening of the keratin layer. Chronic irritation sometimes leads the tongue to present keratinized processes of the epithelium (hairy tongue), the œsophagus to exhibit longitudinal bands of epithelial thickening (leukoplakta), this notably in alcoholics, and the vagina to show horny ridges (pachydermia).

CALCIFICATION AND CALCAREOUS DEPOSITS

Almost every order of tissue may be the seat of interstitial deposits of calcium salts, although the supportive tissues, such as cartilage and the connective-tissues of vessels and of organs, are most frequently affected; the parenchyma of glands is at times liable to it and deposit may occur intracellularly in the nervous system. The extent of the deposit may vary between a few gritty particles in a reass of cascation to large lumps as dense as stone. The deposit of calcium salts has little in common with the process of ossification, although in this, too, calcium salts are the material that is laid down; there are none of the orderly processes by which in bone the calcium salts are related to the bloodvessels and the matrix; although, according to Wells, there is a striking similarity in ratio between the calcium and magnesium salts and the phosphoric and carbonic acids that exist in bone and in pathological calcification.

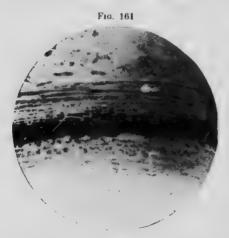
Microchemical Appearances and Reaction.—In the smallest masses the calcareous deposits are like fine dust, which may give place to angular, crystalline masses or even globular concrements. Insoluble in ether or caustic potash, they dissolve rapidly in acids and slowly in formalin, and when dissolved out, a matrix of dead tissue is left in which histological characters are not to be distinguished. Stained with hematoxylin, calcareous material takes a pronounced dark blue color. Treated with a 5 per cent. solution of silver nitrate for five minutes, with subsequent exposure to the air, metallic silver is precipitated, causing the granules of calcareous material to stand out as coal-black dots, in consequence of the action of the phosphates present. Treated with acid, there is an evolution of bubbles of gas—carbon dioxide—indicating the presence of calcium (and magnesium) carbonates. Sulphuric acid causes the appearance of fine crystals of calcium sulphate (gypsum).

Calcification may occur in tissues that contain living cells, not in the living cells themselves, but in the inert interstitial matter between the cells; it occurs, that is, in dead or necrescent material, and the statement may be made that it does not occur in living functioning cells. The statement that calcareous deposit does not occur in living cells is made with a knowledge of the apparent exceptions.

It may be said, then, that calcification occurs in dead or dying cells, and in certain interstitial substances such as the matrix of cartilage, yellow elastic tissue and hyaline, this latter change being especially allied with other senile alterations. Belonging largely to the former goods are those instances that happen in the interstitial tissue of glas folar organs like the thyroid, the testes, or the ovaries, in the lungs, the numbranes of the brain, and in scars, and most of all in the arterial wall. In the arteries, calcareous deposit follows hyaline and fatty degree attation (necrobiosis) of the media and the hypertrophied intima, and the elastic tissue; these changes may be shown by the specific

tests when no change is apparent to the naked eye. Equally liable to give examples of such calcification are old infarcts, chronic inflammations of the serosæ, of the walls of cysts, and of capsules around foreign bodies, while the existence of calcification in old suppurations is often seen. A perfect example is seen, too, in the impregnation with lime salts of the dead fætus, the result of an extra-uterine gestation retained in the abdominal cavity (lithopædion). Experimentally, there are many chemicals which cause calcareous deposit; this action has been studied chiefly in the kidneys, where the deposit is preceded by a bionecrosis of the tubular epithelium.

Different hypotheses have been brought forward to explain the phenomenon of calcification, of which the most satisfactory appears to be that especially elaborated by the work of our former colleague,



Section of aorta of elderly individual, treated by von Kossa's method, to demonstrate calcification of media, and more particularly of the muscular bands. (Klots.)

Klotz. Obviously, 't is not a precipitation of the salts normally present in the affected areas: the lime salts are brought to the part by the lymph, and in dead or dying cells or in the interstitial material of low vitality, are rendered insoluble and deposited. The chemical process underlying this appears, in some cases at least. to be that a fatty degeneration of cells is accompanied by the liberation of fatty acids, which combine with the calcium in the lymph to form compound calcium soaps. In this combination the weaker fatty acids are replaced by phosphoric and carbonic acids, with the subsequent deposit of insoluble calcium phosphate and carbo-

nate in the dead tissues. The compound calcium soaps are probably compounds of fatty acid, calcium, and a protein or a product of protein disorganization.

In the latest work on this subject, Professor Wells, of Chicago, while admitting the foregoing, regards it as the more uncommon mode, and brings forward not a little evidence to show that hyaline cartilage and homogeneous hyaline degenerative material possess an affinity for calcium not exhibited to an equal degree by other tissues, so that in favoring circumstances the calcium salts are "adsorbed" from the lymph until they come to be in such concentration that they are precipitated in the same proportions as those in which they exist in the circulating medium. He admits, however, that the factors concerned in this process of precipitation are not wholly known, suggesting that

possibly a reduction in the amount of carbon dioxide or some other agency induces the precipitation of calcium salts in a colloid matrix.

to

H-

(I)

'n.

ie d

e

V

l

Concrements. - In addition to this deposit of calcareous material in the tissu's, there may be a deposit of the same in ducts or passages, leading to the formation of solid masses, round or oval or taking the shape of the duct in which they are found. These are termed concrements or caiculi, the same term, unfortunately, being employed both for the above calcareous deposits and for deposits due to the abnormal precipitation of specific excretions. Concrements of the first order will be found to contain an amount of calcareous salts in excess of that usually present in the fluids discharged along the passage concerned. On dissolving out the salts, there is left a matrix of mucinous material, usually mixed with fatty acids, soaps, and cholesterin. Such concrements arise generally as a result of a catarrhal inflammation of the passage in question, whereby mucin is exuded and some of the cells exfoliated. The disintegration of the latter affords the products of proteolysis and the fatty material, and in this as a matrix, just as in necrotic tissue, there is a deposit of calcium salts, by diffusion into the mass, of serum from the inflammatory exudate and of the secretion normal to the passage. Of these concrements, the following are worthy of note: rhinoliths in the nasal passages after ozena; tonsillar concrements forming in the crypts; salivary concrements formed in the salivary ducts; lacrimal; cutaneous formed in sebaceous ducts); preputial, following phimosis, with accumulated smegma as a foundation; and appendical concrements which have as a base rolled up and compressed fecal matter. Pancreatic concrements are of widely varying constitution, this depending probably upon the length of time during which the concrement has been retained; recent one will show abundant products of cell-disintegration, while an old one will be largely composed of insoluble salts, a distinction which may be considered to hold not only for pancreatic but for all concrements.

Phleboliths.—These are small oval stones formed in veins, chiefly in the uterine plexus in the female, and the prostatic plexus in the male. All transitions may be found from a comparatively soft to a hard pearl-like body; the phlebolith arises from the deposit of lime salts in isolated thrombi that have not undergone organization, and thus lies free in the lumen of the vein.

Calcareous Incrustations.—Deposits of various kinds upon surfaces may undergo a similar impregnation with salts derived from the body fluids. The commonest example is the tartar of the teeth, of which epithelial debris and particles of food form the foundation; in chronic cystitis a deposit of phosphates may occur upon the mucosa, while foreign bodies in the tissues or cavities of the body are apt to become similarly encrusted.

Unleady or concrements of the second order include four groups—uring y, biliary, and prostatic calculi, and corpora amylacea.

Urinary Calculi. - Urinary Lithiasis. Any of the usual or unusual salts of the urine may be precipitated to form calculi, and for this formation certain features must be present, which are common to all different forms of calculi. The calculus must have a nucleus of mucus. of cell-debris, or of foreign matter, such as blood clot or an introduced foreign body, in and upon which the salts are deposited. The rate of this deposition will depend upon the relative amount of salts present in the solution, that is, the concentration of the salts; as in the urine this is very variable, the rate of deposit also varies, so that periods of progression of deposit may alternate with periods of arrest. As a consequence, most calculi are seen to be formed of concentric lamine. Since, too, in the urine, at one time one salt may be present in excess, at another another, it generally happens that layers of more than one sort enter into the formation of a calculus; mixed calculi are the rule rather than the exception; and in urinary calculi, the growing stone acts as an irritant, infection occurs with production of alkaline urine, so that the most superficial layers may be phosphatic in nature.

The mere presence of salts in excess in the urine is not adequate to explain calculus formation. If the salts be dissolved out of the calculus.

F16 162

Double contoured myelin bodies of irregular rounded shape with precesses. (Perls.)

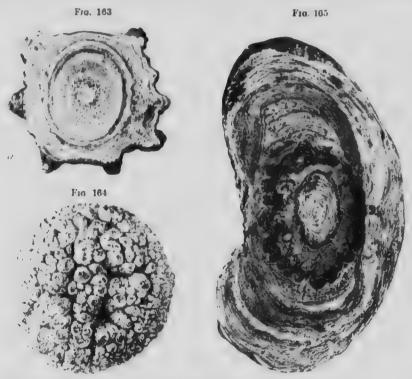
there is left behind a matrix of organic matter of gelatinous or colloid type, yellowish or otherwise pigmente—nd if calculi be ground down to make sections, after the manner of the geologist, it will be found that the salts are not laid down in their usual crystalline form, a fact which had been previously noted in egg-shells, bone, etc.; this appears to mean that there is first of all a mucinous or colloid matrix laid down, and that crystallization in colloidal solution greatly modifies the shape of the crystals, the crystals tending to be rounded instead of angular. Such a mucinous or colloid material is thrown off in inflammatory states,

and the greater its amount, the greater is the liability to precipitation of the salts. Thus for the formation of urinary calculi it seems necessary to have three factors: (1) the presence of a crystallizable body in excess in the urine, and (2) irritation of some part of the tract leading to increased discharge of mucinous material, and (3) some solid body which will act as a nucleus on which precipitation occurs. The irritation need not be bacterial, but no doubt it is so in a considerable number of cases, and if not so at the outset, the irritation caused by the stone will readily lead to a passing infection being picked up.

The most important groups of urinary calculi are the uratic (including uric acid), those formed of calcium oxalate, and the phosphatic.

Uric Acid and Uratic Calculi.—Uric acid is the commonest constituent of calculi, whether as the main or as a subsidiary salt, and is more common as uric acid than as amorphous urates. The typical uric acid calculus is rounded or oval; its surface is smooth or finely mammillated;

the color varies from fawn to red, according to the amount of uroerythrin which is brought down in the urine when uric acid separates out, and on section the stone is laminated (Figs. 163, 165). These occur relatively frequently in early life, and appear to originate in the pelvis of the kidney, whence they may be passed while still small, as gravel, small calculi of a reddish tinge. Remaining in the pelvis of the kidney they may there undergo increase in size, until they form a "staghorn" mass, accommodated to the shape of the pelvis of the kidney and its branches.



1 to 161 Calculus formed of uric acid followed by oxalate; appearance on section.

Oxalate of lime calculus ("mulberry" calculus), exterior view.

1. Ammonium urate followed by oxalate and eventually by mixed phosphates. (These are from the catalogue of the Royal College of Surgeons.)

Uratic Inspissation in Infancy.—Autopsies upon infants a few weeks old frequently show the calices of the kidneys opaque and whitish or even definitely streaked with yellow, while in the pelvis a few reddish-brown grains can be collected. The collecting tubules contain a large number of minute doubly refracting spherical masses of urates in a much a matrix, and the condition has been usually called uric acid infarct a less suitable term than uratic inspissation; the masses, chemically a composed of quadriurates. Why there should be a relatively great as charge of uric acid and urates in the very young is not under-

stood, but there seems good reason for supposing that masses of this sort are in part responsible for the uric acid calculi frequently found in the young.

Calcium Oxalate Calculi.— The most commonly seen of calcium oxalate calculi are those that are called "mulberry calculi." There is a "bossed"

Fro. 166

A stag-horn calculus (a) in pelvis of the kidney.

or mulberry-like appearance with brown or black color, and on section the laminae appear laid down like the plan of a fortress with bastions. In composition it is found that most of the oxalate calculi contain uric acid, with substances deposited from acid urine.

Phosphatic Calculi.—These may be formed only of calcium phosphate, or of ammonium magnesium phosphate, or of pure ammonium phosphate; of these the mixed form is the most common. All are thrown down from alkaline urine, and if the alkalinity depends on sodium salts, the calcium phosphate stone is found, whereas if the urine has become alkaline from infection and fermentation the triple phosphate is likely to be found, giving rise to a stone that is of loose cohesion and friable, but which may be of large size.

Other Urinary Calculi.—Cystin calculi, of a pale yellow color, becoming green on exposure to light, and of soft consistence, and xanthin calculi, although very

rare, are known. Guanin calculi have been described in cattle, as well as steatoliths of fatty or soapy masses in man.

Biliary Calculi; Cholelithiasis.—The composition of biliary calculi brings it about that they are less dense and lighter in weight than the urinary calculi; they are composed of modified bile pigments, cholesterin, and at times, calcium carbonate.

Classification.—1. The Common Gallstone.—This may be single, large, and barrel-shaped, the ends being face of the relatively large stones face of the one another, forming together a cast of the gall-bladder; or there may be multiple small stones, even hundreds in number, all of relatively the same size, generally faceted, the faceted surfaces smooth. The color varies from black or deep brown through reddish-brown (bilirubin) to green biliverdin), or may be pale yellow from superficial layers of cholesterin or white from calcium carbonate. The cut surface shows concentric layers of varying color depending on the extent of admixture with the calcium salt of biliverdin or bilirubin; the nucleus is often of cholesterin.

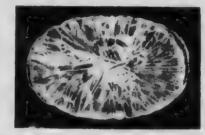
2. Pure (or almost pure) Cholesterin Calculi. These are not very common, and are usually single, oval, pale yellow stones, with a waxylooking, finely nodular surface. When broken, the surface is crystalline-looking, and there is little or no sign of stratification. It is quite rare to find them absolutely pure, but 95 per cent. or more of the contents may be cholesterin.

Fig. 167



Section of common mixed bilirubin calcium gallstone. (Naunyn.)

Fig. 168



Cholesterin calculus, cut and polished to radiate crystalline structure. (Naun)

Fig. 169



"amorphous" cholesterin gallstone

Fig. 170



Pure bilirubin calcium calculi; bile gravel.
(Naunyn.)

3. Pure Bilirubin Calcium Calculi.—These are sometimes termed "bile gravel," and are multiple blackish granules, lying in mucoid bile; when fresh they are soft, and break under the finger; when dry they crumble apart.

4. Calcium Carbonate Calculi.—Comparatively rare, these stones are very lard; more often nodules of calcium carbonate occur in the mixed calculi, or common gallstones.

Etiology. In the difficult problem of determining the causes of gallstones, there are certain well-recognized facts at the outset, such as these chart they occur most often in or after middle life, in females often whan males, and in those of sedentary rather than of active habits and that the cholesterin of which they are formed is not excreted to any extent by the liver, but from the mucous membrane of the

gall-bladder and the bile passages, especially the former. The increased production of cholesterin is due to a catarrhal state of the gall-bladder wall, induced by some bacterial agent, often of a low grade of virulence; the readiness with which the gall-bladder is infected in general blood

F10. 171

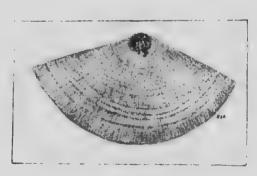


Corpora amylacea from brain, to show laminated character. × 250



Section through an amyloid body from a sternal tumor, yet more highly magnified, to show the subcrystalline deposit of successive layers of closely packed needles of amyloid material. At a the needles radiate from a small focus. (Ophuls)

Fig. 173



Amyloid body from lung (immersion lens) to show radiate crystalline formation similar to that seen in figure preceding.



Amyloid body lying in a pulmonary alveolus from a case of chronic passive congestion of the lung (high power): 4, large "cardiac" cells, containing pigment; b, red corpuscles.

infections, such as typhoid fever, will be recalled in this connection; finally it is necessary for such a state of affairs that the bile be stagnant, the contents of the gall-bladder not being quickly drained and as quickly renewed.

In gallstones, as in urinary calculi, is a mucinous matrix in which the salts are deposited, and such mucinous matrix, here also, indicates that for their production there must be a catarrhal condition of the gallbladder, with increased outpouring of mucus into the bile. The studies of the last few years have shown us with increasing emphasis the frequency with which organisms of low virulence, notably the B. coli and B. typhosus, exist for long periods in the gall-bladder. It has been shown, indeed, that cultures of one or other of these organisms added to sterile bile leads to a deposit of all the constituents of gallstones. Thus, both by favoring a low form of catarrh and by acting on the bile, these, and other organisms, directly lead to the production of gallstones. As to the cause of the great variation in the relative amounts of the different constituents we are still in doubt, but pure cholesterin calculi are most frequently found in cases in which, through obstruction, the gall-bladder or its duct are cut off from the flow of liver bile. Their cholesterin appears thus to be derived mainly from the mucous membrane lining the gall-bladder (and ducts). The deposit of calcium salts appears to be associated with the breaking down of cellular debris, as in other concrements.

Prostatic Calculi.—Section through the prostates of most men past middle life shows the presence of minute, dark-colored granules in the substance of the organ; these are sometimes called prostatic sand. They are situated within the lumina, are hyaline-looking, generally polygonal, and of concentric structure; they are so soft as to be capable of cutting, and give imperfectly the reactions of amyloid; they are sometimes called amyloid bodies of the prostate, and one of them may be the nucleus for the incrustation of salts.

Corpora Amylacea.—Closely allied to the last are minute concretions found in the brain and spinal cord of the old, in lung alveoli in cases of chronic congestion with hemorrhagic discharge into the alveoli, and in certain tumors. They have the general appearance of hyaline material. The growth of some, at least, of these bodies in the lungs and in tumors is by successive deposit of layers of obscured crystalline needles of protein nature (Figs. 172 and 174).

PIGMENTATION AND PIGMENTARY CHANGES

Their relative unimportance is the chief excuse that exists for grouping the pigment changes of different sorts together, because the pigment sion of color is no adequate ground of relationship. The pigment is can be divided according as they are: (1) endogenous, that is, at the direct products of cell metabolism or disintegration, or (2) executes, that is, are colored matters foreign to the organism and albert direct products. The endogenous we may further divide into globin and its derivatives, and (b) other metabolic pigments.

The pigment is calculated according as they are: (1) endogenous, that is, are colored matters foreign to the organism and direct products. The endogenous we may further divide into globin and its derivatives, and (b) other metabolic pigments.

The pigment is calculated according as they are: (1) endogenous, that is, at the direct products of cell metabolism or disintegration, or (2) and the direct products of cell metabolism or disintegration, or (2) and the direct products of cell metabolism or disintegration, or (2) and the direct products of cell metabolism or disintegration, or (2) and the direct products of cell metabolism or disintegration, or (2) and the direct products of cell metabolism or disintegration, or (2) and the direct products of cell metabolism or disintegration, or (2) and the direct products of cell metabolism or disintegration, or (2) and the direct products of cell metabolism or disintegration, or (2) and the direct products of cell metabolism or disintegration and distintegration or disintegration or disintegration and distintegration or disintegration or distintegration or distintegratio

I tumor, ystalline eedles of a small

eased

adder

lence:

blood

ilmonary
passive
aer a,
pigment;

gnant,
nd as

in a soluble form in the blood corpuscles, and especially in the portal system (including the spleen) is disintegrated, by the liver cells especially, with discharge into the bile of the iron-free portions of the pigment as bilirubin and other bile pigments. The urinary pigment,

urochrome, is probably also derived from it.

Experimentally, by many chemicals, by foreign blood serums, and other agents, such as thermal changes, the red corpuscles can be broken up and the hemoglobin freed into the serum, whence it diffuses into the tissues and is absorbed by various cells. In diseased states, especially sepsis, hemoglobin imbibition occurs, the heart valves and the surface of the aorta showing a bright-red color from absorption of the pigme 't, a condition to be distinguished from postmortem change of the same tissues; in sepsis the staining is partly ante mortem. When the pigment is set free in the blood in large amount it may quickly appear in the urine, unaltered as in hemoglobinuria or modified as in methemoglobinuria, in the latter having a firm combination with the oxygen with an acid reaction. If the red cells are destroyed in the tissues or serous cavities, the pigment before its discharge may undergo a further change into hematoidin or urobilin and be excreted as such (urobilinuria).

Paroxysmal hemoglobinuria is marked by the sudden appearance of hemoglobinuria for a short time, after which again the urine becomes limpid. With some people exposure to cold is enough to excite the state, and the attacks are most frequent in winter, the red corpuscles appearing to be abnormally sensitive to temperature changes.

Modified Hemoglobin.—Where there is prolonged hemorrhage or localized hemorrhage in tissues, we are apt to find the hemoglobin extensively modified, a fact which is graphically shown by the successive changes of color of a "black eye;" the substances eventually obtained are hematoidin, hemosiderin, and hemofuscin. Hematoidin is identical with bilirubin, and is red, iron-free, and to be found in the central part of a large hemorrhage. It is crystalline, in which it differs from hemosiderin, which is always found in the form of amorphous granules. In the anemias, and diseases where there is extensive destruction of red corpuscles, hemosiderin may be deposited extensively in the liver, as happens also in the condition known as hemochromatosis; it is an albuminate of iron in which the iron is relatively loosely combined, and hemofuscin probably represents a yet more stable combination of the same sort.

Pseudomelanosis,—This is the dark greenish to black coloration seen post mortem in the liver, the spleen, and the stomach wall, when these organs have lain against the intestine, sulphuretted hydrogen set free therefrom combining with the more or less modified derivatives of hemoglobin and leading to the deposit of sulphide of iron. Hematoporphyrin is an iron-free derivative of hematin which is set free in the urine, especially after the use of certain drugs such as sulphonal, whose acid constituent set free in the blood, acts upon free hemoglobin.

rtal

spe-

the

ent.

and

be

uses

tes,

the

the

e of

hen

ekly

s in

the

the

ergo

uch

e of

mes

the

cles

or

bin

ces-

ally

n is

the

it

101-

sive

rely

sis;

om-

na-

tion

hen

set

s of

-30d

ine,

(cid

Jaundice; Icterus.—The pigment of the constantly secreted bile is derived from the never-ceasing destruction of red corpuscles, which after a short existence of a few weeks fade away in the blood stream or are picked up by the phagocytic cells of the spleen and liver, their hemoglobin, either unaltered or modified, being absorbed by the endothelium of the hepatic capillaries, and by them passed on to the liver cells to be broken up. The iron-free part is discharged into the bile capillaries as bilirubin, the pigment of the bile; as to the iron-containing part of the hemoglobin, it is evidently jealously preserved by the organ, for very little passes into the bile, and relatively little remains stored in a combined state in the liver. Should the bile pigment fail to be discharged from the liver, it accumulates and regurgitates into the blood and lymph vessels, and is carried in a soluble state to the tissues elsewhere, in which it is dissolved, causing them to assume a bile-stained appearance. This staining is jaundice or icterus; the accompanying symptoms, such as itching of the skin, slowing of the pulse. mental depression, and melancholy (literally black bile) are entirely subsidiary, due to associated absorption of bile salts, etc. The blood, the urine, and the tissues show the chemical reaction for bilirubin or the more highly oxidized biliverdin, and the liver is the first organ to show this coloration.

Clinically, the sclerotics of the eye, the mucous membrane of the month, and the hard palate show pigmentation early, the skin quickly shows it and the connective tissues throughout the body; cartiage, the cornea, and in general, the nervous tissues (save in infants) are relatively unaffected; the secretions, the urine, the sweat, the saliva show it; the milk more rarely, and the tears (it is s. id) never; the pale color of the feces indicates that little, if any, is discharged from the glands of the stomach and intestines. The skin may show any gradation between pale yellow and deep olive green, and the disappearance of the color is usually slew.

Etiology.-It serv if true jaundice were always obstructive in nature, with 17.187 tion of pigment into the circulation. In obstructive jaundi ... perly so-called, it is obviously so, for there is an obstruction i. . . bile channel somewhere between the hepatic lobule and the papilla in the duodenum; there may be congenital narrowing or absence of the main ducts, inflammatory swelling of the wall with narrowing of the lumen (catarrhal jaundice), growths or force a bodies within the passage, new growths outside the passage, presing upon it, or perhaps even a spasmodic stricture of the duct. With my of these the bile channels are distended, and it is found that ulting by the pigment injects a fine intracellular network of channels, come ring with the bile capillaries. This network surrounds the nucles of the cell but does not enter it, and if distended, throws back the F pon the cell, where it is at once absorbed by the lymphatics; and the ps less rapidly, but surely, the pigment makes its way into the heparic blood; the latter process is much hastened if rupture of bile

ducts should occur. A second way in which jaundice can be caused is by the breaking down of a large number of red corpuscles in the circulation; the liver cells, presumably overloaded, excrete a concentrated, inspissated bile by which the fine channels are blocked; the obstruction is not complete, the feces may remain colored, and the jaundice may not be very severe; such a form of jaundice may occur in sepsis, and is evidently hemohepatogenous in its nature. Yet another kind of jaundice is found in such states as acute yellow atrophy of the liver, in phosphorus poisoning, and in the infective jaundice of children where the pigment is evidently freed from liver cells during their destruction; it must be remembered, in fact, that whenever many liver cells are destroyed at the same time jaundice may supervene. Finally, severe shock or nervous disturbance has been followed by jaundice, a phenomenon which we are not able to explain.

Urobilin Pigmentation.—A true hematogenous pigmentation of the tissues by urobilin can occur, the pigment being supplied from hemolysis in the vessels, without direct participation of the liver; this is not jaundice proper, although any considerable degree of hemolysis is likely to lead quickly to that state. The lemon-yellow tinge of the skin in grave anemia and the paler color of cancerous cachexia, as well as the discoloration of the skin in hemochromatosis appear to

be of this order.

Other Endogenous Pigmentations.—Melanotic Pigmentation.—Of the autochthonous pigments not derived from hemoglobin, the most important are the melanins, bodies poor in iron but rich in sulphur, which exist normally in the choroid of the eye, in the Malpighian layer of the skin, in the hair, and in the membranes of the brain, and are lacking in so-called Albinos. Increases of pigmentation are seen in pregnancy, in exophthalmic goitre, in certain neurotic states (melasma), in Addison's disease, and in melanotic tumors. This deposit of melanin appears to be due to a process in which oxidases act upon the chromogen group of the protein molecule, with the production of pigmented substances allied to tyrosin and the members of the aromatic series of protein dissociation products; these fail to undergo further conversion and so accumulate in the tissues.

Lipochromes.—These are colored fatty bodies, which give color to the fat, to the corpora lutea, to xanthomas and chloromas, and under certain conditions, to the cells of the nervous system. Present indications are that they are fats combined with tyrosin-like bodies.

Exogenous Pigmentations.—These consist of colored substances absorbed by and deposited in the tissues, or colored derivatives of substances not themselves colored. Tattooing is a familiar example of the first of these, where insoluble particles of vermilion or another pigment are rubbed into fine punctures in the skin; the particles, those at least which are not carried away to the nearest lymph nodes, remain in the outer layer of the corium, whence some of them are gradually removed, producing a fading of the color. A superficial inflammation

lasting some time may almost obliterate the tattoo mark, because leukocytes are called to the part and engulf particles of pigment. More important are the pigmentary deposits in the lungs from inhalation, the pneumonokonioses (from xous, dust). The commonest of these is anthracosis, the deposit of coal dust found in the lungs of city dwellers and coal miners; these deposits are black, whereas rather gray in color are the deposits of siliceous particles in the lungs of quarrymen, stonecutters, and workers in panite (chalicosis—χάλιξ, a pebble—or The lungs of knife-grinders, glass-polishers, and others

working with iron or iron-oxide dust become a rusty red (siderosis); those of pottery workers show dirty-white deposits in the lungs (aluminosis), and those of workers in tobacco dust a rusty-brown deposit (tabacosis). Dust particles in the air may not all be entangled by the moist wall of the nasal cavity, the pharynx and the trachea, but some reach the pulmonary alveoli, where, lying upon the epithelium, they are picked up by wandering leukocytes, which, in turn, if not discharged in the sputum. make their way back into the lymph stream; once there, they may disintegrate and leave their pigment to the endothelial cells or they may carry it to the nearest lymph node. This explains the deposit so abun- coal dust particles (high power). dantly present in the lymph nodes

aused

n the

ncen-

l; the

d the

occur

other

hy of

ice of

luring

many

rvene. ed by

of the

hemo-

: this

hemo-

tinge hexia,

ear to

If the

most

lohur.

ighian

n, and

een in

asma), elanin

hrom-

aented

ries of

ersion

olor to under

ndica-

tances

ves of

ample

nother

, those

emain

dually

nation



From section of an anthracotic lung to show fibrous areas enclosing deposits formed of fine

of the respiratory tract of a city dweller; but it is well to remember that a node that appears absolutely black to the naked eye may under the microscope prove to be a fairly normal structure, the pigment being seen in scattered masses. Wherever such insoluble particles find lodgement they act as mild irritants, giving rise to a development of new connective tissue in their neighborhood, which may be so localized around a large collection as to appear like a tubercle; a lung so affected not infrequently falls a victim to actual tuberculosis.

Of changes induced by bodies that enter the system in a colorless form and give rise to a colored deposit, the best examples are the "blue line" of lead poisoning and the deposit of silver in the tissues, known as argyria. The "blue line" is due to a deposit of lead amphide in the gums at he edges of the teeth, which is a result of the combination of the sold to salt of lead, circulating in the blood and lymph, with hydrogen sub side given off from the decaying food material lodged in the interbetween the teeth and the gums. When soluble salts of silver are in the body fluids they become reduced and metallic silver is detacted in the tissues, especially the connective tissues.

NECROSES

Necrosis is death of cells, of tissues, or of parts composed of many tissues, in spite of which death the organism as a whole continues to live.

Causation.—It has already been shown that there are many gradations of cell disturbance, in some of which quick death of cells or tissues occurs (necrosis) while in others the cells undergo a slow degeneration which erminates in death (necrobiosis, bionecrosis). Those forms of necrosis and necrobiosis which occur as a result of degenerative change induced in the cell have been dealt with, but there remain those conditions of necrosis set up by circulatory and nervous disturbances.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Necrosis is induced, on the one hand, by arrest of the blood supply, and, on the other, by deficient or perverted quality of the blood with, as a result, deficient nutrition. In a general way, it may be said that occlusion of the afferent artery and occlusion of the efferent vein of an organ alike produce death of that organ; in both cases there is a lack of oxidation of the tissues, death occurring in those cases in which there is a relatively poor collateral circulation. Necrosis will be caused, for example, by ligation of an afferent artery or efferent vein; pressure on the vessel by tumors, cysts, etc.; thrombosis, the coagulation of the blood within a vessel; embolism, the blocking of a vessel by a foreign body in the wide sense of that term; the constricting action of a drug like ergot or disease of the artery wall with proliferation of the intima inducing a partial or total occlusion. If the agent be applied suddenly, necrosis follows, if gradually, necrobiosis.

Inadequate Nutrition.—General malnutrition, tending to a weak heart action and an inadequate blood supply, leads to a progressive state of necrobiosis, to which the different orders of tissues respond differently, the specialized tissues being more readily influenced than the lowly connective tissue.

Nervous Disturbances.—Two questions here arise: can stimuli from the central nervous system set up necrosic (which is to be answered in the affirmative)? and can the loss of nerve supply lead to a like result (which is to be met by a qualified negation)? Central stimuli can apparently affect the vasomotor system so that constriction of the vessels may be followed by local anemia and even by necrosis as in Raynaud's disease (symmetrical gangrene); the loss of nerve supply may lead to cell inanition, but can only predispose to necrosis. A good example of this is seen in the supposition once widely held, that section of the fifth nerve led to ulceration of the cornea, and that neurotrophic keratitis was a definite entity; but we now know that if in these circumstances, the cornea be protected from light, dust, and injury, no keratitis occurs. Nevertheless, true though it is that nerve loss is merely a predisposing factor, it is to be admitted that inanition atrophy and

gainal death of cells will follow upon loss of nerve connection with its consequent inactivity.





n

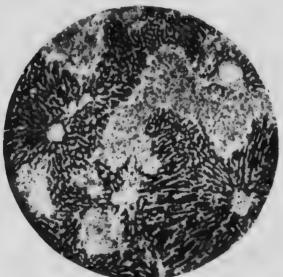
n d t h

n

Wax-like degeneration of muscle fibres (a, b) seventeen hours after temporary ligation of the same.

In b there is already some accumulation of leukeaytes. (Oberndörffer.)





ple focal necroses in the liver of a rabbit subjected to experimental glanders. (Duval.)

For s of Necrosis.—Distinction, partly clinical, may be made between different forms of necrosis; there are (1) necroses of individual

cells; (2) those affecting small groups of cells, focal necroses; (3) those affecting circumscribed areas, as a result of vascular obstruction—infarcts, and (4) necrosis affecting parts rather than tissues—gangrene.

1. Necrosis of Individual Cells.—In addition to the degenerative changes already dealt with, there is the waxy degeneration, known as Zenker's degeneration of muscle, seen especially well in the recti muscles—the abdomen in typhoid fever, in muscles after trauma, and atcs in the heart muscle. The fibres lose their striation and become waxy or glassy in appearance, the sarcolemma still intact. It appears to be a coagulation of the muscle substance, the myosinogen becoming converted into myosin.

2. Focal Necroses.—In cases of severe infections there occur, in various tissues, minute areas of necrosis scarcely visible to the naked eye; such are seen in the lymph follicles in diphtheria and typhoid fever; in the liver in typhoid fever and other forms of sepsis, even chronic forms, and most marked of all in the liver in eclampsia.

The causation of these focal necroses is yet unsettled; there is considerable evidence in favor of thrombi, sometimes hyaline, which may be formed by hemolysis of red cells, or by alteration of capillary endothelium which has been killed by toxins and cast off into the lumen.

Pat Necrosis.—Of quite a different causation are the necroses which occur when the fat-splitting ferment present in the pancreatic secretion comes in contact with unprotected tissues. These are opaque, whitish-yellow islands of small size, seen in the fatty tissues, generally in the vicinity of the pancreas; any circumstance which allows the pancreatic secretion to act upon tissues other than the pancreas or the intestinal wall, may lead to their formation.

3. Infarcts and Coagulation Necrosis.—The production of infarcts will be more fully considered later, but it is needful to mention here coagulation necrosis, a process best seen in infarcts of the kidney and spleen. In addition to the death of the cells, there is a fibrinous coagulation of the whole area, fibrin being demonstrable; besides this, the dim outlines of the tissues of the part, dead and without nuclei, can be seen. The blood fibrin is one of a group of coagulable proteins, and this process is evidently comparable to that which obtains in Zenker's degeneration, where myosinogen is converted into coagulated myosin. Closely allied to this is colliquative necrosis, in which there is liquefaction of the dead tissue as a process of self-digestion or autolysis, not to be confounded with putrefactive necrosis, where the liquefaction is the result of proteolytic powers of bacteria. The former is seen in infarcts of the brain and in the centres of tumors and large thrombi, especially in the parietal thrombi of the heart cavities.

4. Gangrene and Mortification.—The death of large areas may be brought about by many agents—by vascular obstruction, by acute infection, by burns, frost-bite, corrosives, and physical forces such as radium, the x-rays, and electricity. The results of such necrosis very widely. Where the necrosed area is small, and not infected (1) absorp-

tion occurs. By autolysis and the activity of leukocytes the dead part may be removed and its place taken by regenerated tissue of

ose

ve

wn cti na, nd ct. en

in ed id en

n-1y 0-

ch ee, ly ne

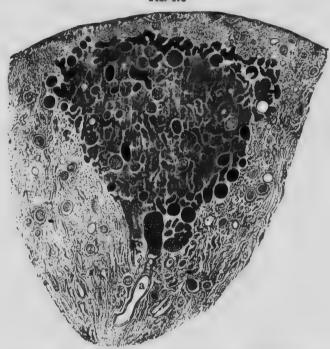
ts

re id

es it le is i-h n e e d

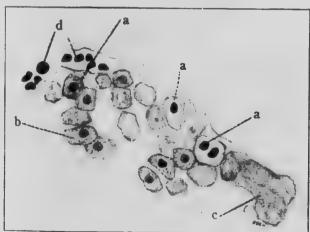
e

F10. 178



Anemic infarct of cortex of kidney to show coagulation necrosis, with surrounding sone of congestion:
a, artery. (Orth.)

Frg. 179



Fr. etion of an adrenal gland, to show the gradations in cell damage leading to coagulation drenal cells still retaining nuclear stain; b, the same with fading of nuclear chromatin; c, com, necrosed cells seen as fused shadows; d, blood corpuscies.

the part. More often, especially in areas of larger size, (2) cicatrization occurs; surrounding the dead area is a zone of reactive inflammation induced by the presence of the dead tissue and the diffused-out products of its disintegration; from this zone a formation of granulation tissue and vascularization of the same arises. In some areas, as in the brain, where reparative process is comparatively slow by reason of the relatively small amount of supportive tissue, and where colliquative necrosis is prone to occur, instead of a solid cicatrization, there is likely to be (3) cyst formation. In tissues such as bone that are so dense that disintegration of dead matter is a long-drawn-out process. the surface portions of the dead area may be disintegrated and loosened from the surrounding tissues, and the central mass, not yet disintegrated, may remain as (4) a sequestrum, lying in a cavity and bathed by purulent fluid. Another sequel to colliquative change is (5) inspissation, in which the fluid part of the dead material drains away, leaving a gradually thickening residue, which, becoming cheesy in consistence, is prone to be a seat of calcareous deposit.

Coming to the consideration of gangrene, according to the amount of blood entering the dead area and the rate of evaporation of fluid from the surface, occurs (6) moist gangrene or aphacelus, or (7) dry gangrene or mummification. In moist gangrene, as in the lung, intestine, or an extremity, blood enters the part and evaporation is prevented, the dead tissue becomes waterlogged, and by the entrance of various microbes putrefaction sets in; the affected tissue is swollen and livid; on the skin large blebs form filled with fluid; the discharge is foul from bacterial growth, and the soft tissues gradually become decomposed and liquefy, the bony portion being the last to yield. Dry gangrene may occur in the extremities and the ears, the necrotic portion becoming shrunken, wrinkled, and dark brownish black in color, like mummy flesh. At the boundary between the living and the dead tissue, a zone of intense inflammation develops, the line of demarcation, at which, by leukocytic and cytolytic activity, a separation and ultimately a detachment may

be made.

DEATH

Why does the body die? Apart from any philosophic pronouncements we can find some definite knowledge on the subject. Death is not an inherent quality of living matter; the schizomycete—and this is true of all protozoa—within certain limits of heat and cold, moisture and dryness, grows, divides, and adapts itself to change over long periods of time; accidental death may supervene, by desiccation, by physical and chemical means, but in the processes of such life there is no suggestion of death. In the hematozoön of malaria, its disappearance is not death, but a division into many new living individuals, and all of the original body save some paraplasmic pigment appears to enter into the new individuals. With the multicellular organism, death appears; the germ cells alone carry on the continuity and the somatic or body

DEATH 331

cells die. In the germ cells death is not inherent; in the somatic cells because of their specialization of function, death becomes inherent. If a multicellular organism or a cell republic could be imagined in which all cells arrived at maturity simultaneously, and in which each cell contributed exactly to the needs of others, there would be no need for somatic death. But such an individual does not exist: different orders of cells are required to be mature and active at different times. In the case of man, there are developed in the embryo, organs, such as the yolk sac, which are merely of temporary use. When their purpose is accomplished they atrophy and disappear, and their place is taken by other organs and a new cellular equilibrium has to be established. The heart and kidneys become functional early; the genitalia relatively late, and the latter, too, cease their functional activity before the organism in general. In the cases in which organs supply internal secretions to the blood and to other organs, the disappearance of those organs leaves the blood and those tissues impoverished in one or another direction; if the function of the tissues that have disappeared be assumed vicariously by other tissues, these latter have their reserve of force decreased thereby. By such constant modification there is increasing stress thrown upon the remaining cells until ultimately somatic death of the tissues in general is brought about by the failure of one or other tissue that is absolutely indispensable to life.

In the interaction of tissues, the circulatory, the respiratory, and the nervous systems are indispensable, and cessation of the activity of any one of them will bring about somatic death; organs, too, at first sight insignificant, such as adrenals or parathyroids, have been proved to be of prime importance. With so many organs, essential to life. it is clear that there may be many different ways in which somatic death may supervene, because the exhaustion of one single system or organ will be enough to permit somatic death to occur. Somatic death, when it does occur, is a cessation of function of these three vital systems, followed by the disintegration and decomposition of the body in general, there not necessarily being immediate death of individual cells. Signs of this somatic death are the cessation of respiration, and of the heart beat, clouding of the cornea, the development of rigor mortis, and, finally, of gross decomposition and putrefaction. Rigor wo. is is due to coagulation of myosinogen forming myosin, the coaguitation being brought about by the lactic acid of the muscle; the passing off of rigor mortis is due to autolytic change; its onset is rapid in those engaged in violent muscular effort at the moment of death and in cases of tetanus or strychnine poisoning; whereas in cases with prolonged wasting or of asphysia or hemorrhage it may be delayed for a considerable period. The easet, too, of decomposition is variable in time according to temperature; the normally moist parts such as the intestine show the change quickly; the bodies of those dead of acute infection and of bacterismia change rapidly not only because the bacteria are present but a because the protective substances that inhibit bacterial growth have been exhausted.



PART H

SPECIAL AND SYSTEMIC PATHOLOGY

CHATERT

THE CARDIOV. SCULAR SYS

From the discussion of the general effects of m the cell and the tissues, we not proceed to the interest at the org and systems; pass, that is, from consider 'ion what is usual known as General Path ogy to that of Special or, as e prefer to term it. Systemic Pathology Our chape as p thologists is not merely to become familiar with the various known at may affect each special but, alizer always that pa ho the handmaid of clinical messine, to keep, wind ho these less sor particular organs modify the function of the stee of which the e organs form a part, and so mode, the activities of the body as a lole. It is of peculiarly little value to the practitioner . en. for evan ble, he has diagnosticated a case of exophthalmic goitre to be shier all to mind the picture of the thyroid changes that occur in the disease, usess with this he simulneously appreciates what those langes imply, namely, increased vivoid cells, increased discharge into the blood of ereased oxidative changes, and metabolic activity mism. te. The use of pathology, in short, is to of lisease, and with this to afford indications and wile the mass of data with which the student be ! Har is a large that our treatment of systemic pathology e painfull pitomized verything is to be brought within the of a single plume, we shall throughout conscientiously endeavor cep before our readers the basic and more practical aspect of

the pathology of the cardiovascular system includes, circulation medium, the blood (and lymph), and, second, ratus whereby this medium circulates.

d we must consider the lymph. That also circulates. to say in a poll-parrot manner, that all the tissues gain ment from the blood, and saying this to forget that, save f leukocytes, which are suspended in the blood, and those

other cells which line the bloodyessels, this statement is incorrect, giving us a false mental picture of what really happens. Save in the case of the above-mentioned exceptions, the tissue cells gain their nourishment from the lymph. This, it is true, is derived from the blood. It is, however, not identical with the blood plasma; its composition varies in different organs and regions and in different states of the body; the indications are that its transfusion from the vessels is largely a governed process, varying according to circumstances, while it receives primarily those products of cell activity which are not directly excreted by the glands. The lymph, then, rather than the blood, is the great medium of interchange, and as such must not be passed over, as we imagine is the tendency, as of secondary importance.

Saying this, we admit that just as the lymph originally is derived from the blood, so sooner or later it is discharged into it again,

We have to deal with:

I. The blood.

1. Quantitative alterations:

(i) In the amount of blood as a whole.

(2) In the amount supplied to particular regions.(3) Disturbances in blood supply brought about by:

(a) Hemorrhage.

- (b) Intravascular disorganization of the blood (thrombosis).
- (c) Effects of foreign bodies (embolism).

2. Qualitative alterations:

(1) In the fluid menstruum of the blood.

(2) In the corpuscular elements.

II. The lymph.

1. Quantitative changes;

2. Qualitative changes.
III. The blood-forming organs.

It will, however, be more convenient, as it is more in accordance with custom, to discuss the blood-forming organs after we have treated the cardiovascular apparatus.

THE BLOOD

Quantitative Alteration.—It needs but a short experience in the post-mortem room to realize that in disease the relative amount of blood in the body varies within very wide limits. Some bodies are strikingly dry, others (notably cases of chronic obstructive heart disease) ooze abundant blood at every cut. But in health also there is wide variation. This is demonstrated by Haldane and Lorrain Smith's method. Carbon monoxide is taken up by the red corpuscles with much greater avidity than is oxygen. If, therefore, an individual be made to breathe for a short time a known amount of carbon monoxide, it is easy, by removing after a tew minutes some cubic centimeters of that individual's blood, to estimate

giving

case of

hment

, how-

ries in

y; the

verned

marily

y the

edium

gine is

erived

arom-

lance

rated

post-

od in

dry,

dant

iis is

11011-

an is

time

lew

nate

the amount of carbon monoxide per cubic centimeter in that blood, and therefore the total number of cubic centimeters of the circulating blood. The usual statement is that the amount of blood corresponds to one-thirteenth of the body weight. This is too high. The average amount is rather under one-twentieth, but while this is so, a robust young athlete may have twice as much blood per kilo of body weight as has his wiry grandparent, although both appear to be in perfect health.

These facts put us on our guard regarding the value of specific gravity determinations and red corpuscle counts. The same results as regards heightened specific gravity or increase in the number of erythrocytes may be produced equally by an increased production of corpuscles, and, on the other hand, by reduction in the fluid of the blood. The same is true, mutatis mutandis, with regard to lowered specific gravity, or decrease in the number of corpuscles. Without a determination of the amount of circulating blood, enumeration of the corpuseles gives us no sure information regarding variation in the production or destruction of the corpuscles. Indeed, with this fuller knowledge we are beginning to find out that conditions which hitherto have been classed among the anemias, or states of insufficient blood production, are truly conditions of hydrenia, or dilution of the blood and actual increase in its amount. There exist, that is, states of true oligemia, or diminution in the amount of circulating blood, and of plethora or increase in the blood volume.

Oligemia (Ischemia).—This diminution in volume may be found in some secondary anemias and in pernicious anemia. In these conditions we find at autopsy not only that the blood is thin and of a pale color, but that the amount of the blood in the heart and vessels is notably small. Like reduction in quantity may follow extreme or repeated hemorrhages or, again, great loss in the fluid part of the blood, as occurs in cholera and pernicious vomiting. In this latter ca.e the fluid left in the vessels is thick and tarry, owing to concentration of the corpuseles, contrary to what occurs after extensive hemorrhage, when what blood there is is singularly pale and thin, owing to the passage into the vessels of tissue fluids, in order to make up for the loss of blood proper.

Plethora. Adequate nutrition, with active development of the muscular system, is found to be associated with increase in the amount of blood above the normal. There is thus, contrary to the teaching that has prevailed for some years, such a condition as simple plethora. With this also exists pathological plethora, as seen in obstructive heart disease, where the blood is apt to be darker than normal, owing to imperfect oxidation, although estimation of its specific gravity shows that it is more dilute than normal (hydremic plethora). We do not wholly understand what are the conditions that lead to this hydremic state in heart disease. A similar condition has also been noted in cases of obstructive lung disease. A somewhat different type is the plethora that follows the daily consumption of many liters of light beer, allied

with the so-called Munich beer heart. In these cases the heart is found much hypertrophied and dilated, clearly in response to the larger amount of fluid which is absorbed from the alimentary canal in successive tides, necessitating increased work to pump the increased volume. Yet another form of plethora is seen in chronic Bright's disease, attributed by some to reduced discharge of water through the damaged kidneys, by others to retention of chlorides in the tissues and the associated necessity of increased fluid for their due solution. Here, also, there is a heaping up of lymph and fluid in the tissue spaces (anasarca).

Alteration in Distribution Due to Cardiac Disturbance.—It is obvious that, the blood being kept in motion by the heart, disturbances of that organ materially affect the quantity of blood in the veins and arteries respectively. These disturbances may be broadly divided into three orders: (1) those involving the heart muscle; (2) those of the valvular apparatus; and (3) those of the nervous mechanism controlling the heart beat. By each and all of these the pumping action of the heart

may be modified.

Disease of the heart muscle leads to weakening of the same, so that the organ is incapable of propelling the adequate amount of blood either from the right ventricle through the lungs into the left heart, or from the left ventricle into the systemic arteries. Similarly, imperfect action of the valves results either in direct obstruction to the inflow of the blood through the narrowed orifices, or to indirect obstruction, from regurgitation of blood already forced forward, through valves that are incompetent and patent when they ought to be closed. In both orders the result is an arrest of the inflow of the blood with, as a result, a progressive accumulation of blood on the venous side of the heart; overfilling of the veins, whether of the lungs alone or of both lungs and the various organs; relative deficiency in the arterial blood supplied to the various organs, and lowering in the arterial blood pressure. The effects of this we shall discuss under the heading of Passive Congestion (338). Where the left ventricle or valves of the left heart are involved, the pulmonary veins exhibit distension and increased pressure with congestion of the lungs and all its attendant disturbances of respiration. This throws increased work upon the right ventricle, which undergoes hypertrophy and dilatation, and eventually, the right heart becoming unable to overcome the obstruction, there results also congestion of the systemic venous system.

Disturbance of the cardiac nervous system, whether acting more particularly upon the vagus paths, the accelerators, or the intrinsic nervous mechanism, leads to alterations in the frequency or the regularity of the heart beat. **Tachycardia**, or increased rate of beat, may eventually lead to heaping up of blood in the systemic veins in consequence of shortened diastole and imperfect filling of the ventricles. **Bradycardia**, or slowing of heart beat, may lead similarly to defective filling of the arteries with resultant accumulation of blood on the right

side of the heart.

s found larger succesolume. attribmaged e assoe, also, sarca). obvious of that arteries o three alvular ing the e heart

so that f blood : heart. imperto the bstruchrough closed. d with, side of one or ie artearterial neading lves of on and endant ne right

g more ntrinsic e reguit, may conseatricles. efective re right

ntually,

, there

Alterations in the Distribution of the Blood Due to Disturbances Affecting the Vessels.—The vascular tree is so extensive that it is capable of holding very much more than the normal amount of blood; the vessels of the liver alone fully distended are said to be capable of holding the whole of the circulating blood. Thus, for the circulation to continue, it is essential that the vascular channels be reduced down to such a width and extent that the normal amount of blood fills them. This is brought about by two main agencies, namely, arterial contraction (tone), and muscular tone, the compression exerted by the partial contraction of the muscles in general and notably those of the abdominal wall. The existence of muscle in the walls of the veins shows that these also are capable of variation in caliber. The recent researches of Yandell Henderson demonstrate clearly the existence of a venopressor mechanism. It follows that, by the action of one or other factor, the blood may find itself in relative abundance on the arterial side of the circulation or on the venous, although the close interaction between the heart and vessels may bring it about that opposed states of the arteries may result in the same general effects upon the distribution of the blood. Extreme contraction of the arteries and arterioles, for example, may result in an obstructive heaping up of blood on the right side of the heart, but so also extreme dilatation of the arteries and arterioles may be followed by such a lowering of the blood pressure that the circulating fluid cannot be forced through the veins, but, stagnating there, affords a similar picture of passive congestion. We have already discussed the effects of vascular relaxation, when treating of Shock and Collapse (p. 178).

Local Alterations in Blood Supply.—Increased activity of an organ or part is, as is well known, accompanied by increased passage of blood to the same. Such increase is largely determined by the vasomotor apparatus, although at the same time there are indications that the reaction of the lymph in the part has a direct influence upon the museulature of the vessels. The lymph may become more acid with activity of the tissues and, further, may come to contain other diffusible cell products capable of acting on the vessel wall. Many other influences determine the arterial supply of a part, as again the passage of blood out of it through the veins. We thus recognize the following states:

Local) active hyperemia, due to increased determination of blood to the part through the arteres

2. (Local) passive hypercura, due to obstruction to the discharge

of blood through the veins.

Local) capillary hyperemia, in which, with no change in the call or of the artery and no obstruction to the outflow, a hyperemia is indused by widening of the abundant capillary channels of an organ.

1. Local) anemia.

Acres Hyperemia of a part may be direct, due to dilatation of the arter supplying that part, or collateral, due to contraction of other arter whereby the blood pressure is raised, and as a result more blood is poured into those arteries which are not actively contracted. This latter we see in the development of a collateral circulation in a limb or other region after obstruction of the main artery. The direct form is brought about either by stimulation of the vasodilators (neurotonic hyperemia), a paralysis of the vasocontractors (neuroparalytic hyperemia), or direct local action of physical or chemical agents on the part (warmth, diminution of external pressure, after-results of temporary ligation, atropin, croton oil, etc.). Such arterial hyperemia is characterized by increase in size of the affected part, bright red color, increased warmth with, it may be, throbbing and pulsation.

Capillary Hyperemia is usually classed as arterial. We are, however, inclined to hold that the "active" hyperemia of inflammation is due not so much to dilatation of the arteries going to the inflamed part, as to physical changes occurring in the capillary area whereby the onflow of the blood is hindered. In all viscera possessing muscular walls or capsule, expansion of that muscle and lack of tone of the same, passively permit a dilatation and hyperemia of the capillaries within the

viscera.

Venous Hyperemia or Passive Congestion.—Obstruction to the onflow of the blood or closure of a vein necessitates that the blood propelled from the artery accumulates behind the point of arrest, unless, that is, there be so extensive a collateral network of veins that the blood can escape through these. If, however, the obstruction is beyond the point where the veins of a part converge, then accumulation must occur. If, for example, the obstruction occurs in the right heart the whole systemic venous system is apt to show the condition of passive congestion. If, again, the obstruction is in the left heart the whole pulmonary area becomes intensely congested. Thus (1) cardiac weakness, (2) hindrances to perfect inspiration, as from paralysis of the diaphragm or accumulation of fluid in the pleural cavity, and (3) arterial dilatation with lowered blood pressure, all lessen the onflow of the venous blood, and, to a greater or less degree, favor venous congestion. Such overfilling of the veins tends to show itself, more particularly, in those regions in which the veins receive fittle support from their surroundings. It also must be remembered that a forward passage of blood through the veins is aided by muscular contraction, as again by the negative pressure on the thorax during inspiration, and lack, or relative lack, of these is also a factor favoring local or general congestion. It is, however, where there is obliteration of the venous channels that the passive hyperemia is apt to be most marked.

As a result of this damming of venous blood in a part (1) it becomes enlarged in consequence of the increased amount of contained blood, and, secondarily, as a result of increased transudation from the distended capillaries; (2) it becomes of a dark purplish color, owing to the distension of those vessels whose blood, by long continuance in them, has become intensely venous, and (3) where superficial, the part is cooler than the surrounding parts, owing to the slowed circulation and increased

radiation. The blood may become intensely venous, and this explains the cyanosis of sufferers from passive congestion. The vessel walls are apt to show evidences of malnutrition, the epithelium becomes abnormally stretched, and may exhibit fatty degeneration, and, as a result, there is increased transudation into the tissues, resulting in oderns. Where there is venous congestion of large areas, as in heart disease, this ardema is one of the most striking features. There may be accumulation of fluid in the body cavities (ascites, hydrothorax), and in the subcutaneous tissues (anasarca). Perhaps the most rapid accumulation of fluid takes place when the portal vein becomes blocked or obliterated. This leads to a very quickly developing ascites, presumably because the portal blood coming from the intestines is more toxic and harmful to the lining endothelium of the vessels than is the systemic With extreme congestion there may be multiple blood in general. capillary hemorrhages. Lastly, malnutrition is apt to affect the tissue cells also, and these may show evidence of degeneration.

Stasis. Slowing of the blood stream may become so extreme that its onflow is completely arrested, and there is brought about a condition of stasis. The capillaries of a part are found intensely distended, as also the veins (if this condition is caused by venous obstruction); the arteries also are distended, as a result of the obstruction in front. As a consequence of the malnutrition and dilatation of the vascular walls the fluid of the blood tends to escape into the surrounding tissues, and the more concentrated corpuseles become so compressed as often to appear as a homogeneous hyaline mass. This conglutination must not be mistaken for coagulation; with removal of the obstruction and resumption of circulation the individual corpuscles may again become loosened one from the other. Prior to this stage of conglutination, the weakening of the distended capillary walls may result either in escape of some of the erythrocytes into the surrounding tissue,, either through spaces in the walls (hemorrhage per diapedesin, see p. 354), or as a result of actual rupture (per rhexin).

The causes of such stasis may be either (1) obliteration of the efferent vein of the part; (2) obliteration of the afferent artery, with regurgitation of blood from surrounding capillaries into an area which now has no stream through it, but has become a "backwater" (see red infarct, p. 344); (3) chemical and physical agencies acting directly upon the capillaries of a part, e. g., heat, caustic agents, toxins, and other

bodies inducing acute inflammation (see p. 122).

Local Anemia.—Local anemia may (1) be part of a general bloodlessness as after profound hemorrhage, or may be (2) collateral or compensates as where the determination of blood to one region leads to
inadequate blood supply to others, as is well seen in the cerebral anemia
of stroope (p. 178), or may be (3) due to local disturbance, as in the
sparse contraction of the artery or arteries of supply of a region (neurotomic anemia) seen in Raynaud's disease (symmetrical gangrene), and in
the streficial tissues under the action of cold, or again through the

owever, due not t, as to aflow of valls or ne, pashin the

racted.

on in a

direct

neuro-

aralytic

on the

tempo-

emia is

d color.

ropelled that is. ood can ne point eur. If, ystemic on. If, ry area (2) hinragm or latation s blood, erfilling gions in It also he veins

becomes
becomes
blood,
stended
the disem, has
s cooler
hereased

pressure

these is

r, where

direct agency of adrenin and other vasoconstrictor drugs; may be caused (4) by obstruction to the arterial inflow to a part, as (a) by pressure on that artery from without by new growths, ligation, etc., (b) by disease of the arterial walls, (c) obstruction to its lumen either by foreign bodies, as in embolism (p. 351), or by intravital coagulation of the contained blood (thrombosis, p. 46), (d) section of the ressel, etc.; may be caused (5) by direct compression exerted pon a part (Esmarch's bandages, pressure of aneurysms, and other tumors upon the surrounding tissues). Pressure is, however, more apt, save when extreme, to tell first upon the less rigid veins, and as a result, passive congestion rather than anemia is the more frequent. It will be recalled that if a pressure less strong than that required to arrest the pulse below, is applied around the proximal part of a limb, the result is a well-marked passive congestion and swelling of that limb, and thus an incarcerated hernia presents a similar venous hyperemia and not anemia.

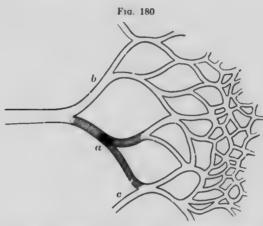
Results of Local Anemia.—These are primarily (1) pallor, (2) some reduction in size due to lessened filling of the vessels, (3) firmer consistency, (4) lowered temperature, (5) arrested function. With these there may be subjective symptoms—numbness, "pins and needles," agonizing cramps, and sometimes intense pain. The after-effects may be very serious unless conditions favor the development of a collateral

circulation. These results we will consider in some detail.

Closure of Vessels and its Effects.—Arterial Occlusion.—The results of closure of an artery are influenced by many factors: (1) the rate of closure, whether sudden or gradual; (2) the existence of anastomosing arteries; (3) the relative size of these collateral vessels; (4) the extent of the area supplied by the closed artery; (5) the arterial blood pressure; (6) the venous blood pressure; and (7) the difference between the two latter. Slow occlusion, for example, extending over days (as in the case of disease of the arterial wall) affords time for the development of an adequate collateral circulation. Such collateral circulation may be present, but the anastomosing vessels may be of insignificant size, and sudden occlusion in these cases may lead to death of the tissues of an area before the collateral vessels undergo sufficient distension to carry the blood supply needed for the part. A good example of this is seen in connection with the heart. Anastomoses exist between the different branches of the coronary artery; but these are small, and as a result a sudden blockage of one branch is followed by death of its area of supply (infarct formation).

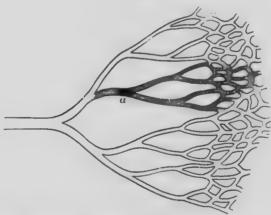
This presence or absence of anastomosing arteries is of high importance. Cohnheim divided the arteries of the body into two orders, the anastomosing and the terminal or end-arteries. The accompanying diagrams indicate the nature of the two. Of the former the most striking example is the circle of Willis; the anastomosing arteries there are so considerable that obviously if one be blocked, blood can easily flow into its branches from the other contributory vessels. In the muscles also and the skin (save the very smallest superficial vessels)

anastomoses are abundant; it requires the simultaneous blockage of several arteries to arrest the circulation. Of Cohnheim's terminal arteries the most marked instances are the arteria centralis retinæ, the renal artery and its branches, the splenic artery and its branches, the



Shema of an anastomosing circulation. If a branch be ligatured or blocked as at a, the region supplied by that branch receives abundant blood through the anastomoses between it and other arteries, b and c. At most there is an arrested circulation in the artery itself as far as the nearest points of branching or anastomosis above and below.





It we that a ligature or obstruction at the point a may out off the whole blood supply of the team.

It is that a ligature or obstruction at the point a may out off the whole blood supply of the team.

I by the obstructed artery and its branches, unless the capillary circulation provided by a citeries be so abundant as to afford nourishment to the blocked area.

pose of other arteries of like or different origin. We are of opinion that this is pure a matter of degree. Careful study of the kidney, for example,

caused ressure (b) by her by tion of el, etc.; narch's roundme, to

elow, is narked cerated) some

gestion hat if a

er conh these redles," ts may llateral

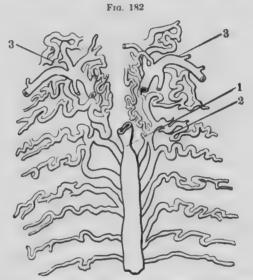
results rate of mosing tent of ressure; the two he case t of an nay be ze, and es of an o carry seen in ifferent

imporers, the canying e most es there easily

esult a

In the vessels)

reveals occasional anastomoses between branches of the cortical arteries, and experimentally it can be shown that underlying the capsule the capillary area is common to the capsular and the cortical arteries. In the heart muscle also, as already noted, clear arterial anastomoses exist, but despite their existence, identical infarct production occurs when a coronary artery is blocked, or one of its main branches, as when the arteria centralis retinus becomes obliterated. The same considerations apply to the intestinal arteries; anastomoses occur between the superior mesenteric and the many rami duodenales of the pancreatico-duodenal artery above and the rami colici of the inferior mesenteric below, as again between the successive branches of the superior mesen-



The main trunks of a collateral circulation established by means of the intercostals and neck vessels between the arch of the acrta and the dorsal acrta in a case of coarctation or congenital obstruction of the acrta in the region of the ductus Botalli. 1, region of coarctation; 2, anastomotic branches between the intercostal arteries; 3, subclavian arteries. From man, aged thirty-five years. (After J. F. Meckel and Thoma.)

teric. If a small branch of this last be blocked the anastomoses may be adequate to prevent any arrest of the circulation; if a larger, gangrene of the intestines inevitably supervenes because these anastomoses are inadequate. It is not the existence or non-existence of anastomoses that should trouble us, but the presence or absence of adequate anastomoses; if the surrounding arteries, whether directly or indirectly through their capillaries, cannot rapidly afford adequate blood to preserve the vitality of the area whose direct supply has been arrested, then death of that area must follow, resulting in a focal necrosis, when only a small capillary area is involved, in an infarct where the area of distribution of an arterial branch is involved, and gangrene or mortification where one of the larger arteries supplying a part is, with its branches, cut off from

rteries, ule the rteries. omoses occurs is when isideraeen the reatico-

senteric

mesen-

the circulation. These three terms indicate grades of extent of disturbance rather than distinct processes.

Development of Collateral Circulation.—Where a large artery, such as the femoral becomes suddenly obliterated, the limb becomes numb, cold, and paretic. Slowly during the course of days it regains its temperature and muscular power. We know from dissection that anastomoses exist between the femoral and its branches and the other arteries of the lower limb, but obviously at first these cannot supply sufficient blood to the part. The returning warmth shows that gradually these enlarge until the collateral circulation becomes complete. The accompanying diagrams show how abundant and large these collateral channels may become. It has been determined experimentally that even capillary channels in this process of distension may become arterial, gaining the structure of arteries.

Venous anastomoses are freer and more widespread than are arterial; as a result the extent of the collateral circulation set up is at times very extraordinary. When, for example, the portal vein becomes obstructed, the blood from the abdominal area may find its way to the heart through the coronary veins of the stomach, and so to the œsophageal veins; through those of the gastro-epiploic omentum to the diaphragm and so to the vena azygos, through anastomoses between the inferior mesenteric and the hemorrhoidal veins; through the veins of the round and suspensory ligaments of the liver to the epigastric and mammary veins

and so on.

Infarct Formation and Mortification.—Where, as above noted, the anastomoses are inadequate to restore the circulation before the tissues die and here it must be noted that tissues vary in their vitality so that, for example, glandular organs are more sensitive to nutritional changes than are muscle and connective tissues), then a characteristic series of changes manifests itself. Of these, paradoxically, the first is a swelling of the affected area so characteristic as to afford the name given by Virchow, of infarction or "stuffing." This swelling is due to great distension of the capillaries with blood. They become intensely congested, and at the same time the tissue cells of the part show a series of changes ending in complete death and failure of their nuclei to stain.

How does this congestion come about? Cohnheim held that as with theking of the artery of supply, the blood pressure beyond the block duced to nil, and as the surrounding veins have a positive pressure blood falls, as it were, from them into the area until the pressure the reaches that in the surrounding capillaries. The matter, however, is not quite so simple. It has been shown that in the kidney, for example, the congestion becomes even more extreme when both the artery and the vein are ligatured, also that after the artery has been ligatured blood continues to be discharged from the vein. Evidently, therefore, the ellateral arterial supply of this organ through the capsular vessels, and through the pelvis from the ureteral, is more extensive than we are apter a imagine. Wherefore it would appear that after ligation of the

eck vessels obstruction c branches ers. (After

may be angrene oses that noses; if their vitality of that apillary of an e one of

iff from

artery going to a part the pressure communicated to the capillary circulation through these collateral arteries is sufficient to distend the capillaries of the affected area, although insufficient to drive the capillary blood forward, or to supply adequate nutrition. This imperfect aëration in itself is a factor in the loss of tone and dilatation of the

capillaries.

Experiments by Greenfield, of Edinburgh, and his pupils, confirming earlier studies of Vulpian and Hardy, demonstrate that in its first stage—within five hours of the obstruction—an infarct is always intensely congested, reddish-purple, and raised. Later, if not too large, as both the cells of the part and the blood corpuscles undergo necrotic changes, the hemoglobin becomes diffused out, and the part becomes paler and of a more pinkish color. It is in the early part of this second period that the infarct shows best the condition termed coagulation-necrosis. The cells no longer stain; they become hyaline or very finely granular shadows of themselves. At first the individual cell outlines are still distinguishable; soon tissue cells, capillaries, and their contents become fused into

a firm homogeneous or almost homogeneous hyaline mass.

In this way the hemorrhagic or red infarct and the "anemic" or "white" infarct may be regarded as two stages in the one process. But here certain complications enter: (1) the hemoglobin may not diffuse out of the centre of a large infarctous area so that there may be complete hemorrhagic necrosis without pallor, and (2) in certain tissues (lung, liver) the infarct does not proceed beyond the red stage, and that because, owing to the existence of a double blood supply, the coagulation necrosis stage is not reached. Thus, if a branch of the pulmonary artery becomes occluded, the result is intense congestion of the region of supply, congestion so intense that the corpuscles escape into and fill the alveoli; but sufficient blood still reaches the alveolar walls through branches of the bronchial arteries to maintain their vitality. Similarly, if a branch of the portal vein be occluded, a like red infarct is produced, but the liver cells do not undergo necrosis, gaining sufficient

nourishment through the branches of the hepatic artery.

It follows thus that the red or hemorrhagic infarct is of at least three orders; and a fourth may here be noted, namely, that the local death of tissue accompanied by intense congestion and all the features of infarct formation may equally be brought about by occlusion of the efferent rein of the part, provided that there be no adequate anastomoses. While, for example, the majority of red infarcts in the lung appear to be due to blocking of a branch of the pulmonary artery, in a certain number of cases a like condition is produced by intravital coagulation of the blood in a branch of the pulmonary vein. It can easily be imagined how in these cases, owing to lack of exit, there is most intense congestion of, with hemorrhage from, the capillaries of the affected part, and how the stasis is liable to be followed by tissue death. This venous form is always of the hemorrhagic type. An organ in which it is apt to occur is the adrenal, and this particularly in young children, in them being

a cause of relatively sudden death. The whole organ is found intensely bemorrhagic.

It deserves note that arteries of the terminal type most frequently exhibit a dichotomous branching and spread thus from the hilus of an organ in a fan-like manner toward the periphery. The typical infarct, therefore, is wedge-shaped, with the apex directed toward the hilus, and the base beneath the surface of the organ. We say beneath, because usually the infarct does not come absolutely to the surface. In general, a superficial layer is to be made out of tissue that is congested but not necrosed, tissue that is prevented from necrosis by the collateral circulation established in it, through the capsular vessels.

Results of Infarction.—1. Complete Resolution.—Complete resolution may occur where the infarction is imperfect and, as in the lung, does not result in complete necrosis. Capillary infarcts and focal necroses may also be followed by no obvious results, the destroyed tissue cells being replaced by regeneration after leukocytes have migrated into the part, and have aided in the digestion and removal

of the necrosed tissue and fibrin.

2. Organization and Cicatrization.—These are the typical events in the ordinary infarct. Very rapidly the necrosed wedge of tissue is found surrounded by a zone of pronounced congestion, with leukocytic migration into the necrosed area, and at the periphery there may be a certain amount of regeneration of the tissue cells proper. In the more central area the dead tissue is removed by the agency of the leukocytes and tissue ferments, and now gradually the central dead area becomes the seat of a progressive formation of granulation tissue; new capillaries pass in from the surrounding vessels and become clothed with fibroblasts until a new connective tissue completely replaces the dead tissue, and then, after the nature of new connective tissue, undergoes pronounced contraction, so that the end result is the production of a dense, depressed sear of firm connective tissue. Not infrequently we meet with these depressed cicatrices of old infarcts in the kidney and the spleen.

Cyst Formation.—Where there is little reaction on the part of the surrounding connective tissue, autolytic changes result in the necrotic tissue becoming eventually replaced by a serous fluid, encapsulated within a relatively thin layer of connective tissue. Such cyst formation obsequent to old infarction is most frequently met with in the

brain (see p. 294).

1. Suppuration.—Suppuration may occur in small infarcts where the block leas been due to infected material in the blood stream. As the microarganisms multiply and toxins diffuse, leukocytes may be attracted to the area in such abundance that a true abscess replaces the infarct.

Patrefaction.—Where the infarct is larger and becomes infected, the Primination of leukocytes to the part may be inadequate, and with the growth of the bacteria the cells are broken down and liquefied, and possible of putrefaction rather than of true abscess formation being the result.

the apilrfect the

ming

cir-

stage isely in the , the of a the cells lows

into
" or
But
ffuse
comsues

ish-

and oagpulthe into valls lity.

east ocal ures

ses. r to tain n of ned

now n is

cur ing 6. Calcification. Rarely calcareous salts may be deposited in the infarcted area.

Mortification or Gangrene. We have already noted that where limbs or large areas are involved in this process there we spent of mortification rather than of infarct formation. In these cases suprophytic organisms from the surface are apt to grow into and invade the dead tissue, leading to extensive putrefaction. We have already described the stages and forms of this mortification or gangrene (see p. 328).

Thrombosis. The main cause of infarct formation and local arrest of the circulation is *embolism*. But, as dislodged particles of thrombi are the most frequent causes of embolism, it will be better to discuss

first the subject of thrombosis.

Thrombosis is the intravital deposit of constituents of the blood in a solid form within the vessels. It is a process frequently found at post mortems. Here we must distinguish between post mortem clotting and intravital, and at times this is difficult. The following are the main features: (1) blood that has clotted in vessels after death (craor) has done so by a process identical with that which occurs in blood removed from the body. It is a true coagulation, with fibrin formation. (2) It shows no stratification; the blood has congulated en masse, save that just as with blood coagulated slowly outside the body, the lighter leukocytes may rise to the top and form a "buffy coat," so sometimes we find this post mortem clot red throughout, at other times, notably in the auricles of the heart, we find a superficial and upper pale layer and a lower mass of red clot. Where there is a condition of marked leukocytosis, this pale layer is extensive, with a yellowish tint and translucency, earning for it the title of "chicken-fat" clot. (3) Under the microscope this post mortem clot presents the same appearances of a network of fibrin, enclosing corpuscles, which is seen in extravascular blood clot. (4) It is moister and less friable than is an ante mortem thrombus. (5) It is not adherent, but, on the contrary, is easily removed from the cavity in which it lies.

The thrombus, on the contrary, is firmly adherent at some point, or, if not adherent, search will show a detached surface and a region in the vessel or cavity where it had previously been attached. It is dry and more friable; seen under the microscope the arrangement of its constituents is different from that seen in an extravascular

clot.

The conditions, in short, leading to coagulation and thrombosis are different. According to modern teaching, coagulation is essentially brought about by the formation of fibrin as a fine network. It is here necessary only to recall that this formation is due to the action of fibrin ferment or thrombin upon certain of the proteins present in the blood plasma. This ferment is not present in the normal circulating blood, but is produced after the blood is discharged from the vessels by the action of a thrombokinase upon the thrombogen of the plasma in the presence of calcium salts. The thrombokinase in its turn is supposed

to be liberated in the breaking down of leukocytes and blood platelets, although tissue cells also may afford a coaguline which activates the thrombogen. Opposed to this thrombokinase, there exist, according to Brücke, substances which hinder coagulation, given off, more particularly, by the endothelial cells of the vascular intima.

a the

limbs

ortifi-

hytic

dead

ribed

arrest

ombi

iscuss

l in a

post

g and

main

r) has

poved

(2) It

that

euko-

e find

n the

and a

euko-

trans-

er the

s of a

scular

ortem

noved

point,

ind a

ched.

ange-

scular

is are

itially

s here

fibrin

blood

plood,

iv the

n the

posed

).

The characteristic of the thrombus is that the fine network of fibrin is not an essential. Perhaps the best idea of the nature of thrombosis is gained from a study of the successive stages of its experimental production. It is well known that if a foreign body be introduced into the blood stream a clot or thrombus tends to form around it. We owe to Eberth and Schimmelbusch the first clear studies upon what occurs in this process. They introduced a fine needle point through the vessel wall, and observed a very striking process; namely, they found that the first step is the accumulation upon the foreign body of blood platelets. What these blood platelets are has been subject of debate, but this is certain that they are present in varying numbers in normal blood, and that a reduction in their number characterizes conditions in which there is delayed or imperfect agulation of the blood (hypinosis). The studies of J. H. Wright have demonstrated positively that some, at least, of them originate in the bone marrow by the breaking off of processes from the megacaryocytes of that tissue. Arnold and others hold that some, at least, originate from red corpuscles. Accumulated thus the blood platelets run together or tadergo conglutination into a homogeneous or finely granular mass, and not into fibrils, and with successive deposit of more blood platelets the vers homen may become filled with (1) a pure hyaline blood platelet thread is however, the leukocytes of the circulating blood also be even patherent to the mass when we speak of (2) a mixed blood platelet ad souko vte thrombus. Or, under certain conditions, more particular which there is pronounced stasis of the blood, a thrombus beginning thus passes on to the condition akin to coagulation proper, and coarse hyaline bands and processes of conglutinated material enclose in their mashes the red corpuscles, so that (3) a mixed red thrombus is produced.

These are the main types, but also in the smaller vessels we occasionally encounter (4) hyaline thrombi, which it is difficult to explain other than as due to a conglutination or agglutination, not of blood platelets, but of red corpuscles, as may be seen in inflammatory stasis (see Fig. 160).

Endothelium.—This is a factor of the first order. Baumgarten and Lister have shown that the blood may be kept fluid for days when end ed in a vein between two ligatures, or in a "living test-tube," consisted of a vein, ligatured before removal from the body, and then opened at one end, provided that in ligation the endothelium has not how some ed. On the other hand, the destruction of the endothelium, where resperimentally or by disease, is followed by thrombosis.

2. Slowing of the Blood Current and Stagnation.—Large thrombi occur in areas like aneurysms, where the blood stream is slowed; where, as in arteries, the stream is rapid, there may be little or no thrombosis. Thus thrombosis is much more common in the venous than in the arterial system.

3. Eddying of the Blood.—Von Recklinghausen held that this rather than simple stagnation explains the frequent origin of thrombi in the pockets of the valves of the veins. The centre of an eddy may be recalled as relatively stagnant, and the more peripheral whirl brings successive cells or blood platelet—into approximation with the surface

of the developing thrombus.

4. Hemolysis.—Agents leading to corpuscular disintegration favor extensive thrombosis. Such agents favor more rapid coagulation (or hyperinosis). Among them we may mention burns and freezing of parts, transfusion of blood from another individual or species, and various poisons, snake venom, foreign enzymes, ricin, toluylene-diamin, extracts of amanita and other poisonous mushrooms, and the products of cell degeneration. Of the same order may be cited the toxins of infections. Thrombosis, for example, is not uncommon as a complication of typhoid and other infectious conditions. In some of these cases we deal with a bacteriemia and find (as in acute endocarditis) that there has been a primary injury to the vascular endothelium. Such thrombi in themselves contain abundant bacteria. In other cases, however, the thrombi are sterile, and in these we must suppose that the circulating toxins are the important factor both in injuring the vascular endothelium and in bringing about an increased coagulation power of the blood, this hyperinosis and the liability to thrombus formation appearing to proceed hand in hand.

Forms.—Thrombosis may occur in all parts of the circulation proper. (a) Cardiac thrombi are frequent; the sites of election here are in the auricular appendices, and in the ventricles, originating either at the apices or in the pouches between the muscle bundles. All these are areas of relative stagnation of the blood, and, it may be added, of poor nutrition of the cardiac endothelium. Originating thus they tend to form sessile, more or less globular masses, and, under the action of the blood current, often present a ribbed or coarsely netted surface. They are of some little duration. After a time these thrombi present a comparatively thin surface layer, enclosing a turbid fluid, the centre of the mass having undergone liquefaction through autolysis or leukocytic heterolysis. More rarely such a globular thrombus, originating in one of the auricular appendices, becomes pedunculate with progressive growth, and, being broken off, forms a ball thrombus. Free in the auricular cavity, such ball thrombi have been found to be a cause of sudden death, acting like a ball valve and occluding a narrowed

mitral orifice.

Yet another form of cardiac thrombosis is of first importance. Those above mentioned are encountered in cases of obstructed circulation and

slowed blood flow, whether through weakening of the cardiac muscle or through valvular disease. They are generally regarded as bland and non-infective. The other form is that found in acute (bacterial) endocarditis, in the form of **vegetations**, most often developing upon the cusps of one or other heart valve, but occasionally also growing as parietal thrombi upon the walls of ventricle or auricle. Such vegetations may be in the form of individual processes or outgrowths, or, at times, may develop into large cauliflower-like masses, adherent to the valves.



Globular thrombus of auricular appendix: a, globular thrombus filling and protruding from the auricular appendix.



Globular thrombus of apex of left ventricle.

Free their consistency, and from the motion of the blood current, as also come the softening they may undergo through the action of the black of the ferments, vegetations of this nature are peculiarly liable to broken off and be carried forward in the blood stream.

A ready noted (b) arterial thrombi are not so frequent as are Nevertheless, they may develop both in the pulmonary artery the aorta or its branches. More frequently they are parietal, grow. I from some diseased area of the arterial wall, and at times they

may completely fill the vessel, forming an occluding thrombus. It is interesting to note that it is exceptional for such arterial thrombi growing downward to extend into the capillaries. When (c) capillary thrombosis occurs it is due to direct local irritation or disease.

(d) **Venous** thrombi are relatively common, occurring in the pulmonary, the systemic, and the portal circulation. The slower flow of the

Fig. 185



Veute red thrombus of the vein.
McGill Medical Museum.)

blood, its poorer quality, the presence of the valves, the low blood pressure, and easy compressibility all favor thrombosis, and once the process has begun in a vein, it is apt to extend in both directions, so that, for example, a thrombus originating in the femoral vein, may extend up into the iliac veins and involve all the branches of the femoral below, while a thrombus forming in the reins of the uterus may progress until it fills the internal iliacs of either side.

The Results of Thrombosis.—An obliterating thrombus of a vessel produces those conditions of arrested circulation, in the area of supply or origin, that have already been discussed. If the thrombus, or part of it, becomes loosened and carried along the blood stream, its effects are those which we shall discuss in our next section when treating of embolism.

As to the changes that may occur in the thrombus itself, the following may be said:

Once laid down, the fibrinoid framework of the thrombus tends to contract and drive out the excess of plasma, hence the thrombus becomes relatively dry. If the thrombus is small, the indications are that, through the agency of leukocytes, it may (1) undergo complete absorption and removal, with restoration of the circulation to the part, or (2) it may undergo organization. We have already pointed out that at the region of attachment of the thrombus the lining endothelium of a vessel is destroyed. It is at this point that the thrombus acting both as a fereign body and irritant, leukocytes

make their way into it from the vasa vasorum, and following upon these there is a passage in of capillary loops and processes. In this way, just as in ordinary granulation tissue, first there is a solution and progressive removal of the thrombotic material, and this is followed by the laying down of fibroblasts and new connective tissue.

The thrombus thus eventually becomes represented by a shrunken mass of dense connective tissue. The network of new capillaries, in this newly forming tissue, may open above and below into the lumen of the vessel, and so not infrequently we find the development of canalisation, one or several channels of fair size restoring the continuity of the vessel. At times indeed the only indication of an old thrombosis is the presence of fibrous bridges stretching across a vessel.

(3) Autolysis, as we have already noted, is liable to occur in old cardiac thrombi.

(4) Putrefactive Softening.-This also has already been referred to, but two processes must be distinguished. There may be a simple puriform, but not truly purulent, softening of a thrombus. This, for example, is not infrequently seen in thrombosis of the lateral sinus and internal jugular vein following upon infective middle-ear disease. The thrombus is liquefied through bacterial agency, without any marked invasion by pus cells. Or, on the other hand, as we at times note after appendicitis, progressive thrombosis of an infective nature, involving the inferior mesenteric vein, may either be the result of an ascending infection of the wall of the vein, or may itself set up inflammation of the wall (thrombophlebitis). Where this is the case there may be an abundant migration of leukocytes into the thrombus, and softening, associated with true suppuration. (5) In certain regions of the body, where there are abundant venous anastomoses, as in the uterine and prostatic plexuses, we encounter phleboliths, somewhat elongated, oval bodies, lying loose in the lumen of a vein, which have undergone calcification. These are old bland thrombi, are characteristically unattached, and instead of being absorbed they become infiltrated with calcareous salts.

Embolism.—Any body which, carried along by the blood stream until with the narrowing of the lumen it becomes arrested and blocks the vessel, is known as an embolus, literally, something thrown in.

Focus of Embolism.—It is interesting to note how many diverse bodies, foreign to the normal blood, may thus constitute emboli.

Liberated Thrombus or Vegetation.—(1) Quite the commonest is a liberated to combus or a cardiac vegetation. The former, liberated in the system a veins, may either become arrested in the right heart, e.g., the commoner riosus, or, passing through the heart, in some branch of the pulmonary artery, or originating in the pulmonary veins or left heart, become arrested in some one of the arteries, or, lastly, originating in the pulmonary veins or left heart, become arrested in some one of the arteries, or, lastly, originating in the point of system, is arrested in the liver. A detached venous thrombus of the becomewhat elongated, is apt further to be arrested at the point of a branch of the pulmonary artery. So, often, it is known as "riding" embolus, riding over the angle of the and extending down the two branches. It is apt to be down the two branches by a process of secondary thrombosis common the free ends.

2. Calcareous and Atheromatous Emboli.—Calcareous and atheromatous matter from atheromatous ulcers may also potentially form emboli, but these are not often encountered.

3. Cell Emboli. Tumor masses and cells, originating from new growths which have penetrated the vessels, forming emboli, may continue to grow, and thus give origin to metastases. Tissue cell emboli also occur. Of these the more frequent are placenta cell emboli, derived from the fœtal villi, which have penetrated into the uterine sinuses, and liver cell emboli, the cells being liberated into the hepatic vein after some sharp and long compression upon the organ. These would seem to be more of the nature of pathological curiosities than causes of serious disturbance. Another cell which may also become liberated into the circulation is the giant cell or megacaryocyte of the bone marrow, which is apt to be liberated in the delicate capillaries in cases of pronounced leukocytosis. Very rarely osteoclasts and fat cells from the marrow have been detected in capillaries.

Of cells that naturally are present in the blood, the leukocytes, in cases of myeloid leukemia, may be so densely packed into the capillaries of various organs as to constitute emboli.

4. Fat Embolism follows upon extensive concussion of the bony skeleton, such as may be caused by a fall from a height. So, also, after fracture of the long bones, with rupture of the fat cells of the marrow. after forcible breaking down of stiff joints, operative handling of fatty tissues, such as the omentum and panniculus adiposus, numerous capillaries of the lung may be blocked by fat. Where only a few capillaries are involved, at most minute infarcts may be produced, with no serious results. There may be a small surrounding congestion and some migration of leukocytes; gradually the fat seems to become saponified and so removed. Its presence in great abundance may seriously obstruct the circulation through the lung, and may even produce a fatal dyspnæa. The emboli may become loosened from the lung capillaries, and passing through the left heart, have been encountered in the capillaries of the heart, kidney, and brain. A somewhat similar condition is at times met with in the lipemia of diabetes, but here no reaction is seen; apparently the fine fatty globules present in the blood have run together and creamed as a post mortem phenomenon.

Of emboli due to extraneous matter the following may be noted.

5. Air Embolism.—The negative pressure most marked in the veins nearest to the heart during inspiration, sometimes leads to air being sucked into one of these veins during the course of an operation, or after trauma. If the quantity so inspired be small, no results may ensue; if larger, death at times occurs with absolute suddenness; at times after a period of extreme dyspnœa, with cyanosis and convulsions. Cases are on record where sudden death, apparently due to this cause, has followed operation upon the head and upper extremities, and from entrance at the placental site during or after labor. There is still some debate as to the exact cause of death. Some cases are evidently cardiac,

due to the expansion of the warmed air and its becoming churned into a froth in the heart, the froth impeding the action of the auriculoventricular valves. In other cases the formation of abundant capillary emboli in the lungs or brain would seem to be the lethal agent. Thus in these cases the lungs have shown multiple hemorrhages, indicating obstruction

of a large number of capillaries, with congestion and rupture.

6. Gas Emboli.—Rapid death may follow if proper precautions be not taken, when those who have been working under compressed air return to the ordinary pressure. There may be either pronounced dyspnæa and asphyxia, rapidly fatal, or a succession of nervous disturbances, which may be recovered from, or prove fatal after a few days. This caisson disease has been experimentally proved to be due to the increased solution of air in the blood under pressure. The oxygen of that air is utilized by the tissues, but the dissolved nitrogen is apt to be liberated from the blood in the form of gaseous bubbles, as gas bubbles form in a soda-water bottle just opened, and in the capillaries, notably those of the brain and spinal cord, these form emboli. The injection of peroxide of hydrogen into the cavities of the body has been followed by grave cerebral symptoms, apparently due to air embolism, and in a certain proportion of cases of infection by the Bacillus Welchii the production of gas in the vessels occurs ante mortem, so that gaseous embolism may be one of the causes leading to a fatal event.

7. Bacterial Emboli.-Bacteria may, although we think indirectly, form capillary emboli, whereby we mean that bacteria carried in the blead stream may be arrested by the capillary endothelium, and so do not enmediately block the vessel, but multiplying locally may eventually

completely occlude it.

Pigment Emboli.—These occur in the smaller capillaries of the braia, kidney, and other organs in malaria. These emboli are composed of the debris, pigmented, of the hemamæba of malaria left after the

spores have been discharged.

1 Parasitic Emboli.—Closely allied is the accumulation of trypanosome in the cerebral capillaries, which, according to some observers, is the main cause of the somnolence characteristic of sleeping sickness. Mer on parasites, such as the abundant larvæ of various strongyles, maj also induce embolism. After the rupture of an echinococcus cyst, some of the daughter cysts may find entrance into a vein and so lead to dism of a pulmonary vessel.

10 Foreign Bodies. Lastly, some three cases are on record in which buller entering the heart or larger vessels have been carried along in the little stream until they have become fixed in some smaller artery. ourselves seen a bullet lodged in the femoral artery after

piercan: the anterior wall of the dorsal aorta.

dts of Embolism. These have already been discussed when I the closure of arteries and infarct formation. To repeat, White infarct be formed or not depends upon the extent of the millar irculation. As to the result upon the vessel itself, there may

be either organization and obliteration of the vessel; abscess formation where the embolus is infective aneurysm formation through weakening of the arterial wall; formation of metastatic growths, etc.

Hemorrhage.—Hemorrhage, the act of escape of blood out of the vessels, and the results, local and general, of that escape, may be of two orders—that brought about by gross breaches in the continuity of the vessel wall, hemorrhage per rhexin, and that occurring in capillary vessels without breach of continuity, but through the insterstices of the wall. hemorrhage per diapedesin. (1) The former may be cardiac, arterial, or venous, and may be brought about by trauma, by disease and weakening of the vessel walls, and by grave alterations in the relations of the pressure acting upon the vessels from without, and the blood pressure within the vessels-whether by undue lowering of the external pressure, or undue raising of the blood pressure, or, lastly, by a combination of these causes, i. e., an increase in blood pressure through sudden exertion which would have no effect upon healthy arteries may lead to cardiac or arterial hemorrhage in one suffering from disease of the myocardium or syphilitic disease of the aorta. Here may be noted a rare order of hemorrhage, regional, capillary, and apparently per rhexin, that, namely, of nervous origin, seen occasionally in hysterical individuals. The "stigmata" on the hands and feet of religious enthusiasts are of the same order.

(2) Hemorrhage per diapedes in occurs from the capillaries and venules as a result of active or passive congestion. It is generally held that the passage of the blood elements occurs between the endothelial cells by expansion of the bridges and spaces between those cells. Impoverished nutrition of that endothelium still further favors the escape of blood, as does lack of support by surrounding tissues. Thus, this form of hemorrhage is particularly liable to occur where the capillaries are superficial, as beneath serous surfaces and in the lung alveoli. A similar oozing of blood may show itself where the arterial wall is thinned and its endothelium imperfect, as in false aneurysms.

Various names have been given to hemorrhages in different regions; thus a cerebral apoplexy is a hemorrhage brought about by rupture of one of the arteries of the base of the brain, and its results; hematemesis, a gastric hemorrhage, or, more accurately, its results, the escape of blood from the stomach through the mouth; melena, the discharge of blood per anum rendered black (μέλας, f. μέλωνα) by the action of the intestinal juices; hemoptysis, the expectoration of blood after pulmonary hemorrhage; hematuria, hemorrhage along the urinary tract causing bloody urine; metrorrhagia, hemorrhage into and from the uterine cavity at times other than the menstrual period; menorrhagia, excessive loss of blood at that period (pr/v, a month); hematidrosis, bloody sweat. The terms hematopericardium, hematothorax explain themselves; hematocele is the accumulation of blood in any body cavity (m/n, a tumor). A hematoms is a localized projecting, tumorlike accumulation of blood in the tissues; petechia are punctate capillary hemorrhages; more diffuse capillary hemorrhages so close set that they tend to run together are ecchymoses or suggillations; where these hemorrhages are multiple and subcutaneous we speak of purpura.

General Effects.—The gravity of a hemorrhage depends upon (1) the amount of blood lost from the vessels, (2) the rate at which it is lost (that amount which, withdrawn suddenly, leads to death may be lost several times over in recurrent smaller hemorrhages), (3) the region of hemorrhage (thus a hemorrhage of but an ounce into the brain substance, by pressure upon and obstruction of important centres and tracts may cause rapid death, where a pint withdrawn from the vein of an arm may be followed by a feeling of relative well-being). It may be laid down that the normal adult individual may suffer the loss of twenty ounces of blood without harmful effects, and of less than half the total volume of blood without necessarily fatal results; women bear the loss of large amounts of blood better than do men.

Taking these into consideration the general effects of hemorrhage

may be:

n

g

0

e

1. Sudden death within a minute or two, as after rupture of the heart, or bursting of a thoracic aneurysm into the pleural cavity, pericardium, œsophagus, or trachea.

2. Death, preceded by collapse and all the symptoms of grave cerebral

anemia.

3. Collapse followed by hydremia and eventual recovery.

4. Syncope or temporary cerebral anemia with rapid recovery.

5. No disturbances due to cerebral anemia, but, in cases of hemorrhagic extravasation into the tissues or cavities of the body, the development of a febrile state due to diffusion of the products of disintegration of the extravasated blood.

The above need little comment, save, perhaps, to note that diminution of the circulating blood below the normal amount is followed by a passage of fluid from the tissues into the blood vessels so as to restore in a few minutes the amount of fluid within the vessels; this passage renders the blood hydremic. So, also, secondary to any considerable loss of blood there is increased activity of the hematopoietic tissues, and notably an increase in the red marrow of the bones (increased production of crythrocytes). With repeated hemorrhages the marrow may become exhausted and the reproduction of red corpuscles be imperted. Thus in a case of vascular papilloma of the bladder with hematoria extending over many months, we have seen developed a condition closely resembling pernicious anemia in every respect, save in a lack of increased iron content in the liver.

Local Effects. The loss of continuity of an artery by deflecting the blood stream may lead to at least temporary lack of nutrition of the area of copply. In general, where there has been rupture there follows a materal process whereby the escape of blood is brought to an end:

the escape is at all considerable the blood pressure becomes progree of y lowered, and with this the rate of escape is lessened. (2) As

the blood escapes through the wounded vessel into the tissues, contact with those tissues, and their coagulins, induces coagulation, and this in its turn has a hemostatic action which becomes more complete the slower the blood stream. (3) The solution of continuity of the vessel wall, if the rupture be transverse, is followed by contraction of the middle coat, and diminution of the vascular lumen. If it be longitudinal, on the contrary, the contraction results in the opening remaining patent. But in general, besides (1) the direction of the rupture, the natural arrest of hemorrhage depends upon these main factors, (2) the size and nature of the vessel involved, whether artery, vein, or capillary, (3) the force of the heart action and blood pressure, and (4) the state of the blood, whether hyperinotic or hypinotic. There are those in whom a trifling contusion with rupture of vessels of inconsiderable size is followed by intractable hemorrhage endangering life, in whom, for example, the extraction of a tooth is dangerous. To these victims of hemophilia we have already referred, pointing out the hereditary nature of the diathesis (see p. 47). As to what is the exact nature of the state we are still in ignorance, whether there is an excessive development of antithrombin or a lack of kinase or coagulins. It has, however, been noted that the intravenous exhibition of horse or other blood serum tends to arrest hemorrhage in these individuals.

Next as to the fate of the extravasated blood. This, when it escapes into the tissues, undergoes coagulation; when it escapes into cavities lined by endothelium it may remain fluid for some little time, and in this fluid state may undergo reabsorption through the lymphatics both

as regards its fluid and its corpuscles.

In petechiæ and minute hemorrhages into the tissues, through the agency of leukocytes the extravasated corpuscles after undergoing disintegration may be completely absorbed, although often some pigment is left behind, leading to a coloration which disappears in the course of weeks and months.

Where the hemorrhage is more extensive the following changes may

occur:

1. Escape of hemoglobin from the extravasated erythrocytes with

hemoglobin imbibition and discoloration of the area.

2. Disintegration of the escaped hemoglobin with production of hemosiderin and hematoidin (see p. 322). The different stages in the disintegration lead to a series of color changes (as seen in the familiar "black eye").

3. Absorption of the pigment and disintegration products by leukocytes, which may be found in the area, containing pigment and other

granules.

4. Where the hemorrhage is large and the absorption incomplete there may, as in some hematomas, be a production of surrounding granulation tissue and eventual production of a hemorrhagic cyst (p. 293), the contents of the cyst becoming eventually a colorless scrum.

The bactericidal powers of the blood are such that it is rare for a hemorrhagic extravasation to become infected and terminate in abscess formation or putrefaction.

et

he sel he

ζin-

he

he

y,

te

in

le

n,

ns

ľV

ne

nt

en

m

es

in

h

le

î.

h

λſ

r

QUALITATIVE CHANGES IN THE BLOOD

In this section we have to pass rapidly in review the main data concerning the variations in the plasma and the corpuscular elements of the blood and their relationship to disease.

The Plasma.—We are but at a beginning of our knowledge concerning the significance of changes in the composition of the plasma. While it is relatively easy to determine the variations in its main elements, water, serum albumin and serum globulin and salts, we are coming to realize that constituents present in quantities too minute to be isolated by chemical methods exercise a profound influence upon the body at large—enzymes, hormones, toxins, and antitoxins. Biological as well as chemical methods have to be invoked in order to gain a completer knowledge of this great medium of interchange between the various tissues, this stream which is at once the nutritive medium and the sewer of the body.

As regards its main elements, what impresses us is the evidence of the existence of mechanisms which in the normal state keep their ratio extraordinarily constant, so constant that, as A. B. Macallum has pointed out, the salts still retain the relative proportion characteristic of that ancestral period when, with free communication between the body cavity and the external medium, the internal tissues were bathed in but slightly modified sea-water. Nevertheless, in disease variations are manifest. Thus, as already indicated, a condition of hydremia is not introquent, of increase in the plasma relative to the corpuscular elements, with accompanying lower specific gravity. This may be brought about (1) by actual increase in the amount of circulating fluid, as in obstructive heart disease, (2) by no increase, but, on the contrary, decrease in the total amount of circulating fluid, as after severe hemorrhage, when with loss of blood the plasma undergoes a compensatory dilution, tending to maintain its volume. A similar relative hydremia is characteristic of conditions of grave anemia brought about, not by hemerchage, but by intravascular death and disintegration of the eryl martes, (3) by increase in the salts of the blood tending to attract more faid, so that the hypertonic state of the plasma may be reduced tot rmal. This process has been invoked to explain the hydremia of i. itis, in which there are evidences of increased retention of chloride. a system, though here also the loss of the proteins of the blood 17 into the urine may be a factor of some importance. Thus, brie hydremic state of the blood may be encountered (1) in obstructive and lung disease, (2) in kidney disease, more particularly the acta nchymatous form, (3) after severe hemorrhages, (4) in conditions associated with destruction of the red corpuscles, severe infections,

advanced malignancy, and pernicious anemia

Of the proteins of the plasma (as contrasted with blood serum) we have already called attention to the conditions of hyperinosis and hypinosis, due presumably to differences in the ratio between fibrinogen and fibrin ferment. But in the generality of cases it would appear that we have to deal not so much with an excess or deficiency of the substratum to be acted upon, the fibrinogen, as of the kinase and its concomitants, the calcium salts, etc. It is the rate of coagulation rather than the amount of fibrin that shows the greatest variation. There are, however, indications that in certain conditions the amount of fibrinogen, and so of fibrin produced, is definitely below the normal.

Of the salts of the plasma (sodium salts, chlorides, phosphates) this may be said, that they play a part in the solution of the proteins and are normally present in such relationships that the plasma is definitely alkaline. Reduction of the alkalinity (acidosis, p. 109) is followed by

the gravest metabolic disturbances.

Lipemia.—From the normal plasma there can always be isolated a minute quantity of fat, but occasionally we meet with an extraordinary increase in this fat, a condition of lipemia. As in milk it is present in fine globules in the form of an emulsion. The amount may be such that the serum assumes a distinctly milky appearance. We know little regarding the causes leading to the condition, save that it is encountered in diabetes and other diseases characterized by defective oxidation and increased carbon dioxide of the blood, phosphorus poisoning, severe

anemias, pneumonia.

The Red Corpuscies. - Variation in Number. - We have already laid stress upon the fact that moderate increase or decrease in the number of erythrocytes per cubic millimeter gives us no sure information unless at the same time we determine the total volume of blood; such change may be brought about by concentration or dilution of the blood plasma as well as by actual increase or decrease in the number of circulating corpuscles. There may be an apparent great increase in the red cells in cholera asiatica, due to draining away of the fluid from the blood, or, on the other hand, an actual polycythemia. A great increase in the number of red corpuscles is seen in those living at high levels, and this without recognizable diminution in the total volume of the blood. What is the cause has not surely been determined. Even in a balloon ascent to an altitude of several thous and feet an increase from the normal 5,000,000 to 8,500,000 has been recorded. A similar increase has been recognized in animals made to breathe carbon monoxide. This suggests that the change is adaptive, due to increased demand for oxygen, and that it is brought about by an increased outpouring of erythrocytes from the bone marrow.

A pathological polycythemia has been recorded by several observers, unconnected with change in altitude, blood counts affording from 8,000,000 to 14,000,000 corpuseles. There is often an associated enlarge-

ns,

We

nd in-

ıld

CV

Hel

on

m.

int

his

nd dy

Ьy

ry

in

at

tle

ed

 \mathbf{d}

re

id

er

ze 18

ıg

ın

n

er

ıt

1e

n

O

b

16.

is

e

n

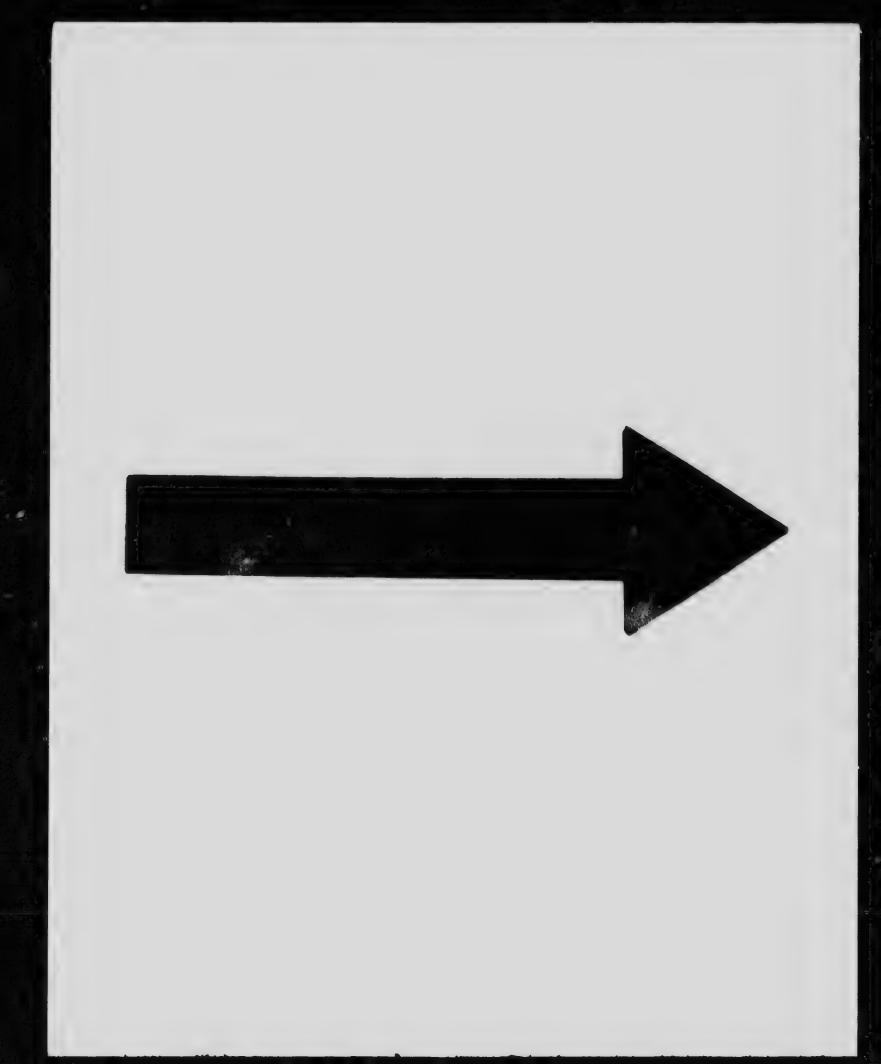
ment of the spleen, and a dusky or cyanotic appearance of the skin, with, at post mortem, presence of abundant red marrow. The cause of the condition is practically unknown. Death often occurs within a few week. Trecognition of the state, although a few cases of return to normal have been noted.

Variations in Size.—Where there is disturbance in the production of red corpuscles, as in secondary and pernicious anemias, certain corpuscles may attain large size (megalocytes), with a diameter of from 16 to 20μ in place of the normal 7 to 8.5μ . In the same conditions we may also encounter cells that are abnormally small (microcytes), along with corpuscles exhibiting great variation in shape (poikilocytes, from $\pi oxilox$, various).

Variations in Structure and Staining Reactions.—A study of the red marrow shows that the red corpuscles originate from nucleated cells erythroblasts—by a process of gradual shrinkage of the nucleus, with discharge of nucleoli or nucleolar matter into the cytoplasm, which at first scattered in masses, gradually diffuses evenly through the whole eytoplasm. In disease we may encounter various modifications of the corpuscles which represent stages in their development and indicate, therefore an increased activity of the marrow, with premature discharge of the corpuscles. We thus, at times, encounter nucleated red corpuscles in the form of megaloblasts, large cells with large pale nuclei (the earliest stage), normoblasts, which are hemoglobin-containing cells of normal size, but nucleated, and other cells exhibiting polychromatophilia, certain corpuscles taking on a more basic, purplish stain. By Romanowsky's stain or modifications of the same this is characteristic of immature erythrocytes. The "stippling" of the red corpuscles, seen in some cases of lead poisoning, may also indicate an incomplete conversion of discharged nucleolar matter into hemoglobin, and may also be evidence of immaturity. As regards irregular staining, it must be noted that this may also be met with in cases of recognizable degeneration of the corpuscles (e. g., in early thrombi).

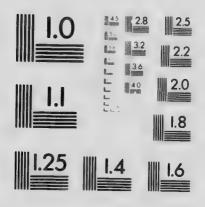
Other clear evidences of disintegration are seen in the conditions of plasmonhexis and plasmoschisis. The former is the development of crenations at the periphery, with progressive liberation of peripheral globules of varying size. The latter is the rapid breaking up of the whole bedy of the corpuscle into small globules from which the hemoglobin has been discharged, so that as they separate they are scarce distinguishable from blood platelets.

Variations in Hemoglobin Content.—There may be great variation in the color index of the blood, i. e., the ratio of the hemoglobin per corpusele. This is, for example, found increased in permicious anemia, reduced in chlorosis. There may be both a reduction in the hemoglobic produced as in the latter case—a defective conversion of the made a matter of the erythroblast into hemoglobin, and, on the other hand, diffusion of the hemoglobin out of the corpuscle or hemolysis. We can assume agencies which can bring about hemolysis both



MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)





within the vessels and in the test-tube: cold (as in paroxysmal hemoglobinuria), 'eat (as in burns), the sera and tissue extracts of animals of other species, and sometimes of those of the same species, experimentally produced hemolytic sera (p. 163), certain bacterial toxins (which possibly explain the anemia of many infectious diseases), notably those of streptococcus, B. coli, pyococcus aureus, pneumococcus: vegetable products, such as ricin and amanita (mushroom) poison. In addition many chemical agents bring about this diffusion out of hemoglobin and "laking" of the blood, notably pyrogallic acid, glycerine, potassium chlorate, and toluylenediamin. And by employment of one or other of these agents we can materially reduce the number of circulating erythrocytes. The red corpuscle, that is, when it has lost its hemoglobin, has no power to reproduce it, and so is rendered largely useless. Its stroma is removed by the agency of the spleen. Thus, by inoculating rabbits with repeated non-lethal doses of B. coli (Charlton). or by similar doses of ricin (Bunting), the number of erythrecytes becomes reduced to 1,000,000 or less per c.mm., and conditions (including poikilocytosis) closely simulating pernicious anemia are produced.

Secondary Anemias.—When we can determine what appears to be an adequate cause for the reduction in the total number of corpuscles, we speak of a secondary anemia. This may be acute, as after profound loss of blood, potassium chlorate poisoning, and severe infections, or chronic, as after recurrent small hemorrhages, in splenic anemia, cancer, and exhausting diseases, lead poisoning, intestinal parasites, etc. The longer continued the destruction or loss of red corpuscles, the greater the strain upon the marrow and blood-forming organs, with the result that nucleated and other premature and imperfectly formed erythrocytes are apt to appear in the circulating blood until finally, as in those afflicted with the fish tapeworm (Dibothriocephalus latus), or in some cases of cancer, the blood picture is indistinguishable from that of pernicious anemia.

Pernicious (or Addisonian) Anemia.—This affords a very characteristic picture. The victim has a peculiar lemon yellow color, is apt to be flabbily fat, exhibits progressive muscular weakness, with weak heart action, achlorhydria, or absence of free acid in the gastric juice, and other digestive disturbances, diarrhoa, etc. There may be one or two remissions, but with very rare exceptions the course is fatal within less than two years—The blood condition is striking: marked reduction in the number of erythrocytes, it may be, down to 500,000 per c.nm.: presence of poikilocytosis, with macrocytes, microcytes, and nucleated red corpuscles. The color index is increased.

At autopsy the most marked features are the bright yellow color of the body fat, the small amount and thin, watery character of the blood, the pallor and bloodlessness of all organs; the fatty degeneration of the heart muscle; the presence of increased iron in the liver demonstrated by Quincke's (Prussian blue) or Perl's (sulphide of iron) test, and evidences of hyperplasia of the red marrow of the bones. Frequently there is an accompanying atrophic gastritis, and evidence of interference with the sensory tracts in the lower part of the cord.

mo-

nals

eri-

xins

bly

cus;

son.

t of

cer-

t of

r of

lost

gely

, by

m),

rtes

ons

are

be

les.

ınd

or

er,

he

ter

ult

ro-

in

or

ola

er-

be

art

nd

wo

iin

on

n.:

ed

of

he

aer

n)

These various conditions suggest the continued action of a hemolytic toxin of gastro-intestinal origin, leading to excessive destruction of the red corpuscles, increase in hepatic iron, and increased but imperfect compensatory production of corpuscles. The increase in hepatic iron, for example, is a result of hemoglobin disintegration; the pigmentation of the fat, a result of modification of the hemoglobin liberated in the circulating blood. Whether the fatty degeneration of the heart muscles is of toxic origin or due to deficient oxidation is uncertain.

The cause of the hemolysis is still undetermined; there may be more than one. From the frequent association of pyorhœa alveolaris, a low form of suppuration involving the sockets of the teeth, Hunter inclines to the view that a secondary chronic streptococcic gastritis is the essential cause; one of us (Adami) has suggested that we deal with a subinfection by means of hemolytic intestinal bacteria of the colon group; Herter would implicate the excessive proliferation of the B. Welchii in the lower intestine. Based upon the close resemblance between the clinical picture and post mortem appearances in man and those of surra and dourine in the horse, the latest hypothesis is that we deal with a condition of trypanosomiasis. The riddle has still to be solved.

Aplastic Anemia.—Rarely there is encountered an extreme anemia accompanied not by hyperplasia, but by an hypoplasia of the bone marrow and hemopoietic centres. There is great reduction in the number of red corpuscles, absence of normoblasts and megaloblasts immature erythrocytes), low color index. Poikilocytosis is not marked, lymphocytes are in good number, but leukocytes (polynuclears and eosinophiles) fewer than normal. Instead of increase in red marrow there is reduction, its place being taken by fat cells.

Chlorosis.—Chlorosis is an anemia of a different order affecting young adult females; its presence in young males is so rare that many deny its existence. There is a characteristic pallor, the "green sickness" of Elizabethan writers, lassitude with weakness following upon slight exertion, dyspepsia and capricious appetite, gastric acidity, constipation and attacks of palpitation.

The blood exhibits definite hydremia with corresponding reduction in the number of erythrocytes per c.mm. What is most marked is the reduction in the hemoglobin, so that the color index averages 0.5, and may be as low as 0.1. The good effects that follow the proper exhibition of iron suggest that imperfect production of hemoglobin is the essential feature. What leads to this we do not know, although several clinicians have laid stress upon constipation and the good effects that follow a course of laxatives, suggesting intestinal intoxication as the underlying caus. Others see a relationship between the sex of those affected

main forms:

and between disturbances of the menstrual function and these blood disturbances.

The Leukocytes.—Before proceeding to "scribe the changes that occur in the leukocytes it is necessary to a sify these and to have some idea as to the relationship of the different forms. Now this is not an easy matter, and that because, despite abundant research, there is still active controversy regarding many points, and to discuss the pros and cons would occupy many pages. We can, therefore, but give dogmatically our own opinions regarding these matters, stating frankly that these represent one view, and that they are liable to revision.1

Briefly, we have to distinguish between the circulating white corpuscles and those found outside the vessels and in the tissues, certain wandering cells being found in the one region and not in the other. We can further distinguish between those white corpuscles, or wandering cells which originate from myeloblasts, those that originate from lymphoblasts and lymphoid tissue, and those originating from endothelial and other connective-tissue elements. The trend of recent observe ons is to approximate more and more the last two groups. The difficulties in making a classification depend essentially upon this, that the earliest and simplest stages of developing cells show practically no differentiation, and thus it becomes a matter of extraordinary difficulty to trace back the different forms of cells to their origins, particularly when in the hemopoietic system the different orders of cells are apt to originate side by side and not from different isolated centres. Forms of Leukocytes.-We may, however, distinguish the following

Of myeloblastic origin (granular leukocytes): (1) the polymorphonuclear, polynuclear, or neutrophile cell. This is the commonest white corpuscle of the circulating blood, constituting in general more than 65 per cent. of the white corpuscles present in normal blood. In its cytoplasm are fine granules which stain with neutral or more accurately weakly acid dyes. It is the form in greatest abundance in acute inflammation, and is thus the typical pus cell. The nucleus is characteristically lobate, so that under low power the cell appears to be multinucleate. It is actively phagocytic, particularly for bacteria. It rarely shows evidence of ritosis in the blood stream, or again in the tissues

at the site of inflammation. It has nothing to do with tissue formation. The Eosinophile.—This is of the same size as the former, most often its nucleus is coarsely lobate or horseshoe-shaped. In the cytoplasm are granules much coarser than those of the former, and these take an intense stain with eosin and other acid aniline dyes. It also migrates out of the vessels in the early stage of acute inflammation, but is soon overpassed in number by the polynuclears, while again it is found in the tissues in fair numbers in certain forms of subacute inflammation.

A fuller discussion of the subject will be found in the small work on "Inflammation," published by one of us (Adami). (Macmillan: London and New York, fourth

ges that to have v this is ch, there cuss the out give frankly

se blood

on.1 ite corcertain er. We ndering e from a endorecent groups.

on this, v pracrdinary is, parof cells entres. lowing

norphowhite e than In its irately nflamractermultirarely tissues ation. often

plasm ke an grates soon nd in ation.

am**ma**fourth

In normal blood this form is present in but small numbers (about 3 per cent.). It is abundant (10 to 50 per cent.) in many forms of helminthiasis (parasitic worms), in certain cases of chronic skin disease, etc. Only rarely is it observed to act as a phagocyte. Studies made on the frog and other animals show that these cells can discharge their granules, which are of nucleoproteid nature. The cells seem thus to have certain excretory functions. Opie has noted that during the course of certain acute peritoneal infections the eosinophile disappears largely from the peripheral circulation, but may be found accumulating in the mesenteric and other vessels, and there undergoing migration.

The Lymphocytes.—The typical lymphocyte is distinctly smaller than the preceding form, possessing a relatively large, spherical, deeply staining nucleus, with a relatively inconsiderable surrounding layer of cytoplasm. This form of cell is but slightly amœboid. It is not observed to be phagocytic. In inflammatory conditions it is found more particularly accumulated around the vessels. There is still doubt as to whether these accumulations are the result, in the main, of migration, or are due to proliferation of preëxisting lymphocytes of the region. (Marchand.) In subacute and chronic inflammation (e. g., tuberculosis) this is the preponderating type of cell present. In the blood stream in pathological conditions, what are known as large lymphocytes, one form of "large mononuclear," may be encountered; these represent immature lymphocytes. In the tissues in cases of subacute inflammation the small lymphocytes give origin to cells of larger size, with excentric nucleus and a somewhat polygonal cell body of fair size, the plasma cell (p. 132).

Mast Cells.—These cells, rare in the normal blood, may be occasionally encountered in pathological states, such as leukemia. They are of fair size and possess abundant granules which take a basic stain and are so large that they may be taken for clusters of micrococci. The nucleus is generally degenerated. Whether the mast cells in the tissues are of the same origin as those in the blood has not been absolutely determined, but here they may take on motility, and their path may be traced occasionally by the granules which they have shed. In any position they are comparatively rare.

Hyaline Cells.—Cells having a large body and an oval, pale staining nucleus, constituting "large mononuclears," are encountered in the blood in small numbers, and there are difficult to distinguish from the large lymphocytes already described. Their cytoplasm is free from granules. A similar type of cell is seen in conditions of inflammation of the peritoneal cavity, and here clearly some at least of these cells are of er thelial origin, derived from the lining endothelium of the serous succes. It is possible, therefore, that the intravascular form originates from the vascular endothelium. The macrophages of the sinuses of inflamed lymph nodes are of this order. This type of cell is phagocytic, her or the bacteria of acute disease, but for other cells and their debris,

and it is generally held that it is capable of becoming fibroblastic and so of leading to the formation of connective tissue.

Leukocytosis.—The presence of an excessive number of any one or more of the above forms in the blood constitutes a condition of leukocytosis. We distinguish thus: (a) polynuclear leukocytosis or a neutrophilia, (b) eosinophilia, (c) lymphocytosis, and (d) myelocytosis, or the presence of aberrant or immature forms. Leukomia is a condition of excessive leukocytosis where the number of leukocytes exceeds 15,000 per cubic millimeter. The number of leukocytes of various orders present in normal blood is in the neighborhood of 5000 per c.mm., but there may be a considerable physiological variation. Thus young individuals exhibit a well-marked relative leukocytosis of 12,000 to 15,000 during the first week of life, of 10,000 to 12,000 during the first ten years. Toward the time of parturition in the female the number is apt to reach 15,000 to 20,000. After a rich protein meal there occurs a moderate alimentary leukocytosis. During the last hours of life a terminal leukocytosis is generally to be recognized.

Polynuclear Leukocytosis is met with in inflammatory and many infectious conditions; not, however, in all, for it is absent in typhoid, malaria, and the more ordinary type of chronic tuberculosis and leprosy, save where there is secondary infection. So, also, it is wanting in measles, mumps, and in most cases of influenza—It is very pronounced in pneumonia, where there may be a leukocytosis of even 100,000, with 95 per cent. of polynuclears. Suppurative disease and local and generalized disturbances due to pyogenic organisms exhibit this type of leukocytosis. It is of note also that in states characterized by grave disturbance of the liver, and where there is a breaking down of tissues, as in the later stages of carcinoma, this form shows itself. Antipyretics and salicylates induce a moderate grade.

Eosinophilia is seen in many different forms of helminthiasis (p. 99), in many irritative skin diseases, accompanying myelogenic leukemia, in bronchial asthma, hay fever, and allied conditions of so-called idio-syncrasy, in some post-febrile states, and in a variety of conditions it is difficult to correlate.

Lymphocytosis is frequent in young children, particularly where there are gastro-intestinal disorders; it may be noted that in the young there is a relatively great development of the lymphoid tissue of the body, and especially of the intestinal area, and irritation of the lymph nodes is accompanied by a greater discharge of lymphocytes into the blood. A similar lymphocytosis is found in adults, where there are enlarged lymph nodes. With whooping-cough, lymphocytosis is so marked as to be pathognomonic. In scurvy, rickets, sclerosis, and debilitating disease a lymphocytosis of moderate grade is frequently noticeable.

Leukemia.—Leukemia is a disease characterized by the *continued* presence of an excess of circulating leukocytes—of more than 15,000 per cubic millimeter, although generally in the hundreds of thousands. The state is characterized by progressive weakness and associated

ic and

y one ion of is or a ytosis, condiacceeds arious ...mm., young 00 to e first ber is

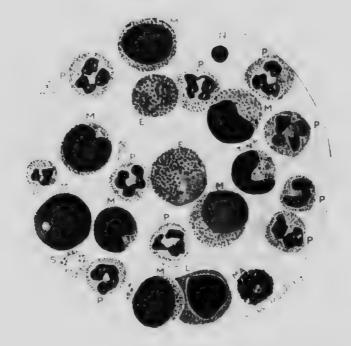
many phoid, prosy, asles, pneuch 95 alized eukoes, as retics

occurs

99), a, in idions it

here
here
and
es is
A
uph
be
se a

ned 1000 ids. ted





anemia proper, usually with a greatly enlarged spleen. There are, however, two types—the myelogenous or myeloblastic and the lymphatic.

Myelogenous Leukemia.—This form is seen most often in early adult life, and more often in the male. The underlying feature is an aberrant hyperplasia of the blood-forming tissues. The bone marrow is always affected, showing an excess of gray marrow, in which abundant cells can be found exhibiting transitional stages, from myeloblast to myelocyte, to the neutrophile leukocyte. There is an associated increased development of eosinophiles, evidence of increased activity also in the production of red corpuscles, with increase in the number of megacaryocytes.

The spleen also reverts to the condition seen before birth, and presents indications of active formation of myelocytes. The organ may attain an enormous size. There may be similar indications of myelocyte formation in the liver. In all these areas there is but slight indication of in increased activity of the lymphoid tissue proper. The most striking change is seen in the blood, where there may be an extraordinary increase in the number of white corpuscles, varying from 60,000 to as many as 1,500,000. The greatest increase is in the immature granule cells or myelocytes, which may compose half of the total, the neutrophiles or polynuclears constituting almost the other half. There is generally a pronounced eosinophilia, some increase in the number of mast cells, and the lymphocytes, although relatively in small numbers, are present in greater numbers than in health. With this there is a distinct, though not an extreme increase in the number of red corpuscles. These large and abundant leukocytes tend to clog the capillaries of organs, and this, with the reduction in the number of v explain the dyspnœa, general bodily weakness, red corpur. and wasti ... re features of the disease, as again the epistaxis, retinal, a... hemorrhages. Associated with the increased production there are evidences of increased destruction of the leukocytes, notably an excessive discharge of uric acid, which we assume to be due to the disintegration of the nuclei of these cells. The disease is chronic, lasting from a few months to several years after its first recognition.

Lymphatic Leukemia.—This also occurs in young adult life and mainly in the male, although found at all ages. In young people the disease tends to have an acute onset and course. Here not the spleen but the lymph glands are most involved. The symptoms and physical signs are otherwise much the same as in the other form, and blood films show a great excess of lymphocytes (see plate) of typical shape, with large depostaining nucleus and small rim of cytoplasm. In the more acute form they are of more atypical and embryonic type, resembling the dispussion, and showing a less deeply staining nucleus of irregular shape, with relatively abundant cytoplasm.

It recently been shown that the presence of Altmann's granules in this order is not, as Schridde held, a positive indication of

lymphoblastic origin, for such granules may also be detected in myelo-blasts. Thus it is quite possible that there exists an acute leukemia, due to excessive atypical development of the myelocytic elements, indistinguishable by present methods of research from the acute lymphatic form. Or, expressed otherwise, there may be an acute leukemia characterized by the overgrowth and discharge into the blood of cells representing the common primary stage of both lymphocytes and granular leukocytes.

Unlike the myelogenous type, in the lymphatic there is a liability to the appearance of multiple, minute, subcutaneous lymphoid nodules. Unlike the other form there is here characteristically an accompanying febrile state (102° to 104° F.), with severe sweats, and development of a "typhoid state." The condition is fatal, and of shorter course than the other form; and this, although the blood picture does not exhibit such extreme changes, the number of contained white cells averaging 200,000; eosinophiles and mast cells are wanting, nor is there any

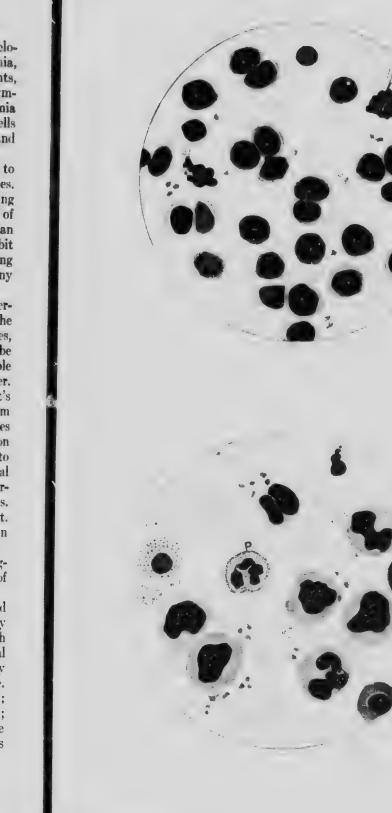
marked increase in the neutrophiles.

Blood Platelets.—To the other constituents of the blood brief reference may be made. We have already referred to the importance of the blood platelets in the development of thrombi. These are small bodies. oval or pear-shaped, averaging 2μ ; in blood smears they tend to be present in small groups. Even in normal blood they show considerable variation in their number, from 200,000 to 700,000 per cubic millimeter. As to their origin there has been much debate, but since J. H. Wright's studies there can be no doubt that some at least are derived from the giant cells (megacaryocytes) of the bone marrow. We ounelves still hold to the belief that in certain forms of thrombosis a condition of plasmoschisis results in the breaking up of the red corpuscle into oval bodies which are indistinguishable from the platelets of normal blood. It is deserving of note that in certain conditions, e. g., pernicious anemia, there is commonly a marked diminution in the platelets. In some cases of purpura also they have been found wholly absent. In pneumonia and in myelogenous leukemia they are increased in number.

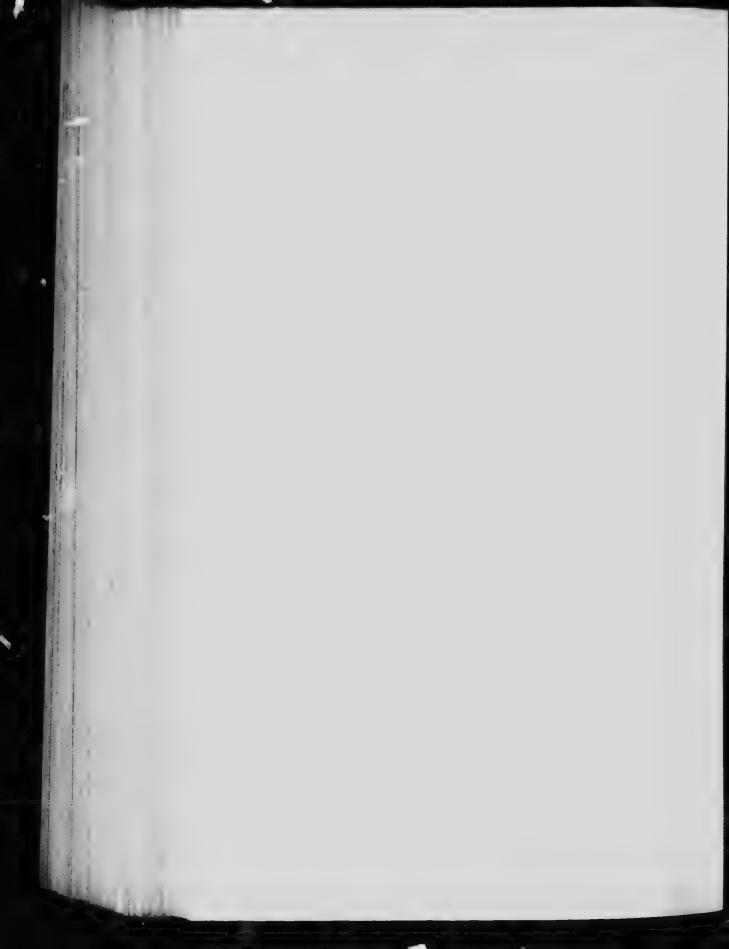
Still smaller elements, the dust bodies or hemoconia, are to be recognized in the blood. Nicholls and others regard these as products of

disintegration, more particularly of the erythrocytes.

The Lymphatic System: Edoma.—The accumulation of serous fluid transuded from the vessels in t'e tissue spaces and cavities of the body constitutes the condition of re.ema. Distinct names are given to such accumulation of fluid in particular areas; thus anasarca or interstitial cedema is the accumulation in the tissue spaces of the limbs and body wall. Chemosis is the serous infiltration of the subconjunctival tissue. Ascites is the accumulation of serous fluid in the peritoneal cavity; hydrothorax, in the pleural cavity; hydropericardium, in the pericardial; hydrocele, in the tunica vaginalis testis; internal hydrocephalus, in the ventricles of the brain; external hydrocephalus, distending the spaces







· VDEMA 367

of the pia arachnoid. We would lay down that accumulations of scrous fluid in communication with the exterior, and thus outside the body, are not strictly ordema; pulmonary ordema, therefore, the accumulation of fluid in the air sacs of the lung is, strictly speaking, not a member of this class.

Our classification of these various conditions has so far been faulty. Recent studies show that the lymphatic channels originate from the venous system and form a closed, freely branching series of duets separated by an endothelial lining from the tissue spaces. 's to the relationships of the great serous cavities of the body with 's system there is still debate, some holding (from the ease and rav ity with which milk globules, red corpuscles, etc., pass from the peritoneal cavity into the lymphatic vessels of the diaphragm) that there is a direct communication; others, from histological considerations, deny the existence of any such free communication. For convenience, therefore, we may regard the three are: as distinct, and lay down that serous fluid may become accumulated (1) in the lymphatic channels proper, (2) in the serous cavities of the body, and (3) in the tissue spaces. Nay, more, we can go farther and recognize (4) that fluid more accumulate abnormally in the individual cells. (See Serous Atrophy and Hydropic Degeneration, pp. 298 and 306.)

1. Lymphanglectasis.—Little need be said regarding the first of these conditions. We recognize that, in consequence of obstruction, whether congenital or as the result of disease affecting the efferent lymphatic channels of certain organs or areas, there may result a huge distension of the lymph channels behind the point of obstruction, a distension so great that at times they take on a cystic appearant forming lymph cysts. Such distension is seen in congenital conditions as macroglossia and macrochellia (p. 281). Hygroma of the name may be regarded as of similar nature (p. 281). As an acquired condition, lymphanglectasis is encountered in one group of cases of

elephantiasis.

2. Accumulation in the Serous Cavities, etc.—Serous cavities are lined throughout by an endothelium. There is thus normally no direct communication between them and the tissue spaces of the organs contained in those cavities. Thus, an ædematous condition of the intertinal walls, for example, is not necessarily followed by ascites, and the cersa. But while this is the case, we must recognize that there is a constant circulation of fluid through these cavities, passing into the through the endothelial lining and passing out through stomata or creas of thinning in particular areas. Thus pigmented matter or had an introduced into the peritoneal cavity finds a way within a few minutes into the substernal lymph nodes.

last of fluid in these cavities. This inflammatory exudate is more that the simple serous effusion; whereas its salts approximate in concentration those of the blood serum, the inflammatory exudate is much

richer in proteins than is non-inflammatory ascitic fluid. Very extensive accumulations of fluid occur in the various serous cavities as a result, either of obstruction to the onward flow of blood, as in heart disease and conditions of portal obstruction, or, again, as a result of an impoverished condition of the blood without actual obstruction to onflow, but

with enfeebled circulation and depressed nutrition.

3. Anasarca.—Remembering what has been said regarding the want of relationship between the tissue spaces and the lymph channels it will be seen that two main factors determine the accumulation of fluid in the tissue spaces: (1) the rate of escape of fluid out of the blood vessels into the tissue spaces; (2) the rate of escape of fluid from the tissue spaces into the lymphatic channels. If fluid can be carried off by the lymphatics as rapidly as it passes out from the blood, no accumulation can occur. In other words, an ædematous state may be brought about by an excessive discharge from the blood, or, on the contrary, by defective drainage away through the lymphatic channels.

There has been controversy extending over long years as to the relative importance of the different factors found associated with the production of the ædematous state. On the one hand, there are those who would reduce the problem to its very simplest physical factors, who regard the lining wall of the vessels as nothing more than a filtration membrane, who thus ascribe cedema in the main to pressure differences, to increased discharge from thinned and dilated capillary and other vessels. On the other hand, an important body of investigators holds that the endothelial cells lining the blood vessels are not merely membranes, but possess a selective capacity, and thus regard the ædema fluid, not as a filtrate, but as determined by the state of nutrition of the vessel wall. Neither of these schools seems to have paid sufficient attention to the problem of how, once in the tissue spaces, the fluid gets into the lymphatic channels. A compromise may be reached. We must admit that when the smaller vessels become dilated their walls become thinned and the intercellular spaces of their endothelium become enlarged, so that if there be any increased pressure all conditions favor an increased transfusion of fluid between the cells; but we must admit also that the endothelium lining the vessels is by no means an inert cell layer. Thus the dilatation of vessels is not by any means necessarily a purely mechanical matter; we must admit that malnutrition of the capillary endothelium and lowered vitality of the same is a factor favoring œdema.

We may possibly go farther than this. Studies upon the mammary gland in its stage of activity indicate that through the capillary endothelium there is a selective removal of fatty matters from the blood for the use of the mammary gland cells, and the reason for the difference between a serous and inflammatory exudate, as again between the composition of cerebrospinal fluid, aqueous humor and ascitic fluid, must largely be this difference in the selective activities of the vascular endothelium in these different regions.

The last few years have seen another principle invoked to explain adema. It is well known that the rate and the direction of osmosis depends upon the relative concentration of salts on either side of the osmotic membrane, and the ascites and the anasarca encountered in cases of nephritis have been ascribed to heaping up of sodium chloride within the tissues and tissue spaces. Some physicians have found marked reduction in anasarcous states following the reduction in the amount of chlorides given as food. Lately, Prof. Fischer has propounded yet another theory to explain this accumulation of fluid in the tissues, a theory based upon the properties of colloidal bodies like gelatin and presumably other proteins. If, for example, dried gelatin be placed in plain water, it will absorb a definite quantity of that water and swell up to a certain point. If, however, the water be weakly acidified the amount absorbed becomes very much greater. If a freshly removed sheep's or ox's eye be placed in ordinary water, nothing very much happens; if it be placed in weakly acidulated water the amount of fluid taken up, apparently by the vitreous, is so great that the eyeball is liable to undergo rupture. If, again, a frog's limb be ligatured or cut off and now be placed in the water in which previously the frog had been swimming, there occurs an intense imbibition of fluid, with development of post mortem anasarca. As we know, when muscle and other tissues die they become increasingly acid. It is to this acidity that Prof. Fischer ascribes the imbibition in this last case, and he is inclined therefore to ascribe many cases of ordema and anasarca not to mechanical changes in the blood pressure or, again, to changes in the blood itself, but to alterations in the colloidal tissue elements, whereby these need and attract to themselves increasing fluid. The idea is suggestive; we cannot, however, see that it covers the whole ground; rather we would say that we continue to recognize the following types:

Tupes of Œdema.—1. Congestive Œdema.—This is the commonest form and is met with in cases of obstruction to the venous outflow. Here, undoubtedly, there is (a) increased capillary pressure, (b) dilatation of the capillaries, with thinning of the walls, (c) slowing of the blood stream and increased venosity of the blood, (d) lowered nutrition and vitality of the capillary wall. Possibly here, secondarily, the nutrition of the tissues and the changes occurring in those tissues form a factor. The ligature of the main vein of a limb in a healthy animal is not followed by ædema, though such ædema will occur if the animal be

in an empoverished state of health.

sive

ult,

ase

er-

but

ant

iels

of

the

om

1e()

110

be

the

els.

the

the

ose

ho

ion

es,

her

lds

m-

id,

sel

ion

the

nit

ied

SO

ed

at

er.

ely

HŢV.

ng

ГV

0-

od

e**r-**

en

tic

he

Edema from Lymphatic Obstruction.—It has already been noted obstruction, while leading to dilatation of the lymphatic loes not necessarily cause cedema, in fact experimentally the apphatics of a part may be ligatured and yet no cedema may occar the blood capillaries are capable of taking up fluid from the tissue of a steep permit fluid to pass into them. But sometimes are taken we may find, for example, cedema of the arm occurring in the

later stages of cancer of the breast, when all the axillary lymphatics have become involved; but in the earlier stage all those lymphatics may be excised, in order to arrest the extension of the disease, and no œdema shows itself.

In this connection we may note three varieties of ascites, viz., chylous, chyliform, and pseudochylous ascites. The first of these is due to rupture of the abdominal lymphatics, or of the receptaculum chyli, whereby the milky chyle escapes into the peritoneal cavity. Of similar origin is chylous hydrothorax from rupture of the thoracic duct, and chyluria, from rupture of the lymphatics of the pelvis of the kidney or of the bladder. Chyliform ascites is found in cases of abdominal carcinoma or tuberculosis, the emulsion of fat giving the milky appearance, and is due to breaking down of leukocytes and other cells that have undergone fatty degeneration. The percentage of fat in these cases may be much higher than in the former. In pseudochylous ascites the milky appearance is associated with absence of fat, and is brought about either by mucoid substances or suspended proteins.

3. Inflammatory Edema.—All acute inflammation is accompanied by a local increased passage of fluid out of the vessels. The fluid in these cases approaches more nearly in its composition to the blood plasma than does that of congestive ædema. As will be remembered, the capillary endothelium shows a striking series of changes in acute inflammation, and to this changed condition we must largely ascribe the increased exudate, although here also we must recognize that the tissue cells in the involved area exhibit marked disintegrative changes which may undoubtedly attract more fluid.

4. Toxic Œdema.—We know, experimentally, that there are substances which act as lymphagogues, inducing increased lymph formation. In the case or some of these no noticeable change is exerted on the circulation. The difference in the distribution of the anasarca in heart and kidney disease, respectively, would suggest that the toxic substances circulating in the blood have possibly a different effect on the capillary wall in the diverse conditions.

5. Neuropathic Œdema.—We have already emphasized on more than one occasion, that the central nervous system of itself can set up disturbances of the same character as those due to the action of local noxæ. The same is true in connection with this matter of ædema. This is well seen in herpes zoster, where irritation of one posterior spinal ganglion is followed by ædema accurately mapping out the superficial area supplied by that particular spinal nerve. There also occur certain remarkable angioneurotic ædemas, characterized by the sudden pouring out of fluid into particular areas of the internal organs or skin, without any recognizable cause. It is true that these resemble much the urticaria and localized ædema seen in cases of idiosyncrasy and foodpoisoning, conditions which we have noted (p. 117) are in turn allied to anaphylactic phenomena. It may eventually be determined that

in these we deal with something more than simple uncomplicated vasomotor disturbances.

ties

ties

l no

iz.,

due

yli,

ilar

and

or carice,

ave nay Iky

out

by

iese

nan

ary

on,

sed

ells

nay

ub-

on.

cu-

md

ces

ary

nan

lis-

cal

na.

ior

er-

ur

len

in,

ıch

)d-

ed

at

6. Hydrops ex Vacuo.—Finally, accompanying the atrophy of tissues enclosed within spaces having relatively resistant walls, there may be a "replacement dropsy." The most familiar example of this is noted in senile and other atrophies of the brain where there may be marked accumulation of fluid, either externally in the pia arachnoid spaces, or internally in the ventricles, or both. Hemorrhagic and necrotic cysts (p. 293) belong to the same category.

THE HEART, BLOOD VESSELS, AND LYMPHATIC VESSELS

THE HEART: GENERAL CONSIDERATIONS

The striking progress made during the last few years in the comprehension and treatment of heart disease have been preëminently advanced by the study of normal and perverted function. For such a study, it is true, a knowledge of the anatomy and histology, and, indeed, of the embryology of the organ has been a prerequisite, but undoubtedly at the present time a knowledge of the pathological physiology of the heart is of profound importance to the medical man. Thus of necessity a chapter must be devoted to cardiac function and its disturbances.

Functionally the heart is nothing more nor less than a pump—a double pump and double-actioned—the indications being that the filling of the ventricles is not a passive process, but in part at least active, due to suction exerted by the expanding ventricles; it is a suction pump, even if, to a greater extent, it is a propulsive organ. With this it is extraordinarily responsive to variations in the work it is called upon to accomplish, altering its rate or rhythm and the force of individual heats according to the amount of blood supplied, the resistance a sentres. We must, even if rapidly, mention in order the varying factors which modify its activity, taking for granted a knowledge of the main outlines of its anatomy and embryogeny.

It is a matter of difficulty to determine the order in which to treat the various sections of our subject, and this because there is such an intimate interaction between the work and the disturbances of the different portions of the heart, that it is impossible to discuss one phase of heart action without referring to the other. The following, however, may be found helpful:

Auricles.—We must regard the auricles as distensible pouches with revely weak muscular walls. Their very structure indicates that they are reservoirs to accumulate blood during ventricular systole and district it freely into the ventricles during their diastole. It is true

that these walls are muscular, true further, as has been abundantly demonstrated during the last few years, that the heart beat commences at the sino-auricular ring, where the yence cave open into the auricle. and from there the contraction spreads through the auricle, and so later to the ventricles; but in the auricles the contraction is relatively feeble. Under normal conditions there is indeed very little need for vigorous contraction. The very size of the auriculoventricular orifice. as we shall point out, and the active dilatation of the ventricles together afford an easy flow of blood into the ventricular chambersa flow so easy that no proper valves are present at the orifices of the venæ cavæ and the pulmonary veins respectively. At most, with the contraction of the circular musculature around each orifice, there is a diminution in their lumen. It thus becomes a matter still under debate as to whether with each auricular systole some small amount of blood is not driven backward into the veins. As already noted, the flow forward into the ventricles is so easy that if normally such regurgitation is present, it is not propagated, and does not, for example, show itself in the neck veins.

2. **Venous Pulse.**—If, however, there be obstruction to the onflow of blood and dilatation of the auricle, such regurgitation easily manifests itself. There have been numerous conflicting studies upon this matter during the last century. We owe, more especially, to Dr. James Mackenzie and his employment o' the polygraph (i. e., of an instrument permitting simultaneous records of venous pulse, apex beat, arterial pulse, etc.) that today we recognize the different forms of venous pulse and are able to translate the significance of the same. Mackenzie has shown very clearly that according to their position relative to the phases of the carotid pulse, we may recognize three separate waves in the venous pulse (e. g., in that seen in the jugular vein).

I. If the auricle be distended and its contraction be powerful, there may be propagated along the vein a wave corresponding with the auricular systole.

II. If the auriculoventricular valve be incompetent there may be propagated backward a regurgitant wave corresponding in time with the ventricular systole, and

III. Owing to the close proximity of the carotid and jugular within the same sheath, an active impulse propagated along the carotid artery may be transmitted to the column of blood in the vein showing itself a little later than the regurgitant ventricular wave.

Sometimes all three of these waves are present together. Where there is little or no regurgitation through the tricuspid, the auricular systolic wave alone may be present, as in the rare condition of tricuspid stenosis. Where the tricuspid is markedly incompetent, and through regurgitation the right auricle is overdistended and enfeebled so that its systole is much weakened, then the ventricular systolic wave may be of great size, the other two scarce recognizable.

In other words, a careful study of the venous pulse is affor g us

antly ences

ricle.

id so

ivelv

d for

ifice.

ricles

ers—

the

is a

bate

lood

flow

urgi-

how

w of

fests

itter

mes nent

erial

ulse

has

ases

the

iere

the

be

ith

hin

ery

self

ere

lar

pid

igh

at

av

U\$

valuable evidence regarding the state of the right heart, as compared with that of the left. The indications are that regurgitation of blood into the veins is relatively common, that, as King showed long ago, it acts as a factor of safety, preventing excessive strain upon the delicate auricles, as again upon the weak right ventricle. We shall have more to say regarding regurgitation and auricular function in connection with our next section.

3. The Auriculoventricular Valves. As already noted, the most striking feature of these valves is their relatively large size, so that their orifices permit an easy filling of the ventricles in diastole, and this without resistance. The very size of the orifices demands a special mechanism, so that during systole the pressure on the under surfaces of the large valve flaps does not make them give way and allow escape into the auricular chamber. This mechanism is afforded by the papillary muscles and the chordæ tendineæ. The chordæ are attached in rows to the under aspect of each valve, and originate from the papillary muscles in such a way that each muscle gives origin to chords passing to each valve flap. They are further so attached, some to the very edge of the valve, others to the under surface, that when the valve flaps are ballooned up by the pressure of blood in the ventricle, the flaps are not absolutely flat, but have a marked convexity upward in such a way that the distal or terminal border of the main flaps does not meet the edge of its fellow, but there is apposition of the auricular aspects of the terminal portions of these valves, and in this way the greater the pressure within the ventricle the more firm is the closure of the valve.

As to the action of the papillary muscles, there is this to be noted, that in systole it is the breadth and not the length of the ventricles that undergoes serious alteration. Were the papillary muscles to contract simultaneously with the ventricular wall while the ventricle is still distended, the tendency would be to keep the valve open and favor regurgitation. Roy and Adami have shown that the papillary muscles are the last portion of the ventricular wall to undergo contraction. It would thus seem that these muscles come into action after the increasing pressure within the ventricle in systole has led already to the apposition of the flaps, and that by their contraction they prevent excessive ballooning of the valve into the auricular chamber. They and other observers have shown that the papillary contraction may be irregular or may be wanting, and have associated these irregularities with other disturbance in the heart action. The main cause, however, of regurgitation, is distension from an overfilling of the ventricle. This we shall discuss in our next section.

The Ventricles.—These are essentially the pumping apparatus of the heart, and their structure in this relationship shows certain interesting reatures. Each ventricle does not contract as a sphere and thus home narrowed in every direction. The layers of muscle are so arranged that with contraction the length is practically unaltered, so the in systole singularly little internal pressure is exerted upon the

apex, which, indeed, is singularly thin. The arrangement of the fibres and their mode of contraction are such that the walls of the apical portion of either ventricle, and particularly of the stronger left ventricle. are brought together and compressed. Above the apices of the papillary muscles there is left a small chamber around each auriculoventricular valve, which even in the completest contraction is never entirely emptied. The more recent studies of the electric reactions of the heart show that the contraction begins at the base and travels down toward the apex, and, as already noted, it affects the papillary muscles at a comparatively late period. But, also, with Krehl, we are led to recognize a third section of the muscle, the ring musculature, controlling the orifice of the ventricles. This is held to play an important part in preventing regurgitation. Where its tonus is reduced and becomes enfeebled the enlargement of the auriculoventricular orifice leads to incompetence. In the right heart also we have to distinguish a conus or passage leading up to the pulmonary artery. Embryologically this originates as a separate portion of the ventricular cavity. Lastly, it has to be recalled that the weaker right ventricle is applied in a somewhat crescentic manner upon the side of the more conical left ventricle, and that the musculature of the two ventricles is not absolutely distinct. A considerable number of the more superficial fibres pass from the one ventricle to the other. Some clinical observers have recorded an independent rate of contraction of the two hearts. From anatomical considerations it is difficult to see how this can occur.

While the cardiac muscle presents certain distinctive features in its mode of contraction, we must regard it in most respects as possessing the same general properties as other striated muscle. If we attach a weight to a resting band of muscle, such as that of the frog's leg, we find that the band undergoes progressive elongation. So, similarly, if under pressure increasing volumes of blood enter the ventricles, the ventricle expands and undergoes distension. It is very probable that, as with skeletal muscle, there is a certain optimum load under which the maximum amount of work is accomplished, and that thus a moderate grade of distension of the ventricles is most favorable for the heart work. Without entering into the physics of the matter we would here point out that with increased exercise up to a certain point the ventricles of the heart undergo a physiological distension, which seems to be to their advantage, inasmuch as in this state a smaller range of contraction of the individual muscle fibres drives out a relatively much larger amount of blood into the arteries. Saying this, it must be remembered that the normal heart possesses a very large reserve of force. It is found, for example, that with the internal pressure raised to four times the normal, the organ still continues to pump out regularly into the aorta. Thus it can stand temporary increase of work with comparative ease. Nevertheless, this reserve of force can be used up either by malnutrition or by continued work up to the limit of the capacity of the organ. Where this is the case we find that the organ undergoes what

bres

oical

icle,

lary

ular

rely

eart

ard

t a

og-

ing

in

nes

to

nus

his

nas

nat

nd

et.

me

an

eal

its

ng

8

we

ly,

he

ıt,

eh.

r-

rt

re

es

to

C-

er

d

18

S

e

e

now we may term "pathological dilatation." Even in this dilatation, judging from the continued strength of the pulse and the arterial blood pressure, the organ may continue to function adequately, and drive forward the amount of blood necessary for the organism at large, but this only so long as the individual is at rest. Relatively slight exertion, or increased demand upon organ brings about cardiac failure and acute distress, or otherwise we recognize three grades—physiological distension, pathological dilatation with partial incompetence, and cardiac failure.

It is probable that in all cases of what we have termed "pathological dilatation" there is incompetence to the extent that regurgitation shows itself. As already pointed out, such regurgitation through the dilated auriculoventricular orifices is of the nature of a safety valve action, whereby the strain is removed from the ventricular muscle at the possibly lesser expense of congestion of the lungs and abdominal and other organs.

So long as the heart is working within the limits of its reserve force we find, in accordance with the principle laid down on page 142, that increased work leads to hypertrophy. When, therefore, we encounter the condition of marked increase in the volume of the ventricular muscle, we must not regard this in itself as a pathological condition. It is adaptive, but, at the same time, is an indication of the existence of some condition, either in the heart itself, as from disease of the valves and obstruction to the onflow of the blood, or outside the heart, whether in the form of obstructive disease of the lungs or of obstruction to the onflow through the systemic arteries. It is an indication that we have to seek for the cause of the increased work upon the heart, either within the organ itself or outside it.

Systole and Diastole.—That systole, the contraction of the cardiac muscle, is an active process is obvious. It is less generally recognized that diastole is likewise active. While this has been suggested by several observers, and while the very firmness and resistance offered to pressure when the beating heart is taken between finger and thumb, is in itself opposed to the view that the diastolic filling of the ventricles is a passive process, it is only comparatively recently that Stefani has afforded absolute demonstration of the active elongation of the heart muscle. He has demonstrated that blood enters the ventricles, and is propelled into the auricles when the pericardial pressure (the pressure active on the heart walls) is 25 cm. of water higher than that in the ventricles, Only by the suction action of the ventricles, by their active dilatation, can there be continuance of the circulation under these conditions.

The cobservations throw light upon the hypertrophy of the left ventricle not infrequently present in cases of mitral stenosis; they suggest that the ventricle undergoes increased work in diastolic suction of blood that the harrow orifice. It appears that under usual conditions, when there is no resistance to inflow, the free entry of blood into the

ventricles prevents any pronounced negative pressure in these cavities, so that intraventricular pressure curves often show little or no indication of this phase of active expansion. By analogy we must suppose that the muscular walls of the arteries possess likewise these two properties, and that dilatation under the action of vasodilators is as much an active process as is constriction under the vasoconstrictors.

The Semilunar Valves.—These guarding each a smaller orifice do not need the accessory structures present in the auriculoventricular valves. The cusps close securely, owing to the relatively large extent of the peripheral portions of each of them which comes into apposition with its neighbor, and in this relationship it is interesting to note that acute disease does not affect the cusps along their edges, but immediately below the zone of apposition, where appears to be the region of greatest strain.

From the point of view of the work of the heart, the relationship of the aortic valve to the coronaries is of considerable importance. The older view that when open the cusps occlude the coronary orifices, is now known to be wrong. There is a free entrance of blood into these vessels, both during systole and during diastole. Thanks to the existence of the sinuses of Valsalva, there is at all periods a space between the upper aspect of the cusps and the aortic wall.

The Coronary Circulation.—As above stated, blood enters the coronaries during systole. There is, however, no doubt that with the contraction of the ventricular muscle, the intramuscular branches of the coronaries undergo compression, and the heart muscle is comparatively bloodless, compared, that is, with its condition during diastole. It is during this latter and longer period that the main nourishment of the heart fibres occurs.

A study of sections where there has been extensive destruction of the ventricular muscle, through malnutrition, shows that there is a zone or layer of this muscle under the endocardium which still survives. Clearly, therefore, there is in the mammal, as is the case to a much greater extent in cold-blooded animals, a certain amount of nourishment of the myocardium from the ventricular chambers.

To the relationship of the different branches of the coronary arteries to each other we have already referred in discussing the subject of infarcts (p. 342). We would only recall that anastomoses occur, but they are small and infrequent. As shown by Kronecker, ligature of certain of the main branches, particularly of the left side, may be followed in a few minutes by fibrillation of the whole heart, with resultant death. This does not, it is true, occur always, but possibly throws light upon sudden death in some cases of angina pectoris, a condition which is especially associated with obstructive disease of the coronary arteries. For the supervention of an attack of angina, it does not seem necessary that there be complete obliterative spasm or other form of closure of the left coronary or its branches. There must, however, be some narrowing or rigidity of these arteries by disease, so that a

ities,

lica-

pose

two

s as

ular

tent

tion that

tely

test

p of

The

low

sels,

the

per

10-

the

of

m-

ing

ain

of

a

es.

ch

sh-

ies

of

ut

of

be

t-

VS

n

V

m

)£

s. e do call for increased work cannot be met by dilatation and increased nutrition of the heart muscle. The symptoms, that is, of angina pectoris, are those of a relative anemia of the ventricular muscle, or of some area of the same.

The Nervous Mechanism.—It is in this connection that during recent years there has been the greatest advance in our knowledge.

The Intrinsic Apparatus.—1. If the cat's heart, for example, be removed in toto and, with as little delay as possible, be perfused with defibrinated blood under proper conditions, the organ will begin to beat and continue to contract actively and with regularity for an hour or more. It is clear, therefore, that there is a mechanism by which auriculoventricular contractions proceed regularly and periodically in the absence of central stimulation.

2. Even with separated strips of mammalian ventricular muscle (Porter), if defibrinated blood be perfused through the attached branch of the coronary artery spontaneous contractions or beats will, under favorable conditions, show themselves. It is clear, therefore, that the contractions of individual fibres may occur in the absence of any stimuli from localized ganglionic centres, situated in the heart.

3. It is still a matter of debate as to whether this last order of contraction is idiomuscular, and this because it seems impossible to isolate any part of the heart musculature which does not show fine nerve fibrils, associated with which are scattered nerve cells.

4. Those who hold to the idiomuscular hypothesis point out that in the chick and other embryos the heart is developed and actively beating for some days before any nerve fibres and cells reach it from the central nervous system. There is no question, therefore, that the embryonic heart tissue possesses the power of spontaneous contraction. But in development, as pointed out by Gaskell, this embryonic tissue is replaced by the heart muscle proper. The striking point is that a portion of this primitive cardiac muscle remains and constitutes a very remarkable conduction system, which, evidently, under normal conditions, initiates and regulates the contractions of the organ as a whole.

5. Conduction System.—Our knowledge of this system is based upon the observations of Gaskell (1883), Kent (1892), His, Jr. (1893), Tawara and Aschoff (1906), Keith and Fleck (1907), with abundant confirmatory observations by more recent workers. At the junction of the superior vena cava with the right auricle is an accumulation of peculiar small muscle fibres, fusiform with well-marked nuclei, having a plexiform arrangement, and embedded in a densely packed connective tissue. Strands of similar cells pass from this so-called sino-auricular node over the inner saper of the auricular wall and appear to be directly connected with a second node, the auriculoventricular node, situated in the neighborhood of the coronary sinus at the base of the auricular septum. From this there i asses forward and to the left a bundle of cells of similar nature other candle of His"), ensheathed in a fibrous canal, which at the pars many sacrea septi of the ventricle divides, the one branch becoming

contributed to the left, the other to the right ventricle. Each branch gives off frequent divisions running under the endocardium, the main arborizations being contributed to the papillary muscles of either ventricle, and, further, becoming directly continuous with the subendocardial network of Purkinje cells, which lines the interior of both ventricles. These cells have been known for long, and had hitherto been regarded as immature or embryonic muscle fibres. It is through these that the network comes into direct communication with the ventricular muscle proper.

6. It should be added that associated with this system is an abundant plexus of fine nerve fibrils with occasional ganglion cells, and that the sino-auricular node receives branches, both from the vagus and the

sympathetic (accelerator) nerves.

The great importance of this system lies in this, that practically all recent work demonstrates that the regular contractions of the heart are intimately associated with its presence and functional integrity. The recent studies with the electrocardiograph show that the wave of contraction begins at the sino-auricular node. (1) Remove the node and the contractions cease. (2) Destroy the auriculoventricular node and coördination between auricles and ventricles comes to an end. The auricles continue beating at the regular rate; the ventricles at first quiescent, slowly assume a rhythm of their own (the idioventricular rhythm), the rate of which is roughly one-half to one-third of that of the auricles.

Our present conception of normal cardiac activity is that recurrent periodic stimuli proceed from the sino-auricular node which lead first to a contraction of the auricles, and following upon this, as the wave extends down the auriculoventricular bundle, the ventricles in their turn undergo contraction. And we regard the rate, and, to some extent, the force of the successive waves as influenced by afferent vagus and accelerator influences reaching the sino-auricular node. We recognize further, that these modifications in the heart work are set up by influences active upon the vagus and accelerator centres of the bulb, whether direct through the influence of circulating blood upon those centres, or reflex, either from stimuli reaching those centres from other organs or parts of the body, or from the heart itself. But, in addition, we recognize that by direct stimulus from within the heart itself, and wholly apart from this conductive system, there may arise a series of independent contractions, whether of the auricular or of the ventricular muscle. The outcome of these investigations has resulted in a mass of observations more particularly upon the various phases and forms of cardiac irreglarity, observations so recent that much has still to be clarified, but nevertheless, certain points stand out clearly.

Heart Block .- Just as experimentally it is possible, by injury to the auriculoventricular node and its branches, to bring about incoördination between auricles and ventricles, so a like incoördination is found by clinical and autopsy studies to result from destructive disease affecting

ranch

main

ven-

OCAT-

icles.

arded

t the

usele

idant

t the

the

y all

rity.

ve of node node The first rular

rent first ave heir ent, and

nize

flu-

her , or

Or

og-

art

111-

'he

ms

rg-

Ht

he

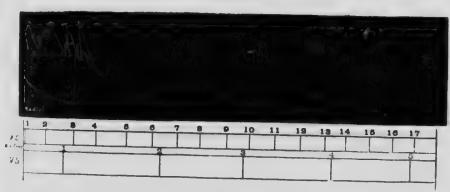
011

bу

ng

the node and bundle. The condition has been known for some years. Numerous cases have been described in which, often suddenly, the pulse had fallen from the normal 70 or 80 to 30 or less, the fall being accompanied by symptoms of an epileptic type (Stokes-Adams syndrome). It is ingeniously suggested that Napoleon's "epileptic" attacks, in view of his habitual pulse rate of 40 or 50, were manifestations of this disease. In many cases this bradycardia or slow beat has persisted for years. Other cases have been noted in which the condition comes in paroxysms. The more recent employment of phlebographs, with record of the venous pulse, has shown that in these cases, while the ventricles are slowed, the auricles retain their normal rate. The various grades of this heart block may show themselves either as (1) a lengthening in the interval between the onset of auricular and ventricular systoles, (2) an occasional ventricular dropped beat, (3) periodic dropped beats, every

Fra. 186



. Attaneous tracings of the jugulocarotid and radial pulse waves. The diagram, constructed from vents recorded in the tracings, shows that no stimulus passes along the a-v fibres to the ventral that there is complete dissociation of the ventricular rhythm (V, S_v) from the auricular (Gab_v) on and Ritchie.)

tenth or ninth pulse, etc., being wanting, until there may be developed a condition known as two-one rhythm, or three-one rhythm, the auricles beating twice or three times the rate of the ventricles, or, lastly, complete heart block, so that there is no relationship between the two reptains. Here, with entire failure of transmission, the ventricles may best for years with an inherent or idioventricular rhythm.

Other Forms of Arrhythmia.—The time is not yet ripe for a complete ification of the arrhythmias. Some of these are clearly of external ervous origin. Thus, in those recovering from acute illnesses, there he marked changes of pulse rate which clearly are associated with a piratory act. These appear to be of vagus origin. Experimentic can be shown that vagus stimulation either may bring the heart tandstill, may slow the heart rate, or may so act upon the conmapparatus as to arrest the passage of auricular impulses to the

ventricle. But others are associated with conditions in the heart itself, and due to some form of irritation. While the heart muscle is insensitive to any stimulus reaching it during the period of contraction, it responds to stimuli reaching it in the diastolic phase. We thus may come across regularly or irregularly interposed beats unrelated to the regular rhythm. These beats may be interposed in the ventricle alone, or in the auricle alone, or in both.

Fibrillation. What may be regarded as the extreme condition of irregularly interposed beats is the condition of fibrillation or delirium cordis. In this, instead of a wave passing regularly through the heart muscle, different areas of the muscle are seen to be contracting independently, so that there is mo contraction of the heart as a whole, but the organ passes into a cor. ..ion of progressively increasing dilatation, with an extraordinary fibrillary movement of the whole surfaceappearances such as might be given by a mass of small worms, densely packed, wriggling actively in a thin-walled bag. Where this condition affects the ventricles, unless it be immediately arrested by vagus or other action, the result is death, and that because the circulation is inevitably arrested. It seems probable that this ventricular fibrillation is a cause of sudden death in some conditions of long-continued and grave cardiac irregularities. One of the most interesting of recent observations on the heart is that in cases of obstructive cardiac disease there may be dilatation and fibrillation of the auricles, persisting for months, if not for years. Both by study of the venous pulse and by the cardiograms, this fact is now well established. It is but another confirmation of the point made at the beginning of this chapter, that from the point of view of the pumping action of the heart, the auricles are not essential, but simply serve as reservoirs.1

THE PERICARDIUM

From this point on we shall in due order pass in review the main features of the morbid anatomy and histology of the different organs. It would be well to say here a word or two regarding the system employed. A definite order will be preserved in connection with each section, the treatment being as follows:

(1) Abnormalities, (2) Circulatory Disturbances, (3) Inflammations, (4) Regressive Disturbances (degenerations, infiltrations, necroses, traumatic disturbances), (5) Progressive Disturbances, including new growths, (6) Any conditions not coming under the above headings. It will be understood that where any one of these headings is passed over,

¹ The latest work upon these subjects is by Thomas Lewis, "The Mechanism of the Heart Beat," London: Shaw & Sons, 1911. Articles upon the same subjects are to be found in both Allbutt's and Osler and McCrae's Systems. The classical work upon the venous pulse is that of J. Mackenzie, "A Study of the Pulse," 1902. Of equal importance is his "Disea to 3 of the Heart," London, 1908.

no disturbance of this particular order is deemed noteworthy in connection with the organ under consideration.

In the second place, not merely for economy of space, but also as a due mental exercise, it is taken for granted that the reader is familiar with the main morbid processes. Thus, for example, in noting the existence of diphtheritic or catarrhal inflammation of a given surface, it is not a ought necessary to enter into a detailed description of these types of . Sammation; at most, any departure from the ordinary type will be noted, together with any peculiarities in the gross appearance of the affected parts.

And, lastly, it must be clearly understood that the treatment is not intended to be exhaustive. Our object is to pass in review these conditions with which the ordinary, as distinct from the advanced, student ought to be familiar.

With these prefatory remarks we now pass on to the pathological and histological anatomy of the pericardium.

Abnormalities.—There is only one noteworthy abnormality of the pericardium, and this is rare, namely, the condition of defect, either partial or complete, of the parietal layer, resulting in either a passage or communication between the pericardial and left pleural sacs, or in the heart lying, as it were, naked, in apposition to the left lung.

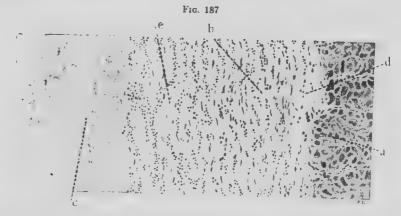
Circulatory Disturbances.—All serous surfaces, from the similarity in their structure, show a similar succession of changes associated with different grades of circulatory and inflammatory disorders. The abundant network of capillaries situated immediately underneath the endothelial layer renders them all peculiarly liable to present profound change. Thus, in the first place, at post mortem we frequently encounter pericardial petechiæ, due apparently to irregular and spasmodic heat action in the agonal period, with consequent distension and rupture of some of the poorly supported uperficial capillaries. The hinder aspect of the heart is a not infrequent seat of these petechiæ. Certain toxic substances, phosphorus, and the like, are peculiarly apt to lead to these multiple small hemorrhages, secondary, it would appear, to deceneration of the capillary endothelium. They may appear, that is, not only in the agonal period, but also during the course of acute desications and infections.

Hydropericardium.—Of more importance is hydropericardium, with consulation of serous fluid in the pericardial sac. This serous cavity cars from the others in that normally there is present a small accumulation of serous fluid (from 10 to 20 c.c.). In obstructive heart disease amount becomes greatly increased (from 100 to 100 much as 1000 An interesting point is that, despite this large amount of fluid, are the pressure it brings to bear upon the heart, there may be this radual pouring-out of fluid without arrest of the heart action. With radual pouring-out of the fluid there is expansion of the parietal sale, so that the pressure does not rise sufficiently high to the suricles, and so arrest the onflow of blood. This con-

dition of hydropericardium is the result of obstructive heart and lung disease, and, as such, is associated with the transudation of fluid into the other cavities of the body. It is significant that there is no constant relationship between the extent of the accumulation in the pericardial, pleural, and peritoneal cavities; there is considerable variation in the relative amounts.

Hematopericardium.—Hematopericardium results (1) from extreme dilatation of the pericardial capillaries, with hemorrhage from the same, (2) from trauma, (3) from rupture of the heart, or (4) rupture of the first part of the aorta, either from a simple or from a dissecting aneurysm. In the first of these cases there is a combination of hydroand hematopericardium, and the condition is not necessarily fatal. In the last two the sudden outpouring of blood into the pericardial cavity prevents gradual and adaptive expansion of the parietal pericardium, and the pressure may become so great that the accumulation of blood is in itself the cause of death by arresting heart action.

Anemia.—Anemia of the pericardium coexists with anemia of other organs.



Section from case of recurrent pericarditis: a, myocardium; b, e, layers of connective tissue, the result of previous attacks of inflammation; c, deposit of fibrin, the result of recent acute inflammation; d, the limit of the normal connective-tissue layer of the pericardium.

Inflammation.—Pericarditis.— The first stage of an acute inflammation of the pericardium is characterized by an intense congestion of the superficial vessels, with erosion and destruction of the endothelium, followed by slight formation of fibrin on the surface. This stage in which there has so far not been much fluid exudation, is characterized clinically by the presence of friction sounds or rubs, the roughened surfaces of the epicardium and parietal pericardium rubbing one against the other. It is rare for this dry form to continue more than a few hours; more frequently it gives place to a serofibrinous pericarditis, with disappearance of the friction sounds. In this form there becomes developed a layer of fibrin on both the pericardial surfaces, which sometimes assumes a great thickness, and through the constant move-

id lung

of fluid

here is tion in

derable

xtreme

m the

upture

secting hydro-

al. In cavity

rdium.

blood

other

-d

me, the

lamma-

nma-

on of

lium,

ge in

rized

ened

ainst

few

litis,

mes

hich

ove-

ment of the heart and the eddying of the fluid exudate, instead of being smooth the fibrinous layer is ridged or even shaggy and villous, assuming often a characteristic "bread-and-butter" appearance, i. e., that of the butter between two layers of bread when those layers have been quickly pulled apart. Fibrin so deposited can easily be scraped off the surface of the heart with a knife-blade or finger nail, exposing the reddened underlying pericardium. According to relative abundance of the fibrin formation and fluid exudate, so do we speak of either a sero-fibrinous or a serous pericarditis. In some early acute cases, as also in the acuter cases of tuberculosis of the pericardium, the congestion is so extreme that in place of a simple serous exudate there is a hemorrhagic inflammation.

Serous pericarditis is seen in cases of acute rheumatism, chronic nephritis, and other conditions in which the indications are that we deal with infection and bacteriemia, due to organisms of low virulence, or again, it may be due to intoxication. Here, also, may be included a somewhat rare form associated with the extension of malignant growth to the pericardium.

Purulent Pericarditis.—This form is, in general, set up by the pyococcus, streptococcus, or pneumococcus, although occasionally other microörganisms of acute infection are found as the causative agents. Here, with the excessive pouring out of leukocytes there is a coincident proteolytic digestion of any fibrin that has been formed. The pericardial cavity is found filled with thick pus.

Chronic Pericarditis.—An acute fibrinous pericarditis may, if of only moderate extent, undergo complete resolution, with complete absorption of the fibrin. If, however, the deposit be at all extensive, either this absorption is not universal or is largely wanting, and in its place organization ensues, with the passage of new capillary vessels into the fibrinous layers, and replacement of the fibrin by new connective tissue. While in the acute stage the opposed layers of fibrin are separated by serum, in the process of healing the excessive fluid becomes absorbed, and thus the opposed layers come into contact and become adherent, and as the process of organization continues there is first vascular and then connective-tissue connection between the epicardial and the parietal layers. In this way there are developed adhesions which may be either (a) localized, as, for example, in the region of the apex, and then in the form of fibrous bands, or (b) generalized over both ventricles, or (c) universal, resulting in what is known as synechia or adherent pericardium. This process of organization takes days if not weeks to become complete, and such fibrosing continuation of an acute attack is simple chronic pericarditis. But once formed these organized adhesions are apt to be permanent; at autopsy we encounter not a true chrone pericarditis, but an old condition of pericardial adhesions.

It is not infrequent to meet with a condition of acute pericarditis implanted upon a thickened fibrous pericardium, the results of previous inflammation. This recurrent pericarditis may be met with in

recurrent acute rheumatism; not infrequently, however careful examination will show that we deal with a tuberculous affection. While we may encounter the more acute form of tuberculosis of the pericardium with abundant recognizable tubercles throughout the thickened pericardium, it is frequent, in cases of tuberculosis, to find few tubercles or caseous areas proper, but, in the main, a diffuse extensive connective tissue formation, the fibrous tissue being laid down in regular layers which, toward the free surface, give place to a recent fibrinous pericarditis (see Fig. 187).

Syphilitic Pericarditis.—This form is not frequent. It appears generally as a continuation or extension of syphilis of the heart muscle with formation of adhesions. Actinomycosis is as rare or rarer. Here may be noted the condition of indurative mediastinopericarditis, a condition in which the inflammation of chronic type with adhesions extends into the surrounding mediastinal tissue and pleura, and, with the contraction of the tissue, is apt to pull upon and distort the heart, giving

rise to aberrant murmurs and paradoxical pulse.

"Milk Spots."—To this category also belong milk spots. These are localized patches of thickening of the epicardium seen most frequently upon the front of the right ventricle; they may be present also at the back of the ventricles, and less commonly over the auricles. They are slight overgrowths from hypertrophy of the epicardial connective tissue, and appear to be induced by the rubbing of the heart wall against the parietal pericardium in cases of dilatation of one or other cavity.

ETIOLOGY.—A word or two may be said regarding the causation of pericarditis. It appears probable that there is no such thing as true primary idiopathic pericardi 's. The organism setting up the inflammation must reach the part fro: some focus elsewhere. Cases are either of hematogenous origin, the infective agent being brought by the blood, or, more frequently, derived by extension, and secondary to inflammation either of the heart muscle, of the pleura, or the diaphragm. As already indicated, a great number of species of organisms may be isolated from instances of one or other type. It deserves note that tuberculous pericarditis is found, upon careful examination, to be more common than the naked eye apearances would suggest. Lastly, the frequency of pericarditis in elderly individuals, victims of chronic nephritis, deserves The conditions here are generally of the serous type, and frequently on bacteriological examination the results are negative. Whether we deal with a toxic pericarditis, or, as appears to be the case also in acute rheumatism, the causative agents are such as do not grow easily upon the ordinary media, is a matter which has still to be determined.

Regressive Disturbances.—Of these only one condition deserves note, namely, that of serous atrophy of the pericardial fat. In senile conditions, as also following exhausting diseases, the fat of the fat cells may become replaced by serous fluid, so that without much shrinkage,

eful e.xam-While we ricardium. ened periibercles or onnectivelar lavers. nous peri-

t appears art muscle rer. Here tis, a conns extends h the conert, giving

s. These most freesent also es. They onnective eart wall or other

isation of g as true nflammare either he blood, mmation s already ited from lous perinon than uency of deserves ype, and negative. o be the h as do

deserves In senile fat cells rinkage,

has still

the regions where fat has been, in the auriculoventricular groove, etc., assume a translucent, soft, gelatinous appearance.

Progressive Changes.—New Growths.—Primary neoplasms are rare, and are of sarcomatous type or endotheliomatous. Nor are secondary growths very common, though these may occur by extension, as, for example, in cases of mediastinal lymphosarcoma, or by metastasis.

Cases of cysticercus and echinococcus hydatids have been described.

MYOCARDIUM

Abnormalities. - Abnormalities of the heart are not uncommon, most often due to defective development, occasionally the results of intra-uterine disease. They affect mainly the myocardium, but the valves and larger vessels may be involved. It is simpler to consider them all as a grou. Saying this, it has to be admitted also that they are so various that only the more important can be touched upon.1

We may divide them into four main groups: (1) those affecting the heart as a whole; (2) those due to imperfection in the development of the septa which convert the original two-chambered heart into four chambers; (3) those due to imperfection in the development of the systemic and pulmonary arteries out of the original single efferent trunk; and (4) abnormalities of the main venous and main arterial

trunks, ductus arteriosus, etc.

1. Under the abnormalities of the heart as a whole are to be included displacements, duplication, hypoplasia, and primary congenital hypertrophy. The heart has been found to assume a transverse or vertical instead of an oblique position, or to be dislocated, so as to be high up in the neck, even at the level of the base of the tongue, or, through delect of the diaphragm, in the abdominal cavity, or through defect of the sternum, to be exposed to the exterior (ectopia). Or, again, it may be transposed, lying in the right thorax, in which case in general, though not always, there is found transposition of other viscera. A case in which there were seven functional hearts in series has been recorded in the chick. Hypoplasia of various grades is found down to complete absence in acardiac monsters (p. 62). Primary congenital hypertrophy, in which the weight of the organ may be more than twice the normal, has been recorded by a few observers, the causation being unknown.

2. Imperfect development of septa may affect (a) the interauricular septum, (b) the interventricular septum, and (c) both septa. The interauricular septum has a double origin, two primary septa growing downward, and lying obliquery; between these is the channel of communication between the auricles, which is patent until birth, conveying the blood from the inferior vena cava across to the left heart. It frequently remains patent in post uterine life. This patency of the foramen ovale

The cost comprehensive study in our language is to be found in the article 64 Dr. Abbott in Osler and McCrae's Modern Medicine, vol. iv, p. 323.

is the commonest of all abnormalities of any organ. In Montreal we have found it thus patent in 14.5 per cent. of our autopsies, and believe this to be an understatement, as frequently the oblique channel is so small as only to admit a fine probe. At other times it is large and conspicuous, there being various grades up to complete absence of septal development, up to the condition of cor biventriculare triloculare, with a single auricular cavity. Often this condition is accompanied by no physical signs or symptoms, but aberrant murmurs have been recorded, together with the development of cyanosis when the pulmonary circulation has become obstructed.

The interventricular septum develops from below upward, and here again various grades of defect are on record, from total absence (cor biatriatum triloculare) down to a minute orifice in what is known as the "undefended space" in the upper portion of the ventricles immediately beneath the semilunar valves. The indications are that in these cases the current is from the stronger left ventricle into the right, with secondary hypertrophy of the right ventricle. Here again there may or may not be cyanosis, and the development of a systolic murmur heard

to the left of the sternum about the third space.

Both in the auricles and in the ventricles are found occasionally

accessory imperfect septa.

3. Originally there is a single primitive arterial trunk which in very early embryonic life becomes divided into two great vessels by the development of a septum. There may be (a) complete absence of development of this septum (persistent truncus arteriosus), this common vessel giving off the pulmonary vessels and continuing as the aorta. (b) The commonest abnormality is deviation of the septum, so that we obtain various grades of irregularity in the origin of the aorta and pulmonary artery up to conditions in which the aorta originates from the right ventricle, the pulmonary artery from the left. Or (c) the septum leads to an unequal division of the trunk, so that one artery, most commonly the pulmonary, is minute or obliterated (congenital pulmonary stenosis with atresia); rarely the origin of the aorta shows the same character. These conditions may be produced either by mere vice of development, or by intra-uterine inflammation. In pulmonary stenosis compensation is obtained by persistence of the widely patent ductus Butalli (or d. arteriosus). There may also be dilated bronchial arteries aiding the pulmonary circulation. It is these cases of pulmonary stenosis that present the characteristic picture of congenital cyanosis (morbus cæruleus).

Intimately associated with defects in development of the aortic septum are abnormalities of the pulmonary and aortic semilunar cusps. These cusps originate as four endocardial cushions, two of which become subdivided in the descent of the arterial septum, so that normally six cusps are developed, three in each artery. There may be increase in number, such supernumerary cusps being more frequent in the pulmonary artery, or, on the other hand, decrease, a bicuspid condition

ntreal we

nd believe

nnel is so

large and

bsence of

riloculare.

panied by

ave been

the pul-

and here

ence (cor

known as

es imme-

t in these

ght, with

re may or

our heard

easionally

h in very

s by the

of devel-

on vessel

(b) The

e obtain

ılmonary

the right

um leads

ost com-

ulmonary

he same

e vice of

stenosis

t ductus

arteries

lmonary

cyanosis

e aortic

r cusps.

f which

ormally

increase in the

ondition

of the pulmonary, or again of the aortic valve being occasionally recorded. The latter condition must be distinguished from fusion of the cusps, the result of postnatal inflammation.

4. To our fourth group belongs a variety of conditions, such as patency and abnormalities of the ductus arteriosus, coarctation of the aorta, hypoplasia of the aorta, anomalies of the aortic arch, of the coronary arteries, of the systemic veins, and of the pulmonary veins. During feetal life the ductus arteriosus joining the pulmonary artery and aorta is a short, thick trunk, 12 mm. long, passing from the region of the bifurcation of the pulmonary artery to the under side of the arch of the aorta, below the origin of the left subclavian. It carries the blood, which reaches the right ventricle from the head and upper extremities, from the pulmonary artery into the descending aorta. At birth the pulmonary blood becomes diverted into the lungs and the ductus undergoes rapid involution, with, normally, complete obliteration in the third week after birth. Occasionally (1) it remains patent, or again (2) can undergo aneurysmal dilatation, or (3) very rarely it is completely absent, in which case may be found defect of the interventricular septum, or (4) it may present an anomalous course. Coarctation of the aorta is the name given to narrowing or stenosis of the descending arch immediately above the insertion of the ductus arteriosus. The arch, it may be pointed out, is little used during fœtal life, and this stenosis is the result of a failure of the aorta to dilate and adapt itself to the altered conditions of circulation at birth. As a result the blood from the left ventricle reaches the trunk and lower extremities through an extraordinary series of anastomotic vessels (as shown in Fig. 182).

Circulatory Disturbances. Of these the most striking is the series of disturbances which may result from obstruction of one of the coronary arteries or its branches, more particularly of the left coronary. From the fact that the coronary vessels originate at right angles to the aorta, embolism is rare, although we have encountered one case and have heard of another in which the mouth of the left coronary has been found obstructed by a thrombus forming in the underlying pocket of the aortic valve. Localized thrombosis is the more common event, most often secondary to chronic endarteritis (arteriosclerosis). The results are variable; (1) if the branch be small little harm ensues. There may be sufficient collateral circulation. (2) If larger, the area of supply undergoes necrosis and infarct formation. The early stage of this is, without reason, termed myomalacia. There are the usual characters of a red infarct with hemorrhagic congestion and death of the muscle fibres. Such necrosis may be followed by either (a) rupture, (b) giving way of the damaged heart wall, with formation of ventricular aneurysm, or c. healing and fibrosis, or cicatrization. Malnutrition of the heart muscle from either complete obliteration of a branch or branches of a narrowing of the same and relative anemia, appears to st common cause of cardiac fibrosis, or, as it is usual to term it, 'nterstitial myocarditis."

Œdema, passive congestion, and hemorrhages may all be met in the myocardium.

Inflammation.—Acute myocarditis is possibly more common than is usually supposed. From its very activity the myocardium is peculiarly susceptible to toxic agents circulating in the blood; the cloudy swelling, often going to fatty degeneration, encountered in the different acute fevers, may be regarded as the result of diffuse irritation and so as an acute myocarditis. But beyond this we may encounter a more obvious inflammation with small-celled infiltration in pyococcus and streptococcus infections, and in acute rheumatism there is a rather characteristic form of myocarditis, to which Aschoff has called attention, in the form of localized nodes of small-celled infiltration along the course of the vessels; in some cases of ulcerative endocarditis, due to pyogenic organisms, there may be isolated or multiple small abscesses developed in the heart muscle, secondary to small infective emboli. Acute miliary tuberculosis is rare. Some cases are on record of multiple syphilomas—minute localized accumulations of small round cells not very well defined (miliary gummas).

The more chronic forms of tubercular and syphilitic lesions are not common. Caseous foci have been described, together with solitary gummas. More common both in tuberculosis and syphilis, and as the end result of the localized inflammatory lesions due to pyogenic organisms, is the formation of cicatricial tissue and the development thus of localized fibroses.

Regressive Changes.—The heart muscle is very susceptible to alterations in nutrition and function and exhibits thus a variety of regressive disturbances.

Atrophy.—Simple or brown atrophy is very common. In elderly individuals and in the subjects of progressive wasting disease, the ventricular muscle is found lessened in amount presenting on section, a darker, more mahogany-brown color than normal. The microscopic appearances have already been described (p. 296). In general autopsy work this is perhaps the commonest of all cardiac disturbances to be encountered, although the next regressive change to be noted runs it a close second.

Cloudy swelling (p. 301) is seen, particularly in cases of hyperpyrexia, febrile disturbances, and infectious disorders. The ventricular muscle in these cases no longer presents the normal rich meaty color, but has, on section, the dull, paler appearance of meat that has been dipped in boiling water.

Fatty infiltration is not uncommon in the obese and sedentary, and is found associated with extreme epicardial development of fatty tissue. Here little collections of fat cells are found lying between the bands of muscle fibres around the vessels. Their presence leads to malnutrition and disturbance of function of the heart muscle. This condition appears to be a frequent cause of the weak heart and cardiac

incompetence of stout individuals. In our experience the right heart tends to be more involved than the left.





Section of myocardium from case of fatty infiltration: a, arteriole cut obliquely; f, f, fat cells in connective-tissue surrounding arteriole.

Fig. 189

et in the

on than is pecu-

cloudy lifferent ion and a more cus and rather l attenn along tis, due oscesses emboli. nultiple ells not

are not olitary and as ogenic pment

ble to ety of

elderly e, the ection, scopic topsy to be runs

rexia, nuscle t has, ed in

and fatty the

ls to

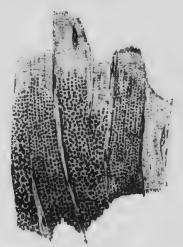
This

diac

Fig. 190



Fatty degeneration of papillary nusele. (McGill Path. Mus.)

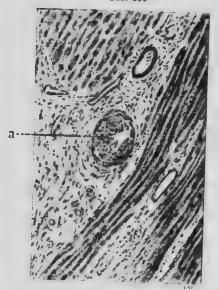


Fatty degeneration of heart-muscle fibres, showing different grades of involvement of the individual fibres; fresh specimen. (Ribbert.)

Fatty degeneration (p. 303) is also common, either as a diffuse change or in multiple small foci of degeneration alternating with unaltered

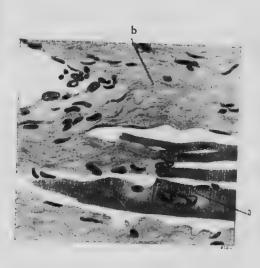
areas, giving the myocardium a grained appearance and producing what is known as the "thrush-breast" heart. This condition is best seen on the naked-eye examination of the interior of the left ventricle, often showing itself well in the papillary muscles. The heart muscle in these cases is shrunken and very friable, so that upon pressure between the fingers and thumb the tissue easily breaks up; sometimes indeed it has almost a buttery consistence. In our experience, the diffuse form in which the whole of the muscle has a paler yellowish appearance, is found as a result of extreme toxic conditions, the thrush-breast form in conditions of malnutrition and advanced anemia, notably in cases of pernicious anemia. In the latter form the small areas of degeneration are the parts farthest away from the blood supply, the muscle immediately around the terminal arterioles not being involved.





Section of myocardium to show periarterial fibrosis: a, arteriole with wellmarked endarteritis obliterans; other patches of fibrosis to be observed in the lower part of the field.

Fig. 192



Sections through edge of developing area of myocardial fibrosis showing the cardiac pruscle fibres (a) merging almost imperceptibly into the hyaline fibroid area (b).

Amyloid or chondroid degeneration is found in the more-advanced cases of general amyloidosis, as in long-continued cases of Pott's disease. As elsewhere it shows itself by a deposit of the amyloid material in the middle coats of the arteries and along the capillary network. The so-called Zenker's or vitreous degeneration, or hyaline necrosis of individual muscle fibres, is more common than is usually taught. Notably, it is to be found in cases of malnutrition and particularly where there is blocking or obliteration of branches of the coronary artery. Muscle

fibres are found swollen and hyaline, with loss of nuclear stain and of striation, exhibiting various stages of replacement by fibrous tissue.

Fragmentation.—In examining sections of the heart muscle it is not unusual to come across abundant fractures, as it may be termed, in the course of the fibres. Around these no reactive change is to be noted, and there has been much discussion as to whether these are artefacts or the result of agonal rupture of the fibres, due, for example,

to a terminal state of irregular fibrillary contraction of the ventricles. That it is not a mere artefact we are inclined to think from the fact that the condition is frequent in certain particular conditions, absent in others. Thus, Landry, working in our laboratory at the Royal Victoria Hospital, noted that it was practically constant in cases of aneurysm of the transverse arch of the aorta, associated with more or less fatty degeneration. Hektoen distinguishes between true fragmentation, in which there is rupture along the course of a fibre, and segmentation, occurring along the lines of demarcation between the separate fibres.

ducing

is best

ntricle,

muscle

ire be-

etimes

e, the

lowish

hrush-

otably

eas of

v, the

olved.

myo-

fibres

aline

ced

the

50-

ual

is

13

cle

Fibrosis.—We shall refer to this more particularly under the heading of Interstitial Myocarditis, noting here that it is a frequent result, not only of acute inflammation, but also of degeneration and necrosis of areas of muscle tissue. Associated with it we frequently get hyaline change (p. 309), more rarely we encounter calcification (p. 313).

Here, as an outcome of degeneration and necrosis, may be noted the occurrence of rupture of the heart. This may follow fatty degeneration or infiltration, but, more frequently, is the outcome of coronary disease, with localized necrosis. The most frequent site is the lowest third of

Wall of left ventricle cut into obliquely, or roughly parallel to the

Wall of left ventricle cut into obliquely, or roughly parallel to the internal aspect, to show extensive areas of fibrosis: a, area close under the endocardium; b, areas in depth of myocardium. (McGill Pathological Museum.)

the left ventricle in front. The condition may also follow upon abscess or new growths.

Progressive Changes.—Hypertrophy.—Hypertrophy of the muscular elements, both in the auricles and, more markedly, in the ventricles, is distinctly common. Anything, in fact, which leads to increased work of the heart, or of any single chamber of the heart, within the limits of its reserve force, is followed by overgrowth of the muscle, and this sometimes to an extraordinary extent, so that cases are on record in

which the heart, instead of weighing the average 300 grams, has weighed 1900. Usually the condition is one both of simple hypertrophy and of hyperplasia. Not only are the individual fibres of increased size, but their number is increased. We may classify the causes of increased work and so of hypertrophy as follows:

I. Increased load in the form of increased volume of fluid to be

propelled, as in true plethora ("Munich beer heart").

II. Increased load, in consequence of obstruction to the onflow of blood:

1. In the peripheral circulation, as in some forms of arteriosclerosis, and chronic Bright's disease.

2. Within the heart itself.

(a) Through valvular stenosis and obstruction, resulting in hypertrophy in the chamber or chambers behind the obstruction.

(b) Through valvular incompetence and regurgitation, the regurgitant blood adding to the load and volume to be expelled out of the chamber receiving it.

III. Increased load, due to hindrance of contraction exerted from without, as by pericardial adhesions.

IV. Increased activity of the heart, due to central nervous stimuli. In the earlier stages of the tachycardia of exophthalmic goitre the heart has been found distinctly hypertrophied. If the cause of the hypertrophy persists, and, as often happens, becomes progressively aggravated, the hypertrophy is apt to give place first to dilatation and then to exhaustion, and in these cases, although the heart is found enlarged and of increased weight, microscopically the individual fibres no longer appear enlarged and hypertrophied. Without taking up the individual cases of hypertrophy of particular chambers we may here lay down the general rule that it is the chamber which bears the brunt of the increased work that first shows hypertrophy. Thus, where there is stenosis of the aortic valve it is the left ventricle, in pulmonary obstruction the right ventricle, (is first hypertrophied. And, in the second place, hindrance to the onflow of blood from one chamber tells secondarily upon the chamber immediately behind, and leads to its hypertrophy. Thus, where there is aortic stenosis, the left auricle in time undergoes hypertrophy because it attempts to empty its blood into an already crowded ventricle, and this is followed

in course of time by hypertrophy of the right ventricle. Dilatation.—Dilatation is not a progressive but rather a regressive condition. In passing, we would recall our contention that two distinct · aditions are to be recognized, a physiological distension which always accompanies increased work thrown upon the heart, followed by hypertrophy, and a pathological dilatation, an indication that the heart cannot fully respond to the work thrown upon it, a condition in which microscopically we find that the fibres which had undergone a true simple hypertrophy now show regressive changes,

with some shrinkage.

New Growths.—Primary tumors of the myocardium are distinctly rare, although fibromas, myr 3, and lipomas have been reported. The most typical primary tumor is the rhabdomyoma, a condition generally of multiple tumors found in children and so of congenital nature, which is generally associated with congenital nervous and other disturbances. Secondary growths are not uncommon, sarcomas being more frequent than carcinomas.

THE ENDOCARDIUM

Endocarditis is so often confined to the valves that when we use this term we are apt to picture to ourselves a "valvulitis" and by association, to forget that the endocardium includes the whole of the lining of all the heart chambers, and that regions other than the valves may be the seat of disturbance.

Abnormalities.—These are rare and confined to the valves. There may be accessory semilurar valves or only two; very rarely has been recorded a duble orifice of the mitral. Aberrations of the chordæ tendineæ, and cords passing from one papillary muscle to the other without touching the mitral cusp are not very uncommon. A still more frequent abnormality is fenestration of the semilurar valves. These fenestrations are situated immediately ben the the free edge in the area of apposition and cause no functional disturbance.

Circulatory Disturbances.—The circulatory disturbances are of slight importance. The healthy valves are non-vascular, but, just as in the cornea, after inflammation, there is development of the vessels, so here, and with recurrent inflammation there may, though rarely, be hemornages within the valve substance. In infants minute pinhead hematomas are occasionally encountered, generally toward the closing edge of the mitral cusps. The latest view is that in the course of development minute pockets become formed, lined by endothelium, which, becoming covered in by the endothelium above, form closed sacs containing blood. They are not, therefore, associated with the presence of vessels. The bright red color of the endocardium occasionally met with is due to hemoglobin imbibition, and is usually a post mortem appearance (p. 322).

Inflammation.—Endocarditis.—The commonest and most important series of disturbances, seen in connection with the endocardium, are usually included under the heading "endocarditis," whether acute or chronic. Acute endocarditis most frequently affects the valves, although it must be remembered that the mural endocardium may also be involved, and the the succession of changes seen more particularly in connection with the valves, may also be encountered affecting the walls of ventricle or agricle.

hear has phagocytic power and can take up bacteria from the blood.

i hyper-

ams, has

e hyper-

es of in-

ssify the

id to be

nflow of

sclerosis,

urgitant chamber

ed from

stimuli, itre the cof the ressively ion and s found al fibres

ting up we may ears the Thus,

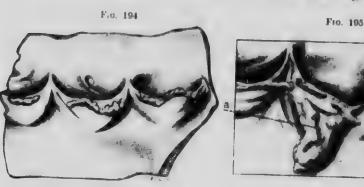
icle, in ophied. om one d, and

sis, the pts to ollowed

ressive t two ension heart, cation

it, a h had anges,

Following Washbourn, we may imagine that at points of narrowin where the blood stream impinges upon the endocardium, this phag cytic action is most likely to occur, and so the auricular aspect of the auriculoventricular valve and the ventricular aspect of the semilum valves are favorable areas to this process. But at the same time the are the regions which, from their constant movement, are the subject of greatest stress, and, as a consequence it may happen that if weakened these cells, instead of destroying the bacteria taken up, permit the intracellular multiplication of the bacteria and themselves become destroyed, the bacteria in their multiplication involving other cell in the immediate neighborhood. With this destruction of the lining cells there is now developed an area at which thrombosis is favored and thus what are known as vegetations become developed. Accord ing to the extent of surface involved, according also to the virulence and properties of the infecting microbe, so do we obtain variation in the extent of these vegetations. 1' we deal with organisms of mild



Verrucose endocarditis of aortic valve.

Aortic endocarditis with vegetation (a).

virulence, with relatively little spread into the surrounding tissue, the vegetations remain small, and there is developed what is known as a verrucose endocarditis. If they spread and involve a relatively large area of the endocardium, then a large base is provided for the thrombotic process, and large, almost cauliflower-like vegetations are produced. If, again, the microbes are strongly proteolytic, the fibrin of the vegetations becomes digested, the vegetations with their contained bacteria soften and break off, and, carried by the blood stream, give origin to infective emboli. With this the necrosed surface layer is exposed, and the bacteria penetrating farther into the valve substance give rise to an ulcerative endocarditis, accompanying which, with thinning of the valve substance, there may be giving way and development of aneurysmal pouches of the valve (Fig. 198), or without such aneurysm there may be perforation or rupture of the affected cusp. We thus find various grades of acute endocarditis and various observers have differed much among themselves as to the classification of these various grades.

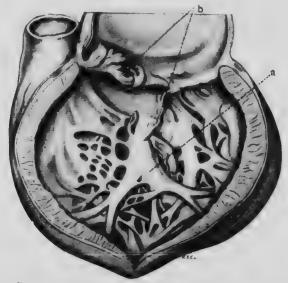
It is usual to make a broad distinction between (1) simple or verucose endocarditis in which the destruction of the valve tissue is superficial

Ftg. 196



Vegetative endocarditis of mitral veive: vegetation on ranicular surface at a. (McGill Path. Mus.)

Fig. 197



Acute metral endocarditis with rupture of chords tendines: a, papillary muscle; b, ruptured chords.

Accorde virulence priation in as of mild

narrowing,

this phago-

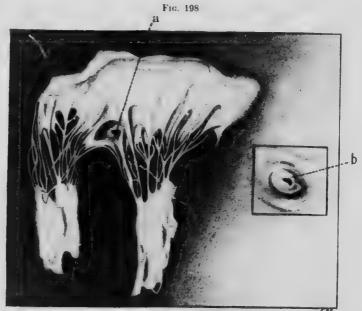
pect of the e semilunar time these he subjects weakened, permit the es become other cells the lining is favored,

tion (a).

ssue, the own as a sely large combotic roduced. It is to seed, and the rise to to feed, and the rise to to

grades.

and inconsiderable and also the fibrin formation over the affected areas is very slight in amount. (2) Vegetative endocarditis, in which the main feature is the extensive formation of thrombotic vegetations, and (3) ulcerative or malignant endocarditis, in which the dominant feature is the extension of the bacteria into the valve substance, with necrosis and ulceration and their sequels. But while making this distinction it must be remembered that an ulcerative endocarditis may also be vegetative, that there may be areas of ulceration, and surrounding these abundant formation of vegetations. Here once again we have to recognize that we deal with a succession of grades of the inflammatory process, and not with distinct forms of inflammation.



Ulcerative endocarditis with aneurysmal pouching and perforation (a) of mitral valve. The same in reverse (b).

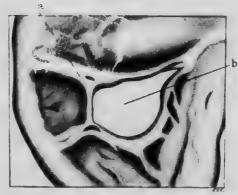
Of the different valves the mitral is most frequently involved in the acute process. Next to this is seen a combination of aortic and mitral, and in third place the aortic alone. The tricuspid is least frequently involved.

Chronic Endocarditis.— What we said regarding the pericardium is true with regard to the endocardium, namely, that we can recognize widely different conditions which familiarly, but often faultily, are included under the heading of "Chronic Inflammation," namely, the organizing healing stage of an acute inflammation, the effects of a recurrent acute inflammation, the effects of granulomatous inflammation, and what is not inflammation at all, the persistent remains or outcome of previous inflammation. The result of an acute inflamma-

tion is in the first place a liability for the affected cusp to become vascularized; secondly, if the process be not fatal, there ensue the various stages of healing, with cell proliferation and cicatrization in the area

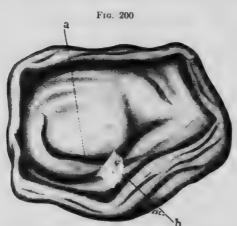
of previous acute inflammation. Thirdly, the vegetations may undergo complete resolution or absorption, or, on the other hand, the organizing process in the underlying valve tissue may extend into them and they may thus become replaced by new connective-tissue formation and may become represented by contracted fibroid nodules projecting from the surface of the cusp.

The condition that we most frequently refer to as chronic endocarditis is, however, one of diffuse thickening, with contraction of the cusps, leading



Mitral incompetence seen from below, to show shortening and thickening of chords tendines and large orifice a, papillary muscle with attached chorde so shortened that the muscle impinges upon the valve; b, patent orifice of valve surrounded by greatly thickened fibr sed cusps.

either to stenosis of the valve, with great narrowing of the orifice, or to incompetence, with incapacity of the cusps to meet and close the orifice, or often a combination of the two conditions. As regards the mitral valve, which is most commonly affected, it must be



Mitral tenosis; button-hole seen from auricular aspect; fusion of cusps, leaving but a small censlit-like opening hidden by fibrous fold (b).



Aortic stenosis seen from above, with

kept in mind that this valve is not composed of two distinct cusps but e a veil of irregular depth hanging down into the ventricular changing. If we study a series of hearts, we find not a little variation

he same

affected

which

tations.

minant

e, with

ig this

carditis

n, and

e once

grades

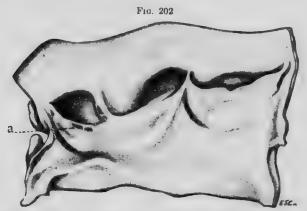
amma-

red in e and least

um is ognize v, are mely, cts of mmains or

mma-

in the conformation of this veil, and, as a result, when this becomes diffusely thickened by new fibrous-tissue formation, in some cases the result is a funnel-shaped narrowing, in others with contraction of the fibrous tissue there develops a slit-like, or button-hole orifice. As regards the semilunar valves we find that the fibrosis affects more particularly the distal portion of each cusp, with contraction, the cusps become much shortened, so that the corpora Arantii, in the act of closure, cannot possibly meet, incompetence and regurgitation being set up. Or, on the other hand, the separate cusps undergo fusion. Where all three become fused marked stenosis is the result (see Fig. 201). It has already been noted that there may be congenital fusion of the cusps, but it must be recognized that such fusion can also occur as the result of inflammation. If the inflammatory agent attack two neighboring valves in the angle of origin, where there is little movement of the cusps, adhesion and subsequent organization



Fusion of aortic cusps. The two cusps at a have become united in consequence of progressive slow inflammation originating at the angle of junction.

may take place, and thus immobility of the cusps, with progressive inflammation involving the angle of apposition, may continue until the neighboring cusps become bound together along the greater part

of the area of apposition.

While it is true that fibrosis of the valves is a resultant of acute inflammation, we are of opinion that in a very large proportion of cases the thickening of the valves is more of the nature of strain effect than the outcome of previous microbic irritation of the valves. Even in cases of mitral stenosis occurring most frequently in young individuals and then following upon, it may be, recurrent attacks of acute endocarditis, presumably set up by the organism or organisms of acute rheumatism, there is in general wanting any intimate relationship between the site of the lesions of the acute disease and this chronic thickening, involving the whole area of the valve. The even and regular manner in which the new connective tissue is laid down leads us to

the belief that through the localized lesion of the acute disease the valve has been rendered relatively weak and less competent and as a consequence is subjected now to a greater strain, that greater strain leading to a diffuse proliferation of the connective-tissue elements. and consequent thickening and contraction, consequent greater obstruction and increased muscular action with heightened blood pressure, with, in short, the establishment vicious circle. In the case of the aortic valve this view gains still greater support, and that because fibrosis of the aortic cusps is more frequent in later life, associated with arteriosclerosis. As we shall proceed to point out (p. 406), the fibrotic changes of the aortic intima, in the majority of cases, bear no relationship to any infective process, for it must be recalled that the aortic cusps are merely infoldings of the cardio-aortic intima. actual or relative strain is the cause of the one, we must presume that it is equally the cause of the other. Rupture of the semilunar cusps occasionally follows such strain with its accompanying rise of arterial blood pressure.

As in arteriosclerosis, so in these cases of valvular fibrosis, we are apt to encounter a series of degenerative changes—fatty degeneration and necrosis with atheroma and calcification.

THE ARTERIES

The arteries may be divided into the two broad groups of those of the elastic type and those of the muscular. The aorta and its main branches belong to the first. In these large vessels receiving the first impulse of the blood wave, and thus liable to sudden expansion, something is evidently needed beyond muscle fibres, both to prevent undue distension and to bring the vessels passively back to the normal when the distending force is removed. We find in the media of these vessels multiple sheaths of elastic tissue alternating with layers of muscle fibres. In the media proper these muscle fibres have a circular arrangement. Immediately within the media, in what is known as the musculoelastic layer of Jores, there is to be found a small zone of fibres having a longitudinal direction. Smaller arteries are of the muscular type, in which the elastica is often reduced to a single prominent layer, forming the boundary between intima and media; there is often to be noted an external elastic layer between the media and adventitia. It is these smaller arteries, with their relatively abundant muscle layer and capacity to undergo relatively great dilatation or contraction that are the great factor in determining the blood pressure. As to the extent to which the contraction and dilatation of the arteries is under the control of the central nervous system, the evidence before us indicates that the same conditions obtain as in connection with the heart namely, we have central influences acting through the vasoconstructors and vasodilators; there exists also a rich system of nerve

ssive

comes

cases

ection

rifice.

ffects

ction.

n the

ation

ision.

t (see

enital

a can

agent

there

ation

ssive until part

ecute on of effect Even ividicute acute aship ronic

gular

is to

cells with processes, forming a plexus in the arterial wall, and, thirdly, the muscle of the media is found to be capable of direct stimulation. The larger arteries may exhibit strong contraction many hours after death and many hours after the vasoconstrictor nerves are no longer irritable. Leonard Hill, more particularly, has called attention to the fact that, under heightened internal pressure, arteries tend, not to expand, but to contract, and this so immediately as to indicate a local and not a reflex reaction. With regard to the nourishment of the arteries the vasa vasorum penetrate only into the outer half of the media, proceed to much nutritive interchange between intima and media. We must conclude that the intima is nourished from the blood stream, at least the outer two-thirds of the media by the vasa vasorum, while the inner third of the media may possibly receive nourishment from both sources.

Abnormalities.—We have already referred to abnormalities of the larger trunks (p. 386). We may here note in addition that a general hypoplasia has been described, with small size of the aorta and main trunks. Some would regard this as truly congenital, and as a condition predisposing to chlorosis, general malnutrition, tuberculosis, etc. Others regard it as secondary to impoverished state of the blood, with

weak heart action.

Inflammation.—The arteries may be involved in the inflammatory affections of tissues, their walls often being eroded. That severe hemorrhage does not happen more frequently than it does is due to the fact that the inflammation causes a thrombosis. Inflammatory states primary in the arterial wall, especially those due to syphilis, will be discussed in connection with arteriosclerosis, by which means that important process, belonging largely to the regressive changes, will be discussed without being divided. Burger, of New York, has of late called attention to the frequency of an obliterative arteritis (thromboangitis obliterans) among Polish and Russian Jews, leading to presenile gangrene of the limbs. Beginning as a migratory localised inflammation with thrombosis of certain veins, eventually both arteries and veins of a limb become extensively thrombosed. The smallest arteries are free, and there is accompanying periarteritis. The cause is unknown.

Regressive Changes.—The observations of Aschoff, Klotz, and Foster show that the thickness of the larger arteries undergoes progressive increase until about the age of thirty-five, then remains stationary until about fifty years of age, after which, in the majority of individuals, a reduction is to be noted. It is the media that in the main shows these changes, and here, after fifty, both the muscle fibres are apt to show beginning atrophic disturbances, leading to shrinkage and disappearance of some elements, and also the elastic sheaths show greater irregularity in contour and with the disappearance of intervening muscle fibres, are apt to run together, forming coarser strands. But beyond this simple atrophy, in elderly people we frequently

encounter indications of both fatty and calcareous degeneration of the muscle, often associated with a failure on the part of individual elastic bands to take the elastic tissue stain, which may be mistaken for rupture of the fibres. All these appearances indicate that with advancing age the wall of arteries of the elastic type becomes weaker. In the arterioles and smaller arteries hyaline degeneration is not infrequent. Both in the media and in the adventitia there is to be noted a deposit or infiltration of a homogeneous hyaline material. Somewhat similar to this, involving not the ordinary connective tissues but the elastic tissues, is the elastoid degeneration of the uterine, ovarian, splenic, and other arteries already described (p. 309). Amyloid infiltration has a predilection for the muscular coats of smaller arteries as well as the outer surface of the capillaries.

Fig. 203

hirdly,

lation.

s after

longer

to the

not to

a local

erteries

ia, er

dr 🤫

e must am, at

, while

t from

of the general d main condisis, etc. d, with

matory
hemorhe fact
states
will be
ns that
will be

of late

rombo-

resenile

amma-

d veins

ries are

nown.

z, and

es pro-

ns sta-

rity of

in the

e fibres

rinkage

is show

f inter-

trands.

quently



Fatty streaks of norta, (McGill Pathological Museum.)



Nodose arteriosclerosis. Showing fibroid overgrowths of intima around the orifices of the intercostal arteries. (McGill Pathological Museum.)

Arteriosclerosis.—This condition, or as recent German authorities term it "atherosclerosis" or "atherosis," is the most common cause of death, direct or indirect, in those who attain to middle life or, we may say, after thirty years of age. "A man is as old as his arteries," and it is incapacity on the part of the diseased arteries to respond to the needs of one or other organ that leads to malnutrition and atrophy of those organs, even where graver and more immediate disturbances are not produced by distension of the diseased artery (aneurysm), or in rupture of the same (hemorrhage and apoplexy). It is thus all important to have some general ideas regarding the nature of arteriosclerosis and the conditions leading thereto.

A form of degeneration, frequently observable in those dying from acute discuse is the presence of "fatty streaks" of the aortic intima, white discuss is the presence of "fatty streaks" of the aortic intima, white discussion discussions are discussed in the dorsal half of the aorta. Examination here shows fatty changes which may extend up to the intima, but very frequently involve the cells of the

musculo-elastic layer. Apparently this represents only a transitory change, and would be recovered from had the individual himself recovered, and that because we are unable to find any chronic developments taking the place of these streaks; Klotz notes occasional intimal thickening over the fatty areas; nevertheless the disposition of these streaks is obviously different from that of the nodes in ordinary arteriosclerosis.

Arteriosclerosis is not in itself a degeneration, even though it may give place to degeneration; it is to be regarded as an adaptive process following upon degenerative changes occurring in the arterial wall.

Forms of Arteriosclerosis.—It may manifest itself in more than one form: (1) the simplest and commonest type is what is known as nodose arteriosclerosis. The earliest stage of this, seen in the aorta, presents itself in the form of whitish, flattened, nodular thickenings. It is peculiarly apt to be situated around the orifices of the aortic branches and notably around those of the intercostal arteries (see Fig. 204).

Section of one of these flattened nodes shows that we deal with a pronounced thickening of the intima, in the form of successive layers of new connective tissue. Where the condition is more extensive, similar nodes are irregularly scattered along the course of the aorta and thickenings of like nature, though relatively of larger size, covering, that is, a larger proportion of the arterial circumference are to be encountered in the various main branches, there, by their very size, leading to some narrowing of the lumen. In the earlier stages, as above indicated, we deal with a simple overgrowth or hyperplasia of the intimal connective tissue. The most abundant nuclei, and the best staining, are present in the layers immediately underneath the endothelium. This indicates that these are the layers of most recent development. As a matter of fact, associated with this development of superficial layers, the deeper layers show evidences of malnutrition, so that very frequently we find either the deeper cells swollen and poorly staining, or that they exhibit fatty degeneration, with granular breaking down and necrosis, and often with some imbibition of fluid, so that the part is distinctly softened and somewhat cedematous, or again this deeper intimal tissue breaks down into a porridgy mass of necrotic material, and if the superficial layer be broken and the soft material be examined under the microscope, it is found to afford abundant characteristic crystals of cholesterin, together with fat droplets and lipoid globules, which are doubly refractive. Or, lastly, such atheromatous areas become the site of calcareous infiltration and deposit, and this to such an extent that there may be formed in the thickened intima a solid calcified plate. The presence of such a rigid plate in an organ liable to some dilatation results at times in the rupture of the overlying layer of intimal tissue, and the formation, thus, of what is known as an atheromatous ulcer. It is interesting to note that there may be somewhat frequent erosions and ulcerations of this

nature, with little or no thrombosis formation; occasionally, however, a well-marked parietal thrombus forms upon one of these atheromatous ulcers (see Fig. 206).

itory

ecov-

ients

timal these terio-

may ocess wall. one n as orta, ings. ortic (see

with yers sive, orta overe to

very

ages,

the the cent nent tion, and tular luid, a, or nass soft oun-olets

such and

the

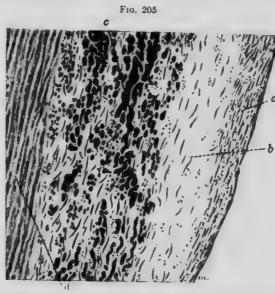
igid

rup-

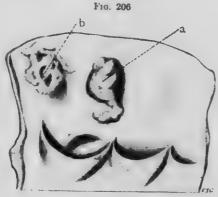
hus,

iote

this



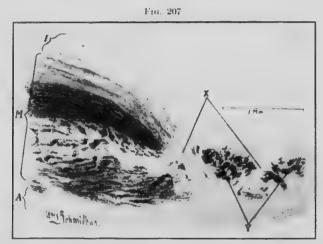
Section through a fibroid plaque of aortic intima from case of nodose arteriosclerosis: a, outer proliferating layer of intima; b, deeper hyaline layer; c, still deeper layers showing deposit of calcarcous salts (stained black) and extending into d, the inner layers of the media.



1 · · I thrombus (a) and atheromatous ulcer (b) of ascending acrts. (McGill Path. Mus.)

The above is the commonest type. The studies of the last few years have led to the recognition of another form, namely, (2) the syphilitic. Whereas the former is found along the whole length of the aorta, and is of a most marked in the abdominal section, this second form involves have commonly the ascending aorta and transverse aorta. Here we then ter patches that are of a somewhat translucent appearance,

that bear no special relationship to emergent vessels, that often have their long axis transverse, and very often have a puckered appearance. Sclerotic changes of this nature are secondary to syphilitic mesaortitis. It is now abundantly recognized that syphilis finds what might be described as a "point of election" in the vasa vasorum of more particularly the first part of the aorta. There occurs a small-celled infiltration around the branches of these small arteries in the adventitia and media, and this is followed by what might almost be described as a "melting away" of the media in the affected areas (see Fig. 205). One of two results may follow, either (and this when the process apparently is not very acute or very extensive) the weakening of the media is followed by an overgrowth of the connective-tissue elements of both intima and adventitia, or (where the process is more extensive and more acute) in place of such compensatory overgrowth the arterial wall gives way, with resultant aneurysm formation.



Section from norta of syphilitic measuritis to show extreme degeneration of media and absorption of elastic tissue: I, thickened intima: M, media, the darkest parts being the elastic tissue. At X, this has disappeared; $\mathfrak{A} t Y$, round-celled infiltration

(3) Mönckeberg's Sclerosis.—Here we deal with a process in which the most marked feature, seen in arteries of large size such as the common iliacs, is an extensive degeneration of the media with atrophy of its muscular elements and frequent calcareous deposits in the atrophied muscle cells and, it may be, in the elastic tissue layers. A similar process occurring in the aorta leads to a diffuse dilatation, with elongation and appearance of accessory curves. In the larger branches above noted the degeneration occurs in transverse patches, so that at autopsy there are to be seen a succession of ring-like or transverse depressions which are very characteristic (see Fig. 208). The important point regarding this form is that a similar calcareous infiltration of the media is apt to involve the smaller arteries; if a series of the well-known "pipe-stem radials" be examined, it is found that their hardness or

themselves

sclerosis is not due to intimal fibrosis but to this condition of medial calcification preceded often by hypertrophy of the muscular coat. In

Fig. 208

na ve

earlitic

vhat

n of

aall-

the

t be

(see

the

ken-

ssue

me

wth

nortq

At X.

nich

the phy

tro-

ilar

ga-

970

psv

ons

int

dia

WII

Of

Monckeberg s arteriosclerosis affecting the external iliac arteries

Fig. 209



Fig. 210

the larger arteries it is more

common to find a combination

of nodose sclerosis and this

the above changes, including the

syphilitic, are found to involve

also the arterioles and arteries of

smaller size. The syphilitic

particularly in association with

manifest

(4) Endarteritis Obliterans.—All

medial degeneration.

changes



with a of arteriole of myocardium showing the ergrowth of endarteritis obliterans. enlargement of the arteriole seen in 112 1



Longitudinal section through a branch of the renal artery, showing the relationship between weakening and atrophy of the media and adaptive overgrowth of the intima a, normal or, more accurately, hypertrophicu media; b, b, areas of the thickened sclerosed intima over regions of medial thinning and degeneration; at c, the media is disorganized.

the cerebral arterioles. Here in the earlier stages there is a wellmarked, perivascular, small-celled infiltration, accompanied by an overgrowth of the intima, which may be so extreme as to lead to obliteration of the lumen.

The sociose and Mönckeberg sclerosis present a succession of stages. In the smaller arteries either there is a diffuse hypertrophy of the muse, for coat, frequently to be made out in the branches of the renal very, or apparently following upon this hypertrophy, there is here and there exhaustion and degeneration of the muscle; there is some prosis and, in addition, where the muscle has given way, an overgrowth or selerosis of the intima, or with diffuse dilatation of these smaller arteries there is diffuse, rather than nodular, intimal thickening; the adventitia of the smaller arteries frequently partakes in these changes, becoming generally thickened (chronic periarteritis).

A very remarkable form of sclerosis is seen in the uterine arteries and in the branches of the ovarian arteries of multiparæ, clearly in relationship to menstruation. We have already described this, showing how large masses of elastoid material become formed, together with the regeneration of a new artery within the old one (p. 309). Here again we deal with no infective process, but with a functional stimulus, leading to active new growth of intimal, medial, and adventi-

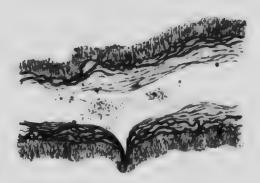
tial elements. The process is clearly adaptive.

The observations of Klotz and others show that experimentally, after the intravenous inoculation of certain bacteria or their toxins, there may be developed localized areas of intimal proliferation. More than one observer has called attention to the supervention of arteriosclerotic changes in young adults following upon typhoid fever. Were the organisms of the exanthems and of the commoner infectious diseases the cause of arteriosclerosis, we would expect to find this condition common at or following the period during which these infections are most rife, namely, in childhood and youth. On the contrary, arteriosclerosis is commonest in and after middle age, at a period, that is, when the individual shows a striking relative immunity to infectious diseases.

Etiology. -- We thus support view that arteriosclerosis as such is not in general of infective origin and, indeed, is not an inflammatory process. We hold that it is the expression of a disordered relationship between the internal pressure to which the artery is subjected and the strength of the arterial wall, that strength depending, in the main, upon the condition of the media. The same results ensue when there is increased internal pressure, the wall being of normal strength, and when there is only normal internal pressure, with weakening of the media. Whether this weakening be due to inflammatory infiltration, as in syphilis, or to degeneration, as in old age, is a secondary matter. The tendency will be in any of these conditions for the wall to give way at the point of least strength; if it give way suddenly an aneurysm is formed, and, what is more, the intima is overstretched and overstrained and shows little tendency to take on excessive growth. If the strain, on the other hand, be not excessive, it is followed by active proliferation of the intimal connective tissue and this proliferation continues with the laying down of layer upon layer until the new development is so thick and firm that it is no longer subjected to strain. With this the sclerosing process becomes arrested.

In favor of this conception two series of experiments may be quoted: (1) that of Klotz, in which holding up a healthy buck for a few minutes daily by the hind legs, over a period of four months, the increased pressure brought to bear upon the thoracic and cervical region led to marked hypertrophy of the heart, diffuse dilatation of the thoracic aorta and nodose arteriosclerosis of the carotids, and (2) Carrell's experiment, repeatedly confirmed, of ligaturing a length of a vein in

PLATE XI



Attentosclerosis

The first order of the terms afters cut ranging that six, and straight to the first specific pass at the constraint mass before the training temperature of the cut of aspectic pass at the first of aspectic pass at the first of aspectic pass and the cut of aspectic pass and the cut of the state of the cut of

all an ied

ien

th, of raary

mal kes tis). ries owcher 09). onal nti-

iter

the ases ion are rionen ses. i is ory onted the

th. red roatil

ted

tes sed led cic

in



the course of the carotid artery of the rabbit or cat, of replacing, that is, a portion of the artery by a like length of a vein. Performed properly the operation leads to no thrombosis or arrest of blood current, and if the animal be killed some months later, the vein is found somewhat dilated, but showing a most marked thickening, with laying down of fibrous tissue in all the coats, though most markedly in the adventitia. This fibrosis can only be regarded as functional or reactive, as a response to the increased strain thrown upon the vein.

Thus, to conclude, we recognize (1) a true inflammatory endarteritis, due to bacteria and their toxins, mainly involving the arterioles, occasionally, and to a slight extent, affecting the aorta; (2) an inflammatory periarteritis and mesaortitis, of which syphilis affords a most striking example; (3) an intimal selerosis, non-inflammatory in nature, secondary to actual or relative weakening of the middle coat (and there may be an adventitial sclerosis of the same nature); (4) a medial sclerosis (Mönckeberg's sclerosis) of degenerative nature, the hardening being due to the deposit of calcareous salts in the middle coat; (5) a functional sclerosis, as seen in the arteries of the uterus and ovary in which the regeneration and new formation of the arterial coats with the distended lumen of the older artery is accompanied by a hydron, or more accurately, elastoid deposit outside the newly formed arrery, but derived from the internal elastic lamina of the original artery.

Aneurysm. - An aneurysm is an abnormal and circumscribed dilatation of the lumen of an artery. From old time we distinguish between the true aneurysm, in which there is persistence of one or more of the coats of the artery to form the boundary of the dilatation, and the false aneurysm, in which the wall of the artery in the dilatation has become absorbed and the surrounding tissues form a secondary wall enclosing the blood. Following Osler, we may still further classify the forms as follows:

I. True Aneurysm.

(a) Dilatation aneurysm: (1) fusiform, limited to an area of one of the larger vessels; (2) cirsoid, involving an artery of the second order with its branches, the whole series thus becoming greatly distended and tortuous.

(b) Saccular aneurysm: this is the commonest form, in which there is a localized and lateral giving way of the aorta or

of a smaller artery.

(c) Dissecting aneurysm: here with rupture of the inner coat the blood makes a passage, dissecting between the layers of the degenerated middle coat, and either makes its way eventually into the pericardial sac or to the exterior of the aorta (leading thus to sudden death from hemorrhage), or back again into the artery at, it may be, some considerable distance from the original site. In this case the new channel gains an endothelium, and the condition may persist for years, the individual possessing apparently a double aorta, and even double iliacs, etc.

II. False Aneurysm as above described; strictly the condition here is one of hematoma.

III. Arteriovenous Aneurysm occurs, in which, from traumatic or other causes, there is established a communication between an artery and a vein, either direct (aneurysmal varix), a condition in which there is marked dilatation and tortuosity of the vein and its branches receiving the arterial blood, or indirect, a sac originally of the nature of a false aneurysm intervening between the artery and the vein (varicose aneurysm).

IV. Other Forms.—There are other forms (rare), such as the parasitic aneurysm seen in horses (in which strongyloid worms, present in the blood stream become arrested in one of the smaller abdominal arteries and, growing and setting up irritation in the arterial wall, come thus to fill a sac which is in direct communication with the blood stream); traction aneurysms, erosion aneurysms, etc.

As stated in the above table, the commonest form that we have to deal with is the saccular aneurysm; next to this the fusiform aneurysm of the aorta. By far the commonest site of these dilatations is the aorta, and in this the ascending and transverse portions. Aneurysms of the abdominal aorta occur, but are not so frequent; of the main branches of the aorta the popliteal arteries deserve special notice, although the splenic, renal, and other abdominal arteries are occasionally involved. Another site, of no small importance, is the circle of Willis and its branches, while careful examination of the senne brain, particularly in those who have been syphilitic, reveals the not infrequent presence of multiple miliary aneurysms upon the cerebral arterioles. Similar aneurysms sometimes follow infective embolism Both in chronic syphilis and in its in cases of acute endocarditis. more acute condition the infective process leads to a weakening of the walls of the smaller vessels, with consequent giving way under the blood pressure. A rarer form, the so-called mycotic aneurysm, is occasionally met with in the aorta; here, apparently, bacteria gaining entrance into the vasa vasorum lead to localized abscess formation in the aortic wall with rupture into the lumen. These, however, are comparatively rare.

The commonest cause of aneurysm formation is syphilis, and the explanation of the peculiar frequency of the condition in the first portion of the aorta is not merely, as used to be taught, because here the wall is subjected to the greatest internal pressure (though this, of course, is a factor), but because syphilitic mesaortitis specially affects this region. The small-celled infiltration around the branches of the vasa vasorum is followed by an extraordinary destruction of the media, the main support of the artery, and it is this localized destruction of the media that is the main cause of aneurysm formation. Extreme degeneration of the media, from non-inflammatory causes, may have the same result, as may arterial trauma or erosion of the outer coats through progressive inflammation in their neighborhood. Thus, where

there is cavitation in the lungs with progressive destruction of tissue, it is not uncommon to find saccular aneurysms of branches of the pulmonary artery projecting into the cavities; but senile, or presentle degeneration, trauma or erosion do not compare in frequency with syphilis, as causative agents.

here is

r other

and a here is

receiv-

i**r**e of a

varicose

parasitic

in the

arteries

ne thus t**r**eam);

nave to

eurysm

is the

urysms

e main

notice,

ca ion-

ircle of brain.

ne not

erebral

ıbolism

in its

ning of

under

vsm, is

gaining

mation

er, are

nd the

portion

he wall

course,

ts this ie vasa

media, tion of xtreme

y have

, whe**re**

Results of Aneurysm. - The aneurysm being due primarily to a weakening in the wall, the greater the dilatation, the weaker becomes that wall; there is thus a tendency toward progressive enlargement. If the growth be not too rapid and the enlargement is surrounded by soft, accommodating tissues, there may be a reactionary development of an adventitial capsule arresting further growth. If, on the contrary, the sac impinges upon rigid structures, by compression of the nutrient vessels of those structures, instead of the formation of such capsule, there is a process of necrosis and absorption; the aneurysmal wall becomes so thinned as to undergo rupture, either with extensive hemorrhage and sudden death or with the formation of a localized hematoma and false aneurysm. Thus, for example, a saccular aneurysm of the ascending arch may completely perforate the sternum, and then form a false aneurysm, pulsating and forming a protrusion in front of the chest, with eventual atrophy of the skin that covers it, and final external rupture. Even in a true aneurysm, sudden increase of pressure, as by exertion, may lead to rupture at some point where the external capsule is thinnest, with resultant sudden death.

On the other hand, where the circulatory conditions are favorable, where, for example, the aneurysm is so situated that the contained blood is relatively stagnant, a process of obliteration may show itself by the laying down of layer after layer of fibrin until the cavity becomes filled up. This complete obliteration of an aneurysmal cavity is, however, rare. Numerous attempts have been made clinically to incitate or induce this natural process, as by temporary occlusion of the artery above an aneurysm, by the administration of drugs lowering the blood pressure and force of the heart beat, and by the introduction of wire, etc., into the aneurysmal cavity, so as to incite coagulation.

Progressive Changes.—In cases of high blood pressure it is not incommon to find a marked hypertrophy of the middle coats of arteries. To this, in recent years, Russell has specially called attention. If the inch pressure be long continued this is apt to lead to degeneration of the Mönckeberg type. Tumors primary in the arteries are distinctly. Some observers have held that uterine myomas originate, not the uterine, but from the arterial musculature. This is still undefined, and is generally doubted.

CAPILLARIES AND VEINS

Capillaries.—The disturbances of the capillaries have not been studied by as they deserve. Regressive changes are common and, notably

under the agency of bacterial toxins, passive congestion, protein poisons, various mineral and other drugs, the endothelium is apt to manifest a condition of fatty degeneration, which in its turn favors capillary hemorrhages. Hyaline degeneration or infiltration is not uncommon. In our chapter on Inflammation we have called attention to the profound changes that may affect this endothelium as the result of local irritation.

Congenital dilatation of the capillaries (capillary telangiectasis) is seen in certain nævi, and similar 'ilatation may be acquired as a result

of active or passive congestion.

The tumors that may originate from the capillaries, hemangiomas

and hemangio-endotheliomas have been discussed on p. 277.

Veins.—Regarding the veins the following may be noted: as with the capillaries there may be congenital or acquired dilatation. Such dilatation may be diffuse but more often is sacculated (varicosity), with a marked liability to the formation of numerous anastomosing vessels, which become dilated and tortuous. The acquired phlebectasis is most often the result of passive congestion, associated with malnutrition, and is apt to show itself (1) in connection with vessels, which, being superficial, lack the support and resistance of surrounding tissues (e. g., hemorrhoids, veins of the lower end of the œsophagus in portal cirrhosis), and (2) in the lower part of the body, where the weight of the column of blood, in addition to the poorer circulation, favors the dilatation of the vessels (e. g., varicose veins of leg, pelvic veins, veins of the pampiniform plexus). Such varicosity may be accompanied by reactive thickening of the walls (phlebosclerosis), or, more often, by thinning of the same and resultant hemorrhage; the condition of malnutrition favors the onset of inflammation (phlebitis), and of thrombosis.

Calcification may occur in the venous wall, but it is rare.

Of inflammations, there may be acute suppurative phlebitis; this is usually secondary to a localized suppurative, gangrenous inflammation, as appendicitis, where with infective thrombosis extending along the veins from the suppurative focus, there may be a progressive ascending thrombosis (thrombophlebitis), with associated inflammation of the vein walls. Even in young adults careful examination shows that a thickening of the walls of the veins of the extremities, sufficient to render these veins easily palpable, is not uncommon (phlebosclerosis), and this without any sign of inflammatory or toxic disturbance. We must presume that, as in the case of the arteries, so here, there may be a strain fibrosis.

THE LYMPHATIC VESSELS

Of abnormalities the most striking is the condition of congenital dilatation of the lymphatics and localized areas, apparently due to some congenital obstruction to the outflow of lymph. Well-marked

examples of these conditions are macroglossia, macrocheilia, hygroma colli, and "cavernous" lymphangiomas of the superficial lymphatics. Such lymphangiectasis may also be acquired as the result of obstruction to the exit of lymph from a region. This may be brought about by the pressure of tumors upon the efferent lymphatics, or by chronic inflammation, involving and compressing the same, or, thirdly by obstruction of the lymphatics, as a result of cancerous growth in them. The most marked and extensive state of acquired lymphangiectasis with its resultants is seen in the condition of elephantiasis, very common in the West Indies, and most often the outcome of filariasis. The adult filarial worms make their way into the lymphatics, particularly of the groin, set up there a chronic inflammation with obstruction of the main lymphatic channels. As a result there may be a huge enlargement of the scrotum or lower extremity, in which, in addition to dilatation of the lymph channels, there is an accompanying diffuse fibrosis of the connective tissue, or, again, of the nerve sheaths, and a cutaneous hypertrophy (pachydermia). As a result of obstruction, there may also be rupture of the lymphatics, which, when the pelvis of the kidney is involved leads to chyluria, when the mese teric lymphatics are involved causes chylous ascites, and when the superficial cutaneous lymphatics undergo rupture brings about the condition of lymphorrhagia.

We have already discussed the tumors of the lymphatics, namely, the false tumors (lymphangiomas), p. 280, and the true tumors (lymphangiomas) endotheliomas), together with the rarer true lymphangiomas. In this connection we may recall that both carcinomas, and, to a less extent, sarcomas, are apt to extend along the lymphatics, and, doing this, may

completely obliterate them.

THE BLOOD-FORMING ORGANS

THE LYMPH NODES

These as gregations of lymph tissue are found inroughout the body, not only in the large groups anatomically described as cervical, exillary, inquinal, or other nodes, not only as the tonsils, and mixed with various solivary true glands in the region of the mouth, but also as unexpected and variable aggregations on the course of lymph channels and around the ceins in any part of the body. The amount of this tissue varies in the rent ages, and some structures rich in it in youth, as the appendix to a iformis, lose it to a great extent in old age. Its protective function is a timportant one.

Abnormalities.—A condition still not understood is the so-called states lymphaticus of infancy and childhood. In this, accompanying a mally a proper development of the other tissues, there is found

of nolombosis. tis; this inflamtending progresinflamnination

remities,

common

or toxic

arteries,

ein poito mani-

eapillary

ommon.

the pro-

of local

tasis) is

a result

ngiomas

as with

. Such

y), with

vessels,

is most

ion, and

g super-

s (e. g.,

rtal cir-

it of the

zors the

s, veins

nied by

ften, by

ngenital due to marked a general hyperplasia of the lymph tissues throughout the body and very frequently a pronounced enlargement of the thymus. The causation of this state is most obscure, and some hold it to be congenital.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Active hyperemia of nodes occurs in the early stages of infections, and is not so much a step in disease as a preparation for function; the presence of toxins causes a congestion of the lymph node which results in a proliferation of the lymph cells and an increase in their number which is defensive against the near-by infection. **Edema** of lymph nodes is seen in the case of nodes that are inflamed. Thrombosis and embolism are of no importance, because the node has a perfect collateral circulation made not only of vessels, but of lymph sinuses, so that its nutrition can scarcely be interrupted by anything short of a complete cessation of circulation to the part or member concerned. There is one means whereby the circulation through the node can be interrupted, viz., by excessive accumulation of leukocytes and lymphocytes in the sinuses and the proliferation of endothelial cells. This is a factor in producing the central necrosis seen in the bubo and in necrosis of mesenteric and submucous nodes in typhoid fever.

Varices are dilatations and tortuosities brought about in the sinuses of lymph nodes, with the final formation of cysts, due to blocking of the efferent channels.

Inflammation.—Lymphadenitis.—If bacteria be introduced into a limb or into a serous cavity they are found in the adjacent lymph nodes within a few minutes. At first they may pass readily through these and be found in the blood; rapidly, however, the node is found to become impervious, to become swollen and congested, to have its sinuses filled with leukocytes, and soon there occurs active proliferation of the lymphocytes of its tissue. Later the endothelial cells lining its sinuses become greatly swollen and enlarged. All these are conditions found in simple lymphadenitis, but where the pyogenic microbes have gained entrance in great numbers, the further phase of suppurative lymphadenitis is apt to supervene, the nodes becoming still further swollen, soft, and pinkish on section, yielding on scraping a thin, purulent fluid. Central necrosis may occur with the formation of thick pus. These acutely enlarged nodes are known as buboes. Frequently the inflammation affects also the immediately surrounding tissue, which becomes congested and cedematous (perilymphadenitis or cellulitis).

Chronic lymphadenitis is represented by the enlarged fibrous nodes which are kept in a constant mild state of inflammation by some irritant of moderate virulence, such as is seen in the submaxillary nodes when the teeth are badly preserved; equally well-known examples are seen in tuberculosis and syphilis, as again in the anthracotic nodes at the root of the lung in coal miners, etc. The affected nodes are enlarged, firm, and, according to the nature of the offending material, more or less pigmented. In the earlier stages there is simple cellular hyperplasia, but eventually the capsule and the stroma undergo fibroid thickening

dy and

causa-

genital.

in the

se as a

gestion

oh cells

rear-by

es that

pecause

vessels.

rrupted

he part

ulation

ulation

ition of

recrosis

s nodes

sinuses

king of

into a

n nodes

h these

und to

ave its

olifera-

s lining

-condi-

icrobes

urative

further

a thin,

f thick

ruently.

, which

nodes

rritant

s when

re seen

ie root

l, firm,

or less

plasia,

kening

itis).

which may be so extreme as to cause atrophy of the lymphoid elements proper, the node becoming represented by a dense encapsuled mass of fibrous tissue. In addition to this in tuberculosis, the nodes may be the seat of tubercle formation, with agglomeration and caseation.

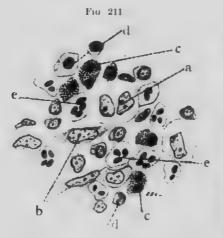
Regressive Changes.—Atrophy.—Physiological atrophy of lymph tissue appears to be progressive through life, the lymph nodes being at their maximum in early childhood and diminishing progressively, until in old age the ence of lymph tissue is most marked.

Degenerations and Infiltrations. Hyaline thickening of the capillary walls and of the stroma is not uncommon in connection with chronic inflammation, especially in tuberculosis. Amyloid affection of the capillary walls is met in general amyloidosis, and more particularly in local amyloidosis such as may be found in the head region. The disease may also affect the fibrous interstitial tissue. Calcification is not uncommon in connection with old caseous tuberculosis, while pigmental deposits, whether of dust particles or of modified hemoglobin. are very frequent, the former in the bronchial nodes, the latter not infrequently in the deeper mesenteric and retroperitoneal nodes in cases of chronic intestinal disturbances or where hemoperitoneum has occurred. Tattooing leads to the presence in the nearest lymph nodes of the pigment or pigments employed. Necrosis is met most frequently in the mesenteric nodes at the ileocecal angle in cases of typhoid fever, but may be encountered in various cases of acute infection, bacteriemia, diphtheria, and bubonic plague.

Progressive Changes.—Hyperplasia.—Hyperplasia, as already indicated, is a not uncommon condition wherever a group of lymph nodes is subjected to a mild grade of irritation; it is peculiarly difficult to draw the line between this functional hyperplasia and inflammation, if, indeed, it exists. The particular function of these nodes is to respond to irritants by increased activity which shows itself in lymphocytic proliferation. A compensatory hyperplasia has been noted by several investigators as following excision of the spleen.

Hodgkin's Disease. In this usually there is first noted a progressive enlargement of the cervical nodes which may become extreme, forming huge conglomerate masses; progressively the other lymph nodes of the body exhibit enlargement, group after group. Macroso rically, the condition differs from tumor formation in that, in early errors, there is a multiplication of different orders of cells, some of them harm granular and eosinophilic, while accompanying this proliferation there is a coincident fibrous hyperplasia suggesting strongly that we with a chronic inflammatory process. Indeed, there is one type aberculous hyperplasia of the lymph acdes which histologically 01 Γt des closely the picture seen in Hodgkin's disease proper. Much thers have demonstrated the existence in a certain number of 311 : Hodgkin's disease of a number of curious fine granules taking 0 reteristic stain and have suggested that these are derived from tu bacilli; the granules, however, are not acid-fast nor does inoculation of material from Hodgkin's disease into the highly susceptible guinea-pig lead to tuberculosis. Thus the causation of the disease remains still wholly obscure. Occasionally, glandular enlargements of the Hodgkin's-disease type exhibit true sarcomatous terminal changes.

Lymphatic Leukemia.—As pointed out elsewhere (p. 240) we are inclined to regard this as primarily a blastomatoid condition, a diffuse and undue excessive growth of lymphoid tissue throughout the body which eventually leads to the passage of an excessive number of lymphocytes into the blood stream.



Section from a lymph node in Hodgkin's disease, showing the different order of cells: a, degenerating leukocyte; b, fibroblast; e, eosinophile; d, lymphocytes, large and small; e, polynuclears.

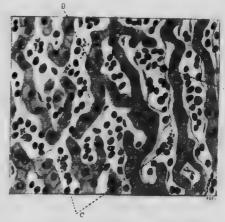


Fig. 212

Section of liver from case of leukemia, showing the abundant leukocytes of lymphatic or lymphoblastic type filling the sinusoids or capillaries: a, liver cells somewhat atrophied; b, sinusoid or capillary filled with lymphocytes; c, pigment in endothelial cells.

Tumors.—Such a blastomatoid condition may at times give place to malignancy with infiltrative growth of the lymphosarcomatous tissue through the capsule into the surrounding tissues (lymphosarcomatosis), or more rarely in an individual lymph node there may be a primary and local malignant development (lymphosarcoma proper). But apart from these true lymphosarcomas, either small round-celled or still more aberrant, large round-celled, or spindle-celled sarcomatous growths may originate from the interstitial tissue of the nodes, or again from the endothelium of the lymph and blood vessels (lymphangiosarcoma, hemangiosarcoma, and endothelioma). In addition to these primary tumors of the lymph nodes, it must be emphasized that lymphoid tissue is one of the seats of election for secondary malignant growths, and notably for carcinomatous metastases.

Hemolymph Nodes.—Attention was first called by Heneage Gibbs, in 1884, to the existence of small nodes, more particularly in the abdominal

tible

Seaso

its of

nges.

are

ffuse

body

er of

owing

es: a.

id or

nt in

lace

ous

rcoe a

er). lled

nales,

ph-

to

zed

try

in

nal

area resembling in size and distribution the ordinary lymph nodes, but dark in color and differing in that blood replaces lymph in the sinuses. These have since been studied by Swale Vincent, Warthin, and others; they vary considerably in number in different animals of the same species (including man), and Warthin and Meek have explained this by demonstrating that the hemolymph node is capable of conversion into the ordinary lymph node. Their number is increased in conditions calling for increased destruction of red corpuscles, as after splenectomy.

THE SPLEEN

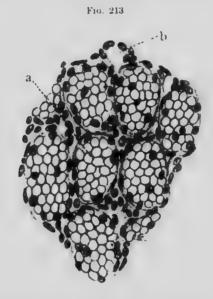
The functions of the spleen are somewhat obscure, but it may be said that it is a "killing ground" for red corpuscles, that it is in fœtal life and for a short time subsequently a place of manufacture for the same, and that in case of necessity this function may be reassumed. It is very vascular, and its arteries open somewhat freely into its sinuses, at areas, the Malpighian corpuscles, where the active proliferation of lymphocytes is favored by this abundant supply of fresh arterial blood. The spleen pulp consists of sinuses lined by endothelium, in which can be seen disintegrating red corpuscles. The splenic veins form part of the portal system, and apparently the amount of relatively arterial blood that can be temporarily contained in the organ is very large. Its capsule is provided with plain muscular tissue, and, as shown by Roy, the organ exhibits a slow periodic contraction and expansion whereby the contents of the sinuses are driven out and renewed.

The spleen resembles the lymph nodes not only in its structure and its function, in short, is physiologically part of the same system, but like the nodes, it has few diseases of its own. Like the nodes, it suffers in general infections, and appears to be to a great extent protective.

Abnormalities.—The spleen is rarely absent, but may be very variable in shape and size, and accessory spleens are very common. They are usually of small size, and are to be distinguished from hemolymph nodes; they lie oftenest, but not necessarily, near the main organ. The position of the spleen depends largely upon the firmness of attachment of its hilus; in splanchnoptosis the mobility of the spleen may be great and it has been seen in almost every possible position in the peritoneal cavity; if increase of its size and weight occurs in combination with laxity of attachment, it tends toward or into the pelvis.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Anemia of the spleen occurs as part of a ceneral anemia, and by pressure, and is characterized by a color paler than usual. In atrophic states, to be spoken of later, this color is almost constantly observed. Active hyperemia occurs in cases of infection and of intoxication, and is scarcely to be distinguished from the sweden state which will be described in inflammation, of which, indeed, it as the early stage. Passive congestion arises in all obstructions to free contact circulation such as happen in cardiac or hepatic disease,

and is characterized by enlargement of the organ, with increased darkness of color; microscopically, the sinuses are enlarged and engorged with blood, there is increased deposit of blood pigment and the connective tissue of the trabeculæ tends to be increased; when the condition of stasis lasts for a long time, the fibrosis is fairly well marked, and the cut surface of the organ is perfectly smooth, glistening, dark red or bluish red, and the organ is dense and firm— cyanotic induration.



Section from an enlarged congested spleen of chronic obstructive heart disease, showing the sinuses greatly distended: a, dilated splenic sinus filled with red corpuscles; b, splenic corpuscles

Embolism, with the formation of infarct, is frequent in the spleen, by reason of the large amount of blood that reaches it, although it is an organ of relatively small size; the embolus is derived usually from the heart valves, and the resultant infarct is often wedge-shaped, with the base outward, of yellowish-white or white color, showing upon the surface of the uncut spleen a raised area (Fig. 214); single or multiple, large fractions of the total splenic bulk may be occupied by infarcts. The infarcted area undergoes coagulation-necrosis, the nuclei becoming hazy and indistinct, while around the affected area is a hyperemic zone of reaction. As in other organs, such an infarct may be completely absorbed and its place taken by a mass of scar tissue. In the case of septic embolus the infarct may break down and abscess result; even as a result of an uninfected superficial infarct, there may be fibrinous exudate thrown out on the surface, of which the ultimate result is an adhesion to surrounding tissues. This is even more certain to occur when the infarct is infected. Thrombosis is much rarer than embolism but produces similar results. Hemorrhage of the spleen may occur with

trauma, but the small hemorrhages seen in the hemorrhagic diseases are not distinguishable, mainly because the spleen is itself filled with blood that is no longer in the vessels; the sinuses normally contain so much blood that a little more is hardly to be noticed.

Inflammation. Splenitis.— Inflammation of the spleen is seen in all severe infections and intoxications, and in some of these, as malaria and typhoid fever, its enlargement furnishes one of the clinical signs of the disease. The spleen is enlarged, and at first firm, the swelling of its elements rendering the capsule tense, so that on section the capsule rips and the contents seem to bulge as if freed from restraint. The cut surface is seen to have lost its distinctness, and the chocolate-colored spleen tissue is seen to be moist and pulpy in its consistence, or at times diffluent. The enlargement may at times be very great,

Fig. 214 b

in from white infarct of spleen: a,
 in surrounding splenic tissue with
 fromgestion surrounding infarct.

and such a spleen has been known to rupture, either without, or with only slight, violence. Under the microscope, the changes seen are by no means distinctive. Definite necrosis, especially confined to localized areas, is sometimes seen. Suppurative splenitis may occur in



Tuberculosis of spleen with productive tuberculous perisplenitis and caseous tubercles. (McGill Pathological Museum.

state just described, but oftener is merely the direct result of imatogenous infection in bacteriemia, or of the breaking down of infected infarct. An abscess may burst through the capsule and mate a peritonitis, or if small, may be absorbed, leaving a scar, or pus may remain and become inspissated and ultimately calcified.

Recurrent splenitis is exemplified by the state of the spleen in malaria, re, as a result of often repeated attacks upon the organ by the irial organisms, many of which undoubtedly ultimately find their way, a gradual enlargement takes place. In this, as well as in other chronic affections, there is hyperplasia of the splenic tissues if as well as of the interstitial tissue, with much increase in size, firmness of the tissue (induration), and increased deposit of pigsuch enlargement constitutes splenomegaly. Such changes may

inuses 4

irk-

ged

-(10)

ndi-

ced.

ark

ion.

een,
it is
from
with
the
iple,
rets.
ning
zone

se of on as nous lt is occur

with

occur in the spleen in a number of different diseases, malaria, cirrhosis of the liver, syphilis, kala-azar, and especially in Banti's disease. Although there are yet other forms of disease in which the spleen is enlarged, the histological examination of the splenic tissue is not very illuminating, nor does it differentiate one form clearly from another. None of these forms of disease appear to be, properly speaking, diseases of the spleen, although the spleen is always involved.

The granulomas are found to affect the spleen. Tuberculosis appears in miliary form in generalized miliary tuberculosis, and at times one finds agglomerative and caseous lesions (Fig. 215). While the syphilitic gumma is found, the disease is manifested oftenest as a general diffuse splenitis, with fibrosis. Leprosy, glanders, and actinomycosis are found.

Regressive Changes.—Atrophy of the spleen is familiar, as it is seen in the old. The organ is small and soft, the capsule opaque and wrinkled, on section the prevailing color is a pale red, and the trabeculæ appear to be abundant, not from actual increase, but because relative loss of the parenchyma of the organ brings the trabeculæ close to one another. The weight of the spleen is greatly lessened.

Degenerations and Infiltrations.—The spleen is a favorite site for the deposit of amyloid in general amyloidosis. The amyloid material appears as translucent small areas of dark brown color, separated by normal splenic tissue; the appearance of these amyloid areas has been likened to that of grains of sago, and the name "sago spleen" has been given to the organ thus affected. Where more advanced and diffuse the walls of the sinuses also are involved—"bacony" spleen (see also p. 398).

Pigment infiltration is frequent in the spleen, as will be gathered from what has already been said about its functions in the matter of blood destruction. Apart from already mentioned states, such as malaria, in which it is well marked, is hemochromatosis in which there is a marked deposit of pigment in various parts of the body.

Progressive Changes.—Hyperplasia.—We have considered in a brief general way the hyperplastic states and have also mentioned, when discussing leukemia and Hodgkin's disease, certain conditions in which there is an extraordinary development of splenic tissue. In some cases the hyperplasia affects the lymphoid elements, as in lymphatic leukemia; in others, as in Gaucher's type of splenomegaly, the overgrowth involves particularly the endothelial cells lining the splenic sinuses.

Tumors.—Primary new growths are rare in this organ, although various connective-tissue tumors have been reported. Occasionally is found a diffuse lymphosarcomatous change, more rarely a nodular sarcomatous growth. Secondary sarcoma is not common, though it has

¹ For the reason that there is diffuse splenic enlargement in many general states it may be serviceable here to tabulate some of the various diseases in which splenic enlargement occurs; we give them roughly in the order of the degree of enlargement that may, as an average, be expected: myelogenous leukemia, malaria (ague cake), splenomegaly (Banti's), splenomegaly (Gaucher's), lymphosarcomatosis, Hodgkin's disease (late stage), acute infections, chronic congestion, amyloid, syphilis.

hosis

ease.

en is very ther.

eases

pears

one

rilltic

ffuse

ound.

seen

kled,

pear

loss

one

r the

d by

been

been

ffuse

also

iered

er of

h as

here

brief

vhen

hich

cases

mia;

ı in-

ough

nally

lular

has

tates

denic

ment ake),

kin's

been noted in cases of the melanotic variety. It is remarkable how rare is secondary carcinoma; primary carcinoma is (naturally) unknown.

THE BONE MARROW

It is difficult to describe the bone marrow as a distinct tissue; there is in it an intimate admixture of cells of various orders. In many respects it is intimately allied to lymphoid tissue, not merely in the existence in its meshes of abundant lymphocytes, but also in general structure. Nevertheless, the existence of abundant leukoblasts giving origin to granular leukocytes (polymorphs and eosinophiles) brings it into a different category, as do also the abundant osteoblasts and megacaryocytes. Pathologically it is as a blood-forming organ that it possesses interest.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Anemia in the body generally is, for once, associated not with anemia, but with hyperemia of this particular structure. This is most marked in sudden hemorrhage and in pernicious anemia, the color of the tissue being due not to vascular hyperemia but to the abundance of newborn and maturing erythrocytes in the tissue spaces. The marrow in these cases is markedly reddened.

Inflammation.—It is difficult to separate inflammatory disturbances in the bone marrow from inflammation in the bone as a whole, such local disturbance being part and parcel of osteomyelitic changes (see Discases of Bone). The suppurative and granulomatous forms will similarly be discussed in the section upon bone.

Regressive Changes.—With advancing life the amount of red marrow under normal conditions shows progressive diminution, the active marrow cells of the shafts, and elsewhere, becoming more and more replaced by fat cells, until only at the extremities of long bones is any red marrow to be detected, and with yet farther advance in age, the fat being absorbed, its place within the fat cells is taken by a serous fluid so that it becomes translucent (serous atrophy). In conditions of osteitis deformans along with marked absorption of the trabeculæ the fatty marrow may become replaced by a fibrillar connective tissue with cells lying in a somewhat thick mucoid or hyaline matrix. Associated with this there is a diminution in the number of osteoblasts. The same diminution is seen also in osteomalacia, and in both of these conditions active red marrow is characteristically defective.

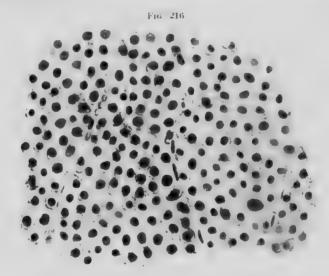
Aplastic anemia differs from ordinary pernicious anemia in that here also there is an absence of red marrow and of signs of active regeneration of the erythrocytes (p. 361).

Progressive Changes.—What at first sight seems clearly a hyperplasia of the bone marrow, viz., the increased extent of red marrow service blood regeneration as after hemorrhage, is scarcely a true of perplasia in the sense in which that term is ordinarily used. The service is no increase in the marrow as a whole; there is, nevertheless a production of red corpuscles and coincidently of leukocytes,

and also an awakening into activity of cells hitherto inactive, so that where previously there had from factive marrow we now encounter red marrow. In certain cases of my-logenous leukemia there may be a pyoid marrow due to the excess production of myeloblasts and

leukocytes.

Tumors.— The commonest form of primary tumor of the bone marrow is the so-called giant-celled sarcoma (p. 237), a form of myeloma in which the multinucleated cells of osteoclassic type are present in great abundance along with other, unit of atoc cells which are polygonal, irregular in size, tending to be blundly spindle-shaped. As we have pointed out, this differs from the true screema in being relatively benign, so that simple excision in a moderately early stage is rarely followed by recurrence. Fibrom a chendromas, and myxomas of the marrow have been described, though they are rare. An interesting form of alveolar growth often wroughy described as primary carcinoma, but apparently more truly of endotheliomatous nature, has been reported by several observers.



Section of myeloma of vertebra. X 600 (S. Saltykow.)

Myelomatosis (myeloma multiplex—is another characteristic form of hone tumor. In this condition, there is the appearance in several bones simultaneously of diffuse, ill-defined growths of sarcomatous appearance; the cells forming these growths show some ariation in different cases, perhaps the commonest form being made up of crosses of cells not unlike plasma cells. Presumably these are of myeloi estic nature. Uncomplicated cases show no metastases, but considerably an individual mass may take on malignant infiltrative; considerably when this is the case, secondary growths of sarcomatous type may be found in other organs. Occasionally—spindle- and roun—considerable assets.

, so that inter red nay be a asts and

e marrow eloma in in great olygonal, we have relatively is rarely is of the atteresting arcinoma, reported may be encountered, originating in the marrow, the formed erived not from marrow cells proper but from the connective-rissue framework.

We must doubt the existence of primary care noma of the bone, and, on the other hand, must emphasize the peculiar liability of the marrow to become the sext of secondary cancerous growth. Thus careful examination of the head of the homerus shows infiltration by carcinoma derived from the manima in a large proportion of cases of breast cancer. Cerean manginant tumore show a peculiar lity to form metastases in the bone marrow, notably carcinomas thyroid and prostate, and hypernephromas.

THE AL ENAL

It is difficult to place the adrena, its access oryogenetically affied to the cortex of the sidney and the static tem, but functionally we can find no close relationship to tem, but functionally we can find no close relationship to the construction and the sympathetic system, but the one of the connection with the internal preference and this has as its most striking feature a remark the influence upon the arternal tonus; wherefore we have determined to consider the also with the vascular system.

The adrered is a ductless giane in close juxtaposition to the upper pole of the kidney, abundantly vascular, and consisting of a correx and a medulla. The former sidvided into three zones of which the outermost consists of masses of cells with relatively large nuclei, consists of columns of polygonal cell containing shundant at an apole, the capillaries running better the columns of cells the zona faciculata; the innermost layer up of irregular masses of polyhedral cells, often pigmented, reticularis. The medicala, of entirely different structure, connection with numerous nerve fibrils, being, in fact, to the language of the sympathetic system.

we observe, obscurely, it is true, a certain interent in functional activity of the adrenal, the thyroid, the generative system. Further, there is evidently netween he adrenal glands and the pigments of the

owing failures of nevelopment of brain tissue, and in some layed sexual development. Horseshoe adrenals have been accessory adrenals are common; these appear as tiny odies on the surface of the otherwise normal adrenal; at nory adrenal tissue may be found underneath the kidney rembedded in the liver substance, or again in the neighbor-he testis and in the broad ligament.

e form of n several connectous riation in of masses reloblastic residually rries and

e Hin ie

. .38

1

Circulatory Disturbances.—Anemia is unimportant; hyperemia of the active sort occurs in infective diseases, and passive hyperemia in general states of blood stasis; with hyperemia, hemorrhage is prone to occur, usually punctate, but sometimes of large size (venous infarct). Fairly frequently in our autopsies on infants, we have found hemorrhage in one or other adrenal without having any clinical details to correlate with the condition, and in quite a proportion of cases in young children hemorrhage or infarct of one or both adrenals has been the only serious lesion seen to explain sudden death. It seems as if there were at times symptoms referable to suddenly occurring hemorrhage of the adrenal, viz., a sudden onset of abdominal pain, vomiting, diarrhæa, and collapse.

Inflammation.—Acute inflammation of the adrenal occurs in some cases of pyemia and by extension of inflammation from nearby structures. It seems likely that cavitation of the adrenal is often due to roughness in removal of the organ. Softening may, however, occur. Abscesses may appear at times, and sometimes a considerable degree

of fibrosis is found.

Infective Granuloma.—Tuberculosis is important by reason of its relation to Addison's disease. The adrenal may be affected by miliary tubercles, but more often by massive tuberculosis with caseation, affecting one or both organs; here a marked degree of fibrosis is at times to be seen. Syphilis has been noted in a few instances, usually as gumma, though there are enormous numbers of spirochetes in the adrenals of the premature congenital syphilitic.

Regressive Changes.—Atrophy occurs in the old, but the alterations in size appear to be usually connected with differences in the amount of fats and lipoids. It may be said that no organ in the body varies so little in size from earliest to latest life. Degeneration of cloudy and of fatty nature is seen in states of general toxemia. Amyloid disease is found in generalized amyloidosis and necrosis is seen in intoxication

and locally in infarcts from thrombosis.

Progressive Changes.—Hyperplasia of one organ may occur in cases of insufficiency of the other, and it has been noted that in destructive disease of the adrenals there may occur a multiplication of chromaffin tissue outside the adrenal, especially in the solar plexus. There is still some debate as to whether in chronic Bright's there be not a distinct

hypertrophy, more particularly of the cortex of the adrenals.

Tumors.—Two wholly different orders of tumors originate from the medulla and cortex respectively. Several cases are on record of primary new growths of the medulla which, carefully studied, are seen to be true neuromas or neurocytomas, resembling in cell arrangement and in the size and appearance of cells the developing sympathetic ganglion (p. 245). In the cortex we obtain tumors of a wholly different order. The simplest and most benign present themselves as nodules from the size of a pea or less upward, originating within the cortex and in structure, formed of columns or cell collections recalling the arrangement of the zona fasciculata. These may be spoken of as adrenal adenomas.

Several cases are now on record of an intermediate type presenting transition from the above arrangement to a sarcomatous, diffuse, and infiltrating distribution of the tumor cells. In other tumors, again, the capillaries or sinusoids of the new growth become a striking feature and the general arrangement is difficult to distinguish from that of the hemangio-endothelioma. Lastly, there may be what seem to be pure oval- or round-celled sarcomas. As we have pointed out elsewhere, we believe that these are all stages or states of development of one common form of tumor, the mesothelioma or, if the term be preferred, the hypernephroma proper. Great confusion has hitherto reigned regarding the nomenclature of these tumors. They have been spoken of as carcinoma, as carcinoma sarcomatodes, as endotheliomas, etc.

Secondary carcinoma is by no means uncommon, particularly in cases of cancer of the pancreas and stomach. More rarely do we encounter secondary sarcomatous growths in the adrenals. Blood cysts have been reported after hemorrhage, and lymphangiectases occasionally occur in the organ.

THE THUROID GLAND

The thyroids are developments from the floor of the embryonic mouth. At a very early period the connection between the alimentary canal and these offshoots from the same becomes broken and the gland develops through further growths of side processes which in time become dissociated into a collection of ductless vesicles. Even late in life we occasionally encounter in the stroma of the organ small collections of cells tending to develop into new vesicles. Each vesicle presents normally a single lining layer of cubical epithelium and is surrounded by a connective-tissue stroma rich in bloodvessels and lymphatics. Apparently under normal conditions there may be considerable variation in the contents of the vesicles, which show all degrees of consistency up to a dense, inspissated, gluey or colloid material. Upon extraction this colloid material affords iodothyrin, which appears to be the specific product of the activity of this gland.

Abnormalities.—There may be marked variation in the size and relationship of the middle lobe, and in a considerable proportion of cases this shows a remnant of the original median duct in the form of a process of thyroid tissue passing upward toward the middle of the hyoid bone, the processus pyramidalis, sometimes adherent to this by a band-like continuation of connective tissue. In rarer cases there is direct extension of this to the foramen cacum of the tongue, or the presence of a fistula leading down from the foramen cacum in the middle line toward the gland. Again, at puberty or even later, cysts form in the substance of the tongue or between this and the middle these are lined by glandular epithelium and are evidently removed the original thyroglossal duct which have now taken on active section. Accessory lobes or isolated masses of thyroid tissue are not

ms as if hemoromiting, in some by strucn due to

r, occur. e degree

remia of

peremia

is prone infarct).

hemor-

etails to cases in

nas been

of its miliary aseation, sis is at usually s in the

erations amount y varies udy and disease xication

in cases tructive comaffin e is still distinct

om the primary in to be and in tanglion to order. From the in structure gement anomas.

uncommon. When these occur between the œsophagus and trachea they may cause grave dyspnœa through further enlargement and congestion. A remarkable feature is that occasionally collections of typical thyroid tissue have been found included in one or other part of the bony skeleton, and this without any obvious tumor of the thyroid. They appear to be fœtal inclusions. Cases of congenital hypoplasia or even of complete absence are on record as well as others of congenital hyporplasia. These conditions of imperfect function result in delayed growth of the individual and the state of cretinism.

Circulatory Disturbances.—It has been observed that with menstruation and pregnancy, the thyroid shows a sympathetic congestion in the female and the great vascularity of the organ makes it susceptible to hyperemic states, so that in passive congestion it may be found markedly enlarged. Cysts of hemorrhagic origin are common in the organ, but this apparently always in association with the formation of local "adenomatous" growths.

Inflammation.—It is somewhat striking that in so vascular and so exposed an organ acute inflammatory changes are rarely noticeable. Abscesses occasionally occur in cases of pyemia, and have even been known in pneumonia and typhoid fever.

Regressive Changes.—The thyroid of elderly individuals not infrequently shows extensive atrophy of the parenchymatous elements accompanied with generalized fibrosis, with hyaline degeneration, and at times with calcareous deposits. In long-continued cases of exophthalmic goitre we obtain evidence that the parenchymatous cells undergo degeneration, possibly from overwork. There are cases on record in which the symptoms of hypersecretion have been followed by those of inadequate secretion or hypothyroidism, this being correlated with a form of atrophic flattening of the cells.

Progressive Changes.—The progressive changes of the thyroid are difficult to classify, but the work of recent years appears to be throwing increased light upo the relationship between the different forms. There may be, in the first place, a condition of active hyperplasia of the gland associated with increased function and coincident increased formation of the specific internal secretion. This is notable in the enlarged soft gland of early acute cases of Graves' disease. In these cases, the alveolar epithelium is prominent, the cells of good size, and there is evidence of active proliferation of the same in the form of ridges and papillæ projecting into the vesicles. There may even be more than one layer of epithelial cells, and many mitotic figures. Accompanying this, the organ is distinctly vascular and the alveoli are moderately distended by a thin secretion. The picture is identical with that seen in active regeneration of the gland following experimental removal of part of it. Another group of cases exhibits a diffuse enlargement of the vesicles (diffuse parenchymatous goitre) but now the epithelium is of a flatter type and the vesicles are distended with dense colloid; the cut surface is gelatinous and there is no markedly increased

trachea and contypical he bony They or even al hypergrowth

enstruan in the otible to arkedly gan, but of local

lar and iceable. en been

t infrelements, and at thalmic undergo cord in y those ed with

oid are nrowing forms. lasia of creased in the n these ze, and orm of ven be s. Aceoli are

eoli are lentical experidiffuse ow the dense rea ed vascularity. This condition may represent a late stage of exophthalmic goitre with marked amelioration of symptoms or, on the other hand, may develop insidiously, with marked diffuse enlargement of the gland. The very denseness of the colloid and the absence of vascularity indicates that in these cases there is accumulation, in place of increased discharge, of the internal secretion. Indeed, up to a certain point, such cases may show very little beyond the local effects of the thyroid enlargement and little general disturbance save when, through handling or operation, active congestion is induced and the grave symptoms of hyperthyroidism may supervene. If the condition progress still farther, with pressure atrophy of the epithelium and loss of function, symptoms of myxedema may show themselves. In yet another series of cases we deal not with generalized but with nodular localized hyperplasia of the thyroid tissue. These are usually spoken of as adenomas, a term whose applicability we doubt. They present not so much active overgrowth as a distension of the individual vesicles with colloid. Yet in some cases there is evidence of true adenomatous development. We may thus encounter the foetal adenoma, so-called because in this condition we find areas formed of clusters of cells situated in the stroma, resembling closely the cell clusters seen in the embryonic thyroid. These evidently are undergoing active proliferation, and what vesicles are present among these are of small type and lined by small, rounded or cubical cells. This form according to Wölfler, presents itself as multiple well-defined nodes, originating apparently from mother tissue which has remained latent between the previously developed follicles. The so-called adenomas in their early stages are very vascular and liable to extensive bemorrhages in their substance, which result in the formation of cysts, meetimes of great size. Yet another form has been called by Virchow the struma vasculosa. This is not a blastoma proper but merely a great dilatation of the superior and inferior thyroid arteries and their branches, leading sometimes to great enlargement of the organ with pulsation and the development of bruits audible by the stethoscope. This condition is often accompanied by indications of hyperthyroidism.

Tumors Proper.—The proliferative conditions just mentioned may give place to true adenocarcinoma, or this may originate without previous observable goitre. Arising thus the condition is markedly malignant, with extensive infiltration of the surrounding tissues, penetration of the tracked and of the verus of the neck, accompanied by rapid increase in the size of the organ are the formation of metastases in the lungs, hore etc. Loeb and extensive have described both in man and the lower after the actual carcinoma sarcomatodes, namely, a combination of the male mit growth of the parenchyma with coincident sarcomatous rephosis of the interstitial tissue. Secondary invasion of the by malignant growths originating in other tissues is comparative are; occasionally there may be direct extension into the gland

by a rs of the trachea and œsophagus.

THE PARATHYROIDS

We owe particularly to Sandstrom (1880), Gley (1891), Cristiani (1892), and Cohn (1895) the recognition of the parathyroid glands. and from the stage in which these little bodies were regarded as undeveloped and latent masses of thyroid tissue, we have passed to perhaps too great a belief in the importance of their function. They are usually four in number, situated either immediately outside or imbedded within the thyroid tissue in the region of the posterior inner edges of the lateral lobes above and below, and, in their histological structure, resemble the embryonic thyroid tissue, with frequent cyst-like spaces. Embryologically it is found that they have a separate origin, being derived as outgrowths of the epithelium of the third and fourth branchial clefts, close to, but distinct from, the points of origin of the lateral thyroid masses. They are 6 to 8 mm. long by 3 mm. in breadth. From their similarity to undeveloped thyroid tissue, it is difficult to state with precision whether certain small masses found in the tissues of the neck between the thyroid and the arch of the aorta are accessory thyroids or accessory parathyroids. These are so common as to make the frequent statements of surgeons that they have removed both thyroids and parathyroids without obvious results of little value.

The observations of MacCallum suggest the existence of a poison in animals whose parathyroids have been removed, which enters into combination with certain cells of the nervous system, so that there develop the symptoms of totany, a condition characterized by spasmodic contractions of the muscles, convulsions, rapid respiration, with dyspnœa and salivation, followed by coma and death. Accompanying this there is increased excretion of calcium salts with diminution of the calcium contents of the blood (MacCallum and Voegtlein), while, as pointed out by Erdheim, the extirpation of the glands in the rat is followed by defective deposition of lime in the large incisor teeth, followed by brittleness and a tendency to breaking. Fracture of the bones of these animals is followed by delayed conversion of the cartilaginous into bony callus, affording a picture that recalls somewhat that seen in rickets. If an animal showing these symptoms be bled, they are checked and can be made to disappear by the injection of emulsions of parathyroid. This condition of tetany in humankind occurs most often in infants and here several observers have noted the existence of hemorrhages in the parathyroids; these, however, are not present constantly and a further condition of gastric tetany is described associated with dilated stomach, etc., in which no lesions have been made out in these glandules. An attempt has lately been made to correlate hemorrhagic and necrotic changes in the parathyroids with marasmus of infants.

Hyperplasias, or so-called benign adenomas, have been described, without much evidence of functional disturbance.

CHAPTER VII

THE RESPIRATORY SYSTEM

GENERAL CONSIDERATIONS

THE chief function of the respiratory system is the intake of oxygen and the discharge of carbon dioxide for the benefit of the economy at large. This is accomplished by the filling of the air sacs with air on the one hand, and the capillaries and lymph spaces with blood and lymph, on the other, and the free interchange of the gases between the two, separated as they are from one another by the alveolar epithelium, the capillary or lymphatic wall, and what connective tissue may chance to intervene. It has been calculated that there are 725,000,000 alveoli in the lungs, exposing a surface of roughly 210 square yards, so that the air cells are lying close to a film of blood that has been estimated to be 10μ in thickness. The amount of gaseous interchange can be thus seen to be enormous, yet this is but a small part of the process of oxygenation of the tissues, for only a small amount of oxygen undergoes reduction in the corpuscles. The cells have an intense avidity for oxygen, and are capable of storing it to some extent, for the tissues have been shown to be capable of metabolism for some time in an oxygenfree atmosphere or when transfused with oxygen-free saline, during which metabolism carbon dioxide is abundantly discharged. The arterial blood is almost but not quite saturated with oxygen, and even in asphyxia some oxygen can still be obtained from the blood. Of the process of diffusion which the oxygen undergoes from the time it leaves the corpuscle until it joins and becomes part of the biophoric molecule we know very little, but we suppose the transference to be fairly direct.

Anatomically, it may be noted that there are abundant elastic fibres in the alveolar walls which assist in the recoil of the lung, in the expulsion of air, and in the circulation of the blood and lymph in the alveolar walls; that the right bronchus is larger than the left by onethird, and that the bronchial tract has a capacity that is one-thirtieth that of the lungs; that the varying diameters of the larynx and trachea are evidently to impart a rotary motion to the current of inspired air; and that a double blood supply from the right ventricle through the pulmonary artery and from the aorta through the bronchial artery give

a very free collateral circulation in all parts of the lung.

The Air Passages.—This term includes the entire tract from the to the terminal bronchioles, a considerable distance; the effect the inspired air is that it enters the air sacs (1) at the body tem-Per tare, (2) impregnated if not saturated with moisture, and (3)

Cristiani glands. as undeperhaps usually d within e lateral esemble Embryorived as al clefts, thyroid eir simirecision between

poison ers into at there asmodic n, with panying ation of vhile, as e rat is

ccessory

t state-

d para-

r teeth, e of the artilagiat that d, they nulsions rs most xistence

present ed asson made orrelate

rasmus scribed,

devoid (normally) of dust and foreign particles, and therefore sterile. The nasal passages have an important effect in bringing this state of affairs about, and the large surfaces of the turbinated bones war a and moisten the air, and their moist surfaces, like those of the whole tract, entangle particles to an enormous extent. If the effect of this mechanism be nullified by mouth breathing, it will be seen at once how serious may be the effects produced upon the lower parts of the tract. Mouthbreathing may result from nasal obstruction of many different sortsfrom congenital or acquired narrowness of the passages, from trauma, from the secretions of inflammation or the thickening resulting therefrom, from tumors, especially polyps, and from lymphoid enlargements. Of the last, adenoid growths of the nasopharynx are very common and very important; occurring in childhood, they may be associated with peculiarities of development of the nasal chamber, especially a high arch of the palate.

In normal conditions, there is a distinct protective function exerted by the nasal mucosa, which is at once highly sensitive, strongly vascularized, and richly supplied with mucous glands; as a result, irritation is followed by marked reaction with abundant mucous secretion, which protects the epithelium, washes off and dilutes the irritant, and supplies

a physical impediment to bacteria.

The Pharynx.—Assistance is lent by the pharynx in these processes, and while its surface is not multiplied like that of the nose, the sudden change in direction imparted to the air current assists actively the entanglement of foreign particles; the abundant provision of lymph tissue (including the tonsils) is directed to this end, and it is notable that many of the air-borne diseases, such as the exanthemata, are

connected with a preliminary infection of the pharynx.

The Larynx.—The main function of the larynx is phonation. The larynx, essential for the singing voice is not essential for speech; the "note" of the voice is determined by the tension and the rate of vibration of the vocal cords, and by communication of this vibration to the air. The voice is therefore affected by the pathological states of the vocal cords, which may be thus divided: (1) excessive nervous stimuli lead to spasmodic contraction of the laryngeal muscles, with closure of the aperture; defective or arrested stimuli lead to flaccidity; and (2) intrinsic disturbance of the cords, such as diffuse or local inflammatory thickening, or development of tumors upon them, by which the cords become "muted." Articulation, on the other hand, is dependent on the lips, teeth, palate, and tongue, and it is by disturbances of these that it will be affected.

The site of the vocal cords is the region of the greatest narrowing of the respiratory passage, and at this point, therefore, a relatively inconsiderable stenosis by spasm, inflammatory deposits, or new growths, may assume importance; in addition to this, the larynx, as a whole, is a relatively narrow part of the tract, and even slight affections of the glottis are apt to cause grave obstruction. The relatively loose attach-

ment of the mucosa, except over the vocal cords, renders ædema a common event, in which the upper opening of the glottis, the epiglottic and aryteno-epiglottic folds may be so swollen that unless intubation or tracheotomy be performed, asphyxia may ensue.

The Trachea and Bronchi.—These are lined by moist, ciliated mucosa, which is enabled to take up many particles, and pass them back to be removed by coughing; the trachea is kept expanded by a series of cartilaginous hoops, which allow much mobility of the tube; yet there may be hindrance of respiration by (1) foreign body, (2) deposits or contractions from inflammation, (3) new growths, or (4) pressure from outside, such as would be produced by aneurysm, goitre, mediastinal tumors, and sometimes even by enlarged tuberculous lymph nodes. Valvular obstruction, permitting inspiration but interfering with expiration, may occur with a diphtheritic membrane or a polyp. Asthma is supposedly due to a spasm of the bronchi and bronchioles suddenly produced through nervous mechanism; not only is there a spasm so produced, but evidently a rapid congestion which is so great as to amount to angioneurotic ædema with abundant secretion.

Complete obstruction to the air passages ends quickly in asphyxia; with obstruction to inspiration the inspiratory act becomes slow and labored, even to **stridor**, the expiratory act short and unimpeded; the diaphragm contracts more fully, and the accessory muscles all aim at increasing the capacity of the thorax; in expiratory dyspnœa, the abdominal and trunk muscles aim at lessening the thoracic capacity. Where one main bronchus is obstructed, there is rapid respiration until adaptation is secured, after which one lung continues to perform the

work ordinarily done by both.

The Muscular and Nervous Mechanism of Normal Respiration.— Inspiration is an active process, and expiration, largely, if not entirely, a passive one, brought about by pressure upward of the abdominal iscera during relaxation of the diaphragm, aided by the elasticity of the expanded lung and of the thoracic wall. The groups of muscles, trinsic and accessory, and the mechanics of the act will be found tailed in text-books of physiology. The different nerves concerned the stimulation of these muscles appear to be under the coordinated atrol of a centre, although we are unable to say which particular coup of cells constitutes this centre. Afferent impulses affect it, for mulation of many different cerebral areas and peripheral nerves radifies the respiratory act; the pulmonary branches of the vagus are · most important afferent nerves of respiration, and stimuli are parently generated by the carbon dioxide tension in the blood, reased tension of carbon dioxide stimulating the centre to produce reased respiration, and reduced tension depressing it.

Disturbances of Respiration.—Sneezing.—This is a reflex act, caused mally by nasal irritation stimulating a branch of the fifth nerve, and lests of a deep spasmodic inspiration followed by a strong, quick cration. During the first part of the latter process, the mouth is

xerted y vasitation which upplies

sterile.

tate of

a and

tract,

mech-

serious

Iouth-

orts--

auma,

there-

ments.

on and

d with

a high

cesses, sudden ly the lymph otable a, are

The

h; the vibrato the of the timuli closure v; and inflamch the endent

ing of incons, may
c, is a of the ttach-

closed by the approximation of the dorsum of the tongue and the soft palate, so that the first portion of the air that is expelled goes through the nose, tending to drive before it the irritant particles; then the tongue and soft palate are separated, and through this relatively narrow space the air is forcibly driven, producing the characteristic sound.

Coughing.—This is voluntary or reflex, the irritation in the latter case being in the nasopharynx, the larynx, the lungs, or the pleure, although it may be in the external auditory meatus; deep inspiration is followed by closure of the glottis, which remains closed during the first part of the strong expiratory effort; the glottis is thus suddenly "blown" open, and the released air may carry with it mucus or other

matter from the parts of the tract that lie below.

Dyspnœa.—This term denotes two different states, that of airhunger, and, more correctly, that of labored inspiration, due to absence of an adequate amount of air, or to the accumulation of carbon dioxide in the blood, with or without deficiency of oxygen. It may or may not be accompanied by cyanosis; the individual is protected by being compelled at once to reduce his muscular activity, diminishing forthwith the call for oxygen and the discharge of carbon dioxide. If the venosity of the blood be acting upon the centre for some time, there develops a lowered sensitiveness of the centre which becomes accustomed to a tension of carbon dioxide that could not be borne if suddenly presented; and there are, on the contrary, states of hypersensitiveness of the centre, such as are seen in hysteria, in which rapid respiration is produced without there being any evidence of a modified gaseous tension.

The conditions in which dyspnoa manifests itself are: (1) conditions of hindrance to the entrance of the normal amount of air, (a) in the air passages (foreign body, stenosis, etc.), (b) in the lungs (collapse,

exudates, growths, cavitation, emphysema, etc.).

2. Diseased states of the muscular mechanism: (a) inflammation of the diaphragm or other muscles, (b) diseased states of the centres, the afferent or efferent nerves.

3. Where the circulation of the blood through the lungs or the

medulla is obstructed.

4. When the inspired air is rarefied, or carbon monoxide is present or carbon dioxide increased above normal, the two latter states reducing

the gaseous interchange.

Asphyxia.—In dyspnœa a sufficient gaseous interchange is obtained to support life, but in asphyxia even this minimum is not obtained, and the accumulation of carbon dioxide goes on until the action of the respiratory centre is arrested. Death may follow prolonged cyanosis without struggling, but more often an intense respiratory struggle occurs. In this acute form there is first of all increased amplitude and rate of respiration, followed by relatively great expiratory efforts, with short convulsive inspirations, the expiration being accompanied by violent muscular efforts of the entire body; as this passes off, the respirations

l the

goes

then

ively

ristic

atter

euræ.

ation

efirst

denly

other

air-

sence

oxide

y not

com-

h the

osity

ops a

to a

nted;

entre,

luced

itions

n the

apse,

on of s, the

r the

ent or

ucing

ained

l, and

respi-

thout

. In

ite of

short

iolent

tions

become slow and deep; the mouth is open, the head stretched back, and the arms are raised; there is insensibility, the pupils are dilated, and the respirations become slower and slower until death ensues. Coincident changes in the blood pressure are to be noted; there is a marked rise in pressure, the venous blood stimulating the vagus and vasomotor centres, so that the heart is slowed and the arterioles contracted. The heart, poisoned by venous blood, begins to fail and to distend, and the blood pressure begins to fall.

Cheyne-Stokes' Respiration. This consists, to quote Stokes' own words, in "the occurrence of a series of inspirations, increasing to a maximum, and then declining in force and length until a state of apparent apnœa is reached; in this condition, the patient may remain so long as to make his attendants believe that he is dead, when a low inspiration, followed by one more decided, marks the commencement of a new ascending and then descending series of inspirations." It was originally supposed that this phenomenon marked oncoming death, but such is not necessarily the case. There are two main groups of disease in which it may be manifest—circulatory disease without obvious disease of the brain, and intracranial disease without affection of the heart; some cases of general infection and some narcoses may also show it. It is not possible in the present state of our knowledge to give any satisfactory explanation of the phenomenon; it appears to be what physicists call an interference curve, that is, it is the resultant of waves of one rhythm on which are superposed waves of another rhythm, the second at times augmenting, at other times neutralizing the first.

The Air Sacs.—If one considers broadly the diseased states of the air sacs that interfere with the proper performance of the work of the lungs, these fall into two main groups—those in which the ingress of air into and the egress of air from the air sacs is prevented, and those in which changes in the walls of the air sacs prevent the proper interchange of gases. Diseases of the first order may lead to those of the second

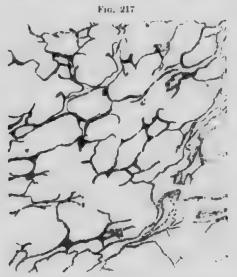
Air may be prevented from entering the air sacs because they have not been distended (atelectasis: àrsà/ɛ, incomplete: ¿xraouɛ, expansion), or having been distended, they have undergone collapse. If of small extent, this state is of no moment, the other air sacs undergoing compensatory enlargement; even a whole lung may be thus dispensed with, if the change be wrought gradually.

contain be replaced (1) by serous fluid, as in the cases of acute or chastic congestion, (2) by blood, as in rupture of a branch of the pulmor try artery in a cavity or its walls, or in rupture of an aneurysm into the trachea, or in infarct; (3) by water or other fluid from without, as in drowing; or (4) by inflammatory exudate as in pneumonia. The effects of according to these upon respiration depends partly upon the amount of lung tissen involved, and partly upon the causative agent. In hemorrhage the products of hemolysis, or in pneumonia the toxins, may induce a

febrile state which of itself will affect respiration, or the effect upon the pleura in the latter disease may be responsible. With a fluid in the air sacs there is a certain interference with the circulation in the vessels in the walls which are compressed or not according to the greater or less distension of the sac; if this compression of the capillaries affect a specially large amount of lung tissue, the result is a large amount of work thrown on the right heart, with consequent dilatation, and, it may be, hypertrophy.

Changes in the Walls of the Air Sacs Hindering Aëration.—These changes may be atrophic or may consist of interstitial deposits in the walls of

the air sacs. Of the former, the most important is emphysema.



Section from lung showing diffuse emphysema. Note the great atrophy and thinning of alveolar walls and the free ends of ruptured and absorbed interalveolar septa.

Emphysema.—This may be local or generalized, but the mode of production is alike in both. The bronchus or bronchiole has its lumen narrowed, either by spasm or by inflammatory deposit, or by the presence in it of thick secretion; the forcible inspiration followed by the relatively passive act of expiration leaves an amount of air in the sac sufficient to distend it; successive acts of inspiration will distend it still more, and at no time will the sac attain the proper degree of collapse. This constant state of relative distension will keep the capillaries in the wall compressed (Fig. 217), flattened, and elliptical in section; not only do they contain less blood than when they are circular, but the smaller amount of blood is exposed to a larger surface and increased friction. The final result of this is continued malnutrition of the wall, reduced gaseous interchange, diminution of the elastic tissue and of the elasticity of the wall, and atrophy. In this state, the sudden increase

on the of intrapulmonary pressure, at such times as the moment before a cough the air "explodes," leads to the rupture of weakened walls and several air sacs sels in are thrown into one. Even if the obstruction in the bronchus be now or less removed, the damage already done is permanent, and there is a want ffect a of proper proportion between the (increased) volume of air and the unt of (diminished) area of wall presented by the air sacs. Those air sacs and, it situated at the surface of the lung, and especially at the thin edges being relatively little supported by adjoining air sacs suffer the greatest hanges distension, so that they may be "ballooned" to a very large size. valls of

We have considered in a general way the causation of emphysema; it will be seen that anything which causes a heightened intrapulmonary pressure may induce this state, hence the liability of players upon wind instruments, of glassblowers, and of persons suffering from such a disease as whooping cough; age, too, has a definite effect, in that the elasticity of the alveolar walls is lessened by the atrophy of the elastic tissue, and proper contraction of the air sac in expiration is not obtained.

With this emphysematous expansion of the lungs, the constant demand for oxygen calls for an overfilling of the already full air sacs, and to obtain this the chest wall comes to assume a barrel-shape, representing the state in which its maximum inspiratory capacity is attained; the expiratory part of the act is lengthened, gaseous interchange is inefficient, the passage of blood through the lungs is obstructed, and embarrassment of the right side of the heart follows.

Bronchiectasis. This is a condition of the bronchus in which its lumen is dilated in one or many places; either by pressure from within upon an atrophic wall, or by traction from without by contracting fibrous connective tissue, the lumen of a bronchus or a bronchiole may show a fusiform or even an abruptly saccular widening, the enlarged bronchus taking up space that should be occupied by normal air sacs, resulting in diminished aëration of the blood.

Interstitial Deposits. - It is self-evident that new tissue, whether fibrous, granulomatous, or neoplastic takes up room in the lung and by so much displaces normal air space; but this is not all, for it obstructs the pulmonary circulation, so that there is a double interference with the aëration of the blood.

The Pleural Cavities.—These are closed, potential cavities around each lung, and when the two surfaces move freely and smoothly over each other, a uniform expansion of the lung is obtained. If the lungs were fixed to the parietal surface of the chest, as happens in the case of universal pleural adhesions, expansion and contraction would go on but would vary in different regions; thus, with diaphragmatic contraction there would be great expansion of the lower parts of the lungs with little of the apices, and the interchange of air would be slight in that region. There is normally a negative pressure in the pleural "cavities,

of alveolar

of prolumen he presby the the sac d it still collapse. aries in on; not but the creased he wall, d of the

increase

Pneumothorax.—The entrance of air or gas into one or both of the cavities changes this negative to a positive pressure, and in nearly every case a compression of the lung is produced; in some cases, too, the air drawn in at inspiration is not expelled at expiration, and there may ultimately be a pressure in the plenral cavity greater han that of the atmosphere. We speak of two forms of pneumothorax—ppen, where there is free communication with the external air through the thoracic wall or through the imag, and closed, where the opening has been occluded, or where as in gaseous pneumothorax, no opening to the air has existed. In open pneumothorax there is necessarily a positive pressure in the pleura, and the lung collapses unless held by pleural adhesions. In closed pneumothorax, according to the amount of air or gas, there may be merely a diminution of the negative or a low positive pressure which is not sufficient to entirely prevent respiration.

Pleural Effusion.—At first consideratio. one would expect that the effect of an effusion into the pleural cavity would be to diminish the space available for the lung, and that the effect upon the lung would be to prevent its expansion, just as would a positive pressure upon its surface. In effusions of large amount this seems to be the case, and the lung lies against the vertebral column completely collapsed. In small effusions, the fluid by its weight exerts a negative pressure, and the lung, instead of swimming upon the effusion, supports the effusion until its weight exceeds the lifting power of the lung; when this happens, the fluid is able to exert a direct downward force on the diaphragm. In such a case, the partly compressed lung has little chance to exert its elasticity, and the movement of the diaphragm and the costal muscles

has to take place against resistance.

SPECIAL PATHOLOGY OF THE RESPIRATORY SYSTEM

THE NOSE

Anomalies.—Malformations of high grade are generally associated with important defects of the face and even of the cerebrum and are important chiefly as curiosities. Practically, the commonest anomaly is a deviation of the bony septum, which occurs with great frequency.

Circulatory Disturbances. Hyperemia of the active sort occurs in inflammatory processes, and in infective fevers such as measles, influenza, and even typhoid fever, and readily leads to hemorrhage (epistaxis). Of the passive sort are those hyperemias due to heart and lung diseases, and to the presence of tumors in the nasal cavity. By reason of the delicacy of structure and the elasticity of the mucous membrane of the nose, it is prone to be readily rendered hyperemic in a reflex way, and vasomotor turgescence, even of purely nervous origin is frequent; even so slight a thing as a change of posture in some individuals

may cause the disappearance of hyperemia of one side of the nose and its transference to the other. Hemorrhage occurs in ulceration, hemophilia, leukemia, scurvy, suffocation, and trauma.

Inflammation. - Acute Rhinitis, Coryna, or Catarrh. This arises primarily from bacterial infection, and apparently from exposure to cold and wet, as well as irritating chemical vapors. Some persons are susceptible to certain individual volatile substances, such as ipecac, and many to the irritant effect of special sorts of pollen, the smell of certain flowers or animals; the most familiar example of this is hay fever, which is evidently a reflex vasomotor effect resulting from anaphylaxis. That coryza is met with ... measles, scarlatina, variola, influenza, and typhus fever probably means that a direct infection of the mucosa by the specific agent occurs. The mucosa is swollen, hyperemic, of a deepened color, dry, and irritated, a state soon followed by the copious secretion of a clear, watery, slightly viscid fluid, containing leukocytes and epithelium, and possessed of the power of eroding the skin or another mucous membrane. It must be remembered that such an infection has the power to spread to the throat, the accessory cavities, and sinuses, as well as to the Eustachian tube and the middle ear. In severe primary infections, as well as after the continuance of mild infections, the fluid may become purulent, and being so may be mixed with blood and may possess a foul odor. Local abscesses or the erosion of bone or cartilage may follow. Memoranous inflammation is most often due to the diphtheria bacillus.

Chronic Rhinitis. Hypertrophic Rhinitis.—(1) and a continuance of congestion, either from infection or mechanical and any lead to happertrophic changes in the mucous membrane. The continuance of place in the submucous tissues, and may, in extrapolate, assume a polypoidal form due merely to the foldings of the proper. In some cases such hypertrophy is followed by a secondary contraction leading to a diminution in the size of the turbinate, the so-called secondary atrophy" seen in old persons. This process, however, is something quite apart from the condition of atrophic rhinitis, as will be seen in the description of that state. The old idea that an atrophic rhinitis was a late stage of a hypertrophic condition seems to be without foundation.

Atrophic Rhinitis.—This condition has been the object of innumerable discussions and investigations as to cause, and very varied conclusions have been reached. The condition presents a very a finite clinical and also histological picture. The structures in the nose are much shrunken and covered with dry, foul-smelling crusts (ozen). The histological picture shows marked thinning of the mucosa, with infiltration and destruction of the mucous glands, and also a metaplasia of the epithelium from columnar to squamous. There are changes in the bones, which some observers regard as the primary factor in the production of the disease, though this we are not inclined to admit.

formation takes place for two reasons—there is abnormal air

re upon he case, ollapsed. aure, and effusion

of the

nearly

too, the

ere may

t of the

ere there

cic wall

ccluded.

existed.

e in the

ons. In

ere may

re which

that the

nish the

g would

enusion happens, phragm. to exert muscles

STEM

and are anomaly equency. urs in ininfluenza, piataxis). diseases, in of the brane of flex way,

frequent;

dividuals

space in the nose tending to drying of the secretions, and there is a marked diminution in the amount of these secretions, due to the

destruction of the secreting glands.

It seems probable that we have here to deal with a condition having a very varied etiology in different cases. There may be in some cases a congenital peculiarity in the distribution of the squamous epithelium in the nose and in the width of the air spaces, but more often it is probably the result of some former severe inflammatory process which has destroyed the normal lining of the nose, and this has been imperfectly repaired. Such severe destruction may be seen in congenital syphilis, and in the infectious fevers, such as scarlet fever. In some cases a long-continued, latent suppuration in one of the accessory sinuses may be the cause of the diseased state.

The Granulomas. Tuberculosis in the nose is rare; syphilis, however, is fairly often seen, beginning with the "snuffles" of the baby who is born syphilitic, with a constant purulent catarrh; gumma is apt to arise in the cartilages or bones, and, when broken down, to give origin to the "saddle" deformity so often seen; perforation of the septum and of the hard palate may occur. Glanders and leprosy may attack the nasal mucous membrane, the lesions varying according to the

acuity of the infection.

Progressive Changes. - The most common form of overgrowth is the polyp, and, as has been remarked elsewhere, the polyp is usually not a tumor proper, but a mass of proliferated tissue, which thus becomes codematous or a myxomatous polyp. Both are gray, semitranslucent, and sparsely cellular; mucous glands may be enclosed in the mass, and may become cystic; proliferation of the glandular parts may make adenoma, of the fibrous parts, fibroma, and widening of the vessels telangiectasis. One must at times be amazed at the size of ædematous or myxomatous polyps that can be taken from the nostril. Carcinoma arising primarily is rare, sarcoma more common. New growths, often endotheliomatous, arise in the accessory sinuses.

PHARYNX AND TONSILS

Fauces.-As the gate of common entry to two important systems, the digestive and the respiratory, the pharynx is characterized by what would appear to be an extensive defensive mechanism in the shape of abundant submucous lymphoid tissue. This tissue is present over most of its extent, but is massed in the form of very numerous follicles in the two lateral pair of faucial tonsils, and in the median superior or pharyngeal tonsil. The structure of these tonsils is characteristic. The epiderm is relatively thin, and dips down forming a collection of crypts. Both on the surface and immediately beneath the epithelium lining these crypts is an abundant collection of lymph follicles. A smear made with a swab reveals fairly numerous free polymorph leukocytes which have evidently wandered out and ingest surface bacteria, etc. Further, according to Lexer, the thin epithelium covering the tonsils also possesses phagocytic properties. By this means the surface is kept clean and free from the growth of bacteria which have impinged upon it, either from the inhaled air or from the food in the process of being swallowed. It will be further noticed that the submucosa is fairly loose, with a relatively rich vascular supply, and that it contains numerous mucous glands. Notwithstanding these defences the very position and function of the pharynx render it liable to various forms of inflammation.

6

g

a

n

S

r-

al

e

1.

Γ,

is

to

in

m

ŀk

ne

he

ot

68

ıt,

in,

ke

els

us

na

en

ns,

ıat

ipe

ver

les

or

he

its.

ing

ude

ich

ier,

Abnormalities.—These are uncommon. Cleft palate may involve the soft palate; occasionally the uvula is bifid. There may be the openings of persistent gill clefts into the pharynx, these forming either complete fistulæ extending to the surface, or merely closed lateral diverticula. The most striking abnormality is epignathus (p. 65). This teratomatous growth, which has its attachment at the base of the skull, projects into the mouth.

Circulatory Disturbances.—The vascular condition of this region and its visibility make it a striking indicator of circulatory disturbances the active hyperemia set up by various irritants, with its scarlet red appearance, through the more brownish color of chronic irritative hyperemia, as in alcoholics and smokers, to the passive hyperemia of cardiac disease, with its bluish-red livid appearance and irregularity of surface brought about by swollen veins. Pharyngeal **edema** is not uncommon; most often it is associated with spreading inflammatory states, c. g., acute inflammation of the tonsils. It may be angioneurotic in type or may show itself in obstructive heart disease.

Inflammation.—Of this we recognize various grades. It may be noted that local inflammation (amygdalitis, of the tonsil, or uvulitis) is apt to spread and become generalized, setting up a condition of pharyngitis. We recognize the following forms:

Acute Catarrhal Pharyngitis .- Acute catarrhal pharyngitis or angina exhibits in the early stage pronounced redness and swelling of the mucosa, with later abundant discharge of mucus or mucopus and swelling of the isolated lymph follicles, sometimes also of the mucous glands. Over these projections there may be abrasions and formation of small ulcers, with grayish necrotic bases. Acute tonsillitis may be of different types, but in all, the tonsils are swollen and hyperemic, and there is abundant secretion of mucopus. The inflammation mainly affects the crypts which become greatly swollen and filled with foul puralent material. From here the inflammation may extend into the substance of the organ leading to tonsillar abscess, and, as an afterresult of the follicular disturbance, the contents of the crypts may because inspissated, cheesy, and intensely foul smelling; still later they may become the seat of calcareous deposits, forming concrements. Who there is abseess formation the process may infiltrate through the Aeper tissue extending into the cellular tissue around about, with mue inflammatory cedema, setting up the condition known as quinsy or, it may be, peritonsillar abscess.

Phlegmonous Pharyngitis.—Phlegmonous pharyngitis, whether originating from the tonsils, as above noted, or from trauma, or an acute pharyngeal infection, as in scarlatina, erysipelas, and diphtheria, exhibits a pronounced seropurulent inflammation and infiltration of the pharyngeal submucosa, with extreme swelling of all parts of the pharynx and dryness of the surface (which is apt to be deeply congested and to present occasional superficial vesicles). This condition may subside or lead to the formation of localized abscesses, or, again, to a diffuse gangrene of the region.

Retropharyngeal Abscess.—Retropharyngeal abscess of the deeper tissues behind or at the side of the pharynx, may originate either secondary to pharyngitis or tonsillitis, or to caries of the cervical vertebræ, or suppurative otitis media, or, again, may be one of the manifestations of pyemia. Such an abscess is apt to burst into the pharynx, or to extend downward along the œsophagus. Other complications are erosion of the internal carotid artery (especially in the case of tonsillar abscess), inflammatory swelling of the cervical lymph nodes, aspiration pneumonia, thrombophlebitis, and general bacteriemia.

Regarding tonsillar and pharyngeal inflammations, there are certain points deserving of note: (1) the high grade of fever that rapidly supervenes even in the simpler catarrhal conditions; (2) the frequency with which acute inflammation of this region ushers in severe general infections, notably scarlatina and acute rheumatism. In smallpox and measures the pharynx also may be involved and not infrequently secondary syphilitic manifestations of this region lead to an acute pharyngitis.

Membranous Pharyngitis. It must be kept well in mind that while a characteristic fibrinous or membranous inflammation of the pharynx is due most frequently to the diphtheria bacillus, such membranous inflammation is by no means a necessary indication of diphtherial inflammation. The so-called "diphtheritic membrane" may be due to (1) inhalation of steam and irritant gases; (2) the streptococcus pyogenes; (3) more rarely, pneumococcus, in addition to (4) the most important cause. Bacillus diphtheriæ. In general it may be said that the use of diphtheria antitoxin gives the most rapid differentiation between the diphtherial and other forms of inflammation. With this the leathery membrane induced by the diphtheria bacillus may loosen within a few hours. The antitoxin may have some effect on other membranes, but not so rapidly or so characteristically. The true diphtherial infection begins with a localized congestion of the fauces of the tonsils or back of the pharvnx; soon there appear grayish-white, opalescent spots, which spread and become fused, and now extending over the pharyngeal wall, coalesce into a dirty yellowish membrane. At the edge of the spreading membrane is a zone of acute congestion, and characteristically the membrane in its early stage is firmly adherent. Removal of the edge or other part will be followed by bleeding. Later, where healing occurs the membrane becomes loosened and may be removed with ease. Such membrane may extend from the pharynx into the posterior nasal passages, the larynx, trachea, bronchi, etc.

n-

te

of

ne

n-

on

n,

er

d-

or

of

ы

οf

5),

u-

in

ķ

·V

al

οx

ļy

te

a

łΧ

us

al

to

lis

st

at

III

is

n

er

ae

es

€',

\t

ıd

t.

r,

1()

As pointed out already, with the superficial growth of the diphtheria bacillus on the surface of the mucous membrane, there is a necrosis and destruction of the epidermal tissue, which is cast off, an intense congestion of the submucosa with abundant exudation of serum and leukoevtes, and now a fibrinous coagulation of the exudate, with, at the same time, a necrosis of the superficial layers of the submucosa. As the cells here undergo a coagulation necrosis the resulting membrane is due in part to the surface exudate, in part to these necrosed and infiltrated superficial layers of the submucosa. It is this that renders the membrane so firmly adherent. Later, with healing, abundant leukocytes pass from the vessels into the deeper layer of necrosis, and as these, through their enzymes, cause the liquefaction of the necrosed tissue the overlying membrane becomes loosened. Diphtheria bacilli may be superficial and grow in greatest abundance toward the under aspect of the membrane, although from here they are not to any large extent taken up by the leukocytes and conveyed to the deeper tissues. Or, if so conveyed, they do not there proliferate actively. Almost constantly there is an accompanying abundant growth of streptococci in the membrane. These may invade the deeper tissues and set up severe complicating disturbances. Rarely the inflammation extends along the Eustachian tube to the middle ear, or through the lacrimal duct to the conjunctiva.

A similar membranous infection occurs in very acute cases of scarlet fever. Here streptococci appear to be the main agents, and the tendency for the process to extend into the deeper tissues with ulcerative disturbances and suppuration of the cervical lymph glands is much greater.

Vincent's Angina.—Vincent's angina, due, it would seem, to the growth of spirochetes with the bacillus fusiformis, is a rare affection, and may in the early stages show membrane formation. This tends to the development of superficial necrosis of the pharynx with the formation of ulcers.

Chronic Pharyngitis.—The chronic form may be due to recurrent or long-continued irritation as by alcohol, tobacco, or may be the sequel of a succession of acute attacks. There is a congestion of the pharyngical wall, with dull, reddish or brownish coloration, a mucoid or muco-puralent secretion tending to dry and adhere in the form of scales, and a perplasia of the lymph follicles, giving the wall a granular, warty and carance (granular pharyngitis). More rarely with atrophy of the mucosa the membrane becomes thin, smooth, dry, and shiny (chronic attornic pharyngitis). In chronic tonsillitis with advancing age, as again, and ing to some, as the result of acute tonsillitis, the lymphoid tissue of the tonsils may become diminished in amount, and there may be discrete tonsils may become diminished in amount, and there may be a consilt from repeated attacks of acute tonsillitis, or from long-med irritation, as from retention of inspissated material in the

tonsillar crypts. In these cases the organs are distinctly enlarged, exhibiting a diffuse hypertrophy, so that they may be of the size of walnuts, and may interfere with swallowing and respiration. General hypertrophy is particularly liable to involve the pharyngeal tonsil in children and thus cause what are generally known as adenoids. In fact, the hypertrophic type of chronic disturbance, whether of the faucial or the pharyngeal tonsils especially affects children and brings about marked respiratory disturbance. In a certain proportion of cases what appears to be a simple hypertrophy is found by the inoculation of guinea-pigs to be tuberculous. While this is the case it is interesting to not, that there may be no recognizable tubercles or caseation, but a diffuse cellular infiltration, with overgrowth of the stroma of these organs.

As above noted, another form of chronic tonsillitis specially involves the crypts (**chronic follicular tonsillitis**) with progressive distension of these crypts by desquamated cells, etc., until they become filled by

large cheesy plugs.

Tuberculosis.—Tuberculosis may involve the tonsils and may, as above noted, be apparently primary, and then of an unobtrusive type, or there may be pharyngeal tonsillar tuberculosis secondary to pulmonary or laryngeal disease. In this secondary tuberculosis of the pharynx the superficial tubercles break down and form shallow ulcers.

Syphilis.—Syphilis in the secondary stage may show itself as an acute catarrhal inflammation, or there may develop mucous plaques tending to give place to shallow ulceration. There are cases of primary chance,

as again of gummas of the submucous tissue.

THE LARYNX AND TRACHEA

Etiological factors of importance in the causation of disease of the larynx and trachea are the characters of the respired air, and of the secretions coughed out from below it, and the state of nearby organs, such as the pharynx and the thyroid. Finally, it is of interest that the phenomenon of "catching cold" has this physiological basis, that anemia and hyperemia of the larynx can be induced by the application of heat and cold to areas of the skin far remote from the larynx itself.

Abnormalities. Absence of the larynx occurs in conjunction with grave defects that are incompatible with the continuance of life. Hypoplasia occurs in the subjects of early castration, giving rise to the modification of voice often observed in such persons. The epiglottis may be fissured, and the sinuses of Morgagni may be so deep as to form definite pouches. The anomalies of most practical importance are atresia or narrowing of the tube, fistulous communication with the æsophagus and persistence of the branchial clefts.

Circulatory Disturbances.—The laxity of the submucosa is chiefly responsible for the rapid appearance and disappearance of phenomena

associated with the blood supply of these parts.

Anemia of the larynx may be an early indication of systemic anemia or even of tuberculosis.

Hyperemia may result from infection, from the effect of dust or irritating gases, and from excessive use of the voice; long continuance of hyperemia may lead to a permanent dilatation of the veins (phlebectasia laryngea). Hemorrhage may result from trauma, ulceration, hemorrhidia, scurvy or phosphorus poisoning, and a hematoma so arising at this site may cause suffocation. Edema of the glottis is the most important circulatory change from a practical standpoint. The acute type is generally of inflammatory origin; the less acute forms arise in patients suffering from cardiac or renal dropsy or from the pressure of cervical or mediastinal tumors or aneurysms. Those parts in which the submucosa is the most lax are most prone to the disease, viz., the aryepiglottic folds, the epiglottis, the false cords, the arytenoid cartilages, and less often the vocal cords.

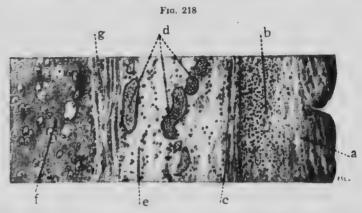
Inflammation.—Acute Laryngitis.—According to the course and the intensity of the inflammation, the appearance of different cases of inflammation may vary widely, and the most striking feature generally serves to give a characteristic name to the inflammation. Thus we speak of catarrhal, membranous, phlegmonous, or ulcerative laryngitis, as well as of certain specific forms, such as tuberculous or syphilitic laryngitis, or those occurring in variola, glanders, leprosy, or rhino-

scleroma.

Catarrhal Laryngitis.—This represents an early stage of inflammation, seen often by the laryngologist, excited by a variety of irritants, arising in the infective fevers, and is a prominent feature in such diseases as influenza and whooping cough. Just as in the nose, a preliminary redness and swelling are followed by secretion of a fluid at first clear, later cloudy or purulent, not often crusting upon the surface. Superficial erosions are common, and the appearance of traces of blood, train hemorrhage produced by violent coughing, frequent. Influenzal infection is often nasal at first, whereas that of whooping cough is often tracheal. Inflammatory affections of the larynx are assisted and extensified, and even at times inaugurated, by the excessive use of tobacco and alcohol. A definite ill-effect on the larynx cannot but the from the practice of "inhaling" the smoke of even the mildest space, to say nothing of the greatly increased absorption of nicotine at occurs through the delicate mucosa of the tract lower than the

Membranous Laryngitis.—The membrane, due to whatever cause, ists of fibrin, moist with serum, entangling in its meshes leukocytes dead cells of the part, as well as bacteria. The superficial cells be killed and form part of the membrane; a coagulation necrosis have gone down to some depth, and layers even lower than the sa be comprised; in such a case, the membrane being pulled off, with it the upper layers of the underlying tissues, and a bleeding results; of this form of inflammation, diphtheria gives a good

example, but it is by no means safe to rely upon this as a sign by which to recognize diphtheria, because a membrane overlying columnar epithelium is more readily removed than a membrane of like density



Section from a case of membranous tracheitis: a, membrane replacing mucosa; b, outer layers of submucosa, necrotic and infiltrated with leukocytes; c, muscularis mucosæ; d, engorged vessels of submucosa, e, deepest layers of submucosa; f, cartilage.



Suppurative perichondritis of larynx: a, infiltrated and necrotic inner wall of abscess; b, cartilage laid bare and surrounded by abscess cavity.

over squamous epithelium, and diphtheria may exist with any sort of membrane or even without one; and, on the other hand, the pyogenic cocci are capable of causing a membrane not distinguishable in appearance from that of diphtheria.

Phlegmonous Laryngitis. — Phlegmonous laryngitis is an occasional sequel of ulceration, or even of diphtheria or erysipelas, and may reach the cartilages, setting up a perichondritis; in this last, sequestration of a part of the cartilage may occur, and a fistula remain.

Chronic Laryngitis. — Chronic laryngitis, of non-specific order, leads to a definite hypertrophy of the mucosa and submucosa, which is sometimes quite local-

ized into warty, gray areas (pachydermia laryngis verrucosa); these latter are often found on the vocal cords.

Tuberculous Laryngitis.—It happens frequently that in advanced pulmonary tuberculosis the larynx becomes infected from the bacillus-

laden sputum, with the result that ulceration or a diffuse infiltration results. A tubercle, caseating and discharging, will leave an ulcer, or there may be shallow erosions whose relation to the tuberculous infection is not at once evident, or there may be a diffuse, granular overgrowth, definitely tuberculous, which may subsequently caseate in a number of places.

Syphilitic Laryngitis.—Like tuberculosis, this may be evidenced by congestion, a diffuse infiltration or the formation of gummas, the epiglottis and the vocal cords being liable to show the lesions. The tissues sometimes become rough and warty with the overgrowths, and in parts where there is considerable ulceration a good deal of deformity may result.

Glanders, leprosy, actinomycosis, and rhinoscleroms are all able to give origin to ulceration of the larynx.



Carcinoma of the larynx. (From the Pathological Museum of McGill University.)

Regressive and Progressive Tissue Change.—Atrophy of mucosa, submucosa, muscle and cartilage, calcification of cartilage and such changes occur in natural or premature senescence. Of progressive changes, the commonest is the papilloma or papillary fibroma, a warty excrescence often seen on the vocal cords, consisting of fibrous tissue overlaid by squamous epithelium, which often recurs after it has been removed yet does not often show indications of carcinoma. Like this is the more flattened nodular fibroma which is scarcely papillate or adapoid, found on the vocal cords of singers. Enchondroma, lipoma, myxoma, lymphangioma, adenoma, cysts, and even thyroid tumors are seened in the larynx and trachea, and carcinoma is the most frequent

malignant growth, usually of the squamous variety. Sarcoms is rare, and the larynx and traches are not usual sites for secondary growth.

Alterations in Size and Shape. Obstruction of the lumen may be caused by ordema, inflammatory infiltration, tumors, exostoses, and atresia, or narrowing, by contraction of scar tissue, or as the result of pressure from the outside by agencies such as thyroid tumors, peritracheal abscesses, enlarged lymph nodes, or aneurysms, most of which may also cause perforation of its walls.

THE BRONCHI

The pathological changes found in the bronchi are diverse, according to the anatomical nature of the part affected; the larger bronchi, approximating to the structure of the trachea and larynx, are likely to be subject to changes similar to the changes seen in those structures, while the terminal bronchioles are so intimately connected with the air sacs of the lungs that lesions of the latter are certain to affect the former.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Passive congestion of the bronchi is found typically in connection with valvular diseases of the heart; the mucous membrane and the underlying structures are swollen, the surface is deep red in color, and an increase in secretion is seen. Petechial hemorrhages occur in severe inflammations, in those suffering from severe systemic infections and in instances of hemorrhagic diathesis.

Inflammation. — Bronchitis, while often universal, is not necessarily so; in the larger tubes it is generally associated with tracheitis, in the terminal bronchioles with lobular pneumonia. It arises by extension from the trachea in all or any of the conditions in which tracheitis is found, including the infective fevers, while it constantly accompanies emphysema, bronchiectasis, and pneumonia, and is almost certain to accompany the development of the passive congestion in heart disease. The bronchi are reddened, covered with a mucoid or a purulent secretion, in which latter case squeezing the lung tissue leads to the expression of tiny drops of mucopus from the openings of the bronchioles.

Acute Bronchitis.—In the simple catarrhal form hypersecretion is a frequent, though not a necessary characteristic, for a small amount of sticky mucus may be seen in cases of so-called "dry catarrh." In cases where secretion is abundant it is likely soon to become purulent, and in cases of passive congestion, especially where there is cedema, there may be a very abundant, thin, watery secretion, the so-called "serous catarrh."

Purulent Bronchitis.—In cases that do not quickly recover, this may be a disease of serious import, for the walls become infected with putrefactive organisms, and the purulent secretion may become intensely fetid, and the likelihood of destruction of the bronchial wall

and consequent abscess, is increased. This is the so-called putrid or

gangrenous bronchitis.

d

e

d is

al n s.

y h y st n

le

ρf

١t

n

is

ie

In fibrinous bronchitis there may be desquamation of the epithelium, congestion, ædema, and infiltration of the submucosa, while on the free surface there is an abundant exudate, fibrinous and richly cellular, which in sections of the lung is often seen to fill the bronchus completely. Such a microscopic picture does not necessarily mean that the bronchus is impervious to air. It is worthy of note that in bronchial asthma, a clear, glassy, viscid secretion is expectorated in "pearls," which are found on closer examination to be capable of extension into a long spiral around a central thread; as the tube cast is a "cast" of the urinary tubule, so the "Curschmann's spiral" is a cast of the bronchiole. Neither this, nor the "Charcot-Leyden' crystal, is pathognomonic of asthme.

As in the larynx and trachea, membranous bronchitis is usually, but not always, the result of infection by the diphtheria bacillus.



Fibrinous bronchitis Cast of expectorated fibrinous exudate. (Pathological Museum, McGull University.)

Chronic Bronchitis.—The point of most importance in which this differs from the acute form is that it tends to be productive, the wall being definitely hypertrophic; even the mucosa may be rough and polypoid, due to the irregular contractions of areas of fibrosis. Yet in a very long-continued inflammation, the products may be absorbed, and the mucous glands, muscles, and cartilages atrophy, so that the bronchus may finally be dilated and thin-walled. The specific forms of bronchits scarcely differ from tracheitis and laryngitis from the same causes—tuberculosis, syphilis, etc.—unless it be in their greater rarity.

Foreign Bodies, etc.—A foreign body, inhaled, is likely to fall into the right bronchus, because it is larger and more vertically situated than the left; if it completely obstruct the bronchus, collapse of the

part of the lung supplied will follow: if the body inhaled be septic, or if the trauma be considerable, a putrid bronchitis and abscess may be quickly set up; at the best, there is likely to be localized inflammation and ultimately a fibroid induration. Broncholiths, masses of inspissated secretion in which lime salts have been deposited, are occasionally

found, especially in bronchiectasis.

Progressive Tissue Changes.—The hypertrophy which may result from chronic bronchitis seems to form a starting point for many kinds of tumors, such as chondroma, osteoma, myxoma, lipoma, and adenoma, which have been observed to occur relatively frequently in bronchic ectasis. On the whole, however, benign new growths of the bronchus are very rare. Both carcinoma and sarcoma of the bronchi occur as primary growths, although infrequently. Careful study shows that, following chronic inflammation, the bronchial mucosa is liable to present areas of metaplasia from cylindrical into squamous epithelium, and some of the cancerous growths show epitheliomatous tendencies. Secondary growths of both orders are often seen.

Alterations in the Lumen.—Perforation.—Perforation of the bronchus may arise from foreign body or from inflammation, while caseation of lymph nodes, carcinoma of the osophagus, abscess or aneurysm

may break in from the outside.

Occlusion.—Foreign bodies, masses of secretion, moist or dry (broncholiths), intrabronchial tumors, or the contraction following a syphilitic ulceration may occlude the bronchus; or from without, the pressure of enlarged lymph nodes, of mediastinal tumors, or aneurysms may bring about a similar effect. If the obstruction be complete, the air in that part of the lung is gradually absorbed by the blood and collapse follows; whereas, if it be only partial, the alveoli are dilated,

and emphysema ensues.

Bronchiectasis.—This is a diseased state in which the bronchi are dilated and often distorted, by reason of increased intrabronchial pressure combined with weakness of the walls of the tubes; the resulting enlargement may be single or multiple, local or generalized, and according to its form one recognizes saccular, cylindrical, fusiform, and varicose dilatations. The wall may be atrophic or hypertrophic, and within the lumen is seen to be encircled by ridges, which represent the less yielding muscular and elastic parts of the wall, while the more yielding connective tissue has given way. The hypertrophic form is found most often in a highly fibroid lung in which an irregular, heightened pressure is found as a result of some parts of the lung being cut off entirely from their supply of air and the pressure in other parts being correspondingly higher than normal; pleural adhesions, too, may be so situated as to pull upon a bronchus in two opposite directions at the same time.

The existence of a bronchiectasis is usually evident to the naked eye; even if the dilatations are not of very great size, it may be possible to trace the tubes almost to the periphery of the lung, and their mucosa is

almost certain to show evidences of the accompanying bronchitis, while collapse, compression, cavitation, or induration of the neighboring lung tissue may be visible.

THE LUNGS

Abnormalities.—The anomalies of the lungs are unimportant; variations in the lobulation, especially of the right lung, are often seen.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Gdema.—Where death has been slow, there is almost certainly to be found some ordern of the lungs, which arises from the laxity of the vessels of a failing circulatory system assisted by the toxic or infective manifestations that we have previously referred to as likely to occur in the last hours of life. The lung is heavier and firmer than normal, and on squeezing it, a thin, watery fluid exudes. In this fluid there are no constant cellular elements, but accidental blood corpuscles, leukocytes, or lining alveolar cells may be seen. This is the so-called agonal orderna.

Congestive Cdema is found accompanying passive hyperemia, the posterior (dependent) parts of the lungs being most affected; the fluid, from long continuance of the congestion may be mixed with blood or blood pigment. Inflammatory orderna may be found in the early stage of pneumonia, in the vicinity of pneumonic areas, and sometimes in cases of bacteriemia; cellular elements are often present, and the fluid is more albuminous than in the previous forms. The most interesting, and the least understood form is acute fulminating odema, which may come on very suddenly with dyspnœa and the free expectoration of large quantities of thin, watery sputum; it seems to be the result of a sudden rise of pulmonic blood pressure, and is associated with aortitis and other forms of arteriosclerosis. Experimentally, the injection of adrenin sometimes causes it in animals. Microscopically, edema of the lungs is not shown by any change of the tissue, although if the fluid he strongly albuminous, the coagulated albumin may be seen as a uniform structureless shadow in the alveoli.

n

n

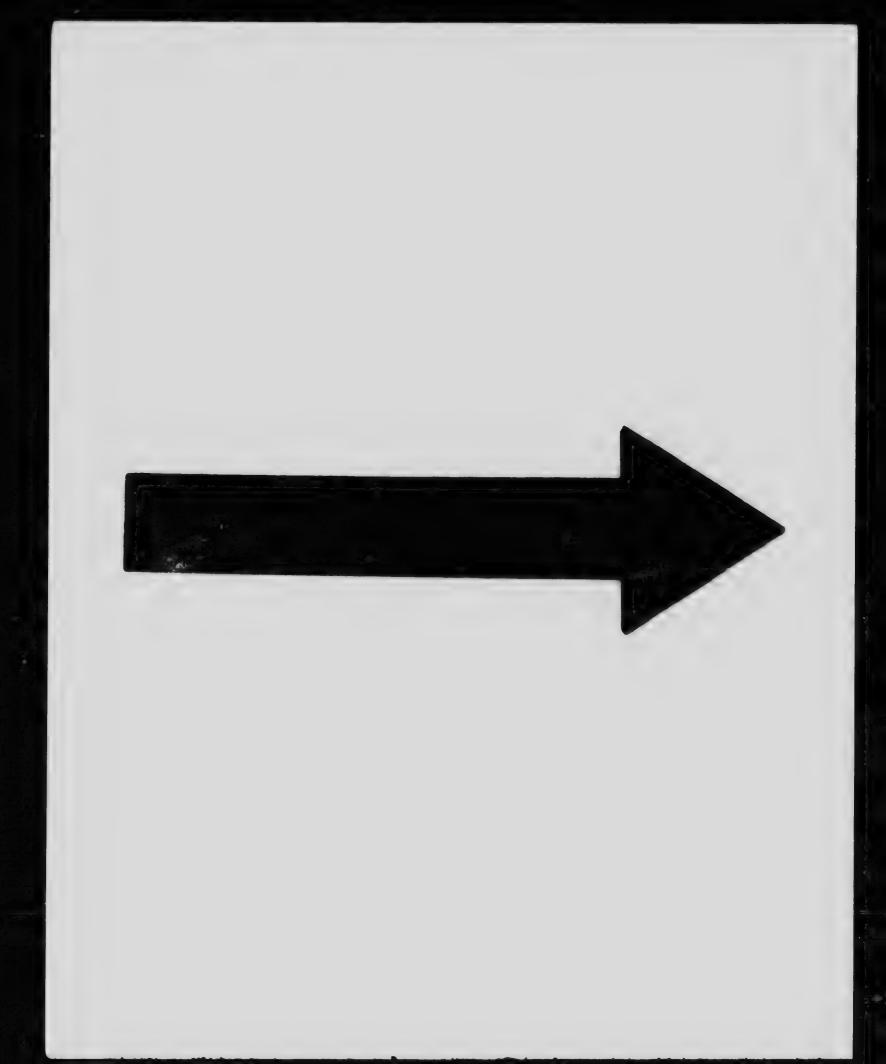
ı

g e e

е

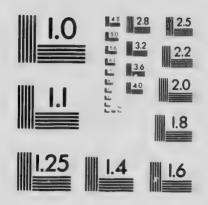
0

Hyperemia.—Hyperemia or passive congestion of the lung arises when there is obstruction to free outflow of blood from the lungs, or when there is deficient heart power; in many cases, respiratory movement is weak, and there is damaged heart muscle, in which case the combination is responsible. The blood is allowed to remain in the lesser circulation longer than it should normally; this stagnation, or slow circulation, is most marked in the dependent parts of the lungs, the posterior halves of both the lobes in the recumbent, the lower halves of the lower lobes in those who sit; this postural type is called hypostatic congestion. Obstruction to the outflow from the lungs may be due directly to a valvular lesion, such as a stenosis of the mitral valve, but more often is due to an unemptied state of the left auricle, from whatever cause. We ever the heart is incompetent, it is to be remembered that the step test follows incomplete emptying of the left auricle is passive congestion.



MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)





APPLIED IMAGE Inc

1653 East Main street Rolhester New York 14609 USA (716) 482 0360 Phone

(716) 288 - 5989 - Fax

of the lungs. The congested lung is enlarged, firm, less elastic than usual, and of a dark red or purple color; with long continuance, a fibrosis of the lung occurs, and from the dark color and the increased firmness. this has been called cyanotic induration. Where much blood is broken down in the course of a long-continued congestion, the pigment stains the tissues and the predominant rusty color leads to the term "brown induration" being employed. In such a lung, there are seen in the alveoli, or in the fluid expressed from the squeezed lung, large, flat cells, generally circular, laden with brown pigment granules—the "cells of heart failure" or "cardiac" cells, which are the desquamated cells that in their lifetime lined the alveoli. The microscopic appearance of the congested lung is readily interpreted; the vessels in the interalveolar septa are congested, tortuous and varicose, and seem to jut into the alveoli in a succession of bead-like projections. Blood corpuscles are apt to appear in the alveoli. With this, there is an increase of the fibrous tissue of the interalveolar septa, which are often richly cellular, the increase being due to the numbers of fibroblasts. Very characteristic are the "cardiac" cells mentioned above, and in longstanding cases the pigment is not confined to these but is seen in the septa themselves.

Hemorrhage.— Blood free in the lung is usually from the pulmonary vessels, but it may be aspirated from the nose or mouth or may come in from an aneurysm external to the lung; one of us (McC.) has described an aortic aneurysm expanding in the upper lobe of the lung. This, however, is a rare occurrence; the common mode of production of pulmonary hemorrhage is by erosion of a vessel in tuberculous or other ulceration or its rupture by trauma. In tuberculous cavitation the blood vessels being very resistant may be left projecting into a cavity as a loop or even crossing from side to side. Such a vessel is unsupported, and its wall being degenerated a rupture may ensue, or an aneurysmal dilatation which later ruptures. Death does not so often result from a single large hemorrhage as from the effect of repeated

hemorrhages.

Infarct.—An infarct is the area in which a hemorrhage occurs as a result of the blood supply to it being cut off by a clot lodged in the vessel supplying it. The typical infarct is cone-shaped, sharply defined, the base of the cone usually situated at the pleural surface, the apex innermost at the point where the clot is lodged; it is elevated above the cut surface of the lung, is dark red or purplish, and firm. The pleural surface is at first smooth, but becomes roughened by the fibrinous deposit that results from reactive inflammation. The edges are usually sharp, and with the lapse of time may become gray from fibrin and leukocytes, while the centre may (rarely) soften. Microscopically, the air sacs are distended with blood corpuscles, and the relation of the septa to one another is unchanged; the nuclei of the tissue cells may stain poorly. At the periphery of the infarctous area leukocytes are usually abundant.

With the lapse of time the infarct tends to be absorbed: with the breaking up of the corpuscles and the setting free of pigment the alveolar spaces begin to be reëstablished, and circulation restored. infection occur, abscess will follow, but necrosis and cicatrization are not common in the lung.

Arising as infarcts do, in valvular diseases of the heart, it may be that the capillary walls are degenerated, and rupture is brought

about by the force of the collateral circulation acting on the capillaries that are full (from the bronchial arteries). It is still debated whether the hemorrhage occurs per rhexin

or per diapedesin.

than

brosis

nness.

roken

stains

brown

n the

e. flat

"cells

l cells

rance

inter-

to jut

d cor-

crease

richly

Very

long-

in the

onary

me in

cribed

This.

on of other

n the

avity

nsup-

or an

often eated

as a

n the fined,

apex

above

inous

sually

and a

v, the

f the

may

S HEE

Embolism.—Although this is dealt with in connection with the vascular system, it may be pointed out that fat embolism occurs in the lungs in the case of fracture of a long bone. where fat is picked up by the blood from the marrow; in fresh tissue the fat globules may be seen and stained in the vessels. Particles of fibrin or even large thrombi may be detached from the systemic veins. and, passing through the heart, may lodge in the lung; if a large vessel be blocked, instant death may be the result.

Secti n from an infarct of the lung, showing central portion. The alveolar walls stain poorly; the alveoli are distended with blood in which are occasional pigment-holding cells, staining deeply.

Diseased States Due to Disturbance of the Respiratory Function .-

Atelectasis. This is the state in which the air sacs are partially or completely undistended by air. Complete airlessness is called apneumatosis. The true atelectatic state is that in which the lungs have never been distended; in it the bronchi are lying in folds longitudinally, and the alveolar walls are in contact with each other, to be thrown apart and distended with the first breath inspired. A persistence of the fortal state, with a failure of proper expansion, may be found in debilitated and premature children, especially those with such a developmental defect as hypoplasia of the lung or a diaphragmatic hernia; or with bronchial obstruction by foreign body, by meconium, or by secretion or by compression of the thorax. Not only in infants thes atelectasis occur, but in weakly or moribund adults it may dise.

When there is a mechanical cause allowing the egress but not the cress of air, the respiratory act is not of itself sufficient to produce a fate of airlessness, but the residue of air that cannot be expelled is only absorbed by the blood until the alveolus, being empty, collapses

completely, with what may be regarded as a compensatory dilatation and congestion of the vessels of the alveolar walls.

External pressure upon the lung or a part of it induces a compression atelectasis. Fluid or air in the pleural cavity, an elevated diaphragm, a mediastinal tumor, enlargement of the heart or pericardium, thickening of the pleura or distortion of the spine may all be effective, not only by reason of direct pressure but also by indirect interference

with proper respiration.

When the whole lung is atelectatic it lies high up in the thorax, close to the spinal column, possesses the bulk of a moderate sized adult fist, and is brownish red in color, or if anemic, is gray. From its resemblance to flesh it is sometimes called "carnified." It does not crepitate, and it sinks in water; if squeezed below the surface of the water, a few bubbles may be expressed, chiefly from the bronchioles. If only a part of the lung be atelectatic, the surface of that part is smooth, dark, and depressed below the surface of the rest of the organ.

In the fœtal state, the lining cells of the air sacs are polyhedral or rounded, and project from the walls; with complete expansion of the lung they become flattened, and with a subsequent acquirement of the atelectatic state, they once more assume their former shape.

Emphysema.—The term interstitial emphysema describes the state in which the tissues of the body at large or the connective tissues of the lung are infiltrated with air, while emphysema, pure and simple, denotes the overdistension of the air sacs. When this is generalized, there are certain well-marked physical peculiarities in the thorax. The accessory muscles of respiration are well developed, the neck appears short and thick, the chest is enlarged, especially in the anteroposterior direction, so as to be barrel-shaped, while the abdomen is relatively sunken. Upon opening the thorax the lungs are voluminous, relatively of light weight, and do not collapse. The tissue is inelastic, less crepitant than normal, keeps the imprint of the fingers and feels like "a bag of feathers." On the surface, the pigmentation is slight, the surface pale, and at times the individual air saes can be seen with the naked eye like little vesicles. In advanced cases, especially at the edges of the lungs, individual sacs may become of great size, giving the lung a bullous appearance (bullous emphysema).

Microscopically, as seen in Fig. 217, p. 432, in a case of emphysema there is marked atrophy of the alveolar walls, and many of them are ruptured; several alveoli are thus thrown into one, and the resulting sac takes a shape approximating to the circle. In the thinning-out and rupture of the walls the blood vessels necessarily are flattened, thinned out, and many are thus ob terated; the diminution of space that occurs in the remaining vessels due to pressure throws increased work upon the

heart and the right ventricle distends and hypertrophies.

Inflammation. - Pneumonia. - Here consideration is given to the pathological aspect of an inflammation of the lung itself—a pneumonia or pneumonitis-and not to the manifestations elsewhere that are a premion
hragm,
thickve, not
ference
thorax,
I adult
resempitate,
part of the disease
may not, for a m
interest chiefly in
necessary that on
interstitial tissue o
mation of the air
important is it for
agents are, and di
respond to irritati
said in the genera
in speed, in intensi
prominent, but at
occurrences; the bl
of serum and a diap

of the ent of e. ate in of the enotes

Iral or

atation

re are essory t and ection, Upon eight, ormal, hers."

nd at little ungs, ullous

sema
n are
alting
t and
nned
cours
n the

the ionia ire a

part of the disease that is termed by the clinician pneumonia. Yet we may not, for a moment, disregard the fact that the reader finds his interest chiefly in the clinical manifestations of the disease. It is necessary that one see, at the outset, that an inflammation of the interstitial tissue of the lung is just as truly a pneumonitis as an inflammation of the air sacs, though by no means so common. Even more important is it for him to recognize that, numerous as the causative agents are, and diverse as are the modes of infection, yet the air sacs respond to irritations of all sorts in much the same way. Just as was said in the general discussion of inflammation, the process may vary in speed, in intensity, and now this feature and now that other may be prominent, but at the bottom of them all lie the same fundamental occurrences; the blood vessels become congested, there is an outpouring of serum and a diapedesis of leukocytes, a formation of fibrin, a contemporaneous killing or injuring of the cells of the part, especially those that line the air sac, and even a multiplication of those cells that are mildly irritated- all this occurring in the closed-in space of the air sac, so that the products of the inflammatory process fill the air sac to the exclusion of air, and the disposal of such products constitutes a step to be performed by the body in the process of healing, over and above what has to be done in a case of inflammation on a surface.

Almost all the known pathogenic organisms have the power of causing pneumonia; the Fränkel-Weichselbaum diplococcus of pneumonia, Friedländer's bacillus of pneumonia, the Streptococcus pyogenes, the Staphylococcus albus and aureus, B. tuberculosis, B. typhi abdominalis, B. coli, B. influenzæ, B. pestis, B. anthracis, and B. diphtheriæ include nearly all. While each of these is able unaided to produce the disease, it actually happens very often that the infection is mixed. As to the manner of infection everyone of these bacilli can reach the lung either by the bronchial tract (aërogenic pneumonia) or by the blood or lymph (hematogenic, lymphogenic pneumonia). As to what clinical type of disease will be set up by a special organism, we can say little more than that there is no unvarying rule; the pneumococcus sets up most often a lobar pneumonia, but may cause the lobular form, while there seems no reason to suppose that any of these organisms is unable to cause a lobar pneumonia, Be this as it may, lobar pneumonia in the clinical acceptation of the term, is a very different kind of disease from any other form of pneumonia; it is essentially a general blood infection with a local manifestation in the lung; histologically this local manifestation has close resemblance to other pulmonary inflammations.

These pulmonary infections are due, it will be seen, to bacteria, many of which are habitual residents of the body; under what conditions do these bacteria gain power to attack the tissues? Perhaps the body is attacked at a moment of chilling or at a time when resistance is in some other way lowered, or the bacteria become increasingly virulent; the tacre fact that a particular lobe is attacked seems to indicate that this

is a place of least resistance. Lobar pneumonia is that form in which a part of a lobe, a whole lobe or several lobes are affected; all other forms of pneumonia are of the lobular type in which the unit affected is the lobule. The names by which the different forms are characterized are many, some based upon the mode of conveyance of the causative agent. some upon the anatomical character of the lesion. Among the clinical types of lobular pneumonia are bronchopneumonia, in which the infection ravels down one or many bronchi, thus obtaining a lobular distribution: miliary pneumonia, in which the blood stream infects multiple foci at once; septic and metastatic pneumonia, in which the lung is affected in multiple areas as an expression of a widespread bacteriemia; hypostatic pneumonia, in which the lobules attacked are necessarily in areas that are already the subjects of passive congestion, and terminal pneumonia in which the lung is attacked because it, in common with the rest of the body is in a low (ante mortem) state of resistance. All these have a lobular distribution of the infection. While the character of the exudate may sometimes enable us to decide what is the infection, our knowledge of the process of inflammation will render us cautious as to depending absolutely upon this, and the smear and the culture are safer means of differentiation.

Acute Lobar Pneumonia.—The well-known division of the course of the disease into four stages was never accurate and has outlived its usefulness. It is clear enough that congestion is followed by consolidation; the lungs seen at autopsy frequently present an appearance well described in the term "red hepatization," often show the state of gray hepatization, and very often are seen in a moist, gray state well

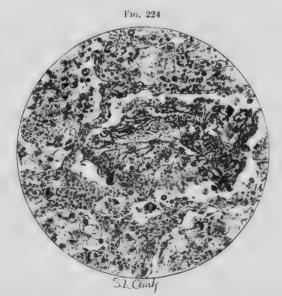
described by the term purulent infiltration. The period of congestion or engorgement is undoubtedly brief, rarely seen by the pathologist and often referred to by careless clinicians as "congestion of the lungs," "threatening pneumonia," or some such term. What the clinician can observe at this stage is merely the moist state of the bronchi and bronchioles; considering the frequency of bronchitis, all the preliminary signs of the onset of pneumonia are required before he may make even a likely guess as to whether pneumonia is or is not to supervene. The lung at such a time is reddened, distinctly cedematous; if seen at autopsy it oozes abundant blood on section and is curiously brittle. This quickly gives place to consolidation, in which the lung becomes heavy, swoller, firm, pits on pressure, and is more friable than normal. It is intensely red, owing to vascular hyperemia rather than to the presence of red corpuscles in the exudate, and the fluid scraped off the cut surface with a knife is definitely turbid, and blood-stained. Microscopically, the capillaries are congested, the lining epithelium of the air sacs is swollen, often desquamated, and fibrin and leukocytes are present, the fibrin threads making a complete mesh in the air sac just as a blood-clot adheres to the sides of a glass vessel. Red corpuscles are present. From the red solid appearance of the tissue in this state, it was likened to liver, and the term hepatization

Fig. 223



Vente lobar pneumonia (gray hepatization). The lower lobe is involved (Pathological Museum.

McGill University.)



and a few leukocytes. (Hare.)

ch a orms the are ent, nical

tion ion; foci eted ypo-reas rest hese the

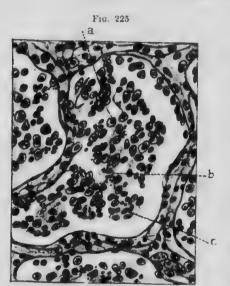
are
e of
its
idawell
e of
well

our s to

rely s as uch oist of are seu-sed, on da-

ite, sid, the and ete ass of sion

applied to it. To understand properly how this changes to the so-called gray hepatisation, a consideration of the microscopic appearance is necessary. After the lapse of a little time the fibrin threads begin to break up under the action of enzymes, and just as the blood clot shrinks away from the sides of the glass vessel, so the exudate or clot shrinks from the sides of the air sac and microscopically a clear zone (actually filled with serum) appears around the exudate; the fibrin is now being digested, dead cells are being disintegrated; and the "scavenging" effect of leukocytes and proliferated air sac cells becomes apparent; leukocytes are now present in so great numbers that the tissue takes the che acteristic color of lymph tissue—gray; disintegration of the



Section from a lung with acute lobar pneumonia in the stage of gray hepatization. All the fibrin here has been disintegrated: a, desquamated alveolar cell; b, disintegrating leukocyte; c, normal leukocyte.

exudate proceeds, until the air sac contents become thinner and thinner, until there remains only lymph, which is absorbed, and air once more enters the air sac. Or it may be that the loosened plug of partly disintegrated exudate is suddenly dislodged by a cough into the bronchiole, and appears in the sputum, where we can recognize the fibrin, the leukocytes, the desquamated epithelium and the bacteria. This disintegrating stage, with its numerous leukocytes is that of gray hepatization. The surface is granular, f. polor, the lung is firm, pro - ented by the ribs, the parties are longer glassy but dulled L a fine fibrinous exudation, the lung is airless, friable and sinks in water. The cut surface looks granular, and scraping yields a fluid no longer

blood stained, but more turbid than ever. As time elapses, the disintegrative process goes on, the lung losing its firmness, the surface becoming more lax, and the stage of gray hepatization has definitely passed into that of resolution. Many cases, however, do not exhibit this course, but appear at the death of the patient in a state of "purulent infiltration," which differs from that just described as gray hepatization only in this—that the lung is more moist, and the scraped surface, granular for an instant, quickly becomes clouded over by a thin layer of fluid pus which exudes from the alveoli and bronchioles; the tissue is even more friable than before, because the alveolar septa have undergone a considerable degree of disintegration. One can well imagine that, had life been prolonged, the entire affected area would soon have become one large abscess.

ılled

ces-

reak

inks

inks

ally

eing

ng'

ent;

ikes

the

sac

hin-

only

and

sac.

ned

xu-

y a

and

we

ko-

he-

dis-

ım-

ray

is

mg

the

SSV

ous

ess,

he

ınd

ger

lis-

ace

ely

bit

ru-

ti-

ce,

er

18

er-

ne

ve

As to the site of the pneumonic process, our own figures show the right side affected in 48 per cent., the left in 30 per cent., and both in 22 per cent. of cases. When both lungs are affected it is common to find one farther advanced in the disease than the other. The lower lobes are more often the seat of the disease than the upper, but it is not infrequent to find atypical forms such as "apical," "central," and "creeping" pneumonia, terms which explain themselves.

Considering the nature of the disease, viz., that it is a generalized infection, it is to be expected that the infection in the lungs may be associated with inflammation elsewhere; pleurisy, empyema, pericarditis, endocarditis, meningitis, osteitis and arthritis are those of commonest occurrence.

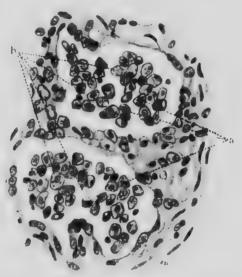
Instead of proceeding to resolution, the exudate may remain in the alveoli and organize (as might a clot elsewhere), giving rise to the rare instances of unresolved pneumonia. It is a good clinical rule to remember that this is one of the least common causes of continuance of the pneumonic febrile state, and he who keeps the figures of frequency of occurrence in his mind will wisely dispose of other possibilities, especially empyema, before coming to this diagnosis. Secondary infection may lead to a breaking down of the lung tissue causing abscess or gangrene, closely related conditiors. Especially if putrid bronchitis or bronchiectasis have been present, is gangrene apt to supervene, the lung becoming pulpy, greenish in color, and stinking. A line of demarcation rarely exists, and irregular cavities with shaggy, necrotic walls are seen. Even this may heal by a fibrosis, the part of the lung affected finally shrinking to a dense, indurated mass.

Acute Lobular Pneumonia.—Only rarely is this a primary disease, save in young children; it is usually the sequel to bronchitis or one of the infectious fevers, measles, whooping cough, influenza, or diphtheria, and the young, the old, or the debilitated are the sufferers. The organisms are the same as in the lobar form, but the pyogenic cocci have a greater tendency to be concerned. A bronchial inflammation that has spread to the bronchioles is very certain to go a short step farther and attack the air sacs. It is all but a safe statement to make that the exudate is more serous than fibrinous, and a striking feature is the presence of large, clear, mononuclear cells, which are, in all probability, the swollen alveolar cells, and these give to the exudate a "catarrhal" quality.

Coming from the bronchi, this disease is apt to attack both lungs, although only one or a part of one may be affected. The damaged lung is congested and in its substance are isolated firm areas, raised above the rest of the surface, gray, red, or yellow in color, and friable in consistence. These scattered areas may grow larger till they coalesce, but they never succeed in producing the uniform solidity of the lobar type of pneumonia. With the possible exceptions noted above, a piece from the middle of one of these areas is microscopically indistinguishable from a similar piece cut from the middle of a lung in lobar pneu-

monia. The individual consolidations pass through red and gray stages, and the sporadic distribution of these areas has led to the lung being likened to a spleen—hence the term "splenization" (not to be commended). When consolidation occurs and resolves, the resolution is apt to progress more quickly than in lobar pneumonia, because the lymph and blood streams are less interrupted, but not the less is it a serious disease, since it attacks at a time of low vitality or complicates other grave disease. Several of the different forms must be considered individually.





Two alveoli from the lung in acute lobular pneumonia, showing looser cell collection in the exudate and absence of fibrin: a, disintegrating leukocytes with granular contents; b, same with fat globules.

Aspiration Preumonia.— A typical example of lobular pneumonia is that known as inhalation or aspiration pneumonia, arising from the aspiration of food, vomitus, or secretion from the nose and mouth during unconsciousness, as in the anesthesia of operations. From the nature of the infecting agent it will be readily understood that the tendency to destruction of the lung tissue, to abscess, and gangrene is greater than usual. It is a frequent occurrence that in surgical cases ending fatally, especially where vomiting has been present, the trachea and bronchi show a greenith tint, suggesting bile-stained stomach contents, and this usually indicates that such have been aspirated. Where life is sufficiently prolonged to allow the pneumonic process to supervene, the profuse sputum, often foetid, shows by the presence of elastic tissue that the lung tissue is being destroyed, and at autopsy scattered or confluent areas of actual abscess formation will be found; the zone surrounding such areas is likely to show a

ng

m-

18

he

8

168

ed

16

th

m

16

æ

a!

ď

11

κÌ

111

a

very intense congestion because seen in so vascular an organ. Septic pneumonia may be caused in other ways than by inhalation; the extension of inflammation from neighboring tissues, such as the mediastinum or from subdiaphragmatic structures, will cause it, as may also infection at the time of injury to de lung as in perforating wound of the lung through the chest wall. Wound of the lung by a rib, where no external wound exists, is more likely to be followed by an unmixed infection and a typical pneuronia, because the wounded area is the place of least resistance for the time being, and the infection is hematogenic.

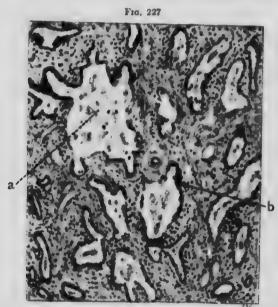
Metastatic or Embolic Pneumonia.—This is allied to the last form. It happens as a manifestation of a general bacteriemia in such diseases as osteomyelitis, thrombophlebitis, arthritis, septic endocarditis, and erysipelas, where a septic embolus becomes the point of origin of a pneumonic focus. No part of the lung is exempt, and the abscesses can be felt as indefinite lumps deep in the tissue or seen as yellow swellings under the pleura, varying in size from that of a pinhead to several centimeters in diameter. The inflammation set up by the septic material brought by the embolus, although circumscribed, is of the nature of a localized pneumonia, but it proceeds straightway to the formation of abscess or gangrene. Of pneumonic nature, strictly speaking, is also the effect of secondary infection in tuberculosis, actinomycosis, or other primary infection.

Hypostatic Pneumonia.—A pneumonic infection occurs very often in those who are debilitated, and because the posterior parts of the lungs are congested and ædematous it is here that the infection strikes, and a diffuse catarrhal pneumonia, definitely localized to this part of the lung, is set up; the general bodily depression has much to do with the infection, for it is known to every clinician that lungs may remain congested and ædematous for months without infect an; but when the individual comes within a few hours of his death, the so-called termininfection takes hold, and thus it is that so many patients suffering

from heart disease die with, if not from a pneumonia.

Chronic Pneumonia.—Care is necessary in considering chronic pure monia not to include the actual reparative process that may follow acute pneumonia, unless an actual lesion of the alveolar septa occ. The term chronic pneumonia presupposes that an irritant is continual and progressively at work. An "unresolved pneumonia" is correctly chronic pneumonia, and the infections of the granulomas, tuberculosis, syphilis, actinomycosis, etc., set up an inflammation that may be so designated. Chronic pneumonias may be divided into (1) the abovementioned secondary indurative pneumonias, (2) pneumonokonioses, the liseases excited by the inhalation of various kinds of dust, and (3) pleurogenetic pneumonias, caused by the extension inward of the infection of a chronic pleurisy, a rare form.

1. Secondary Indurative Pneumonia.—There is a general substitution of fibrous tissue for the soft lung substance, the pleura and interlobular septa being specially prominent. If it occur secondary to a bronchopneumonia, the fibrosis roughly follows the bronchial tree. In an advanced case, seen microscopically, one is struck by the fact, that, whereas normally the greatest part of the section is air space, and the least the walls, here the greater part of the field is solid tissue and the lesser part is air space. The lung is heavy and hard, cuts firmly, is grayish in color, mottled with the black of inhaled dust. Areas of necrosis resembling caseation may be seen, the pleuræ are thickened and often matted together, and the lung may be entirely deformed. Microscopically, the air sacs show as small irregular spaces containing desquamated cells or leukocytes, lined by irregular cubical cells, and



Section from a rise of indurative pneumonia (fibrosis of the lung), showing the extreme fibroid thickening of the alveolar walls and the consequent reduction in size of the alveoli; a, alveolus containing desquamated cells; b, somewhat cubical epithelium lining the air spaces.

separated from one another by wide masses of fibrous tissue. The bronchi are irregular in shape from pressure or traction. Now and then in the fibrous tissue one sees large collections of leukocytes and young fibroblasts indicating areas of acute inflammation in the fibrous tissue, where some infection still continues to operate. This extreme grade of change never follows passive congestion; here, at the most, there is moderate thickening of the septa and the alveoli show many catarrhal cells containing pigment (brown induration).

2. Pneumonokoniosis.—Little, if any, inhaled dust reaches the lungs directly in the air, but it impinges on the bronchial walls, is carried by the leukocytes to the peribronchial lymph collections or to

to a

tree.

fact,

pace.

tissue

rmly,

as of

rened med.

ining

and

broid

a con-

The

and

and

rous

eme

ost,

any

the

, is

r to

the alveolar walls. Wherever it lands it may set up a certain amount of itation, the more so if it particles are sharp-edged, because these actually pierce the walls and set up in the surrounding tissues nodular reactive growths, like tubercles, in which the offending perticles are shut up. In advanced cases the peribronchial lymph nodes may be gritty, and particles may be carried to the abdominal lymph nodes, Different kinds of dust set up different degrees of irritation; the most familiar fo m is anthracosis, from coal dust, found in all adult dwellers ad unimportant; in the case of coal miners, however, the damage cought may be great, and anthracotic tubercles are seen as asses of fibros's with blac' dies, while the entire lung is the infiltrating material is grey and warry; in siderosis particles of iron and steel do the damage, as is seenong needle-grinders, file-makers. and iron-workers of different kinds. The lesions are not very different from those of indurative pneumonia; calcification and even the formation of bone has been seen.

Tuberculosis.—Tuberculosis occurs in the lungs both as an acute and a chronic sease, the Bacillus tuberculosis, discovered in 1882 by Koch, being the essential agent.

As to the mode of infection, it may be stated that tuberculosis is not hereditary, and but few cases of intra-uterine infection a e known to have occurred. As to how the organisms reach the lung there has been much debate; a reasonable statement of the facts seems to be the following: the infection of the lungs is nearly always by the human type of organism; the bovine or the human form may be ingested with food and may h arried by the lymph stream ultimately to the thorax and infect the l s, although this is probably an infrequent happening. Most pelmonar, infections occur by inhalation; of these very few are direct, that is, result from the bacilli being engrafted upon the bronchial surface and setting up a tuberculous bronchitis as a primary lesion. The bacili are usually caught in the mucous membrane, carried to the lymph nodes where the infection may remain (and be subsequently transferred by the lymph stream to the lung), or they may be carried at once by the lymph to the lung. This transference may also occur by the agency of the blood; and cases in which a tuberculous area in a lymph node breaks into a bronchus, a bronchiole or a blood vessel are so obvious as not to require explanation. This last is an unimportant fact, for it happens oftenest in advanced cases. Infection by the skin, especially by the bovine form of the bacillus, happens, though rarely.

Viewed broadly, the greatest dangers to which people are exposed arise from the inhalation of dried sputum or exhalation from the mouth and nose. Personal contact constitutes a grave danger, but being foresee may be guarded against; the infection of houses and rooms, and their subsequent occupation by those who are ignorant of the not, is a great source of risk, and can be obviated only by rigid regulations compelling notification of cases, inspection, and disinfection of

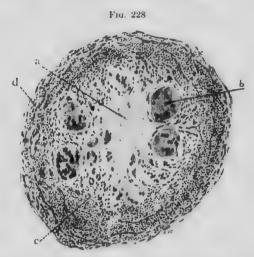
houses. Tuberculous milk, butter, or meat is no more serious menace to the public health than the existence of unmarked contaminated houses and rooms.

From the above considerations it will be seen that, according to the generally accepted views of the present time, pulmonary tuberculosis instead of being primary is, in the majority of cases, truly secondary, and of hematogenic or lymphogenic origin, although the mode of infec-

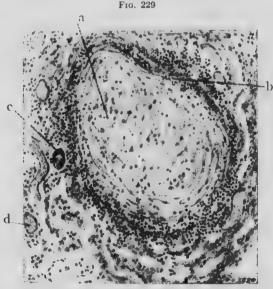
tion is in the first place aërial.

Aërogenic Tuberculosis.—Wherever the bacilli, carried as above stated, lodge in a part of the lung suitable for their growth, they result, according to how numerous and how virulent they are, in a simple tubercle or a small localized area of the nature of a lobular pneumonia. The site of predilection is just below the apex where the excursion of the lung is slight and gaseous interchange slow, or otherwise, however extensive their distribution throughout the lung substance, they tend to grow only in the region or regions of least resistance. Clinically, it will be recalled that if a lesion be found in one apex it is well to search carefully the other apex, and then the apex of the lower lobe of the lung first involved. At first the area involved is small, gelatinous in appearance and imperfectly differentiated from the surrounding tissue. The only physical sign available at this time or even for some time to come may be fine rales in the moist bronchioles of the region. A cellular exudate is thrown into the alveoli, and the vessels become blocked by endothelial proliferation, caseation quickly ensuing. The sharply defined lesion now existent, may even yet heal, and be represented by a fibrous scar, or a fibrous mass with caseous or calcareous centre, and a puckering of the apex of the lung. If, however, the process continue, the bacilli are carried by the lymphatics and secondary similar foci arise on the periphery of the first. The nodules gradually increase in size and coalesce, the caseation increasing with equal pace, until the caseated areas in turn coalesce. The nearby pleura and the lymph nodes become likewise infected. Presently a bronchus is invaded which gives outlet to the broken-down caseous material, and bacilli appear in the sputum, contemporaneously with the formation of the first cavity. A gradual progression of infiltration and overgrowth of tissue in any or in all directions is now followed by the corresponding breaking-down process, so that the whole routine is repeated on an ever-increasing scale of size. The cavities may fill and refill with fluid exudate; if a secondary infection of their contents occur, the process becomes more freely suppurative and in most cases more active. The walls are ragged and fibrous and may be lined by a typical "pyogenic membrane." Most resistant, the septa and the blood vessels may be left bridging the cavity, and when the latter are eroded or form small aneurysms and break, hemorrhage occurs. Hemorrhage may occur in the most minute cavity and thus may be the first symptom to be observed. When a cavity opens into a bronchus and discharges its contents, it is likely that not all the latter will be expelled, but they

may be aspirated elsewhere and set up a tuberculous bronchopneumonia in the tissue nearby. Should the infective agent in this material be



Fubercle from a case of tuberculosis, of medium severity, of the lung: a, central caseation, b, a guant cell; c endothelial cells; d, connective-tissue zone infiltrated with lymphocytes.



Section through early apical tubercle, showing: a, central cascation; b, surrounding cellular infil on with fibrosis; c, giant cell; d, congested capillary outside tubercle, the tubercle itself being all of yessels.

the tubercle bacillus, the resulting pneumonia will be truly tuberculous, at if pyogenic cocci be present, they may set up pneumonia, strictly ronchopneumonia in a tuberculous lung. It does not greatly matter

nace nted

the osis ary, fec-

ted,
ordrele
The
the
exto
will
reh

ing ear-The ome dar by deby tre,

ess ilar ase atil ph ich ear

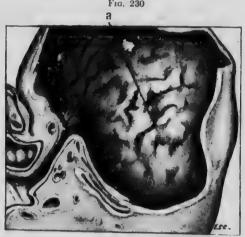
rst sue ing an aid ess

nic be all in

he

be its ey

which is the case, so far as the patient is concerned. Such an infection, if tuberculous, may give origin to a bronchitis in which tubercles form in large numbers along the bronchial tree and subsequently coalesce, so that large caseous masses may be produced, each surrounded by a zone of simple pneumonia. The avascularity of such a large caseous mass is of importance in that the breaking-down process goes on the more rapidly. Seen post mortem, the lung is generally adherent to the thoracic wall, weighty, the upper lobe largely caseous with multiple cavities, while caseous nodules are scattered through the rest of the lung, the largest in the lower lobe being usually at its apex. Variously sized cavities may exist, or the upper lobe may be converted into a thin-walled bag containing air, pus, caseous matter, detritus, and occasionally blood. The more chronic the process, the more smooth and

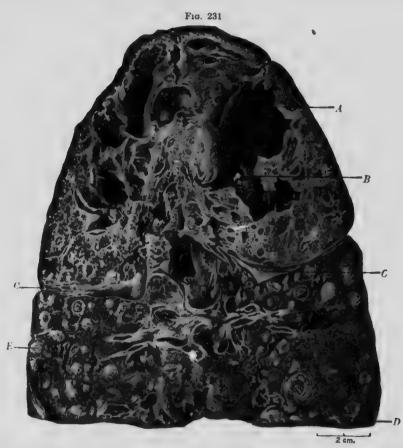


Tuberculous cavity (a) at apex of lung, showing its relation to a bronchus. (Pathological Museum, McGill University.)

fibrous are the walls. The bronchi a inflamed, often ulcerated, and usually communicate with some of the cavities, which often communicate with one another. This state of the lung is called chronic ulcerative tuberculosis or phthisis.

The above-described process is frequently seen; other rarer types of tuberculosis are described under many different names which are rarely used in a uniform fashion. Without going especially into this part of the subject it may be said that all are permutations and combinations of three original kinds of reaction: (1) the individual tubercle, (2) small or large coalesced areas of tuberculosis with caseation, and (3) tuberculous lobular pneumonia. Most cases of the disease at autopsy show all three; now one form of reaction is more prominent clinically, now another. There are two forms frequently referred to which require mention: "galloping consumption" and "fibroid phthisis."

"Galloping consumption" or acute pneumonic phthisis is a term apt to be applied carelessly to any form of pulmonary tuberculosis that runs a very acute course, but should not be used to describe the generalized hematogenous miliary type of the disease; it is characterized by a widespread caseous pneumonic state of a lobe or a whole lung—is, in



Left lung, superior lobe, and upper part of lower lobe, the former containing a number of communicating caverns, brought about by tuberculous infiltration, cascation, and evacuation of the contents though the bronchi: A, aneurysmal dilatation of an artery spanning one margin of a large cavity; B, communication with another cavity; C, C, thickened and adherent pleura between the two involved islates. The pleura over both lobes is thickened, and at the autopsy the cavity had been obliterated to inversal adhesion; D, a small group of tubercles in which cascation is just beginning; B, a fused the position of tubercles, farther advanced that at D. (Hare.)

fact, a combination of caseous tuberculosis and pneumonia, the lesion looking microscopically like the former and the in olvement resembling that of the latter disease. "Fibroid phthisis" is merely a very slowly progressing ulcerative tuberculosis, in which there is ample time and stimulus for a marked degree of protective fibrosis to occur. The fibrous solidification of lung tissue, with its contraction and consequent

cal

ection.

s form

sce, so

a zone

mass more

to the ultiple of the riously into a locca-h and

, and nunirative

types h are this ombiercle, and se at inent

d to

deformity of the lung and even of the chest are the striking features of this type of *uberculosis.

Hematogenic Tuberculosis.—This form of the disease is characterized by the dissemination of the bacilli by the blood either in the lungs alone, or in the lungs in common with all the organs of the body. A caseous focus breaking into a vessel or into a large trunk of the lymphatic system is the usual cause, and the widespread occurrence of tubercles in so many foci at once brings it about that death occurs before any considerable degree of enlargement and caseation occurs in any one of them.

Fra. 232

Caseous tuberculosis (a) passing on to caseous pneumonia. (Path. Mus. McGill Univ.)



Fig. 233

Hematogenous miliary tuberculosis of lung. (Path. Mus. McGill Univ.)

The lung so affected is hyperemic, heavy, and the tubercles are felt, or later seen, as shotty, granular particles in enormous numbers in the tissue, throughout both lungs in the generalized disease, in one or a part of one in the local forms. The bronchi are reddened. From the small size of the tubercles (Fig. 233) each has been likened to a millet seed (milis) and the term miliary has been given to them. Tubercles of the same small size and miliary appearance may also at times be encountered as the result of bronchogenic, not hematogenic infection; in such a case their arrangement is not uniformly diffuse; they occur in little grape-like clusters along the course of individual bronchi.

Lymphogenic Tuberculosis.—Infection of the lungs may occur from a tuberculous caries of the spine or rib, and occasionally by direct extension from a lymph node; the most frequent example, however, is the secondary spread of the disease in the lung itself. Under this heading it may be pointed out that there is still debate as to the part played by the pleura and its lymphatics in the origin of apical tuberculosis. It is held by some that the pleural cavity becomes infected from the lower cervical lymph nodes, and from this, infection most easily involves the apical region of the lung.

Syphilis.—Syphi of the lung is rare, and seen oftenest in the newborn. No doubt some cases considered as syphilitic bronchitis and

features
acterized
he lungs
oody. A
rmphatic
tubercles
fore any
y one of

pneumonia are merely instances of a mixed infection occurring in syphilitic subjects. The disease proper manifests itself as an interstitial fibrosis or as gummas. Gummas are rare, found oftenest near the hilus, and if healed may leave a fissure forming a false lobe (pulmo lobatus). Grayish, translucent when small, gummas may in their later stages appear very like tubercles. The diffuse interstitial form is due to a general widesprea! infiltration by inflammatory products that can be readily understood by anyone who has seen the enormous numbers of spirochetes that infest the lung. The anemic pallor of the organ has led to the condition being described as white pneumonia.

actinomycosis.—Actinomycosis of the lung both as a primary and a secondary infection, conveyed from the mouth by inhalation, or by extension from the mediastinum or cesophagus. Sometimes manifest as miliary nodules, it may, nevertheless, set up a bronchopneumonia and consolidation with cavitation may be found. If very chronic and long continued a fibroid lung may result.

Glauders.—Like actinomyces, the B. mallei may set up an acute pneumonic process or a chronic state characterized by multiple miliary nodules, hardly to be diagnosticated except by the discovery of the bacillus.

Various Infrequent Infections.—There are certain organisms that have been found infecting the lung, capable of setting up either caseating granulomas or diffuse pneumonia or abscesses. Cladothrix, streptothrix, some of the hyphomycetes, aspergillus, and even animal parasites, such as strongylus and distomum Westermanni, have been found. Echinococcus. carried from the liver, may form cysts in the lung as elsewhere.

Regressive Changes.—We have already spoken of the atrophy of the lung seen in emphysema (see Fig. 217, page 432). Here we would merely recall that this emphysematous process is often secondary to a progressive atrophy and disappearance of the elastic tissue of the lung. The chronic deposit of fibrous tissue around the arteries and the bronchi seen in the old, the so-called periarteritis and peribronchitis, is, as the names imply, usually regarded as an inflammatory condition. It is perhaps more properly considered as a progressive than a regressive change.

Progressive Tissue Changes.—Hyper y may be said not to occur in the lung, increase in size being physematous, not hypertrophic. Tumors of primary nature are rather rare; of benign growths fibroma, lipoma, chondroma, and ostooma are found, the last named not to be confounded with the metaplastic formation of bone previously mentioned; adenoma and teratoma are of great rarity. While the lung is a common site for secondary malignant tumors, especially those carried in the blood stream, primary malignant tumors are not very common. Sarcoma is found arising from the lung tissue, lymphosarcoma from the lymph tissue, especially at the root of the lung, and endothelioma from the lining of the lymphatics or from the pleura. Primary carcinomas may originate in the bronchial or the alveolar epithelium

erculosis of I Univ)

cles are numbers , in one . From aed to a o them. also at utogenic diffuse; lividual

owever, der this he part ubercued from ; easily

e newtis and or in the peribronchial mucous glands, and are important from the frequency with which they project into and block the bronchi, with resultant collapse of the lung tissue. All tumors that product secondaries appear with fair frequency in the lung, especially the choricopithelioms, whose tissue of predilection it is.

THE PLEURA

The pleuræ are sacs composed of a thin, loose, connective-tissumembrane containing numerous blood vessels and elastic fibrils and covered by a single layer of flattened endothelial cells. These sac-wall being normally in perfect apposition, the pleural cavities are non existent. Any content, therefore, constitutes an abnormality. No very prone to primary disease, they often suffer by the contiguity of the lungs, and by the relatively free lymphatic communication with the pericardium and the peritoneum. The course of any disease of the pleura is influenced by the constant movement inseparable from respiration.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Hyperemia.—Active hyperemia occurs in inflammatory affections and with congestion of the lung proper, and occasionally from relaxation of tension when thoracentesis has been performed, while passive hyperemia is found in obstruction to the greater or lesser circulation.

Hemorrhage.—Petechiæ, ecchymosis, or even hemorrhage may arise from trauma, in suffocation, in renal and cardiac disease, in severe infections and intoxications and in instances of the hemorrhagic diathesis.

The Existence of Contents in the Pleuræ.—Hematothorax.—Blood may be effused into the pleural cavity in wounds of the chest such as fracture of the ribs, involving the pleura, or by the bursting into it of an aneurysm, in which cases the blood may be unmixed. Often, however, it is mixed with transudate or some product of inflammation, as in the case of certain forms of pleurisy, with new growth, or when a tuberculous or gangrenous cavity ruptures into it.

Hydrothorax.—This consists of the presence of a transudate in the pleural cavity, occurring oftenest on the right, frequently on both sides. The explanation offered for its greater frequency on the right is that a distension of the right side of the heart presses upon the veins of that side. Pleural adhesions may localize the fluid to a part of the cavity affected. The fluid is usually pale, straw-colored, alkaline, of a specific gravity of 1009 to 1012, containing 2 to 5 per cent. of albumin; microscopically it contains nothing but accidental leukocytes and desquamated endothelial cells. The surface of the pleura remains smooth but in long-standing cases becomes thickened and even pearly by reason of overgrowth of the fibrous tissue.

A small amount of fluid may transude into the pleura during the

t from the onchi, with t produce ecially the

tive-tissue fibrils and e sac-walls are nonlity. Not atiguity of ation with disease of able from

occurs in oper, and has been on to the

may arise in severe morrhagic

x.—Blood st such as ag into it l. Often, mmation, or when

te in the on both se right is the veins art of the line, of a albumin; ytes and remains en pearly

ring the

death agony, but plentiful transudations are found in nephritis, broken compensation of the heart, cirrhosis of the liver, hydremia, and pulmonary ædema. A small collection of fluid is of no significance, but the larger ones lead to displacement of the heart, mediastinal structures, and lungs.

Chylous Hydrothorax.—This consists of an admixture of the fluid with fat globules, granular material, and lymphoid cells, rendering it opaque and whitish, and is caused by a rupture or obstruction of the thoracic duct above the point where it enters the thorax.

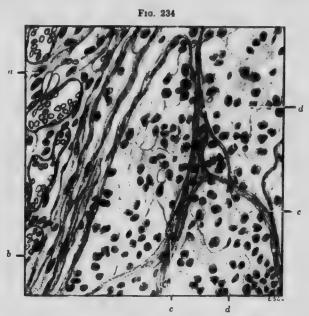
Fneumothorax.—This is the term used to designate the presence of air in the pleural cavity. By reason of the nature of the exciting causes, there is usually inflammation present and the cavity contains not only air but also serum (hydropneumothorax), or pus (pyopneumothorax). Mechanically it may be produced by a penetrating wound of the chest, even by thoracentesis; most commonly it follows the rupture of a tuberculous or gangrenous cavity through the pleura during a severe paroxysm of coughing; an empyema may rupture into the lung, or air (or gas) may come from the asophagus, stomach or bowel previously rendered adherent to the pleura or to the pleura and diaphragm by new growth. Certain varieties of pneumothorax may be differentiated: (1) open pneumothorax, in which air passes freely in and out, (2) valvular pneumothorax, in which an oblique, valve-like opening allows air to enter but not to escape, and (3) closed pneumothorax, in which the opening has become occluded. Pneumothorax, without perforation, can occu in the event of an infection of the pleura by a gas-producing organism.

The effect of pneumothorax depends upon the cause and the persistence of the communication with the outside; while the fistula remains, the lung will be collapsed unless prevented from so doing by adhesions. Where a valvular opening is present the cavity becomes more and more distended until the heart is pushed over and the diaphragm depressed; if there be no infection, and the wound be closed, the air may be gradually absorbed and the lung may resume its natural state.

Inflammation.—Inflammation of the pleura (pleurisy, pleuritis) is usually set up by extension of the disease from an organ nearby or as a metastatic affection, part of a general disease, as is seen in bacteriemia, rheumatism, typhoid, or the exanthems; practically always bacterial, the disease may be complete or partial, and is either exudative or productive; the exudative form may arise in a pleura already the seat of a productive inflammation or the exudative form may develop into the productive. These two forms are really expressions of a more and a less acute infection.

Exudative Pleurisy.—The exudate, which here is shut in, unable to escape, may manifest many different appearances; it may be fibrinous plastic pleurisy), serous, serofibrinous, fibrinopurulent, purulent, or hemorrhagic.

Fibrinous Pleurisy.—In this, the so-called "dry" pleurisy, the pleura is opaque, and covered by a delicate layer of fibrin which scarcely resists removal. This consists of interlaced threads of fibrin, with leukocytes, and bacteria; the vessels of the subjacent lung and of the pleura are congested, and fibrin may be seen in the tissues, which are cedematous and show a certain amount of cellular infiltration.



Section from a case of serofibrinous pleurisy (high power): a, congested and infiltrated subpleural lung tissue; b, fibrous layer of pleura also infiltrated and devoid of endothelium; c, c, denser bands of fibrin; d, d, loose meshwork of fibrin, infiltrated with serum and leukocytes.

Serofibrinous Pleurisy .- Few pleurisies remain dry, and there is usually an outpouring of fluid into the cavity (pleurisy with effusion); this fluid is yellowish, and if mixed with many cells and shreds of fibrin, turbid. In the dependent parts of the cavity and sticking to the walls of the pleural cavity are shaggy masses of fibrin, bright yellow, sometimes gelatinous, and at times so thick as to form a regular blanket which it requires some force to tear. The amount of fluid may vary from a few cubic centimeters to several liters, it coagulates readily with heat and sometimes spontaneously on removal; its specific gravity is high (1025 or more) and it contains much albumin as well as some uric acid, cholesterin, and sugar. Microscopically, it shows fibrin. leukocytes, red corpuscles, endothelial cells, and bacteria. The condition of the lung varies with the amount of fluid; it may be almost completely collapsed, the heart displaced, and the diaphragm (and with it the liver) depressed. The collapsed part is tough, gray, or grayish brown, or even bluish in color, and is non-crepitant. If not held by

e pleura scarcely in, with d of the hich are

adhesions, the fluid moves with the patient's change of posture. When healing occurs the fluid is gradually absorbed by the lymphatics, the fibrin breaks up, and no sign of trouble may remain except a slight thickening of the pleura. Oftener, however, some organization of the fibrous layer occurs, so that the visceral and parietal layers of the pleura remain adherent. With the lapse of time, the adhesions, being constantly pulled upon, become thin and veil-like; such adhesions are often seen between lobes and on the posterior surface of the upper lobe, and in some cases the pleural cavity may be entirely obliterated.

Purulent Pleurisy (Empyema).—This may arise from a serofibrinous pleurisy, or as a complication, sometimes a sequel, of pneumonia, or from the rupture of a tuberculous or gangrenous area in the lung, or more rarely, a subdiaphragmatic abscess or a diseased viscus may perforate into the pleura. In children it occasionally seems to be primary. exudate consists of thin or thick pus, and the action of the pus cells tends to digest the fibrin. If putrefactive organisms be present, the pus becomes very fetid. If the condition be not relieved surgically, the consequences may be very serious; the patient may die of exhaustion, of toxemia, or the pus may rupture into the lung with formation of pyopneumothorax, or through the chest wall (empyema necessitatis), or into neighboring organs. If unrelieved, it occasionally happens that the fluid is absorbed, the pus becoming inspissated, and later, infiltrated with calcareous salts, so as to form a solid plaque. Should the patient survive, there is usually great thickening of the pleura and even deformity of the chest. Practically it must be remembered, in view of the serious nature of the disease and the readiness with which it may escepe recognition, that the physician will oftener regret his delay than his precipitancy in the use of the exploratory puncture needle in a doubtful case.

Hemorrhagic Pleurisy.—Bloody exudate is found in tuberculous pleurisy or where new growth is present in the cavity, although not of necessity; further, it may occur in the very debilitated, or those suffering from scurvy, icterus, or the hemorrhagic diathesis.

Productive Pleurisy.—This may be a late development of a simple exudative pleurisy, or may arise insidiously as a primary affection. Slight degrees of thickening of the pleura are pathologically unimportant and clinically equally so. In the more marked cases the pleura is much thickened, even to a centimeter or more, becoming a white membrane, sometimes of a pearly or cartilaginous appearance, and in extreme cases, resembling the icing that is put upon a cake (hyaloserositis). On microscopic examination, this proves to be layered, and otherwise almost structureless, save that in its deepest parts there is slight vascularization; the lung is apt to participate in the state of induration, and often a neighboring serous surface is likewise involved, especially the peritoneum over the spleen and liver. With the lapse of time, calcareous masses or plates of cartilage and bone are formed.

subpleural

usually

a); this

c fibrin,

ne walls

c, some
blanket

uy vary

readily

gravity

us some

fibrin,

condialmost

ad with

grayish

ield by

Tuberculosis of the Pleura.— Not infrequently a patient previously healthy develops pleurisy with effusion; such a pleurisy, coming "out of a clear sky," is likely to be tuberculous, and even if no lesion of the lung or elsewhere be found, it is needful to consider that the patient is tuberculous until it is proved that he is not. The tuberculous infection in such a case has been picked up from the lymph nodes or from a focus in the lung too small to be discovered by physical examination.

The pleura may be affected as part of a general miliary infection or from a tuberculous bronchopneumonia; in the former case the tubercles alone may be seen, and inflammatory reaction in the ordinary sense of the term is very slight, while in the latter, after the fibrin has been removed, the tubercles show on the surface of the pleura, indicating the nature of the infection. It must be remembered that there are cases showing no obvious tubercles, appearing to be cases of simple serous pleurisy, in which inoculation of the fluid into animals sets up tuberculosis. In advanced cases, considerable caseation may be found, layer after layer of tubercles undergoing in succession the necrotic change.

Rarely, syphilis, leprosy, and certain parasites, such as echinococcus, psorosperms, and entamœba coli have been known to affect the pleura.

Progressive Tissue Changes.—Tumors.—Of benign growths, fibroma, lipoma, chondroma, osteoma, and angioma affect the pleura; of malignant growths, the most important is endothelioma, which is found in the pleura more often than anywhere else, save the dura. It may be soft and circumscribed, but more often is firm, flattened, and cancer-like. Sarcoma of the pleura is occasionally found in the young; various combination forms of sarcoma, such as angio-, fibro-, and chondrosarcoma are met.

THE MEDIASTINUM

The mediastinum is that part of the thorax which lies between the two pleure, the sternum and the vertebral column. Since it is a space containing many organs and different sorts of tissue, and not an organ or system of organs, its diseases cannot be taken up in any rational or sequent way; some generalities, however, are necessary. Leaving aside the vessels, nerves, muscles, the trachea, œsophagus, thymus, and the thoracic duct, we have still left for consideration the loose connective tissue that lies among these, and the very important groups of lymph nodes.

Inflammation.—Mediastinitis.—Mediastinitis is inflammation of this connective tissue; it will be seen that such can arise in many different ways, by trauma or by extension from any of the numerous structures referred to as occupying or bounding the space, or finally, by the infective agent being carried thither in the blood. An inflammation may resolve or, on the contrary, may progress to the formation of an abscess, which may rupture to the outside or into one of the many organs of which

iously "out

of the

ient is

infec-

from

ation. ection

e the

linary

in has

dicat-

there

imple

ets up ound, crotic

leura.
roma,
gnant
n the
e soft
-like.
rious
ndro-

1 the

pace

rgan

ional

ving

mus,

oose

oups

this

rent

ures

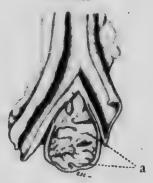
tive

olve

hich hich it has choice. Should a considerable inflammation, which has not been suppurative, become healed, mediastinal adhesions are apt to remain; these may link the pericardium to the chest wall, or the pericardium to the pleure, and $n \in \mathbb{R}$ be so dense and numerous as to obliterate the space. Apart from such acute disease, the slow progressive inflammation spoken of as producing the thickening resembling a cake icing tends to affect the mediastinal tissues along with the pleura and the pericardium.

In the frequent references made to thoracic lymph nodes as the places in which tubercle bacilli and other infective agents lie latent or from which they set out to infect the body at large, the large groups of nodes in the mediastinum are those referred to; not only those which are strung along the course of the vessels, the œsophagus, and the trachea, but the large groups at the bifurcation of the trachea, and around each bronchus. The size of these groups and the importance





Fuberculosis of lymph nodes below bifurcation of traches in a child: a, enlarged caseous node.

(M :Gill Pathological Museum.)

of the tracts they guard make them of great use in handling large amounts of infective material, from which they are necessarily liable to injury. It is in them that signs of latent and healed tuberculosis are oftenest found. Simple inflammation of these groups may lead to their great enlargement, and to consequent pressure upon the viscera in the space, or to their adhesion to the walls of viscera, such as the resophagus, with subsequent deformity of the same by traction.

Progressive Tissue Changes.—Tumors.—Considering the tumors of the mediastinum, the multiplicity of tissues makes it possible to have many different forms of new growth; the only forms that require special mention are the dermoid cysts, which arise from the thymus gland or from epiblast shut in at the closure of the thoracic wall. These are soft, that they may be mistaken for aneurysm. There is danger that they must be mistaken for aneurysm. There is danger that they rupture into some important structure. Teratomas proper—

fætal inclusions—are rarely encountered. Sarcoma is the most comm malignant tumor of the mediastinum, arising either from the connective tissue or from the lymph structures, from which lymphosarcomas of enormous size grow. Many of these mediastinal tumors, however, originate from the lymphoid tissue of the thymu, and of these some, at least, exhibit the characters of an inflamm 'ory granulomatous growth. Secondary malignant growths obtaining place in the lymph nodes or elsewhere are of fair frequency, and are clinically important, as are the primary growths, by reason of the importance of the structures upon which they may exert pressure. The vagus, the sympathetic nerves, the æsophagus, trachea, and the various vessels are so close together that a relatively small tumor may be attended by great disturbance of function.

THE THYMUS

The thymus is developed primarily from the hypoblast of the third branchial groove just as the tonsils are derived from the second, and, like the tonsils, while originally of epithelial type, their epithelium becomes surrounded and largely replaced by lymphoid tissue, the remnants forming concentric masses of cells known as Hassall's corpuscles. To all intents and purposes it is a lymphoid organ forming two elongated and fused lobes in the anterior mediastinum and extending over the upper portion of the pericardium. Reaching its maximum development at about the end of the second year of life it then undergoes a premature senile atrophy of a somewhat remarkable type. The lymph cells progressively diminish and their place is taken at first by cells which contain small fatty globules and later by what appear to be true fat cells. Occasionally it persists until the fifteenth year or later and is of considerable size, with abundant lymphocytic elements. Diseased conditions of the thymus are rare; the most important is the thymus hyperplasia generally accompanying the status lymphaticus (lymphatism); this hyperplasia occurs in young children, but has been noted in young adults, weights of 50 to 70 grams being recorded, the maximum of the normal gland being 37 grams. In leukemia there may be marked enlargement as also in some cases of exophthalmic goitre. Rare cases of abscesses, tuberculosis, and of syphilitic necrosis have been described.

Tumors are rare, with the exception of lymphosarcoma. As above noted, it appears probable that a large proportion of the diffuse, locally infiltrating growths of the mediastinum originate from the thymus gland.

se some. omatous CHAPTER VIII e lymph rtant, as

GENERAL CONSIDERATIONS

THE NERVOUS SYSTEM

When we recall the extraordinary complexity of the finer and comp of the brain and cord, the relatively small area of the surface cerebral hemispheres in which we can recognize the exister.~ .tres" controlling one or other function of the body, the vast mass _erebrum and cerebellum, regarding the function of which we have n ure indications, the remarkable system of multiple associations between the neurones, the great bulk of data and of hypotheses that has accumulated, we confees that it is with trepidation we enter upon the task of compressing into a few pages even the minimum of knowledge required by the beginner in medicine. As to the nature of thought and the association of ideas, the highest of all the cerebral activities, we know practically nothing; the same is true regarding the essential nature of memory; it is only when we come to the relationship between the higher centres and certain bodily functions that we find ourselves on somewhat surer ground and this because we can follow and recognize the tracks of anatomical change. But even here, although for long years investigators have been studying the nervous phenomena of such all-important matters as the periodic activities of the circulatory and respiratory system, there continues to be uncertainty as to the exact nature of the automatic mechanisms that govern these, and as to the exact site of the controlling neurones.

The entire nervous system is made up of a great aggregation of similar units, the neurones; each neurone consists of a nerve-cell body, dendrites and axone. The gray matter of the brain and the ganglia possess a preponderance of nerve-cell bodies while the white matter and the peripheral nerves are largely made up of axones. The neurones are held together (or held apart) by glia and fibrous tissue in latter, in small quantity, serving to support the blood vessels (, variou, again, definite amph vessels have not yet been proved for the substante of the brain, although these exist around the blood channels. Each nea-

rone is anatomically independent of all other neurones.

The nerve-cell body assumes varying shapes, has a seasoff rentral nucleus, with a definite nucleolus, and in its protoplas. " substruct a mushwork of fine fibrils in the interstices of which lie varies by simple budies of stainable substance (chromophilic, tigroid, or Nissi : " (2.3), which are presumed to be of nuclear origin, because their substance

he third id. and. ium behe rempuscles. ng two

tending

ximum

it then

comm nnective comas of nowever,

ructures pathetic

so close y great

e type. at first appear h year tic eleortant lymph-

out has corded, a there halmic ecrosis

above locally gland.

has stain affinities somewhat like those of the nucleus. The dendrites are tree-like prolongations of the protoplasmic substance of the nervecell body, tapering, becoming smaller as they recede from the cell very numerous and branched, serving to bring the protoplasm of one nerve-cell body into "almost-contact" with other cells. The term "almost-contact" is used, because it is generally believed that actual contact does not occur, but that parts of two nerve-cell bodies thus lie in juxtaposition as do the secondary and the primary coils of an induction battery. The axone or axis-cylinder is a process of the cell, usually single, containing no chromophilic bodies (nor are there any to be seen in the part of the nerve-cell body from which it takes its immediate origin) and is of uniform size throughout; toward its end it may split it up into a terminal tree, of which each twig may end in an end-foot or end-plate which is in intimate relation (actual contact) with the cell (e. g., muscle) to which it runs. The axone, as it leaves the nerve-cell body, becomes invested by a myelin sheath, and axones so sheathed make up the greater part of the bulk of the white matter of the brain and cord. A number of sheathed axones, surrounded by the sheath of Schwann, constitute a peripheral nerve; the sympathetic nerves possess a sheath of Schwann, but are not myelinated.

On the Correlation of Neurones.- It is only the very simplest reflex act, apparently, that depends upon what we may term a simple arc, and that simple arc calls into play two neurones. This may be laid down, that a given axone conveys stimuli in only one direction. Thus, a sensory or afferent stimulus has to be conveyed to the spinal cord through the agency of at least one neurone, and the muscular response to such stimulus has to be conveyed from the central nervous system by at least one other neurone. As already stated, each neurone is isolated to the extent that, although it may come into contact with another neurone by means of its arborization, there is not an intercellular union. Communication between neurone and neurone is in the form of arborizations surrounding the nerve-cell body of the second neurone, and impulses passing down certain of these arborizations have to jump across the material, or synapse, intervening between them and the second neurone. For more complicated reflexes, and for voluntary acts, a stimulus may have to pass through several cell relays before the act in response to the primary stimulus can be instituted. In the complex, as in the simple arc, a break in any one relay prevents the response, or if it does not prevent it, causes definite delay in its production, because the stimulus has to pass along some more roundabout path, which may not always be provided. If the break be on the afferent side, we have loss of sensation, if on the efferent side, loss of functional response.

Groups of Neurones.—We are accustomed to recognize three great groups coneurones—the afferent, the efferent, and the sympathetic.

The Afferent System.— The afferent nerves of the body in general are represented by neurones whose nerve-cell bodies are situated in the

posterior root ganglia of the spinal cord, and in certain corresponding so-called centres in the bulb and pons, and even farther forward in the base of the brain. Cerebral sensory nerves, olfactory, optic, etc., are similar to the somatic sensory nerves in this, that all alike must transfer their stimuli to other neurones which conduct them, by more or less devious paths, to the cells of the cerebral cortex, and to other related cells of the higher order. The appreciation of sensation lies in these cells of the higher order, whereas the reflex act produced in the simple are may be accomplished without reference to the brain, and therefore without appreciation on the part of the individual.

The Efferent System.—The efferent nerves of the body are represented by a lower group of neurones whose nerve-cell bodies are situated in the anterior horns of the cord and in corresponding centres in the base of the brain. These, however, are under control of a higher group of neurones, or more strictly of two groups of neurones, the one whose cell bodies are situated in the cerebral cortex, the other in the cerebellum. We still are by no means informed as to the full functions of these two orders of neurones. The cerebellum is presumed to be constantly responsible for the preservation, by means of rhythmic stimuli, of the interaction of the muscles, that is, it exerts a static influence, continues, so to speak, the status quo of the body musculature; departures from this state, such as voluntary movements, are instituted by the cells of the cerebral cortex. This may be made clearer by saying that the status quo of the body, whatever its posture at the time, is preserved by the (unconscious) tone of muscles, to illustrate which it may be pointed out that man keeps a certain posture without apparent effort, but really by the contraction, properly coordinated, of many muscles; this state of the muscles is in response to constant stimuli from the cerebellar cells; if, now, one wishes to move voluntarily, the cells of the cerebral cortex take command, and by stimuli reinforce the action of some, lessen the action of others, introduce, it may be, the action of yet other antagonistic muscles, and so alter the status quo to a new status of voluntary activity.

The Sympathetic or Autonomic System.—This system is a very complicated special section of the nervous system, regarding which it may be said, that the abundant investigations of the last few years by Langley and others, have introduced so many new points of view that it is extremely difficult in a few words to describe either its anatomy or its function. Briefly, in connection with the brain, the main spinal cord, and the sacral region, certain fine nerve fibrils pass out. These fibrils having their nerve-cell bodies within the central nervous system leave this in connection with motor, or what (in the brain) correspond to motor roots, and terminate in a series of fine arborizations around the herve-cell bodies of certain ganglia, which, save for these fibres, are isolated from the main nervous system. Thus, for example, the third second nerve contains fine fibres which pass to the ciliary ganglia; the centh and ninth fibres passing to the submaxillary and sublingual

The term at actual as thus lie an inductal, usually to be seen a mediate may split end-foot the cell asheathed the brain as sheath concrves

dendrites

he nerve-

the cell.

sm of one

est reflex nple arc, r be laid Thus. nal cord response s system urone is act with ın interne is in e second rizations between and for ll relays stituted. prevents y in its roundk be on

ee great netic. eral are in the

ide, loss

ganglia, and to the sphenopalatine and otic ganglia; the autonomic or sympathetic fibres of the tenth and eleventh nerves run in the vagus, and it seems probable that these fibres end in small ganglia situated in or near each of the organs supplied by the vagus. As regards the spinal cord, the sympathetic fibres pass out by the anterior motor roots to the series of vertebral ganglia, including the superior cervical ganglia; in the sacral region of the cord, slight differences of arrangement of the sym-

pathetic system to the anogenital region are observed.

These fibres running to various ganglia are the pre-ganglionic fibres which arborize around the cells in the ganglia; these cells in turn give origin to axones (the post-ganglionic fibres) which course directly to the viscera, or in the case of cutaneous fibres, return to join the spinal nerves and so course to the various segments along with the cutaneous sensory nerves. In whatever ganglion this relay is situated, it appears that there is no further relay, but that the axone of the second cell passes direct to the viscus which receives the sympathetic innervation. For example, in the dorsal region we have both vertebral ganglia and the conjoint ganglia of the solar plexus; sympathetic fibres from the cord pass through both of these to their ultimate distribution; their relay cells may be in one or the other but not in both. As regards the afferent fibres of the sympathetic system, these when present run in the white rami; it seems that the head and the skin have few or no afferent sympathetic fibres, these coming essentially from the thoracic and abdominal viscera. So, further, it appears that the sensory connection of the various viscera with the spinal nerves differs but little in arrangement from their motor connection.

Pathological Changes in the Nerve-cell Body.—What knowledge we possess concerning the changes that occur in the finer structure of the nerve-cell body is largely due to the employment of Nissl's method which uses a staining material compounded of methylene blue, thionin, toluidin blue, and neutral red. Small masses and granules in the protoplasm thus become visible, arranged in different ways according to the type of cell. It may be mentioned that experience and extreme caution in the observation and interpretation of results obtained by this method are necessary. In a general way we know from the appearance and arrangement of the stainable substance what is the physiological state of the cell; the stainable material (tigroid) is normally in granules, spindles, lozenges, rodlets, threads, or shapeless masses occupying the interstices between the fibrils; it is not demonstrable in the embryo, it increases in amount within limits in a state or rest, and diminishes by activity and fatigue, in intoxications, in circulatory and nutritive disturbances, diminishes in advanced age and undergoes a degeneration into a finely granular material. Electric stimuli, and the activity consequent upon them, lead to swelling of the cell body and nucleus and to diminution of the stainable substance; if carried to the extent of producing fatigue, cell body and nucleus diminish in size and stainable material in quantity, and vacuoles appear. By section,

onomic or he vagus, tuated in the spinal ots to the ia; in the the sym-

nic fibres turn give ly to the he spinal utaneous t appears cond cell ervation. nglia and from the on; their gards the un in the afferent and ab**ecti**on of arrange-

ledge we **re** of the method thionin, the prording to extreme ined by appearphysiomally in occupye in the est, and culatory dergoes uli, and ll body rried to in size section,

compression, electric or chemical stimulation of peripheral nerves, the changes brought about in the cell are divisible into two stages, those of reaction and repair. The stage of reaction is characterized by a diminution of the stainable material (chromolysis, tigrolysis); this appears to be diffused more generally than usual through the cell, whose protoplasm, as a whole, becomes more readily stainable. This dissolving action seems to begin at the centre, the cell swells, and the nucleus comes to lie nearer the periphery. These changes are produced but slowly, the reactionary state being visible a couple of days after section of the nerve, remaining evident for two or three weeks and passing gradually into that of repair, in which the nucleus becomes once more central and the swelling disappears.

Pathological Changes in the Dendrites.—We know but little of the finer changes that occur in the dendrites, although they have been studied in dements and after the action of certain poisons. In diseases caused so diversely as these, we are able to see lesions that are relatively similar; which means that the methods at our disposal are able to detect only the most gross kinds of lesion, while the finer differences entirely escape our notice. We can make out atrophy of the fibrils, swelling and twisting of the same, and localized swellings. In the case of large cells, such as the Purkinje cells of the cerebellum, there are buds or gemmules to be seen on the twigs of the dendrites. When damage has been wrought these buds may be seen to be swollen, and to be cast off or disappear. We suppose that such swelling of the nodules, and to a greater extent such casting-off, interferes with the conductivity of the cell, so that this state of the dendrites is accompanied by impairment of the mental, the sensory, and the motor functions.

Pathological Changes in the Axone.—The idea which is most widely entertained at the present day is that the nerve-cell body exerts a trophic influence upon the entire axone; that the axone maintains its nutrition only when it remains connected with its nerve-cell body. Thus, if a motor axone be cut, that part of it which is separated from the cortical cell or the anterior horn cell degenerates and dies, and if a sensory axone be cut, the part separated from the spinal ganglion cell ultimately withers and disappears. Whatever the course of the axone, however intimate its relations with other axones, its life as an axone depends upon its nerve-cell body, and if it be separated therefrom it is useless, just as one of a hundred telegraph wires might be useless if cut off from its battery. The one wire looks like the other ninety-nine, but no messages are passing over it. As a result of severance from the nervecell body, the axone in a short time-twenty-four hours-shows a swelling of the myelin sheath; this presently becomes changed into a series of globules of various sizes, of a fatty nature, which ultimately deappear by a process of digestion and absorption by the cells of the beath of Schwann. The axis cylinder proper becomes irregularly seconlated, broken, and granular, and likewise ultimately disappears, is place being taken by proliferated sheath cells and fibrous tissue,

a replacement designated by the general term sclerosis. Nor is degeneration necessarily confined to the distal part of the axone; it may happen that the parent cell degenerates, apparently from lack of occupation, since it no longer can transmit messages or stimuli-disuse atrophy—and such atrophy applies alike to all parts of the neurone. Regeneration of a severed axone takes place, within limits. Where a nerve has been torn apart, the injury of the tearing sometimes extends a short distance up the nerve trunk toward the nerve-cell body, and may be followed by degeneration, but with a clean cut the proximal end quickly shows regenerative changes in the form of fine ramifications terminating in delicate filaments, the axone itself separating into its constituent fibrils, some of which terminate in a little cone of growth. The central end of the axone by the forward movement of the fibril referred to can extend from the point of section and join itself to the distal end, provided there be not too great an intervening gap. The bridging of the gap between the severed ends is accomplished by the extension of the central axone, using the damaged nerve or some other tissue, or even a mechanical insertion as a scaffold, and seeking the course of the destroyed distal axone by chemiotropism or attraction toward the sheath cells of the degenerated fibrils of the distal part. It is evident that the old axis cylinder undergoes complete degeneration, and recovery of function is not complete until the new axis cylinder processes have travelled down the old sheaths, even until they reach the site of and form new end-plates in the muscle, or in the case of sensory nerves, new sensory filaments in the end organs.

Such gross damage as we have been considering is not the only cause of atrophy and degeneration of the axone, for there are at least two occasions upon which atrophy can occur without a definite interruption to the continuity of the peripheral nerve. Comparatively mild toxins acting during a long time, especially if accompanied by functional activity, may damage the nerve-cell body to an extent, slight but sufficient to interfere with its nutrition as a whole. Under these circumstances, the most outlying part of the neurone—the terminal part of the axone -suffers most, and the nutrition which did not suffice for the whole neurone may suffice for the neurone minus the most peripheral part, which is thus sacrificed to the welfare of the whole neurone, much as a beleaguered and starved city might save itself by sacrificing its most outlying garrison. Where the peripheral part of the axone begins to atrophy in this way, we may predict that the entire neurone will ultimately share the same fate. A second kind of degeneration is that to which we have previously referred as abiotrophy, in which, by reason of some congenital lack of vitality, the stress of ordinary neurone work is too great, and the structure atrophies under *imulus that would not damage a healthy neurone; such a neurone ! its life with so little spare energy at its disposal, to expenditure of enc. rv is too great for it and it atrophies p. ematurely.

Lesions of the neurone may be accompanied by a great variety of

or is dee; it may of occui-disuse neurone. Where a s extends ody, and proximal ramificating into cone of ement of and join ervening mplished or some l seeking ttraction part. It neration, cylinder ey reach

e case of ily cause east two erruption ld toxins ional acsufficient astances, he axone he whole ral part, much as its most e begins rone will ration is hich, by neurone dus that spends adinary

urely.

ariety of

symptoms, and these it is not possible to particularize, comprising, as they do, all kinds of definite and indefinite aberrations of function. Of the definite functions possessed by the neurone we are able to note that (1) the stimuli which excite muscular contraction may be absent or weak or, if present, inefficient, so that the muscle rests in a state of partial or complete paralysis; (2) or, contrariwise, the stimuli may be so frequent or so extreme as to excite a disordered and too great activity of the muscle. These changes in the state of the nerve may be correlated with an actual lesion which we can see; but it may not be so, and although the two states are widely different from one another, we may not be able to distinguish any difference in the neurone, nor may we be able to tell that it is actually the neurone that is at fault. If we see no pathological change in such a neurone, we say that the fault lies not in any organic alteration of the neurone but in its function, and we describe such alterations of the normal performance of the organs as functional. It is not possible to say that functional diseases Go-called) are attended by no organic change in the neurones; all we can say is, that if there be change, it is not to be detected by our present methods.

Similarly, in the sensory neurone whose impulses pass from the periphery of the body to the nervous system we find that certain lesions of the neurone destroy the conducting power completely; or, again, with no visible alteration, we discover that the function of the sensory neurone is altered or absent—that, like a badly manned telegraph line, there may be no messages at all (anesthesia), that the message initiated at the skin may be exaggerated (hyperesthesia), or may be entirely paraphrased from its true meaning (paresthesia). To make the matter more confusing, any of these deviations from the true function of the neurone may not be due to inefficiency of the neurone at all, but may be mental, just as the messages taken by a bad receiver from a good telegraph line might seem to indicate that the line itself was inefficient. The sum of all this is that there is little known about the organic changes that happen in the neurone; that wherever we observe disordered function without a correlated lesion, we call the disorder functional; that many disorders, today called functional, may prove ultimately to be due to organic change; and that a knowledge of the highest function of the nerve-cell body, even thought itself, is, as yet, a closed

GENERAL DISTURBANCES OF THE NERVOUS SYSTEM

Before proceeding to the consideration of the organic changes found a disconstruction of the nervous system, it is necessary to discuss briefly some of the disturbances seen in it which are not referable to a definite cell, or a special peripheral nerve, but seem to involve a large period of the entire system or at least a very important part of it; such are delivium, convulsions, and coma.

Delirium.-Delirium is an affection of the mental function, in wh judgment and the appreciation of the relations of surroundings to another or of the patient to surroundings is impaired. The spec senses may or may not be dulled, but, at the best, understanding of messages they convey is obscured, and misinterpreted. The degr of mental confusion vary widely; delirium may be the dangerous fu of the maniac, the meaningless shouting of the terrified but half-unce scious drunkard, or it may be the disordered dreams of the quiet, febr patient, whose mind wearies uself by hearing the fancied rattle of machine or by the ceaseless repetition of some imaginary task or volu tary action. Active as the mind seems to be, and great as is the expe diture of energy, there is usually a corresponding dulling of conscious ness in some other direction; there is at times physical activity great as to require restraint, or the muscular activity may be reduc merely to picking at the bedclothes, subsultus tendinum (a voluntary a misdirected), or there may be visible only a tremor.

Delirium is often an accompaniment of the pyrexia of the varior infective fevers, typhoid, typhus, smallpox, pneumonia, and rheumatism but is rather a manifestation of the presence of a toxin than a me accompaniment of hyperpyrexia. Delirium tremens is an example of the effect of an unaided chemical poison; the delirium of a child in pneumonia represents that arising wholly from an infective agent and it toxins; the delirium of acute mania is an instance of that form which arises in the brain without a known physical cause—and the diversit of these forms indicates how hopeless a task it would be to define the

affection in any pathological sense.

Coma.—Coma is a state of unconsciousness, and represents not s much an actual derangement of the function of the lower nervous system as a state in which there is an arrest of the highest, the menta functions; the contro' which mentality exerts on the lower nervous system is lessened or absent. Thought, perception, volition, and voluntary movements are in abeyance; if the coma be not of the deepest reflex movements can be instituted, but the muscles are relaxed; the centres, such as the respiratory and circulatory, which are automatic are depressed in their activity, but their functions are by no mean abolished. Concussion, pressure, exhaustion from previous excitation and toxins appear to be effective causes of this state.

Convulsions.—A convulsion is a series of involuntary contractions of the muscles; if only a few muscles are concerned or only a single part of the body, the term spasm is usually applied, while the term convulsion is used to describe the phenomenon occurring in all or many parts of the body together. Consciousness may or may not be lost; the convulsion in any case is quite apart from the action of the will. Let the reader think for a moment of a motor nerve cell with its axone and the muscle supplied by it; voluntarily, he may send a stimulus to the muscle (and certain of its neighbors). The message calling for muscular movement goes down the wire, the axone, and as a result the muscle

TONUS 481

contracts. It is as if the muscle were a marionette that performs when the wire is pulled. In diseased conditions misdirected stimuli may come to the nerve cells from various sources and these stimuli may produce disordered purposeless muscular movements. To follow our simile, it is as if a mischievous boy found his way to the keyboard which controls the marionettes; instead of pressing them in their proper order so as to produce coördinated action of the marionettes, he does his best to make them all work at once, and the figures dance in a hopeless disorder. In the brain, it may be a toxin which irritates, or it may be a near-by tumor, or a clot of blood which presses the brain cells-in any case, like the boy with the wires of the marionettes, the irritant plays upon the nerve cells: they send out impulses and the muscles dance.

This leads us to say here a few words regarding the normal tonus or physiological state of the muscle and the significance of exaltation and depression of the same. All the cells in the body may be said to have an intrinsic tone, but in the voluntary muscles it is clear that we deal with more than this, for if the nerve going to a muscle be divided, the muscle immediately passes into a flaccid state; or otherwise, stimuli are constantly passing down the nerve from the central nervous system, which stimuli without any act of the consciousness or will, maintain the muscle fibres in a condition of relative partial contraction. The next question is, what is the nature of these stimuli? Is it a constant outflow or does the tonus of the muscle represent the summation of periodic and rapidly repeated impulses? The delicate string galvanometer applied to motor nerves informs us that the latter is the correct answer; that, in health, each voluntary muscle receives stimuli reaching it at the rate of from five to fifty per second. These stimuli are minimal but sufficient to set in action those associative and dissociative processes which lead to contraction. When the neurone is fatigued, the rhythm seems to be slowed, and apparently the rate of rhythm in coordinated muscles is subject to variation, that is, may not be the same for the flevors and the extensors respectively; in this way we may explain the tremors of cases of nerve exhaustion as due to a lack of correspondence between the rates of contraction of the flexors and the extensors of a part. This tonus then is a "state of preparedness" of a muscle; the difference between tonus and voluntary contraction is a matter of degree in a normal contraction there is not a single impulse but a like series of rhythmic, rapidly recurring stimuli, apparently at the same rate as, but individually stronger than those necessary to produce and preserve tonus.

In describing convulsive movements of the muscles, it is usual to distinguish tonic and clonic contractions; in the former the stimuli occur so rapidly that the proper time of relaxation is not granted to the tin, ele, and a continuance of the contracted state happens—tetanic or twic contraction; in the latter either by partial tiring of the muscle or by a less rapid series of stimuli, the muscle goes alternately into

on, in which lings to one The special nding of the The degrees igerous furv half-unconquiet, febrile rattle of a sk or voluns the expenf consciousactivity so be reduced luntary act

the various heumatism, han a mere mple of the ld in pneuent and its form which e diversity define the

nts not so er nervous the mental er nervous and volune deepest, laxed; the automatic, no means excitation,

ntractions y a single the term ll or many e lost; the will. Let axone and us to the or muscu-

he muscle

the contracted and the relaxed state—clonic contractions. The te clonus, by usage, has come to have a slightly different significan By clonus we mean the phenomenon associated with tendon or mus reflexes, where in places of getting a single response to a tap or p upon a tendon there is elicited a recurrent series of contractions, d

to conditions causing exaggerated muscle tonus.

The part affected by a convulsion may enable the observer to defi the site of the lesion, especially if it be situated upon the cereb cortex; here the cells of only one group or a few groups of muse may be affected, in which case the convulsion is called focal or Jac sonian (Hughlings Jackson having first described it). Even if t lesion be strictly localized, it sometimes seems as if the excitation the cells immediately affected could spread to others, in ever-wideni circles, new cells being involved successively, so that the convulsion extends in that half of the body first affected, in a definite order. Co vulsions are classified according to their origin, rather according their supposed origin, for most of such a classification is pure conjectur the difficulty of determining the cause of convulsions is enhanced by the differences of irritability of the nerve cells, not only in differen persons, but in the same person at different periods. Nevertheless is customary to say that the causes of convulsions are (1) mechanics as when a tumor or hemorrhage in the skull causes extra pressure upo the motor nerve cells, or (2) toxic, as in alcoholism, uremia or lea poisoning, (3) reflex, e. g., some cases of epilepsy, as when an inflamma tion or irritation in some distant part of the body (perhaps even pin worms) appears to be the cause, or (4) functional, when the stimulu appears to originate in the highest cerebral cells, that is, the cells con cerned with thought and association. Stimuli of this sort are called

Focal or Local Changes and Their Resu's. - Distinct from the state just discussed, which concern the most important parts of the nervou system and through them affect the entire system, are those change which remain limited to a part of the system, which are thus called focal or local. Waere changes are evidenced by symptoms which point to the destruction or damaging of a neurone or a set of neurones whether the damage be wrought in the nerve-cell body, the dendrites or the axone, whether the neurone be motor, sensory, or sympathetic any sufficient lesion in any part of it will be shown by a failure in its function—thus a muscle is paralyzed or is weak, sensations are not carried, or are carried incorrectly (paresthesia). The symptoms produced are thus dependent upon the nerve centre or the nerve path that is concerned, although it is of course to be remembered that the nervous mechanism may be intact and fully operative and a paralysis, for example, be due to some fault of the muscle or other structure concerned in the performance of motion.

Focal Symptoms in the Field of Motor Nerves.—From the moment at which the student begins to study focal symptoms, he requires an

The term significance. on or muscle tap or pull actions, due

er to define the cerebral of muscles cal or Jack-Even if the xcitation of er-widening convulsion der. Conccording to conjecture; hanced by in different ertheless it mechanical. ssure upon nia or lead inflammaeven pine stimulus e cells con-

the states
ne nervous
se changes
hus called
hich point
neurones,
dendrites,
npathetic,
lure in its
are not
toms propath that
t the nerparalysis,
cture con-

are called

moment quires an

accurate knowledge of the situation of the various groups of nerve-cell bodies in the brain and cord and, of course, of the axones from these groups. Between the cortical cell and the muscle two neurones runthe upper and the lower motor neurone. The upper motor neurone has its cell body in the cortex, and its medullated axone crosses to the opposite side and there runs with other motor nerves, especially in the crossed pyramidal tract, to reach the nerve-cell body of the lower motor neurone, which is situated in the anterior horns of the cord. From the cell body in the horn the axone of this second cell runs by a peripheral nerve to the muscle. If the peripheral nerve be cut near the muscle all this elaborate mechanism is rendered temporarily useless so far as the muscle is concerned, and the muscle is paralyzed; if the upper m for neurone just below the cortical nerve-cell body be cut, the muse e is similarly paralyzed; how can one tell in which of these situations is the actual lesion? The nutrition of the muscle depends ultimately upon its connection with the nerve-cell body of the lower motor neurone; if the lower motor neurone be intact, nutrition is not interfered with, and the muscle responds to every stimulus which the nerve-cell body of the lower motor neurone chooses to send; and if the lesion be in the upper motor neurone, the cortical cell body has no governance over the lower cell body and the latter "breaks loose" sending frequent, uncalled-for stimuli to the muscle, which is thrown into a state of excitability (hypertonus) and, it may be, spasm. On the contrary, if the lesion be in the lower motor neurone, no impulses at all reach the muscle, which lies inert, flaccid, hypotonic, and, cut off from its nerve-cell body, quickly degenerates and atrophies. To recapitulate, destruction of the upper motor neurone allows hypertonus or spasm in the muscle, destruction of the lower motor neurone, flaccidity and atrophy. But this alone will not tell us which part of the tract is destroyed; to determine this requires consideration of all the facts in the case. Much can be learned from the extent of the damage; if we consider the upper motor neurone, it will be apparent that a lesion, such as hemorrhage, though of small size, might affect a great many neurones, even those of half the entire body, if it attacked them where they are all packed closely together, as in the internal capsule. A lesion of the same size at the cortex could affect only the cells concerned with a part of a limb. Similarly, in the lower motor neurone, a destructive lesion in the middle part of the spinal cord might destroy the pyramidal tract and put out of service most of the muscles of a lower limb, whereas a lesion of the same size lower down might destroy only a few anterior-horn cells, and put out of service only a small group

Depressive versus Irritative Disturbances.—We see, thus, that a missele may be paretic or paralyzed by reason of some disease in the massele itself, or, more commonly, by reason of some disturbance in the neurone which governs it; there is yet another way in which the same result is produced, and that is in the so-called hysterical paralysis; here

the muscle is healthy, the neurone intact, but the muscle is a stimulated by its neurone, whose action is inhibited by the mind of in other words, by some group or groups of cells which are concerned with the mental functions, and are the multiple governing power in the brain.

Hitherto we have spoken of lesions of the neurones, evidenced h paralysis or paresis of the muscles, that are due to prevention or de pression of the function of the neurone—the so-called depressive man festations, but there is another form of lesion, the irritative. Befor pointing out what these are, it may be said that a lesion can destro some part of the neurone, so that stimuli from that neurone ceas entirely; or the lesion may merely interfere with the stimulus, which reaches the muscle in a weakened degree; or the pressure of the lesio may act as an irritant to the neurone so that it is stimulated. Bein stimulated in a wrong way and from a wrong source, the messages i sends to the muscle are certain to be ill-timed and purposeless, because they are not instituted by the mind, as part of the properly coordinate plan of stimuli in obedience to which the proper muscular work of th body is carried on. These irritative lesions are important, and will b particularized; the signs by which they are accompanied are tremore choreiform movements, convulsions, and the muscular activities that result in contractures.

Tremor.—Tremor is a series of consecutive "small" muscular movements, and is familiar to everyone as seen in some of the very old. The tremulous movement in different people may vary greatly in it rapidity and in its situation, being general or limited to one or severa groups of muscles. Tremor usually ceases during sleep; sometimes it is lessened or prevented temporarily by the exercise of the will; in other cases it is seen only when some voluntary movement of the part is

le (intention tremor), in yet others, during rest. A form of movement closely related to tremor is fibrillary twitching of the muscle, in which the individual muscle bundles are seen through the skin to contract quickly and rhythmically. Tremors are readily observed in some alcoholics, in paralysis agitans, in multiple sclerosis, in lead poisoning and many other states. We have already referred to the mode of production of muscular tone (p. 475). If the rate of these tonic impulses to two sets of antagonistic muscles be different it will be seen that there will be a lack of synchronism between the respective contractions of the two sets, so that the limb or part affected is drawn momentarily now in one, now in the other direction.

Choreiform Movements.—Choreiform movements are of the nature of intermittent clonic spasms; they appear as irregular, purposeless jerky motions of the limbs, face, or body, and are seen in cherea Huntingdon's chorea, spasmodic wry-neck, tic, and hysteria.

Convulsions.—Convulsions have been already considered (see p. '80).

Contracture.—These are the states of body in which the m. ality of the limbs is lessened, and the position assumed by a limb is gradually

fixed, so that it cannot be moved from that position. This occurs in two ways—a limb, for example, may be flexed by the activity of flexor mescles which are continually in a state of spasm, or by the action of normal flexors, unopposed by extensors, because the latter are paralyzed, while the former still receive the normal tonic impulses. This latter form of contracture is termed passive.

THE BRAIN

Gross Anomalies.—These may be divided in the first place into (.1) those associated with malformation of the vault of the skull, which we may call cranial anomalies, and in the second place, (B) those of the brain alone, the cranial vault being intact.

(A) Of the former we have a remarkable series, associated evidently with imperfect closure of the dorsal groove in the region of the cephalic lobes, illustrating all stages in which this is either partial or complete or accompanied by a greater or less extent of imperfect closure of the somatic dorsal groove (spina bifida). Anencephaly or acrania is that form in which there is complete defect of the vault of the skull and of the scalp, and the brain is represented by a mass of congested membranes. The basal part of the brain is present and gives origin to the eye, the ear, and the cranial nerves. In exencephaly the defective development is partial; the vault of the skull is in part developed, most frequently the frontal region; there is imperfectly formed brain substance which overhangs, like a sack, the back of the neck, or in other cases, the eyes. As a result of amniotic adhesions, the projecting part may be lateral and unsymmetrical.

(B) Of malformation of the brain alone, the following are the most remarkable:

(a) General.—Microcephaly, in the typical form of which the whole of the brain is small and poorly developed, the cranium, while perfect, being correspondingly small. The brain, instead of weighing 1200 grams, may weigh 250 grams or less. This condition is associated with idiocy, and is sometimes familial.

Macrocephaly is a condition of absolute increase in brain substance, rare, but well authenticated. Some, but not all of the greatest men in history have had large brains, notably Cromwell and Bismarck (over 2000 grams). The largest known brain (2850 grams) was, however, that of an idiot.

well developed and the hemispheres of small size and with poor convolutions or vice versa. More frequent is defective development of portions of one or both hemispheres; of this the most characteristic form is brought about by imperfect development or by intra-uterine obstruction of one or more branches of the middle cerebral artery. As a result there is either in the early stages a lack of development or in later fœtal

or several etimes it is l; in other the part is movement, in which o contract in some poisoning de of proc impulses

scle is 1

e mind or.

concerned

g power in

denced by tion or desive mani-• Before

an destroy

rone cease

lus, which

the lesion

ed. Being

nessages it

s. because

pördinated

ork of the

nd will be

re tremors,

rities that

ılar move-

very old.

atly in its

the nature urposeless, in cherea,

that there

actions of

mentarily

eep (90). monlity gradually or early postnatal life absorption of the area supplied by that vesse with, in consequence, the formation of a cyst-like space covered by the membranes, containing cerebrospinal fluid (porencephaly). Mor rarely, definite portions of the brain, such as the corpus callosum, may be undeveloped and wanting. A slighter defect is heterotopia, in which portions of the gray matter are aberrant and are found in the white matter.

There is considerable variation to be found in the development and number of the convolutions; in so-called degenerates, these may be reduced in number and shallow, from flattening of the gyri (agyria) In those of high mental development they are found well developed and abundant.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Anemia.—The brain is found strikingly bloodless, and of almost milky white color in cases of death from hemorrhage, as again in cases of profound systemic anemias.

Hyperemia.—Hyperemia of the passive order is seen in cases of chronic general congestion, as in cardiac disease, of obstruction to the venous outflow by way of the jugular veins, as in hanging, and in cases of suffocation or death in convulsions. The brain oozes more blood than usual on section and the cut vessels are more than usually prominent. Active hyperemia is seen in cerebritis, and in such states as mania, delirium tremens, and to some extent in cases of death at the height of acute infections. As in congestion, so also in ædema, the condition is best recognized by the state of the membranes; cerebral ædema is recognizable by the pale vet, and shiny surface on section. Œdema may be extreme in the vicinity of a new growth, the infiltrated brain tissue appearing actually gelatinous. The causes of ædema in general are those of extreme passive congestion.

Hydrocephalus.—Hydrocephalus is of two orders—external, where the excess of fluid is outside the brain (see meninges), and internal, where the accumulation is in the ventricles. The latter is the more striking, and may be acquired during intra-uterine or postnatal existence. The condition is progressive and the head may attain an extra-ordinary size, the cranial bones becoming as thin as paper, or even replaced by membrane and widely separated. Through the unusual distension of the ventricles the brain substance becomes thinned to an almost incredible degree. There is still debate as to the cause, but even if in the first stages there is extensive formation of cerebrospinal fluid from ependymal irritation, etc., the main disturbance in a fully developed case is obstruction to the outflow of the fluid from the ventricles into the system of meningeal spaces, and so into the lymphatics.

Hydrocephalus of the fourth ventricle is rarer, but occurs as a result of obstruction in the lateral recesses in which run the choroid plexuses and which communicate with the subarachnoid space.

Hemorrhage.—Hemorrhages of the small vessels of the brain may occur in large number and of small size, from trauma, especially in concussive injuries and at the site affected by "contrecoup." They

hat vessel, overed by y). More sum, may h, in which the white

oment and e may be i (**agyria**). developed

strikingly eath from

of chronic ne venous s of suffohan usual t. Active delirium of acute on is best is recoga may be in tissue neral are

il, where internal, the more tal existme extraor even unusual inned to use, but rospinal a fully the venphatics.
a result olexuses

in may ially in They

are seen near the surface on section of the brain substance. Large bemorrhages in the e regions are rare, apart from actual laceration. Large hemorrhages, however, may occur, notably deep in the substance of the hemisphere, involving the internal capsule, corpus striatum, and optic thalamus, less rarely in the pons and base of the brain. are often of large size, as much as several ounces of blood being effused, with great accompanying destruction of the brain tissue; the blood may escape into the ventricles. Why this should be the seat of election for cerebral hemorrhage appears to be due to the fact that the lenticulostriate branches of the middle cerebral are almost in a direct line with the internal carotid and thus are subjected to the greatest force of the blood stream. From their position such hemorrhages are likely to involve the anterior two-thirds of the posterior limb of the internal capsule in which pass the fibres from the motor area of the cortex; the result is "apoplexy" or paralytic "stroke," both terms implying suddenness. A small hemorrhage may be completely absorbed; a larger may be absorbed with a resulting cicatrix; there is, however, little tendency to the formation of granulation tissue, and thus, if not fatal, a large hemorrhage is transformed into a cyst (see p. 293).

Embolism and Thrombosis. Sudden apoplectic attacks may be due to causes other than hemorrhage. Of these the most important is embolism. The arteries of the basal region of the brain are endarteries (see p. 341), wherefore it follows that it one of these becomes suddenly plugged by any foreign substance circulating in the blood, the area is cut off from its nutrition, and, as a result, the nerve cells in, and the nerve fibres passing through that area undergo disorganization. Cerebral embolism may be brought about, like embolism elsewhere, by many agents (see p. 351), but of these by far the commonest is the thrombotic material constituting the vegetations of acute endocarditis, which, broken off, may be carried into the carotids and so to the brain, and the same reason that led to hemorrhage being specially frequent in the branches of the middle cerebral-namely the direct course of the blood-applies also to embolism; it is the arteries of the base of the brain that are specially apt to be involved. The result of such embolism is encephalomalacia or "brain softening," affecting the area of distribution of the artery involved. There is first developed an area of necrosis, which soon undergoes softening and is of yellowish, gelatinous appearance; most often there is no infiltration of blood from the surrounding veins (white softening), but occasionally this supervenes red softening), giving place to brown or yellow softening as the blood pigment diffuses out and is absorbed. The difference between the results of embolism and of hemorrhage is that the former remains relatively circumscribed to the area of blood supply, whereas with progressive outpouring of blood the hemorrhage involves a greater are a than is supplied by the ruptured vessel. Symptomatically, therethe paralysis following upon a hemorrhage is apt to be progressive during the time following its actual beginning.

Thrombosis is secondary to disease of the arterial wall or to an embolus. In order of frequency the causes of cerebral thrombosis are arteriosclerosis, syphilis, and acute infections (including those cases which follow embolism). It will be recalled that in the subjects of arterial disease the smaller cerebral arteries are peculiarly apt to show degeneration in the form of atheromatous plaques and of multiple miliary aneurysms. Such thrombosis, originating at one spot in the diseased vessel wall, does not suddenly, but gradually, lead to obliteration and closure; there is, therefore, in general, an absence of the true apoplectic or stroke-like onset. The results to the cerebral tissue may be identical with those just described.

Aneurysms.—Aneurysms of the extracerebral and basal vessels of the brain are not uncommon; they are saccular and of the size of a pea or bean, and may be the site of rupture. Of more importance are the multiple miliary aneurysms of the intracerebral vessels in advanced arteriosclerotic conditions; maceration of the brain reveals that these may be present literally by the hundred, just visible to the naked eye. It is the sudden giving way of one of the larger of these that is held

to be the most frequent cause of cerebral hemorrhage.

Inflammation.—Acute Encephalitis.—This is not a very frequent condition, save as caused by trauma, and as it occurs in the superficial parts, associated with meningitis, and locally, as an extension from disease of the middle ear and bones. Nevertheless certain of the acute infections are associated with diffuse and generalized disturbance of the brain tissue. In rabies, in acute polioencephalitis, to a less marked extent in influenza, in bacteriemia due to staphylococci, etc., in typhoid, and other acute infections, the toxic hyperemia is probably the cause of those symptoms which are clinically grouped under the term "meningismus." Save the hyperemia, the changes are microscopic, and consist of perivascular exudate with infiltration of lymphocytes and leukocytes. The nerve-cell bodies exhibit alteration of the Nissl's granules. In very acute cases, punctate hemorrhages may be seen (hemorrhagic encephalitis).

Abscess of the Brain (Purulent Encephalitis).—This may be of various kinds, cryptogenic, traumatic, metastatic, and by extension from nearby structures, especially the mastoid region of the skull. Or sionally a well-defined abscess is found in the cerebrum or cerebellum, associated with any recognizable focus of infection elsewhere; doubtless in such the infection is hematogenous. Traumatic abscess develops usually by the immediate carriage of pyogenic organisms into the brain substance from the exterior, although it may happen that an injured area may be infected long after the infliction of the injury. Metastatic abscess is seen where there is suppuration elsewhere, this being a hematogenous (or lymphogenous) infection. Abscers arising by extension is most commonly seen in the temporosphenoidal lobe or in the cerebellum, secondary to suppurative mastoiditis; it may also occur by extension from the upper nasal region and from any of the bone sinuses,

embo-

arterio-

which

arterial

egener-

miliary

iseased

on and

plectic

entical

of the

pea or

re the

ranced

these

d eye.

s held

quent

erficial

from

acute

ice of

arked

ohoid,

cause

nenin-

con-

euko-

nules.

hagic

rious

earby

illy a

iated

such

ually

sub-

area

tatie

ng a

kten-

the

r by

uses,

or from the orbit. Frequently the abscess in these cases is a direct continuation of the adjacent suppurative area, but it also frequently happens that it is separated from this area by a zone of intact, though inharmed brain substance; to explain this it is necessary to consider the possibility of a metastatic lymphogenous infection.

Br in abscesses may be minute or multiple, as in metastatic cases, but more frequent is the large solitary abscess, surrounded by a hyperenne, ordematous area, forming a rounded mass; the pus is characteristically greenish and thin; when at all old, there is present a well-formed lining membrane, with little or no tendency to subsequent fibrous repair; according to its position it may rupture externally, causing a purulent meningitis, or internally into the ventricles. Deep in the "blind" area of the brain, such an abscess may remain for years without obvious disturbance of cerebral function.

Syphilis.—Favorite site for spirochetes as is the brain, it is to be remembered that the most striking signs and symptoms of "cerebral syphilis" are meningeal rather than cerebral; the meningeal effects will be dealt with later. More than this, cerebral infection is very commonly secondary to meningeal infection. The following are the most common changes induced in the brain substance: (1) encephalitis neonatorum, which is found in newborn, often in stillborn syphilities; its striking feature is a small-celled perivascular infiltration, together with an excess of granule cells (Gluge's corpuscles), scattered through the brain.

Throughout the syphilitic process there is a peculiar liability that there should be involvement of the cerebral arteries and arterioles, especially those on the surface passing in from the meninges. This shows itself in the form of (2) a diffuse periarteritis with small-celled and plasma-celled infiltration, mesarteritis, with small-celled infiltration and replacement of the middle coat, and intimitis with proliferation of the endothelium, leading to a form of endarteritis obliterans. It is this process which seems to be the eventual cause of those degenerative changes which appear in such diseases as general paralysis of the insane dementia paralytica).

(3) In addition to these diffuse vascular disturbances, we encounter the development of localized solitary or multiple syphilomas (gumma). These syphilitie granulomas may attain large size, 2 cm. or more across, with destruction and replacement of the brain substance, and irritation of the surrounding neurones—in short, may present those symptoms which characterize intracranial growths. The base of the brain is the most frequent site, and the cerebellum is rarely involved. In the early stages they are soft and jelly-like, with a whitish centre, but they become firmer and may even undergo caseation. As a whole, they are less sharply defined than tuberculous masses.

Tuberculosis.—Just as with syphilis, so with tuberculosis, there is a prodi position for the lesions to occur most extensively in connection will the meninges (see p. 505). In the brain substance, tuberculosis

appears in the form of conglomerate tubercles of hematogenous origin these are found especially in the young in the basal portion of the brain in the pons, the temporosphenoidal lobes, and particularly in the cerebellum. In the earlier stage of growth the caseous centre is surrounded by a ring of small tubercles and small-celled infiltration passing imperceptibly into the surrounding tissue and invading it. By the progressive caseation of the centre, and extension of the periphery, large caseous tubercles are formed, as large as or larger than a hen's egg. The process may become arrested, in which case the surrounding fibrosis is firm and well defined, and the mass may be shelled out. Occasionally, the caseous material undergoes softening, in which case the appearance is much that of a "cold" abscess. It will be understood that in such a case we have a replacement (and more) of brain substance by new tissue and the consequent increase of intracranial tension which is so predominant a feature in cerebral tumor.

Other granulomas such as actinomycosis, glanders, and leprosy are

uncommon.

Regressive Changes.—These may be diffuse and generalized, or local, involving sharply defined areas of the brain and their associated tracts of fibres.

General Atrophy.—General atrophy is best marked in the progressive diminution in size of the brain in the old. Here the brain in general shrinks, and the space so made is taken, both outside and inside the brain, by cerebrospinal fluid; the perivascular lymph spaces in the base of the brain are greatly widened so that cystic spaces appear in the brain substance, and the membranes, especially the pia, indicate their share in this change by appearing ædematous. The nerve cells of the gray matter undergo a marked diminution, individual cells shrinking, and losing their dendrites, becoming more oval, and finally disappearing, and this not in special areas, but here and there, apparently at random.

With this diminution of the nerve cells, there is both an apparent and also, it would seem, an actual increase in the more lowly glial tissue and fibrils, so that there results an apparent diffuse sclerosis of the diminished organ. Associated with this, the convolutions appear small

and the gyri between them much widened.

Very similar appearances are met prematurely in cases of chronic lead poisoning and in some alcoholics. In both of these classes, the glial and fibrous overgrowth appears to be even more pronounced than in the senile brain. To another markedly atrophic condition we have already referred that seen in dementia paralytica. Here it is that arterial changes of syphilitic origin, affecting the arterioles, characterized more particularly by a perivascular plasma-celled infiltration, are obviously the primary cause of the degeneration. With the consequent malnutrition, there is even more extreme degeneration of the cortical nerve-cell bodies (and of the neurones in their whole length) than occurs in senile atrophy. Over 95 per cent. of cases of dementia paralytica give a positive Wassermann reaction. This disease, therefore, must

be regarded as an atrophy of the brain secondary to chronic syphilitic arteritis.

Local Atrophy.—This may be brought about by many causes, chief among which are circulatory disturbances, pressure of tumors or of overgrowth of the inner table of the skull, pressure of localized inflammatory processes and the disturbed nutrition set up by the same. In addition we must recognize abiotrophic phenomena due to inherited or acquired premature exhaustion of the neurones of particular areas of the brain, as also the disuse atrophy which may follow the cutting-off of neurones from their distal portions, either peripheral end-organs or arborizations around the cell bodies of other neurones. It is these partial atrophies that are so characteristically accompanied by degeneration of particular tracts, whether ascending or descending, and it is these that have given us the knowledge we possess of the finer anatomy of the brain and cord. The processes that occur in this partial atrophy are of the same order as those seen in the general atrophy just described.

Progressive Changes.—The structure of the brain differs from all other organs of the body in that both its specific elements, the neurones, and its specific connective tissue, the neuroglia, are of epiblastic origin. The mesoblastic elements in it are comparatively slight, consisting merely of the vessels and the small amount of connective tissue constituting their adventitia. It follows thus that progressive changes are mainly in connection with . Progressive changes in connection with the . sels are comparatively rare; these we may first discuss, in stating that angiomas have been recorded in association with the cortex, and then of pial rather than of cerebral origin. Fibromas and myxomas have also been recorded, the former larger, the latter small and rounded. So, again, there are very rare cases of cerebral osteoma. More frequently are encountered metaplastic osseous plaques of the brain membranes; these cannot be regarded as true tumors. Sarcomas originating within the brain substance are distinctly rare if we except the most anaplastic form of glioma, the Nevertheless, occasional spindle-celled sarcomas are on record which can be only of connective-tissue origin. We shall refer to the endotheliomas when discussing the tumors of the brain membranes.

Glioma. Here we must in the first place distinguish between this and a condition of gliosis or gliomatosis, in which we encounter one or more poorly defined areas of diffuse but pronounced overgrowth of the managinal elements. In such a case the tumor passes imperceptibly is to the surrounding tissue, and, what is more, if it affect a convoluted area, the convolutions are still maintained, although they are markedly before as in such areas the neurones have been replaced. What may be formed true glioma is usually solitary, tends to be spherical, and by the lor and consistence is recognizably distinct from the surrounding in a color the glioma is grayish pink, somewhat more trans-

prosy are

ous origin:

the brain,

the cere-

irrounded

ng imper-

rogressive

e caseous

ie process

is is firm

nally, the

pearance

t in such

e by new

, or local, ed tracts

ogressive in general aside the the base ar in the ate their is of the prinking, opearing, andom.

apparent al tissue s of the ar small

chronic sees, the red than we have is that aracterion, are sequent cortical n occurs ralytica

e, must

lucent than the brain substance, and may be either relatively poor in cells but rich in fibrillar tissue (hard glioma), or may be rich in cells (soft glioma).

The glioma cell is characterized by showing numerous "spider-leg" processes, herein differing from the normal glial cell in which these processes are little noticeable, although there are abundant fibrils in the unmediate neighborhe the cells. Where the cells compose the whole of the tumor want eir processes little recognizable, it is difficult and at times impossione to distinguish the tumor from a roundcelled sarcoma of mesoblastic origin. Believing, as we have pointed out (p. 226), that the term sarcoma can be given only a histological significance, we do not hesitate to speak of such tumors as gliosarcomas, although many German authorities still maintain, from arguments with which we cannot agree, that this terminology is incorrect. Solitary gliomas are to be met with in the cerebral hemispheres as also in the cerebellum. There are not a few cases on record of glioma ci the corpus callosum but this, in our opinion, is more accurately a diff se gliomatosis. Occasionally we meet with gliomas containing rosette-like cell masses and actual cystic eavities lined by a cubical epithelium; such tumors are evidently of embryonal origin and represent aberrant portions of the ependyma that have been snared off in the course of development. We have already referred to the ependymomas (p. 247), tumors containing ependymal elements; these may be found forming nodular gliomatous masses in the lateral ventricles; a few cases from the fourth ventricle have been reported. Apparently these ependymomas may, though rarely, take on an epitheliomatous or carcinomatous appearance.

Secondary tumors in the brain substance are not so common as primary; not only are carcinomas and sarcomas met, but tumors, such as hypernephroma and chorioepithelioma are occasionally found, the two latter having more predilection for this site than the two former.

Cysts.—Cysts of various orders may be encountered in the brain; "gland cysts" or ependymal cysts arise by cutting off of part of the lateral ventricle; hemorrhagic cysts are secondary to large hemorrhages; necrotic cysts replace areas of softening, appearing also in connection with gliomas; here also may be included porencephaly (p. 486), and lastly parasitic cysts are found, the cystic stages of cysticercus and echinococcus. The former are small, multiple, attaining the size of a pea, rarely larger; the solitary echinococcus hydatids are large, even to the size of an orange, and from their size give all the symptoms of a brain tumor.

THE PITUITARY BODY (HYPOPHYSIS C' REBRI)

The pituitary body deserves separate mention, in that, while attached to the brain, its main constituent is not nervous tissue; it is, indeed, composed of three portions: the anterior glandular, an intermediate

r poor in in cells ider-leg" ch these it fibrils compose ole, it is a round-pointed cological arcomas, guments

suments
Solias also
glioma
curately
taining
cubical
present
in the
momas
found
v cases
epenarcino-

as priuch as
e two
r.
brain;
ateral
ecrotic
with
lastly
chino-

ched leed, liate

pea,

o the

brain

area with gland cells intermixed with neuroglial tissue, and the posterior junctional portion, also of glial tissue without nerve fibres proper. Little is known regarding its function save that the posterior and intermediate portions afford an extract which, like adrenin, greatly raises the blood pressure, and unlike adrenin, induces polyuria by acting directly on the kidney. The main pathological interest of the pituitary lies in the relationship between hyperplasia and adenomatous growths of the anterior portion and the development of acromegaly (see p. 101). Changes have also been seen in the pituitary in connection with pregnancy and castration, as again, secondary to removal of the thyroid gland.

THE PINEAL GLAND (EPIPHYSIS CEREBRI)

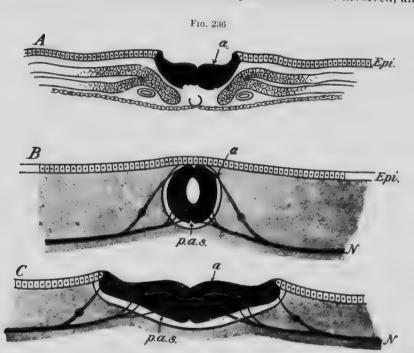
Anatomically the pineal gland represents a rudiment of the median eye still recognizable in certain lizards; it consists thus of purely nervous elements; at most, it may be the seat of hypertrophy and gliomatous tunnors, which by their size may press upon the aqueduct of Sylvius and the vena magna Galeni and so bring about hydrocephalus internus.

THE SPINAL CORD

Anomalies .- Here may be recalled some of the more important congenital abnormalities of the spinal cord; they are relatively infrequent and do not call for extensive description. Incomplete formation and shortening of the cord is observed in cases of anencephaly combined with spina bifida as also in simple spina bifida, to which reference will be made later. Duplication of the cord has been observed both in cases of partial double monsters and apart from any clear evidence of duplication of the body in general. Duplication of the spinal canal is also recorded; this may be partial or complete, when it appears to he the very slightest case of somatic duplication. More important, because more common and more obvious, are the various grades of spina bifida (rachischisis). Here, anatomically, we deal with the various conditions of incomplete formation of the laminæ of the vertebræ, but underlying this, in the extreme cases is a lack of closure of the dorsal groove, whereby the two halves of the posterior portions of the cord fail to unite and the ependyma of what ought to be the spinal canal unites with the true skin.

We have already referred to the various forms of this condition in discussing the abnormalities (see p. 72). Here we repeat that the condition may affect the whole length of the cord, or may be partial, affecting a portion thereof, and may be complete or incomplete. Thus, maker the cystic form of spina bifida, we may have a series of cases in which merely the laminæ are defective, the cord being perfect, the

slightest form being the spina bifida occulta in which fatty tissue, in part developed in association with the spinal meninges, in part filling the defect of the bony and subcutaneous tissues, forms a projecting mass which, curiously, is covered by a skin that is extraordinarily hairy. This form is most frequently seen in the lumbosacral region and appear to be closely related to those cases of fatty projections covered by hairy skin which constitute "false tails." From these slightest cases we past through a series of conditions of meningocele, in which the defect in the bony vault is occupied by a somewhat cystic expansion of the meninges filled with fluid, and in which the spinal cord is not involved, and



A, schema of development of medullary groove; B, formation of neural canal by closure of the medullary groove; C, complete rachischisis; the medullary groove remains open; Epi., epiderm; a, neural tract; p.a.s., pia-arachnoid space,

to cases of myelocystocele in which, while the spinal canal is complete, the lack of support in the region where the laminæ are defective, results in a localized expansion of the spinal canal, to cases in which the spinal canal has failed to form and while the anterior dura and pia are fully developed, the spinal cord is represented by an imperfect and intensely congested layer of nerve tissue covered posteriorly and superficially by a layer of ependyma. In these cases occasionally owing to the want of support, fluid may accumulate in the anterior part of the pia-arachnoid space, forming thus a tumor projecting backward, the myelomeningocele.

filling the sting mass, rily hairy. and appears d by hairy es we pass defect in f the men-

TEpi.

Epi.

sure of the

omplete, results e spinal are fully ntensely rficially he want a-arachmyelo-

Occasionally, wholly unassociated with any defect of the lamine, there may be localized myeloceles or dilatations of the neural canal filled with cerebrospinal fluid (hydromyelia). This condition may be compared with hydrocephalus internus. As to the causes of the condition we know little, save that in some cases it appears to be congenital, in others acquired. Of greater clinical interest is the somewhat rare condition of syringomyelia, in which along the course of the cord is to be found one or more irregular dilatations of the central canal, which, so small in the normal cord as to be practically invisible, may be so distended as to admit a finger. In general these cavities are irregular in shape; in general, also, they are surrounded by a layer of hyperplastic glial tissue. The dilatation and cavity, being centrally located, affect the fibres passing over in the commissure and produce dissociated loss of sensibility to pain, heat, and cold. It is still uncertain how far this gliosis is to be regarded as of primary, how far of secondary origin; what is particularly noticeable is the indication that this condition affords of the existence of tactile as distinct from other sensory nerves. In a considerable proportion of cases, tactile sensation is retained, whereas the senses of heat, cold, and pain are lost. It is held by some that the atrophy and necrosis of areas of the gliomatous new formation favor the occurrence of these cystic dilatations.

Circulatory Disturbances.—There is little that needs to be said regarding the circulatory disturbances of the cord as distinct from those of the brain. There may be anemia and active and passive congestion brought about by the same factors as in the brain. At most may be noted the occasional occurrence of elongated cysts, extending down the cord parallel with the still-extant central canal, which, according to Van Gieson, are of traumatic and hemorrhagic origin; they are, in fact, post-hemorrhagic cysts. Hemorrhage may occur in purpura and the blood diseases, though it is usually a result of trauma. It has been suggested that the symptoms of "railway spine" are not purely functional, but are the result of multiple hemorrhages into the substance of the cord with subsequent cicatrization.

Inflammation.—Inflammation of the cord is known by the general term of myelitis and may be generalized throughout the cord or confined to certain local areas. It may again be divided into the form which affects the whole cord, or that affecting mainly the gray matter, poliomyelitis.

Confusion exists as to what is truly called myelitis, in that the aftereffects of a simple degeneration, such as that produced by compression, are indistinguishable from those following an acute (infective) inflammation. In the primary stage, these two conditions are quite distinct.

We elitis, properly so-called, is the result of infection, or acute trauma, or both, and is characterized by definite reactive processes. It is fored in acute general infections and in certain specific infections

affecting especially the cord, preëminent among which is that known as acute poliomyelitis. Very important also are those forms in which infection occurs by extension, as in disease of the meninges, notable cerebrospinal meningitis, or of the vertebræ, as in caries. In all case of true acute myelitis the affected portion of the cord appears pin more hyperemic than normal, soft, so that it is almost impossible to cut it cleanly, and somewhat swollen. Microscopically, the main feature is a small-celled infiltration around the vessels, with evidence of degeneration, whether in the ganglia cells or the medullated fibre constituting the white matter. With this there may be an increase number of "granule cells" scattered through the affected area. The ultimate results are atrophy of the specific elements and a moderate degree of glial proliferation (sclerosis) with accompanying diminution in volume.

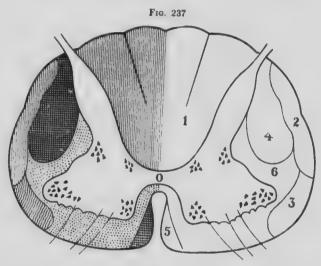
Regressive Changes.—Just as in the brain, so in the cord, with old age there is evidence of simple atrophy shown by diminished size, some shrinkage and pigmentation of the nerve cells of the gray matter, and in addition, more particularly in the white matter, is to be recognized an increasing number of corpora amylacea, small corpuscles varying from 12 to 50μ in diameter, staining deeply with hematoxylin and the ordinary aniline dyes. These are specially numerous in the posterior columns. Whether they originate from glial cells or from degenerated medullated fibres is still a matter of uncertainty.

As already stated, acute degenerative changes result from trauma traumatic compression, hemorrhage, and infection; more gradually produced degenerations may result from tumors, gummas, and tuberculomas, either in the cord itself or in the brain. It is more usual, however, to encounter the later stages of the degenerative process—secondary degenerations manifesting themselves by atrophy and sclerosis of one or more of the ascending and descending tracts in the white matter, and by shrinkage and, it may be, absence of cells and cell groups in the gray matter. Here the accompanying figure will recall the more important of the tracts, divided into the ascending and the descending, the long and the short.

We need merely recall that no matter what the nature of the cause, these secondary degenerations are all of the same order.

We are made aware of degeneration of this secondary nature by study of serial sections of the cord. During the development of the degeneration various special methods of staining, notable among which are Marchi's and Weigert's, pick out for us the affected fibres, largely in consequence of the chemical substances resulting from dissociation of the myelin of the medullated sheaths. Later, when the process of disintegration is complete, and the fatty matter has been absorbed, ordinary histological stains demonstrate, by their failure to color the tissue, that the axones and their sheaths have largely disappeared and have been replaced by firmer, more translucent fibroid tissue, the outcome of glial proliferation (sclerosis). These areas of degeneration

map out the geography of affected tissue, whether this be of the nature of a degeneration throughout the whole cord, or an isolated area of primary degeneration in the cord itself, with the tracts below or above secondarily affected by that degeneration.



Disgrammatic section of spinal cord to show the more important tracts: 1, posterior columns sensors and ascending); 2, direct cerebellar tract (sensors and ascending); 3, ventrolateral tract of Graves sensors and ascending); 4, lateral or crossed pyramidal tract (motor and descending); 5, direct pyramidal tract (motor and descending); 6, ventrolateral ground bundles.

Fig. 238



The state sales. Dorsal cord, showing almost complete degeneration and sclerosis of the posterior (ascending) columns. (From the collection of Dr. Colin K. Russel.)

A degeneration throughout the cord, if descending, may result from any lesion which separates these axones from their nutritive centre, the nerve-cell body, or which destroys that nutritive centre, e. g., hemerrhage in the internal capsule or destructive lesion of the motor cortex. Quite distinct from such lesions, but with the same ultimate effects upon the fibre, are those scattered areas which arise apparently at random in the cord and brain. They may arise from obscure vascolar causes as in multiple sclerosis, or from toxic causes as in the proceeding causes as a sociated with pernicious anemia.

A rexample of these secondary degenerations, let us suppose that

that known
as in which
es, notably
In all cases
pears pink,
possible to
the main
a evidences
ated fibres
i increased
area. The
moderate

l, with old size, some atter, and, recognized es varying in and the e posterior egenerated

diminution

m trauma,
ually prol tubercu, however,
secondary
sis of one
te matter,
groups in
the more
escending,

he cause,

by study he degenwhich are argely in sociation process of absorbed, color the ared and the outeneration the cord has been hemisected, that is, one-half of it has been cut through; the knife has severed every tract and every longitudinally disposed fibre in that half of the cord. The descending fibres that have been cut show degeneration below the section, that is, special staining methods will at first show these fibres in their state of degeneration, and later their disappearance and replacement by selerosis. The ascending fibres, on the other hand, are relatively unaffected below the point of injury; it is above this that the degenerations are seen.

Based upon these general considerations we may classify the main diseases affecting the cord according to whether the lesions are due to (1) destruction of the upper motor neurones; (2) injuries affecting the axones of those upper motor neurones during their course down the cord; (3) injuries of the lower motor neurones (diseases of the axones of these, the peripheral nerves, will be considered separately), and (4) diseases or injuries affecting the sensory neurones from the posterior ganglion upward, and (5) diseases affecting motor and sensory neurones coincidently.

It seems necessary in a work of this scope to leave out the great mass of clinical detail that is involved in any full discussion of these various spinal disorders; we can merely indicate the different types with outstanding examples.

1. Diseases Affecting the Cranial Distribution of the Upper Motor Neurone.—Congenital spastic paraplegia is a well-marked condition in which nerve-cell bodies in the cerebral cortex have been destroyed, usually by trauma at birth or again by obliteration of cerebral vessels during feetal life, as in congenital porencephaly. Similar spastic paralysis of like origin, namely, through destruction of cortical nerve cells, may be of postnatal origin, due, for example, to the presence of tumors, infective granulomas, or vascular obliteration (acquired porencephaly). As regards the cerebellar neurones, the ideas of many authorities compel us to include here Friedreich's ataxia as owing its most important symptoms to an atrophy of nerve-cell bodies in the cerebellum. In this rare familial disease it must be remembered that there is also a spinal lesion of both motor and sensory systems.

Perhaps the commonest of lesions in the cord, secondary to primary insults in the brain, are those following upon cerebral hemorrhage and cerebral thrombosis. Hemorrhage affects most frequently the internal capsule and the pons, destroying axones of only one side of the body. In multiple sclerosis with its sporadic, irregular distribution of sclerosed areas of primary degeneration, either the cortex or the cranial tracts may chance to be involved, and so lead to secondary degeneration in the motor tracts of the cord.

2. Disease Affecting the Axones of the Upper Motor Neurone during Their Course Down the Cord.—The broad effects of such diseases are identical with those of the previous category; we make the separation because here the disease acts within the cord. Strictly speaking, we must here include conditions of myelitis diffuse or localized, because

through; osed fibre been cut methods and later ng fibres, of injury;

the main are due affecting lown the se axones , and (4) posterior neurones

he great of these pes with

tor Neuin which
usually
s during
allysis of
may be
infective
regards
el us to
mptoms
his rare
al lesion

orimary
uge and
nternal
e body.
elerosed
tracts
in the

during ses are aration ng, we because

these affect the motor tracts, although it rarely happens that the effects are confined to these descending axones. Lateral sclerosis is a primary symmetrical sclerosis of both crossed pyramidal tracts, characterized by spastic paralysis without atrophy of the muscles, and by increase of the tendon reflexes. Although the main lesions are seen in the cord, it is really an abiotrophic condition of the whole motor neurone, and thus strictly might have been included with equal justice among the diseases of the upper motor neurone in the brain. This lateral sclerosis is seen in the family type of lateral sclerosis and amyotrophic lateral sclerosis (where the lower motor neurone is also affected). Pure examples of this condition are rare. As in the previous class, multiple sclerosis may happen to involve the motor tracts at any level and induce a secondary sclerosis below, with spastic phenomena; so also with tumors and the infective granulomas.

3. Diseases or Injuries Involving the Lower Motor Neurones. - In bulbar paralysis we deal with a destruction of lower motor neurones situated not in the horns, but in the bulb; the fact that the axones of these cells may run in cranial nerves, does not affect the principle that, although we are here dealing with diseases of the spinal cord, we have in bulbar paralysis a lesion of the nerve cell body of the lower motor neurone and its axone. The progressive atrophy of these neurones involves the nuclei of the hypoglossal, glossopharyngeal, the vagus and the spinal accessory nerves, and occasionally the motor nucleus of the trigeminal. We may repeat that such paralyses of lower motor neurones are flaccid, not spastic. Passing to the cord itself, the most extreme destruction of the lower motor neurones is seen in acute poliomyelitis. This is an infective disorder, characteristically of childhood, involving particularly the anterior horn cells, and leading, in a short time, to a flaccid paralysis, followed by atrophy and contracture of the paralyzed member. It is well to remember that in this disease, the inflammatory process is not confined to the anterior horns, but may affect the entire cord; a cellular infiltration is seen along all vessels, most marked where the vascularity is greatest, viz., in the anterior horns.

Here again must be mentioned myelitis of the various acute forms, which obviously affects the nerve-cell bodies of the gray matter at the level concerned; as well as the gliosis of syringomyelia, multiple sclerosis, tumors, and the granulomas.

Another specific disorder specially involving the anterior horns and their nerve cells is the spinal form of progressive muscular atrophy type Aran-Duchenne). In this the whole lower motor neurone undergone strophy and with it the innervated muscles. This disease affects the soft middle age, is slowly progressive over years, and appears in soft asses to be the result of a toxemia acting in the subject of abiotrophy see p. 299), affecting particular groups of lower motor neurones. In any otrophic lateral sclerosis there is also degeneration of the lower motor neurone; this has already been considered.

4. Diseases Affecting Primarily the Sensory Neurones. Here, first and foremost, is to be recognized tabes dorsalis or locomotor ataxia. The characteristic lesion is an ascending degeneration affecting the posterior columns; in short, this is a sensory neurone disease; as to the cause of it, the Wassermann reaction has proved conclusively that nearly all

cases are of syphilitic origin.

Regarding the exact nature of the process bringing about the degeneration, opinions are still divided. Considerable attention has beer paid of late years to the degenerative changes seen in the posterior root ganglia, but it is now generally accepted that these are not sufficient to explain the extensive degeneration found in the posterior columns So, also, certain observers have called attention to localized meningitis with thickening involving the meninges of the posterior aspect of the cord, and have assumed that the contraction of the fibrous tissue around the entering posterior root fibres is sufficient to cause an ascending atrophy and sclerosis. We are inclined to accept the view of Mott that the syphilitic virus affecting the vitality of the sensory neurones may cause a degeneration that first shows itself peripherally and only with its progressive advance brings about a final atrophy of the nerve-cell body. It might be suggested that we deal with a selective action of the syphilitic virus telling particularly upon the sensory neurones; there are, however, indications that this view is incorrect that syphilis induces a general lowered vitality of all the neurones thus in those showing the early stages of tabes and accustomed to particular recurrent muscular movements (polishers and the like) a frequent symptom of the disea. is paresis and wasting of the muscle involved in these movements. The reason why in the cord the sensory system is particularly involved appears to be that in the maintenance of muscular tone, etc., these neurones are in a state of continuous activity, whereas the anterior motor neurones, acted upon as they are from two sources, viz., from the brain and from the cord (in reflex action) have a period of comparative rest during sleep when the cerebra stimuli largely cease to act. If the vitality of both orders of cells be depressed, the sensory neurones are more liable to become exhausted than are the motor.

Again, as in all the foregoing groups, multiple sclerosis, myelitis tumors, gummas and tuberculomas, acting on some portion of the posterior

columns, may lead to a secondary ascending degeneration.

5. Diseases of the Spinal Cord Affecting Motor and Sensory Fibres. Here we have to take into account all those disturbances of the spinal cord which result in destruction with subsequent sclerosis of both ascending and descending tracts. Such are all those that affect the whole cord or all the substance of half the cord, such as the form above mentioned of myelitis; such, also, may be any of the lesions, more or less accidentally placed, such as tumors or the granulomas. It must be remembered also that in diseases which we commonly regard as diseases of one system, a certain proportion of cases may show an

o, first and xia. The posterior e cause of nearly all

he degenhas been posterior sufficient columns. neningitis aspect of ous tissue in ascende view of e sensory upherally, trophy of a selective e sensory incorrect. neurones; stomed to he like) a ie muscles ne sensory intenance ontinuous s they are (in reflex e cerebral of cells be

, myelitis, e posterior

exhausted

Fibres.
the spinal
s of both
affect the
orm above
s, more or
It must
regard as
show an

implication of a second system; thus in tabes dorsalis, when the brain is involved giving rise to general paresis, there may be a sclerosis of the lateral (motor) tract as well. Where, as in multiple sclerosis, numerous areas of primary, localized destruction of the spinal tissue have their origin, not so much in connection with tracts as with vessels, which in their course may pass through several tracts, there necessarily we encounter combined sclerosis, that is, a sclerosis of both motor and sensory tracts coincidently. In Friedreich's ataxia there are found atrophic tracts both ascending and descending (posterior and lateral columns, direct cerebellar, etc.). A similar state is found in subacute combined sclerosis, associated with pernicious anemia. Besides these, in lathyrism and pellagra are found similar states of combined sclerosis; the former of these follows the poisoning by several kinds of vetch lathyrus), and the latter is commonly attributed to a diet of mouldy maize, though there is still much discussion upon this matter of causation.

Progressive Progrehances.—Associated with the low regenerative powers of the reryous tissues hyperplastic changes in the cord are distinctly rare. As regards the tumors, the gliomas are the only ones sufficiently common to deserve note. These gliomas originate most often in the immediate neighborhood of the central canal, and frequently are diffuse, being of the nature of gliosis rather than sharply defined glioma. If the central glioma breaks down, a condition of syringomyelia is produced.

THE MENINGES, CRANIAL AND SPINAL.

The Dura Mater

Circulatory Disturbances.—The most important circulatory disturbances of the dura are thrombosis and hemorrhages. With the dura are necessarily to be included the remarkable sinuses of the cranium, for these are formed in the substance of the dura; by their situation and course they are peculiarly liable to be the site of thrombosis, rather from the skull than from the firm, resistant dura itself.

Thrombosis. Thrombosis may be traumatic, marantic, and infective. The marantic form is occasionally met with in cases of chronic exhaustive diseases associated with cardiac weakness and slowed circulation, most office met in the longitudinal sinus. It is by no means clear that this and the somewhat allied form occasionally seen in chlorosis, may not to due actually to infection of a low grade. There is some tendency now to regard all non-traumatic thromboses as infective. Infective locals, especially of the lateral sinus, is the most important of all conditions, and most often arises by extension from inflammatory es in the mastoid cells, either directly or by way of the emissary of the petrous bone or in the cranial vault. The cavernous sinus

is less often thrombosed by extension from the orbit, or elsewhere. The sinus is distended by a clot, grayish-pink to dark red, firm or softened according to its duration, and at times even appearing as little else than a purulent mass. Such a sinus thrombosis may spread to a surprising extent into other sinuses, and into the jugular veins. The results of this softening are very frequently the development of multiple abscesses in the lung and pyemia, not to mention the more local develop-

ment of meningitis and cerebellar and cerebral abscesses.

Hemorrhage.—It will be recalled that the arteries run on the external aspect of the dura; thus while there may be small capillary hemorrhages in the substance of the dura, any large hemorrhage brought about by traumatic or other rupture of branches of the anterior or middle meningeal arteries, is situated between the dura and the skull; despite their extradural position, such may naturally bring pressure upon the underlying brain substance (cephalhematoma internum, contrasted with c. externum, under the scalp). Subdural hemorrhages originate from the vessels of the pia-arachnoid. The same principle obtains, mutatis mutandis, in connection with the spinal dura.

Inflammation.—Acute Pachymeningitis Externa.—This inflammation of the outer surface of the dura is practically always secondary to infection of the skull, the sinuses, or the vertebræ, or follows infected wounds; it may be of any degree up to abscess formation, and, by the firm connection between dura and bone, is localized, since extension is only obtained at the price of stripping off the adherent dura or burrowing

into the resistant bone.

Pachymeningitis.—It is not a little interesting to note that inflammation of the pia-arachnoid may progress with little evidence of involvement of the dura, while contrariwise, the curious condition, pachymeningitis hæmorrhagica interna, affords at least in its early stages a picture of involvement of the dura alone. In this relationship or want of relationship we may recall that the blood supplies of dura and pia are from entirely different sources, and presumably thus, in connection with inflammation, the infection may travel by one and not by the other. In pachymeningitis hæmorrhagica interna the earliest stage so far recognized is that of areas of the inner surface of the dura covered by a thin layer of fibrin. What is the cause of this phenomenon we do not know, but we suppose that there has been a hemorrhagic oozing of exudate from the finer capillaries of the dura. The conditions in which this is found, viz., in alcoholics and the insane, does not help us to determine the etiology. Studies of cases of longer standing give evidence that with the organization of this first deposit the newly formed capillaries, originating from the dural vessels, again afford a hemorrhagic exudate, which once more exhibits fibrin formation and organization, and in this way in the course of months, there develops a thickened layer of new tissue which may attain considerable depth, and by its pigmentation indicate that there have been recurrent hemorrhages. The outer side of the dura is not affected. This layer of new tissue lsewhere. softened little else to a surns. The multiple develop-

external norrhages about by ldle menpite their ne underwith c. from the s, mutatis

mmation y to infecl wounds; firm conn is only ourrowing

nflammaf involvechymenina picture want of nd pia are onnection ot by the t stage so a covered on we do zic oozing conditions s not help nding give ly formed a hemororganizathickened nd by its norrhages. new tissue

may extend over the larger portion of the dural lining of the skull, and in many cases may show little evidence of extension of the inflammatory process into the pia, there being no adhesions to the underlying brain substance, though in other cases these adhesions are so extensive and close that it is impossible to think that the pia has not entered into the process, even if secondarily. Whether pachymeningitis is truly inflammatory must be left an open question.

Pachymeningitis Cervicalis Hypertrophica.—This disease attains importance only because it may lead to so extensive a thickening of the structures around the cord in the important cervical region, that the nerves are implicated and compressed as they leave the cord. The newformed layers may extend as a collar, three or four inches wide, and very thick, around the cervical cord; the cord may be so compressed that degeneration occurs, and the vessels so obstructed that the cord softens. The general opinion is that this is a syphilitic manifestation; it may require years to develop, with periods of quiescence.

Tuberculosis.—This arises chiefly from tuberculosis of the pia-arachnoid, or of the bone; the latter is more common in the cord by extension of Pott's disease. There may be gross conglomerate tuberculosis or

miliary tubercles.

Syphilis.—This may appear as gumma or as a diffuse process, and may be an extension from disease of the pia-arachnoid or from gummatous caries of the skull or vertebræ; this latter condition, thanks to

better treatment, is today rare.

Progressive Changes.—Tumors.—These are essentially of the connective tissue and endotheliomatous type. The so-called osteomas of the dura are, strictly speaking, osteophytes, showing no inherent tendency to grow, but are plaques of osteoid tissue of metaplastic origin from the connective tissue. Chondromas are rare. Pure fibromas are at times recognized, but the small benign tumors, solitary or multiple, attached by a broad base to the inner aspect of the dura, are strictly endotheliomas, originating apparently from the endothelial inner layer of this membrane. In general these are firm and on section exhibit a framework or stroma of fibrous tissue in the meshes of which are more or less abundant cells of endothelial type, arranged concentrically after the type of the endothelioma proper. Whether the fibrous tissue is truly a stroma or is to be regarded as a metaplastic change of the endothelial cells is debatable. On section through these tumors, they have a "s indy" feel, and microscopically, there are found more or less abundant globular bodies with concentric striation, calcified. These are the psammoms bodies, and when this particular form of degeneration is present, the tumor as a whole is called a psammoma. This, to repeat, is an endothelioma with calcification of its more central

April from these small firm tumors, we occasionally find larger, more cellul - tumors, up to the size of an orange or larger, which are more purel endotheliomatous, or have the characters of a round-celled sarcoma; or again, we find diffuse growths of either endotheliomato or sarcomatous nature spreading over a large area of the inner aspe of the dura. These larger growths naturally compress and productrophy of the underlying brain substance. Pure sarcomas do, course, arise from the subendothelial part of the dura, and these a usually spindle-celled.

There may be *secondary* sarcomatous and carcinomatous tume affecting the dura mater; this secondary involvement is probably me common in the spinal than the cranial dura, and it has been observe that mammary carcinomas are liable to afford metastases either in the vertebræ or directly into the dura, which growing are apt to large fill the spinal canal and compress the cord.

The Pia-arachnoid

Anatomically a distinction is made between the arachnoid and pipathologically no such distinction can be made; in other words the piarachnoid may be regarded as a loose, abundantly vascular membra (covered on its dural aspect by a simple layer of cells) in the mesh of which are abundant and large spaces lined by endothelium, tarachnoid spaces, and in these spaces there circulates the cerebispinal fluid. The vessels of this membrane give off branches whipenetrate the brain substance, and it enters the ventricles as the choroplexuses.

Circulatory Disturbancer—Anemia is brought about in a general a local way, the latter as in hydrocephalus internus. Active hyperem is not easily recognizable, because the richness of the vascularity the brain in the corpse is so variable, the blood easily draining away the thorax has been opened before the cranial section. Passive cogestion leaves its marks through the dark bluish color of the congestivessels. Edema is not uncommon; it may be completed any (hydroex vacuo), where there has been atrophy of the transportance, congestive, as in the newborn in cases of prolonge the with heap resentation, or hydremic as in nephritis, or inflaminatory, associated with acute infections. Hemorrhage may be traumatic or may occur the hemorrhagic diseases, in rupture of aneurysmal dilatations of the vessels, or in severe infections; blood may appear in the arachnospaces by extension of hemorrhage from the brain substance.

Inflammation. — Leptomeningitis.—This may be serous, fibrinous purulent, or a combination of these; or in more chronic infection tuberculous or diffuse, as in syphilis.

Acute leptomeningitis.— The serous form is characterized by the inflammatory ordema just mentioned; it is seen particularly in your individuals as the result of acute infections; at times the rapid accumulation of the fluid leads to pressure symptoms and even to optic atrophy. It is also seen as an early stage of cases that are destined to become purulent. More striking and more severe in their effects are the

ner aspect nd produce mas do, of d these are

ous tumors bably more en observed either into ot to largely

id and pia; rds the piamembrane the meshes helium, the he cerebroiches which the choroid

e hyperemia scularity of ing away if Passive coneected by (hydrops ostance, or with head, associated ay occur intions of the earachnoid unce.

, fibrinous, infections,

ed by the y in young bid accumutic atrophy. to become ets are the

different conditions of suppurative meningitis. Many agencies can cause this, notably the meningococcus, pneumococcus, strepto- and staphylococci; bacillary forms are not so common; influenza is perhaps the most frequent, B. typhosus, B. pyocyaneus, B. coli and several others are occasionally recorded as leading to this disease. Such infections may be either hematogenous or by extension along the lymph spaces, as from the middle ear, the nasal passages, the orbit, etc. Up to a few years ago conditions like epidemic cerebrospinal meningitis were held to be idiopathic; an increasing amount of proof today indicates that they are secondary to growth of the specific organisms in the upper nasal passages. There are two areas which are especially liable to be the seat of purulent accumulations, viz., the base of the brain from the foramen magnum forward, and the vertex, over one or both The pus is specially apt to lie along the superficial vessels, in the sulci, but may be so abundant as to form a thick layer hiding all the convolutions of the hemispheres. In general, owing to free communication along the arachnoidal spaces, this purulent fluid extends down the cord, where it is apt to accumulate along the anterior and posterior fissures. The ventricles, also, may be similarly invaded by extension along the choroid. A local meningitis may arise either by extension from without, as in mastoid disease, or from within the brain, as in abscess. It may be laid down that through the intimate connection of the vessels with the cortical substance, the outer layers of the gray matter are apt to be involved, so that we deal more often with meningo-encephalitis than with pure meningitis. It is to this involvement that we owe the pareses and other nervous phenomena that present themselves after the acute attack has passed by.

All forms of meningitis, save perhaps the syphilitic, are more liable to attack children than adults; this is notably the case with the epidemic and the tuberculous forms

Chronic leptomeningitis presents itself as a milky thickening of the meninges in the immediate neighborhood of the superficial vessels over the convexity and again by a translucent, gelatinous material at the base of the brain; further, especially in the old and the alcoholic, the opacity over the ventricles may become more diffuse, and yet more rarely, as the remains of an old acute inflammation, there are to be encountered definite fibrous adhesions between the dura and plasarachnoid.

Tuberculosis.—One of the commonest forms of meningitis, and then often running a relatively acute course, is the tuberculous. This shows itsely most frequently as manifestation in part of a general hematogenous milest tuberculosis, and is recognizable on careful examination by the resence along the vessels of the Sylvian and other fissures and of a choroid plexus of minute pinhead and smaller tubercles, which has apparent if a small piece of the arachnoid be floated out in ward examined with a hand lens. Other favorite sites are over the sand on the apposed surfaces of the cerebellum and the temporo-

sphenoidal lobes. More rarely the tubercles instead of being generaliz may be few in number over a small area, e. g., of the cerebrum. The appears to be an early stage of the cerebral or cerebellar tuberculom While the superior surface may appear relatively healthy and free fro diffuse inflammation one may discover on lifting the brain, that all the interstices at the base are filled by a yellowish, gelatinous transluce and œdematous mass, really the swollen and infiltrated pia-arachnoi In general, the basal areas are the most involved, and it is to be remen bered that in practically all cases, there are here not only the miliar tubercle, but signs of exudation and increased presence of lymphocyte in the earlier stages, and of large mononuclear cells in the later stage

Syphilis. Localized gummas of small size may be formed in th meninges of the base, part of a greatly thickened matting of th arachnoid, in which the individual gummas are not to be distin guished by the naked eye. The solitary gummas may, however, b recognized by their yellow, caseous centres. More typical of cerebra syphilis is the diffuse thickening of the basal mening's, with firm adhe sion to the brain substance, and thickening along the basal nerves This process of syphilitic infiltration around the vessels, with possible subsequent gummatous formation is liable to extend into the brain substance (see p. 489). Rarely, the only sign of syphilis in the cranium may be a localized peri- and mesarteritis of a single superficial vessel.

Progressive Changes.—Small plates of metaplastic ossification occa-

sionally are to be met in the leptomeninges as in the dura. Tumors.—Rarely among the benign tumors are to be encountered the lipomas, cavernomas, and lymphangiomas, as also fibromas. More common and more characteristic are the primary endotheliomas. These are of two main types: the more frequent is composed of whorls of concentric, flattened cells, and these must be regarded as hemangioendotheliomas; the other form shows cells of a more cylindrical type and peritheliomatous arrangement. These, it is supposed, are strictly lymphangio-endotheliomas. Both forms are apt to show transitions into more purely sarcomatous growths, though occasional pure round-

celled sarcomas are to be met. An unusual tumor found especially in connection with the pia mater is the true cholesteatoms, in no wise to be confounded with the cholesteatoma found in the middle ear. These tumors form pearly, multinodular masses, occasionally reaching the size of a small apple. They are found originating in the pia, particularly at the base in the region of the pons and medulla, and occasionally over the cerebellum, choroid plexus, or cord. They are to be regarded as inclusion dermoids, which subsequent to their inclusion have taken on blastomatous growth. The cells composing them are of epithelial nature, containing keratohyaline granules; the pearly appearance is due to inspissated cellular debris containing fat and platelets of cholesterin. More than one observer has found hairs in these,

and sebaceous glands have been detected.

PERIPHERAL NERVES

The peripheral nerves may be divided into two systems—the somatic and the sympathetic; the former are composed entirely of medullated nerves, and have a somatic distribution to the voluntary muscles and skin; the latter are composed of fine medullated and of non-medullated nerves; their fibres innervate the non-striated muscles of the body, including those of the blood vessels and the intestines, the various glands proper, and the striated muscle of the heart. The arrangement of the latter system is distinctly complicated and must be studied in the more recent text-books of anatomy. It is due especially to the work of Prof. Langley that our knowledge of the anatomy of this system has been elaborated. Briefly we may say that the non-medullated efferent fibers take origin from the lateral horns and pass out by the ventral roots to a series of vertebral ganglia, where either they end, or passing through, are distributed to a second group of ganglia, the prevertebral. Not every segment of the cord gives origin to these fibres, but we may distinguish a cervical group in connection with the superior cervical ganglion, a main group originating from the first dorsal to the second or third lumbar and a third series originating from the second, third, and

This sympathetic system we may rapidly dismiss; experiment and pathological anatomy have afforded us singularly little clear-cut evidence with regard to either the diseased conditions that may affect it or the results of its destruction. While some observers describe an important series of disturbances following removal of the solar plexus, others have kept dogs alive for several months after this operation, with very little bodily disturbance. We point out again that the efferent sympathetic fibres convey impulses which under normal conditions do not reach consciousness, although, under certain circumstances, their irritation stimulates other ganglion cells, impulses from which affect consciousness, and as a result irritation of the sympathetic is referred to areas of the somatic innervation. We have referred, also, to the relationship between the sympathetic system and the medulla of the adrenals. Thus, Wiesel describes degeneration of the chromaffin cells of the sympathetic ganglia in Addison's disease, cells identical in character with those found in the adrenal medulla. We can, that is, produce isolated examples of evidence of sympathetic activity and its disturbance, but we are not prepared as yet to formulate any general

inflammation.—The term neuritis is very loosely employed. While there are examples of true inflammation, frequently this term is used to indicate atrophic changes. Thus, the so-called optic neuritis is better referred to as choked disk. It is a disturbance of the optic nerve, leading to atrophy, brought about by intracranial pressure and obstruction of the vessels, with associated cedema. Similarly, alco-

rum. This berculoma. d free from that all the translucent arachnoid. be rememthe miliary mphocytes ter stages. ned in the ng of the be distinwever, be of cerebral firm adheal nerves. h possible the brain e cranium vessel. tion occa-

generalized

countered More theliomas. of whorls lemangioical type e strictly ansitions re roundspecially no wise ddle ear. y reachthe pia, ılla, and y are to nclusion hem are pearly

id plate-

n these.

holic, arsenic, and 'ead neuritis are degenerative rather than inflammate states. In genuite acute neuritis the peripheral nerve trunks affect are swollen and congested, not necessarily along their whole length b for a longer or shorter distance, so that they may present spindle-li swellings along their course. In such cases, there is an exudati into the connective tissue of the sheath affecting the endo-, per and epineurium. With this there may be more or less leukocy infil: ation, so extreme that there may at times be actual pus formatiwith or without localized hemorrhages, and where the inflammatic is intense the action upon the nerve fibres leads to breaking-up the medulla and also of the axis cylinders. Purulent inflammatic of nerves usually occurs by extension from neighboring tissue. Suc acute neuritis may be followed by connective-tissue overgrowth, which in its turn, by pressure, favors degeneration and atrophy of the include axis-cylinder processes. Such neuritis, besides being of infective origi may be traumatic, from wounds or compression.

One of the infective granulomas stands out preëminently in its liabilit to affect the peripheral nerves—leprosy. Numerous peripheral nerves of the limbs, face, and other regions become involved by granulomatous growth, rich in "lepra cells" containing the bacilli, and bring about anesthesia, pallor, and atrophy of the regions of supply, so that finger and toes undergo a form of dry gangrene and drop off, leaving extensive scars. The later stage of this chronic process in the nerves is seen as fusiform fibroid thickenings along their course. Tuberculosis of peripheral nerves, while it occurs with similar distal degeneration is comparatively rare. Until salvarsan came into frequent employment the effect of syphilis upon the nerves was overlooked by most pathologists, but syphilis is now held responsible for a large number of disturbances of the optic and auditory nerves which may appear after the use of salvarsan and more rarely of mercury. The attention drawn to this subject has shown that lesions of these two nerves are not

uncommon in the course of untreated syphilis.

Regressive Changes.—Here must be included many forms of so-called neuritis from alcohol, arsenic, lead, ergot, diphtheria, beri-beri, and the presumed causative toxins of severe anemias, to mention the more important. Many of these toxic agents have a characteristic selective activity. Thus the diphtheria toxin leads to areas of acute degeneration and atrophy, picking out certain nerves in the upper respiratory tract, as well as the vagus, the degeneration of the latter being the cause of sudden heart failure. Lead affects the innervation of the extensor muscles of the forearm and leg, causing wrist-drop and footdrop. Alcohol may set up a widespread polyneuritis, especially affecting the peroneal nerves. In all the above the degeneration of the peripheral nerves appears to be primary, they being directly affected. What is termed secondary degeneration is seen in the peripheral nerves whose cell bodies have previously undergone destruction, or which have been cut off from those cell bodies, as in true Wallerian degeneration.

Progressive Changes.—We have already referred (see p. 245) to "faise neuromas" or amputation neuromas, as also to what we have termed neurinomatosis or multiple neurofibromas or fibromatosis (see p. 247). The so-called elephantiasis neuromatosa or pachydermatocele, appearing as a congenital affection, has underlying it a great irregular thickening of the nerves, of the same order. Associated with this is a general deformity of the part with thickening of the skin. Rarely gliomas have been described as occurring along the course of peripheral nerves and still more rare are lipomas and rhabdomyomas.

All of the gliomatous and neurinomatous tumors show a tendency toward a malignant metamorphosis, the latter giving origin to spindle-celled, sometimes myxo-sarcomas. Of secondary tumors carcinoma has been described as occasionally extending in nerve bundles and bringing about atrophy of the same, but in general, nerves are little involved in secondary malignant growths.

THE EYE

Anomalies.—The eyeball may be lacking (anophthalmia), a state which is usually found in conjunction with other grave defects; occasionally there may be found tissues that represent the eyeball, and in yet other cases a small bulb may be present (microphthalmia). In different kinds of cyclopean monsters, two eyes in a single orbit or a single eye in a central orbit are seen. The cornea may be smaller or larger than normal, or its curvature may be more or less convex than normal; part or all of its substance may be opaque, usually in such states as microphthalmia. The iris may be absent, or may lack pigment (albinism); the lens may show opacity, or tissue strands on the surface may represent the remains of the hyaloid vessels; the lens may be dislocated. Any or all of these different parts may be lacking in coloboma.

Coloboma is a congenital failure of the cleft of the secondary optic vesicle to close, either wholly or in part. This may thus affect every or any part from the optic nerve to the eyelid; it is common in the iris, and is frequently associated with other congenital anomalies.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Conjunctiva.—The conjunctiva becomes hyperemic as a result of irritation from a foreign body, from irritant gases, from exposure to bright light and cold wind at the same time, as is seen in snow-blindness, from crying, from facial neuralgia, and as an early symptom accompanying rhinitis. Persistent hyperemia is well illustrated in the eye of the alcoholic subject, and occurs in most cases where there is constant eyestrain. Edema of the conjunctiva (and the soft tissues of the lids) is seen as an early stage of generalized masarca in Bright's disease and broke—compensation of the circulatory apparatus. A common cause of local cedema is the sting of an early. Hemorrhages in the conjunctiva are the result of injury or

he included tive origin, its liability eral nerves nulomatous ring about hat fingers g extensive ves is seen rculosis of

flammatory

nks affected

e length but

spindle-like

exudation

ndo-, peri-,

leukocytic

s formation

flammation

iking-up of

flammation

sue. Such

wth, which.

nployment nost pathber of disr after the ion drawn es are not

neration is

f so-called beri, and the more e selective degeneraespiratory being the on of the and footaffecting peripheral What is

es whose ave been arise during the effort of violent coughing or sneezing, especially i children with whooping cough.

Iris.—Hyperemia is of importance as an early accompaniment of

inflammation.

Choroid.—Hyperemia is seen as an accompaniment of inflammation of the choroid and surrounding parts, and in its passive form, as part of general congestion of the body in general or the head in particular Hemorrhages in the choroid are due to trauma, and the hemorrhaging diseases.

Reting.—Circulatory changes seen in the retina are of a good deal of importance, especially because the function of sight is readily affected Anemia is characterized by a visible narrowing of the arteries, wit pallor of the membrane; if extreme, the nutrition of the retina may b affected and partial or total blindness result from its degeneration Hyperemia occurs as part of an inflammation of the retina and of su rounding structures, or may be passive, as a result of general congestion More important is that passive hyperemia seen in choked disk, when by compression of the central vein the retinal veins are larger and mor tortuous than usual. Embolism of the central artery of the retin occurs occasionally, and sudden blindness with anemia of the membrar results; later, severe degenerations arise with ultimate destruction Thrombosis of the same vessel is attended by similar results but is less frequent. Hemorrhages of the retina are of much clinical interes They occur in systemic diseases such as Bright's disease, diabete and all those diseases which are characterized by capillary rupturethe anemias, the severe infections, scurvy, and certain other seven intoxications. They occur also in trauma, and fairly large areas the retina may be lifted off the choroid (subhyaloid hemorrhage) wit subsequent degeneration of the part with whose nutrition there interference. Retinal hemorrhages vary in position, and consequently in shape and size. If superficial in the nerve fibre layer, they have striate form, if deep they are round or irregular. It will be readil understood that hemorrages of the retina may be accompanied b escape of blood into the vitreous, with consequent dimness of vision.

Inflammation.—For an enumeration of the agents of inflammation and their results on the different parts of the eye it is hardly necessar

to mention that more voluminous works must be consulted.

Conjunctiva.—Apart from injury, exposure to bright light or irritating vapors, the use of drugs, such as potassium iodide and arsenic inflammations of nearby or related parts, there are many bacteria which cause acute conjunctivitis. The readiness with which bacteria can gain access to the conjunctiva is self-evident; nowhere else in the body is so delicate a structure so exposed. In a considerable percentage of healthy conjunctive, the Bacillus xerosis and a non-pathogenic Staphylococcus albus are found. The bacteria which most often cause conjunctivitis are (in the order of frequency in a large series studied by our colleague, Dr. Hanford McKee), Morax-Axenfeld diplobacillus

pecially in

niment of

nmation of s part of a particular. emorrhagic

ood deal or y affected. eries, with na may be generation. and of surcongestion. lisk, where r and more the retina membrane estruction. but is less al interest. , diabetes, rupturether severe re areas of hage) with n there is nsequently hey have a be readily panied by

th or irrind arsenic,
teria which
a can gain
he body is
centage of
c Staphylocause constudied by
plobacillus,

of vision.

Emmation,

staphylococcus, streptococcus, pneumococcus, Micrococcus catarrhalis, gonococcus, B. McKee, B. Koch-Weeks, B. coli, B. influenzæ, meningococcus, B. xerosis, B. Hoffmann—while a large variety of saprophytes is seen, many individuals of these last being found in greater frequency than some of the pathogenic microbes enumerated.

The character of the inflammation varies greatly but is in no way distinct from that described in vascular areas; catarrhal, purulent, and membranous forms are seen. The severe degrees of inflammation are apt to jeopardize the integrity of the delicate cornea; the chronic forms may lead to considerable superficial loss of conjunctival tissue, the healing of which may be attended by deformity of the lid. Pterygium is an inflammatory overgrowth of the conjunctiva upon the eyeball, of triangular shape, the apex directed to the pupil; sometimes it becomes quite well vascularized, and the superficial epithelium is proliferated and even at times folded.

Chronic Conjunctivitis.—The forms of conjunctival inflammation known as chronic are, in the main, characterized by proliferation of the tissues, which appears as granulations varying in size from those just visible to cock's-comb-like masses of large size. trachoma is the most important of these, the overgrowths being not typical granulations, but small encapsulated overgrowths of lymphoid and connective tissues. It has been shown that the so-called "trachoma bodies," intracellular bodies found in the epithelial cells in trachoma, are not the etiological factor. Parinaud's conjunctivitis is a rare, but severe form accompanied at times by marked systemic disturbance. Vernal conjunctivitis is a malady of persistence, with annual exacerbations, in which the granulations are hard, composed of thickened epithelium and connective tissue, at times degenerated into a hyaline mass. The infective granulomas are rarely seen to affect the conjunctiva. Tuberculosis may spread from lupus of the face, and syphilis and leprosy are known.

Cornea.—The process of inflammation in the cornea (keratitis) has already been described (see p. 134); from what has been said there, it will be gathered that the collecting of lymph cells and the production of new corneal corpuscles will give rise to some opacity of the cornea, local or diffuse. This may be recovered from and the foreign elements be absorbed, but on the other hand, a certain opacity may remain, or the inflammation may become more intense, with loss of substance within or on the outside of the cornea. Should this loss of substance be repaired, the connective tissue which performs the repair may, on the one hand, remain as an opaque body, and, on the other, by its contraction alter the curve of the cornea, thus impairing its efficiency as a refracting body; vascularization of the surface of the upper part of the cornea may occur in trachoma, constituting pannus.

Diffuse parenchymatcus keratitis, evidenced by infiltration of the cornea, may lead to vascularization in the substantia propria, the formation of new vessels being deep. Should loss of corneal tissue occur on the surface, corneal ulcer is the result, and if in the substance, abscess.

Suppurative keratitis may be phlyctenular, generally close to the corner scleral margin, where minute pustules appear just under the surface apidly breaking through. A considerable number of cases of suppu

rative keratitis are due in part to the coexistence of injury.

Corneal ulcer may occur with inflammations of various intensity it may arise in ill-nourished children and progress slowly, or it may be the result of a florid conjunctival inflammation and erode rapidly The serpiginous ulcer is named from the fact that while the ulcer heal at one part of its edge it progresses at another; it is practically alway due to pneumococcus.

Herpes of the cornea may occur, associated with marked anesthesia The infective granulomas are of considerable importance in the causa tion of keratitis; the diffuse form is frequently syphilitic, much less often tuberculous, but the localized occurrence of the gumma or the tubercle is rare. It was previously thought that there was a specific form of keratitis which followed lesion of the fifth nerve, but it has been shown that this is not neurotrophic, but due to infection because

the eye is less protected than in health,

Iris.—Inflammation of the iris should always at once suggest to the beholder systemic disease, and in the order of frequency is due to syphilis, rheumatism, tuberculosis, gonorrhea, gout, diabetes, oral sepsis, and trauma—overwhelmingly the first two. Fibrinous exudation from the vessels of the iris blurs its bright surface, and with this exudate there exists a strong tendency to adhesion (synechia) to the capsule of the lens behind it. The inflammation may not present the fibrinous form but may be frankly suppurative, the pus lying in the anterior chamber (hypopyon); this usually follows a wound that has perforated the cornea. The granulomas exceptionally show the gumma and the tubercle, usually being represented by diffuse plastic exudations: sometimes in the case of syphilis, small yellow nodules are seen at the pupillary edge, which in late cases only, are to be regarded as true gummas.

Ciliary Body.—Cyclitis, inflammation of the ciliary body, is often combined with iritis, the combined disease being iridocyclitis. The symptoms are those of an iritis with the addition of excessive pain, tenderness in the ciliary region, an increased or a decreased tension. and considerable disturbance of vision. There are different varieties the simple, the plastic, and the purulent. The plastic form, characterized by the presence of fibrinous exudate, arises from an injury in the danger zone, and is important because of its ability to set up a plastic iridocyclitis of the other eye, i. e., sympathetic ophthalmia. Such a plastic cyclitis, if not checked, will destroy the eye by atrophy of the eyeball. The sympathetic ophthalmia may arise weeks, occasionally years after the onset of cyclitis in the eye first affected, and as to the mode of transmission of the infection, a century has not added any certainty to our knowledge. Purulent cyclitis, or better, iridocyclitis, results from injury, and the infection sets up panophthalmitis.

he corneone surface, of suppu-

intensity; or it may le rapidly. deer heals lly always

the causamuch less ma or the a specific out it has n because

suggest to cy is due etes, oral us exudawith this ia) to the et present ing in the that has he gumma audations; een at the d as true

, is often itis. The sive pain, I tension, varietica, characinjury in set up a shthalmia. The atrophy olds, occado, and as lot added ler, iridothalmitis.

In this grave state, there is suppuration and disintegration of all the soft internal structures of the eyeball, generally accompanied by severe inflammation of the conjunctiva and the soft tissues of the orbit. The inflammatory products may greatly distend the eyeball, their escape being prevented by the dense sclera, which in time may be itself eroded to the bursting point, when the contents escape. Should the eyeball not be removed there may be a gradual shrinking of the empty sac, and a more or less solid mass of firm tissue be left to represent the globe (phthisis bulbi).

Choroid.—Choroiditis is caused by systemic disease, syphilis, tuber-culosis, certain disorders of nutrition, or a bacteriemia; in other cases the cause remains undiscovered. Sometimes in the granulomatous infections, and always in the bacteriemic, it appears as an exudative or a purulent inflammation. These terms sufficiently explain themselves; the exudate may remain upon the choroid or may be thrown out into the vitreous which loses its transparency for the time being; even a mild grade of choroiditis may, in healing, be followed by atrophy. A suppurative choroiditis, as stated above, is almost necessarily a forerunner of panophthalmitis.

By reason of the propinquity of the retina, this membrane is practically always affected; in the acute type, the retina quickly disappears, but in the more slowly progressing infections, the retina shows changes peculiar to it, and the disease is known as choroidoretinitis. In tuberculosis, tubercles of miliary size are seen in the choroid, lifting the retina, or larger aggregated caseous masses may be found; the retina is cloudy and loses its distinctive features as a result of cedema or exudation combined with degeneration of its individual structures. Syphilitic choroidoretinitis is seen as a localized or diffuse process, the choroidal proliferation being sometimes extensive.

Retina. -- Acute retinitis arises by extension of infection from many of the above-mentioned parts. In this condition, the retina is congested, redematous, and cloudy. Apart from these cases, a like appearance is seen, indicative, not of an acute local infection, but of a systemic state such as Bright's disease, diabetes, syphilis, or arteriosclerosis, the last named indicated by hemorrhage. Most important of retinal changes is that known as albuminuric neuroretinitis, a description of which will in general serve for the changes seen in any of these bodily states. Not infrequently the retinal examination, undertaken because the vision is failing, gives the first alarm of the existence of the disease. There is swelling, cloudiness, and lack of definition of the papilla; the retina shows points, streaks, or flame-shaped areas of hemorrhage, and there are in the macular area, irregular whitish areas formed by the accumulation of cellular debris which has undergone fatty, granular, or hyaline degeneration. Withal, there is lymphocytic and fibrinous exudation into the retina, whose vessels appear engorged and tortuous. The coexistence of the hemorrhages and the whitish areas marks the state of neuroretinitis. Whether due to Bright's disease, diabetes or a

transitory albuminuria of pregnancy (gravidic neuroretinitis) the picture may be the same, but the subsequent course of the process may be quite different; in the last named, the retina is a recover with the

disappearance of the albuminuria after labor,

When due to syphilis, the learn is that referred to above moroidaretinitis; it may be congenital or acquired, and appears in the so-case second stage of syphilis usually in both eyes. The functions is a finitinet, the retina and the disk are swollen, and fine, dust-like opacitic (cast-off exudate) appears to the posterior part of the vitreous. In the hemorrhagic form, so-called because the hemorrhages are abundant the usual signs of retinitis as present, and an addition, to be is series of recurrent hemorrhages, the whole often being an independent on or widespread vascule disease (arteriosclerosis), and a learning of the being and the morrhage.

Regressive Changes. The only regreative charges of importance are those observed in the somen, the choron lathe retine and the me Cornea. - In the first, the cornea, there is a regres ive hange what is called arcus senilis. It consists of whitis are the a seen a re margin of the cornea above and below, ultimetely journing made very minute drops of fat which lie in the su stance of the corn far posteriorly as Descemet's membrane; son stimes the suitish as appears to be a kind of hyaline, while in other cases ti reto be a deposition of lime alts in the transparent tissue of the or on, which deposition the advaning degeneration of the blood vessel wors. It is thus the more than a sign of arteria age. In the choroic sometimes as a sequel to previous inflammation, are is of atrophoccur, ith irregular pigmentation, and sometimes ulti-tely even it production of hone. In the retina, degenerative changes occurs of age, as well as after various forms of disease, such a retiritis at subretinal hemorrhage. The roc and cones may atrop anderg obscure fatty or other changes. Vsts may arise, and the mount of pigment may increase or lecreas. These cases of separation of the lectina in which the super sial lay comes away having the pigment layer attached to the cloroid a saturally accompanied by grave changes in the separated layer, as h becomes a lematous and may

deposition in it of calcas ous mater

Retinitis Pigmentosa. This is strictly a gressive and not an inflammatory state of the retina, which occurs in particular and a flects males especially those where the offspring of consanguous parents. In this rare disease, the reconstruction of the grant from the external layer, where it normally lies, to the inner certain deposition of the skin seem to be the grant changes its situation in retinitis

undergo maceration or degenerate of different kinds, even to the

e picture ess may with the

is indipacitic In the

on of the position of the posi

the iens ge what, n i le le orn

h e ars ; tvors.

ccur, pro-

nderg ount or of the pigment or grave

inflaminflamaffects parents. d there

d there I layer, re it is arrying sible to retinitis

sigmentosa, but it is laid down apparently in endothelial calls in the vicinity of blood vessels in fibrotic areas.

Lons. The recressive changes in the lens that are of importance are those that give se to opacity-in short, the various forms of cataract. Catanact is of two distinct forms-stationary and progressive former, a corner infection may lead to a localized area copacit on the anterior surface of the lens which remains through fe, but which is of little importance, because it does not increase in age. A adition any affect, though more rarely, the poterior surface, the lens may be opaque, and of as the extent er single lamella importance are necessarily greater. Progressive cataract is (1) (2) congenital (juvenile), and (3) traumatic. In senile cataract, most familiar form, the fibres of the lens undergo degeneration th the formation of f globules and myelin. Usually the opaque - has ') be remove: "extraction." It may happen, further, uch a lens ha teen removed, the posterior capsule, which of se, remained, say itself become opaque secondary cataract pacity constitutes capsular cataract. In raumatic cataract and t paque as a direct result of an injury, and here it is that a considerable degree of absorption of the opaque tissue may occur; should the lens fibres become separated and third be absorbed (from the aqueous) the lens n. v swell up, may become soft, and may even be completely absorbed. If the lens and capsule become fixed to some nearby structure and alarzed, a considerable filmous proliferation may occur, and this enew blood essels, constitutes a ver great detrime ransparency of the len. Even calcareous material may be ultima posited.

Progressive Changes

nctiva.—Certain benign tumors, fibroma, re found on the conjunctiva, but the most important are manufacture. The squamous carcinoma and the sarcoma. Carcinoma is oftenest seen as an extension from the eyelid or other nearby structure. Sarcoma is less common, and when it occurs, may be of the pigmented variety.

Cornea.—Primary tumors of the cornea are very rare. Isolated cases of primary fibroms, papilloms, sarcoms, and myxoms are in the literature.

The ructure may be secondarily invaded from other parts of the eye.

Less.—Pigmented sarcoms are found, but by no means so commonly as similar tumors in the choroid.

Choroid.—The most common progressive tissue change in the choroid is melanotic sarcoma, of which, indeed, it is the most frequent site. These tumors are markedly pigmented, consist of round or spindle cell grow rapidly, and having once grown through the sclera, rapidly formet stases. They are seen as flat, sessile growths, lifting the returns as they progress.

The only important tumor arising from the retina is t gliona to which we have previously made reference. The tume grow rapidly, filling the globe, making its way through it and appearing

as a fungating luxuriant growth that spreads with great readiness. Its cells are small, closely packed, and with special stains the spider-le processes can be demonstrated. It occurs invariably in infancy.

The Vitreous and the Aqueous.—In the foregoing consideration of the diseases of the eye, no mention has been made of the vitroous of the aqueous. The vitreous, it will be recalled, is not a fluid but gelatinous substance which, if allowed to escape, is not replaced, which too, may by injury become on the one hand fibrillated and on the the liquefied. Should it become fibrillated, it is less transparent and man contract, pulling with it the delicate retina away from the choroid By reason of its position and consistence, the vitreous is the medium into which exudate is thrown as a result of inflammation of the part

of the eye in contact with it.

While making reference to the aqueous, the secreted fluid of the an terior chamber, seems the best occasion on which to deal with glaucoms a very important disease which is characterized by increase of intra ocular tension, with resultant pressure on the structures in the eyebal Glaucoma may arise from inflammatory causes, in which case a fev hours suffice for its development, or it may arise insidiously, and b discovered only when an ophthalmologist is consulted for failing vision or when the patient discovers that one eye is blind. In such a cas the damage is already done, but in the first-named form, treatmen may be effectual. The name glaucoma is given because of the greenis reflex that is given from the pupil to the eye of the beholder; instead of a black color of the pupil, the beholder seems to see a green color the eyeball is hard, tense, and the cornea dull; the aqueous humor ordinarily drained away by the canal of Schlemm and the space of Fontana, fails to find escape, owing to blockage of these passage by narrowing or obliteration of the angle of the anterior chamber Owing to the great intraocular pressure the optic disk becomes cupped which cupping, together with the hardness of the eyeball, is sufficien to distinguish the disease.

The Optic Nerve.—It is necessary to point out one at least of the pathological processes that affect the optic nerve. The most important is choked disk, the name applied to the papilla altered in certain pathological states, as when there is a more than normal intracranial tension such as is produced by the presence of a new growth or an inflammation of the membranes of the brain. Some of the names applied to choked disk, such as papillitis and optic neuritis, imply that the change is an inflammatory one, but this is probably not the case, although the appearance of choked disk is seen as part of a papillitis or optic neuritis. Choked disk is an ædematous state of the optic papilla. As the optic nerve is continuous with the brain substance, the cerebrospinal fluid surrounds it in the optic nerve sheath, and may press upon it; thus the central vessels which come to run inside the nerve itself are likewise compressed and ædema of the papilla and the most distal part of the nerve results. In a moderate degree of choked disk, the outline of

readiness.
spider-leg
fancy.
leration of
vitroous or
uid but a
ced, which,
the * ther,
t and may
e choroid.
e medium

the parts

of the anglaucoma, e of intrahe eyeball. case a few ly, and be ing dision, uch a case treatment ne greenish er; instead reen color; us humor, the spaces e passages chamber. es cupped, sufficient

ast of the important ain pathoal tension, ammation to choked change is hough the ic neuritis. It is the optic pinal fluid to the chart of the outline of the papilla is blurred and indistinct, the papilla reddened and swollen, especially in its nasal half, while the retinal vessels are enlarged and tortuous. In more extreme cases, there may be splashes of hemorrhage on the disk. Should ædema persist, atrophy of the nerve fibres of the disk may be the result.

Neuritis of the nerve trunk may occur from an orbital or a meningeal infection. We have previously pointed out the liability of the nerve trunk to fibromatosis, and true neurons has been found.

The Orbit.—The eyeball is suspended, as it were, in the bony orbit, and between the globe and the bone there is, therefore, a considerable bulk of muscles and connective tissues, not to mention fat and the vascular and nervous structures that are placed there. Inflammation of these soft tissues occurs, as a diffuse collulitis or as abscess, resulting from trauma or infection; to the latter the orbital tissues are exposed, for infection may spread from the face, the cranial cavity, the bones, or the lacrimal gland and its subsidiary mechanism, the lacrimal duct.

Tumors of many orders are found in the orbit, apart from those that may spread from the globe: angioma, osteoma, myoma, and teratoma are found, while sarcoma is fairly common; carcinoma is only secondary, or by extension. Cysts of many sorts, including hygroma and others of like congenital origin, may be seen.

THE EAR

Abnormalities.—Anomalies of the different parts of the auditory apparatus are numerous, but relatively unimportant; considering the origin of these structures, those that affect the middle and internal ear are usually associated with other defects, such as harelip and cleft palate; the auricle may be abnormally small, abnormally large, or accessory auricles may exist. The external auditory canal may be absent, stenosed, unusually narrow, unusually wide, or even duplicated. The drum membrane may be absent or fissured. The middle ear may be absent, as may the Eustachian tube, or the latter may be curved abnormally or may open in an unusual place. The internal ear may be absent or abnormally developed, or may show lack of some of its parts, while even the auditory nerve has been known to be wanting.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Auricle.—The peculiar liability of the auricle to be damaged by freezing is well known.

Hyperemia is usually a result of such thermic or of mechanical causes.

Hemorrhage occurs—hematoma auris—as a result of trauma or without known cause, as is seen in the insane, possibly here also from unnoted trauma—in whom it may be bilaterally symmetrical.

External Auditory Meatus.—Circulatory changes are not of importance apart from the inflammations or traumas with which they are associated.

Drum Membrane.—Hyperemia may be observed as a distinct reddening of the part, the enlarged individual vessels being visible in states of

inflammation. Hemorrhage, of punctiform nature, may occur in

membrane, and may show upon one or the other side.

Middle Ear.—Hyperemia occurs as part of the inflammatory proc and as the result of general passive congestion of the head regi Hemorrhage is usually the result of trauma or of a particularly virul infection—hemorrhagic otitis media.

Internal Ear.—Hyperemia and hemorrhage occur under conditi similar to those in which they arise in the middle ear, but hemorrh is of more importance, as it may cause deafness, and the absorpt of even a moderate hemorrhage may be attended by damage to

delicate structures involved.

Inflammation.—Auricle.—Any of the inflammatory processes wh affect the skin may affect the auricle. The inflammation which follows: freezing is familiar, the auricle becoming swollen, bluish red, and pa ful; blisters may form on the surface, and even gangrene may follow Inflammation of the perichondrium or of the cartilage itself may account pany this or other form of injury. Perichondritis, secondary to inju as at operation or after hematoma, is occasionally followed by slip

deformity of the pinna which appears wrinkled.

External Auditory Meatus.—Inflammation may be localized, as the common furuncle, whose origin can be readily understood when is considered that the wall of the meatus is exposed to contact w discharges from the middle ear, is liable to eczema, and does not read lend itself to complete cleanliness. On the other hand, inflammati of the meatus may be diffuse, from the same causes, especially in patien whose resistance is poor; secretion tends to form upon the wall, whi is shed off from time to time and as quickly rearwed. The infecti may be confined to the soft parts, may be superficial, or periost and implication of the bone may arise; in any of these cases an abac may form. Membrane may form from diphtherial or other infection and mycosis, or infection by moulds, is seen. The infective granulon affect the meatus, tubercles being found on the cartilage of the aurie or in the skin. Syphilis may show itself in ulceration or in inflammati of the cartilages; gumma is not unknown. Both of these infections rare.

Drum Membrane.—Inflammation of the drum membrane or myringi is usually the result of extension from nearby structures, especially t auditory canal. The membrane becomes red, swollen, soft, and ev tiny abscesses may be seen; in cases where the internal ation persis the surface may become granular. The membrane has been see affected in both tuberculosis and syphilis, in patient. • 10 have lesio of these diseases in the middle ear or other nearby structures.

Middle Ear.—Inflammation of the middle ear—otitis media—is frequently found and important disease. Clinically, it is divided in well-defined groups, the acute and the chronic, while pathological one may recognize a simple, often catarrhal, and a suppurative form.

Trauma is often responsible in part for its origin; the infection

occur in the

tory process, head region. arly virulent

r conditions hemorrhage e absorption mage to the

cesses which which follows d, and painmay follow. may accommy to injury, ed by slight

alized, as in ood when it contact with a not readily affammation y in patients wall, which he infection or periostitises an abscess er infection, granulomas the auricle affammation afections are

or myringitis specially the t, and even tion persists been seen have lesions

media—is a livided into thologically, ive form, e infection, which is always present, may come from the Eustachian tube, which affords direct continuity to the infections of the pharynx, or through a damaged membrane, or by the blood or the lymph. There is no specific microbe, for many are effective in its causation.

In acute otitis media of a simple type, the mucous membrane of the cavity is reddened, congested, and swollen, with an abundant production of mucin in which appear degenerated cells and a few leukocytes; the submucous tissue is infiltrated with cells. The drum membrane shares in the inflammation, and perforation may occur. It is not easy to draw a sharp line of distinction between this and the suppurative form, into which, indeed, it frequently passes. In the latter, the secretion is frankly purulent, the inflammatory infiltration is greater, and there is a greater liability to ulceration and necrosis than before. In considering infective diseases of the middle ear, we must remember that the mastoid cells represent an extension of the antrum in the upper back part of the middle ear, and that these cells are probably involved to a greater or less extent in the acute process, although not necessarily to a degree which will be evident clinically. By reason of the smallness of the outlet from the cells to the middle ear, retention of secretion in the mastoid cells is apt to occur, which retention is largely responsible for the clinical signs of mastoiditis. Spontaneous cure of the disease, in fact, is to be looked for rather in the absorption of the exudate and the resolution of the inflammation than in actual drainage. Extension of the disease follows the failure of resolution or of drainage, and tends to involve the bone in the direction of least resistance, which may lead to extradural inflammation, labyrinthitis, or infection of the

A persistent infection without the formation of pus, may be the result of a simple acute infection; the changes are chiefly of hypertrophic nature. Chronic suppurative otitis media is, however, of much greater importance, and should be considered under two heads. In the first of these the cause of the chronicity lies in the Eustachian tube and pharynx, and the middle ear is inflamed secondarily by the persistent discharge passing through it. This type is best illustrated by the group of cases which depend for their chronicity upon adenoid masses and enlarged tonsils. In the second group, the chronicity depends upon definite pathological changes in the middle ear especially in the attic, antrum, and mastoid, where the lining of the cavity an even the bone itself is attacked. Here belong the cases where the laing has become epidermized, either by metaplasia or by extension from the external auditory meatus, and the formation of cholesteatoms occurs. Cholesteatoma is an aggregated mass of desquamated epidermal cells and debris accumulating from the walls of the cavity which has become lined by new squamous epithelium. Such are the cases in which the discharge is purulent and foul smelling. It is especially in this group that danger of intracranial complication exi ts and the urgency of a gir a case depends largely upon the particular part attacked and the

tendency to retention, since retention leads to bone destruction. will be understood that in either of these groups the mucous membras be considerably hypertrophied even to the extent of polygonia.

excrescences, the ordinary aural polyps.

Chronic adhesive otitis media, which is the commonest cause of deafn is known also as sclerosing otitis, and arises from the occurrence adhesion between the ossicles and the walls of the cavity. Speci important is the involvement of the stapes in the oval window. The adhesions may be the result of a former suppurative otitis or may of very slow formation from long-continued catarrhal processes in middle ear. These cases are prone to begin in childhood, at what time the submucous tissues are normally more abundant than in adlife. With chronic inflammation this tissue is not absorbed and te to become organized.

Otosclerosis is sometimes incorrectly called "dry catarrh." It is unknown origin and depends on change in the labyrinth capsule we exostosis, especially liable to occur in the region of the oval window it is important when it causes a bony ankylosis of the stapes in to oval window itself. Such foci of disease may occur in the cochle when an atypical clinical picture of nerve deafness is presented.

Tuberculosis occurs in the middle ear as a somewhat late manifestati of a severe infection elsewhere in the body. There is no special charateristic to be noted, save that the process is suppurative and attend

by a rather rapid necrosis of the tissues.

Internal Ear.—Inflammation of the internal ear may be said to always secondary, either to an infective process in the middle ear within the cranial cavity. Extension commonly occurs from the midde ear by erosion of the bony wall at some point, or extension through t membranous closures. Secondary to a meningitis, it may be infect by extension from the internal auditory meatus or some of the lymphat connections. This involvement, secondary to cerebrospinal meningitis, is perhaps the commonest cause of deaf-mutism.

Regressive Changes.—Auricle.—The only regressive change the need be here mentioned is the occasional calcification of cartilage, and

the tophus, a deposit of urates which is seen in gout.

Drum Membrane.—Atrophy of the membrane, with thinning ar consequent increased transparency, is noted subsequent to chron catarrhal states of the middle ear.

Internal Ear.—Sporadically and in some families there seems to be occasionally a special tendency to degeneration of the cells of the spiraganglia, leading to deafness.

Progressive Changes.—Auricle.—These differ in no way from the

occurring in the skin and subepidermal tissues elsewhere.

External Auditory Meatus.—Polypoid overgrowths of the mucos are seen, the result of inflammation; exostoses of considerable size ar found, sometimes pedunculated, often spherical. Various kinds of the spherical of the spherical

truction. It us membrane of polypoid

e of deafness, occurrence of y. Specially dow. These is or may be cesses in the od, at which han in adulted and tends

h." It is of capsule with val window; tapes in the the cochlea, nted.

anifestation ecial characnd attended

e said to be iddle ear or the middle through the be infected e lymphatic nal menin-

hange that rtilage, and

inning and to chronic

eems to be f the spiral

from those

he mucosa ole size are s kinds of tumors may be found, such as fibroma, lipoma, angioma, osteoma, sarcoma, and carcinoma; sebaceous cysts are occasionally present.

Middle Ear.—Inflammatory overgrowths and tumors are found with fair frequency in the middle ear. As a result of inflammation, polypoid growths with connective-tissue core and epithelial covering, grow from the wall; such a growth is a potent factor in the continuance of an inflammatory process that may exist. Fibroma, angioma, and adenoma may be found. Sarcoma and carcinoma are rare and oftenest secondary.

CHAPTER IX

THE DIGESTIVE SYSTEM

THE MOUTH

Abnormalities.—The most frequent and characteristic abnormal encountered are harelip, cleft palate, defects in the number, arra ment, and growth of the teeth, and abnormal shortness of the free

of the tongue (tongue tie).

Harelip and Cleft Palate.—It will be remembered that in the deve ment of the face the intermaxillary processes of the first visceral a project into the processus interglobulares and undergoing fusion in middle line, are separated on either side by a cleft from the lat frontal processes, which give rise to the lateral facial parts—this of running from the mouth to the orbit. Later by the development the nasal passages, the upper portion of this cleft becomes divi into an orbital and a nasal portion. The former becomes closed a relatively early date, the latter remains open for a somewhat lon period as a cleft of communication between the roof of the mouth a the nasal passage of that side. Through arrested development encounter, therefore, these various grades of malformation, eit unilateral or bilateral.

1. Cheilognathoprosoposchisis, persistence of primary lateral fac

cleft. This, the extreme condition, is rare.

2. Median cleft of lip, without development of the nasal passag owing to lack of development of the intermaxillary (arrhincephaly), very rare.

3. Cheilognathopalatoschisis, cleft of lip, jaw, and palate, unilater 4. Cheilognathoschisis, cleft of lip and jaw, bilateral, the intermaxilla

forming an isolated median projection; rare.

5. Cheiloschisis, harelip. This is the slightest grade affecting wh is the last portion of the eleft to undergo closure; is most often un lateral and on the left; the more pronounced form has associate

(unilateral) eleft palate.

Defects of the Teeth .- Among these may be noted: lack of develo ment of one or more wisdom teeth, irregular position of teeth, persis ence of milk teeth with coincident presence of milk and permaner teeth. Lack of development of the jaws to the full size leads to abno mal closeness of the teeth. Some recent writers ascribe the increase irregularity of position and protrusion of the front teeth to the employ ment of infant "comforters"-dummy rubber teats sucked for hour at a time.

Hutchinson's teeth is a condition affecting the upper central fincisors of the primary set. These are stumpy, of peg shape, with a concavity of the cutting edge; they are frequently ridged and discolored. Hutchinson regarded them as a sign of congenital syphilis; while they occur in true congenital syphilis, it is debatable whether they are not also a parastic development (see p. 57). Nor are they wholly pathognon being met with also in rickets.

Defects of the Teeth.—T is is not uncommon, leading to delayed speech; it is remediable by a simple surgical operation. A rare malformation of the tongue is macroglossia, or large size of the organ, brought about by congenital obstruction of the lymphatics.

Circulatory Disturbances.—While not infrequent and easily recognizable, these call for little special note, save as a reminder that the appearance of the lips and gums affords valuable indications of general anemia or hyperemia.

Inflammation.—According to the part specially affected we speak of stomatitis (inflammation of the mouth), cheilitis (of the lips), gingivitis (of the jaws), and glossitis (of the tongue). Considering how the mouth is exposed to infection and trauma it is remarkable on the one hand how relatively rare are serious inflammations of this region. In other words the protective mechanisms are here highly developed. Wounds of the mouth heal in general with extraordinary rapidity. This does not mean that inflammations of various orders are not met with; on the contrary. Some of them, too, are characteristic and deserving of notice. More particularly it would seem that the mouth is markedly influenced by disturbances affecting the other portions of the digestive and respiratory tracts. Here may be mentioned the herpes labialis that frequently accompanies lobar pneumonia, and the catarrhal glositis accompanying intestinal infection. As a class general infections exhibit an associated inflammation of the buccal mucosa, and the condition of the tongue and lips, varying as they are apt to do in the different infections, is employed as a valuable diagnostic aid. We would recall Koplik's sign in measles (the appearance of punctate hyperenic spots of pinhead size, often with a paler bluish centre on the mucosa of the cheeks and lips. These may be present hours or days before the development of the skin rash); the strawberry tongue of scarlet fever due to intense congestion and swelling of the papillæ with loss of the epithelium over them); the catarrhal exudate upon the tongue, lips and gums of the typhoid patient, which accompanied by extreme dr ness of the mouth leads to the production of sordes, dry, dirty and ing, superficial deposits. Cases are on record of a vesicular stomresembling in its characters those of the highly infectious "foot mouth disease" of cattle and brought about by drinking the milk rected animals. In smallpox, chickenpox, and erysipelas also, when outh is affected, a vesicular and later ulcerative eruption may be

wher characteristic forms of inflammation of the mouth are:

abnormalities ber, arrangeof the frenum

the developvisceral arch fusion in the n the lateral ts—this cleft velopment of omes divided are closed at ewhat longer e mouth and elopment we ation, either

ateral facial

al passages, ncephaly), is

, unilateral. termaxillary

ecting what t often uniassociated

of developeth, persistpermanent s to abnore increased he employl for hour Thrush.—This is a form of spreading membranous stomatitis, be ning on the tongue and mucosa of the cheeks, found in infants a greatly debilitated adults, following it would seem the acid fermer tion of milk and starchy foods, and caused by the superficial grow of a fungus, the *Oidium albicans*. Beginning on the surface of epithelium the fungus may extend into the deeper structures.

stomatitis.—Aphthous stomatitis is characterized by the formation aphtha, yellowish-white, thin, rounded plaques standing out against reddened mucosa of the cheeks, lips, tongue and bases of the gums not on the gums themselves. These would seem to be of the nat of a fibrinous exudate. This condition is most common in pornourished children at teething and after acute and weakening disease (bronchopneumonia, whooping cough, etc.), but also may occur pregnant women and in men after exhausting disease.

Ulcerative stomatitis shows itself most characteristically in the ja and around the teeth. The gums become cedematous and spon easily bleeding and breaking down. With this the teeth are apt become loosened. The jaw bone may be exposed and undergo necro and the ulcerative process become very extensive. The condit is met with in scurvy, as also after poisoning with phosphorus, le and copper. With phosphorus the liability to necrosis of the jaw be is very pronounced.

Nome or gangrenous stomatitis is a very acute and fatal conditation beginning usually on the cheek and rapidly spreading, with intercongestion and ordematous swelling of the affected parts, and rapidly spreading. With rare exceptions it affects poorly nourished and we ened children. The rapid gangrene is very striking and suggests so specific agent, but that there is such has not yet been determine Several workers have encountered the "bacillus" fusiformis with accompanying spirochete. Others have encountered the diphthe bacillus. Suppurative stomatitis with the development of abscess more particularly in the substance of the tongue, is comparatively ra

Among the more chronic conditions are to be noted:

Levikoplakia.—Leukoplakia is a condition following chronic irritation characterized by epithelial overgrowth and thickening and the formation of plaques of a whitish appearance on the tongue and muco membrane of the cheeks. There is here superficial cornification of thickened epithelium. This condition is seen in smokers, alcoholicand not infrequently in the affected with syphilis, and may be extensive as to give rise to the geographical tongue. There is a distintendency in these cases to the formation of intractable fissures and sloulceration, which may pass on to the development of epithelioma.

Syphilis.—Syphilitic lesions of the mouth are relatively commo more frequent than tubercular. They may be (1) primary, the chance appearing on the lips or on the tip of the tongue; (2) secondar as an erythema, diffuse or in circumscribed patches leading mo particularly on the lips to fissures and erosions. Mucous plaque

atitis, begininfants and id fermentaficial growth rface of the res.

formation of t against the he gums but of the nature in in poorly hing diseases ay occur in

in the jaws and spongy, a are apt to ergo necrosis ae condition phorus, lead he jaw bone

al condition with intense i, and rapid I and weakaggests some determined. his with its diphtheria f abscesses, atively rare.

the formaind mucous
ation of the
ation of the
ation alcoholics
may be so
is a distinct
the and slow
belioma.

y common, the chance secondary, ading more may appear during the secondary stage or later in the disease. These may be present on the lips, cheeks, palate, and elsewhere. At first there is a warty or condylomatous thickening. This tends to break down, leaving shallow ulcers which heal, leaving considerable scarring; (3) gummas, the characteristic tertiary manifestation. These show themselves in the substance of the tongue and on the gums.

Tuberculosis.—Tuberculosis of the mouth is rarely primary, and its seat is the tongue, and here most frequently laterally; along the edge. the tubercles tend to break down, leaving ulcers with thickened and swollen edges, not so hard to the feel as those of carcinomatous ulcers.

Actinomycosis.—Actinomycosis in man, from our experience, starts most frequently in the cheek, though cases are found in which, as in cattle, the growths begin in the gums and extend into the bone. Leprous nodules may show themselves beneath the mucosa of the mouth.

The three chronic conditions most liable to be confused in connection with the mouth, and more particularly the tongue, are tuberculous ulcers, tertiary syphilitic ulcers and epithelioma.

Progressive Changes.—We have already referred to leukoplakia, a condition of overgrowth and thickening of the squamous epithelium covering the tongue. Of the tumors proper, the connective-tissue group (fibroma, lipoma, myxoma) is occasionally encountered. The term epulis is employed for rounded tumors of benign type projecting from the gums. The term thus includes fibroma and giant-celled myeloma (or sarcoma). Rarely do these take on very malignant properties. The mouth is lined by squamous epithelium, and thus the typical epithelial tumor from this region is the epithelioma, or squamous celled cancer (p. 269). Such epithelioma may affect the lips and the tongue, more rarely the gums. The characteristics of these epithelial tumors are the formation of well-marked cell nests, with extensive superficial ulceration and the relatively rapid involvement of the lymph nodes at the base of the tongue and in the neck.

Epithelioma may also arise from the upper portion of the pharynx and occasionally from the lower portion above the laryngeal opening, in which case the epithelial origin is from the sinus pyriformis. This form is difficult to distinguish from primary cancer of the larynx. Kaufmann lays down that while laryngeal cancer is for long unaccompanied by any secondary growths in the cervical lymph nodes, pharyngeal cancer is apt to be accompanied by a relatively ormous infiltration of these nodes.

Teratomas are occasionally encountered growing from the pharynx (epignathus, p. 65), or from the palate. Occasionally within the tongue substance posteriorly may be cysts developed from the primitive thyroglossal duct or from an aberrant process of the same, the so-called "Bochdalek's glands." These cysts may be lined by a ciliated epithelium. Other cysts may occur in the ducts of the salivary and murous glands through obstruction and retention of their secretion. The so-called ranula occurs in the neighborhood of the frenulum, and is

said to be due to a dilatation of the duct of one of the Blandin-N

mucous glands in this neighborhood.

Nearly every form of benign tumor has been occasionally descri in connection with the soft palate, pharynx, and tonsils; abron chondromas, lipomas, angiomas, and, as already noted, teratomas (e nathus, p. 65). The most common growth, and that most of appearing in children, is the nasopharyngeal polyp. These tum are of the same order as the nasal polyps already described. is worthy of note that the latter may frequently project into upper pharynx. Of the malignant tumors, large and round-cel sarcoma of the tonsils and pharynx are occasionally encounter Epithelioma may also originate over the tonsils, and is peculiarly to lead to extensive ulceration, with erosion, and liable to cause dea from involvement of the carotid. It is distinguishable from a chanof the same region by its undermined edges and more nodular floor.

As might be expected from the abundance of lymphoid tissue the pharynx, the various orders of lymphosarcomatous growth a encountered in this region. Thus in leukemia there may be overgrow of both the tonsils and the general submucous tissue of the pharyr Very similar overgrowth may be encountered in the preleukemic aleukemic conditions, while, further, lymphosarcoma may show its primarily in the tonsils, and then is apt to be rapidly infiltrating Such growths are very vascular, easily break down, and lead to gangre

and hemorrhage.

THE TEETH

A few words should here be given regarding diseased conditions the teeth which the ordinary medical man is apt to neglect, although we are coming to realize that they are of material influence upon the

Caries.—Caries is the commonest of these disturbances. The process is due to a progressive decalcification and destruction of the substance of the tooth. It is brought about by the agency of micro organisms which, producing acids, dissolve out the calcium salts. Thes bacteria gain entrance through erosions of the enamel and grow alon the canals of the dentine. While this is the case, it has to be recognize that the tooth is not wholly inert matter, and that its power of resist ance to this microbic invasion varies greatly. French writers, mor particularly of late, have called attention to the fact that during preg nancy, and in the early stage of tuberculosis, there is a distinct lower ing of the general calcium content of the organism and coincidently marked liability for the rapid supervention of dental caries.

Pulpitis.—Simple caries is unassociated with pain, but where it is present microorganisms have penetrated along the dentine canals to the pulp and there set up an acute inflammation that is intensely painful. The exudate may be of suppurative type and so form an absec-s landin-Nohn

lly described ls; fibromas, tomas (epigmost often hese tumors scribed. It ect into the round-celled encountered culiarly apt cause death n a chancre ular floor. id tissue in growth are overgrowth ne pharynx. eukemic or show itself infiltrating.

onditions of t, although e upon the

to gangrene

nces. The tion of the of microlts. These grow along recognized or of resistters, more uring preginct lowercidently a

canals to sely paina abscess, destroying the pulp and extending to the root of the tooth and so to the alveolus, inducing an alveolar periostitis; or again the pulp cavity remaining closed, the abscess may make its way (1) through the bone of either jaw, usually on the outer aspect, and here either discharge itself or undergo absorption; or (2) abscess of the upper jaw, notably of the canine teeth, may extend upward and set up acute inflammation of the antrum of Highmore.

Pyorrhea Alveolaris.—This is a form of low suppurative alveolar periosititis, originating, it would seem, not from the root of the tooth, but at the angle between the gums and the teeth and gradually working downward, loosening and leading to the falling out of tooth after tooth. The condition is in general painless, and apt to escape notice, save on examination. This condition has come in for increased recognition of late years owing to the teaching of Hunter and others. It is held that the constant discharge of the infected pus and the swallowing of the same leads to a low and continued form of gastric inflammation which, in its turn, is responsible for the supervention of grave anemia. To suppurative conditions in association with the teeth have also been ascribed the occasional development of aspiration pneumonia, gangrene of the lungs, and chronic swelling of the lymph nodes in children.

Such pyorrhea is said to be often preceded by tartar of the teeth. This is a very common affection and easily set up if the mouth be not washed out after meals. Portions of food, cell debris, etc., collecting in the angle between the tooth and the gum become the seat of growth of leptothrix and other bacterial forms, and, as noted on page 315, calcareous salts are apt to be deposited in the broken-down material so that a calcified layer of extraneous matter coats the lower part of the tooth. If left, as the epithelial scales are given off from the surface of the gum and are prevented from being swept away by the calcified matter above, these dead cells in their turn become the seat of a calcareous deposit, and so the tartar appears gradually to push its way downward separating the tooth from the gum.

Tumors of the Teeth.—The development of the tooth as a differentiated portion of the epithelium of the jaw is a complicated process, and hence quite a series of tumors may develop from one or other portion. These tumors may be either solid or cystic. Of the former, there may be localized overgrowth of the enamel, adamantinoma, excessive localized development of the dentine, adontoma, of the cement substance, dental hyperostoses, while from the root of the tooth there may be either connective tissue or epithelial growths. Kaufmann divides the cystic overgrowths which may be found in the jaw as follows:

- a. Tooth cysts.
- b. Root cysts.
 - (1) Simple.
 - (2) The periosteal cysts of the jaw.
- e. Multilocular cystomas.

The simple tooth cysts originate from normal or accessory tooth gor misplaced portions of such germs. These cysts, lined by an eplium, are most often unilocular, but may be multilocular, and they contain rudiments of teeth.

Root cysts are the result of periostitis of the root.

The multilocular cysts are thin walled, causing absorption of the of the jaw with great swelling of the same.

SALIVARY GLANDS.

Inflammation. — The most important condition in associa with the salivary glands is angina ludovici (cynanche). This very acute inflammation of the floor of the mouth and of the uportion of the neck, which is supposed by many authorities to origi from the submaxillary gland. It is a rapidly extending infiltrathe surrounding tissues tending to suppuration and gangrene, an is liable to end in a general bacteriemia or fatal ordema of the glo

Mumps or epidemic parotitis is a highly infectious condition characterized by pronounced enlargement of one or both parotid glands accompanied by a moderate grade of fever and general disturbathat the infection is not merely local and confined to the parotis shown by the frequent coincident orchitis in the male and by an infination of the ovaries or mammæ in the female. The disease in particularly affects the male sex before the age of twenty, and the parotid is apt to be more involved than the right.

Tuberculosis and other specific inflammations of the salivary glasser relatively rare. Concrements (sialoliths) forming in the duo of the salivary glands are occasionally encountered. These results of the salivary glands are occasionally encountered.

from catarrh with obstruction.

Progressive Changes. Tumors, more particularly of the parotid, for a complicated series of growths, nor can it be said that the exact relati ship of the series has been fully established. Occasionally we encour pure adenomas and pure adenocarcinomas; more frequently there an admixture of cell groups of very different types, what appear be epithelial elements intermixed with fibrous, cartilaginous, or m actively sarcomatous developments. As a rule, these mixed tumors gr slowly, and while they are apt to spread locally, despite their maligners appearance they show little tendency to recur upon removal. M particularly these tumors are apt to show cells of the connective-tis type, or sarcomatous, in definite relationship to the vessels of the pa the so-called perivascular endotheliomas or peritheliomas (p. 282). where the outer masses of cells undergo hyaline degeneration (cyl dromas (p. 283). It is often difficult to come to a determination whether the alveolar masses of cells of these mixed tumors are of epitics or endothelial origin. We are inclined to state that no satisfactor or generally accepted explanation has been afforded for the frequen ry tooth germs by an epitheand they may

on of the bone

association This is a of the upper s to originate g infiltration, grene, and it of the glottis. on characterd glands and disturbance. he parotid is by an inflam. disease more , and the left

livary glands n the ducts These result

parotid, form xact relationwe encounter ntly there is at appear to ous, or more tumors grow ir malignant oval. More ective-tissue of the part, (p. 282), or ation (cylintion whether of epithelial satisfactor e frequency

of these mixed growths of the particular region. Tumors of the same order, though rare, have be described in association with the submaxillary gland.

THE CSOPHAGUS

Notwithstanding its exposed condition- its liability to infection from food substances and discharges swallowed from the mouth, its liability also to traumatism from the food, affections of this organ are relatively micommon. In other words the lining squamous epithelium is endowed with considerable resisting powers. When it is involved in disease the effects upon nutrition are very serious, hence such disorders of the asophagus as show themselves are of very considerable clinical importance.

Here certain anatomical data may be recalled. Averaging 25 cm. or 10 inches in length in the adult, the resophageal tube is pressed upon a little below its origin by the cricoid cartilage, then 8 cm. below its origin by the left bronchus which crosses it, and shortly before its termination in the stomach it passes through and is apt to be compressed by the diaphragm. It is at these points of relative narrowing that irritant matter taken with the food is apt to suffer relative arrest and these, therefore, are the sites of election for morbid states. In the upper portion the muscle is striated, in its lower plain and involuntary. As throughout the digestive tract this muscle is arranged in an outer estindinal and inner circular layer. There is also a well-developed waris mucosa. The mucosa is formed of a squamous epithelium successional mucous glands. In some 15 per cent, of normal indismall islands of cylindrica-celled epithelium are encountered upper half of the exophagus. On section, these closely resemble the gastric mucosa, and harmber regarded as such by some authorities. Schridde has pointed out, however, that the originally cylinder-celled epithelium of the foregut gives rise to various orders of epithelium, and that in these islands it has proceeded to develop into a cylindercelled modification rather than into a squamous-celled; these are not gastry cell-rests in the proper sense of the term.

Maiformations.—These are uncommon. There may be complete absence (agenesia) or in part the tube may be represented by a fibrous cord, the organ thus forming a blind sac. Occasionally there is communicat; with the trachea. Partial or complete duplication has been recorded, loulized narrowing or stenosis, and the presence of a fold or diaphrag. 4, causing occlusion. It must be remembered that the respiratory system originates as a diverticulum from the primitive foregon, and occasionally we encounter cysts in the upper thorax lying between the œsophagus and the trachea, lined by ciliated epithelium or we find isolated accessory masses of lung tissue immediately above the diaphragm. These must be regarded as originating from

acces ary respiratory diverticula.

Acquired Malformations.—Occasionally in hysterical individuals and nervous states contracture of a portion of the œsophagus is brought about by muscular spasm. Whether from such continued spasm, or trom acquired stenosis (by pressure from without, by new growth in the wall, or by cicatricial contraction after an inflammatory process), the portion above the site of narrowing undergoes dilatation. This dilatation is sometimes enormous. Idiopathic dilatation has also been observed. A similar condition has been produced experimentally in the

dog by cutting both cervical vagi.

In addition to this generalized dilatation we recognize also local dilatations or diverticula. These are of two orders, the so-called pressure and traction diverticula. The latter are not uncommon, their usual site being on the anterior wall just below the bifurcation of the trachea. They are clearly associated with tuberculosis and other inflammatory disturbances of the group of lymph nodes situated in the angle between the two bronchi. As a result of this inflammation the tissue around the nodes is involved and fibrous bands or adhesions are developed between the nodes and the œsophageal wall. As a result with each peristaltic act, in swallowing, the œsophagus is pulled upon at this point and gradually a small expansion or saccule becomes developed.

The pressure diverticula are rarer. These occur at or in the neighborhood of the middle line on the posterior aspect of the æsophagus close to its origin. At this point the muscle wall is at its weakest. The usual teaching is that through the pressure of a large bolus of food the mucous coat becomes pressed outward through a defect in the muscle wall and soon a small amount of the ingested food or fluid collects in the lower portion of such an expansion, so that with the successive acts of swallowing the diverticulum gives way more and more; more and more foodstuff collects in the lower portion of the saccule thus formed, until gradually from the weight of this food and the irritation and weakening of the wall of the sac produced by the same, there is developed an elongated, blind sac, extending downward on one or other side in front of the vertebral column, it may be for several inches and even into the thorax. Usually no muscle fibres are found in the walls of this sac.

In this connection we may note certain other acquired conditions. Rupture is rare. Perforation may occur from swallowed bone, etc., from erosion, from syphilitic and cancerous ulcers, at the base of traction diverticula, by pressure of retained foreign bodies, or by extension of inflammatory conditions from without (caseous tuberculous glands, aneurysm, etc.).

Post mortem seftening and rupture may be brought about by the action of the acid gastric juice. This may occur where there is relatively sudden death, with full digestion. Very rarely may this digestion occur intra vitam, with the production of ulcers at the lower end of the esophagus of the same order as the peptic ulcers to be described later.

brought pasm, or rowth in process), on. This also been lly in the

lso local so-called on, their on of the ad other ed in the ation the dhesions As a is pulled becomes

e neighophagus
st. The
food the
e muscle
collects
ccessive
e; more
ule thus
ritation
there is
or other
hes and
he walls

ditions.
c., from
raction
sion of
glands,

by the is relagestion of the later. Circulatory Disturbances.—Of these the most noteworthy are the greatly distended varicose submucous veins of the lower extremity of the organ, seen in conditions of obstruction of the portal circulation, and, especially, in cases of portal cirrhosis of the liver. They are due to the development of collateral circulation through these veins between the portal system and the vena azygos. These lie so immediately beneath the surface that mere passage of food may lead to their rupture and fatal hemorrhage. In elderly individuals slight varices are not infrequent at the upper end of the œsophagus.

Inflammation.—In cases of general infection the œsophagus is rarely found involved. For example, while there may be an intense and extensive pharyngeal diphtheria extending down the respiratory passages it is very rarely that the œsophagus also shows a false membrane. It is rare also to find this organ the seat of either tuberculosis or syphilis. On the other hand, extensive inflammation may be set up from irritating food and by the accidental or purposeful swallowing of very hot water, lye, acids, etc. These may lead in the milder cases to an acute desquamative catarrh; in severer cases to necrosis and ulceration of the epithelium, more particularly at the regions of narrowing already noted. After such alteration, with cicatrization there may develop stenosis of the tube, with all its consequences. We have repeatedly confirmed the observation of our late colleague, Prof. Wyatt Johnston, that the condition of leukoplakia-streaks or patches of epithelial thickening and hypertrophy—is commonly to be met with in chronic drunkards. Here it would seem that we deal with a chronic inflammation of low grade, leading to epithelial proliferation. Other conditions of chronic catarrh, as for example, that associated with chronic passive congestion, may also be a cause of this condition.

Progressive Changes.—Tumors.—Benign tumors, mucoid polyps, myomas, and lipomas are relatively uncommon; so also are sarcomas.

The one frequent tumor is primary carcinoma. This in the majority of cases is of the nature of epithelioms, originating from the squamous epithelium of the organ. Occasionally we encounter medullary adenocarcinoma originating either from the mucous glands, or, it may be, from the above-mentioned islands of cylindrical epithelium. There are three main sites at which such a tumor may develop, namely, one of the three points of narrowing already noted. The statistics from different regions vary regarding the frequency with which one or other region is involved. Our own experience favors the middle region as the most common site, but many state that the diaphragmatic narrowing is most affected. The slower growing forms do not project extensively into the lumen but are apt to encircle it and become scirrhous, thereby inducing stenosis and obstruction. With the passage of food they in liable to break down in their central zone, forming thus a dulcer with thickened raised wall, the tumor infiltrating beneath osa and extending also into the deeper layers of the tube, so h progressive ulceration there may be rupture into the mediastinum or thoracic cavity. Through infiltration upward and downward the growth may extend a considerable distance. Softer adenocarcinomatous growths, on the other hand, form large masses projecting into and blocking the œsophagus. The bronchial nodes are especially liable to be the seat of secondary growths; metastases at a distance are relatively uncommon. By direct infiltration the trachea, lungs or vertebræ may be involved. It will be understood that through the passage of food over the ulcerating surface, gangrenous conditions extending into the neighborhood are liable to supervene.

THE STOMACH

The stomach is of the nature of a pronounce? dilatation in the course of the alimentary tube. This tube in early feetal stages has a comparatively direct course in front of the future vertebral column, but, with further growth, that portion which is to be the stomach both increases in length so as to form a loop downward with what is to be the pyloric end remaining relatively fixed, and at the same time undergoes distension and some rotation, so that what had been the posterior aspect comes to correspond with the greater curvature turning to the left and forward. The wall consists of three main layers. From either side of the vertebral column the peritoneum passes to it to form a mesentery, whose two layers separate to cover it and join again along the lower aspect, now forming the great oment im, which passes down and returns to the vertebral column, whence again it is reflected over the transverse colon.

Beneath the serous coat is a loose connective subserosa. The muscle layers are well developed, consisting of an outer longitudinal, an intermediate, somewhat ill-defined oblique layer, originating from the former, and a circular layer. At the distal end of the stomach the musculature undergoes a marked increase so as to form a sphineter, the pyloric ring. The mucosa is relatively very thick, consisting of a cylindrical-celled epithelium with abundant long, glandular invaginations. These glands form simple and often in the pyloric portion forked tubules, differing in their constitution in the cardiac and the pyloric regions respectively. The cardiac region may present two orders of cells, namely, the more regular cylindrical chief cells, giving origin to a pepsin-containing secretion, and the angular or polygonal oxyntic cells, with a more peripheral position, giving origin to the acid of the gastric juice. These latter cells are wanting in the pyloric portion of the stomach.

Between the various gland tubules and again between the mucosa and the muscle layer is a well-defined submucosa, abundantly vasc iar, with occasional solitary lymph nodules. In the resting or contracted state of the stomach the mucosa exhibits a series of longitudinal folds or rugae.

id down-

r adeno-

rojecting

specially

distance

a, lungs

ough the

onditions

e course

compar-

ut, with

ncreases

e pyloric

oes dis-

r aspect

left and

r side of

sentery,

ne lower

returns

insverse

muscle

n inter-

om the

ach the

hincter,

ng of a

vagina-

portion

nd the

nt two

giving

ygonal

he acid

pyloric

BEOMI

St all,

ri 'ed

I . IIs

As demonstrated by Cannon's method of fluoroscopic examination, after giving food mixed with bismuth the stomach physiologically consists of two distinct parts: first, after a meal the cardiac half is distended, the pyloric contracted, and only as the food becomes disintegrated through the acid cardiac secretion does constriction of the organ at its centre slowly give way, permitting the food to pass into the pyloric half, the cardiac portion now contracting. Following upon this the pyloric ring opens, permitting the softened food to pass into the duodenum.

Abnormalities.—Cases are on record in which the organ in the adult has been so small as to contain little more than an eggcupful of fluid, and others of entire absence. More common is abnormality of position with some persistence of the vertical relationship of fœtal life. The most important abnormalities are congenital hourglass constriction and pyloric stenosis. Care must be taken to distinguish between three orders of hourglass stomach: (1) as demonstrated by Cannon's bismuth experiment, during the course of normal digestion there is a stage in which the cardiac is cut off from the pyloric portion by contraction of the middle zone of muscle and at times we find the stomach in this phase at autopsy. This physiological hourglass state can be reduced by distending and kneading the organ; (2) occasionally there is a state of congenital h, pertrophy of the mid zone of muscle, the true congenital hourglass state, and lastly (3) the cicatrization and contraction of an old ulcer of the lesser curvature, which constricts the mid area, causes an identical appearance. The state of pyloric stenosis, may similarly be either of congenital or acquired origin. The former manifests itself in infancy with symptoms of gastric obstruction, dilatation of the stomach, vomiting, etc., and on operation or at autopsy the obstruction is found due to extensive hypertrophy and contracture of the pyloric ring. The latter is often not a true muscular hypertrophy, but a fibrous overgrowth: in two cases we have found it to be of the nature of an arrested scirrhous cancer with abundant dense stroma and rare atrophied cancer cells.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Anemia is most often a part of general anemia of gradual production or from rapid loss of blood. Active hyperemia follows the reception of irritants into the stomach and is well seen in the early stages of acute gastritis.

Passive hyperemia is relatively frequent, manifesting itself in all case obstructive liver disease, and to a less extreme extent, though arkedly, in obstructive heart disease. In the former case, notice-cirrhosis, the congestion is associated with the development of the case of the circulation through anastomoses with the development of the case of the congestion favors the development of the case o

The orhages are not infrequent. They may be either (1) minute, and in the main submucous, or (2) minute and free, constituting the obtion of diffuse hemorrhagic oozing, from vessels so small as

to be invisible to the eye; or (3) solitary, gross and free, leading to great sudden loss of blood and tending to be rapidly fatal. Minute hemorrhages, ecchymoses, are seen in many different conditions: (a) in hemophilia, passive congestion, acute catarrhal gastritis, where there has been severe vomiting, phosphoros and arsenic poisoning, conditions, that is, associated with dilated or degenerated states of the capillary, or (b) they may be the result of a nervous or neurotic dilatation of capillaries as in hysteria and (probably) the gastric hemorrhages of pregnancy, or (c) they may follow the erosive action of caustic substances that have gained entrance in the stomach or (d) they may be secondary to multiple emboli into the gastric arterioles, or thrombosis of the larger gastric veins. The beginner must be careful not to confuse with these the common condition of apparent hemorrhage along the gastric vessels brought about by post mortem digestion, and due to diffusion of hemoglobin and changes occurring in the same.

The submucous hemorrhage is apt to induce necrosis of the immediately overlying mucosa by cutting off its nutrition. While the gastric juice can exert no influence upon the living cells of the mucosa, dead mucosa is acted on by it; there is in fact no difference between it and the dead animal matter that may be introduced into the stomach as food. It follows, therefore, that the state of multiple hemorrhages tends to give place to that of multiple hemorrhagic erosions. We shall describe these more fully under the regressive changes. We would suggest tentatively that whether there be developed easily recognizable submucous hemorrhages with little evidence of erosion, or on the other hand diffuse oozing with little or no indication of submucous hemorrhage is probably determined by the acidity and activity of the gastric juice. When this is powerful, so soon as a small area of the mucosa is of depressed vitality through underlying vascular disturbance, it becomes digested and removed, affording a minute ulcer with a bleeding capillary at its base.

Gross hemorrhages may be brought about by the rupture of a relatively large vein in passive congestion (most often in cirrhosis the rupture affects not the gastric but the lower æsophageal veins). Commoner causes are carcinoma and round ulcer. The very nature of the cancerous growth determines that where it infiltrates the surface the outermost layers are apt to be poorly nourished, to undergo necrosis and ulceration. The digestion, therefore, of the necrosed matter is apt to expose some deep vessel, weaken its wall and favor hemorrhage. In the peptic ulcer there is a similar process of necrosis, ulceration, and exposure of a deep vessel (see p. 536).

Blood discharged into the stomach and mixed with gastric juice takes on rapidly a brownish coffee-ground appearance owing to the action of the acid upon its hemoglobin.

Embolism and thrombosis, as already indicated, may involve the gastric vessels; we shall take up their effects in discussing the paptic ulcer.

z to great

te hemor-

s: (a) in ere there

g, condi-

s of the

neurotic

c hemor-

of caustic

hey may

r throm-

ul not to

norrhage

igestion,

he same.

nediately

gastric

sa, dead

and the

as food.

tends to

describe

suggest ble sub-

ne other norrhage

ic juice.

sa is of

becomes

apillary

f a relarupture

mmoner

he can-

e outersis and

apt to

ge. In

on, and

c juice

to the

ve the

Inflammation.—Acute Gastritis.—The historical studies of Beaumont on the stomach of Alexis St. Martin have taught us how easily errors of diet induce inflammatory changes in the gastric mucosa, an overdose of alcohol bringing about acute hyperemia and even the development of a vesicular eruption, with discharge of greatly increased amount of mucus. Acute catarrhal gastritis is characterized more particularly by this pouring out of abundant mucus from the goblet cells, along with other modifications in the composition of the gastric juice, notably diminution of the hydrochloric acid. The mucous membrane is hyperemic and may show ecchymoses. Histologically, in addition to the catarrhal inflammation of the mucosa, there is a small-celled infiltration of the submucosa with marked congestion.

Phlegmonous Gastritis.—This is a rare and fatal condition characterized by the formation of submucous abscesses which, spreading, separate the mucosa from the underlying tissues. With its necrosis the pus is discharged into the stomach and ragged ulcers develop. In most cases the condition is of streptococcal origin and is one manifestation of the pyemic state; in others it is idiopathic, unassociated with abscess formation elsewhere. Drunkards show some predisposition to this form, presumably as a complication of subacute gastritis.

Membranous Gastritis.—Membranous gastritis is also rare, apt to be encountered more particularly in the newborn and young children, in whom, indeed, true gastric diphtheria has been recorded.

Follicular Gastritis.—As rare or rarer is follicular gastritis with pronounced enlargement of the small lymph follicles usually present in the submucosa.

Chronic Gastritis.—Chronic gastritis may be broadly of two forms: (1) hypertrophic and (2) atrophic. The first of these is seen more particularly in alcoholics and those suffering from chronic heart and liver diseases, although it may result also from any chronic irritation of the stomach, as from dyspepsia and prolonged retention of food in the stomach with delayed and perverted digestion. The mucosa is recognizably thicker than usual, of darker color, with at times some pigmentation, the result of imperfectly absorbed hemorrhages. There is increased mucous production and discharge, but what is most characteristic of the condition is the coarsely granular appearance of the surface, when the mucus has been washed off or otherwise removed.

Inder the microscope there is found a distinct thickening of the submucosa with congestion and cellular infiltration; the infiltration and increased fibrosis extend between the gland tubules, which are further apart than in the normal organ. The mucosa itself in this form is well preserved and the coarsely granular appearance is due to closely present areas of slight overgrowth, both of gland tissue and stroma.

These more typical cases give place to others in which the mucous an obmucous hypertrophy takes on a papillomatous form, gastritis polypesa. Whether this polyposis is always the outcome of chronic irresponsis questionable, but in some cases in which it is found there

is definite history of such, in others the polypoid masses appear to originate from the edges of healed ulcers. It is possible that a proportion of cases represent a blastomatoid condition—a tendency, that is, to

diffuse papillomatous overgrowth upon minimal irritation.

Atrophic gastritis may be the outcome of a fibroid hypertrophic gastritis; the atrophy of the glandular elements, that is, may be due to arrest of nourishment by the underlying overgrowth of connective tissue. In a considerable proportion of cases there is no very pronounced submucous fibrosis, but both mucosa and submucosa are diminished. It may, indeed, be questioned whether they would not be better placed among the regressive disorders than among the inflammations. Microscopically the gastric glands are greatly shortened with large lumen and cells relatively shrunken. The condition is not infrequently found associated with pernicious anemia and marantic conditions.

Specific Infections.—Of the specific infections tuberculosis is rare and never primary. Syphilis is also rare though ulcerations are occasionally observed, and the marasmus of the syphilitic child has been ascribed in part to the existence of subacute or chronic gastritis. Gastric actinomycosis and glanders have been recorded. Ulceration of the rare solitary lymph follicles of the stomach is one of the curiosities of typhoid fever.

Regressive Changes.—Of degeneration proper there is little that calls for further note, save that calcareous deposits have been described as occurring in the mucosa. Of greatest interest is the series of necrotic changes that may involve the mucosa and the various ulcerative processes from simple hemorrhagic erosions to the perforated peptic ulcer.

In speaking of phlegmonous gastritis we have already indicated that there may be ulceration of inflammatory origin in the stomach; the most common ulcers encountered in this organ are non-inflammatory. They are clean cut and upon microscopic examination the edges show little evidence of congestion and little or no small-celled infiltration. They are peptic ulcers due to the digestion and removal of an area that has become necrotic, and of these we recognize two main orders: (1) the multiple small and (2) the solitary or few large, the latter constituting the round ulcer. The ordinary text-book takes little note of the former, but we have encountered no less than six examples in the course of 1500 autopsies together with others that appear to be the early stage of the development. In this form there are found from fifteen to fifty or more small areas of loss of tissue of irregular shape and from 1 to 5 mm. across, most often in the middle zone of the organ, but at times more in the cardiac, at others more in the pyloric region. They have pale, clean-cut edges and in general a smooth base formed of the submucosa or at most the muscularis. Their abundance and small size give the lining of the organ a decidedly moth-eaten appearance. Very rarely do they perforate. In none of the cases can we recall that there were any symptoms calling attention to stomach

ar to origproportion that is, to

pertrophic ay be due connective very proucosa are uld not be ne inflamshortened ion is not marantic

rare and easionally ascribed Gastric the rare osities of

ttle that **lescri**bed necrotic tive protic ulcer. ted that ach: the matory. es show ltration. rea that lers: (1) constinote of s in the be the ıd from r shape

e organ,

region.

formed

ice and

appear-

can we

tomach

trouble; no hematemesis, no melena. They have been associated with typhoid, peritonitis, and operation for the same, portal thrombosis and in one case with pyemia, in two with multiple infarcts in the kidneys, spleen, etc. One group of these cases is associated with submucous hemorrhages and belongs to the order of hemorrhagic erosions, for we have in our collection intermediate cases showing abundant small, submucous hemorrhages and intermingled with them numerous early ulcers of this type. The mucosa over the hemorrhages has undergone necrosis and digestion, and ulcer formation has been the result. Another group shows no sign of hemorrhage, and the presence of emboli elsewhere suggests that here the condition is due to multiple minute emboli of the branches of the coronary artery. In one case the ulcers occurred along the course of the branches of a thrombosed coronary vein. We must admit, therefore, that anything which causes local death of small areas of the mucosa becomes a cause of these conditions provided that the gastric juice retains its activity. Recently our colleagues, Drs. Rhea and von Eberts, have demonstrated in one case of widespread capillary oozing from the stomach wall that here existed multiple microscopic ulcers, the loss of tissue on the surface being very much less than in the underlying mucosa.

Round Ulcer.—The more familiar round ulcer has the following characteristics: it is strikingly clear cut, when small (2 to 3 cm. across) it is round, when large it may be of irregular shape; it is often solitary, but there may be two or three present; it is sharply punched out and when small, is, if we may so express it, of a terraced, funnel shape, more of the mucosa being involved than of the submucosa, of the submucosa than of the muscularis (if it penetrate thus far). Its extent corresponds, that is, with the area of distribution of one of the gastric arterioles. Its walls show no signs of inflammation in the early stages; later with repair and the process of cicatrization these may be present.

One of two dangerous complications is apt to attend the development of this form: (1) hemorrhage, often fatal, from digestion of the artery of supply of the necrosed area down to the region where this has become occluded and (2) perforation, with escape of the gastric contents and supervention of peritonitis. Many of the ulcers fail to perforate freely, owing to the fact that with thinning of the stomach wall, adhesive inflammation is apt to be set up between the base of the ulcer and the panereas, liver, or other neighboring viscus. In this case the digestion and perforation may extend some little way into the adherent organ. Free perforation is most apt to occur when the ulcer is situated on the freed wall under the left lobe of the liver near the pylorus.

The charteness of the cause of this form of ulcer there has been abundant hypothesis, nor is the matter by any means settled. The chartomy of the ulcer indicates very strongly that it corresponds to infarctous area caused by occlusion of a branch of one of the arteries. An embolic cause is held by some and is supported results of experimental embolism, but the condition occurs most

often in individuals, man and woman, who show no signs of embolism elsewhere. For this reason others have suggested a local spastic contraction of individual arteries, and yet others, seeing that the condition is specially frequent in the mid zone of the stomach, occlusion of a branch of the coronary artery by the long-continued contraction of the muscularis which occurs after meals. The solitary nature of these ulcers is opposed to causation by irritants—hot foods, etc.—acting from within the stomach; such should set up multiple lesions. Nevertheless Turck has produced lesions of this type by repeated feeding with toxins of B. coli. Reford has regularly produced the like order of ulcers in the first part of the duodenum by ligaturing the common bile duct. Such ligature does away largely with the "alkaline tide" in this region and favors thus the deleterious effects of the acidity of the chyme. Now it is to be noted that there is a close association between gastric hyperactivity and the development of these peptic ulcers. We are inclined to lay down the following as essential factors in the process:

(1) A local area of necrotic or necrescent mucosa.

(2) This area must correspond with the area of distribution of one of the terminal branches of a gastric artery in which either primarily or secondarily there is arrested circulation—primarily through embolic or other occlusion of the artery, secondarily through stasis and thrombotic change induced either by some local irritant, or, it may be, by the action of the hyperacid gastric juice acting on a submucosa deprived of its overlying epithelium, and rendered susceptible to the action of the gastric juice by inflammation.

(3) A normal, or, preferably, hyperacid gastric juice.

It may be asked why a generalized inflammation of the gastric mucosa is not followed by extensive peptic ulceration. The answer is that generalized inflammation leads constantly to the production of a gastric juice of diminished activity and digestive power. For the production of peptic ulcers the gastric mucosa in general must be normal, if not producing a juice of heightened digestive capacity, and with this there must be some local focus of lowered vitality.

In connection with necrotic changes attention may be directed to the specific effects of different caustic agents upon the stomach wall. Thus caustic alkalies lead to a pronounced gelatinous or slimy swelling and softening of the mucosa. Sulphuric acid to a dry leathery appearance with grevish-black discolorations. According to its concentration nitric acid gives a pure yellowish staining or a yellowish brown. Carbolic acid causes whitish eschars, oxalic acid greyish-white discoloration, corrosive sublimate also a greyish-white superficial precipitation. copper sulphate a greenish discoloration.

Progressive Changes.-We have already referred to simple hypertrophy as seen in the pylorus. Here we would add a note of caution that some cases, possibly the larger proportion, of so-called pyloric hypertrophy of later life are not true hypertrophies, are not, that is, examples of overgrowth of the main tissue, in this case of the

embolism

stic con-

condition

sion of a

ection of

of these

ing from ertheless

h toxins

rs in the

. Such

ion and

Now it

hyper-

inclined

of one

imarily

embolic

throm-

be, by

eprived

of the

gastric

answer

vetion

or the

ormal,

th this

ted to

wall.

relling

opear-

ration

Car-

color-

ation.

yper-

te of

called

not.

f the

pyloric muscular ring, but are due to fibroid hyperplasia either of inflammatory or cancerous origin. We have, that is, encountered cases of pyloric thickening and stenosis in which only the most careful study has revealed rare collections of atrophied cancer cells. They have been cases of arrested scirrhous cancer in which the excessive growth of the fibrous stroma has choked and killed off the specific carcinoma cells.

Of benign growths, submucous and subserous fibromas, lipomas, and neurinomas (neurofibromas) are occasionally encountered, as are myomas. More common are simple adenomas. We have already indicated that multiple polypoid overgrowths may be secondary to inflammation (gastritis polyposa) or may be blastomatoid, hereditary in nature. There can be little doubt newadays that such adenomatous overgrowth may precede and give place to true carcinoma.

Carcinoma.—This subject of carcinoma of the stomach is of high importance. There is indeed no organ more liable in both sexes. Thirty per cent. of all cases of carcinoma involve and indeed originate in this organ.

According to the form so do the symptoms and course var, we may encounter:

1. Squamous-celled carcinoma (epithelioma), comparatively rare, present at the cardiac end of the stomach and extending from the cardiac orifice. There the squamous epithelium of the cesophagus interdigitates to some extent with the columnar epithelium of the stomach and small processes more or less isolated may come thus to be present in the stomach wall. We presume that it is from such that this form of carcinoma has its origin.

2. Adenocarcinoma may be derived as a malignant transformation of the polypoid adenoma and present itself as a fungating polypoid or cauliflower-like mass projecting into the lumen of the stomach. The central portion of such a growth is singularly apt to undergo necrosis and ulceration and originate severe hemorrhage. The more fungating forms of these growths are seen in the mid zone of the stomach. But while projecting inwardly there is coincident infiltration and invasion of the underlying tissues, and according to the tissue reaction and growing power of the aberrant gland cells so there may be varying proportions in the abundance (and size) of the cancer cells and the stroma. We thus encounter either (a) medullary cancer, abundantly cellular with large cells and great tendency to fungate; (b) carcinoma simplex; (c) scirrhous cancer with relatively small cells, abundant stroma, with little tendency to fungate, slower growth, less ulceration, although this eventually develops, and great tendency to infiltrate. The cancer cells in this form show the greatest departure from type and least indiation of glandular relationship, lumen formation, etc. This scientous form is most common in the pyloric region, beginning often a to be above the pylorus, not extending into the duodenum but infiltraining all the walls of the stomach from the pyloric toward the cardiac

This form may also originate in the lesser curvature. It appears to be related not so much to polypoid growths as to previous ulceration.

3. A rare form with extensive infiltration is the colloid cancer, in which the cells of the admocarcinoma retain their power of mucin formation, and the cancer alveoli become converted into inspissated masses of mucin, the cells undergoing a mucinous transformation to such an extent that they may not be recognizable, being completely disorganized and replaced by colloidal material. This form has extensive infiltrative power, invading the peritoneal and neighboring tissues

Of these different forms it may in general be laid down that the more cellular the growth the greater the size of the primary mass and the more rapid the development of metastases. A densely scirrhous cancer of the pylorus may exhibit widespread extension through the stomach wall; indeed, the whole organ may become involved, and as a consequence be converted into a dense, thick-walled, shrunken tube, and nevertheless there may be little extension beyond. In this same scirrhous form, if metastases do occur they may grow much more rapidly and attain much greater size than the original growth. Thus we have seen a secondary growth in the liver the size of an infant's head, with a primary growth at the lesser curvature at the site of an old healed ulcer, so small as only to be discovered by careful search. The commonest site for secondary growths is in the lymph nodes situated outside the lesser curvature, next in the node or nodes above the head of the pancreas in the gastroduodenal angle, this last more particularly in cancer of the pylorus. Of other organs the liver is most frequently involved, either by direct extension or through the blood stream, and next most often the pancreas, by direct extension; similarly the gastrocolic and great omentum are apt to be invaded and to become contracted and thickened in consequence.

The most striking clinical feature accompanying gastric cancer is

the loss or diminution of free acid in the stomach contents.

Sarcoma. Primary sarcoma of the stomach is a much less frequent event, as is also secondary cancer, although the stomach wall is a not infrequent seat for secondary melanotic growths and we have seen a few cases in which it has been involved in lymphosarcomatosis.

THE INTESTINES

General Considerations. From its size we are naturally led to regard the stomach as the most important section of the digestive tract, but this is an incorrect corclusion; the size is merely an accompaniment of its function, that, ramely, of storing, kneading, and dissociating the masses of solid food until they become converted into a more finely divided state. Comparatively little assimilation takes place from the stomach, indeed, complete removal of the organ is perfectly compatible with continued existence. The main absorption of foodstuffs occurs in the small

t appears

deeration.

cancer, in

of mucin

spissated

nation to

mpletely

as exten-

g tissues

the more

the more

cancer of

ach wall; sequence

evertheus form.

d attain seen a primary so smali

site for

e lesser

ancreas incer of ivolved.

kt most lie and

ed and

ncer is

equent a not seen a

regard

t, but

of its

005505

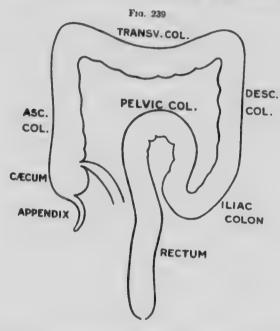
state.

deed.

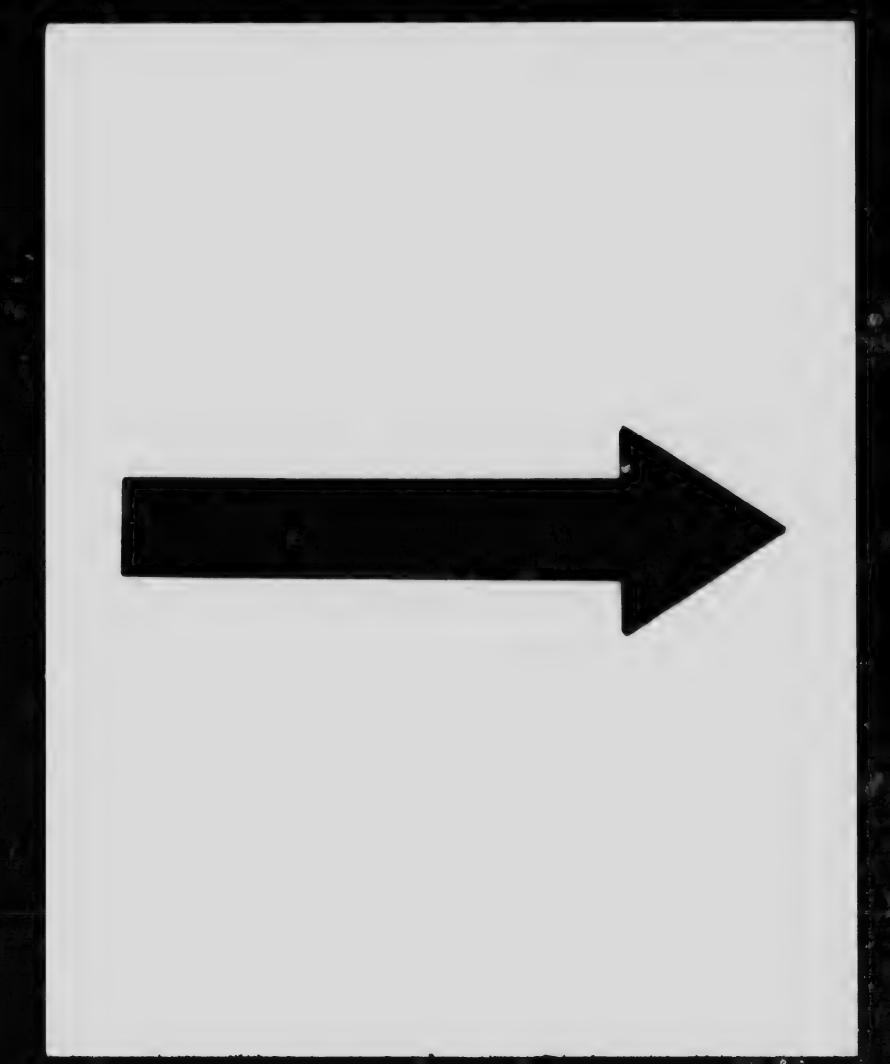
inned

small

intestine. Anatomically and functionally we distinguish three sections of the bowel: (1) the short duodenum receiving the hepatic and pancreatic ducts, in which the acid chyme becomes intimately admixed with the bile and pancreatic juice and rendered alkaline, before it passes on to (2) the small intestine in which, through the combined action of bile, pancreatic juice, and succus entericus all the various constituents of the food, proteins, carbohydrates, and fats are rendered soluble and assimilable; (3) the large intestine whose function is in the main to inspissate the unutilized remains of food and store them until such time as they become voided. Judged from its structure the upper half of the small intestine, the jejunum, with its pronounced increase of surface (the rugæ) is the more active region of absorption; the greater

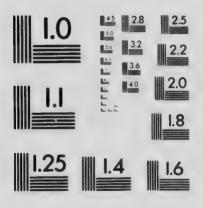


amount of lymphoid tissue in the ileum in the shape of solitary follicles and Peyer's patches is correlated with the need for protection against the abundant bacterial flora of this part of the tract and against the products of bacterial activity. The large intestine also has its divisions appendix, colon, and rectum. It is usual to regard the appendix as a useless rudiment, basing this view upon its great variation in size. To this view we cannot agree; complete absence is as rare as is complete absence of the stomach, and that organ also exhibits marked variation in size. No one, however, suggests that the stomach is a useless and disappearing organ. Rather, we cannot but be impressed by hydrostatic relationships of the large gut in man, an erect animal. Third contents of the ileum pour into the cecum and there and



MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)





APPLIED IMAGE Inc.

1653 East Main Street Rochester, New York 14609 USA 1716) 482 0300 Phone (716) 288 5989 - Fox

in the ascending colon undergo inspissation prior to discharge per anum. In other words, the cecum and ascending colon have physiologically to undergo great variation in the volume of their contents. It would be to the aetriment of their function were they to be acutely susceptible to pressure changes, were they to undergo peristalsis and void their contents immediately they became filled from the ileum. We must regard them thus as, in the normal state, distinctly unresponsive to pressure effects. It is the appendix, we hold, that is the hydrostatic agent initialling peristalsis in the large gut. In it we have a narrow tube, with no such pronounced variations in caliber, so situated that the weight of the column of forming feces is communicated to it, and we presume that when this weight reaches a certain point, the distending force acting upon its walls originates muscular contractions which spread directly into the cecum and so initiate the forward movement of their contents. Such a view explains the tendency to constipation in the bedridden, in whom this gravitational influence of the contents of the ascending colon can have little effect; it explains the normal tendency to empty the bowels, either shortly after rising and assuming the erect position or after the first meal when stimulating peristalsis of the small bowel has driven extra contents into the cecum and so increased the load; it explains the constipation that follows some interval removals of the appendix.

At the other end of the colon we have another hydrostatic mechanism. In normal health the rectum is empty until immediately preceding the act of defecation. As Hertz has shown that act is brought about by the sensitiveness of the preanal portion of the rectum to internal pressure, but this sensory mechanism becomes soon exhausted if the pressure continues, if, that is, the call to defecate be not attended to. Once, therefore, the rectum is loaded and not duly emptied it is apt to become overloaded. This rectal constipation with all its attendant ills and miseries is guarded against by the siphon action of the sigmoid flexure. The formed fecal matter does not gradually dribble into the rectum; it gradually accumulates in the descending colon and the proximal limb of the flexure until a column is formed of sufficient length to set up the pressure necessary to surmount the curve and once around the curve the whole column siphons rapidly into the rectum. Once there it exerts sudden pressure upon the anal region and demands discharge.

Constipation.—It will be seen that constipation may be of various orders: (1) obstructive, from kinks, contractures, etc., of one or other portion of the gut, arresting the inflow of the contents. (2) Fecal inadequacy, when either from starvation or from the ingestion of easily absorbable or predigested foods, sufficient indigestible remnants are not afforded to possess by their volume a hydrostatic effect. In such cases hardened feces accumulate more particularly in the cecum and sigmoid. (3) Atonic, when either (a) the sensory limb of the refex are is exhausted or depressed and pressure within the gut does not excite peristalsis as in rectal constipation or (b) through previous

distension or disease the musculature fails to respond. (4) Appendical, through lack of initiation of colonic peristalsis either from inflammation or other obliteration of the lumen of the appendix or operative removal of the same.

arge per

physio-

ontents.
acutely

lsis and

m. We sponsive

lrostatic narrow

ted that

it. and

distend-

s which

vement

tipation

contents

normal

ssuming talsis of

d so in-

interval

nechan-

eceding

bout by

d presspressure

Once,

become

ills and

flexure.

rectum:

roximal

i to set

ind the

e there

 ${f r}$ other

) Fecal

f easily

nts are

n su h

m and

re4 X

es ot

ev is

iarge. Various Diarrhea and Dysentery.—Diarrhea is the broader term indicating the discharge of watery non-inspissated bowel contents; dysentery the narrower, indicating a like passage accompanied by tenesmus, pain, and straining. Not only this, but discharges of this type are commonly due to inflammation of the large gut and are accompanied by the passage of increased mucus with some blood. Diarrhea, on the other hand, more often (although not essentially) originates from disturbed conditions in the small intestine. With this of necessity there must be failure on the part of the large intestine to absorb the fluid pressed into it from the ileum. That failure, however, need not be due to a disordered state of the large gut. More frequently it would appear that the contents of the small bowel enter the colon so rapidly and in such abundance that the hydrostatic mechanism is set in action and the very weight and distending effect of the abundant matter induces peristalsis and rapid discharge.

These watery feces may be of various orders and due to:

1. Excessive intake of fluid, although, as in the infant, this more often causes soft feces than diarrhoea proper.

2. Hypertonicity, and here again either (a) the sensory limb of the reflex is unduly irritable or susceptible of stimulation and induces a corresponding excessive peristalsis. Here we may deal with a reflex set up by abnormal contents of the bowel or by reflex or other sensory stimulants, or (b) the intestinal musculature may be unduly responsive. In either case we deal not with the discharge of increased local contents, but the premature expulsion of imperfectly acted upon and non-inspissated matter.

3. Excessive discharge of fluid through the intestinal wall. The type example of this form is seen in cholera where the growth of the spirillum upon and in the mucosa induces an intense congestion and exudation of fluid from the capillaries, until the rapidly recurring motions come to consist of little beyond serous fluid with shreds of necrotic mucosa, and consequently the blood becomes extraordinarily diminished in amount and tarry in consistence. Saline purgatives similarly attract fluid into the bowel.

Speaking thus of excretions from the bowels it deserves here to be recalled that the digestive tract subserves not merely absorption and assimilation of foodstuffs but also the elimination of sundry toxic substances—mercury, for example, from the salivary glands, antimony from the stomach, as also along with mercury from the colon. It is the absormal and excessive discharge of these toxic substances, as again of the unknown) toxic substances which become heaped up in the system in the uremic state, which lead to necrosis and ulceration of the colon.

¹ δύς, hard (i. e., difficult), ἐντερον, the bowel.

Recently, Hiss has demonstrated conclusively that bacteria are discharged from the circulation into various portions of the gut, and this after ligature of the common bile duct.

Abnormalities. - Apart from considerable variations in length, th most common abnormality is the presence of a sckel's diverticulum or the persistent remains of the proximal part of the omphalomeserai duct. There may be various grades of the persistence from the com plete duct opening at the navel (very rare), through the state in which a fibrous band adherent at the navel represents the distal portion and passes into a diverticulum opening off the ileum and lined with mucosa representing the proximal portion. The most frequent condition is a finger-like free diverticu am, one to three inches in length, with or without a mesentery of its own, given off from the ileum from thirty to forty inches above the ileocecal valve. We have encountered this in 2.7 per cent. of our autopsies. Belonging to the same system are occasional abdominal cysts representing a persistent intermediate part of the duct, and the condition of persistence of a congested moist columnar epithelium upon the navel, or it may be an actual blind sinus leading down from he same. More particularly where there is a fibrous band of attachment, the diverticulum may become the cause of internal hernias with strangulation of coils of the intestine. We shall refer later to the acquired diverticula.

The appendix in addition to variation in length may be abnormally

placed, and infrequently retroperitoneal.

Another important condition of congenital origin is congenital hypertrophy of the sigmoid and often of the colon—megacolon (Hirschsprung's disease). In this there is noted in the young child a progressive enlargement of the abdomen until it attains huge size, and associated

with this there is progressive constipation.

On opening the abdomen the sigmoid is found of relatively enormous size, occupying the greater part of the cavity. There may or may not be associated enlargement of the descending colon, or the colon in general, and with this pronounced hypertrophy of the coats. There has been much discussion as to the causation. In two well-marked cases seen by us there was an abnormal mesentery of the sigmoid; the lower end of the descending colon was closely bound down by the peritoneal attachments, and gave place to a large, fan-like mesentery of the sigmoid proper, with similar binding down of the sigmoid-rectum junction, a condition favorable to obstruction by kinking when the sigmoid became loaded and so to its progressive distension. One of the two cases had a similar close binding down at the splenic flexure with corresponding dilatation and hypertrophy of the transverse colon. Others, however, deny the evidence of this primary and anatomical defect, and possibly there exists another order of cases in which not potential obstruction but primary atony of the walls is at fault.

The third important group of abnormalities is that of the stenoses and atresias. The presence of membranous septa occluding the duo-

ia are dist, and this

ength, the verticulum, lomeseraic the comin which ortion and h mucosa, lition is a or without y to forty his in 2.7 are occae part of columnar is leading rous band

normally

internal

hall refer

al hyper-(Hirschogressive ssociated

may not colon in there has sed cases he lower eritoneal the sigunction, sigmoid the two ch corre-Others, defect,

stenoses

otential

denum has been reported (corresponding to the end of the meso-gastrium anterius), in the ileum (corresponding to the region of exit of the omphalomeseraic duct), etc., together with contractures and stenoses that can only be explained as the after results of antenatal peritonitis. The most frequent set of cases is constituted by the various orders of atresia ani and atresia recti, due respectively to persistence of the cloacal septum and to lack of descent of the rectum to come into apposition with this.

Acquired Anomalies.—Here it will be useful to pass rapidly in review the more important of the changes in form and position of the intestines.

Two orders of acquired dilatation are to be kept in mind: (1) obstructive; (2) paralytic. The former shows itself above any region of obstruction whether by stenosis, kinking, volvulus, or impaction of fecal matter and, if of general development, is associated with hypertrophy; the latter is seen in peritonitis and acute infections (typhoid, pneumonia, etc.); it is evidently the result of the action of bacterial toxins upon the musculature of the bowels.

Diverticula.—Acquired local dilatations of the bowel wall, diverticula, are not infrequent in the duodenum and there particularly in the neighborhood of the ampulla of Vater; in the small intestine they present themselves at the region of greatest weakness of the wall, namely, where the branches of the mesenteric artery penetrate through the circular muscle, and when coincidently the mesentery divides to encircle the gut. They thus constantly show themselves at the mesenteric attachment; they may be multiple and the size of a pea or even of a cherry. More common, especially in elderly people, are diverticula of the colon. They occur in the weaker regions intermediate between the longitudinal muscle bands and may be very numerous. They are of the nature of small hernias of the mucosa between the circular muscle fibres, have little or no muscle in their walls but an outer coat of the serosa. They occur when atrophy of the muscle is favored, in cases of chronic constipation and when, through rapid disappearance of the subserous fat, the wall becomes weakened. Occasionally these become the seat of inflammation (diverticulitis) with excessive small-

Volvulus or the twisting of a loop of intestine upon itself may affect either the loose sigmoid flexure or the small intestine. It leads naturally to obstructive phenomena, as also to intense congestion of the twisted loop, followed, if the twist be not released, by gangrene.

Such strangulation may be brought about, however, by many other means—by the snaring of a loop of intestine in a hernial sac, or between adhesions and bands in the peritoneal cavity, or by invagination. In all these cases the weaker veins are compressed before the arteries and then occurs a progressively increasing congestion of all the walls followed by stasis, necrosis, and gangrene.

Invagination (intussusception) is brought about by irregular peristals or more accurately, incoördination between the contractions

of the longitudinal and circular muscles, whereby a part of the gabove is either projected into the segment immediately below or caught by that lower segment in its contraction. As a result, on caught within, the peristaltic contraction propels it downward just if it were a fecal mass within the lumen. In this way long segment of the bowel may become invaginated within the portion of bow below, and may indeed appear at and be projected through the anti-lit will be realized that the attached mesentery likewise becomes invaginated, with compression of its vessels, congestion and liability to gan rene. Inflammatory adhesions are apt to form at the reactive uppend of the invagination and thus the gangrenous intususception may reff without there being escape of feces at the line of junction. In successes a zone of stenosis in the shortened bowel may be the outcome of the process. In other cases, unless operated upon, the obstruction and toxemia may lead to death, or there may be peritonitis from perforation.

These invaginations may involve the ileum alone (ileal), or, at the valve, the ileum may become invaginated into the cecum (ileocecal), is which case the cecum and appendix may also be carried forward to form part of the intussusception; may be colic, affecting the colon alone or colicorectal, the colon becoming invaginated within the rectum.

This irregular peristalsis occurs most often in young children, and in them therefore invagination is most frequently encountered. As curiosity we may encounter one invagination setting up a second invagination below, and so presenting not three but five coats; or, again through reverse peristalsis the invagination may occur in an upward direction.

Such reverse invagination is most frequently seen in the condition of agonal invagination. Often at autopsies, more particularly upon children, small invaginations of the small intestine present themselves, evidently due to irregular peristalsis during the death agony or in the hour or two immediately succeeding death. They differ from the other cases in their tendency to be multiple (three or more), in their small size, in the absence of any signs of inflammation of the serosa, and in the ease with which they can be reduced.

Circulatory Disturbances.—The great vascularity of the intestinal mucosa renders it apt to react in a very pronounced manner to altered circulatory states; it shows extreme pallor in cases of general anemia, intense acute hyroremia in inflammatory states, and even more marked engorgement and purplish coloration in conditions of passive hyperemia, such as follow partial or complete obstruction of the portal vein or its mesenteric branches, or obstructive cardiac disease. In this passive congestion the subserous veins stand out prominently; the mucosa assumes a bluish-purple color, is swollen and succulent through cedematous transudation, and, as already noted in connection with the stomach, if the condition is of some duration there are evidences of a secondary and accompanying low inflammatory state.

Hemorrhage.—Where the hyperemia is acute, whether active (infective) or passive, there may be submucous hemorrhages from the capillaries followed by hemorrhagic erosions, although these are not nearly so common as in the stomach. Other causes of hemorrhage are trauma, hemophilia, vicarious menstruation, malignant growths, ulceration (typhoidal, dysenteric, etc.), and hemorrhoids. Blood escaping into the lumen of the upper part of the bowel becomes tarry owing to dissociation of the hemoglobin and action of the sulphuretted hydrogen of the feces. There may be long-continued oozing of small quantities whether from the stomach or intestines, which becomes so concealed by the natural color of the feces as to be unrecognizable, save by delicate blood tests (occult hemorrhage).

Hemorrhagic Infarcts.—There is extensive serial anastomosis of the branches of the superior and inferior mesenteric arteries, but this is frequently inadequate to afford rapidly a sufficient collateral circulation where an important branch of either artery becomes blocked by an embolus or otherwise obliterated, and, as a result, there may be infarct formation. This, in our experience, is more common in the small than in the large gut. The result varies in extent from one to forty inches and more, according to the importance of the artery that has become blocked, or, expressed otherwise, the distance of the lesion from the intestine. It varies in appearance according largely to the length of time that elapses before death ensues. In the early stages the affected length of gut seen from without is of a bluish-purple color and on opening presents an intensely congested thickened and hemorrhagic mucosa. Later the superficial layers may become broken down with oozing of blood-stained matter, and later still the whole thickness of the necrosed mucosa and muscular coat may slough or be digested away until, as we have seen in one case, merely the distended serous coat may be left over a considerable area, and this in turn may give way, liberating the contents into the abdomina' cavity. Similar infarct formation may result from thrombosis and other forms of obstruction of the larger mesenteric veins and, in fact, an identical process due to venous obstruction is seen in volvulus and strangulated hernia-intense congestion with stasis, hemorrhage, necrosis, and gangrene.

Hemorrhoids.—Varices of the congested superficial veins may occur although they are not so common as in the stomach. An exception, however, must be made for a local development of what are essentially varicosities and are as rainfully common as they are commonly painful. We refer to hemorrhoids (piles). These are due to the interaction of several factors: (1) a state of passive congestion of the rectal and analytims: (2) to the superficial, poorly protected nature of the analytims; (3) the increased congestion of these vessels induced by the act of straining at stool and (4) in external piles, the obstruction to the emptying of the distended vessels which results upon the subsequent firm contraction of the sphincter ani. The result is the production of a more or less complete circle of projecting varicose vessels at the anal

of the gut below or is result, once rard just as g segments n of bowel h the anus. nes invaginty to gangctive upper on may rot n. In such outcome of ruction and perforation. or, at the

colon alone, ectum. Idren, and red. As a ond invagor, again, an upward

eocecal), in

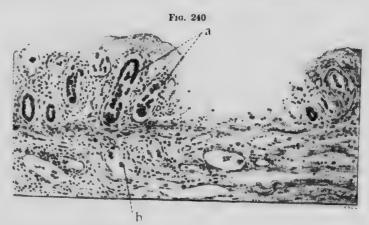
forward to

condition
arly upon
hemselves,
or in the
the other
heir small
and in the

intestinal
to altered
al anemia,
re marked
we hyperhe portal
. In this
ntly; the
t through
with the
nces of a

ring, external to the sphincter, which are apt to be irritated and erod by the passage of hard fecal matter, which may undergo rupture and induce severe hemorrhage, or from which, again, there may mere be oozing of blood; or, lastly, the contained blood may undergo thror bosis, and some organization.

Peptic and Necrotic Ulcers.—True peptic ulcers are now well reconized by surgeons as by pathologists as occurring frequently in the fir part of the duodenum. Ulcers of similar nature, produced by digetion of small areas of necrosed mucosa are rare in the small intestinal although they may occur, at times due to infarction of the area supplied by a terminal arteriole, or thrombosis of a small mesenteric vain.



Section through a small simple necrotic ulcor of ileum, involving only the mucosa: a, Lieber-kühnian follicles; b, congested vessels of submucosa,

Inflammation.—Different names are given to inflammatory disturbances according to the region affected—duodenitis, enteritis (of the small bowel), appendicitis, typhlitis or cecitis (of the cecum), colitis proctitis (of the rectum).

Owing to post mortem digestion of the superficial layers it is by no means easy to gain satisfactory histological pictures of the various forms of inflammation involving especially the mucosa. There may have been all the clinical evidences of an acute enteritis, but very little may manifest itself on microscopic examination that can surely be ascribed to acute inflammation. This is particularly true of simple or catarrhal enteritis and colitis. If the mucosa be well retained it may show an excessive number of goblet cells. The submucosa also may present pronounced congestion and extensive leukocytic infiltration, but the same hyperemia and leukocytosis are features of certain stages of digestion and some experience is needed to determine whether these exceed the normal limits. Petechial hemorrhages suggest an abnormal state, but superficial necroses accompanying

and eroded ture and so nay merely ergo throm-

well recogin the first d by digesll intestine, ea supplied vein.

a, Lieber-

atory disitis (of the m), colitis,

t is by no ne various Chere may but very can surely of simple l retained ubmucosa eukocytic eatures of determine morrhages mpanying

these are difficult to distinguish from areas of more extensive post mortem

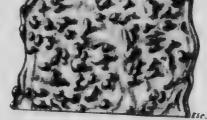
Occasionally, however, the infiltration of leukocytes between the Lacterkühnian crypts is so extensive that there need be no doubt; indeed, the condition may be so pronounced as to constitute a suppurative infiltration of phlezmonous type with a tendency to necrosis of the overlying mucosa and ulceration. This is uncommon.

Follicular enteritis and colitis also present difficulties. Particularly in children it is not unusual to find the solitary follicles of both small and large gut so much enlarged that they stand out prominently. Is this of inflammatory origin or does it merely mean an enlargement of the lymph follicles which is part and parcel of the lymphoid hyperplasia common in childhood? When the follicles are surrounded each by a zone of congestion we incline to an inflammatory causation, and

when, in addition, the condition is encountered after adolescence and there is evidence of erosion over these small nodes and actual ulceration, the diagnosis becomes still more assured. It is more particularly in the colon that we encounter such folliculitis in the adult, while in children in diphtheria and other acute infections the solitary follicles in the small bowel may be so prominent that the condition must be regarded as of inflammatory ty:



Fig. 241



Lymphoid hyperplasia of ileum in a child, leading to the production of a polypoid state. (McGill Path. Mus.)

Membranous enterit. al necrosis of the mucosa with coagulat-the caccum and colon, as lower end of the ileum, either diffuse or in patches over the rugae and more projecting portions of the mucosa. With deeper extension of the necrotic process and sloughing of the membrane, extensive ulceration may ensue. The condition is well seen in mercury and arsenic poisoning, and uremia, and, combined with extensive ulceration of the large bowel, in both amœbic and bacillary dysentery. Prolonged retention of feces may lead to a combination of membranous and ulcerative colitis, occasional ulcers resulting of small size, which originate apparently from the lymph follicles.

Special Forms of Intestinal Inflammation.—Typhoid Fever.—The commonest lesion in typhoid fever is an involvement of the Peyer's patches in the ileum above the ileocecal valve; we may, however, encounter cases with no recognizable affection of the intestinal lymph nodes, others in which the solitary follicles of the colon alone are affected. We have seen one case in which the solitary ulcer was in the appendix, although before death the blood gave the Gruber-Widal reaction and after death pure cultures of typical typhoid bacilli were gained from the

blood and peritoneal contents. But these are rarities. The site of election of the disease is the last two feet or more of the ileum and there, the contained Peyer's patches. These may, it is true, be involved throughout the whole length of the ileum and with them the solitary follicies. So, also, in quite a considerable proportion of our cases in Montreal (no less than 32 per cent.) the solitary collicles in the cæcum, colon and, in a few cases, the rectum have been simultaneously affected, nor does the severity of the case and the toxic state appear to have any definite relationship to the extent of involvement of the lymph nodes.

The stages in the development of the typhoid lesions are the following: (for the general course of the disease see p. 143.)

I. Stage of Tumefaction.—It is rare to meet with cases in which death has occurred before the end of the first week of fever, but where it has taken place from the seventh to the tenth day, the Peyer's patches and adjacent solitary follicles are found greatly swollen, standing out well above the level of the rest of the mucosa, either exhibiting some congestion or distinctly pale and anemic. Since all are not involved at the same time, but commonly those nearest to the valve are earlier affected and others more remote exhibit earlier stages, it is at times possible by the study of one case to follow the various stages. Of these the earliest is seen to be an acute hyperemia with moderate swelling of the Peyer's patches. Sections exhibit the individual follicles surrounded by a hyperemic zone, and the peripheral lymph spaces filled with large cells of the endothelial type (macrophages). These are actively phagocytic and may contain leukocytes and red corpuscles and their remains. The individual follicles are large and show evidences of active proliferation of lymphocytes. At a later stage the lymph spaces are found intensely engorged with these large cells, which replace the previous small, round-cell areas of the individual nodes, the picture suggesting strongly that both the mother cells of the centres of the nodes, and it may well be the small lymphocytes themselves undergo conversion into the larger type of cell. The affected patch or solitary follicle becomes now so tensely packed with these cells as to be rendered anemic and pale.

II. Stage of Necrosis (from about the twelfth to the nineteenth day).-In nodes showing the anemic swelling many of the "macrophages" show signs of degeneration and death, but this becomes progressively more marked, and now masses of these cells corresponding to the centres of individual nodes undergo a necrosis, which involves the stretched overlying mucosa. These dead areas become stained with fecal pigment, and begin to sloveh out. Where the process is widespread throughout a patch, the may be a striking appearance produced; the small isolated sloughs may have dropped out, leaving the patch riddled with small irregular perforations (état criblée). It deserves note that the whole of a patch would not seem necessarily to proceed to this stage of necrosis so that we may meet with patches in which the sloughing affects only one portion.

site of d there, solitary ases in cæcum, ffected, ve any des. owing: death it has

atches ng out some olved earlier times these elling surfilled e are iscles ences

Pro 242

hich odes, ntres elves atch

enth cropro-ling lves ned s is nce ing It to in

Ġ 3

folicies, with necrotic centres. 5. A ratch midway between the last and the ileocecal valve; g, bemorthagic area; k, slough becoming loosened; i, ulcerated areas from which the sloughs have escaped. 6. Large Peyer's patch, a few cm, above the valve, aboving the completed ulver. The whole patch has sloughed away 1. Abnormally long Peyer's pat 1 (16 cm.) showing congestion and slight swelling, in commencement of ileum, 250 cm, from vave. 2. Patch of normal size, slough or necrotic area, bile stained. 4. Peyer's patch, some 50 cm. lower down, with two sloughing areas, that at e, lone and almost detached; at f, (P. M. 31-08 Royal Victoria a little lower down, 225 cm from ileocecal valve, showing teat cribite, and at a, small area of hemorrhage; at b, anciber hemorrhagic area, with central pr area of necrosis. 3. Patch, 210 cm. from valve. Here the solitary follicles also abow swelling; at c, hemorrhagic areas with necrotic restres; at d, There were ulcer, also in the appendix, cocum, and ascen Typhoid fever. Peyer's patches and solitary follicles from a youth, aged twenty years, to show the auccessive stages reposing the circular muscular coat of the bowel; m, solitary follicle that has ulcerated.

III. Stage of the Developed Ulcer (nineteenth to twenty-eighth day).—
The necrosis and sloughing once manifested tend to involve the whole of the affected individual node, so that large pigment-stained sloughs may be formed. In typical cases the whole of the lymphoid tissue constituting the Peyer's patch sloughs away leaving an ulcer having the following characteristics: (1) a clean, smooth floor with fine transverse ridging, formed of the exposed circular muscle; (2) raised overhanging edges formed of the intact mucosa of the margin of the patch from beneath which the lymphoid tissue has sloughed out; (3) a long axis corresponding with the long axis of the ileum (although where part of a patch only undergoes necrosis the ulcer may be rounded or have a larger transverse axis); (4) a situation on the bowel wall remote from the mesenteric attachment. When solitary follicles are involved the



Heum from a case of typhoid fever, showing "lecration of solitary follicles (b) and of a small Peyer's patch (a).

ulcers are correspondingly smaller and circular; more particularly in the colon, they may, however, be so large as to suggest that not merely the lymph node but also the surrounding zone of submucosa has been affected by the necrotic and sloughing process.

IV. Stage of Healing (after the fourth week).—The overhanging, somewhat raised edges become flattened down and adherent to the floor, and now the mucous membrane, regenerating, covers that floor with a smooth shiny layer of epitheliun. There is very little granulation tissue produced, and little or no subsequent contraction. Where death occurs a few months later all that is to be made out is a smooth, small, oval area where the wall is thinner than normal.

The figures above given are approximate; they refer to the condition of the oldest crop of affected nodes nearest to the valve. We repeat that cases are not infrequent in which these oldest ulcers are of the fourth week or later, whereas higher up in the ileum there may be

Peyer's patches at the end of the first week. Progressive involvement of lymph nodes explains the long-continued cases; where successive crops of nodes are affected at intervals we obtain relapses.

LV).-

ole of

may

onsti-

g the

rans-

over-

patch

long

part ve a

from

the

ly

en

g,

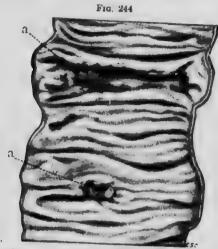
ne or Similar necroses are liable to occur in the mesenteri lymph nodes; the lymph node situated in the ileocecal angle is constantly enlarged in typhoid and is particularly apt to exhibit whitish areas of necrosis.

The two grave complications of the typhoidal process are hemorrhage through erosion of a vessel or vessels in the sloughing stage, and partoration, either through extension of the necrotic process into the muscular layers, possibly along the lymph channels, penetrating that muscle, or through rupture following pressure of the bowel contents pon the weakened area. Most often the perforation is small, of the "n-point" variety, suggesting the former mode of origin.

Tuberculosis.—Tuberculosis may involve any portion of the small and large intestines, and has no special site of election, save that where infected feces become arrested in the lower part of the ileum, in the cæcum, sigmoid, and rectum, there infection is most liable to occur. Although it oftenest originates in unividual lymph nodes, there is not the same strong tendency to imply ate primarily the nodes immediately above the ileocecal valve, and, what is more, in the subsequent stages the process spreads beyond the limits of the nodes and patches, involving all the coats.

The infection may be (1) of hematogenous origin (acute miliary tuberculosis; this rarely sets up extensive lesions), or (2) of enterogenous origin, from the bowel contents, or (3) peritoneal, by infection from the peritoneal fluid secondary to ovarian, tubal or other abdominal tuberculosis. This last will be discussed later. It is the enterogenous that causes the most characteristic lesions. This may be primary, from the food, and then most often set up by the bovine type of baci (milk), or secondary, due to swallowing of sputum where there ex. pulmonary or laryngeal tuberculosis (human type). Saying this, a must be remembered that infection with the bovine type shows itself most often not in the intestinal wall but in the mesentaric nodes. It has been abundantly proved by experiment that the tuberale bacilli may be carried through the bowel wall without wing up any lesion, only becoming arrested in the mesenteric nodes. The bacilli carried through the mucosa may become arrested in the submucosa, and there most naturally in some lymph node or collection of lymphoid tissue along the course of a lymphatic. Thus there develops a submucous tubercle, and bacilli escaping or carried from this induce the formation of secondary tubercles in the immediate neighborhood. These in their growth fuse and undergo central caseation, cut off the nutrition from, and even invade, the overlying mucosa, and necrosis and ulceration is the result. The subsequent stages are those of progressive extension of the lesion; new tubercles form especially along the course of the lymphatics and as these lymphatics, like the blood vessels, have a circular disposition, the tubercle formation and ulceration is peculiarly apt to

be most marked in a transverse direction, often becoming completely annular. Other lymphatics penetrate the muscularis and thus simultaneously tubercles become formed on the serous aspect of the gut. These groups of subserous tubercles are the first indication of the condition upon inspecting the opened abdomen.



Tuberculous ulceration of the jejunum, showing ulcers (a, a) tending to be annular. (McGill Path. Mus.)



Syphilitic periproctitis. Portion of the lower end of the rectum, showing at a great contraction of the lumen, thickening of all the coats and extensive hyperplasia and fibrosis of the periproctal tissue. (McGill Path. Mus.)

From the nature of this process it follows also that the resultant ulcors have irregular edges irregularly swollen by the presence of underlying tubercles, irregularly undermined where these have undergone caseation, and that their floors, instead of being smooth as in typhoid, are nodose and irregular, formed of a layer of tubercles or of these

pletely simulate gut. of the

ction

octul

ant

ler-

one

id,

ese

alternating with caseating areas. This caseation and ulceration may extend into the muscularis, which forms no natural boundary. Where this extension is marked, there also is well-defined subserous tuberculosis, and, secondary to this, a notable tendency to the formation of local adhesions. These explain why in intestinal tuberculosis perforation and perforative peritonitis are comparatively rare, while the formation of fistulous communications between various segments of the bowel is comparatively frequent. We have encountered half a dozen of these in a single case. The disease is apt to be chronic and, what is more, to show healing, fibrosis, and contraction in one area, while in the immediate neighborhood new tubercles may be forming.

The largest of these annular ulcers are to be met with in the cæcum and colon.

Tuberculous ulceration involving the mucosal pouches formed by the contraction of the sphincter ani, leads to one form of fistula in ano.

Syphilis.—Save in connection with the rectum (and the characteristic lesions there are now coming, by some at least, to be regarded as doubtfully of syphilitic origin), acquired syphilis rarely affects the intestinal tract. A form of lesion is described as affecting more particularly the jejunum, in the form of groups of small nodes arranged in a circular manner in the submucosa which, under the microscope, presents vessels with characteristic perivascular small-celled infiltration. The mucosa over these is apt to ulcerate, leading to transversely disposed, somewhat shallow ulcers with uneven pale floors.

What until recently was held to be a syphilitic proctitis and periproctitis is a remarkable condition of venereal origin, presenting a combination of ulceration and irregular hyperplasia of the rectal mucosa through the greater part of its course, with fistula formation and the production of periproctal abscesses. Sections show a pronounced plasma cell infiltration throughout, without the small-celled perivascular infiltration so common in syphilis being a leading feature.

The intestines are more frequently found infected in congenital syphilis. The commonest form is a diffuse small-celled perivascular infiltration of the submucosa and muscular coats, but the development of scattered gummas has also been recorded and, more frequently, of multiple miliary gummas of the submucosa and muscularis, closely allied, we may suggest, to the first form.

Appendicitis.—All the aspects of appendicitis are now-a-days treated in such full detail in the text-books of surgery, and the student is expected to have so thorough a knowledge of the subject that we find ourselves in a dilemma. To fulfil his needs, to discuss the etiology, classification, histology, and sequels on the same scale as does the surgeon would consume many pages and be out of balance with the treatment here afforded to other important conditions; to indicate briefly the main data may lay us open to a charge of neglect. Nevertheless as the student gains these data elsewhere the latter is the course we must select.

Briefly, then, if the appendix be studied in each case presenting itself at autopsy, what impresses us is the frequency with which we encounter indication of old inflammation, and this in cases which have afforded no history of acute abdominal disturbances. We encounter, that is, localized cicatrices causing narrowing and slight stenosis of the small organ. At other times, it is true, studying the organ removed for active disease, we find the mucosa unaffected save in the zone of acute inflammation, which generally is found in the distal half. There is thus apt to be either a series of mild inflammations of the mucosa unproductive of symptoms, or a first inflammatory attack so acute as

to lead to grave results.

What in general is the nature of these attacks? Anatomically the appendix is a small edition of the bowel, resembling the colon in the absence of rugæ and villi, and the small intestine in that its longitudinal muscle forms a continuous sheet and is not gathered into bands; differing from both in the abundance of solitary lymph nodes in its submucosa. Over these the mucosa has a stretched appearance with few and short Lieberkühnian follicles, and, as Aschoff points out, the swelling caused by the presence of these nodes causes the outline of the lumen to be not circular but irregular. He regards the angles or depressions between contiguous nodes as the regions of election and origin of the inflammatory process and affords figures from early cases which strongly support this view. As we write, Poynton and Paine publish experiments upon the rabbit, confirming the previous observations of Adrian that, under favorable conditions, the intravenous inoculation of sundry pathogenic organisms (pneumococcus, B. typhosus, diplococcus of acute rheumatism) sets up an acute localized appendicitis in the rabbit. This is of hematogenous origin and affects first the individual lymph nodes. These observations necessitate a renewed study of the earliest cases of the condition to determine whether serial sections of the human appendix demonstrate the existence of cases in which the lesion begins in the lymphoid tissue of the submucosa without evidence of preceding focal catarrh and necrosis of the mucosa.

We have long passed the period at which it was held that appendicitis originates from the presence of foreign bodies, pins, shot, etc., or of fecal concretions in the lumen of the organ. Where these are present undoubtedly they act as irritants favoring the development of local inflammation. So, too, the existence of constricting bands from old cicatrices by favoring the retention of fecal matter in the distal portion, favors the multiplication of putrefactive and other bacteria in the retained matter, and so seemingly predisposes to the supervention of catarrhal and graver inflammations. It must be admitted also that a relatively slight catarrh extending from the cæcum must tend toward closure of the proximal portion of the narrow tube, while similarly the very mobility of the tube favors its assuming abnormal positions and becoming temporarily kinked, again favoring retention of fecal contents in the distal portion and all its sequels. We cannot accept

the view recently propounded by Metchnikoff that pin-worms and thread-worms (oxyuris and trichocephalus) penetrating the mucosa are a dominant cause in setting up infection, while admitting that they are present in a small proportion of children exhibiting a milder form of catarrhal appendicitis. Briefly all these factors signify imperfect drainage.

By analogy with what we know regarding the earliest stages of infections involving the lymph nodes in the ileum, namely, typhoid and tuberculosis, we are inclined to the view that bacteria are conveyed into the submucous lymph nodes without there being necessarily any preliminary destruction of the surface epithelium. Wherever there is irritation from within the lumen, a simple catarrh is the first disturbance, with increase in goblet cells, congestion of the submucosa, and increased passage outward of wandering cells, and these cells, we believe, convey the bacteria into the underlying lymph nodes. Thus while hesitating to oppose the masterly studies of Aschoff, we are accustomed to conceive the process as affecting essentially the lymph nodes. It is the active proliferation of the cells in these nodes, and the consequent swelling with accompanying small-celled infiltration of the submucosa and muscularis that in our experience is the dominant feature in acute appendicitis. Further, as a result of the swelling, rather than as a normal condition, sharp angles or pits of the mucosa become developed which clearly favor bacterial growth, necrosis, and ulceration of the mucosa. This we regard as a second, rather than as a first stage.

The condition apparently may proceed no farther than this and then become arrested, with little or no after-affects; or with the great swelling of one or more lymph nodes the overlying mucosa undergoes necrosis and removal, and with resolution a scar is produced with some

constriction of the lumen (simple catarrhal appendicitis.)

Generally we observe more than this. It is a striking feature of the appendix, due possibly to its small size, that once set up, inflammation tends rapidly to involve all the coats. The limits of the affected lymph nodes become ill defined, small round cells, lymphocytes, and polymorphs infiltrate the circular and longitudinal muscle layers. Even the subserous vessels exhibit intense congestion, and at an early period there may be a peri-appendicitis with fibrin formation on the serous stance, long before there is any deep necrosis or sign of perforation. That this stage (diffuse appendicitis) is also recovered from is indicated by the frequency with which we encounter its after-effects, the so-called chronic appendicitis, seen where the appendix is removed after recurrent attacks, and characterized by diffuse fibrosis involving all the coats, and by the organized adhesions surrounding the organ.

If the inflammation be more pronounced, the local toxic effects of the bacteria coupled with the inflammatory stasis, acting most powerfully in the region of primary invasion, lead to deep necrosis and ulceration which, extending through the outer coats, cause perforation (perforative appendicitis). Where the inflammation is more widespread

ch we have unter, of the noved ne of there

enting

te as the n in t its

into odes ance out, tline igles and ases aine

sus, idiirst ved rial

tis of ent eal on, he

of at d y is

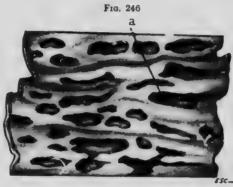
al ot and the stasis and necrosis affect the greater part of the distal portion, or even the appendix as a whole, widespread gangrene ensues (gangrenous appendicitis) and at operation little may be found save a detached slough lying in an abscess, or a more diffuse collection of foul serous fluid with admixture of fecal matter.

The further effects depend largely upon the position of the appendix, whether it pass down into the true pelvis, or be retroperitoneal, or pass upward along the outer aspect of the cecum and colon toward the appendix; depend upon the reactive power of the individual; depend also upon the nature of the infecting organism. Thus there may be a localized peri-appendical abscess well circumscribed, a spreading retroperitoneal inflammation, a diffuse peritonitis, an intense toxemia fatal before generalized peritonitis shows itself, a pylephlebitis extending along the veins of the appendix to the larger mesenteric veins and so to the portal vein, with multiple abscesses in the liver. The possibilities are manifold.

Colitis.—Colitis may be, as already stated, of very varied orders, namely, simple catarrhal, follicular, membranous, ulcerative, and others. Certain forms deserve additional notice. Mucous colitis is a remarkable condition in which, from time to time, the individual passes casts of the colon formed almost entirely of mucus, which may be many inches in length; the condition may extend over many months and, after a period of quiescence, may recur. It is unaccompanied by any marked febrile reaction and it is doubtful whether it should be spoken of as inflammatory in nature, seeming rather to e of the nature of a secretory neurosis; it occurs most frequently in young women and those of neurotic temperament, and possibly it is associated with conditions of slight splanchnoptosis and congestion. It is recovered from by rest and improved body tone.

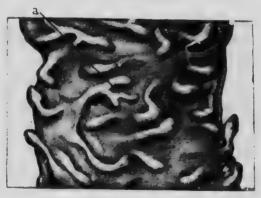
Of the specific inflammations of the colon two especially deserve note, namely, amoebic colitis and epidemic bacillary colitis. In amoebic colitis or dysentery the upper portion of the colon, viz., the cecum and ascending portion, is most involved, the characteristic feature being a marked thickening of the wall due in the main to a striking cellular infiltration of the submucosa, which on section stands out as a broad, pale, yellowish-white layer. Over this thickened area the mucous membrane is swollen and hyperemic, with a pronounced tendency to superficial necrosis and the formation of ulcers leading down into the swollen submucosa. In this way, large areas of the mucosa may disappear, leaving strands that bridge across the areas of ulceration. The ulcers rarely extend through the muscle coat and perforation is rare. With healing there may be diffuse thickening of the bowel with papillary overgrowth of the remaining mucosa. Entamœbæ are to be found in considerable numbers in the infiltrated submucosa, which further contains abundant plasma cells. This form is largely tropical and subtropical, though cases have been described in persons who have never been in either zone.

Epideraic bacillary colitis (dysentery) shows some difference according to the strain of bacillus that is the causative agent. The more severe type is that found in the tropics and in Japan, due to Shiga's bacillus; this is strongly epidemic. In North America a somewhat milder form is encountered, particularly in inmates of asylums and other institutions, and in infants, causing one form of summer diarrhoea; this is due to the strain isolated by Flexner, as well as to allied forms. In these



Ulcerative colitis, showing multiple, deep ulcers (a) mostly transverse. (McGill Path. Mus)





Colitis polyposa apparently secondary to old inflammation, showing at a an outstanding polyp.

(McGill Path, Mus.)

bacillary cases the rectum and sigmeid are as apt to be involved as are the upper reaches of the colon. There is intense congestion of the mucosa with swelling and prominence of the rugæ and superficial necrosis of the mucosa leading to the formation of a membrane, and leading also to erosion and ulceration. These ulcers in the early stage are most apt to be along the ridges of the mucosa, while in severe cases, a purulent infiltration of the submucosa may ensue. The thickening of the submucosa is never so marked as in the amœbic form, nor is the

ortion, angrentached serous

pendix, real, or rd the lepend asy be eading exemia ending so to bilities

rders, thers. kable sts of nches ter a arked of as etory rotic light

serve exbic and ag a ular bad, cous to the dis-

to ich cal bowel wall so markedly thickened. Both forms of colitis are characterized by dysentery which may be of long continuance.

Reference has already been made to tuberculous colitis and to the most characteristic form of proctitis, the so-called syphilitic.

Progressive Changes.—As already stated, hypertrophy of the bowel occurs above any region of chronic obstruction.

Tumors.—It may be said of the small intestine that primary tumors of any order are distinctly infrequent, and of the large intestine that benign tumors, save papillary growths, are rarely met. Nevertheless, cases are on record of various forms of benign tumors of the intestines, fibroma, lipoma (either subserous or submucous), myoma (ditto), hemangioma, and lymphangioma. Where these tumors project into the lumen of the bowel they may cause either obstruction or intussusception. Papillomas, whose epithelial portion is of the columnar type, are more common in the colon than in the small intestine and often are secondary to previous ulceration and continued inflammation (Fig. 241). They may occur also in the rectum. Apart from growths immediately around the ampulla of Vater, the duodenum is singularly devoid of tumors.

Of malignant growths, we encounter carcinoma in the duodenum in the region of the ampulla; it is very rare as a primary condition in the small intestine; it is more common in the colon, especially at the flexures, and still more common in the rectum. The next most frequent seat is at the lower end of the sigmoid. Of cancer in general, the rectum comes fifth in the order of frequency of incidence. The forms that present themselves are, in the main, columnar-celled adenocarcinoma (see Fig. 122, p. 272), though we may also encounter more infiltrating forms, less adenocarcinomatous in character, with scirrhous tendencies, encircling and infiltrating broad areas of the bowel with accompanying contracture and narrowing of the lumen. Particularly in the rectum we meet with colloid cancer and, again, in the anal region, squamous epithelioma.

The last few years have afforded numerous examples of carcinoma of the distal portion of the appendix; the form is usually of the simplex or the scirrhous type, and what is very remarkable is that, with scarce an exception, the presence of the tumor has been a chance discovery, there being no symptoms, and what is more, little infiltration and no metastasis. The tumors in general have been small and well-defined. We have here, in short, the paradox of a "benign" carcinoma. It is worthy of note that the rare carcinomas of the lower end of the ileum are of the same benign type.

The results of carcinoma of the intestine are usually ulceration, which may pass on to perforation, but more frequently the growth is of the infiltrative type leading, both by its projection into the lumen and by the contraction of the gut, to stenosis and obstruction. Hemorrhages are not so pronounced as in the case of gastric cancer. Metastases are frequent in the retroperitoneal lymph nodes and on the peritoneum; The liver also is a frequent seat. Secondary carcinoma of the intestines

is not common; cases are on record in which a primary cancer of the stomach has been followed by one or more solitary growths along the course of the intestine. There may further be infiltration by extension into the rectum of uterine carcinoms.

Primary sarcoma may occur as a round-celled growth originating generally in the submucosa, and this most frequently in the lower part of the ileum, though the rectum, cecum, and even the appendix furnish cases. Spindle-celled sarcoma is distinctly rare. Lymphosarcoma has the same regional distribution as has the round-celled sarcoma, and possibly they often fail to be distinguished one from the other. Secondary sarcomas occur in cases of generalized sarcomatosis; melanotic sarcomas particularly are apt to show themselves in the bowel wall.

THE PERITONEUM

Were it not for the necessity of peristalsis and motility of the stomach and intestines, the peritoneal cavity might be considered a superfluity. All those organs whose function demands a change of size and position are surrounded by a lubricated cavity in which to work, and of these cavities the peritoneal has by far the largest potential extent and We must take it for granted that the student is familiar with the anatomy of the peritoneum, the disposition of the parietal portion, the nature of the mesenteries whereby the viscera hang relatively free within the cavity, and the relationship of these mesenteries to the blood supply, whereby, while the bowel is allowed a large measure of freedom and of variation in calibre, each part is prevented from escaping beyond a certain fixed distance from the origin of the mesenteric vessels. We must expect that the student is familiar also with the anatomy of the great omentum and its relationship to the stomach and the transverse colon respectively. The great addition to the superficies of the lining membrane of the peritoneal cavity afforded by the great omentum has for long attracted notice and numerous hypotheses have been suggested to explain its action. It is eminently vascular, its vessels being almost in contact with the contents of the peritoneum, so that if any portion of the omentum finds itself in an area of irritation, there is rapidly excited in it a secondary inflammatory process, and the ease with which it forms adhesions that are temporarily protective is very remarkable. With so large a free surface as that afforded by the peritoneum, it seems necessary to have some such protective organ to produce a rapid exudation of protective bodies; whether absorption occurs through it with the same freedom deserves further study. The general indications are that foreign particles present in the peritoneal cavity make their way with greatest freedom into the lymph spaces of the diaphragm.

The peritoneum is constituted by a layer of endothelial cells, will h, while thin, are by no means inert, and rapidly react to any inflammation,

racter-

to the

tumors te that heless, stines,

lumen ption. more

ndary They round rs.

enum
ion in
it the
quent
ectum
that
noma

ating ncies, nying etum mous

the with disution welloma.

the
hich
the
by

l by ages ases um;

ines

undergoing swelling and often proliferation. These form a continuous membrane bounding the cavity save at two points, viz., the openings of the Fallopian tubes, through which there is a potential, though rarely actual, communication with the exterior. So, also, it must be remembered that over the ovaries the peritoneum becomes modified into a more cubical layer of cells, the germinal epithelium, from which by downgrowths originate the ovarian follicles. Beneath this endothelial layer is a subserous layer of loose connective tissue which in certain regions shows a pronounced tendency to undergo metaplasia into fat cells, as in the appendices epiploicæ, the mesenteries, and the omentum.

Abnormalities.—Of abnormalities, perhaps the one most frequently noticed is a variation in the length of the great omentum, which may vary from a small irregular fringe an inch in length to a massive apron often loaded with fat, a foot or more long. Similar variations are at times to be noted in the mesenteries, most marked in the case of organs which normally are incompletely surrounded by peritoneum, but may on occasion be found to possess mesenteries, e. g., the cecum, and ascending colon, and even the kidney ("floating kidney"). We have already referred to abnormal length of the mesosigmoid as favoring the development of the condition of megacolon (Hirschsprung's disease).

Circulatory Disturbances.—The great vascularity of the peritoneum renders it most sensitive to circulatory disturbances. Where there is anemia its pallor is marked; where there is hyperemia, active or

passive, the injection is extreme.

Passive congestion is accompanied by pronounced transudation and production of ascites; even after death, transudation easily occurs, so that where immediately before death there has been a transfusion of saline solution, or after death an injection of embalming fluids, the peritoneal cavity may be found to contain a considerable amount of fluid which must not be mistaken for that of ascites. Apart from circulatory disturbances, it deserves note that the presence of ovarian tumors is frequently accompanied by a noticeable grade of ascites. The exact cause of this is somewhat obscure. On p. 366 we have already discussed ascites, and the related phenomena. How sensitive are the peritoneal vessels is well shown when the peritoneum is seen at operation even but a few minutes after a perforation of the bowel; there may be little obvious escape of bowel contents, yet the intestinal coils may be of the most angry, searlet color. It will be understood from this that capillary subserous hemorrhages are not uncommon, especially where there has been some toxemia with degeneration of the capillary endothelium. A favorite seat for these hemorrhages seems to be the lower anterior half of the parietal peritoneum. They are seen particularly in severely toxic conditions, as well as in the hemorrhagic diseases. Of gross hemorrhages into the peritoneal cavity the commonest and most extensive is that seen in ruptured tubal gestation, and in traumatic rupture of the liver, spleen, mesentery, and other organs.

The effects of **thrombosis** and **embolism** upon the viscera are so grave that the accompanying changes in the peritoneum are relatively of minor importance, although they are of a like nature, viz., stasis, hemorrhage, and necrosis.

Inflammation. - Peritonitis. - Without attempting to make any full classification of the various acute inflammations of the peritoneum from a surgical standpoint, it may be laid down in the first place that three types are to be distinguished at autopsy: (1) local circumscribed. (2) locally diffuse, and (3) universal. We may find, that is, that by the rapid production of adhesions and the formation of fibrin an inflammation is sharply circumscribed to the region of primary disturbance. We may, for example, find an appendix bathed in pus which thus forms a peri-appendical abscess, and through omental adhesions and the fibrinous adhesions between surrounding coils of intestine, the rest of the peritoneal cavity wholly closed off from, and showing no signs of, the inflammatory process. Very often, however, we encounter an acute peritonitis of wider extent which fails to implicate some, it may be a considerable, part of the cavity, and this without the sharp line of demarcation by adhesions just noted. There may be, it is true, slight formation of fibrin between the coils at the periphery of the area, but so slight as to make it evident that some other factor, such as gravity, is likewise effective. This we term a locally diffuse peritonitis. For example, very frequently a pelvic peritonitis fails to extend into the middle area of the peritoneum, or a peritonitis involving the small intestines in general does not affect the area of the stomach and spleen. In the production of such a restricted inflammation, it is true that there are certain physical factors; thus, an inflammation may be largely restricted to the lesser peritoneal sac, or may be bounded by the mesentery or by the great omentum. The universal form is in general of a suppurative type, the pus being as abundant immediately beneath the diaphragm and around the spleen as in the pelvic cavity.

As regards the forms of peritonitis, it may be laid down that what is true of one serous sac is true of another. We meet, that is, serous, serofibrinous, hemorrhagic, and purulent forms, though the purulent forms are relatively more frequent than in the other serous cavities. It is not safe to imagine that these stand in their order of gravity, for the most quickly fatal case we have seen, one fatal within twelve hours after apparently perfect health, gave a serous fluid containing a pure culture of streptococci, while Bacillus coli infections may yield abundant foul pus and yet undergo complete recovery. What is particularly noticeable in this relationship is that typhoidal peritonitis is characterized by its diffuse character, absence of adhesions, and lack of pus cells; the danger of such a diminished reaction as is seen in cases of this nature lies in the rapid diffusion of the irritant, and generalization of the process. Too few leukocytes exuded with defective fibrin formation on the one hand, and too abundant exudation of leukocytes on the other, with rapid digestion of fibrin as it is formed, equally favor a diffuse

e openings
l, though
must be
modified
om which
his endowhich in
metaplasia
s, and the

requently

hich may

ontinuous

ive apronous are at of organs but may bum, and We have favoring disease). The critoneum bere there active or

tion and

occurs, so fusion of the perit of fluid rculatory umors is he exact discussed eritoneal ion even may be oils may rom this specially: capillary o be the

een par-

agic dis-

nmonest

, and in

organs.

as distinct from a localized peritonitis. A form of purulent peritonitic that deserves mention is not infrequently seen following upon laparot omy, namely, that characterized by the presence of one or more isolated pockets of pus between the viscera. This occurs chiefly where drainage has been employed, the mere act of laparotomy having removed the greater part of the pus and thereby having improved the ability of the peritoneum to form adhesions; the very excellence of these adhesions prevents certain remote infected areas or pockets from obtaining free drainage, and in such pockets multiplication of bacteria with progressive pus formation may go on.



Exogenous perfection of the lower end of the ascending colon. The illustration, which is natural size, shows well the curious raised and perforated condition of the mucous membrane, seen from within the bowel, and at a, the opening through the muscle wall. (Adami.)

It is interesting to note how, in generalized peritonitis as in generalized pleurisy, the suppurative process rarely extends into the walls of the viscera and induces perforation; it is only where we have these localized areas of suppurative peritomtis that the presence of the pus upon a soft viscus arresting the nutrition of the walls of that viscus favors the production of what may be termed **exogenous ulceration** and perforation.

Etiology of Peritonitis.—As to the causes of peritonitis, these may be (1) traumatic, from without; (2) enterogenous; (3) from other viscera by extension or by escape of contents, e. g., bile and urine; (4) hematogenous, and (5) cryptogenous.

Of these the commonest are those originating from some portion

peritonitis
n laparotre isolated
e drainage
noved the
lity of the
adhesions
ining free
rogressive

of the bowel, either through rupture or perforation or secondary to inflammation of the same without actual rupture. It is a matter of every-day observation that a peri-appendicitis presents itself around an inflamed appendix, as if the peritoneum were preparing itself against the possible perforation. As to the bacterial causes, the forms most frequently found are the B. coli, streptococcus, staphylococcus, B. typhosus, pneumococcus, and gonococcus, the last particularly in pelvic peritonitis of the female. Where the contents of the bowel escape into the cavity, it is evident that one or more of a vast number of potentially pathogenic intestinal bacteria may be concerned. While the B. coli is most commonly encountered, many observers today regard this not as the primary but as a secondary pathogenic agent.

Chronic Peritonitis.—Where acute peritonitis undergoes resolution there is a great liability for adhesions to be left which undergo organiza-

tion and often contracture, and these may be the cause of grave after-effects, viz., stricture, kinking, or internal hernia by a loop of bowel slipping under a fibrous band. This organization is a gradual process, and what is more, the irritation set up by displacement and consequent congestion of the viscera may itself constitute a cause of continuance of the process that cannot be designated otherwise than as a chronic peritonitis. Other forms of chronic peritonitis may be associated with long-continued passive congestion leading to a diffuse thickening of the peritoneum. A remarkable and extreme form of this chronic peritonitis is seen in the condition of hyaloserositis, or as it is termed, where it is local affecting particularly the surface of the liver, icing liver. In this condition a dense, porcelain-like deposit of hyaline tissue covers the surface of the liver and spleen and is accompanied by a thickening and contraction of the great omentum, leading to the formation of a thick hyaline mass lying along the transverse colon. More rarely the same condition is seen in the ileocecal region. Its exact causation is still undetermined, but in a certain proportion of

F1a 249



Hyaloserositis of spleen; section through spleen showing at a an area of hyaloserositis of capsule; b, splenic tissue. (McGill Path. Mus.)

cases it is associated with a very chronic form of tuberculosis, and occasional caseous areas may be detected in the deposit. Coincidently, the pleuræ and pericardium are apt to present a similar condition. Accompanying this lesion, there is ascites.

Tuberculosis.—This is relatively common, and while at times it is dry, it is generally accompanied by a low form of serous peritonitis. Broadly two forms may be recognized: one in which the infection of

ion, which is embrane, seen

eneralized Ils of the clocalized is upon a avors the rforation. we may be er viscera (4) hema-

e portion

the peritoneum is secondary to extension from one of the abdominal viscera, most often the intestine, although sometimes from the tube, ovary, or spleen; and the other a diffuse form in which no viscus appears to be primarily involved. What is the exact cause of this second form is debatable; certain cases appear clearly to be part and parcel of a hematogenous generalized tuberculosis. Others may be ascribed to the ulceration of a caseous lymph node into the cavity with dissemination of the bacilli over the surface of the peritoneum; there is a group of cases, however, resembling a parallel series confined to the pleura, in which the peritoneum appears to be a site of predilection and thus the condition seems to be primary, in the usual sense in which that term is employed.

The first of these forms presents itself as one or more localized patches of tubercles immediately above a tuberculous area in the viscus of origin. Such an area may 1 en to extend continuously along the neighboring lymphatics, leading further to infection and adhesions of the serous surface of neighboring coils of the bowel. The condition generally is of rather chronic development associated with the formation of caseous conglomerate tubercles. In the early stage there is little exudation (tuberculosis sicca), but as the condition advances a sero-

fibrinous peritonitis is liable to be set up.

The serous form is generalized; if seen in the early stage multiple miliary tubercles are scattered over any or all parts of the peritoneal surface, accompanied by a relatively acute serofibrinous, sometimes almost purulent peritonitis. In later stages, the tubercles may be seen as masses almost as large as a pea with universal adhesions between the bowel loops, and between omentum, intestines, and parietes. There is a striking liability for miliary peritoneal tuberculosis to complicate the late stages of the ascites due to portal cirrhosis of the liver. Syphilis. In strong contradistinction to tuberculosis, syphilis rarely

induces peritoneal disturbances.

Actinomycosis. - Actinomycosis is liable to involve the peritoneum, secondary to its presence in the appendix or other region of the bowel. It may lead to fistulæ through the abdominal wall.

Abnormal Contents of the Peritoneum.—Apart from inflammatory exudates and blood, sundry foreign bodies may occasionally be encountered in the cavity. A subserous fibroid of the aterus may become snared off and be free in the cavity, as may also an appendix epiploica. Through rupture of the gall-bladder or common bile duct, not only bile but gallstones may gain entrance; as may also the urine from a ruptured bladder; in ectopic gestation, the fœtus may escape into the cavity, subsequently undergoing calcification (lithopedion); in attempted abortion, needles or other instruments may perforate the uterine wall and escape into the cavity; while during laparotomy, sponges and instruments have been inadvertently, and happily rarely, allowed to remain in the cavity. In perforation of the intestines, besides the normal bowel contents, intestinal worms may occasionally be found to have reached the peritoneal sac.

Regressive Changes.—Regressive changes in the peritoneum are inconsiderable. Occasionally we encounter necrosis with hemorrhage of an individual appendix epiploica through torsion of its peduncle. Necrosis of the peritoneum and subperitoneal fat occurs through the action of escaped pancreatic secretion. Small areas of pigmentation are occasionally observed, particularly in the pelvic region, possibly secondary to ecchymoses, although they appear to bear some relation-

ship to chrom 'constipation; blood pigment ma, be observed long after a hemorrhage has been absorbed.

Progressive Changes. - What some authorities term fibromas, seen on the surface of the spleen in elderly individuals in the form of one or more flattened, tallow-like projections, are not blastomatous but are allied to hyaloserositis. Of the peritoneum proper, namely, the endothelial membrane, there is but one new growth, the endothelioma, which at times closely resembles carcinoma in the finger-like processes that invade the underlying tissues. From the subperitoneal tissues, a series of connective-tissue tumors may develop, lipoma, lipoFig. 250

Fat necrosis of appendices epiploice, from a case of panereatic necrosis ("hemorrhagic panereatitis"): a, white areas of fat necrosis; b, colon. (McGill Path. Mus.)

chondroma, lipoma myxomatodes, fibroma, angioma, and sarcoma. These are particularly liable to grow in the root of the mesentery and in the retroperitoneal fat; especially in the fat overlying the kidneys are we liable to meet lipomatoid overgrowths and the production of massive tumors which may show myxomatous, chondre natous, osteomatous, and sarcomatous areas. Teratomas occasionally nevelop subperitoneally.

Secondary tumors are apt to involve the peritoneum by extension; thus the great omentum may be the seat of extensive carcinomatous growths in cases of carcinoma of the stomach, pan reas, gall-bladder, or ducts, and where there is colloid cancer of the rectum this spreads extensively along the peritoneum. Other secondary growths, notably cystadenomas of the ovary, grow by implantation, the rupture of one of the ovarian cysts liberating cells which may seed themselves upon the peritoneal surface, giving origin to very numerous small tumors. We have seen a similar diffuse implantation of lymphosarcoma over a large area of the peritoneum (Fig. 71, p. 218), which is iso a favorite site for secondary melanotic growths.

Various orders of cysts may present themselves in connection with the peritoneum. As already noted, persistence of the median portion of the omphalomeseraic duct gives origin to a vitello-intestinal cyst.

e liver.
rarely
oneum,

bowel.

bdominal he tube,

appears

ond form reel of a

d to the

ation of of cases,

hich the

ondition

ployed,

patches

iscus of ong the

lhesions

mdition

rmation

is little

a sero-

nultiple

perito-

some-

es may

hesions

arietes.

o com-

natory
be enecome
ploica.
only
rom a
to the
enpted

wall struemain ormal

have

Lymph cysts, sometimes multiple, due to dilated, obstructed lymph vessels may be found, particularly in the mesenteries. Parasitic cysts may be encountered, due to rupture or escape of the contents in removal of a hydatid of the liver.

HERNIA

A hernia is the protrusion of any (abdominal) viscus or portion of the same through natural or accidental aperture in the parietes. In a secondary sense the term is also employed to include conditions in which a portion of the abdominal viscera passes, not through the parietes but through openings in the omentum, or the foramen of Winslow, or into peritoneal pockets. We thus make a distinction between the former, the external, and the latter, the internal hernias. Such protrusion may occur in regions of congenital weakness of the abdominal wall, as at the inguinal or femoral canals, the obturator foramen, the umbilicus, or, again, in regions of acquired weakness, as in the neighborhood of laparotomy scars, and in the middle line below the umbilicus, when through pregnancy or other distending cause, the space between the recti muscles is enlarged. Weakness of the abdominal wall, with consequent giving-way owing to internal pressure, is the prime factor in the production of these external hernias. With this giving-way a sac is formed, lined by the parietal peritoneum, and into that sac there may pass various viscera according to the situation of the sac, viz., the coils of the small intestine, masses of omentum, cecum and appendix or other portions of the large intestine and more rarely ovary, spleen, or portion of the stomach or urinary bladder, liver etc. As the sac enlarges it is apt to expand and in this way to present a relatively narrow neck with a more voluminous extra-abdominal cavity. This patency of the sac may continue, and reduction of the contents of the sac may occur, or be induced (reducible hernia). But through expansion of the contents of the bowel in the sac, congestion may be set up with resultant adhesions, or the very bulk of the tissue passing in may oppose return. It is in these conditions that there is imminent danger; with such incarceration the relative constriction of the neck obstructs the free return of venous blood. The hernial mass becomes larger through this congestion, the constriction, therefore, more pronounced, and a progressive enlargement is the result which, ending in stasis, leads to necrosis and gangrene of the hernial contents, and these, whenever any portion of the bowel containing feces is concerned, eventually become putrefactive and gangrenous.

1. External Hernias.—The following forms are to be recognized: Inguinal Hernia.—In man this is the commonest form, but it is also seen in woman. It is due to undue patency or weakness of the tissues in the region of the inguinal canal. Thus viscera may pass down the inguinal canal itself (oblique inguinal hernia) or the external abdominal ring being unduly large and the parietes over it being weak, there is

ed lymph si**tic cysts** removal

ortion of etes. In itions in parietes y, or into former, ion may ll, as at abilicus, hood of s, when between ll, with a factor

factor
way a
c there
iz., the
pendix
spleen,
he sac
atively
This
nts of

rough may tissue ere is iction ernial efore, thich, cents,

ized:
also
sues
the
inal

con-

developed what is known as direct inguinal hernia, originating internally to the inner side of the internal orifice of the canal but presenting itself through the external ring. Either of these forms may now extend down the scrotum to form a scrotal hernia. If the hernia does not extend through the external ring we have what is known as incomplete inguinal hernia.

2. Femoral Hernia.—This is more common in woman, the channel being formed along the course of the femoral vessels and so below l'oupart's ligament and along the upper part of Hunter's canal.

3. Umbilical Hernia.—Abdominal contents may protrude through the umbilical ring. This may be congenital but it is most often seen in the multiparous female; the sac may attain great size. Somewhat similar to this, but occurring below the navel in the middle line is the abdominal hernia. This often occurs in women who have borne children, or as the result of a laparotomy in the median line. Epigastric abdominal hernia in the middle line above the navel is rare.

4. Other Forms.—Other forms are also rare, viz., obturator hernia, through the obturator foramen; sciatic, through the sacrosciatic notch; perineal, through the levator ani; vaginal, through the giving way of the wall of Douglas' pouch. Diaphragmatic hernia may be due either to a congenital deficiency in the formation of the diaphragm, nearly always on the left side, as a result of which, stomach, spleen, kidney, and loops of intestine may be found occupying the thorax; or it may be acquired through traumatic rupture.

Internal Hernias.—Internal hernias show no protrusion through the abdominal parietes; they are relatively infrequent. Through rupture or imperfect formation of the mesentery occasionally the abdominal contents become retroperitoneal and a large, if not the greater, portion of the intestine, may pass behind some part of the peritoneum; or, again, loops of the intestine may be pressed through the foramen of Winslow, to the filling of the lesser omental sac. The fossa duodenalis may further give way; similarly the subcecal and intersigmoid fossæ may form sacs containing hernial masses of the intestine.

THE LIVER

Simple as is the structure of the liver, there is no organ in the body to which more various metabolic activities have been justly attributed. Its great importance is indicated by its size (1400 to 1600 grams). It is the main organ for the removal of products of broken-down erythrocytes: the separation of the iron of the hemoglobin from the discharged iron-free bile pigment: the discharge of the bile-salts and of cholesterin: the regulation of the sugar supply of the blood and tissues in general, through its glycogenic activities: the regulation similarly, of the circulating fats, and storage of the same and other lipoids: the formation of urea. Situated at the head of the portal system, which brings

to it the various substances absorbed from the walls of the intestine, the liver acts as a protective organ, arresting and excreting or destroying toxic bodies of various orders, and in this way accumulating certain poisons such as arsenic and phosphorus. As with the organs in general, although capable of withstanding the insults of particular orders in particular degrees, and although intended for such a purpose, nevertheless these insults may at times be extreme and the liver may thereby suffer. It is, therefore, the seat of many inflammatory and degenerative processes, which, in time, interfere with its prime metabolic purposes; hence the far-reaching importance of pathological change in its structure, and the profound general disturbances to which disease of this viscus may give rise. Space forbids that we should here enter into the minute anatomy, which should be known to every student of histology. At most, we may recall that it is abundantly vascular, so vascular as to be able to contain the whole blood supply of the body; that it has a double blood supply, systemic and arterial through the hepatic artery, portal and venous through the portal vein; that the entering blood reaches the individual lobules from their periphery to be collected into a central, intralobular branch of the hepatic vein, which carries it to the inferior vena cava. Contrariwise, the bile capillaries pass outward to the periphery of the lobule, there joining to form the bile ducts, and thus each individual liver cell is in immediate apposition, on at least one aspect, to a blood capillary or sinusoid and, on another, to a bile capillary. There is, indeed, evidence that within the individual liver cell there are fine channels intimately connected with both systems.

Abnormalities.—The abnormalities of the liver, as compared with other organs of the body, are distinctly few. It may show considerable variation in shape; one lobe, especially the left, may be abnormally small, or there may be accessory lobes, in general small, or masses, snared off in the course of developme: ', may lie in the neighborhood of the main organ, e. g., in the suspensory ligament or the great omentum. Liebermeister's grooves, depressions running in the anteroposterior direction, while most often acquired, may be congenital; in all cases they appear to be due to an irregular development or an hypertrophy of the diaphragmatic musculature, the grooves corresponding to regions of pressure of the muscle bands upon the upper surface of the liver. There may further be variations in the position of the portal vein and a few cases are on record in which there has been inclusion of adrenal tissue.

Circulatory Disturbances.—The liver participates in general anemia, and then is found pale, small and flabby, with sharp edges. Local pressure may produce local anemia. Active hyperemia, or more accurately active portal congestion, may be physiological, as after a hearty meal, and possibly is the cause of the large liver of the tropical dweller, whose diet is in excess of the requirements of the climate. In infective and toxic states the cloudy swelling to be presently noted is an accompaniment of active congestion. In temperate zones, passive congestion

is much more commonly encountered as a result of chronic obstructive heart or liver disease. The organ is enlarged, tense, its edges more than usually obtuse, its color from a chocolate brown to a dark purple;

Fra. 251

stine, the

stroying

certain

general, 's in par-

ertheless

uffer. It rocesses, ence the and the lay give natomy, lost, we able to blood tal and hes the central, inferior to the lad thus

ist one

pillary.

ere are

d with

nsider-

abnornasses, ghbore great nterotal; in or an correupper sition s been

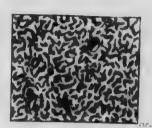
nemia, pressrately meal.

vhose

e and

pani-

stion



Nutmeg liver, showing a small area, natural size, of the cut surface (McGill Path, Mus)



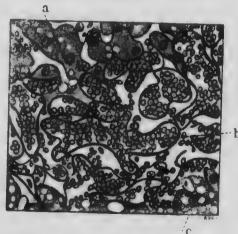
Early stage of passive congestion of liver from near centre of lobule, showing a, liver cells, somewhat shrunken; b, wall of capillary, separated from liver cells by cedematous fluid; c, pignent from destroyed red blood corpuscles. The corpuscles have been left out of the drawing for the sake of clearness,

Fig. 253



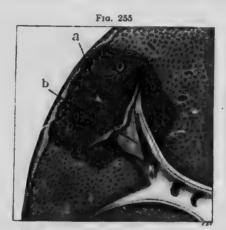
Later stage of the same: a, red blood corpuscles which have escaped into the space previously occupied by the liver cells; b, greatly shrunken and degenerated liver cells. The sinusoids are even more dilated than in the earlier stage. (After Mallory.)

Fig. 254



Still later stage of the same condition. Here the cells of the mid-sone of the lobule have completely disappeared, their place being taken by extravasated blood corpuscies (b); a, remaining cells of the peripheral sone of the lobule; c, cells of inner sone showing abundant fatty vacuoles. (After Mallory.)

often, also, with enlargement of the right side of the heart and of the liver, there is to be noted a distinct hollowing of the upper aspect of the left lobe—a cardiac gulf or groove. Where the condition has been long continued, the surface is apt to be obscurely granular, due to the fibrosis which inevitably follows long-continued moderate congestion. On section of a moderately early case the appearance is characteristic and gives the name "nutmeg liver" to this condition; the centres of the lobules are dark red from congestion, a congestion so extreme that the cells of the central zone of the lobule undergo atrophy; owing the obstruction to the circulation, the fat brought by the portal blook is not actively consumed and is stored up in the remaining peripherapart of the lobule, the light color of which contrasts strongly with the red or brown centre; the cut surface of the liver tissue resembles ver



Red infarct of liver. Section of the organ (less than the natural size), so cut as to expose two branches of the portal vein into which extends a thrombus (b); a, area of red infarc'. (McGill Path. Mus.)

closely the grated surface of th nutmeg of domesticity. As th congestion continues, both th lack of nourishment, owing t the slowed circulation, and th increased venous pressure lea to an extending atrophy of th cells of the centres of the lobule and with this there is some in crease of the connective tissu around the central vein; with th continued malnutrition of th peripheral cells less fat is store up, the whole organ thus assum ing a darker color with som shrinkage and increased firmnes cyanotic induration. Congestion secondary to thrombosis of th hepatic vein or its obliteration is rare.

Infarcts of the liver are of two kinds, the anemic or white, and the red. These have a different origin; the white infarct is brought about by embolic or other closure of a branch of the hepatic artery. Despite the relatively small size of the hepatic artery as compared with the portal vein, it experimental closure leads to a necrosis of the organ or stated otherwise, arterial blood is necessary for the perfect nutrition of the liver. Thus, despite continued portal circulation, if a branch of the hepatic artery be obliterated, especially where there is already an impaired general circulation, the local area of supply undergoes necrosis, becomes pale, and shows typical white infarct formation. Red infarct is the result of closure by embolism or thrombosis of a branch of the portal vein. The appearance obtained is that of a sharply defined, more or less wedge-shaped area of darker red color standing out in sharp contrast to the paler brown liver tissue. If necrosis be taken

and of the as the essential property of an infarct, this is no true infarct. Sections r aspect of studied under the microscope show the cells still intact with welln has been staining nuclei, but each column of liver cells is surrounded by intensely due to the dilated and congested sinusoids or capillaries. The condition, however, congestion. may be compared with the red infarct of the lung, where similarly there racteristic, is a double circulation, and where closure of a branch of the pulmonary centres of artery is followed by an intense congestion without necrosis of the treme that involved tissue. The liver is a favorite site for minute cell emboli, ; owing to either those derived from the placenta, or in rarer cases from the bone ortal blood marrow, or from peritoneal or other fat cells after operation, or from peripheral conglutinated erythrocytes. They cause focal necroses. v with the mbles very ace of the As the both the

owing to

and the

sure lead

ny of the

he lobules

some in-

ive tissue

; with the

of the

is stored

us assum-

ith some

d firmness

Congestion

is of the

bliteration

e, and the

ght about

Despite

with the

organ or,

nutrition

branch of

lready an

necrosis,

ed infarct

ch of the

defined,

ng out in

be taken

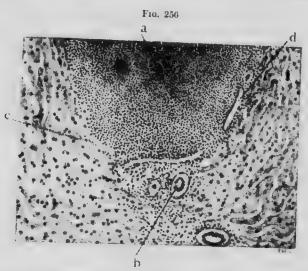
Thrombosis of the main trunk of the portal vein, again resembling that of the main pulmonary artery, is unaccompanied by this infarct formation or by any marked change in the liver tissue, save when the thrombosis is of infective nature. Thrombosis of this vein is not uncommon, and may be brought about in more than one way. The commonest cause is by extension of thrombosis or thrombophlebitis in one of the mesenteric or other branches of the portal vein, from an area of inflammation or an operative lesion; or inflammation within the liver, by affecting the wall of one of the larger branches may cause a localized thrombosis within it, which may extend and involve still larger branches.

Hemorrhage is most commonly traumatic, but small hemorrhages may occur around actively growing tumors, in the neighborhood of abscesses, in cases of the so-called hemorrhagic diseases, in eclampsia, and in "acute yellow atrophy."

A condition not often recognized is that of codema of the liver. Our attention was first drawn to this in the routine insertion of pipettes to obtain liver juice for bacteriological purposes, when not infrequently we obtained a fluid that was thin and evidently a mixture of serum with blood. Microscopic section of livers affording such fluid presents a characteristic picture. The columns of liver cells appear shrunken and widely separated, and on examining the space between the columns the capillary channels are seen separated from the liver cells by clear spaces, evidently containing serous fluid (see Fig. 251). In some cases, the accompanying atrophy of the liver cells appears to be primary, in which case the cedema is evidently ex vacuo.

Inflammation.—Acute Hepatitis.—It is perhaps difficult to make anything like a sharp line of demarcation between the active physiological hyperemia to which we have already referred and what is known as acute hepatitis. In both conditions the organ is enlarged and hyperemic, but where toxic agents such as the toxins of acute infections and certain mineral poisons, etc., or again the products of abnormal digestion are brought to the organ, it is common to find cellular changes in addition to the hyperemia, and it is this cloudy, passing on to fatty, degeneration that is regar. I do not still a still still

a certain amount of small-celled infiltration along the interlobular portal sheaths. There is the same doubt here, as in acute nephritis, as to whether these cellular changes should be regarded as inflammatory or as pure degenerations. Certain it is, that extreme toxic action leads to cell degeneration, acute atrophy, and necrosis. In what is known as acute red atrophy we have a combination of intense congestion with "jumbling" and shrinkage of the cells, and even more pronounced conditions are seen in acute yellow atrophy in which the necrotic changes accompanying the acute atrophy are still more marked. We mention these here because, by some observers at least, acute red atrophy is held to precede one form of cirrhosis or chronic hepatitis.



Section through a small abscess of liver from a case of pylephlebitis: a, abscess; b, dilated bile duct with epithelium loosened from its basement membrane; c, surrounding liver cells compressed by the abscess; d, compressed veins.

In addition to this so-called simple diffuse hepatitis we not infrequently encounter a more sporadic suppurative hepatitis; this may be in two forms, presenting itself either in the form of multiple small abscesses or of a few or a solitary large abscess. The multiple abscesses may have either (a) a hematogenous or (b) a biliary origin. The former is perhaps the commoner. Where there is suppurative inflammation of the appendix or intestinal tract, a local purulent thrombophlebitis may be followed by loosening of the infective material in some branch of the mesenteric veins with formation of multiple infective emboli in the small hepatic branches of the portal vein. Each embolus of this nature may then become the centre of a small abscess, and these may be so abundant as to be strung together along the course of a group of vessel branches, like a bunch of small grapes (pylephlebitic abscesses). Surrounding these there is intense congestion of the hepatic parenchyma.

But, similarly, an acute ascending infection along the intrahepatic bile ducts, secondary often to suppurative cholecystitis, may lead to a very similar appearance, though here the angry and somewhat dilated appearance of the larger bile ducts and the presence of pus within them gives a clue to the origin of the abscesses.

The large tropical abscess, or abscesses of the liver have a wholly different origin. These are found most often in the dome of the liver and may be several inches in diameter. They contain a thick, broken-down fluid material the color of chocolat au lait, composed of necrotic liver tissue with moderately abundant leukocytes; they have omewhat ragged boundaries formed of necrosing liver tissue, and with their extension may rupture through the diaphragm into the lung tissue or bronchi, or, again, into the peritoneal cavity. These are amoebic abscesses, and are secondary to amoebic colitis (dysentery). Careful examination of the boundary tissue of these abscesses reveals abundant entamoebe, which, according to our experience may be found still active and motile on a warm stage twelve hours and more after the death of the subject. How these entamoebee gain entrance to the liver is perhaps debatable; the central position of the abscess suggests that they have gained entrance by the portal blood.

Chronic Inflammation.—Cirrhoses and Specific Inflammations.—By the term cirrhosis we imply a diffuse extensive laying-down of fibrous tissue within the liver. Saying this, it will be seen that anatomically such deposit of fibrous tissue may have various origins. It may originate around the branches of the portal vein or may be of the nature of a chronic periarteritis around the branches of the hepatic artery; it may show itself particularly in connection with the intralobular branches of the hepatic vein or be secondary to an inflammation and irritation of the bile ducts. It may be an extension inward of a chronic inflammation affecting Glisson's capsule, or lastly, as in syphilis and tuberculosis, it may be the outcome of focal specific tubercular changes so abundant as to be generalized. Anatomically, therefore, we may expect to find numerous types of cirrhosis; as a matter of fact the arterial form is almost unknown, that in connection with the hepatic veins, while seen in chronic congestion, is but of slight degree, and that following a chronic inflammation of the capsule is also so rare as to be negligible. The important forms to recognize are the portal, the biliary, and the diffuse syphilitic.

Laennec's Cirrhosis or Portal Cirrhosis (inaccurately termed atrophic cirrhosis).—This is the commonest type of cirrhotic change. It is found frequently in those addicted to alcohol, hence the term gindrinker's liver, but may occur among native Hindoos and children who have never known spirituous liquor. Clinically it is characterized by dyspepsia and anorexia, ascites more frequently than jaundice, progressive emaciation and weakness, a slight grade of anemia, a fair enlargement of the spleen, and death either from intercurrent tuberculosis or inflammation of the lungs, or sometimes resophageal hemorrhage.

ated bile mpressed

infre-

erlobular

ephritis.

nmatory

e action

what is

nse con-

en more

nich the

marked.

cute red

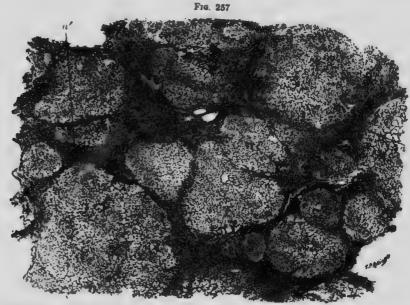
tis.

ay be small cesses ormer nation ebitis ranch mboli f this ay be up of

sses).

yma.

Studying the course of the disease, if recognized early, the liver is found greatly enlarged, but in the course of months it is apt to undergo progressive shrinkage until in a certain proportion of cases it is very much



Portal cirrhosis of the liver: a, d', tracts of fibrous tissue enclosing masses of fatty liver-cells. The distinction between the different labules and the radiating arrangements of the cells is entirely lost. (Green.)

smaller than normal. According to our experience, in general the liver in this condition is larger and heavier than normal. The main features of the organ at autopsy are the nodular surface (hobnail liver) the



Hobnailed liver with small hobnails, natural size. (McGill Path. Mus.)

extreme firmness on section, due to the increased fibrosis, and usually the distinctly yellow color of the cut organ. It was this last feature that primarily gave the name (κιδρός, yellow) to the condition, although by association we now apply this term to any condition of diffuse fibrosis. On inspection of the cut surface the liver parenchyma is seen to be separated off into small islands or irregular lobules by bands of fibrous tissue. Under the microscope in typical cases what is characteristic is that the broad

but irregular bands of dense fibrous tissue are sharply defined from these islands of parenchyma, nor are these islands seen to be wellformed lobules. On the contrary, individual islands appear to be er is found dergo provery much

a is entirely

the liver features ver) the to the he disan. It ly gave ndition. apply diffuse ut suri to be r irregtissue. cases broad d from

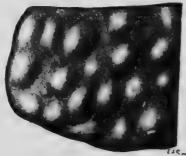
e well-

to be

formed of clusters of several imperfect lobules (imperfect because their intralobular veins are not, in general, central). It is this formation that gives the additional name of multilobular cirrhosis to this particular type. Further, the bands present relatively few included bile ducts. Especially in the young, a variant of this type is seen in which many of the nodules are relatively large (Figs. 259, 260), much larger than hobnails; a study of them shows that here we deal with a regenerative process. From this simple regeneration we may pass on, particularly in adults, to cirrhosis with multiple adenomatous nodules and cirrhosis with accompanying diffuse carcinomatosis.

The cause of this hobnail appearance is obvious; it is the old story of eventual contraction of newly formed connective tissue with resultant projection of the intermediate masses.

Fig. 259



Hobnailed liver with large hobnails due to regeneration of the parenchyma, natural size. (McGill Path. Mus.)

F10, 260

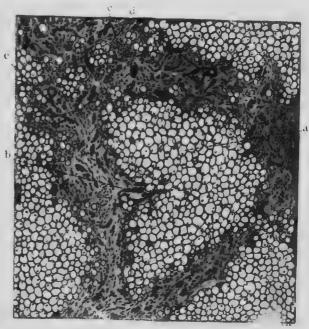


Portion of the same seen on section.

As to the cause of "portal" cirrhosis, there has been great debate. The commonest type of alcoholic liver is that of advanced fatty infiltration. In such livers we notice often that the portal sheaths show a small-celled infiltration or slight fibrosis. It is presumed that some irritant agent, brought by the portal blood, sets up a low form of irritation around the branches generally, as also that the same irritant leads to degeneration and atrophy of those liver cells which are exposed to the main brunt of the toxic agent, that thus there is a coincident periportal growth of connective tissue and destruction of the peripheral cells of the lobules, the resultant irregular breadth of the bands of fibrous tissue being dependent upon the irregular distribution of the portal branches around the lobules. As to the nature of the irritant, it has been found that alcohol alone administered to the lower animals will not set up cirrhosis, and that acute atrophy, pure and simple, of liver cells, such as is produced by chloroform, is followed not by cirrhosis but by regeneration from the undestroyed liver cells. Hektoen, Weaver, and others have occasionally noted that inoculation of laboratory animals with certain strains of B. coli will set up the condition, but this with no

constancy. Recently, Opie has shown that if, after preliminary necros of the liver cells by means of chloroform, the organ be subjected a infection by a mild strain of B. coli or its toxins, then constantly cirrhotic process is developed. This, it is true, is not a pure portecirrhosis, because chloroform tends to produce a central rather than peripheral necrosis. Indeed from the similarity of the histological picture produced thus following upon a centrilobular necrosis, to the seen in the common human multilobular type, it may be questioned whether the loss of liver parenchyma in the latter is primarily or essential contents.





Section from a liver enlarged and showing combined extreme fatty infiltration and moderate cirrhosis, approximating histologically more to Hanot's than to Laennec's type: a, fattily infiltrated liver cells; b and d, bile ducts, increased in number; c, round-celled infiltration of fibrous tissue.

tialiy peripheral and whether we are right in speaking of this as portal cirrhosis. But these observations strongly support our contention that there are two factors at work in the production of cirrhosis, viz., in the first place an agent acting through the stomach and intestines and there setting up condit. us which favor subinfection (see p. 147), and in the second place, in consequence of the gastro-enteritis, the undue passage into the portal system of organisms of the B. coli type through the damaged mucosa.

We have here described the typical form of portal cirrhosis; it must, however, be borne in mind that the typical case is the exception and

ary necrosis abjected to onstantly a or re portal her than a histological sis, to that questioned y or essen-

not the rule. In a large number of cases this very growth of fibrous tissue within the liver leads to grave disturbance of the biliary system and so to the intercurrent developm of jaundice and coincident irritation of the bile ducts. Further, quite a large proportion of cases of cirrhosis exhibit a brownish pigmentation both of the liver cells and of the fibrous tissue, the pigment being iron-containing. There is evidently in these cases some hemolytic agent at work with excessive liberation of hemoglobin. The most advanced cases of this nature show a generalized pigmentation and constitute the condition of hemochromatosis. Often in these there is accompanying fibrosis and atrophy of the pancreas (bronzed diabetes). The ascites and enlarged spleen in portal cirrhosis appear clearly to be associated with the contraction of the fibrous tissue and accompanying compression of the intrahepatic portal vessels, leading to obstruction.

While making this statement, mention must be made of a remarkable condition known as **Banti's disease**, or, according to Banti himself, hemolytic splenomegaly. Here, enlargement of the spleen is the first disturbance noted, and after the course of some years this is followed by portal cirrhosis of the liver. Banti's observations on the result of ablation of the spleen indicate that the overgrown spleen functionates in excess, the anemia ceasing when the organ is removed; presumably, it is the products of excessive hemolysis that act as the poetal irritant.

Biliary Cirrhosis.—Of this we recognize two forms, a cobstructive and what is known as Hanot's or hypertrophic cirrhosis. We confess that we have never met with an example that we could surely say was of this second kind, and the condition seems to be very rare in North America, although numerous cases have been reported, particularly in French literature.

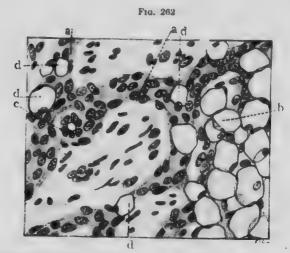
The obstructive form of biliary cirrhosis is to be encountered where from one cause or another there is continued obstruction in, or complete stenosis of, the common bile duct. It is to be seen, for example, in infants presenting congenital atresia or absence of the duct, or where there has been long-continued impaction of gallstones, or pressure upon the duct from without or where there is occlusion by tumors growing within the duct. In all these cases the liver is enlarged and shows extreme jaundice, as do the other tissues of the body. All the bile ducts throughout it are markedly dilated and around each is a broad zone of new connective tissue in which, in part through dilatation, in part through cellular proliferation, a chaplet or circle of terminal bile ducts stands out prominently. Here clearly is a cirrhosis around the bile passages, which may well be compared with the fibrosis around the branches of the pancreatic duct following obstruction of the same. In both cases the reabsorp on of the excreted fluid appears to be the primary irritant. In our laboratory Ford collected a considerable number of such cases.

nd moderate fattily infilon of fibrous

as portal tion that z., in the and there and in the passage ough the

it must,

Hanot's Cirrhosis.—In this we have a train of symptoms widel different from those of ordinary portal cirrhosis. There is not so marke gastro-intestinal disturbance; there is little tendency to ascites, but what is most marked is a succession of moderately acute attacks of jaundice, and after each attack the liver is found larger, the jaundice takes a longer and longer time to pass off, until it becomes continuous and the liver attains an enormous size. At autopsy, there is total absence of hobnailing, the organ is greatly jaundiced, cuts firmly, and under the microscope the fibrosis is much more evenly distributed Around individual lobules (monolobular cirrhosis) the bands are no so sharply defined and exhibit numerous bile ducts, or more accurately pseudo-bile ducts, little worm-like, convoluted masses of cells having



Section from a liver under high magnification demonstrating reversionary metamorphosis of the liver cells at the periphery of a lobule under the influence of the surrounding fibrosis, into small cells approximating to the bile-duct type, though unprovided with a lumen: a, reduced liver cells forming a pseudo-bile-duct; b, liver cells of lobule with extreme fatty infiltration; c, bile duct proper; d, cells of pseudo-bile-duct still containing fat, showing thus their liver-cell origin.

no regular lumen and appearing to represent, many of them, collections of shrunken liver cells snared off and compressed by the connective tissue as it advances into the lobule. This appearance is not entirely confined to Hanot's cirrhosis, and is well seen in Fig. 262. In other words, some cases of what appear to be ordinary cirrhosis show here and there similar appearances; as we have said, a large proportion of cases of cirrhosis are apt to become secondarily of mixed type.

The prominence of the icteric manifestations in Hanot's cirrhosis suggests strongly that here the irritation is of biliary origin. It has been suggested that it is due to an ascending chronic inflammation of the finer bile ducts, and that it is of infective origin, but this has still to be surely determined.

ms widely so marked scites, but attacks of e jaundice continuous re is total irmly, and istributed. Is are not accurately ells having

Syphilitic Cirrhosis.—In a syphilitic stillborn infant one of the most striking features is the abundance of spirochetes in the liver tissue; in infants showing syphilitic manifestations the organ is apt to be of relatively great size, and to present on microscopic examination abundant, small-celled infiltration in the form of widely diffused miliary gummas. This condition may lead later on to a diffuse formation of connective tissue of what may be termed the pericellular type; not only at the periphery of the lobules but within the lobules themselves, separating off individual cells and cell columns, there may be developed a delicate but extensive connective tissue. Occasionally in acquired syphilis we meet, in the so-called late secondary stage, a similar enlargement of the organ with a like diffuse pericellular cirrhosis; also (though this must not be considered a true cirrhosis) in the neighborhood of large gummas we observe a similar pericellular fibrosis. French authorities lay stress upon a

authorities lay stress upon a somewhat similar diffuse fibrosis seen in some cases of tuberculosis, and ascribe this to the action of tubercular toxins; although we have sought for it, we have not seen this form. One of us (A.) has seen and described an extreme condition of pericellular cirrhosis in cattle suffering from what is known as Picton cattle disease, now recognized as due to the effects of eating ragwort.

Inflammation of Glisson's Capsule.

This should strictly be considered as a localized form of peritonitis; it may be acute or chronic. We mention it here because one remarkable type of chronic pro-

a b

F10. 263

Section from a syphilitic liver showing diffuse pericellular cirrhosia: a, small detached clusters of liver cells; b, intralobular connective-tissue formation.

gressive inflammation has often, from the accompanying extreme ascites and great shrinkage of the liver, been mistaken for a portal cirrhosis. This is hyaloserositis, or "cake-icing liver," in which there is a dense, porcelain-white, fibrous deposit sometimes a centimeter or more in thickness, particularly over the upper and anterior surface of the liver, which induces by its contraction great compression and atrophy. Some text-books teach that this is accompanied by an invasive cirrhosis of the liver tissues, but the cases we have seen have not shown any such process.

The Specific Inflammations.—Miliary tuberculosis of the liver is not uncommon in cases of general disseminated hematogenous tuberculoric Often the tubercles are so fine that they are noticeable only microscopic examination, and then also it is characteristic that is general they are isolated and show little caseation and appear as

phosis of the is, into small ed liver cells c, bile duct igin.

ollections
onnective
t entirely
In other
here and
of cases

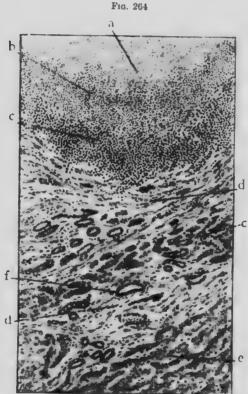
cirrhosis
It has
mmation
this has

though they develop with difficulty, suggesting that the tubercle bacilli do not readily multiply in this organ. Occasionally, however, as in the brain, we encounter solitary conglomerate masses of caseating tubercles, tuberculomas. A third form, the so-called bile-duct tuberculosis, is described in which tuberculous nodules up to the size of 1 or 2 cm. in diameter, are distributed along the course of the larger bile ducts. These show a caseous centre, are apt to be bile-

stained, and what is more, they tend to break into the bile ducts and so to undergo cavitation. Syphilis.—It may sound

paradoxical but at the same time it is true that of all the internal viscera the liver shows most frequently manifestation of the presence of syphilis, and nevertheless, considering the frequency of acquired syphilis, it is somewhat striking to observe how rarely in the ordinary run of post mortem cases we meet with syphilitic disturbances in this organ. Or otherwise, with modern treatment it is rare to find permanent syphilitic disorders of the viscera, but of the viscera the liver is most frequently involved. At the same time, the syphilitic lesions are very varied. Considering first congenital syphilis, common conditions are either widely disseminated miliary gummas or a later stage of syphilitic cirrhosis, but in addition there are some few cases

gummas and the results of the same that are the commonest and most characteristic manifestation. We may find either infrequent nodules moderately sharply defined with gummy centres, which may be 2 or 3 cm.



Section from a gummatous, syphilitic liver, showing at a necrotic (gummy) central area; b, sone of leukocytes undergoing necrosis; c, c, zone of abundant small roundcelled infiltration; dd, outer zone of fibrosis, extending outward between the columns of compressed liver cells at e: f bile duct.

on record of large solitary syphilomas, corresponding to the tuberculomas already mentioned, surrounded by hyperplastic liver parenchyma. Ordinary gummas of moderate size are comparatively rare in the congenital disease. In acquired syphilis, it is these ordinary

tubercle however, of casebile-duct to the course of be bileis more, into the o under-

y sound the same at of all the liver ly maniesence of rtheless. uency of is someobserve ordinary cases we tic disorgan. modern to find c disorbut of is most At the philitie

ditions lissemimas or philitic ddition cases tuberparenly rare dinary d most todules or 3 cm.

varied. ngenital in diameter, or more frequently there is present one or other later stage in the history of the same. The tendency is for these gummas under ordinary conditions to undergo absorption. With this, the necrosed centre undergoes shrinkage and simultaneously there develops a very pronounced surrounding fibrosis. This often takes the form of radial processes of fair size extending for some attle distance between the lobules. The shrinkage that this inflan matory fibrous issue may undergo is very striking, and the result is that the overlying liver tissue is pulled in and the surface of the liver shows well-marke distortion, resembling, to employ a homely simile, a seat apholytered by the button method, there being deep impressions with stellate furrows radiating from the bottom of each. Where these cicatrices are abundant we obtain the greatly distorted, coarsely lobate liver, the hepar lobatum. This distortion appears to be permanent; we may, in old syphilitics, meet with these depressions which show at their base a small amount

of cicatricial tissue, running into the liver tissue, but exhibiting no sign of the typical gumma, the gummy matter having been wholly absorbed. As already noted, there may be, though rarely, a diffuse syphilitic cirrhosis, and somewhat more frequently than in the congenital form we may similarly encounter huge solitary syphilomatous masses, which may easily be mistaken for tumor growths.

Speaking of errors of diagnosis, it deserves mention that the syphilitic cicatrices if situ-

Fro. 265

Surface of syphilitic liver to show the characteristic puckering (a, a) over old fibroid gummata.

ated near the hilus of the liver may so compress or pull upon the larger portal veins as to cause obstruction and ascites and lead to a supposition that we deal with a case of portal cirrhosis.

Actinomycosis.—Actinomycosis is somewhat apt to involve the liver as a metastatic process, and there may be multiple small, granulomatous areas or, more characteristically, solitary large masses, many centimeters across, characterized by a prewhat spongy appearance.

Regressive Changes.—Acophy.—Simple atrophy is seen in old age, as also in severely cachectic conditions. The organ is small, with sharp edges, and, particularly in the left lobe, along the edge, there may be complete disappearance of the liver cells, the connective tissue framework alone remaining as a whitish continuation of the liver tissue. Under the microscope, the lobules, columns, and cells are small, and throughout, the cells may show small accumulations of brownish pigment (brown atrophy).

Pressure Grooves.—These manifestations of partial atrophy are somewhat common, either shallow grooves corresponding to the ribs or as already noted, Liebermeister's grooves (p. 570), or as the cardiac depression (p. 572), or, lastly, as the groove that separates the so-called "lacing-lobe," brought about by excessive and long-continued tight lacing, by which the liver is forced down and the costal edge pressed into it. In one case known to us the terminal portion of the right lobe was found lying in the pelvis attached to the rest of the liver by a long fibrous band.

Degenerations and Infiltrations.—These are many and frequent. Most common is the cloudy swelling seen in acute infections and early toxic states. Frequent also are fatty infiltration and fatty degeneration, the



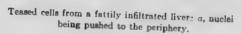




Fig. 267

Teased cells from a liver showing the earlier stage of fatty infiltration, with multiple fat droplets of varying size distributed in the cytoplasm.

former in cases of obesity and overfeeding, alcoholism, conditions of deficient oxidation, e. g., some cases of tuberculosis and other cachexias, and lastly, in the late stages of pregnancy. While the peripheral cells are the first involved, it may be noted that in the pregnant woman the central cells of the lobule may contain the largest store of fat. We may recall that in this form, while the cell nucleus still stains well, the cell body is seen distended by one or more large fatty globules. Fatty degeneration proper is evidenced by the appearance of multiple minute granules or fine globules of lipoid or fatty matter throughout the cell body, accompanied in typical cases by evidence of nuclear chromatolysis and degeneration. One of us (McC.) with Professor Klotz has called attention to the frequency of this condition and has

suggested that the irregular and angular form of the granules, when stained with Sudan III, indicates that we deal not with ordinary neutral fats but with some fatty compound or lipoid. This fatty degeneration may be either universal, peripheral, or central in position in the lobule, but there is no evidence to indicate the meaning of particular distribution; it is notable that in pernicious anemia the degeneration is generally of the central type. As a further distinctio tween the liver of fatty infiltration and that of fatty degeneration, it may be said that in the former, the organ is large, with round, obtuse edges, pale and solid, with a greasy cut surface, while in the latter, the liver is flabby, shrunken, brittle, and of a more natural color. In phosphorus poisoning and in acute yellow atrophy we appear to have a combination of infiltration and degeneration.



Section from the liver of an alcoholic, with fatty infiltration and slight grade of fibrosis in the portal sheaths: a, central vein; b, a fatty liver cell.

Glycogenous infiltration may be encountered in the peripheral cells of the lobule in certain cases of diabetes; in some of these cases recently the glycogen has been detected actually within the nuclei.

Amyloid of the liver is seen in general amyloidosis, associated with similar change in the spleen and kidney; when advanced, the liver is enlarged, firm, and the waxy areas are prominent on the smooth cut surface. Microscopically, it may be observed that the deposit occurs first in the intermediate zone, that is, the zone midway between centre and periphery of the lobule; later, the amyloid deposit may affect the whole lobe, causing great atrophy of the liver cells proper.

Pigmental Infiltration.—The pigment deposited in the liver may be of different kinds, viz., bile pigment (bilirubin), iron-free derivatives of

phy are

the ribs

e cardiac

so-called

ied tight

e pressed

the right

the liver

t. Most

rly toxic

tion, the

owing the

ions of hexias, ipheral voman . We s well, bules. ultiple

uclear fessor d has

blood pigment, and hemosiderin. In ictorus or jaundice the heaping up of the pigment is seen primarily within the liver cells and here at times it can be recognized that it occupies a set of fine intracellular channels. In more advanced cases the inspissated bile is found also in the bile capillaries between the liver cells and deposited in the lymph spaces of the portal sheaths. According to degree of pigmentation, the liver may exhibit a bright yellow, a pronounced brown, or even a dark olive-green color upon section. We have considered the causation and forms of icterus on p. 323.

Iron-containing pigment is recognized in the form of fine (hemosiderin) granules situated along that border of the cell which impinges upon the bile capillary; in advanced cases it may be seen even in the periportal connective tissue; it takes on a Prussian-blue stain with solutions of potassium ferrocyanide after treatment with acid, and is very pronounced in cases of pernicious anemia, hemochromatosis, and those intoxications in which there is excessive destruction of the red blood corpuscles. The liver in these cases has a distinct rusty-brown color on section, unless the fat is so extreme as to give it a paler yellow. Accompanying this iron-containing pigment there are generally to be seen yellowish pigment granules which do not give the Prussian blue reaction; these are spoken of as hemofuscin. Similar granules, often agglomerated, are to be recognized in the atrophying cells in the condition of brown atrophy.

A characteristic form of pigmentation may be encountered in recurrent malaria when the liver assumes a bluish-grey or even a dark chocolate color. The pigment in these cases is found in abundance in the endothelial cells lining the portal sinusoids and capillaries as also in Kupffer's star-cells, occasional cells which, on the one hand, impinge upon the blood stream and so have an endothelial character, and on the other penetrate between the liver cells. This pigment is obviously derived from the central pigment deposits in the bodies of the hemamœbæ, left free in the blood after sporulation, and obviously also is a metabolic product of the hemoglobin of the erythrocytes absorbed

by the growing parasites.

Calcification.—There are on record a few cases of extensive calcification of the liver associated with previous extensive necrosis of the lobules.

Necrosis.—The commonest form of necrosis in the liver is met in the form of multiple minute and discrete areas of cell death, in many acute infections. Experimentally these can be produced by several toxins. We have discussed the theories regarding their causation on p. 328. In chloroform poisoning more extensive necrosis may be seen affecting the central zone of the lobules and in pernicious anemia occasionally a similar central necrosis may be found. More extensive areas of necrosis may occur in eclampsia, the etiology of which is still unknown. The necrosis may be extreme, involving a large part of the entire tissue of the liver. Similar very extensive necrosis characterizes

the condition of acute yellow atrophy and an almost identical picture is seen in acute phosphorus poisoning. In any of these states, where

Fro. 269
/a

heaping

here at

icellular ind also

e lymph ion, the a dark ion and

(hemonpinges in the in with and is sis, and the red -brown vellow.

ally to

ın blue

, often

e con-

recurdark ince in as also apinge and on iously hemy also sorbed

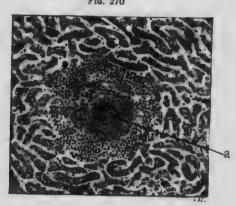
cificaof the

many everal on on seen nemia

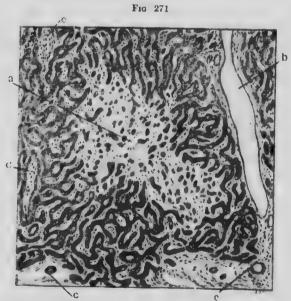
nsive s still of the

erizes

Focal necrosis. Section from a typhoid liver exhibiting at a the early stage of uncomplicated necrosis of a small area.



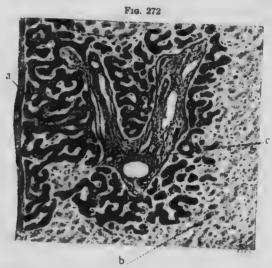
Section from the same liver exhibiting a later stage of focal necrosis with small-celled infiltration into the necrotic area: a, necrotic centre. In a later stage the small cells completely remove and replace the necrosed liver cells.



Section from the liver showing well-marked cer ral necrosis of the lobule: a, centre of lobule with few and shrunken remaining liver cells; b, possil vein; c, c, c, c, portal sheath at periphery of lobule.

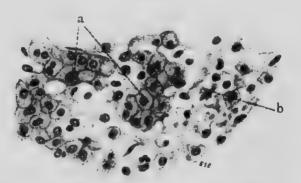
the toxin has evidently been very strong, followed quickly by death, the cells are found in a condition comparable with coagulation necrosis;

their general form and relationships are unaltered, although they fail to take nuclear stains; in less sudden cases, where presumably the toxin is less acute, there is seen a peculiar disarrangement or "jumbling" of the cells so that the orderly arrangement of the cells in the lobule is



Section of liver from a case of eclampsia showing widespread necrosis: a, liver cells relatively unaffected, still retaining normal arrangement and staining powers; b, necrosed liver cells; c, a portal sheath, with some small-celled infiltration.





Section from the same liver under higher magnification, showing the sudden transition from the relatively healthy (a) to the necrosed tissue (b). The "jumbling" of the affected cells is well shown.

wholly lost. The cells no longer give the Sudan III reaction for fat. (McCrae and Klotz.)

It used to be the custom to consider acute yellow atrophy as a condition sui generis. Now we are coming to recognize that several

they fail he toxin ling" of obule is different intoxications, such as the eclamptic, phosphorus poisoning, and the exhibition of chloroform may all produce a very similar picture, so that the term acute yellow atrophy must be applied only to those conditions of extensive necrosis in which the causative agent remains undetermined. Such cases seem more frequent in women than in men; in the earlier stage the shrunken liver has externally and on section a bright yellow appearance (yellow atrophy). With complete necrosis and disintegration of the cells there follows an adaptive dilatation of the capillaries with occasional hemorrhages, so that now intensely congested areas alternate with or are interspended among those still retaining the yellow color (acute red atrophy). In cases of red atrophy not rapidly fatal there is further an extensive small-celled infiltration with indications of active regeneration in the form of budding and worm-like processes from the bile ducts. It seems probable that with recovery there may develop a cirrhotic condition.

Progressive Changes.—Hypertrophy and regeneration of individual lobules may be seen as above noted in non-fatal cases of necrosis, and also in cases of portal cirrhosis, where nodular areas of such regenerative hyperplasia are seen; as already stated these may pass on to irregular multicentric adenomatous or even carcinomatous overgrowth. Loss of liver tissue is followed by no new formation of lobules but those in the neighborhood of the loss undergo pronounced enlargement, the cell columns actually proliferating. It is now fully established that regeneration may occur by two processes, viz., by budding from pre-existing bile ducts or by proliferation of preëxisting liver cells.

Tumors.—Cavernoma.—A common abnormal condition found in the liver is the presence of one or more, sharply defined, generally small areas of deep red color (see Figs. 130 and 131). On microscopic examination these are seen to be composed of greatly dilated, communicating capillar, channels filled with blood or containing thrombus, with no intervening liver cells. We have discussed these on p. 279 and pointed out that strictly speaking, they are not tumors proper.

True fibromas and other benign connective-tissue tumors are rare. So also primary sarcoma and hemangioendothelioma are infrequent. On the other hand, secondary sarcomas are not uncommon, and the liver is notably a favorite seat for multiple metastatic melanotic sarcomas. A few cases are on record of included adrenal tissue, and of tumors, hypernephromas or mesotheliomas, originating from the same. Two forms of adenoma are to be recognized, viz., the tubular adenoma, evidently originating from and to some extent reproducing the cubical or columnar epithelium of the bile ducts, and the true liver-cell adenoma, in which the cells are arranged without lumina and reproduce irregularly the structure of hepatic parenchyma. The multiple nodules of hyper-plasia already described partake of this type.

Solitary primary carcinoma of the liver is rare; a large solitary metasiasis from some minute and obscure primary focus must not be mistaken for such a primary growth. In short, very careful search must

relatively ella; c, a

om the

fat.

as a veral be made before declaring any case to be one of primary carcinoma of the liver. A considerable number of cases of diffuse carcinomatosis secondary to cirrhosis are recorded. A small-celled form of carcinoma of scirrhous type is by some held to originate from the bile ducts. In considering any hepatic carcinoma, the possibility of its origin from the gall bladder must always be kept in mind, considering the great frequency of cancer of this organ.

While thus primary carcinoma of the liver is distinctly uncommon, there is no organ in the body which is more frequently the seat of secondary cancerous growths; more particularly in carcinomas of the stomach, pancreas, æsophagus, intestine, and ovary, is the liver apt to be affected, and the secondary growths may be extraordinarily abundant and some of them of very great size. As a consequence the liver may be relatively enormous, the nodules often being palpable through the skin. On examination of such a liver the noduces stand out as well-defined masses, whitish against the congested liver tissue; the surface nodules frequently present umbilication (a crater-like depression) owing to autolysis and absorption of the central areas.

Cysts.—Hepatic cysts are of two main orders, retention cysts, and parasitic cysts, due to the growth of echinococcus within the organ.

Bile cysts may be solitary, due to the obliteration of an individual bile duct, either congenital or acquired, or may be small and multiple, scarcely visible to the naked eye; this last condition is seen in what has been termed cystic degeneration of the liver, a congenital state found sometimes associated with similar multiple cystic development in the kidneys and, it may be, also in the pancreas. The contents of bile cysts are generally watery in appearance. Rare cases are described in which cysts due to congenital abnormality of the bile ducts possess a ciliated epithelium.

Parasitic cysts are due to the development in the liver of the echinococcus in its encysted stage (hydatid). This cystic phase in the life history of Tænia echinococcus may take on two main forms, in one of which the formation of daughter cysts takes place wholly on the inner aspect of the capsule, and in the other, rarer form, on the outside, so that numerous ou lying smaller cysts develop (multilocular), so abundant and widespread as to give the appearance of a colloid cancer. The capsule of the hydatid is double, consisting of an outer fibrous layer provided by the irritated tissue of the liver, and an inner hyaline layer, the cyst wall proper of the parisite. The presence of hooklets in the fluid, recognizable by the microscope, is the characteristic diagnostic feature. Occasionally the parasites die, and the cyst contents undergo absorption, being ultimately represented by a fibrous cicatrix with an irregular shrunken cavity in which hooklets may still be found. Some three or four cases of coccidiosis of the liver are on record. Other parasites of the liver, not causing cyst formation, but lying in the bile ducts, to which they have gained entrance from the duodenum, are distomum (several species) and rarely ascaris lumbricoides.

GALL BLADDER AND DUCTS

Abnormalities.—Complete absence of the gall bladder has been recorded and coasionally it may hang completely free from the liver. Its relation to the liver edge is very variable. An important abnormality is congenital atresia or complete obliteration of the common bile duct, leading, with progressive jaundice, to inevitable death. Remembering that the liver is a tubular outgrowth from the duodenal region, it is obvious that such obliteration must occur after the definite differentiation of liver and ducts.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Cdema is a not infrequent condition associated with general anasarca. Submucous hemorrhages are occasionally seen.

Inflammation.—There is still debate as to how bacteria most commonly enter the gall bladder, whether by excretion through the liver from the blood or by ascent of the duct from the duodenum. This much, however, is clear, that at operation and at post mortem a large proportion of samples of gall bladder bile afford cultures of one or more forms of bacteria; the presence of these bacteria favors the development of cholecystitis. This inflammation may be of various orders. The commonest is simple catarrhal cholecystitis, an inflammation characterized by congestion, active proliferation and freeing of the columnar cells of the mucosa into the bile, together with markedly increased excretion or discharge of mucin. The mucosa is found swollen, turbid, infiltrated with round cells, and covered by a layer of mucin, and inasmuch as the common and cystic ducts may be involved (acute cholangitis), the swelling is apt to lead to obstruction and as a sequence to jaundice (acute catarrhal jaundice). This condition may be recurrent or continued over long periods, and then associated with a polypoid overgrowth of the mucosa of the gall bladder or sometimes with secondary atrophy and thinning. Particularly in these long-continued cases, as already noted on p. 320, the altered composition of the bile, and the presence of cell debris and of mucus, and the direct action of the bacteria from the bile, together with its stagnation, act in concert as factors in the production of gallstones. Once formed these gallstones in themselves act as a continued irritant and in this association it is interesting to note that over 90 per cent. of the cases of cancer of the gall bladder afford a history of the presence of gallstones.

Suppurative cholecystitis is most frequently found associated with these same gallstones, but may present itself in cases of severe infection, g., some cases of typhoid and pyemia. Very frequently such suppuration is seen to be secondary to complete or partial obstruction of the cystic duct from preceding non-purulent inflammation. As in the appendix, so here, stagnation appears to favor the proliferation and increased virulence of bacteria, so that what was previously a simple becomes now a suppurative process. Associated with this purulent

in from he great common, seat of the iver apt

dinarily

noma of omatosis

rcinoma ets. In

ence the palpable es stand tissue; ater-like ess.

an.
lividual

echinohe life
in one
on the
he outcular),
colloid
outer
inner
nce of

nce of ractere cyst ibrous y still are on n, but n the oides.

condition there may be necrosis of the mucosa with ulceration, and a times gangrene of the deep layers of the wall and perforation; as result there may be either a localized purulent pericholecystitis (localized peritonitis) or general peritonitis. The bile, when it escapes into the peritoneal cavity, as pointed out by Bunting, has in itself direct irritative and necrotic effects. This necrosing, ulcerative form of cholecystitis is often accompanied by a superficial membrane formation upon the inner surface of the gall bladder; more rarely this is seen in the large bile ducts. The suppurative form may occur not only in the gal bladder but also around impacted gallstones in the ducts. From this perforation either of the gall bladder or of the larger duets, there may result, not necessarily escape of the contents into the abdominal cavity, but where time has been afforded for adhesion with neighboring organs, the contents may make their way into the interior of viscera. Notably there may be fistulæ between the gall bladder and bile ducts, on the one hand, and the stomach, duodenum, ileum, colon, or the skin on the other. There is scarcely an organ of the trunk that has not been the seat of such fistula.

Two widely contrasted states of the gall bladder resulting from inflammation may at times be encountered. With obstruction and suppuration the organ may be hugely distended, and on section found to be converted into a bag of pus; on the othe hand, in cases showing evidence of long-continued inflammation without truction, the laying down of increased fibrous tissue in the submucosa is followed by pronounced contraction, so that the organ may be represented by a mass, as long as and not thicker than a finger, practically shrunken up and devoid of contents. Not infrequently this latter condition is associated with extensive organized adhesions to surrounding structures, evidence of a previous acute inflammation.

As originating from previous inflammatory disturbances, though in itself not a sign of active inflammation, there may be noted the striking condition of hydrops cystidis fellese: the gall bladder is found pale or almost translucent, greatly distended, and on section discharges a fluid wholly devoid of bile but shimmering, if not milky, with abundant cholesterin crystals. The process in the development of this condition is usually catarrhal inflammation with obliteration or blocking of the cystic duct, either by overgrowth of the mucosa or by means of a stone. The contained bile diffuses out and at the same time fluid and mucus are discharged from the mucosa, leading to progressive distension. The abundant cholesterin suggests that there is a continued state of mild inflammation of the mucosa, with dissociation of the epithelial cells or actually increased excretion of cholesterin or some precursor thereof, such as cholesterin oleate.

The irrective granulomas rarely affect the gall bladder and larger biliary passages.

Progressive Changes.—Tumors.—The main tumor to be considered in connection with the gall bladder and bile ducts is carcinoma. Benign

tumors are so rare that they may be passed over; the same is true of the primary sarcomas.

Carcinoma most often originates in connection with the gall bladder, but may also occur along the course of the larger ducts, either in the cystic duct, or, at its junction, within the common duct or again at the ampulla of Vater. Carcinoma of the gall bladder most frequently shows itself either in the fundus or at the neck; at the fundus, either through the gravitational presence of gallstones, or at the neck in association with the arrest of the same in their passage to the duct. We would here emphasize that this is one of the frequent sites of carcinoma, roughly 5 per cent. of cases of carcinoma arising here. The typical form is a soft, columnar-celled adenocarcinoma tending on the one hand to form a mass projecting into the gall bladder, and on the other to infiltrate extensively the wall and the liver tissue; but variations are found. At times, there is abundant stroma formation with alveoli filled with round cells and the general characters of a scirrhous growth, and several examples are now on record in which through metaplasia, presumably due to preceding inflammation, the tumor approximates to the squamouscelled epitheliomatous type or shows a combination of epitheliomatous and adenocarcinomatous structure (see Fig. 122, p. 272). There may also be, though rarely, cases of colloid cancer. Here, as in cholelithiasis, the condition is more common in the female than in the male. In addition to the direct infiltration, there are apt to be large nodular metastases in the lymph nodes at the hilus and in the mesentery, and in the peritoneum, as well as isolated nodular metastases in the more distant parts of the liver. Carcinomas of the larger bile duets are of the same type as those of the gall bladder, though in our experience they lead to death more rapidly than do the latter, and as a consequence are found of smaller size. From their region of origin, they necessarily lead to obliteration of the common bile duct, and to fatal jaundice or through their ulcerative character to infection. Carcinomas of the ampulla of Vater, it must be remembered, may originate either from the mucous membrane of the terminal portion of the bile duct or from the duodenal mucous membrane covering the ampulla.

Secondary cancers, involving either gall bladder or bile ducts, are uncommon.

THE PANCREAS

Like the liver, although in a different way, the pancreas subserves multiple functions; as regards its excretion it affords a trypsinogen which, combined with the enterokinase supplied by the mucosa of the small intestine, affords the most powerful proteolytic ferment of the organism; wherefore it follows that arrest of this excretion, either by additionally incomplete dissociation of the proteids of the gland cells, followed by incomplete dissociation of the proteids of the food, and the assequent lack of assimilation of the same, so that, as a matter of

larger

on, and at

tion; as a

(localized

s into the

irritative

olecystitis

upon the

the large

the gall

From this

here may

bdominal

ighboring

f viscera.

ile ducts.

n, or the

that has

n inflam-

suppura-

nd to be

evidence

down of

nounced

, as long

d devoid

ted with

dence of

ough in

striking

pale or

arges a

oundant

ondition

g of the

a stone. I mucus

The of mild

al cells

thereof,

sidered Benign fact, a condition of true starvation is brought about and a progressiv emaciation developing more rapidly than from any other cause.

It also excretes a lipolytic ferment, steapsin, essential to the disse ciation and subsequent absorption of the fats; interference with a absence of this excretion is also a potent factor in the emaciation above mentioned. In such conditions we find that the stools are clay-colo from excess of unaltered fats. Other ferments are produced, notable

an amylolytic or starch-splitting ferment.

Equally important seems to be the internal secretion afforded by this organ; we have discussed this on p. 104, but we would here recal that there is in the body a "sugar combine" or "trust," of which the pancreas, the liver, and the muscles are the members, which controls the amount of sugar formed and its consumption in the organism, so that atrophic or degenerative disease of the pancreas is associated with the development of glycosuria. Not all cases of diabetes present pancreatic changes, for it is evident that certain lesions of the other members of the "combine" may lead to a similar loss of control of output.

Abnormalities.—These are not very common, but we occasionally encounter hypoplasia or even absence or duplication, or again, more commonly, the presence of small accessory groups of pancreatic acini either in the submucosa of the stomach, the duodenum, or even the small intestine. The most important irregularity in the development of the organ is in connection with the ducts. The original pancreas was possessed of two ducts, one, the duct of Santorini, from the head of the organ, the other, Wirsung's duct, constituting the main duct of the body of the gland. In the course of development these become connected within the body of the pancreas and the duct of Santorini undergoes atrophy, so that mest cases eventually come to present only a single duct opening into the ampulla of Vater. In 10 per cent. of all organs examined, there is persistence of the former duct with a papilla, generally minute, opening into the duodenum at a somewhat higher level than the ampulla. It is obvious that the presence or absence of this duct of Santorini with its communication with the main duct will materially modify the results of obliteration or obstruction of the duodenal end of the main duct. Variations also occur in the relations of the duct of Wirsung to the common bile duct. The two ducts may open into the duodenum side by side, one at the very termination of the ampulla, the other slightly separated from it; but usually the pancreatic duct gains entrance to the bile duct at the base of the ampulla so that the ampulla constitutes what respectively be termed a pancreatico-hepatic duct, a centimeter or more in length. These relationships also are of material importance in determining the results of blockage of the ampulla by a small gallstone, etc. As a result of such blockage. according to the relationships, the dammed back bile may or may not enter the pancreatic duct.

Circulatory Disturbances.—The pancreas is abundantly vascular but on account of its natural color, it does not show to the naked eye and

progressive use.

the dissore with or tion above clay-color d, notably

forded by here recall which the h controls ganism, so ated with s present the other of output. casionally ain, more atic acini the small ent of the reas was ad of the ct of the ome con-Santorini present per cent. t with a omewhat absence ain duct etion of r in the The two terminausually e of the ancreationships

ılar but eye any

olockage

lockage,

nay not

marked changes in anemia; in cases of passive congestion, it becomes large, injected, and of a bluish-gray color, whereas in active hyperemia, such as occurs during digestion, it is found of a pinkish color.

The most important circulatory disturbance is the supervention of hemorrhage in the gland and the development of the falsely so-called acute hemorrhagic pancreatitis. The series of events leading to this condition is now generally acknowledged to be (1) the development of local areas of ischemia of the gland substance by arterial arrest or disease; (2) the cells in these areas undergo necrosis with the liberation into the tissues of the cellular ferments; (3) localized self-digestion ensues with erosion of the capillaries and other vessels, associated with which there is necrosis of the fat cells in the neighborhood and dissociation of the contained fat through the agency of the liberated steapsin (fat necrosis). The condition is by no means necessarily of infective origin; around such areas there may be, it is true, evidence of acute inflammation, but this is secondary. The effects of these liberated ferments are not confined to the pancreas but may involve surrounding tissues; the condition may be rapidly fatal within a few hours or, on the other hand, there are evidences that, if not extensi e, recovery may ensue.

Inflammation.—There is a possibility that a condition similar to the above may follow a localized inflammation in the pancreas and that there is thus a true acute necrotic and hemorrhagic pancreatitis, but if so, bacteriological studies show that this is the exception and not the rule. Purulent pancreatitis is occasionally encountered, either with multiple small pyemic abscesses in cases of bacteriemia, or by extension of disease elsewhere, oftenest by perforation of a gastric or duodenal alcer, or lastly, by an ascending inflammation of the pancreatic duets.

Chronic Pancreatitis.-It has been experimentally shown by Opie and others that by obstruction or, again, by retrograde flow of bile into the pancreatic duct, there may develop a condition of fibrosis around the duct and its branches, due to resorption of the secretion as well as to the irritation of the foreign fluid. Whether this be the essential cause or no, it is to be remembered that in cases of cholelithiasis we frequently encounter a marked induration especially of the head of the pancreas, this becoming so firm that the surgeon is apt to mistake it for new-growth. The organ also is apt to show extensive fibrosis in advancing age, associated with the chronic periarteritis of arteriosclerosis. We thus recognize more than one form of fibrotic change in the organ, viz., a centrilobular, around the branches of the duct, a perilobular, separating the individual collections of somewhat atrophic acini from each other, and an irregular, or sporadic form, secondary to previous inflammation or necrosis of localized areas. It is to be noted that a chronic diffuse pancreatitis or cirrhosis is not infrequent as an accompaniment of virrhosis of the liver.

Infective Granulomas.—Tuberculosis is very rare. As a result of congenital syphilis, there may be encountered an extreme grade of diffuse

interstitial pancreatitis with enlargement of the organ, and induration and pronounced atrophy of a great part of the pancreatic tissue proper, save the islands of Langerhans. We are inclined to regard the islands of Langerhans as the mother tissue from which new acini may be developed throughout life, and in this and other forms of fibrosis the persistence of the islands indicates that this vegetative or mother tissue is the last to be destroyed. Others, however, it must be noted, regard these as independent entities.





Section from a fibrosed panereas, showing a combination of the centrilobular and perilobular types; there has leen obstruction and dilatation of the main ducts (a) and their branches (b). The lobules are separated by broad perilobular bands of fibrous tissue, and the individual acini (c) in the lobules are similarly separated by a centrilobular fibrosis.

Regressive Changes.—Care must be taken to distinguish between ante mortem and post mortem changes in this organ. If death occurs when the cells are in an active state, there is a marked tendency for the intracellular enzymes to diffuse out, and bring about a condition of post mortem self-digestion. In the early stages of this process the organ may be firm, opaque, and homogeneous, and on section the nuclei either stain feebly or fail to stain. This condition resembles somewhat coagulation necrosis; at a later stage softening takes place with disorganization. In discussing the so-called hemorrhagic pancreatitis we have already described the main features of the commoner forms of ante mortem or intravital necrosis and self-digestion. In general, this affects part and not the whole of the organ, and areas are preserved

duration e proper, e islands may be prosis the per tissue d, regard in which the pancreatic acini still preserve their normal staining power. Occasionally, however, at operation or post mortem it is found that practically the whole of the organ has undergone ante mortem self-digestion. The appearance in such cases is very remarkable; in the region where the pancreas ought to be there is found a mass of completely degenerated softened "muck," blood-stained, shreddy, greasy, with intense surrounding inflammation and tendency to generalized peritonitis. Throughout the peritoneal cavity in such cases there may be found foci of fat necrosis. This extensive necrosis may follow not merely the causes above mentioned, namely, stasis, vascular obliteration and infection, but may, as in the case of the late President McKinley, follow trauma, or, again, operative section with liberation of the pancreatic juice.

Regarding the relationship of the pancreas to diabetes mellitus, while admitting that the matter is still unsettled, we are inclined, as a matter of clearness, to lay down the following: (1) in a considerable proportion of cases no change can be observed in this organ; (2) in the rapidly progressive cases of early life there is a hydropic degeneration of the islands of Langerhans followed by atrophy, with little accompanying general fibrosis of the organ, although there may be considerable atrophy of the general parenchyma (Weichselbaum); (3) the slowly evolving diabetes of advanced life may be characterized by marked fibrosis and atrophy of the organ in general, together with changes in the islands. These changes are most often of the nature of a hyaline degeneration or infiltration. With regard to the relationship of these islands to the pancreatic acini there are data favoring the view that they play a part in the sugar regulation of the economy.

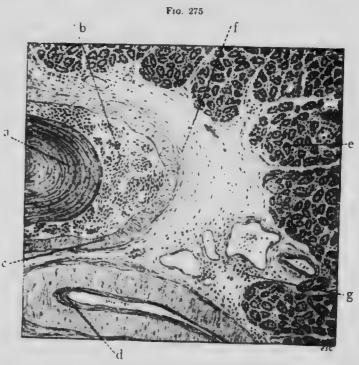
A frequent form of regressive change in the pancreas is fatty infiltration. In advanced cases the greater part of the gland substance may have atrophied without the organ being reduced in size, a fact which is due to its replacement by fat cells; often localized areas of such fatty infiltration occur. Fatty degeneration of the gland cells has been noted in phosphorus poisoning. Fat necrosis has already been discussed. Amyloid change is to be seen in general amyloidosis.

Single or multiple calculi may be encountered in the larger ducts; they are formed of calcium salts with a mucinous matrix and are due to an accumulation of cell debris following catarrhal inflammation.

Progressive Changes.—Tumors.—We rarely encounter benign growths in the pancreas. In our laboratory Nicholls has recorded localized adenomas arising from the islands of Langerhans, and since then, a few other similar cases have been placed on record. Others have described cystadenomas representing more fully differentiated pancreatic tissue. Connective tissue tumors are rare. The most important tumor is the primary carcinoma. Through the infiltrative qualities of both amors, it is often difficult to say whether we deal with a primary pancreatic or a primary gastric tumor, especially where these are of a scirrhous and a pronounced anaplastic type. Most frequently the growth origin-

ular types; The lobules the lobules

occurs ney for ndition ess the nuclei newhat th disitis we rms of al, this served ates in the head of the pancreas, and most frequently, also, is of a relatively scirrhous type, but soft, adenocarcinomatous growths are to be encountered, as are primary tumors originating in the tail or body of the organ. Growing in the head, these tumors are peculiarly liable to cause obstruction of the common bile duct, setting up a condition of grave ieteric toxemia, accompanied by rapid emaciation when there is arrest of secretion, and extensive destruction of pancreatic tissue. The pancreas itself is apt to be extensively involved by the infiltration of the growth; this infiltration is: *t to extend to surrounding



Pancreas: carcinoma extending along branch of portal vein: a, thrombus in vein; b, masses of cancer cells; c, wall of portal vein showing a certain grade of phlebosclerosis; d, artery; e, pancreatic acini; f, perivascular fibrosis. (Dr. Rhea.)

tissues, stomach, adrenals, etc., while abundant metastases occur in the lymph nodes and liver. Primary sarcoma is rare. Secondary melanotic sarcoma is liable to affect the organ.

Multiple congenital cysts occur along with similar cysts of the liver and kidney. Retention cysts of later life (ranula pancreatica) may be either solitary or multiple, may attain large size and are due to obstruction either from a concrement lying in the main duct or one of the branches or secondary to inflammation and obstruction of the ducts. These cysts are most often in the tail or body. Echinococcus cystare recorded.

o, is of a byths are ne tail or peculiarly a condition when ancreatic d by the rounding

masses of

e, pancre-

ccur in

ondary

e liver

aay be

of the

ducts.

CHAPTER X

THE URINARY SYSTEM

THE URINARY FUNCTION

General Considerations.—Embryology.—The permanent kidney appears about the fifth week of fœtal life, and is made up of cells from the Wolffian duct, on the one hand, and the mesoblastic tissue, called the blastema, on the other. The former gives origin to the ureter, pelvis, calices, and collecting tubules, the latter to the glomerular epithelium and the rest of the tubule. This complex origin and close relationship to the primitive myotomes suggest a partial explanation of the frequency with which mixed tumors (teratoblastomas) appear, and appear, too, in early life. The fact that the Wolffian body and the genital gland arise from the same primitive genital ridge, explains why developmental anomalies of the kidney and the reproductive organs are so apt to occur together.

Anatomy.—The renal arteries are short and readily allow a transference of the aortic pressure to the kidneys; the kidneys are relatively abundantly supplied with blood, and theoretically all the blood in the body may pass through them in a short space of time, the result being that in any toxemic state of the blood, the kidneys are certain to bear the brunt of it in full measure. When they are damaged, the other secretory systems, the skin, the intestines, and the lungs must assume the responsibility for the work which they can no longer accomplish.

The kidneys possess at any vasomotor nerves, and are therefore susceptible to central states upon the amou effect often seen to be and rectum.

and rectum.

In the capsule of the kidney is a plexus of unstriped muscle fibres, recalling those seen in the spleen; the purpose of these is doubtless by contraction and relaxation to promote the circulation in the kidney and thereby modify excretion. Their anatomical position in the body, behind the peritoneum, protected as they are by abundant fat, ensures to the kidneys some immunity from trauma, while, on the other hand, communicating indirectly with the outside of the body, they are liable to certain extraneous infections.

The Physiology of the Urinary Function.—It is so usual for a gland to be an internal as well as an external secretion that we are tempted onclude by analogy that the kidney, whose main work is obviously

the production of an external secretion, may have also an internal on At the present time, there is a little evidence in favor of this idea.

The analogue of the kidney exists in the secretory organ of the invertebrate, where we may find a ciliated opening leading from the coelomic cavity into a tubule which passes to the outside. Since it the vertebrate the coelomic cavity loses its importance as a medium of circulation, it is rational that the blood-vascular system should connect directly with the tubule, which it does by virtue of the glomerulus. The tubule, too, throughout its length, is in intimate association with the lymph, from which, again, the direction of flow is to the tubule and thence to the outside; yet not entirely so. We must recognize that a certain absorption occurs through the tubular epithelium back to the lymph, but there is little reason to suppose that this is a very important factor; for we find that the larger surface of the tubule is exposed to the lymph, the smaller to the urine.

Controversy has long waged over the question as to whether the action of the glomerulus and the tubule, in excreting the urinary water is a mechanical or a secretory process; it may partake of both, but evidence seems largely in favor of the latter, especially when it is taken into consideration that definitely known metabolic processes, such as the building up of hippuric acid and other substances, take place in the renal epithelium.

The Vascular Supply of the Kidney.—The arterial supply of the cortex passes directly and almost entirely to the glomeruli. The blood enters the glomerulus in the afferent vessel, leaves it in the efferent vessel, and thence is distributed into a network of capillaries around the convoluted tubules. The blood supply of the collecting tubules in the medulla is from capillaries of the arteriæ rectæ. The blood supply of the cortical tubules, having been through one set of capillaries (the glomeruli) already is at a relatively low pressure, a state of affairs which suggests that this may allow a resorption from the urine, which is not allowed in the collecting tubules where the blood pressure is higher. And in all probability this is what actually occurs.

Blood pressure determines to some extent the discharge of urine; if the general pressure be reduced to 40 mm. of mercury, the flow of urine ceases; but under relatively normal conditions, the rate of blood flow is of more importance than the pressure in the glomeruli. We conclude that certain simple salts (and though simple, selected) and substances such as grape-sugar, accompany the water through the glomeruli, and that while some resorption occurs in the convoluted tubules, a more important matter is the further selective excretion into the urine of urea, uric acid, and other "extractives," as well as toxins; and superadded, there is on the part of the cells a certain amount of metabolism, both anabolic and katabolic, of which the result is also discharged into the urine on its way through the convoluted tubule.

The Nerve Supply.—This is of considerable complexity; the nerves to the kidney form a plexus around the renal artery, and are for the most

idea.
gan of the Since in a medium hould conlomerulus. ation with cubule and gnize that in back to is a very tubule is

ether the ary water, both, but t is taken s, such as place in

the cortex od enters at vessel, the cones in the d supply tries (the irs which ch is not s higher.

of urine; eflow of of blood uli. We ted) and ugh the avoluted excretion well as amount t is also tubule.

he most

part vasomotor in function, both vasodilators and vasoconstrictors being demonstrable. Some nerve terminations must, on the other hand, be "secretory," for nerve terminals have been demonstrated in Bowman's capsule, and others entering the membrana propria of the convoluted tubules. Experiments upon the renal nerves have amply proved that these have a marked effect upon the amount of urine. The interlobular arteries are plentifully muscular and their state determines, to a great extent, the amount of blood in the glomeruli, in which, by the way, no nerves are demonstrable. The interlobular arteries, doubtless, may be overridden by the general blood pressure, and the degree of contraction or expansion of the capillaries may be affected by the substances that pass through their walls from the blood. To sum up, the amount of urinary water seems variable under the influences of (1) the central nervous system; (2) the intrinsic renal nerves; (3) the effect of substances in the blood on arterioles and capillary endothelium.

This may be expressed otherwise: the quantity of urine depends on the quantity of blood flowing through the glomeruli, and this blood flow depends on the difference in pressure between the renal artery and the renal vein; if the arterial pressure be increased without increase in the venous pressure, more urine is secreted; if the venous pressure be increased without increase in the arterial, less. At the same time the size of the arterial channels in the kidney must be taken into account; the urine is increased not only when the general arterial pressure is raised, but even if, without increase of general blood pressure, the interlobular and afferent arteries are dilated; on the contrary if the interlobular and afferent arteries are contracted without alteration of the general pressure, the amount of urine is diminished.

The ultimate object of all this mechanism is twofold; to regulate tin conjunction with the skin) the total amount of body fluid, and to separate from it substances that are unnecessary or actually detrimental, which are brought to the kidney by the blood. These are selected by the kidney epithelium, some being passed, others retained, and yet others metabolized and passed in an altered state. The state of the kidney at any given moment is thus of great importance. The composition of the urine is an indication of the state of the blood, the accuracy of this indication being sometimes lessened by a diseased state of the kidney.

Disorders of Excretion.—These may be considered under the heads of (1) excretion of urine normal in composition but abnormal in quantity; (2) the excretion in abnormal amounts of substances normally present in the urine, and (3) the excretion of substances not normally found in the urine. Such a division, however, is hardly physiologically accurate, because the amount of urine is affected by its concentration in the matter of certain salts, so that divisions (1) and (2) may overlap.

Irreased Amount of Urine, Polyuria.—According to general principles that may be brought about by (1) increase in the general arterial pressure thout renal change, or (2) dilatation of renal arterioles without, of

necessity, any rise in general blood pressure. (3) To these it is obvious that a third factor has to be added, namely, the effect of certain salts and other substances upon the secretory epithelium, stimulating it to greater activity. Diuretics may act in any of these three ways, and some of them in different ways at different times, or even in more than one of these ways at the same time.

Decreased Amount of Urine, Oliguria, or Anuria.—Reduction of urinary flow may be caused by (1) lowering of general blood pressure, (2) direct contraction of the afferent vessels, or (3) increased venous pressure; two of these may be included in the more general statement that a reduction in the difference between arterial and venous pressure leads and obstruction to the urinary outflow, provided it affects both kidneys. The oliguria that is so marked a feature of acute nephritis is probably due to the amount of glomerulitis that is present, rather than to the effect of swelling of the epithelium and consequent diminution of the tubular lumen, although this is often pronounced and cannot be wholly neglected.

The Solids in Urine.—Some of these are the product of the ordinary processes of digestion and assimilation; some are the product of normal metabolic processes, others of abnormal metabolic processes; some are due to extraneous agents, such as bacteria or metallic poisons. The following is a list of the more important substances found in the urine, some of them only in minute quantity: acetone, achroglycogen, allantoin, carbamic acid, chlorides, cholesterin, chondroitin, creatin (?), creatinin, diacetic acid, diastatic ferments, glucose, hematoporphyrin, indican, isomaltese, lactose, mucin, nucleinic acid, nucleoalbumin, orthocresol, oxalic acid, oxaluric acid, paracresol, paraoxyphenylacetic acid, paraoxyphenylpropionic acid, phosphates, pentose, pigments, proteolytic ferments, ptomaines, purin bases (?), pyrocatechin, sulphates, urea, uric acid, and volatile fatty acids.

UREA.—The excretion of urea depends on (1) the ingestion of nitrogenous foods, and (2) the breaking down of the organized albumin of the body. The amount eliminated in the urine of a healthy individual on a mixed diet varies from 20 to 45 grams daily. The quantity is increased in febrile diseases and decreased in malnutrition, as well as in disease of the kidney parenchyma.

URIC ACID.—The daily excretion of uric acid in the healthy adult varies from 0.2 to 1.25 grams, and is derived from the katabolism of the nucleins in the food or the body tissues, so that whenever there is a loss of tissue albumin, as in fevers, its amount is increased.

Creatinin.—The daily excretion of creatinin varies from 0.6 to 1.3 grams, derived from a diet of meat or from the muscular tissue of the body. It is increased by bodily exercise and in fevers, and is diminished in many diseases that produce a cachectic state.

ALBUMIN.—Various proteins may appear in the urine unchanged from absorbed food, as egg-albumin after an excessive diet of raw egg-or as mucins or nucleo-albumins from tissue disintegration; but these

s obvious tain salts ting it to rays, and nore than

f urinary sure, (2) us pressent that pressure n to the iria that amount elling of although

ordinary ome are s. The ie urine, n, allantin (?), rphyrin, lbumin, ylacetic gments, in, sul-

f nitroimin of lividual ntity is well as

r adult lism of r there l. 0.6 to tissue

d from eggs; these

and is

are infrequent and unimportant compared with serum albumin and serum globulin, which are the bodies concerned when we speak of pluminuria. They are the dominant proteins of the blood plasma, and their presence in the plasma indicates an abnormal escape. Proof exists that the albumin escapes through the glomeruli, but it is also likely that when the tubular epithelium is disintegrating the albumin so derived is added; further, when the tubular epithelium is cast off, the naked basement membrane probably allows lymph to exude into the tubules. Thus, in a severe acute nephritis, it is likely that the tubules contribute a considerable amount of albumin, while in the milder cases the glomeruli allow the albumin to escape. The disintegration of cells is not necessarily accompanied by the presence of albumin in the The albumin found in urine is usually serum albumin, but it may be globulin alone, or with mere traces of serum albumin. Since albumin is present in the blood plasma in a constant ratio to globulin of 3 to 2, and globulins are the more diffusible, these facts seem to indicate that the glomeruli have a power of selection.

"Physiological" Albuminuria.—This is the term used to designate the appearance of albumin in the urine in those whose subsequent history leads us to suppose that there is not any lesion existing to account for it. It may appear after cold baths or violent exercise, especially if the latter be performed soon after change from the supine to the erect posture.

Cyclical Albuminuria.—This is noted in the young; the morning urine is free from albumin, but it appears increasingly in the forenoon and disappears in the afternoon. The erect, active state may here again be a dominant factor.

Albuminuria from Circulatory Disturbance.—Whatever slows the rate of blood flow through the kidneys favors the appearance of albuminuria. Thus, contraction of the renal arteries, as in lead poisoning, or various obstructions, as in heart disease, or in local obstruction of the renal vein, causes albuminuria with lessening of the amount of urine.

Toxic Albuminuria.—Many mineral and bacterial poisons, and the yet unknown toxin of eclampsia, are capable of causing albuminuria, chiefly by the damage wrought in the epithelium, although the glomeruli also are considered to be involved.

Infectious Albuminuria.—This is exemplified by scarlet fever and streptococcus infections, and is especially due to lesion of the glomeruli, with abundant discharge of albumin, and sometimes even of blood corpuscles; the parenchyma, too, is generally damaged.

Albumoses.—Albumoses appear in the urine when the intracellular katabolism of proteins is perverted, as in tuberculosis, suppuration, phosphorus poisoning and osteomalacia. Bence-Jones' albumin is a related form found in cases of multiple myelomas.

Hematuria.—Blood may appear in the urine from causes in the biney or elsewhere in the tract; it may be evidenced by a dark or bright

red color, and verified by the microscope, the spectroscope or by cheical reactions.

Hemoglobinuria.—Hemoglobin dissolved in the urine may appowhen hemolysis has occurred, the material being actually secret and not filtered in a mechanical way.

Disturbances of the Function of Urination.—The pelvis of the kidn and the preters are merely amplified conductors of the urine. T bladder a reservoir with functional power of discharge. The d orderse conducting apparatus are, therefore, chiefly obstructive and obstruction may arise in a variety of ways; it may result from (objects in the lumina, as calculi, tumors, clot, necrotic tissue, parasit and from sharp "kinks" in the tube; (2) thickening of the walls, inflammations, neoplasms, and hyperplasias; (3) pressure from outside as by tumors, exudates, organs misplaced, traction or pressure fibrous bands, ligatures and so on. Finally, the same ultimate resu may arise from a solution of continuity of the tube, so that extravasation of urine occurs. The effect of the various obstructions depends upon whether one or both kidneys are concerned; moderate obstruction may be corrected by hypertrophy above the point of obstruction an the correction of the diminution of urine by the employment of mor force. But this cannot go on indefinitely; the extreme of hypertroph is reached, further dilatation ensues, and the disability is aggravated Stagnation of the urine, and subsequent infection thus results, and suc an infection may progress upward to the kidney itself. Apart from such infection, the presence of the distending fluid acts so as to enlarg the pelvis with compression and atrophy of the kidney substance until the kidney becomes a large sac, in the walls of which the glomeruli and tubules still functionate. The pressure, acting upon the tabules, lead them to resorb fluid, and the pressure of these swollen cells, added to the general intramural pressure, lessens the flow of blood through the kidney diminishing the amount of urine secreted. If this state of affairs be unilateral, the other kidney may compensate entirely for the lack but if bilateral, uremia and death may quickly ensue.

The bladder is specially concerned in regulating the function of urination. Were it not for the bladder, the urine would be continually escaping; but it acts as a reservoir and at the proper time a mechanism for evacuation. Functionally, it consists of two elements, a sphincter muscle which detains, and a detrusor muscle which expels the urine: the action of both being governed by the nervous system. In infants urination is reflex, being set in motion by peripheral impulses, chiefly the condition of distension of the bladder. Later, by education, the child is able to control and time the function. There is, therefore, a reflex centre (situated in the sympathetic system, not in the lumbar cord) and a cerebral centre. The sphincter, largely of voluntary muscle, relaxes and allows the membranous urethra to fill with urine, and the impulse becomes irresistible, the detrusor expelling the contents of the bladder. Factors which govern the reflex irritability are the

or by chem-

nay appear lly secreted

the kidney urine. The The disobstructive. ilt from (1) e, parasites e walls, as om outside, pressure of nate result travasation ends upon bstructions uction and nt of more pertrophy ggravated. , and such part from to enlarge ance until neruli and ules, leads ded to the

nction of ontinually echanism sphincter he urine; in infants s, chiefly ition, the erefore, a elumbar coluntary th urine, contents

are the

he kidnev.

affairs be

amount of distension, the state of the mucosa, and the character of the urine. An inflamed bladder or a highly acid urine may initiate evacuation, apart from any marked degree of distension.

Retention of Urine. - Retention of urine may arise, apart from physical obstruction, from lack of peripheral stimuli, where, for example, the sensory nerves conduct hadly or fail to conduct the message despatched by a distended bladder, or from a paralysis of the detrusor muscle, or from a spasm of the sphineter, or from loss of the mental control, as happens in acute fevers. When the distension of the bladder is so great as to overcome the sphincter, urination may occur until the excess is removed, the bladder still remaining moderately full. This is the "overflow of distension" and its occurrence at intervals may fail to warn the attendant that the bladder is never being emptied at all. Overdistension, too, may induce inability of the bladder muscle to contract. One variety of this is very important, viz., the local distension of the lower part of the bladder behind an enlarged prostate. The weight of retained urine and the weakness of the muscle allow the wall to sag and emptying of the bladder becomes impossible; the retained urine readily becomes infected, and allows the progress of inflammation and the formation of calculi.

Incontinence of Urine.—Incontinence of urine is the inability to retain it in the bladder. Apart from the incontinence of retention referred to above, this may arise from paralysis or weakness or the sphincter, or spasmodic overaction of the detrusor. The former arises from traumatism as in labor, or the pressure of tumors, while the latter is usually due to irritation of the mucosa.

Nocturnal Enuresis.—Nocturnal enuresis, or "bed-wetting," usually found in young children, is due to the excessive response of an unstable nervous system to some peripheral stimulus, such as intestinal worms in the rectum, phimosis, preputial adhesions, and many other such states. It may also be due, though rarely, to the occurrence of nocturnal epileptic attacks.

The Influence of Bodily States on the Production of Kidney Lesions. The chief factor in the production of kidney lesions is the blood. On the one hand there are conditions leading to a diminished supply of blood to the kidneys, such as arteriosclerosis or a weak heart muscle, and others causing an increased retention of blood in the organs, such as obstruction, general or local. In both these groups, albuminuria is likely to supervene. Both groups, too, have this in common, that there is a deficient amount of nutrition supplied to the cells, and an imperfect removal of the toxic products of metabolism. Epithelium of the tubules and the glomeruli is alike sensitive to such influences. The vasomotor influences, also, are not without effect; a marked deviation from the normal in the quantity of blood, especially if suddenly produced and frequently repeated, impairs the vitality of the organ, and paves the way for infection or other damage.

en more important is the quality of the blood; it may be vitiated

by the toxins of bacteria or by chemical poisons; bacteria may gentrance to the kidney or may damage it by their toxins produced elwhere in the body. Even the products of putrefaction in the body may be potent causes of damage. Substances that are normal excreted by the skin, the lungs, or the liver may be thrown upon the kidney in states of incompetency of those organs. Finally, the kidney may be damaged by the action of substances the result of pervert metabolism, such as appears to occur in eclampsia, diabetes, myxœden and other ill-understood states.

While we group many of these diseased states under the general heading of nephritis it must be remembered that we have two differes orders of phenomena—degenerative and inflammatory. The former a manifested by retrogressive changes, such as cloudy swelling, fat degeneration, vacuolation, and necrosis of the secreting cells, the latt by congestion, exudation, and hyperplasia of connective tissue. We a prepared, also, for the coexistence of these factors.

The Influence of Kidney Lesions on the Excretion of Urine.—('ireal latory disturbances and other abnormalities thus affect the secreting structures; lesions of these structures, in turn, modify the composition of the urine, and the systemic metabolism. The urine is thus a reflection of the state of the kidneys and of the metabolic processes of the body; we therefore find in it deviations from normal in point of quantity specific gravity, and reaction; in the appearance in it of abnormal substances such as albumin, blood cells, pus, epithelium, casts, blood pigment, salts, and bacteria; and deviations, too, in the amount of chemical constituents. These can be referred to only in a very general way.

Acute Parenchymatous Nephritis.—The amount of urine is greatly reduced; the specific gravity is correspondingly high, and because o concentration any abnormal constituents, such as casts, are not so far to seek as usual. The specific gravity may be 1025 or 1030, the urine is turbid, generally deeply colored. It contains a large amount of albumin, and much sediment, which consists of blood cells, leukocytes, renal and vesical epithelium, crystals of uric acid and oxalates, and casts of any or all sorts. Its freezing point (determined by the process of cryoscopy) is higher than that of normal urine. In the form known as hemorrhagic nephritis, blood is present in considerable quantity. In acute infective nephritis, where bacteria are actually at work in the kidney the urine will be practically the same as in hemorrhagic (non-infective) nephritis.

Chronic Interstitial Nephritis.—In this form of nephritis the urine is greatly increased in amount, acid, pale in color, of low specific gravity (1002 to 1015). Albumin is present in small amount or may even be absent. Casts are few, and the solids generally diminished.

Pyelonephritis.—Cellular debris, urinary salts, epithelium, and pus are generally present; the blood of a free hemorrhage may appear in the urine; if there is ulceration, shreds of tissue also may be seen. The causative bacteria may be demonstrated in the urine. The

ia may gain oduced elsen the bowel re normally on upon the the kidneys of perverted myxædema,

the general wo different former are lling, fatty s, the latter ie. We are

ne.—Circue secreting omposition us a reflecsses of the f quantity, ormal subblood pigof chemical way.

is greatly because of not so far the urine amount of eukocytes, lates, and he process om known hitty. In rk in the agic (non-

e urine is c gravity even be

and pus ppear in be seen. excretion of salts, following Van Noorden, is thus: in acute nephritis and in acute exacerbations of chronic nephritis, urea, creatinin, pigments, hippuric acid, phosphates and inorganic sulphates are excreted with difficulty; water with even greater difficulty; uric acid, xanthin bases, aromatic substances, ammonia, chlorides and carbonates with ease. The nitrogenous elements in the urine are derived from the disintegration of proteins, and follow the same rules as in health. In a general way their excretion is parallel with the excretion of water.

The Relation of Kidney Affections to General Metabolism and the State of Other Organs.- It has long been known that nephritis is accompanied by lesions of other organs, for example, hypertrophy of the heart and high-blood pressure. For long, the idea was current that the heart had to work harder to propel blood through the kidneys, but it is probably more correct to suppose that the toxic influences which are responsible for the nephritis are also to blame for the stimulation wrought upon the circulatory system. It has long been said, too, that when the waste products of metabolism are not eliminated by the kidneys, they are vicariously excreted by other parts of the body, by purging, sweating and other modes. This again is not entirely borne out by experimental facts; true it is, clinically, that such methods of treatment in part are the most satisfactory we know. Nevertheless, very little urea can be excreted by the skin; and the possibility exists of concentrating the toxic materials in the body by the plentiful escape of water by the skin, so that uremia may be induced. The ulcerations that are prone to occur in the intestinal tract in nephritis are probably due to ammonia from the urea excreted into the tract, assisted by increased bacterial activity.

Uremia.—The symptom complex known as uremia consists of headache, gastro-intestinal irritation, grave disturbance of the nervous system indicated by convulsions or coma, accompanied by high blood pressure and cardiac hypertrophy. Its cause is not yet known; the toxic effect of all the known urinary substances combined is scarcely sufficient to account for it. Perhaps, first of all, it is cumulative, and so the toxic effects quickly produced by experiment are not strictly parallel. Perhaps, too, the affected tissues have a special power in fixing certain toxins. The work of the ductless gliming these states is not yet sufficiently known.

Very important, clinically, is the fact that the retention of toxic substances, not excreted by the kidneys, leads to depression of the general vitality, so that the subjects of such retention are liable to succumb to infections of all sorts.

THE KIDNEY

Congenital Abnormalities. Absence of both kidneys is not consisted with life, but absence of one has been seen in our own autopsy experient eight times. It is said, however, that in such cases careful examination of the connective tissue will reveal some trace of kidney tissue. Absent of the kidney has no bearing upon the advantage of the same side, but often accompanied by absence or anomal. The genital structure of the ureter may be absent or a blind ureter may be presented in the presence of the other ladge, and the result that before removing a kidney the presence of the other ladge, and the prevented the surgeon from removing the only kidney.



Congenital cystic kidney. Section showing multiple cysts affecting both cortex and medulla (McGill Path, Mus.)

Anomalies of Shape.—In unilateral absence of the kidney, the single kidney present is generally larger than usual, and often miss apen. Even when both are present one may be large, the other small. Anomalies of shape are often accompanied by anomalies of position (the brim of the pelvis being a frequent site), and nearly always by some unusual arrangement of the arteries and veins. Fusion of the two kidneys, usually at the lower end, gives the horseshoe kidney; and a very common and quite unimportant anomaly is the persistence of the fætal lobulation of the organ. Clinically important is the undue mobility of the kidney, which ranges from that observed in an organ that sagslightly, to that seen in a kidney which may be felt in any part of the abdomen. The congenital cystic kidney has been referred to elsewher especially with regard to its causation (p. 291) such a kidney possess a number of thin-walled cysts, often reinforced by fibrous tissue are containing limpid fluid. They may be found quite late in life

Circulatory Disturbances.—Anemia.—Anemia of the kidney and part of a general anemia affecting all organs or no rise from sometic

that prevents ingress of blood to the organ. The result of a sudden anemia may be anuria, and a sidden anemia from spasm of the renal artery is supposed to be the suse of hysterical souria. As a result of long-contained anemia, epithelial degeneration is site.

Hyperemia.— Hyperemia results from unflame at m, or as a result of a general or local venous stasis. With an incompetent heart and a weal arterial flow, there is at first cortical and glomerular congestion with the appearance of albumin in the urine, and the quently degrations. The kidney is large, firm, and rest its crossue strip readily, its stellate via are injected, its cut surface blood and its position in the hyperemia state. long much add to "evanotic addration," and a well-market fibrate results. The properties all the catalog of sight specific gravity, we all the control of a kidney is scanty, of sight specific gravity, we all the control of their nephritis; it fact, as we are stated to the ordinary sense of the term

Thrombosis.—The arteries or the of the sold of the sol

Embolism.—En bolism of the renal arte vir a pranch of that artery infarct if the emitias beinfective, abscess results; if not, the familiar yellow rigolden at times, as in eclampsia the original partition of infarcted in its entirety. Exclusion the familiar infarct is seen of the cortex appears as of the largest infarcts, as a searance of blood temporal infarct infarcts.

Inflar mation.

that resignate the charter the charter to conduct the charter the charter to conduct the charter the cha

It is be said the strong of the clinician and the pathology is necessar the underst if any disease; it seems as if the pat dogists had over classified in parties, just as the clinicians have over saified the cirrhoses of the liver. The charge of incompleteness may it made a first the classification which follows. It seems as if nephrius, clinical could be divided into acute interstitial, acute interstitial, and chronic parenchy matous forms.

Of the clinician and the gardinary disease; it seems as if nephrius, clinical could be divided into acute interstitial, acute interstitial, and chronic parenchy matous forms.

The charge of incomplete-interstitial, acute interstitial, acute interstitial, acute interstitial, acute interstitial, and chronic parenchy matous forms.

The charge of incomplete-interstitial, acute interstitial, acute int

id me- illa

t consistent

experience

xamination

: Absence

side, but is

structures.

he bladder.

that before

be verified:

Drevented

the single is a pen i

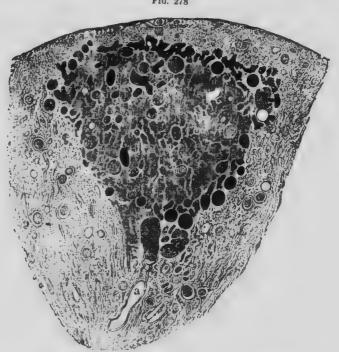
ana met

MSSC5-

sue ar

entirely so, because, apart from their presence as a causative face bacteria may gain entrance as a secondary or a terminal infect Acute interstitial nephritis is exemplified by the case of a kidraffected, like other organs, in bacteriemia; acute parenchymat nephritis by a kidney suddenly attacked and made to degenerate a diffusible toxin, as in diphtheria; chronic interstitial nephritis by kidney that is small, shrunken, damaged by numerous attacks of eit of the foregoing, and chronic parenchymatous nephritis by the lar swollen kidney of many alcoholics. In indicating the characters chronic parenchymatous and chronic interstitial nephritis, one might



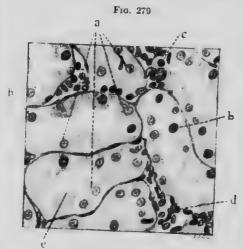


Anemic infarct of cortex of kidney to show engulation necrosis, with surrounding some of congestion a, artery. (Orth.)

say that no case of a chronic kidney lesion can exemplify the one or the other purely; parenchymatous and interstitial changes are seen side by side, and it is not possible for any considerable degree of one to exist without the other. There are two extremes between which lie all the cases; on the one hand, a kidney with marked fibrosis as the most prominent feature, and on the other, one in which a maximum degree of parenchymatous change is allied with little fibrosis.

The conditions that are essentially non-infective will be dealt with first.

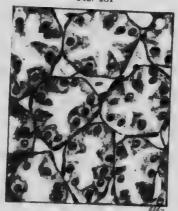
Acute Parenchymatous Nephritis.—This is known as acute Bright's disease and is the state induced by a diffusible toxin such as is liberated in the infectious diseases. The slightest grade is a state of cloudy swelling; in fact it is immaterial whether the term cloudy swelling or



Early stage of acute parenchymatous nephritis, with marked cloudy swelling. Cell bodies are cloudy with beginning dissociation. Note variation in nuclear stain: a, pale staining nuclei; b, deeply staining; c, d, intertubular capillary; e, cell with pale invisible nucleus.



Acute parenchymatous nephritis, later stage with more acute disintegration of the cell budies into the lumen.



Youte parenchymatous nephritis, fully developed. A characteristic group of convoluted tubules showing enlarged stellate lumina, cells irregular with some multiplication.

the term parenchymatous nephritis be used. The most extreme grade is that in which the kidney tubules are necrosed, their nuclei killed, and if ir function arrested all at once by an overwhelming force of toxin; in his state, there may be no changes wrought in the outward shape of

of congestion;

sative factor.

nal infection.

of a kidney,

enchymatous

egenerate by hritis by the

cks of either by the large, characters of s, one might

one or the en side by exist withthe cases; promitent of paren-

ealt with

the tubule and the glomerulus, no distortion, but the affected tubuare seen in a stained specimen without nuclei or other sign of moleculife.

In general, the kidney is enlarged and may be cedematous, the cort is pale, the stellate veins injected, and the lobules distinct; the capsustrips readily, and on section the cortex springs up, released from pressur so that it stands higher than the medulla, the cut edge at the capsue everting and appearing rounded. The generally pale cortex contras with the darker-red medulla, and sometimes minute hemorrhages capsed seen in its substance.

Microscopically, all grades of damage are to be seen from cloud swelling of the tubular cells with some encroachment upon the lume to a state of necrosis of entire tubules, glomeruli and all; or merely on part of a tubule may show no nuclei and the rest be in a state of cloud swelling. In the tubules, especially low down, may be seen cells of casts; in Bowman's capsule the glomerular epithelium may be swolled and degenerated, and exudate may be seen in the space of the capsule Especially in scarlet fever there may be a cellular migration into the glomerulus, a condition known as glomerulitis or glomerular nephritis. Hemorrhage may occur into the glomerular space, and blood and blood casts appear in the urine, warranting the use or the term hemorrhagic nephritis. Clearly such a series of lesions is the outcome of a diffuse toxemia, nor is this qualified by the fact that oftentimes one finds a cellular exudate in parts of such a kidney. The highly intoxicated organ is in a fit state to allow the admission of a secondary infection.

Instead of dealing immediately with acute interstitial nephritis, which will be considered with other infective conditions proper of the kidney, the other forms of Bright's disease, i. e. the chronic forms of nephritis, will be considered.

Chronic Parenchymatous Nephritis.—This form, called also chronic diffuse nephritis, is characterized by a large kidney, sometimes "large red," or even "large mottled kidney." It may be merely a continuance of the acute parenchymatous state, or it may arise insidiously. Often the kidney of the alcoholic exhibits this variety of change. The dilatation of the cortical tubules is an important factor in the increased size of the organ. In addition while we distinguish here a certain implication of the interstitial tissue, it is notable that it is mainly in the form of a proliferation of connective tissue, and as fibroblasts are numerous we have here partly the cause of its increased size. It is in the state of enlargement, to be followed finally by contraction if the patient live long enough. The connective tissue of the kidney behaves as does the connective tissue of any other area in inflammation, passing first into a stage in which its bulk is increased, and subsequently to a stage in which its bulk is lessened by the

¹The recent work of Löhlein and Gaskell suggests that the large mottled kidnes is a type apart, associated characteristically with acute endocarditis, and multiple small emboli in the glomeruli and elsewhere with resulting local disturbances of circulation.

eted tubules of molecular

the cortex the capsule om pressure, the capsule x contrasts rhages can

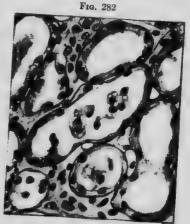
om cloudy the lumen merely one of cloudy en cells or be swollen e capsule. n into the nephritis. and blood morrhagic a diffuse ne finds a toxicated fection. nephritis, er of the

o chronic
es "large
It may
r it may
bits this
n imporwhile we
ue, it is
nnective
ne cause

followed mective by other lk is in-

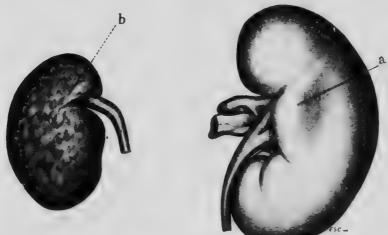
d kidnes multiple ances of contraction of fibrosis. It thus sometimes occurs that chronic parenchymatous nephritis is but an earlier stage of the so-called diffuse chronic interstitial nephritis.

The enlargement of the kidney gives it a plump look and if it be held with the pelvis in the palm of the hand, its convex surface looks broad, somewhat square, and there may even be a kind of flattening along the convex border which reminds one of the longitudinal furrow over the spine of a fat hog, whence the name "hog-back" kidney. This somewhat quadrilateral shape may, however, be congenital. The bulky kidney is sometimes soft, although if congested it is firm, the capsule peels readily and leaves a smooth surface on which the veins are dilated and prominent. The prevailing color may be pale, or red, or mottled. On section the edge may evert, and the cortex is larger, deeper than normal, pale and fatty looking; this fatty appearance is due to the presence not



Section from a case of parenchymatous nephritis to show the (regenerated and modified) flattened epithelium lining the dilated convoluted tubules. As indicated by the loosened and desquamated cells in the central tubule the inflammatory process is here still continuing.





Let ω white (a) and small granular, contracted kidneys (b) (one-half natural size), to show relative size,

of free fat, but possibly of fatty soaps; anemia, too, has somewhat to diswith it. Microscopically, the tubules differ widely. Some may be it state of cloudy swelling with small lumina; others may show

flattened epithelium with relatively and actually large lumina, the necharacteristic type of change; others are so dilated as to suggest a they will subsequently give rise to the development of cysts. Fats soaps or even myelin droplets may be seen in the cells, which tend of to be irregular, with ragged edges. Casts and debris may be seen the tubules. Cellular infiltration may be noted in the interstitial tiss. In the glomeruli, albumin may coagulate in Bowman's capsule, or debris of cells may be seen. The glomeruli are large, often lobulated that a glomerulus may seem to be cleft into two or three or more lobal At other times the glomerulus seems to fill completely its space, and the lining of Bowman's capsule, instead of being one cell thick and scarce

distinguished liness, the first in proliferation.

Chronic Internation of the interstite of the hand, grade that at no time than usual. Convarious grades of typical of the abedescribed. Finances, such as tracted kidney, fibraid.

Chronic interstitial nephritis (small granular kidney). (McGill Path, Mus.)

discernible, may be a definite, eas distinguished line of perceptible thic ness, the first indication of interstit proliferation.

Chronic Interstitial Nephritis. - T above form may progress into the or the interstitial form may, on the other hand, gradually arise in a kidne that at no time has been much large than usual. Considering that there a various grades of involvement, a kidne typical of the advanced condition wi be described. For such there are man names, such as granular kidney, con tracted kidney, small white kidney fibroid, cirrhotic or sclerotic kidney or the kidney of indurative nephritis There seem to be many different ways at least by which a kidney arrives as this; as a sequel to parenchymatous nephritis, as a sequel to acute nephritis without the interposition of a stage in which the kidney is large, from arterioselerosis, from gout, from chemical

poisons like lead, and as a result of old age. The kidney is small, hard, firmly elastic, resists the knife, and its outer surface is rough with small knobs of a few millimeters' diameter. When one attempts to remove the capsule, it comes away in many pieces after the exercise of much pulling, and when it is being stripped one may see gradually breaking the tiny fibrous strands which have held it. The capsule itself may be much thickened. Cysts of various size, from those scarcely to be seen by the naked eye to those a centimeter in diameter, may jut from the surface or be opened by the cut; a clear fluid runs out of them. The pelvis looks large, and there is usually considerable fat lying in the connective tissue between it and the kidney substance. The pelvis looks large and the kidney substance.

The cortex is often hardly distinguishable as such, and, when it can be distinguished, is narrowed to half its usual width or less; in the arteriosclerotic form especially, its least and greatest widths differ widely. The color of cortex and medulla alike may be grey, red, mottled, or may exhibit any combination of these tints. On section, the tubules which in the normal kidney appear to touch one another are here separated by definite bands of fibrous tissue, which is often infiltrated by the cells of acute inflammation; in some parts of the field one may find



Section of cortex of kidney from a case of chronic interstitial nephritis (small granular kidney): a, a, \ldots treas presenting dilated tubules and hypertrophied glomeruli alternating with (k) fibrosed a cas, c, d, atrophied tubules. The region selected does not show the hyaline contracted remains of glomeruli, usually observable in these areas. Note that the surface depressions correspond to the regions of fibrosis.

almost entirely fibrosis, in others almost entirely tubules, and these areas alternate, the fibrosis being greatest in the vicinity of an arteria recta. This alternation is especially characteristic of the arteriosclerotic form, whereas that following acute parenchymatous disturbance is apt to exhibit a more diffuse fibrosis. The tubules are often large, sometimes very large, and the epithelium may be flattened or absent; other tubules, leadamaged, may still have an epithelium relatively so normal as to show cleridy, fatty, vacuolated, or other degeneration. The glomeruli are fewer tien normal; some are large, partite, and active; others are represented

stitial tissue.

osule, or the
obulated, so
more lobes.

ace, and the
and scarcely
finite, easily
tible thickinterstitial

itis. — The
into this:
ay, on the

ina, the most

suggest that

sts. Fats or

ch tend often

y be seen in

into this: y, on the n a kidney nuch larger it there are t, a kidnev dition will are many iney, cone kidney, c kidney, nephritis. rent ways arrives at hymatous nephritis a stage in n arteriochemical is small. ugh with empts to

exercise

gradually

e capsule

scarcely

ter, may

as out of

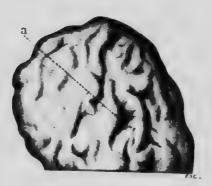
able fat

tance, so

seemed.

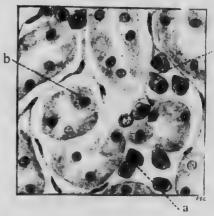
merely by a round hyaline mass in which a few flattened nuclei are seen; these are evidently quite out of commission. On coördinating the gross and microscopic appearance, it is found that the granular surface is due to the effect of fibrosis; where a band of fibrous tissue has pulled in the capsule, a depression exists on the surface, and the knobs are the projection of masses of tissue not pulled in by the fibrosis (see Fig. 285). If such a kidney have sufficier * tubules left, it may show the marks of cloudy swelling, but too often there are not enough for this, and the cut edge remains flat and well-defined, without any eversion of the edge. One is struck by the large amount of urine that can be secreted by such a damaged kidney.

Fig. 286



Surface of an arteriosclerotic kidney to show the characteristic depressions (a).

Fig. 287



Section from a case of scute scarlatinal nephritis: convoluted tubules showing acute parenchymatous together with acute interstitial nephritis, evidenced by the plasma cell infiltration: a, a, between the tubules

Acute Interstitial Nephritis.—In this and the related infective, septic, and suppurative conditions we have to consider a twofold circumstance: (1) that there are more or less marked, the results of the toxins acting in some of the ways we have just considered, and (2) that there is active inflammation following infection of the kidney tissue itself. Before proceeding to the infective states proper of the kidney, the reader may be reminded that in cases of infectious disease such as scarlet fever, there is an interstitial exudation of marked degree, but we would rather consider this as a fortuitous modification of a (primarily) parenchymatous nephritis than give the impression that Bright's disease has an acute interstitial type peculiar to it.

Infection reaches the kidney through the blood, or from the ureter and pelvis up the tubules, or more rarely directly from without, as from a wound, or equally rarely by extension from a nearby structure.

In a stage earlier than that of suppuration, a kidney so infected will

show cellular infiltration of the type familiar in acute inflammation, and an accompanying cloudy swelling of the tubules. Such constitutes the not-often-seen typical picture of acute interstitial nephritis. It is in the more advanced forms that we shall consider it, as these are so much more important practically.

The source of the infection, whether from the blood or by way of the tubules makes some difference in the distribution of the abscesses. In the former case the kidney is infected, like other organs, by the bacteria in the blood; actual emboli may be the form in which they are carried. This is especially noticeable in cases of subacute vegetative endocarditis, and here actual small infarcts or areas of necrosis involve portions of the glomeruli. Both kidneys are involved, and the sites of infection are scattered apparently at random; if suppuration has not occurred, hyperemic areas with mottling may indicate the spots where the inflammation is progressive; if suppuration has occurred, the cut surface shows small multiple abscesses, which may appear on the surface also; when the capsule is stripped, these golden-yellow areas show well against the reddened background. The abscesses in the papillary part of the kidney may be elongated indicating that in this direction the pus found least resistance; elsewhere they are usually round. In an ascending infection from the pelvis, the abscesses tend to be linear, or to be arranged in groups that are linear, following the course of radii from the tip of a pyramid to the cortex; in a section of the whole kidney, abscesses may be seen arranged along such radii, but not continuously so, parts of the tubule that have served for the conduction of the infection being spared. Microscopically, the abscess presents nothing that need be here detailed; the surrounding tissue may show cedema, and degrees of infiltration varying according to the distance from the abscess; the parenchyma is likely to be affected as much from the general systemic toxemia as from the proximity of the abscess; by this is meant that if a tubule near an abscess be in a state of cloudy swelling it may have been rendered so by toxins that have come originally from this or another abscess and traversed the circulation before reaching the tubule.

Such a condition of the kidney tissue is usually called suppurative nephritis, in older phraseology "surgical kidney"; in the case in which it is caused by an ascending infection the pelvis must have been first affected (pyelitis), so that as soon as the kidney has become involved we may speak of a pyelonephritis; should the abscesses become large, so that the kidney is converted into a sac full of pus, the condition is called pyonephrosis. Should the abscesses remain small and encapsulated, healing may ensue. On the other hand, the infection may spread to the tissues around the kidney with the ultimate formation of abscess

is these connective tissues, the so-called perinephric abscess.

Before leaving the suppurative processes of the kidney, it may be said the pyogenic cocci, the Bacillus coli, and the gonococcus are the most in all agents of infection, and that the presence of stone is not infrequently a redisposing cause; the sac in which the stone lies may readily become

uclei are

dinating

granular

ssue has e knobs

osis (see

show the

for this.

eversion

t can be

nal nephriparenchymphritis, evia, between

, septic, istance: ins actat there e itself. e reader et fever, d rather nchymhas an

e ureter as from re. ted will

infected, and a calculous pyonephrosis be the result. On opening such a kidney, the sac wall is apt to be fairly thick, made of the compressed kidney tissue, fortified by the capsule; the inner wall is often smooth, and the calculus may be seen adapted in shape to the bed in which it lies; the pus may have no outlet, and in process of time may become

inspissated or even calcified.

In the above paragraphs it may seem that the classification of nephritis has been reduced to terms too simple to be effective; it may be pointed out, however, that the great complexity of terms generally in use would never have arisen if there had been a well-understood relationship between clinical signs and pathological observations. The truth is that no such accurate correlation exists; the clinical observations are very often merely variations upon the old theme of albumin, casts, and cedema, while the pathological observations are bewilderngly diverse. In the present state of our knowledge it is not often safe to predict what kind of kidney is going to be found in any given case; anyone who has followed his cases to the autopsy table has found small granular kidneys where he expected large white kidneys, and normal looking kidneys where he expected small granular kidneys, and so on; little or no dependence is to be put upon the value of granular or hyaline casts as indicating differences of lesion; the urine examined is an infinitesimal fraction of that excreted; the amount of urine and the number of casts must vary according to the amount of the urine and the completeness of the centrifugalization; and the reparative process in the kidney may exceed our expectation. We have some admiration for a certain pathologist of eminence whose pathological diagnosis rests content with the simple statement that "the kidneys indicate Bright's disease," without attempting any more elaborate refinement.

Tuberculosis.—Tuberculosis of the kidney may be part of a general infection or part, even the chief lesion, of an infection confined largely, if not entirely, to the genito-urinary system. It is theoretically possible that tuberculosis might be primary in the kidney, the bacilli having gained no foothold and having caused no permanent lesion at their place of entry. It is not likely, however, that such conditions obtain frequently; careful examination will usually reveal a latent or quietly active focus in some lymph node or elsewhere.

As part of a general miliary tuberculosis, the lesions in the kidney are seen as small hyperemic spots that on section are leukocytic or lymphocytic collections, or as larger greyish or white dots appearing through the substance and on the surface of the organ; early abscesses or small fibromas may be mistaken by the naked eye for tubercles. These last seem to arise oftener in connection with the intertubular

than with the glomeruli.

In localized tuberculosis of the genito-urinary tract, the involvement of the kidney is more extensive, the infection is often bilateral usually unequally advanced on the two sides, and caseation readily

ming such impressed a smooth, which it y become

of nepht may be generally derstood ns. The observaalbumin. bewildernot often ny given as found eys, and kidneys. granular xamined rine and he urine parative ve some nological kidnevs laborate

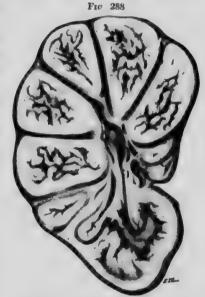
general largely, possible having at their s obtain quietly

kidney cytic or pearing oscesses bercles. tubular

nvolvelateral readily occurs; the pelvis, if not primarily affected, quickly becomes so. Whether, in fact, the infection travels from bladder to kidney or from kidney to bladder is a debated point; a good many cases seem to be definitely the latter. The caseated masses may fuse until the entire kidney seems to be a series of compartments full of caseous or caseo-purulent matter; between them septa run; half a dozen of such sacs may seem to fill the entire organ, including the pelvis, and the capsule, aided or not by a thin compressed layer of kidney tissue, may be the external covering (tuberculous pyonephrosis). Except in the case of the ureter becoming blocked or its walls gummed together, puts and at times blood will accessed.

pus and at times blood will escape into the urine, and tubercle bacilli may be detected. This is, of course, possible only when the lesion becomes an "open" one, because in the case of thoroughly circumscribed caseous areas or of miliary tubercles, no way of escape is present. Much care has been taken with the detail necessary to determine tubercle bacilli in the urine; it is necessary to be sure that what seem to be tubercle bacilli are not in reality smegma bacilli, which are acid-fast. The formamin method has simplified the search a good deal. It seems to be now generally conceded that no differential stain is infallible; the greatest care must be taken to wash the external orifices, to obtain the urine by catheter, and finally to use absolute alcohol as a decolorizer in addition to the ordinarily employed dilute mineral acid.

Syphilis.—Apart from the rare oc-



Tuberculosis of kidney; one-half of the organ from a case of tuberculous pyonephrosis; the organ is converted into a series of sacs filled with brittle caseous matter. (McGill Path. Mus.)

currence of gumma in the kidney, the recognition of syphilis in the kidney by any naked-eye lesion is a matter of great uncertainty. The kidney of the newborn is sometime and affected, and the *Treponema pallidum* has been demonstrate. Even the picture of multiple scarring which is attributed to syphilis, may be copied by lesions of a less specific nature.

Actinomycosis, glanders, and leprosy have been known to affect the kidney, but all are rare.

Regressive Tissue Changes.—Atrophy.—Apart from the atrophy of fil rosis which is a familiar picture, atrophy may be said to occur in rasmus and in senility, but it must be remembered that in the latter in the arterial changes of old age may be the cause. Atrophy from tivity occurs in tubules whose glomeruli are damaged or congenitally

imperfect. Pressure atrophy occurs in hydronephrosis, because the obstruction to the outflow of urine renders the intrarenal pressure high.

Cloudy Swelling.—It will be already clear that this results from toxin of many kinds. The cells are enlarged, of ground-glass appearance and the lumen is reduced in size. The best method of demonstrating cloudy swelling is to examine by the microscope a section cut by freezing, without preliminary treatment of any kind; the healthy tubules appear colorless, the tubules that are swollen are grey and opaque acetic acid clears them. In the stained section the lumen of the tubule may be stellate, and the staining power of the nucleus less than usual.

Fatty Degeneration.—This, like the previous change, which it follows, is seen to best advantage in the convoluted tubules. Fat droplets may be demonstrated by the use of Sudan III, the granules or droplets appearing golden or vellow.

Hyaline Degeneration.—This is to be seen in any section of advanced interstitial nephritis, the glomeruli appearing as round masses, smaller than normal. The hyaline cast is probably due to the change undergone by epithelial cells after they are shed, although occasionally coagulated albumin may form a cast of like appearance.

Vacuolar Degeneration.—Vacuoles may be seen in the epithelium of severely damaged tubules in nephritis, usually occupying the part of the cell nearest the lumen; the discharge of such vacuoles is thought to increase the albumin in the urine.

Amyloid.—This appears in the kidney as a deposit occurring first in the glomeruli, in cases of general amyloid deposit. The condition has nothing to do with the appearance of the waxy, so-called amyloid cast, which is probably a modification of the more frequently seen hyaline cast. In advanced cases not only the glomeruli are amyloid, but the capillaries and the basement membranes of the tubules show the change. The vessel walls are thickened, transparent, and the lumina may be almost or entirely obliterated. In an advanced case, the cortex is greyish, in places translucent, and the glomeruli may be recognizable as grey dots, which react to the tests referred to in the paragraphs dealing with amyloid in general.

Pigments.—Pigments found in the kidney are derived from the blood or bile. Blood pigments may be laid down in any part of the kidney, appearing even in the secreting cells. Bile pigments lead to a diffuse or circumscribed greenish or yellow color, the secreting cells again readily becoming affected.

Uric Acid.—Reference has been made elsewhere (p. 317) to the ill-understood deposit of urates seen in the tips of the pyramids in infants at birth or shortly after, the salts are deposited in the lumina of the discharging tubules.

Progressive Tissue Changes.—Hypertrophy. When one kidney is removed the remaining one grows larger by increase in the size of the glomeruli and the tubules; it is not certain that in the very young

cause the pressure

com toxins opearance, onstrating by freezy tubules I opaque; the tubule n usual. it follows, plets may

advanced s, smaller ndergone pagulated

droplets

elium of part of thought

ring first condition amyloid hyaline but the change. may be cortex is gnizable ragraphs

ne blood kidney, diffuse s again

the illinfants of the

dney is size of young

there is not an actual growth of new tubules, but such is unlikely. The younger the person, the greater is the capacity for hypertrophy.

Tumors.—It will be recalled that the mixed tumors of the kidney are of considerable importance and embryological interest (see p. 210). Apart from teratoblastomas, there are certain mesoblastic tumors to be considered of both hylic and lepidic types.

Fibromas.— These are small fibrous masses, appearing in the kidney, of whitish color, which are apt to be mistaken for miliary tubercles or even for abscesses. They are usually so small as to be barely distinguished by the eye, or may reach the size of a pinhead.

Lipomas, myomas, and myxomas are occasionally seen. The pure lipoma is usually small, but large ones have been reported, and they are to be distinguished from the "hypernephromas," which also may be very rich in fat. Most so-called myxomas are cases of myxomatous degeneration of some other form of tumor. The so-called angioma is probably always more correctly a telangiectasis.

Adenomas.—These vary in size from a millimeter in diameter to several centimeters, are single or multiple, soft and white. Histologically, they are solid or tubular, made of columnar cells, and the tubules may even be dilated into cysts. These adenomas are prone in later life to give rise to carcinoma, and both terms, considering the origin of the kidney, have to be used in their histological sense.

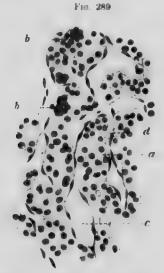
Carcinomas.—Carcinomas occur, developed from previous adenomas and otherwise; the diagnosis between adenoma and the malignant growth may be difficult to make, especially in those carcinomas arising from the tubular epithelium, as distinct from those of pelvic origin. The scirrhous, simple, and medullary types are found, the tumor being often of considerable size, but not attaining the bulk reached by the sarcomas. Prone to degeneration, hemorrhage is a likely occurrence. Secondary carcinomas are more common in the kidney than primary.

Sarcomas.—Endotheliomas, peritheliomas, and sarcomas of round and spindle cells are found in the kidney, both in youth and in adult life; the large tumors, supposedly of this nature, in the very young, often prove to be mixed (teratoid) tumors rather than pure sarcomas.

Mixed Tumors (Teratoblastomas).—These are found at birth or shortly afterward. They are large, localized soft growths, prone to hemorrhage and to degeneration, and have been known by a great variety of names in which the sarcomatous nature is recognized. The growth consists of a sarcoma-like matrix in which there are epithelial elements, sometimes tubular, as well as fat, muscle, cartilage, and so on. They sometimes grow to a size truly enormous.

Hypernephromas."—These, which we have elsewhere referred to as most beliomas (see p. 275), are masses of considerable size, circumscribed, and with a connective-tissue capsule, from which septa run into the mass of the tumor. The tumor is usually soft, yellowish, or brown, often red from hemorrhage and in some cases large collections of clot are found. The new growth pushes the kidney tissue before it, so that this may lie

spread out upon the surface of the tumor. Metastases readily of Histologically, the tumor consists of a meshwork of capillaries, we rows of cells variously arranged along them; the cells are often those of the adrenal cortex, while in places they are a ranged masses and look like endothelial cells, which latter are in fact someti proliferated. Thus, a hypernephroma at one place may look like angioma, at another like an endothelioma, or even like a sarcoma



Section of a portion of a hypernephroma of the kidney. A characteristic area showing columns of clear polygonal cells, a, lying in immediate apposition to the endothelium (d) of the capillary sinuses (c). At b, areas of infiltration and degeneration.



Fig. 290

Section from another portion of the m tumor, more highly magnified, show tubular arrangement: a, swollen transluctumor cella surrounding a definite lum b, capillary: c, fat droplets in tumor ce (Buday.)

carcinoma. The cells are usually polygonal, but may be cubical columnar. An abundance of fat is sometimes seen in the cells.

Cysts.—Reference has already been made to congenital cystic kidner retention cysts are very common, either as the comparatively sms ones to be found in the kidney of interstitial nephritis or the larger one that appear in otherwise fairly healthy kidneys of old people.

THE URETERS

Abnormalities.—The congenital anomalies of the ureters (an necessarily of the kidney pelves) have been considered with those of the kidney; the circulatory disturbances are of no moment, apart from their occurrence as features of more serious changes. Foreign body

eadily occur, illaries, with re often like a anged in ct sometimes look like an a sarcoma or



ion of the same mified, showing den translucent definite lumen. in tumor cells

cubical or cells. stic kidney; ively small larger ones le.

eters (and th those of apart from reign body,

particularly stone, is, however, of much practical interest. Salts may he deposited in the pelvis of the kidney in the form of gravel or as the larger calculi, differing in size from the small particles that pass down the ureter without inconvenience, to large, coral-like masses that fill every crevice in the pelvis of the kidney. These are usually uric or uratic in nature, although exceptionally calcium carbonate and calcium phosphate are deposited. Lying in the pelvis of the kidney a stone may irritate the surrounding tissues and may after infection, become the centre of a calculous pyelitis, with irritative thickening of the walls of the pelvis a state of affairs that soon allows the suppuration to spread to the kidney proper, with pyonephrosis, until ultimately a sac full of pus and calculi may be all of the organ that remains. It often happens that a stone or a piece of a stone leaves the pelvis and proceeds in the urinary stream down the ureter, where it is apt to be caught, either at the brim of the pelvis or just before the ureter enters the bladder. This gives rise to renal colic or more strictly ureteral colic, a very important complication of nephrolithiasis; the stone may be incapable of dislodgement, save by opening the ureter and removing it manually. Apart from calculi, blood clot, a piece of tissue, or of a tumor may act as a foreign body in the ureter. The ureter, serving as it does for conduction, is liable to have this function interfered with in various ways; stenosis may occur from general inflammatory or fibrous thickening of the wall, or from a local thickening acting as a valve. Obstruction may arise from the internal causes referred to above, as well as by pressure from outside, which may be exerted by a variety of slipe 19, such as tumors, misplaced organs or masses of inflammatery estimate or inflamed tissues. Kinks may be produced in the ureter, specially when the kidney is unduly mobile, and the temporary block to support duced may give rise to hydronephrosis, which is a distension primarily of the pelvis of the kidney and of that part of the ureter above the obstruction. It must not be forgotten that continued obstruction in any part of the urinary tract may give origin to hydronephrosis. The pelvis dilates gradually because the urine secreted into it is unable to escape, and as the urine increases the kidney tissue as pressed upon until it becomes very thin; a hydronephrotic sac may come to contain several liters of clear fluid, of low specific gravity, containing usually a little urea, rarely albumin. It sometimes happens that a hydronephrosis due to a kink in the ureter discharges itself at

intervals, the very increase in size in some way "undoing" the kink. Inflammation.—Pyelitis.—This most commonly results from an extension upward of infecting organisms from the bladder and urethra; it may occur by the infection of the ureter (ureteritis), the inflammation spreading by contiguity; or the infective agent of a cystitis or ureteritis of the lower end of the tube may be carried by the blood to one or both kidneys. Any interference with the outflow of urine tending to allow the arine to decompose increases the liability to such infection. More rate, by pyelitis and ureteritis occur by extension of a hematogenous

infection of the kidney. The pyogenic cocci, Bacillus coli, and gono-coccus are all effective. A suppurative state of one kidney may readily infect the other by way of the ureters and bladder.

According to the severity of the infection, there may be merely a catarrhal state of the lining membrane of the pelvis, or the fluid exuded may be purulent, with or without the formation of a membrane; when stone is present, the irritant effect of the stone superadded may result in an ulcerative or even a gangrenous state of the wall. When the inflammation is of long duration, productive inflammatory overgrowths of papillate nature may be noticed. The ureter in its course can reproduce any or all of these states, although the complications due to the presence of a stone are infrequent, because the stone is not likely to remain at any one spot without precipitating the symptoms of obstruction. Finally, it is to be noted that in states of chronic inflammation of the pelvis and ureter formed masses of mucin may be thrown off by the surfaces, and their passage down to the bladder may be the occasion of attacks of ureteral colic.

Tuberculosis.—Miliary tubercles may be found in the pelvis or ureter in cases of generalized tuberculosis, but more often a localized caseous state of the pelvic wall follows tuberculous infection of the kidney. The wall becomes thickened, nodular, caseous tubercles coalesce, and the pelvic cavity becomes merely one compartment more of the multi-locular caseous kidney (tuberculous pyelonephrosis). Perforation of the wall is provided against by the considerable thickening that it undergoes.

Parasites.—Parasites infesting the kidney, and, therefore, the pelvis and ureter, are not commonly found, but echinococcus, cysticercus, filaria sanguinis, and eustrongylus gigas may be mentioned among those that have been found.

Progressive Tissue Changes.—Tumors.—Tumors of the pelvis of the kidney and of the ureter are rare. Villous growths—papilloma—are the most common, and are apt to give origin to serious hemorrhage. Sarcoma, carcinoma, and teratoma are seen occasionally.

Cysts.—Following chronic inflammation, the wall of the pelvis or ureter (or even that of the bladder and urethra) may exhibit numerous small, pinhead cysts, containing watery, yellow, or even brown fluid. The trigone of the bladder shows the best examples. There is with these cysts some epithelial proliferation, and the condition is known as pyelitis or ureteritis cystica.

THE BLADDER

Congenital Anomalies.—The bladder may be absent, the ureters opening into the urethra, or the bladder and rectum may fail to be separated, forming a cloaca. Septa of the bladder may exist. Extrophy of the bladder, the most important anomaly, is seen when the two halves of the body have failed to unite along the median line; the posterior

nd gonoy readily

merely a d exuded ne; when ay result when the reprostes to the likely to obstructuration

caseous kidney. sce, and e multition of that it

rown off

be the

e pelvis ticercus, og those

lloma orrhage. elvis or merous

n fluid.
is with
own as

ureters
to be
urophy
halves
sterior

wall of the bladder lies open to the air, the pubic bones often lying separated by a considerable space. Frequently there is also with it epispadias. Ectopia consists of the extrusion of the bladder through a gap in the wall. The urachus may remain patent (vesico-umbilical fistula), or by imperfect closure urachal cysts may be caused.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Hyperemia.—Active hyperemia occurs as a stage of inflammation, and may exist without developing further, in cases where the urine is irritating, by reason of excessive acidity or the presence of certain chemical substances. Passive congestion, affecting especially the trigonal region, accompanies general systemic congestion; cedema is a frequent accompaniment. Hemorrhage in the form of petechiæ is seen in cases of cysticis, new growth, and those states in which it is found in the serous and mucous membranes. Hemorrhage in which much blood is effused is generally due to new growth or stone.

Inflammation.—Cystitis.—This occurs by extension of inflammation from the ureter or urethra, or as a result of abnormalities in the contents, viz., the presence of stone or decomposing urine. Rarely the infection is hematogenic. Of all these, the most potent cause is the retention of urine, the distended bladder being less resistant than the normal, and the chemical changes inducing the formation of substances that irritate the wall; in this state, a dirty catheter may introduce the organisms, or washing may wash back the urethral contents, or the blood may carry the necessary germs.

The urine is liable to undergo fermentation, alkalinity being produced by the action of the *micrococcus ureæ*. It is by no means necessary that the urine in cystitis be alkaline; indeed, numerous cases are now reported of cystitis, with acid urine, due to the B. coli.

Acute Cystitis.—Catarrhal cystitis is a comparatively mild affection, and it is notable that the bladder wall at autopsy may show no signs to the naked eye, although the existence of the inflammation before death was undoubted. The mucosa may be faintly reddened or swollen, especially around the trigone. A suppurative state, however, is readily observable. The mucosa is reddened, rugose, and if the urine has been alkaline, macerated. Patches of membrane, free or attached, areas of hemorrhage, the deposit of carbonates and phosphates, and a purulent exudate may be observed. The wall, on section, looks thick, ordenatous and red, and actual abscesses may be seen in it (phlegmonous cystitis). Calcareous deposit is specially likely to occur on the ridges of the ruge, while separation of the folds shows red, weeping furrows in which ulceration is usual.

Chronic Cystitis.—A slight acute cystitis may persist indefinitely and pass into chronic cystitis, as also may the severer forms. Sometimes the bladder is found distended, and sometimes contracted and rugose. As a result of the continuance of the infection, the mucosa and the rest of the wall tend to become hypertrophically thickened. The mucosa remains red, sometimes grey, often ulcerated, with incrustations of carbonates or phosphates.

Tuberculosis.—The most frequent mode of infection of the bladder b tuberculosis is by the passage of bacilli from the kidney; this is evidence by the frequency with which a tuberculous ulceration of the bladde wall at a ureteral orifice is seen. Notwithstanding this, the health bladder wall can resist the attack of the bacilli for a considerable time but a preëxisting cystitis of any degree will lessen this power. Protatic tuberculosis is also able to infect the bladder. The disease seen as miliary tubercles, each grey nodule surrounded by a sma zone of hyperemia where the bladder is infected as part of a generalize tuberculosis, or occasionally where the bacteria from nearby sites have been well distributed in the urine, or by extension from a caseous focuin the bladder wall; more frequent is the localized caseous lesion rapidly ulcerating. This arises by the coalescence of small tubercles and tends to spread over the mucosa rather than deeply into the wal The caseous material, constantly washed away by the urine, may no be evident, and the ulceration may be mistaken for a simple one.

Syphilis.—Gummas of the trigone have been observed, but syphili of the bladder is very rare.

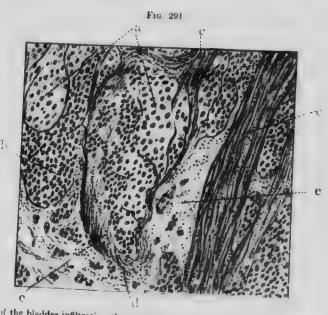
Bacteria and Parasites.—Bacteria are frequently found in the urine the micrococcus urea seems to be a constant inhabitant of many healthy bladders. Pathogenic bacteria of all sorts are found, whether passed through a healthy kidney or not is debatable. Yeasts are found in the urine of diabetics, and sometimes of healthy persons. Among parasites, all those referred to as being found in the kidney, pelvis of the kidney, or ureter are naturally also found in the bladder, added to which are the eggs of Bilharzia hematobium escaping through the mucosa of the organ.

Abnormal Contents. Blood corpuscles or pigments appear in the bladder urine in some cases of nephritis, in ulceration of the tract, in the hemorrhagic diseases and in cases where there is a neoplasm. Desquamated epithelium from the bladder or any higher part of the tract is seen, as well as casts of all kinds, and foreign bodies that have been introduced by the urethra. Lastly, calculi of various sorts are found. Uric acid, urate or oxalate stones may be passed down from the kidney, and may form the nucleus for phosphatic or other deposit. Foreign bodies or masses of epithelium may likewise form a nucleus for pure phosphatic stones.

Regressive Tissue Changes. Atrophy of the bladder occurs in old age, as well as in some cases of advanced cachexia; the muscular tissue becomes greatly lessened, and the wall may be of extreme thinness. Distension, long continued, is able to bring about the condition. The usual celcular degenerations are found in the mucosal cells: widespread necrosis usually occurs from trauma as in parturition or from the pressure of an unusually large calculus.

Progressive Tissue Changes. Hypertrophy.- Hypertrophy of the bladder occurs frequently and forms the of the constantly-used examples by which "hypertrophy to overcome obstruction" is illustrated. It

may result from obstruction, a real work hypertrophy, or may result from irritation of continued inflammation, as in cystitis, or in cases of vesical calculus. Even here, the constant mucosal irritation keeps the muscle more or less constantly stimulated, so that work is also a feature in the production of this form. The bladder wall is thickened and firm; the trabeculæ are enlarged and prominent, and form a kind of basket-work on the inner surface of the bladder; the wall is thinner between the trabeculæ and in places becomes pouched out, giving rise to sacculations or even large diverticula; these are most apt to occur in the fundal half of the bladder.



Epithelionia of the bladder infiltrating the muscle coat: a, b, cancer cells; c, muscle fibres: d, area with commencing invasion; e, e, connective tissue.

Tumors.—New growths, both benign and malignant, are common in the bladder. The commonest is the papilloma, a soft velvety or villous mass attached by a pedicle to the wall. Usually red in color, these growths are very vascular, bleed readily, and necrose easily. Microscopically, the branches of such a tree-like tumor consist of a connective tissue core covered by stratified cubical or columnar cells. Some of these tumors become the seat of malignancy. Fibromas are frequently seen, generally polypoid, and often becoming myxomatous. Myomas, angiomas, adenomas (probably arising from misplaced prostatic glands that sometimes exist in the wall) occur but infrequently.

Carcinoma is usually of the squamous-celled variety; these growths may be flat, nodular, prone to ulceration, whitish and fairly soft, or the may be papillary, cauliflower-like masses.

Sarcoma is rarer than carcaronia, and presents no marked naked eye differences, save that

bladder by s evidenced he bladder he healthy rable time. ver. Prosdisease is by a small generalized sites have seous focus ous lesion. tubercles, o the wall. e, may not e one.

the urine; ny healthy ner passed found in . Among ey, pelvis der, added rough the

ut syphilis

the tract, neoplasm. art of the dies that f various be passed phatic or likewise

lar tissue thinness. on. The despread

of the examples ated. It

perhaps the majority of cases of sarcoma show multiple growth. Secondary carcinoma of the bladder is quite common, in view of the liability of neighboring organs to the growth, viz., the prostate, the rectum, and the uterus.

Displacements of the bladder occur frequently in the female as a accompaniment of displacement of the uterus and other organs; the bladder has been found in hernial sacs, and we are acquainted with case in which a diverticulum of the bladder was removed as part the content of such a sac.

THE URETHRA

Congenital Anomalies.—The urethra may be absent in conjunction with other grave anomalies. It may open on the lower aspect of the penis (hypospadias) or on the upper side (epispadias); it may have most than one opening, or may open at the base of the scrotum or into the vagina. Obliteration or valvular obstruction of the urethra may occur

Inflammation. - Urethritis. - This may arise by uncleanliness, from foreign bodies, from trauma, from calculi, or from the injection of ant septic fluids, but of all cases of urethritis, overwhelmingly the most are due to the gonococcus. Gonorrheal urethritis is more commo in males than in females, because in the latter some other part of th tract is likely to be primarily infected; most frequently the disease i carried by coitus, although infection by means of infected towels of bed linen is possible. The gonococci in smears are apt to be in the pu cells, although they may be outside; it has been found in the conjunc tiva, which is very liable to infection by the gonococcus, that when the pus fails to show the gonococcus, a light rubbing, not sufficient to redder the surface, will remove the superficial epithelial cells in which the gonococci are often abundant. This is not ordinarily mechanically possible in the urethra. When it is specially needed for diagnosis cultures should be made; of late years with improved methods the gonococcus is grown much more easily than was formerly the case.

Early in the disease the surface of the urethra is reddened, with a catarrhal secretion which rapidly becomes purulent. Desquamation of the superficial cells follows, and sometimes ulceration, which may bleed, and the infection may spread backward to the prostate, and the bladder; in the female, the vagina may be affected throughout, and the uterus and tubes attacked; not infrequently the latter become diseased while the former escapes. In the female, Bartholin's glands are certain to be infected; in all these out-of-the-way situations the infection may remain for a long time.

may remain for a long time.

The inflammation may become chronic, and in the male, after the lapse of time, the secretion becomes scanty and less purulent, perhaps only cloudy or even clear to the naked eye (gloot). In the process of healing, the fibrous granulation tissue, if abundant, is apt to subside

le growths, view of the rostate, the

emale as an organs; the nted with a as part of

conjunction pect of the have more or into the may occur. iness, from ion of antithe most e common part of the disease is towels or in the pus e conjunct when the to redden which the chanically diagnosis,

case.
ed, with a quamation which may e, and the t, and the come displands are infection

thods the

after the , perhaps process of o subside to fibrous masses or even bands, which impede the passage of urine (stricture of the urethra). Behind such bands and in irregularities of the surface, the gonococci may lurk for a long time, the urethritis disappearing in the meantime.

With a urethritis there may be considerable systemic intoxication; in the male the infection may attack the prepuce or go backward, causing epididymitis and orchitis; as a result of the constant stimulation of the mucosa, painful continued erection (chordee) may be induced. The nearby lymph nodes may suppurate (bubo), and arthritis by direct infection of the joints, and tenosynovitis may occur even at long periods after the acuteness of the infection has passed; general bacteriemia, and endocarditis are rare complications of the disease. Considering the frequency of gonorrhœa and the comparative unfamiliarity of the student and practitioner with the appearance of the urethra, it ought to be a part of every routine autopsy to remove and open at least the posterior part of the urethra. Strictures are of various kinds and forms, according to the situation of the ulceration or areas of ulceration that bave healed.

Condylomas may be found in the urethra, usually at the meatus, as well as non-specific overgrowths of tissue.

Syphilis.—The chancre may be in the urethra, usually just within the meatus. Such infection may be coincident with that of gonorrhoea.

Tuberculosis.—Tuberculosis of the urethra is not common, being seen as miliary or caseous foci due to the spread of infection from other parts of the tract.

Foreign Bodies.—These are of necessity of the same order as those found in the bladder, but are not often found impacted in the passage.

Progressive Tissue Changes.—Primary tumors of the urethra are rare. In the female, a simple irritative hypertrophy of the mucosa may result in the formation of small fleshy excrescences—caruncles—which are extremely tender and bleed easily. Fibroma occasionally occurs as a polypoid mass. Carcinoma and sarcoma are rare, but may be present by extension.

Solution of Continuity.—The urethra may be lacerated or ruptured by violence, or by the passage of instruments, especially in the case of stricture, where the fibrous mass or band prevents the instrument from keeping the line of the urethra, and displaces the point of it laterally, where it impinges on weakened or even normal tissue, which gives way. The extravasation of urine that follows progresses into the tissues sometimes to an almost incredible distance, and constitutes a grave memore to life because of the certainty of infection in areas that are not easily reached by surgical means.

CHAPTER XI

THE REPRODUCTIVE SYSTEM

THE MALE SEXUAL ORGANS

THE PENIS

Congenital Anomalies.—The penis may be absent, double, or hypplastic, which last is found in cretins, cryptorchids, idiots, etc. The prepuce is rarely absent, but frequently phimosed, that is, abnormally narrow and incapable of being retracted. The important malformations of epi- and hypospadias have been considered with the urethra.

Circulatory Disturbances.—In valvular heart disease, the lax connective tissues of the penis are apt to be the seat of cedema, the corpor cavernosa becoming enlarged; the lax tissues of the prepuce may als exhibit great cedema. The sinuses of the corpora may become blocked so that the corpora cannot be emptied, with the result that chronic congestion with erection (priapism) results. Bands, strings, or ring applied around the organ have caused gangrene by reason of the constriction and consequent great congestion. Hemorrhage may occur in the lax tissues of the corpora from trauma, with the formation of hematoma.

Inflammation.—Inflammation may attack the skin (dermatitis), the prepuce (balanitis), the glans (posthitis), or the corpora (cavernitis). Most commonly the prepuce and glans are attacked together (balanoposthitis), the preputial sac being specially liable to inflammation from the tendency to accumulation of smegma, pus, dirt and urinary salts. If the swelling of the parts be great, it may be impossible to draw the prepuce forward (paraphimosis). Ulceration and even gangrene may result; superficial erosions and subsequent adhesions of one layer of the prepuce to another, or induration and fibrosis are more frequent sequels. In cavernitis, the infection being closed in may lead to abscess formation, with subsequent rupture into the urethra, or a considerable induration in its healing. Herpes progenitalis, connected with the superficial nerves, arises as a group of small vesicles on the glans which rupture and form erosions.

Syphilis.—The primary lesion of syphilis, the hard chance, is the most important affection, appearing three weeks or more after infection. upon the prepuce, near the raphe, on the corona, on the skin, or even in the urethra. Beginning as a minute vesicle which may rupture, there is generally a small erosion surrounded by a reddish border, the

whole being indurated. If picked up between the finger and thumb the structure feels bigger than it looks, as if a small piece of parchment underlay the inflamed spot. This sore is infective but does not infect a superposed layer of the prepuce, that is, is not auto-inoculable. Scrapings from it show spirochetes in large numbers. The lesion is so trifling in itself that it may be overlooked, but the most trifling lesion is almost sure to leave a definite scar. Microscopically are seen the signs of a low-grade inflammation; there is considerable infiltration by small round cells, especially around the vessels, a great deal of proliferation of connective tissue, and giant cells may be present. By the time the chancre is evident, the infection has already become systemic, in evidence of which the inguinal gland is the first to show a considerable swelling, the bubo (called the indolent bubo from its slight tendency to suppuration).

Fra. 292

From a section of a chance of the prepuce at the twentieth day from its appearance. The industring orderna corresponds to a distension and infiltration of the upper layers of the derma, which extends as a zone, x, x, about the centre of the chance at a. The infiltration of the walls of the vessels is also well exhibited, especially at b. (Taylor.)

At a later stage, the infection of syphilis, aided often by bacteria, causes an overgrowth of the mucosal elements the condyloma, which is has a great tendency to ulceration; finally, gummas may be formed in any part of the penis, usually deep in its tissue, healing with much scarring; the formation of condyloma or gumma has no special relation to the site of the primary sore, and they are as likely to follow an extragenital primary infection as a genital one.

Chancroid.—Not at all to be confounded with the chancre or hard chancre or hard sore just described is the chancroid or soft chancre or soft

e, or hypoetc. The abnormally malformae urethra. e lax conhe corpora e may also ne blocked, at chronic

may occur mation of atitis), the eavernitis). or (balanotion from mary salts.

s, or rings of the con-

grene may e layer of frequent r lead to or a concted with the glans

the most infection, , or even rupture, order, the

sore, a non-syphilitic sore that frequently arises on the penis, caus by many different infective agents (though never by the treponema ably assisted by uncleanliness. This arises from a few hours to a few da after infection, as a small vesicle or pustule which breaks down and forms rapidly enlarging ulcer, with red, angry edges, and a moist, pus-secreting base, on which there may be a membrane. It is oftenest found on the prepuce or glans, and is auto-inoculable, so that the ulcers are often multiple; this, with the shorter incubation period and the more sever ulceration serve to distinguish it from the chancre, although it mus be remembered that the two may coexist. A certain amount of indura tion may exist in the base of the chancroid, but it is not so well marke as in the chancre, where it persists after the inflammation ha disappeared. A specific microörganism for the chancroid has bee described, but it is generally considered that many common pathogeni organisms, which are certainly present in nearly all cases, are capabl of producing the lesion. A chancroid may become infected with spiro chetes, and the unobtrusive characters of the primary sore of syphilibe masked by the features of the chancroid, but the systemic infection will occur all the same. The chancroid may lead to severe balanitis lymphangitis, suppuration of the inguinal glands (virulent as opposed to indolent, bubo), and the penis may even become phagedenic, phagedena being a rapid necrosis which is apt to affect those who are alcoholic, diabetic, syphilitic or otherwise greatly debilitated. losis of the penis is rare, but has been met with in children as a result Tubercuof the ritual practice of circumcision in cases where the saliva of the operator has contained bacilli. It is a notable fact that the smegma bacillus is in appearance and by some staining reactions very like the tubercle bacillus, and unusual care is therefore necessary in deciding whether or not tubercle bacilli are present in the urine.

Progressive Tissue Changes. - The Venereal Wart. - This outgrowth is inflammatory in its origin, but not necessarily venereal; the irritating discharge of gonorrhœa or other infection, together with uncleanliness, is sufficient to excite it. It consists of one or more papillary excrescences, like a cock's comb on the gland or prepuce, sometimes flattened by the pressure of a tight prepuce, sometimes reaching a large size. Microscopically, each papilla consists of a fibrous vascular core covered by squamous epithelium, the core often branching so as to produce compound papillæ, and the squamous epithelium being at times so richly proliferated that a diagnosis from carcinoma is not easy. The mass is usually freely movable upon the subjacent tissue, unless ulceration has occurred. Keratosis, the outgrowth of a horny projection, similar to that seen on the skin, may occur. Elephantiasis, affecting chiefly the prepuce, is found; it may be combined with elephantiasis of the scrotum, and such a tumor weighing 25 kilos has been described. The mass consists chiefly of fibrous tissue and is of course often the seat of marked inflammatory infiltration.

Tumors.—Carcinoma of the penis, generally of the squamous variety, has been found to compose nearly 3 per cent. of all cancers, so that its importance is considerable. Phimosis with the irritation of recained secretion seems to be a predisposing cause, while the warty and keratoid growths just described may form the starting point. The sulcus and the inner edge of the prepuce are the most frequent sites, where a small warty growth begins and spreads over the surface, forming a luxuriant mass that may erode through the prepuce; the numerous folds of the mass contain a foul, whitish, greasy secretion, and ulceration occurs readily, the surface becoming granular. The inguinal glands are naturally the earliest site of extension. Melanotic and other sarcomas, as well as endotheliomas, are found; secondary tumors are not common, while of the benign growths, fibroma, lipoma, and others are described. Sebaceous cysts of the prepuce and penile skin are encountered.

Injuries of Penis. - Injuries of the penis require a word or description; luxation may occur by the main substance of the organ being separated from the prepuce and overlying skin, so that it comes to lie beneath the skin of the trunk, the original covering hanging like an empty sausage skin. Fracture, chiefly rupture of the corpora cavernosa, occurred with some frequency when it was supposed by the ignorant that a chordee could be cured by violently "breaking the cord."

THE PROSTATE

Congenital Anomalies.—Absence of the prostate is combined with other grave defects of the genito-urinary system; aberrant and unilaterally hypoplastic prostates are exceptional; cysts along the course of the Müllerian duct are occasionally found.

Circulatory Disturbances. Hyperemia is common, but unimportant. Very commonly a general dilatation of the veins of the prostatic plexus

is seen, and phleboliths are common.

nis, caused

reponema),

a few days

and forms a

18-secreting

und on the

are often

ore severe

gh it must

of indura-

ell marked

ation has

has been

oathogenic

re capable

vith spiro-

of syphilis

e infection

balanitis.

s opposed

ic, phage-

are alco-Tubercus a result

va of the smegnia

like the

deciding

his out-

real: the

her with

re papil-

metimes

g a large

ular core

so as to

being at

a is not

t tissue.

a horny

antiasis.

vith ele-

nas been

f course

Inflammation. - Prostatitis is usually a sequel of gonorrhoeal infection, but may result from cystitis or injury to the urethra. Beginning in the gland tubules, the infection soon spreads to the surrounding tissue, and multiple abscesses quickly result, which sometimes coalesce to the almost entire destruction of the organ. Rupture of an abscess may happen into the bladder, urethra, scrotum, or perineum, and general peritonitis is exceptionally so initiated. Metastatic abscesses in bacteriemia are uncommon. Chronic prostatitis, of a less destructive grade, may result in considerable fibrosis, and in cystic dilatation of the tubules.

Tuberculosis of the prostate is fairly frequent, assuming the form of multiple caseous nodules, which may occupy the whole organ, causing much enlargement. The process begins in the tubules and is nearly always part of an extensive progenital tuberculosis.

Foreign Bodies. Concretions, the so-called "corpora amylacea," "amyloid bodies," "prostatic sand," "prostatic calculi," of one sort

or another, are found in the prostates of a majority of elderly in They may appear to the naked eye like pepper grains, or they may large and pritty like grape-seeds, when they are infiltrated with so Microscopically, the small ones are oval, round, or triangular, we concentric lamination, which gives them the appearance of stagranules, whence their name. Often, if not always, in normal or dilatubes, they may be seen to commence from a fusion of desquama cells which undergo hyaline degeneration. No lamination may evident, the bodies being merely masses of brownish matter. To occurrence of corpora amylacea is of no practical significance, and loothing to do with amyloid disease.

Regressive Tissue Changes.—Atrophy occurs in about one out four old men, and in young people as a result of castration, wasti disease, or the presence of concretions. In the last named the strong suffers most, otherwise the glandular portion. Fatty and hyali degeneration of the muscle fibres and of the epithelium are sometime observed.



Hypertrophy of the bladder induced by hypertrophy of the middle lobe of the prostate, which it will be seen, acted as a ball valve obstructing the orifice of the urethra: a, enlarged nodular middle lobe of prostate; b, greatly hypertrophied bladder wall.

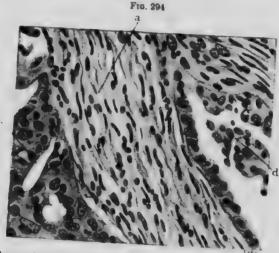
Progressive Tissue Change.—Hypertrophy.—The familiar enlargement of the prostate in elderly men, while it may precede malignant grow.\(\frac{1}{2}\) of the organ, is to be sharply distinguished from the same. The consensus of present-day opinion inclines to regard it as the outcome of a long-continued chronic inflammation of the urethral part of the organ; a constant relationship between previous gonorrhea and prostatic hypertrophy cannot, however, be said to exist. Such a urethral inflammation may show itself in several ways:

1. Interstitial fibrosis around the mouths of the prostatic ducts may lead to partial obstruction, compensated by hypertrophy of the plain muscle fibres, giving a diffuse enlargement.

2. The fibrosis may give rise to complete stenosis of a duct, so that the associated glands become dilated and cystic—a condition often wrongly called cystadenoma.

3. Whether as a result of the preceding or from continued irritation, there may be active proliferation of the glandular epithelium, often

4. Whether, again, from the progressive inflammation or as the outcome of loss of muscle fibres, with replacement by connective tissue, we may find a considerable diffuse hyperplasia of connective tissue combined with that of the muscle.



section from adenocarcinoma of the prostate, showing on one side of the band of stroma (a), can of relatively normal type (d), and on the other massive carcinomatous growth (c), with mere attempts at lumen formation.

While the enlargement may be generalized, it often shows itself specially in the middle lobe, where it brings about its most serious effects, for this nodule or ridge, projecting upward, acts as a valve when the bladder contracts, obstructs the orifice of the urethra and impedes urination; this leads to hypertrophy and subsequent dilatation of the bladder, and causes a bay or depression behind it in the lowest part of the bladder which fails to be emptied in micturition, and becomes an inevitable seat of bacterial growth, from which ascending inflammation, ureteritis, pyelitis, pyelonephritis, and pyonephrosis may result. The inqualed urination calls for the employment of the catheter, a fertile ourse of infection, and the projecting mass of the prostate may even he pierced by the catheter, with the formation of a false passage.

The nature of the middle lobe of the prostate is not yet understood,

ostate, which, arged nodular

elderly men

they may be

d with salts.

ngular, with

e of starch

al or dilated

lesquamated

on may be

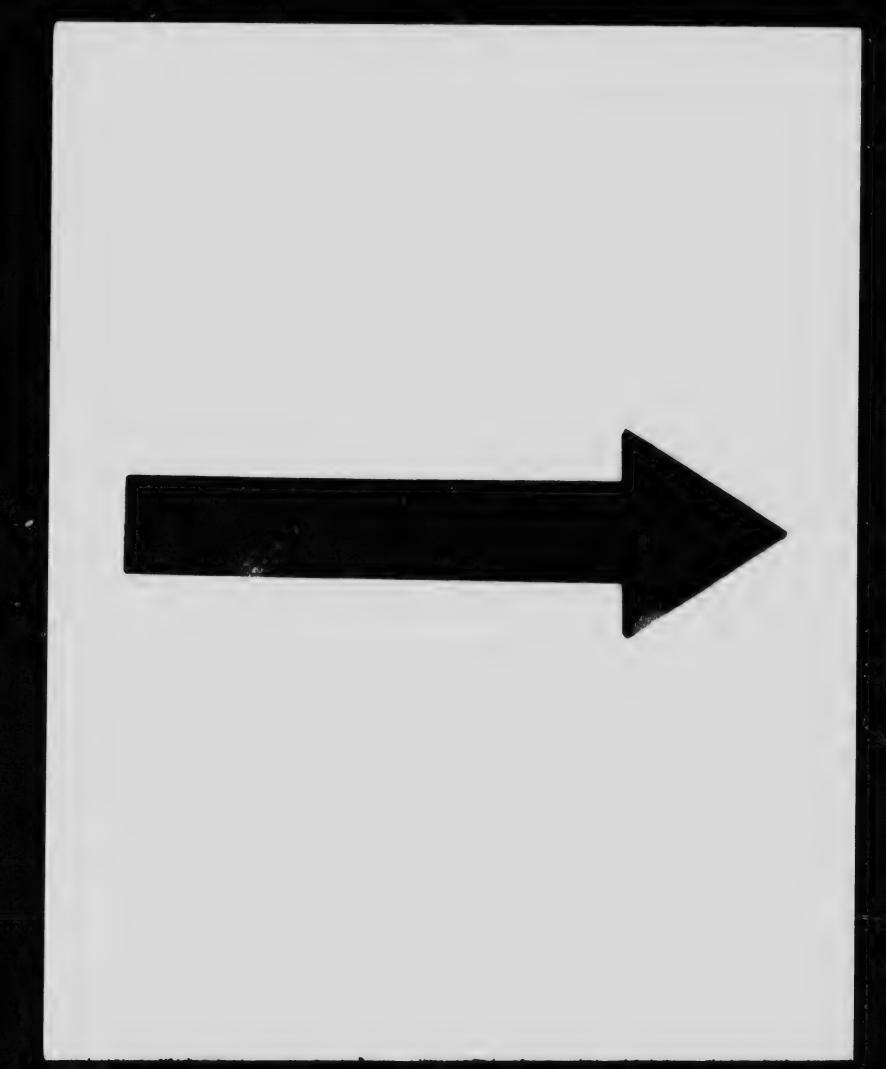
atter. The ice, and has

one out of

on, wasting

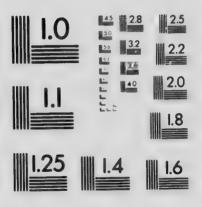
the stroma and hyaline sometimes

enlargenalignant me. The outcome rt of the and prosurethral

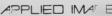


MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)







*65 * East Main Intree* Richester New York *4609 (*A-(216) 482 | 300 | Fhone (716) 288 - 5989 - Fax for in the normal prostate of early life it is non-existent. By most it is regarded as an outgrowth from one or other lateral lobe.

Tumors.—Of malign nt growths, carcinoma is the most important, occurring as a primary neoplasm, and not infrequently in a gland previously enlarged. We have observed one case in which urinary obstruction with enlarged prostate existed for eleven years before the development of an adenocarcinoma. Usually it is soft, nodular in one or both lobes, and spreading rapidly, it infiltrates the "capsule" of the gland, the mucosa of the bladder and the prostatic urethra, or may go through to the rectum. Microscopically, it consists of cylindrical or polyhedral cells, arranged in an attempt at glandular formation or in solid masses. Metastases are not a marked feature, and happen first in the retroperitoneal nodes, although in some cases there is a peculiar liability to form secondaries in the bones. Sarcoma is infrequent in comparison with carcinoma, but occurs in childhood, sometimes as one constituent of a mixed tumor. Secondary tumors rarely attack the prostate by metastasis, but may extend from the bladder or the rectum.

COWPER'S GLANDS

These small bodies, lying behind the bulb, are liable to inflammation by extension of processes that originate in the urethra, and rarely to cyst formation from blocking of the duct.

THE TUNICA VACINALIS TESTIS

It will be remembered by the student that the testis, primarily in the abdominal cavity, descends into the scrotum along the inguinal canal. In this descent it pushes before it a prolongation of the peritoneum behind which it comes to lie, and along with this there is projected a portion of the muscular wall to form the gubernaculum testis together with associated vessels and nerves. Following this descent, the process of the peritoneum becomes normally closed off from the peritoneal cavity proper. Non-closure, with persistence of the inguinal canal, favors subsequent hernia. The testis thus lies suspended behind a peritoneal sac, one wall of which, in juxtaposition to it, forms the visceral layer of the tunica vaginalis testis; the other, the parietal layer, is separated from the skin of the scrotum by loose tissue connective tissue, in which is the cremasteric muscle. The visceral and parietal layers enclose a serous sac, and this serous sac may show all the conditions seen in the other serosæ of the body.

Abnormalities.-In the preceding paragraphs we have already

referred to these, viz., the patency of the neck of the sac.

Inflammation.—There may be a certain amount of anasarca of the tunica; of greater importance, however, are the collections of fluid resulting primarily from inflammation, viz., the condition of hydrocele.

y most it

nportant,
a gland
a urinary
before the
odular in
psule" of
a, or may
ylindrical
nation or
I happen
here is a
is infre-

ometimes

ly attack er or the

ammation nd rarely

marily in inguinal the peritote is protum testis descent, from the inguinal doehind to parietal sue conteral and

show all already

a of the of fluid

Here it is held that the first stage is a serous periorchitis resulting in distention of the sac by a clear serous fluid, and, once accumulated, the tendency to secrete fluid is maintained, so that tapping is often followed by reaccumulation. In more acute inflammation the fluid may be blood-stained and the exudate of a serofibrinous type with deposit of a membrane over the testis. In gonorrheal and traumatic cases there may be a purulent periorchitis, but acute periorchitis of a fibrinous type without marked fluid exudate may occur. It is not uncommon to find at autopsy old fibrous adhesions between the two walls of the sac indicating such old inflammation. Reverting to hydrocele, it deserves note that in a considerable proportion of cases no history can be obtained bearing upon any primary trauma or infection. Thus the etiology of the condition is not wholly worked out. In old collections, the hydrocele fluid may appear shimmering from numerous plates of cholesterine.

Syphilis and tuberculosis may involve the tunica by extension from the testis.

Progressive Changes.—Tumors primary or secondary, save by extension from the testis, are distinctly rare.

THE TESTES AND EPIDIDYMIDES

Congenital Abnormalities.—It will be remembered (Fig. 141, p. 288) that the epididymis and testis originate from two separate bodies, the former coming to constitute what may be termed the collecting tubules for the latter and that, owing to imperfection in the junction between the two parts, certain orders of cysts may develop. So also it may be recalled that in development, adrenal tissue may be snared off and carried down along with the descending testis. As regards the testis itself there may be various grades of lack of development or failure to attain the normal position in the scrotum. There thus may be absence of both testes-anorchidism, absence of one testis-monorchidism, non-descent into the inguinal canal-cryptorchidism, duplication of a testis-polyorchidism, or fusion of the two-synorchidism. Hypoplasia or incomplete development is met in cryptorchidism and other forms of dystopia or failure of the organ to pass into the scrotum; in cretinism and other cases of delayed or imperfect development. There may be verious grades of dystopia, the testes being found in or near their primordial position in the neighborhood of the lumbar vertebrae, in the pelvis or imperfectly descended in the canal, or again, descent may be not into the scrotum, but into the tissues of the inside of the thigh. There may be not only congenital, but acquired dystopia, as occurs occasionally after trauma, the testis being forcibly displaced from its site, usually up the canal. Very rarely both testes have been found in the one-half of the scrotum.

Aspermia.—Absence of discharge of spermatozoa in the adult may be due to (1) lack of production in the testis, or (2) to stenosis, obstruc-

tion or destruction of the vasa deferentia as the result of trauma inflammation or new growth. Prolonged obstruction to discharge leads eventually to atrophy of the epithelium of the tubules of the testis, and so in certain cases both causes may be oper ive. Deficien production of spermatozoa, with consequent sterility .nev be brough about by many causes, some congenital, some acquired. Thus aspermis is encountered where the testes are retained in the abdominal cavity even although apparently fully formed; for a few years around the age of twenty it is stated that such cryptorchids may present spermatozoa in the semen, but after the age of twenty-four they are uniformly found sterile. Imperfect development of the testes has also associated with it aspermia or oligosperm.a. Such hypoplasia is frequent in cretins accompanying defective development of the thyroid; in acromegalic giantism there is a similar aspermia and lack of sexual capacity. In the very obese, men and animals, aspermia shows itself, passing off with reduction of the obesity. General lowering of vitality as by long-continued disease and after excesses of various kinds, including mental worry and overstrain, lead also to lack of development of the spermatozoa.

To the contrasted condition of precocious sexual maturity we have already referred (p. 102).

Circulatory Disturbances.—The only serious circulatory disturbances are traumatic hemorrhage and the secondary effects of arrest of circulation as from thrombosis of the pampiniform plexus.

Inflammation.—Inflammation may be either ascending, along the vas deferens, in which case the epididymis is first affected, or hematogenous when the body of the testis is more liable to be involved. Most often both testis and epididymis are implicated. The most frequent form of inflammation is that due to the gonococcus, and here there is first a catarrhal epididymitis followed by a more interstitial orchitis. The epididymis becomes enlarged, tense, and painful, on section is found congested, showing tubules distended with semifluid exudate. times this passes on to actual abscess formation. The testis similarly becomes firm and painful, and there is a similar catarrhal exudate in the tubules with an accompanying pronounced cellular infiltration of the stroma. With arrest of the acute condition, fibrosis, shrinkage and atrophy of the organ may supervene, if the inflammation has been long continued. The type example of hematogenous orchitis is seen in mumps; at times this complicates other acute infections, e. g., smallpox and typhoid.

Infective Granulomas.—Both tuberculosis and syphilis are apt to affect these organs. In tuberculosis, more often the infection is ascending and as a result the epididymis is apt to be the earlier and the more involved. The discovery of an enlarged epididymis may be the earliest clinical sign of the existence of tuberculosis in the body. There is formation of relatively large caseous masses with extensive destruction of the tissue of the organ and progressive extension of the process along

the tubules into the testis. If the process reaches the tunica vaginalis adhesions may be set up with eventually ulceration of the skin and sinus formation.

In contrast to this the most frequent form of syphilitic implication involves the testis proper, as a diffuse fibrosis, the so-called white swelling. Less frequently definite gummas develop. In the former condition the testis becomes enlarged, hard, and insensitive to pressure. With the latter, as with tuberculosis, the skin may be involved and break down.

Regressive Changes.—Simple atrophy of the organ with aspermia is a senile change, and occurs in marasmus and wasting diseases, as also as the result of the influence of x-rays. Pressure atrophy is noted in conditions of hydrocele, hernia, and neoplastic growths.

Progressive Changes.—Hyperplasia.—Cases of precocious development and maturity of the testes have been noted particularly in connection with hypertrophy and tumor formation of the adrenal cortex. In the adult there is little evidence of compensatory hypertrophy after removal or destruction of one of the pair, though this may occur in the very young.

Tumors.—Tumors of the testis are not uncommon; they are characterized, as a group, by rapid growth and malignancy. The variety of forms described is bewildering. Recent careful studies of several sections from various areas in such tumors are leading to the conclusion that the majority are of teratomatous nature. Several cases are now on record of chorio-epithelioma. Very frequently we encounter mixed tumors with glandular, cartilaginous, sarcomatous, and other tissues. In addition we may find tumors of simple type; it seems that pure sarcoma may originate from the interstitial cells of the testis and that pure carcinoma, occurring as it does in adult life, may originate from the tubules of the organ. Other cases of so-called carcinoma sarcomatodes are explicable, when it is remembered that the testicular epithelium is of mesothelial origin, and that therefore, we would expect to find transitional mesotheliomas.

Cysts. -We have already referred to the congenital cysts, and it remains only to note the spermatocele, a relatively large cyst, originating apparently from aberrant tubules of the epididymis which, under the influence of some obstruction, may become of relatively great size extending into the cavity of the tunica vaginalis testis and simulating a hydrocele. This on puncture affords a fluid containing spermatozoa.

THE SCROTUM

The conditions affecting the scrotum are, broadly speaking, those liable to affect the skin in general, with certain modifications due to its position, and the relative abundance of its constituents. Thus the tunion dartos contains distinctly contractile cremasteric muscle fibres,

we have

f trauma,

discharge les of the

Deficient

e brought

aspermia al cavity

d the age

rmatozoa

uniformly

associated

in cretins

romegalic city. In

assing off

ty as by including

nt of the

disturbof arrest

long the hemato-d. Most sent form he is first tis. The is found ate. At similarly udate in filtration hrinkage has been his seen he, small-

apt to ascendhe more earliest There is truction as along and there is a lack of subcutaneous fat; it is peculiarly liable to involved in elephantiasis, and then may attain a huge size. Its vacularity favors hemorrhage in trauma and in obstructive heart diseas in renal disease, ordema may be extreme. Of tumors the most importatis carcinoma (squamous epithelioma), apparently secondary to irritation. In the old days chimney sweeps were peculiarly liable to the form of cancer, and today workers in tar and paraffin show a similability.

THE SPERMATIC CORD AND VESICULÆ SEMINALES

Especially in those having a long spermatic cord the accompanying veins of the pampiniform plexus are liable to varicosity, and as the are relatively abundant they may form a tumor-like mass, varicocal This is found more frequently on the left side in consequence, it held, of the course of the vein on that side, which renders it more liable to pressure and obstruction.

Inflammation of the vas deferens occurs, not as an isolated condition but in association with epididymitis and vesiculitis; as a result ther may be a reparative fibrosis leading to blockage of its lumen and consequent sterility. Regarding the vesiculæ seminales, there has been some debate as to whether these are to be regarded as reservoirs for the sperm or as affording a special secretion for admixture with the same Apparently in man they have the double function. Inflammation in its active state may lead to marked tumefaction, and subsequently to fibrosis and contraction. As to its causation, the gonococcus is the most frequent infecting agent, though pure streptococcus infections also occur. Tuberculosis, both ascending and descending, may involve these and the vas.

THE FEMALE SEXUAL ORGANS

THE EXTERNAL GENITALIA

Abnormalities.— There is a long list of abnormalities of the external genitalia, involving either individual parts or the whole tract. Of the entire tract there may be complete absence as in certain monsters, hypoplasia as in cretinism and other forms of incomplete development. Of individual parts, the vulva may be abnormally small; the clitoris may be absent, or hyperplastic, as in some cases of false hermaphroditism, or doubled, as the lowest grade of inferior duplication, or adherent to neighboring structures. The labia may be abnormally small or abnormally larg; the labia minora, as a congenital condition or as an acquirement, may be of great size (Hottentot apron). The labia

liable to be
e. Its vaseart disease;
it important
y to irritaable to this
w a similar

LES

companying and as these varicocele. Hence, it is more liable

condition, esult there and consebeen some irs for the the same. mation in quently to cus is the infections ay involve

e external
. Of the
monsters,
elopment.
ne clitoris
rmaphroation, or
normally
condition
The labia

majora, corresponding to the two halves of the scrotum, may at times possess a patent canal of Nuck, into which hernia occurs. Into such, there may be an imperfect descent of the ovary. The hymen is inconstant; it may be absent, even in the young child; may present an abnormally small orifice, may show all possible variations in the form of its orifice; may show multiple orifices, or lastly may be imperforate, in which case, with the onset of puberty, there develops retention of the menstrual blood.

Circulatory Disturbances.—There are certain important circulatory disturbances of the external genitalia, due to their vascularity. Passive congestion accompanies the later stages of pregnancy, and cedema, especially of the labia, may be very pronounced in general anasarcous states. Hemorrhage and hematoma are most frequently traumatic in origin.

Inflammation.—Trauma, inflicted in parturition and otherwise, is a common cause of transitory inflammation, especially in the labia; any part of these may be the site of laceration. Owing to the frequency of discharge from the vagina, and to urination, the external parts are apt to present irritation and infection, so that numerous cutaneous disturbances may show themselves here. Added to this must be considered the effects of friction upon surfaces so inflamed. Erysipelas, furunculosis, and milder infections causing erythema and eczema, are to be noted in addition to the important group of venereal infections. Apart from syphilis, these last include all the inflammations due directly to the gonococcus, and indirectly to the combination of uncleanliness with pathogenic bacteria, of which the chancroid, single or multiple, is a frequent result.

Acute vulvitis, generally associated with inflammation of the vagina, will be considered with that condition, but it requires mention here that in gonorrhea the glands of Bertholin are prone to an elective implication. In very young children, uncleanliness often leads to marked inflammation and excoriation, apart from vaginitis.

Infective Granulomas.—Syphilis may present itself in the form of the primary sore, the chancre, or of mucous patches, condylomas, of secondary eruptions, as again of gummas of the labia. Any part of the external genitalia is liable to be affected. Tuberculosis is rare, appearing occasionally as lupus.

Regressive Changes.—Atrophy occurs in the old. A remarkable condition known as krauro is vulvæ is due to a fibrous hyperplasia of the subcutaneous tissue of the labia, with thinning and atrophy of the skin, and, being generalized, results in a progressive contraction of the vulvar orifice.

Progressive Changes.—As in the scrotum, so here there may be elephantiasis of one or both labia; hypertrophy of the labia minora and clitoris is considered as oftenest due to masturbation.

Tumors.—Fibromas of large size have been reported as originating in the clitoris and various parts of the vulva. Newi and angiomas may

be encountered, still more rarely myomas, lipomas, and chondron Perhaps the commonest tumor of this region, and even then not v frequent, is the squamous-celled carcinoma. Melanotic sarcomas habeen reported. Among cystic formations, most common are retent cysts of the glands of Bartholin. A rare cyst, corresponding to scrophydrocele, may originate from the canal of Nuck.

THE VAGINA

The vaginal walls are normally in contact, rugose, except in t old and after frequent parturition, sparsely provided witi gland lined by squamous epithelium. Despite its simplicity of " etu the vagina partakes in many diseased conditions arising in it .nedia neighbors, the external genitalia and the uterus. Its relations nearby organs, the uterus, bladder, rectum, and the viscera in Dougle pouch, favor alterations in position due to pressure or traction exert upon it. The vaginal wall, having no inherent rigidity, is liable become inverted, or even prolapsed through the vulvar orifice. Upon the vaginal space various organs may obtrude themselves; the bladd may descend as a mass in the vagina (cystocele); the rectum may pus forward the posterior wall (rectocele), and loops of the bowel or eve sometimes the ovaries may encroach upon the passage (enterocel ovariocele). In parturition, and otherwise, the wall may be injured of completely torn. Foreign bodies in great variety have been en countered in the vagina, as, for example, forgotten tampons, pessarie and objects introduced for purposes of masturbation. On one occasio we found at autopsy the lower half of a test-tube an inch in diameter firmly imbedded in the canal, where, to judge by the surroundin granulations, it had been for a considerable time. Such objects remain ing for a long time usually become crusted by phosphates and carbonates

Abnormalities.—The vagina may be absent or duplicated. Mor common than either of these states is a relative narrowing (atresia which may exist at one or more points, or throughout the tube.

Circulatory Disturbances.—In the later weeks of pregnancy, passive congestion is noted. Hemorrhage in the walls is usually traumatice. Inflammation.—Vaginitis, often associated with vulvitis as vulvo vaginitis may be acute or chronic. Among acute infections, as might be supposed, gonorrhea is the commonest. An acute inflammation from gonococcus or other agents may spread from the vulva; the discharge of acrid or infective material from the uterus is also a cause. The wall is reddened, secretion is increased, and this, at first catarrhal, later becomes purulent. In young children vulvitis may spread to the vagina, in spite of the protective hymen, and it is worthy of note that accidental infection of infants by gonococcus may readily occur. In children's hospitals, a case of vulvovaginitis is so liable to infect the envire ward, that it must be cared for by an attendant who does not

chondromas. nen not very rcomas have are retention ng to scrotal

cept in the vit1 glands, f sir sture, .nediate elations to in Douglas' tion exerted is liable to fice. Upon the blådder n may push vel or even (enterocele. injured or e been en-, pessaries, ne occasion n diameter urrounding cts remaincarbonates. ed. More g (atresia)

cy, passive traumatic. as vulvo-, as might ammation vulva; the to a cause. catarrhal, ead to the note that occur. In infect the does not

deal with the other children; this by reason of the intimate handling required for the cleanliness of infants.

Chronic vaginitis is an extremely important affection; it arises by constituent of an acute vaginitis, or may originate by a low form of infection in debilitated subjects, in whom it is liable to show slight exacerbations over a long-period (leucorrhea). The discharges of the uterus are here also of importance, in continuing the irritation. The local result is hypertrophy of the mucosa, which may appear granular or papillate, eventually, at times, atrophied and smooth. As a result of inflammation in nearby organs, as well as of trauma from within the vagina, fistulæ may be found, rectovaginal, or vesicovaginal.

It is noteworthy that the vagina rarely exhibits either tuberculous or syphilitic lesions.

Regressive Changes.—With age the rugæ of the vagina tend to disappear, and the wall to lose its velvety surface, becoming smooth.

Progressive Changes.—Tumors.—Tumors of the vagina are relatively uncommon; a form that is characteristic is the teratoblastomatous mixed tumor, encountered in children, presenting largely sarcomatous elements along with muscle cells and other connective tissues. Pure sarcomas have also been recorded, as have leiomyomas. The vagina may be the site of primary squamous-celled carcinoma, and secondaries are prone to infiltrate from carcinoma of the uterus, bladder, or rectum, as well as from chorio-epithelioma of the uterus.

THE UTERUS

The uterus is a thick- "and regan, pear-shaped, but flattened from before backward; it is considered the myometrium formed, in the main, serous peritoneal covering over most of its extent, and a mucos. he endometrium, consisting of columnar epithelium prolonged into the muscle as an abundant series of simple, glandular acini. These glands are somewhat more elaborate and abundant in the cervical region. There is no sharply-defined submucosa, but immediately underlying the epithelium is a reticulated stroma characterized by a relatively abundant accumulation of cells, which, in passing we would note, must not be mistaken for an inflammatory infiltration, or for a diffuse sarcomatous growth. The inner layer of the myometrium is richly vascular, and in the multiparous woman these vessels show the evidences of involution and new formation with peripheral hyaline changes to which we have referred on p. 309. There are, further, abundant lymphatics, those of the cervix communicating with the iliac lymph nodes, those of the body of the organ with the lumbar and inguinal groups.

Abnormalities.—Of congenital abnormalities, mention may be made of complete absence and marked hypoplasia; the organ may be duplicated (uterus didelphys), with or without duplication of the vagina. Where

the Müllerian ducts unite into a common cervix, the uterus is bic muste; there may be two cavities enclosed in a common uterus (ute septus). Considering the juxtaposition of uterus, bladder, and recta and the primitive common cloaca, it is not remarkable that occasional separation is imperfect with resultant uterovesical and uterorec fistules. There may be stenosis of the cavity associated with imperfedevelopment of the uterus along with that of the other genitalia.

Congenital Anomalies.—Two great classes of anomalies can recognized, the dystrophies, due to nutritive disorders, resulting abnormality of size; and the dysplasias, due to eccentricities of developments.

ment. They may be associated.

The uterus may be wanting (aplasia) or diminutive (hypoplasi and this may be symmetrical or asymmetrical according as the Müller ducts, which form the organ, are equally or unequally involved. The verse fission of the os uteri may be confounded with that resulting freshildbirth. Real aplasia is rare, for nearly always some rudime of uterine tissue are to be found. The external genitalia are general intact, but the ovaries and tubes may occasionally be absent.

Where one Müllerian duct fails almost entirely to develop, uterus unicornis is formed. If the ducts fail to fuse, uterus didelp results, in which there are two separate uteri and vaginæ, or two ut and one vagina. If the ducts fuse below, and not above, uterus bicor results, and modifications of this are seen in uterus bicornis dupl where there are two complete cavities; if these unite at the cervix have uterus bicornis unicollis, while if a septum divides the uter cavity, the condition is called uterus septus or bilocularis, and there names to distinguish the various degrees of completeness of the septu

The cavity of the uterus may be absent, or there may be multi rudimentary cavities; it may be narrower than normal or obstruct (stenosis uteri), or it may be in communication with the bladder by tube, or with the rectum (congenital uterorectal fistula; anus utering. The uterus may fail to develop beyond its foetal state (uterus foetal or beyond its infantile state (uterus infantilis). On the other hand, may develop precociously. Occasionally at birth the uterus is four retroflexed, in varying relation to the cervix, retroverted, or anteflex It has even been found in an inguinal or crural hernia (uterocele, herocele).

Acquired Abnormalities of the Uterus.—The pressure of tumors, floor organs misplaced, or traction in unusual directions or its own weig may misplace the uterus, and if it 'mobile may even impart an abnual shape to it. As a whole the uterus may be misplaced forward backward, to the side, upward, downward (prolapse), or it may be turn inside out (inversion). Again, the same agents may bring about suppressure that there is an alteration in the direction of the axes of tuterus; it may be rotated in its transverse axis (version), usually become direction. This may exist in all degrees from a slight tilt to the in which the uterus lies with the fundus below the promontory of the same agents.

rus is bicorterus (uterus and rectum occasionally l uterorectal th imperfect italia.

llies can be resulting in s of develop-

(hypoplasia), he Müllerian red. Transsulting from e rudiments are generally

levelop, the rus didelphys or two uteri terus bicornis ornis duplex, he cervix we the uterine nd there are the septum. be multiple r obstructed oladder by a nus uterinus). terus fœtalis) her hand, it rus is found r anteflexed. terocele, hys-

tumors, fluid s own weight art an abnorced forward, asy be turned a about such e axes of the usually backth tilt to that ontory of the sacrum and the cervix behind the symphysis pubis; these dislocations usually result from childbirth or abortion, where the increased weight of the uterus is not compensated by the fixity of its supports. Weakening of the round ligaments and, above all, the lack of perineal support after tears, are the most potent causes. A uterus so misplaced is prone to impairment of circulation and may become congested and enlarged, with the production of endometritis. Abnormal anteversion is not so liable to happen, and when it does, is usually from the traction of repaired tissue in front.

Inversion.—Inversion of the uterus occurs in a large lax uterus, such as may be seen after delivery. It may be (1) incomplete, with the fundus still within the uterus, or (2) complete, where the fundus lies in the vagina, or (3) complete with prolapse, where the uterus is wholly and the vagina partly everted, and the uterus appears outside the vulva, where interference with its circulation may lead to all degrees of degenerative change, even gangrene.

Prolapse.—In simple prolapse, the uterus descends and presents itself without inversion. It may lie in the vagina (procidentia) or with inversion of the vagina, may procrude through the vulvar orifice.

Several conditions may favor prolapse, chief of which is lack of support, whether from weakening of the ligaments or of the pelvic floor. Retroversion practically always precedes prolapse, and is assisted by injury to the pelvic floor, increased weight of the uterus, and laxity of the abdominal wall. The bladder or rectum or both may accompany the terus in its descent. As in retroversion, but to a greater degree, there is interference with the circulation resulting in passive congestion and endometritis. Prolapse is necessarily accompanied by some displacement of the rectum or bladder or both.

Elevation.—Elevation of the uterus happens when it is pushed up from below by a tumor. When it gains attachment to the abdominal wall, so that involution cannot properly be accomplished, the result will probably be an elongation of the organ.

Flexion.—For long it has been the custom to speak of a class of abnormal conditions—flexions—in which the uterus becomes bent upon itself, giving anteflexion, retroflexion, and lateral flexion, but at present the tendency is to minimize the importance of this change, and to merge each of these in the more important version in the same direction. Retroflexion is the most common, associated, as it usually is, with retroversion, and if pregnancy occur the organ may be incarcerated in its nev position, with abortion a result. The causes of flexions are laxity of its tissue or its supports and undue tractions or pressure n one or another part of it.

Stenosis.—We have already referred to congenital stenosis: the acquired stenoses are usually due to contraction after curetting, or inflammation or obstruction of the channel by tumors. It may occur in pregnancy as a result of gonorrhoea.

Dilatation. Anything that favors retention leads to distension of the uterine cavity with or without a corresponding hypertrophy of the uterine wall. As noted more than once previously, the extent of this hypertrophy is largely a matter of age. In the elderly there is little reactive overgrowth following the stress of distension. A very frequent cause of this is the continued growth of an intra-uterine fibromyoma which encroaches upon the cavity. In such cases the hypertrophy of the uterine wall may be remarkable. With imperforate hymen or cervical stenosis, there may be great distension from accumulation of menstrual fluid (hematometra). Retention occurring after the menopause or before puberty may result in the accumulation of clear fluid in the cavity (hydrometra). If the obstructed uterus become the seat of purulent inflammation, pyometra results. An infrequent condition is the accumulation of gas in the uterine cavity, seen occasionally in the puerperium when putrefaction of the retained lochia or placenta is present.

Rupture.—Laceration of the cervix is a common event in delivery, particularly in the primipara. The severer condition of rupture of the body of the organ may be brought about by any condition which leads to continued, strong uterine contractions without progression of labor, such as occurs where there is a transverse presentation. Here one may expect a longitudinal tearing of the uterine wall, slight or complete, with passage of the fœtus into the peritoneal cavity. Apart from the longitudinal, tears of all positions and degrees have been observed. Previous disease, with degeneration of the uterine wall, predisposes to these events.

Bruising and Perforation.—These occur in attempts at mechanical abortion, or during operative measures (curetting); dilatation by force is always a crushing or bruising. It must be remembered by the operator every time he takes a curette in hand that the most skilful of operators have perforated the uterus by the use of a force that could not be called other than gentle. In these cases, the perforation is usually at the fundus. Apart from these operative perforations, there may be perforation resulting from cancerous and other deep ulcers, these often leading to the formation of utero-rectal, utero-vaginal and utero-vesical fistulæ.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Hyperemia.—Active hyperemia occurs physiologically every month during the period of sexual maturity of the unimpregnated female. Each menstrual period is immediately preceded by a phase of active congestion of the organ culminating in multiple hemorrhages in the hypertrophied mucosa, and casting off of the degenerated mucosal cells. Under pathological conditions, active hyperemia is found both where there is a local acute inflammation and as an accompaniment of general infections.

Hemorrhage.—Apart from menstrual hemorrhage of normal amount, there may be menorrhagia, an excessive loss of blood at the menstrual period. This may be brought about as a result of chronic passive

nsion of y of the t of this is little frequent omyoma rophy of vmen or lation of e menoear fluid the seat ondition nally in placenta

delivery, e of the ch leads of labor, one may omplete, rom the bserved. disposes

chanical by force he operkilful of at could usually may be se often -vesical

occurs urity of ediately iting in g off of active mation

mount, enstrual passive

congestion, predisposed to by the existence of uterine tumors, both benign and malignant, as well as by the presence of inflammation of the uterus or its appendages. Matrorrhagia is the escape from the uterus of blood which is not menstrual. This assumes its gravest diagnostic import in women who have passed the menopause, in whom its existence demands the suspicion of the presence of carcinoma of the uterus. Apart from this, it may occur as an accompaniment of general diseased states such as the hemorrhagic diseases, and severe general toxemias; more frequently it depends upon some local disorder which tends to congestion or ulceration (endometritis, new growths etc.). Hemorrhage, not included in the above, occurs during and afte parturition, in which cases an excessive amount depends general. upon imperfect contraction of the uterus, due either to an inherent failure of the muscle to perform its function or to the presence of retained placenta or tumor which constitutes a physical obstacle to complete contraction. In elderly women, associated with pronounced arterioselerotic changes in the vessels of the organs, it is not very uncommon to have hemorrhage of a moderate grade in the mucosa, with some escape of blood into and out of the uterine cavity.

Inflammation. - Inflammation may affect the serous covering of the uterus and the structures intimately connected with it (perimetritis a local peritonitis), the surrounding pelvic organs, including the broad ligaments (parametritis), the uterine muscle (metritis) or the

endometrium (endometritis).

Endometritis. - According to the region affected, so do we speak of cervical endometritis or cervicitis, corporeal endometritis of the body, or general endometritis, involving the entire uterine lining. The same grades of inflammation may occur here as are found in econnection with any mucous membrane, although the warning must be given that very considerable experience is requisite before the histological appear ances of the endometrium in certain stages of the menstrual cycle care be surely differentiated from those of inflammation. We recognize for example, acute catarrhal endometritis, showing hyperenia with discharge of an abundant viscid or in more advanced ca. , a mucopurulent secretion; this latter constitutes leucorrhea, of which it may be said that, in the majority of cases, it is the cervix which is involved, and that we deal with a recurrent, often chronic catarrh. More acute disturbance leads to hemorrhagic endometritis. Acute endometritis arises from vaginal infection, not necessarily gonorrheal; more rarely it is of descending origin, and a degree of it may accompany a variety of disturbances of the adnexa, or of the uterus itself, especially if these are accompanied by a chronic congestion of the mucosa.

Chronic Endometritis. This results most often from a combined catarrhal disturbance, and as in the stomach, for example, so here. on the one hand, there may be a distinctly productive or hyperplast.e condition, sometimes even going on to the formation of nodular, polypoid, or papillate overgrowths of the mucosa; or, on the other hand,

if the mucous membrane becomes exhausted, to atrophy with thinning of the endometrium. Here, again, as in the stomach, there may occasionally be inflammatory obstruction of the ducts with cystic dilatation of the same.

On microscopic examination, if the glands seem to be the seat of the most marked change, the state is called glandular endometritis in contradistinction to interstitial where the morbid changes in the interstitial tissue seem to predominate. Microscopic determination is difficult because of the changes incident to menstruation. The gland tubules are generally lengthened, tortuous and irregularly dilated even to the extent of cyst formation; the epithelial cells have lost their cilia are clear, swollen, and mucoid. The lumina of the ducts are filled with mucus, leukocytes and desquamated cells, while the interstitial tissue is proliferated. The presence of the glands among the muscle bands must not be mistaken for malignancy, for it will be remembered that there is no submucosa.

Late in the disease the mucosa may become atrophic, smooth, thin, pigmented, and fibrous. The accompanying fibrosis is apt to compress some part of the tubules so that they dilate. Another result of irritation is the conversion of the mucosa into squamous epithelium; this seems to bear upon the occurrence of squamous carcinoma in the body of the uterus, but it is likewise to be remembered that islets of squamous epithelium have been discovered in the decidua, and even in the uteri of fœtuses and infants.

Like the other forms of inflammation, chronic endometritis arises from various causes, a recapitulation of which would be to repeat what has already been said when dealing with the acute form.

In chronic cervical endometritis a frequent result is the formation of small cysts, which may attain the size of a pea, the so-called ovula Naboth. They have usually clear, viscid contents. They are really retention cysts, due to erosion (wherein the proliferated epithelium "corks" the gland ducts), and are liable to infection, which may lead to abscess formation. Microscopically, the glands are seen to be enlarged, with many cells converted into goblet cells; such cases are readily mistaken for carcinoma. As a rule in this form of endometritis there is abundant leucorrhoea.

As a result of injuries in labor, and secondary also to such chronic catarrh, the cervix is apt to show a series of disturbances. The external os appears no longer round, but transverse, and the extremities of this transverse slit are so deep as to constitute actual fissures, whose edges are red, often tumefied, the entire os sometimes appearing coated. The congested surface readily erodes and bleeds, and may show a variety of secondary changes, characteristic of progress or repair of the lesion. Therefore, we may find ulcerations, scars, cysts, granulations of normal extent or so exuberant as to suggest new growth, which indeed may follow this chronic inflammation.

n thinning may occadilatation

he seat of ndometritis ges in the ination is The gland lated even their cilia, filled with tial tissue sele bands pered that

oth, thin, compress of irritalium; this the body islets of and even

itis arises to repeat

mation of lled ovula are really pithelium may lead en to be cases are lometritis

h chronic external es of this ose edges g coated. a variety he lesion. of normal eed may Metritis.—Metritis is most frequently associated with the puerperal state, though it may be secondary to acute infection especially if associated with the trauma of operation. The uterine muscle takes on a pale color and a soft, friable consistence; accompanying it there may be acute hyperemia of the endometrium and occasional hemorrhages within the muscle substance, rarely actual abscesses, although frequently there is thrombosis and thrombophlebitis of the uterine and other pelvic vessels. If the infection be not extremely acute, or again as a result of long-continued congestion, a chronic metritis may result, with enlargement and diffuse fibrosis of the myometrium.

Perimetritis is but a form of localized peritonitis originating often in connection with inflammation of the adnexa or as an extension from acute metritis.

Tuberculosis.—Tuberculosis involves the body of the uterus, rarely the cervix and vagina; most often it is secondary to tuberculosis of the tube. Frequently the disturbance is not very characteristic; small-celled infiltration, not grouped into definite tubercles, may show here and there an occasional giant cell, but only upon special staining for bacilli is the nature of the condition surely recognized. Occasionally, however, large caseous tubercles are encountered, undergoing ulceration, and the process extends slowly but definitely into the myometrium.

Syphilis.—There has been much debate as to the extent to which the uterus is involved in syphilis. The primary sore may at times be detected either in the vagina or in the cervix or in its canal, but apparently infection may occur through the uterus without there being any recognizable primary sore. We refer particularly to those cases in which the child is born syphilitic, and the mother presents no primary or even secondary lesions, and yet the presence of the Wassermann reaction and the fact that the mother cannot be infected from the infant, as also the further fact that such a woman may give birth to a series of syphilitic infants, all indicate that she is infected.

Parasites.—Only rarely are echinococcus cysts found growing within the uterine wall.

Foreign Bodies.—As in the vagina, so here, foreign bodies may be found, necessarily less frequently. Attention must be called to the fact that portions of the placenta may remain attached, acting to all intents and purposes as foreign bodies, setting up irritation, and even tumor growth.

Regressive Tissue Changes.—Atrophy.—Just as the ovaries come to an end of their function at the climacteric, so the uterus, being functionally useless, undergoes shrinkage after the menopause. It becomes small, thin-walled, pale in color, and the cervical portion more particularly becomes diminished. In very elderly women, there is aften to be found an accompanying congestion with hemorrhages of the fundal endometrium. This is not to be confounded with an accomplished.

Progressive Tissue Changes.—Hypertrophy.—Apart from the hypertrophy of pregnancy, there occur other hypertrophies, such as that arising from inflammation and from overwork; overwork hypertrophy, such as is seen when a large fibroid lies in the cavity, is likely to involve the muscle most, whereas that from inflammation need not do so. The formation of polyps, glandular hypertrophy, and even the formation of a decidua in extra-uterine pregnancy are all examples of localized hypertrophy.

Tumors.—These are of great variety and of much practical importance. The chief benign tumors are the myoma and fibromyoma, lipoma,

adenoma, and so-called adenomyoma.

The most common tumor of the uterus is the fibromyoma, the so-called fibroid.

Study of the smallest and earliest of these affords examples of pure myomas, of a reddish color, vascular and moderately soft. Tumors of a larger size exhibit a combination of well-formed bands of unstriated muscle fibres alternating with bands of connective tissue, although careful examination indicates that much of this apparent connective tissue is formed of atrophied muscle fibres. The largest and oldest forms show great degeneration of the muscle, and are composed in the main of firm connective tissue. These are very dense and of a whitish color. In all forms, on section, the surface is glistening and has a watered silk appearance owing to the component bands being cut in various directions. These tumors are generally multiple and originate most often in the posterior wall, though with growth, they may come to be subserous, intramural, or submucous. Tumors of this order may even become detached from the uterus, and grow within the broad ligament, intraligamentous. Of these different forms, the intramural fibromas may attain the greatest size, becoming as large as an infant's head or larger. Subserous and submucous fibroids tend to become pedunculated, and with torsion of the pedicle the nutrition may be interfered with and as a result there may be infarction, necrosis, and gangrene.

These tumors are peculiarly liable to show various forms of circulatory and nutritive disturbances. Some are relatively vascular from passive congestion; others are ædematous, the lymph spaces becoming so much dilated as at times to give rise to a cystic appearance; at other times the general ædema mimics a myxomatous change (myxomyoma). Fatty degeneration is not uncommon, occurring in scattered areas, and beyond this, there may be indications of a localized or general necrosis, showing itself at times as a hyaline change or as a softening and autolysis with cyst formation, or not infrequently, as calcification, secondary to necrosis. A remarkable form of necrosis is that known as acute red degeneration, due apparently to sudden torsion of the tumor and obstruction of the blood supply. It appears to be a form of infarct. Rarely, apparently from metaplasia, nodes of actual bone or cartilage

may develop within the tumors.

These degenerated fibroids may also become the seat of infection with resultant suppuration and gangrene, as a sequel of which submucous fibroids may undergo spontaneous evacuation.

he hyper-

h as that ertrophy,

to involve

so. The

formation

localized

al impor-

a, lipoma,

, the so-

s of pure

Tumors

ds of un-

e tissue,

apparent

e largest

are comlense and

glistening

nds being tiple and

vth, they

rs of this

w within

rms, the

as large

oids tend

nutrition

necrosis,

f circula-

ılar from

becoming

at other

omyoma).

ed areas,

r general

softening

ification,

t known

ne tumor

f infarct.

cartilage

The above myomas and fibromyomas are characterized by being well encapsulated and distinct from the uterine musculature in general. There is another form of tumor, however, in which the myomatous overgrowth is diffuse and not encapsulated, involving often a large area of the uterine wall and characterized by the inclusion of glandular acini, lined by columnar epithelium. It has now been proved absolutely by Cullen and others that these glands are extensions of the uterine mucosal glands deep into the modified myometrium. This has been confirmed by finding changes in these glands at the menstrual period identical with those seen in the uterine mucosa. These glands show no sign of active, independent growth; we deal not with adenomyomas but with a condition of myomatosis with glandular inclusion. The name adenomyoma, however, has taken such hold that it is difficult to replace it.

These myomas may undergo conversion into more malignant, sarcomatous growths. So, also, there are not a few cases on record in which the mucosa over a submucous fibroid has taken on carcinomatous growth, infiltrating the fibroid.

Adenoma and Carcinoma.—Polypoid overgrowth of the mucous membrane is not very uncommon; so also there may be such a localized overgrowth of abundant uterine glands that it is difficult to say whether we deal with an inflammatory or a neoplastic process. Nevertheless, at times, this adenomatous infiltration of the muscular wall may be so excessive that there can be no hesitation in speaking of this as a malignant adenoma, more particularly as secondary growths of adenomatous type may appear in the pelvic lymph nodes. This is one type of uterine carcinoma. Allied to this is the adenocarcinoma found in the cervical canal, and occasionally in the body. Here in place of typical there is atypical development of the glandular elements. This form appears to originate most frequently from the occluded glands and ovulæ Nabothi. This, like the former, infiltrates extensively the muscle; with still more atypical growths, we obtain the pure carcinoma, with solid cent masses. Colloid cancer is distinctly rare.

This forms one group of uterine cancers; the other, and smaller group originate in connection with the squamous epithelium of the cervix, only a few cases having been recorded developing from the cervical canal or the body of the uterus. This, the squamous carcinoma or epithelioma, arises as a somewhat superficial growth, at times tending to be papillomatous, having a distinct tendency to ulceration and erosion with progressive invasion of the deeper tissues. It may extend thus, up the cervical canal into the body of the uterus, and slowly infiltrate the neighboring organs.

From the above description it will be seen that carcinoma involves all parts of the womb, but the cervix most frequently. Uterine cancer

is one of the commonest of all forms of malignant growth and of carcinoma in the female, one out of every three cases is uterine. In the nulliparous, the condition is rare, and then most frequently affects the corpus, whereas in the woman who has borne children, the cerval is the part most often involved. This leads us to see some relationship between trauma and scarring of the cervix, and subsequent cancerous development. Cancer develops most often after the menopause, and we can but repeat the warning that a hemorrhage from the womb developing after the cessation of menstruation demands careful examination for the presence of a carcinoma.

Sarcoma.—Sarcoma is distinctly less frequent than carcinoma is apt to arise at an earlier life period, and most frequently affects the body of the organ. The growths are pale, nodular, often multiple with extensive infiltration of surrounding tissues. Endotheliomas are still less common.

Cysts.—We have already referred to the ovula Nabothi and other retention cysts of the uterine glands, as well as to the necrotic and angiectatic cysts of uterine fibroids. Teratomatous cysts have been recorded.

THE FALLOPIAN TUBES

The Fallopian tubes may vary considerably in their position according to the relationship of uterus and ovaries. Their freedom of movement permits them to be included in any conglutination of pelvice surfaces and organs, and as a result they are distinctly apt to exhibit inflammatory and other disturbances. Again, their function as carriers between ovary and uterus permits them to become the site of gestation tubal gestation. What is the cause of this is still a matter of debate. It is natural to imagine that slight bridges and inflammatory scarring of the mucosa of the tube by arresting the outward passage of the ovum favors its arrest in the course of the tube, but when we come to attribute the condition to gonorrheal or other salpingitis, the great frequency of the condition in some regions, as in certain parts of Western Pennsylvania, is wholly out of proportion to the incidence of infection and the exact causation remains unexplained. Such ectopic gestation occurs, but with great rarity, in the ovary itself. Much more commonly it shows itself in the course of the tube, either toward the distal end, or in the central region or somewhat rarely in the utcrine portion of the tube (interstitial). As a result, with the reaction on the part of the mucosa of the tube to form a decidua there is an extraordinary congestion of the blood vessels of the tube and as the gestation sac increases in size the walls of the tube become so much thinned that rupture may occur with escape of the fœtus into the peritoneal cavity or the broad ligament and associated profuse hemorrhage. In this new position the fœtus may gain a new placental attachment, and rare cases are on record, in which the fœtus has developed to full term. Much more frequently d of carcie. In the dy affects the cervix lationship cancerous ause, and the womb

arcinoma, ly affects multiple iomas are

and other erotic and nave been

on accordof moveof pelvic to exhibit as carriers gestation of debate. y scarring ge of the we come the great f Western infection gestation commonly listal end, portion of art of the ry congesincreases oture may the broad sition the on record, requently

the uncontrolled hemorrhage leads to a fatal issue, or where the hemorrhage is not so extreme, the fœtus dies and becomes a lithopedion. These eventualities occur, of course, in the absence of surgical intervention. It is interesting to observe that a sympathetic decidual formation or change in the mucosa may show itself in the opposite tube or in the uterus.

Congenital Abnormalities.—The commonest congenital abnormality, so common as to be practically normal, is the presence of the hydatid of Morgagni, a cystic dilatation and enlargement of the longest of the fimbriae. This is present in more than 20 per cent. of autopsies upon the female. Less commonly, variations are seen in the distal end. There may, for example, be a double orifice with a separate collection of timbriae around each, and very rarely the tube itself shows some duplication. Diverticula are sometimes noted. There may be complete absence of one or both tubes, generally associated with absence or malformation of the uterus.

Circulatory Disturbances.—These call for no special remark. In inflammatory states, there is acute hyperemia, at times with associated hemorrhage. The condition of hematosalpinx or accumulation of blood in the tube is occasionally encountered by regurgitation of retained menstrual blood, or, some hold, from actual hemorrhage in the tube during menstruation.

Inflammation.—The more accurately the bacteriology of the inflamed tube is studied, the more it is seen that gonorrhea is the commonest cause of acute or subacute salpingitis. There may, it is true, be infection by the strepto- and staphylococcus, but these are not so frequent. The results are a swelling of the mucosa with pronounced purulent secretion which in cases of obstruction of the tube pass on to its great distension with actual pus (pyosalpinx). A marked characteristic of gonorrheal salpingitis is that while the lumen of the tube may be filled with ordinary pus cells, coincidently the greatly infiltrated submucosa may show an extreme accumulation of plasma cells. Recent authorities hold that this abundance of plasma cells is pathognomonic of gonorrheal infection. With this infiltration of the submucosa, the nucous membrane shows pronounced loss of epithelium and the rugae are flattened, so that the mucosa becomes less infolded. very destruction of the mucosa favors the subsequent formation of bridges and bands of connective tissue with stenosis. It is characteristic of this acute inflammation of the tube, that the ends are apt to become scaled; and even while at first this sealing be through swelling of the mucosa and the viscid nature of the secretion, it is apt to be ultimately followed by organized obliteration, with consequent sterility. second point is that with this sealing and subsequent distension of the tube, the fimbriæ are apt to become inverted with complete disappearand a third, that despite the great distension, the tube adapts itself and rupture rarely occurs.

According to the grade of inflammation, we obtain conditions of

hydrosalpinx and pyosalpinx. Pyosalpinx is the result of a contin suppurative infection. Hydrosalpinx occurs where there has bee previous inflammation that has sealed up the tube and then came to end, and is the expression of the continued secretion from the much of its normal product, a much fluid.

As with the appendix, so here, inflammation involving primarily mucosa is liable to spread through the walls and induce a perisalping which in acute cases may be suppurative, leading to an acute pe peritonitis. More frequently this assumes the form of an adherinflammation with extensive adhesions so that the tubes and all pelvic contents are densely bound together.

Specific Infections.—Next in frequency to gonorrheal is tubercul salpingitis. While this may be of hematogenic origin, it appears quently to be induced by bacilli carried down the tube in the peritor fluid, from the ovaries or other abdominal organs, or upward from uterus and vagina. In the early stages the changes are not characteristhere is a small-celled infiltration of the mucosa and submucosa vageneralized thickening of the tube. Later, tubercles with case centres are to be made out, and the whole interior of the tube may slextensive fused tubercles with advanced caseation, which with stem of the ends of the tube may lead to a condition simulating pyosalp the greatly distended tube filled with soft, cheesy, or thick purificant (tuberculous pyosalpinx). Here again the tuberculosis profit liable to extend outward involving the serosa and leading to tube formation with adhesions.

Syphilis.—Contrary to expectation syphilitic lesions in the Fallop tubes are distinctly rare. Gummas have been recorded. So also thare a few cases of actinomycotic lesions, due to a secondary and desceing infection.

Progressive Changes.—Productive inflammation may show it as a distinct overgrowth of the mucosal folds, and with the abundinfolding of the mucosa the enlarged tube may on section be mista for an adenomatous development composed of abundant branch glandular acini lined by columnar epithelium. Primary tumors infrequent; papillomas and carcinomas are encountered, and a few coof myoma, fibroma, and lipoma are on record.

THE OVARIES

The average adult ovary may be said to be somewhat of the and shape of the first phalanx of the adult male thumb. The ovis developed from the Wolffian body by the ingrowth of the germ epithelium. It is from these ingrowths that the Graafian follicles, with their contained ova, are developed. The stroma, on the other hand of connective-tissue origin. The ovary is thus entirely mesoblastic, a tumors arising from it, even if histologically of carcinomatous type, mesothelial (mesotheliomas), or mesenchymatous.

a continued has been a n came to an n the mucosa

primarily the erisalpingitis, acute pelvic an adhesive and all the

appears frehe peritonea! ard from the haracteristic; mucosa with with caseous be may show with stenosis g pyosalpinx, tick puriform dlosis process g to tubercle

the Fallopian So also there and descend-

show itself the abundant be mistaken nt branching tumors are d a few cases

t of the size The ovary the germinal follicles, with other hand, is soblastic, and ous type, are Abnormalities.—One or both ovaries may be wanting, and this usually accompanies other grave defects of the genito-urinary system. There may likewise be hypoplasta of one or both, with a relative absence of Graafian follicles. So also occasionally accessory ovaries have been encountered. Of abnormalities of position the most important congental condition is descent of the ovary into the canal of Nuck, simulating the descent of the testis into the inguinal canal.

Circulatory Disturbances.—It is notable that active hyperemia of the ovary may be extreme in the menstrual period, leading to such dilatation of the arteries that, as in the uterus after pregnancy, there may be a subsequent reduction in size of the vessels by means of new growth of the intimat tissues. The vessels similarly may show passive hyperemia in obstructive cardiac disease or from torsion or other local obstruction to the venous outflow. Physiological hemorrhage occurs into the corpora lutea, and pathological hemorrhage, generally localized, is found in various acute infections.

Inflammation.—Oöphoritis.— In all cases of acute peritonitis the ovary is found reddened and congested: it may even be infected in general bacteriemia; but by far the most frequent causes of inflammation lie in the spread of infection from connected structures, especially the tube, and this notably from gonorrhœal virus. The inflammation so set up may be diffuse or follicular, and as a result, the ovary may be soft, enlarged, and œdematous, or suppuration in small or large areas be seen. The entire organ may be converted into a sac of pus, which may rupture: such a change is usually accompanied by fixation to the tube and other nearby structures, so that a mass of inflammatory material is found in which it is recognized that both overy and tube have participated. This is known clinically as a tubo-ovarian abscess, and may arise equally from either constituent.

A frequent result of oöphoritis is that pelvic adhesions result, and the inflamed ovary is often found in Douglas's pouch. In considering the genesis of ovarian abscesses, it must not be forgotten that the very frequently seen follicular cysts of the ovary may become infected.

Chronic Cöphoritis.—In this the ovaries are found dense, of an ivory color, and while they may be smooth, the surface is usually corrugated, with or without adhesions. Warning must be given that a similar external appearance is seen in the shrunken, atrophic ovaries of old women. In the younger adult, this thickened condition of the outer layer of the ovary is due to an inflammatory fibrosis, and is important in that, obviously, it hinders the rupture of the follicle and the escape of the ovum. Such unruptured follicles undergo degeneration and become converted into small cysts, which are a characteristic feature in ovaries of this order. The stroma in general shows an increased fibrous hyperplasia. Chronic inflammation of the ovary usually results from continuance of an acute infection or from recurrent attacks of a mild irritant. Tuberculosis and syphilis are rare in the ovary.

Regressive Tissue Changes.—We have already referred to the atrop and fibrotic condition secondary to opphoritis. It was there stathat a somewhat similar appearance is encountered after the me pause. As a result of menstruation hyaline and elastoid changes seen in the arteries.

Progressive Tissue Changes. Tumors. If a morphological class cation be used, it is likely to be incorrect embryologically, for

etiology of many of the ovarian growths is yet in doubt.

It is possible to divide them roughly into the cystic, the cystic a solid mesotheliomatous or carcinomatous tumors, the connective-tis growths and the teratomas, a division which will serve to prevent of fusion.

Cysts.—These are of great variety, and it may be stated by way preface that they can originate from the follicles, from the germi epithelium, or from Wolffian "rests."

1. Cystic Degeneration of the Ovary.—This is characterized by appearance of numerous small cysts throughout its substance, lined

b Company

Fig. 295

Section through ovary exhibiting multiple follicular cysts of varying size (a, b, c, e, and f); d, Fallopian tube. (McGill Path. Mus.)

a single layer of cells, in places ciliat there is no follicular epithelium of usual type, and no ovum. They me found in the newborn. The weight is constituted by the thickened we of the follicle, and the fluid is clearly that an ill-timed riping of a follicle is responsible for the occurrence.

2. Follicular Cysts.—These are of a nature of true retention cysts. Usua these cysts are multiple and small but occasionally a single larger of is found. When small they are lined by cylindrical epithelium and at time a persistent ovum is seen. When last the epithelium, through pressure, flattened; they contain a limpid fluculate analogous to these are the cyloriginating in corpora lutea, usually be known by their thick, wavy, hyalically wall. In these the fluid is apt to colored by modified blood pigment.

3. Cystadenomas (Cystomas, or Glandular Pseudomucinous, Mullocular Cysts). The alternative names, taken together, describe fair accurately these cysts, the most common neoplasm that is found the ovary. They are unilateral or often bilateral. Now-a-days they a usually removed by operation before reaching a great size, but former cases have been described in which the weight of the cyst exceed that of the patient after its removal. The mass consists of one magnitude.

o the atrophic there stated r the menochanges are

gical classifially, for the

e cystic and ective-tissue prevent con-

d by way of he germinal

rized by the

nce, lined by aces ciliated; lelium of the They may. The wall lickened wall uid is clear. timed ripenble for their

ese are of the sts. Usually and small, larger cyst ey are lined and at times When large pressure, is limpid fluid. are the cysts a. usually to avy, hyaline is apt to be pigment. rous, Multiscribe fairly

is found in

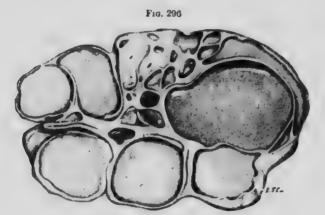
lays they are

but formerly

st exceeded

of one main

cyst of large size, with several subsidiary or daughter cysts, which may exist independently in the stroma or may encroach upon the cavity of the major cyst. On the inner wall are ridges representing former divisions between the cysts, the larger cyst being developed from the confluence of smaller ones. The cyst wall is tough, thin, and translucent, but in some cases thick, its blood supply being the large vessels that ramify on the surface. The fluid is of varying consistence, thinnest in the largest cyst, having a specific gravity between 1010 and 1030. It may be viscid, mucinous, clear, glassy, turbid, brownish, or at times bloody. Bodies related closely to mucin (pseudomucin) and albumin are present in the fluid.



Multilocular ovarian cyst.

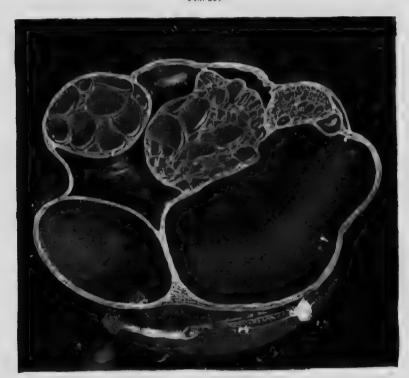
The cyst wall is composed of two layers, the outer dense and fibrous, the inner cellular and vascular. A single layer of cylindrical, columnar cells with basally placed nuclei lines it internally (see Fig. 143, p. 292). This epithelium has a pronounced tendency to form multiple papillary ingrowths, and an equal tendency to give origin to downgrowths into the cyst wall, which, becoming snared off, develop into secondary cysts. Microscopically, the lining cells are distinctly mucinous, but they may show various kinds and grades of degeneration. In addition to pseudonucin the fluid may contain fat gobules, leukocytes, degenerating cells, blood, and cholesterin. The position of the cyst in relation to the tube is characteristic. The tube can be lifted off the cyst, except in those rare cases in which the cyst develops between the layers of the broad ligament.

With the continued growth of the cyst, it lifts itself out of the true pelvis and elongates the ovarian ligament, which, acting as a long pedicle to a relatively movable growth, is liable to be twisted, shutting off the circulation. The cyst wall then becomes dark red in color, and its tissues may show all grades of hemorrhagic infarction, even to necrois. A large cyst may break and discharge its contents into the

peritoneum, where the mass of mucinous material may be walled around and form a kind of false mucinous tumor (pseudomyxoma peritonei).

Papillary Cystoma (Cystadenoma Papilliferum).—A well-known clinical variety of this order of tumor is the so-called cystadenoma papilliferum in which the papillary growth is very pronounced. The cavity of cavities are more or less filled with warty, villous or tree-like excress cences formed of proliferated stroma covered by ciliated cylindrical epithelium. The stroma is fairly vascular, but may undergo a mucinous

Frg. 297



Cystadenoma. Multilocular ovarian cyst. (Dudley.)

degeneration. When the papillæ appear, as they sometimes do, on the outside of the cyst, it means that a rupture of the cyst wall has occurred permitting the papillæ inside to burst forth; sometimes the papillæ actually invade the cyst wall. In such a case the cystic quality of the tumor has receded and it approximates more than before to papilloma.

The fluid is thin and watery, at times bloody in appearance. The tumor is an important one, because in time it becomes malignan (a quality foreshadowed by its infiltrating its own wall), giving ris to secondary nodules on the peritoneum. The origin of cystadenoma has led to much discussion, and the question is still an open one. Leave

ed around. onei). wn clinical pilliferum. cavity or ike excrescylindrical mucinous ing this question necessarily unsettled, there is a natural transition to the carcinomas, considering the great liability for the benign tumors, especially the cystic ones, to become malignant. Like the cystadenoma, carcinoma of the ovary has been found in early life, even before puberty.

Carcinoma. These are cystic and solid, the former arising in the simple cystadenomas, or even more frequently, in the papillomatous ones. In the former, which in general resemble their non-malignant prototypes, the walls and septa are infiltrated with nodules which are masses of epithelial cells. Multiple rows of cells replace single rows; the fluid contents are cloudy from admixture of cells and blood, at times viscid, or even colloid.

In the papillary type (cystadenoma papilliferum malignum), the frankly malignant form of the type above described, the papillae grow exuberantly, and the septa are infiltrated with papillomatous masses, which may grow right through the walls and appear externally, giving rise to peritoneal and broad ligament metastases, and to secondary growths in distant organs. At times it may be difficult to determine whether a given carcinoma is primary in the stomach or the ovary.

The solid carcinomas of the ovary form smooth or nodular growths of large size and may be unilateral or bilateral. They may be of uniform, rather soft consistence, and exude a milky fluid on pressure, or may be scirrhous or even colloid. Histologically, they may be diffuse, alveolar or may simulate tubules of cylindrical, cuboidal, or polymorphous cells. An abundant deposit of calcareous material may give rise to psammo-

carcinoma.

Ribbert regards these as embryomas in which the entoderm or hypoblast alone has undergone development, and compares the papillary growth to chorionic villi. We are not prepared to accept this view, but, from the studies of our colleague Dr. Goodall, are inclined to believe that the origin is from certain remarkable downgrowths of the germinal epithelium which do not undergo development into Graafian follicles, but are found persisting in about 10 per cent. of human ovaries, in the form of spaces or cavities, lined by an epithelium which, according to life period and stage of development, is curiously variable in its characters. An interesting feature about these persistent growths is that they show a marked liability to the formation of capillary ingrowths, as again to the development of outgrowths at times solid, at times glandular or cystic, into the surrounding ovarian tissue. We possess here, in short, an organ or part capable of giving origin to multiple cysts and to intracystic ingrowths.

Connective-tissue Tumors. - Of the connective-tissue tumors, the most important are fibroma, adenofibroma, cystofibroma, myofibroma, endothelioma, perithelioma, and sarcoma. Fibromas usually form diffuse over rowths with uniform enlargement of the ovary, but may be cir-

cumscribed nodules, unilateral or bilateral.

The sarcomas are not nearly so common as are carcinomas of the ovary. Like so many of the ovarian tumors, they tend to be bilateral: they may be round-celled, spindle-celled, or giant-celled, and it has been

do, on the s occurred, the papillæ quality of pefore to a

ance. The malignant giving rise stadenomas ne. Leavsuggested that the last originate possibly from the interstitial cells which are of like origin with the cells of the Granfian follicles. Some case are on record of true carcinoma sarcomatodes. These perhaps represent

transitional types seen in tumors of mesothelial origin.

Endotheliomas are occasionally encountered, but, here again, there a great liability to classify complicated and doubtful tumors of the transitional type as either endo- or perithelioma. Much fuller studies necessary before we can properly classify the ovarian new growths.

Teratomas. These constitute a class apart and are not uncommon. They are embryomas, or as stated on p. 209, the result of aberrar growth of totipotent ovarian germ cells. They are generally cystical though solid forms consisting of cells derived from all three generally consisting of cells.

layers are at times met.

Cystic Teratomas.—Appearing as cysts of any size up to five or sinches in diameter, usually solitary, but sometimes multiple and hateral, these are specially prone to appear after puberty. On opening the cysts are seen to contain tallow-like contents, mixed with hai sometimes the contents are thin fluid with tallowy masses. The hai are fixed to skin resembling the scalp, which covers a knobbed part the inner surface, the rest being covered by what looks like muco membrane. Underlying the knob may be bone, and in it are often incisor teeth, sometimes in a row as in the jaw. Microscopic examination through the knobbed portion shows hair follicles, sebaceous as sweat glands, portions of bone and cartilage, sometimes structures the eye; in fact, almost any structure found in the embryo may

seen, and even attempts at limbs have been observed.

Solid Teratomas. - The solid teratomas are less common. The tum on section shows multiple small cysts with serous, mucinous, or tallor like contents, lined by ciliated, columnar or flat epithelium, in i solid parts muscle, cartilage, glial tissue, and so on; but as a gener rule, the solid teratomas contain less developed tissues than the cysti and are more prone to malignant development with secondaries other organs. Cystic teratomas, it is true, frequently undergo a ca cinomatous development, the tumor growth being of various kind even chorio-epitheliomatous, and the metastases may be also of mixe nature, although sometimes of only one kind of malignant tissu Before leaving the "mixed tumors" of the ovary, it may be pointed or that there are two kinds, those in which different tissues develop ind pendently and simultaneously (mixed tumors proper), and those which a secondary transformation occurs in the previously existing neoplasm (tumor in tumore). Almost every known combination benign and malignant growths has been observed.

Teratomas are liable to complications of various sorts; twisting the pedicle may lead to anemia, hemorrhage, or necrosis; inflammatic may result in adhesions or suppuration with rupture into surroundir organs, the peritoneum or to the outside. If the more serious result do not ensue, there is at least congestion, ædema, and the formation degeneration cysts; hyaline or calcareous degeneration, also, may occur

cells which Some cases s represent

in, there is nors of the uller study growths. uncommon. of aberrant ally cystic, three germ

five or six ple and bi-In opening, with hair; The hairs bed part of ike mucous it are often ic examinaaccous and ructures of tyo may be

The tumor is, or tallowium, in its as a general athe cystic, ondaries in dergo a carrious kinds, so of mixed nant tissue, pointed out evelop independ those in sly existing bination of

twisting of aflammation surrounding clous results ormation of may occur.

RELATED PELVIC STRUCTURES—THE LIGAMENTS, THE PERI-METRIUM, THE PARAMETRIUM, AND THE PELVIC CON-NECTIVE TISSUE

Congenital Anoma les.—Various modifications of the ligaments can occur, governed by the absence or anomalous position of the more important organs with which they are connected; remains of the

parovarium and the paroophoron may give rise to cysts.

Circulatory Disturbances.—The veins in all these structures may be dilated, tortuous, thrombosed, or (especially those of the ovarian or pampiniform plexus) the seat of phlebolith formation. Hemorrhage may arise from many different causes connected with the pelvic organs, and the course of the blood varies, according to whether it is intra- or extra-If into the peritoneum, it may gravitate into Douglas' pouch and form a postuterine hematoms or hematocele; if in large enough quantity or circumscribed, it may enlarge the space between the uterus and bladder, as an ante-uterine hematoma. If extraperitoneal, it may infiltrate diffusely all the loose connective tissue of the pelvis, or may be between the layers of the broad ligament (intraligamentous hematoma). In any case the blood may be absorbed and leave traces as pigment; or being partly unabsorbed may undergo organization and be walled off, the occurrence being marked finally by the presence of a mass of fibrous adhesions; or while still fluid it may rupture the wall of some organ and escape; or being infected, may become the basis of an abscess. The hemorrhage of greatest importance is that due to a ruptured ectopic gestation sac, although bleeding may also occur from rupture of a Graafian follicle, from a cyst, from the escape of blood from the abdominal end of the tube, or accidentally after an opera-

Inflammation.—According to situation, this may be parametritis—that is, cellulitis of the pelvic tissues, or perimetritis, a localized peritonitis affecting the uterine serosa.

Parametritis.— Infection of the pelvic connective tissue arises from extension of a gonorrhoal or other infection of the passage, or from injuries in parturition or from puerperal sepsis. The exudate may be serous, or the tissues diffusely infiltrated with pus, or there may be localized abscess formation, and even gangrene. Where pus is formed it may burrow to the abdominal wall, the thigh, the floor of the pelvis, or may perforate into some of the viscera. If healing of such a state occur, it will be at the cost of much adhesion and fibrosis. The sogeral inflamed tissues of a parametritis are clinically known by that good descriptive phrase, "the (inflammatory) pelvic mass." Whatever area is affected, Douglas' pouch is sure to suffer, sooner or later, by reason of its position, and abscess in this area is frequent (retro-uterine abscess). In all these inflammations, the adhesions are an important factor. In a low grade of infection they may be the chief abnormal fact

(productive pelvic peritonitis), and may lead to all sorts of distortion and occlusion; in an ordinary case, their position may determine the localization and ultimate course of the fluid exudate.

Progressive Tissue Changes.—The round ligaments may hype trophy along with the uterus, and the broad ligaments with ovaria or parovarian cysts.

Tumors.—The tumors found in the broad ligament are in the mai derived from the uterus, where they are not of ovarian origin. The growths are mostly benign, myomas, fibromas, lipomas, and even adence myomas of the type already described as originating in the uterine wal

Cysts.—Mention should here be made of parovarian cysts, which arisfrom the parovarium. A parovarian cyst may grow as large as a man head. It lies at first between the abdominal end of the tube and the ovary, and as it develops the tube and ovary may be widely separate and greatly flattened. There is generally no pedicle, and the wall thin; internally the wall may show papillate ingrowths. The container fluid is watery, and a low specific gravity.

Teratomas ("dermoid cysts") have been found in the pelvic connective tissues, and sarcomas can arise from it; carcinoma is alway secondary.

THE PUERPERAL UTERUS

Apart from hemorrhages connected with the injuries of labor, an with imperfect involution, and hemorrhage due to accidental disturbance of the placenta, diseases of the puerperal uterus centre aroun infection. As a result, endometritis, metritis, or "puerperal fever" ma supervene.

The offending organisms are most often the streptococcus pyogene and the staphylococcus, and the predisposing causes are lack of clear liness and meddling, usually in the way of examination, douches, an improperly undertaken instrumentation of the lining of the uterus. The infection may be membranous: in general, the placental site is most affected, the surface is dry and gray or brown or even green it color.

In addition to this, there may be infection and decomposition of retained feetal products, blood, or lochia. The uterus of such a cas is enlarged, the wall cedematous, the endometrium dirty green of brownish-black in color, stinking and pulpy, the wall of the uterus sof and rotten. Microscopically, in either case, the tissues stain badly and areas of necrosis or of infiltration are seen according to the varying severity of the infection. Bacteria can usually be readily demonstrated on the surface and in the tissues.

In slight cases of puerperal infection, there is no such serious state the placental site, it is true, is ragged and unclean looking, but if drainage be efficient the affection subsides with no further consequences. For practical purposes, it must be remembered that an intra-uterine distortion determine

nay **hyper**th ovarian

the main rigin. The even adenoterine wall. which arise as a man's be and the y separated the wall is e contained

pelvic conı is always

labor, and all disturbtre around ever" may

s pyogenes k of cleanbuches, and terus. The ite is most n green in

position of uch a case or green or uterus soft badly and he varying nonstrated

rious state; ut if drainusequences. tra-uterine douche at such a time often serves to produce an alarming state of fever and rapid pulse, due to the sudden release and absorption of toxins; it is always to be remembered that treatment, to be efficient, must inflict no further lesion on the uterine wall. Another extremely important fact to be kept in mind is that fever in the puerperium is most likely to be due to infection of the genital tract.

In the pregnant uterus, if the patient is suffering from infectious disease, endometritis may arise from hematogenic sources; if of low grade, the decidua may be merely thickened, but if severe, purulent secretion is found, which instead of being discharged, may be retained between the deciduæ; hemorrhage and abortion are likely to ensue.

Metritis.—It will be evident that any severe case of puerperal endometritis is accompanied by a corresponding metritis, which need scarcely be considered by itself, further than to point out that the metrium may be the seat of a diffuse serous or purulent infiltration or of multiple abscesses; on the other hand, the metritis may consist of little more than an infection of the lymphatics or of the vessels with thrombosis. From such beginnings the lymphangitis may spread to the diaphragm, the thrombophlebitis to the vena cava, the infection to the peri- and parametrium, and an extensive pelvic cellulitis and peritonitis be the result; frequently, and most serious of all, a bacteriemia arises (puerperal septicemia).

Progressive Tissue Changes.—Tumors.—The tumor specially connected with pregnancy is the chorio-epithelioms malignum, otherwise called deciduoms malignum, syncytioms, syncytial carcinoms, and many other names. It has been elsewhere explained (see p. 213) that this is to be classed as a teratogenous blastoma. When it appears in the uterus it is an evidence of previous conception, although this may have occurred long before.

This tumor tends to form polypoid or fungating growths projecting into the uterine cavity, but quickly invades the endometrium and the uterine vessels. It is of reddish color, often hemorrhagic, and soft, friable, and spongy.

The growth originates by proliferation of Langhans' layer of the chorionic villi; these cells, instead of undergoing syncytial change, remain active and proliferative. After they have proliferated in abnormal situations, they may, it is true, undergo the usual transformations into syncytium. The deeply infiltrating parts may show an alveolar structure, but the spaces possess no special lining and the tumor has no stroma and no blood vessels. The syncytial elements when present are in the form of plasmodial giant cells. The cells of the Langhans' layer tend to be spherical, and are grouped into masses of varying size. In the secondaries, they possess all their original power of erosion.

Mention has been made of the readiness with which this tumor metastasizes; the vagina is very often an early seat of extension.

THE PRODUCTS OF CONCEPTION

The Placenta

The pathology of the placenta is not very well understood, an few of its morbid states are recognizable at first glance. Its size an its place are variable; its size, if extreme, is often in keeping with that of the child; usually single, there have been seven reported with one focus accessory placentas of small size (placents succenturiats) are ofte seen. The position of the placenta would be a matter of little moment were it not for the fact that its displacement causes it to interfere with the opening of the uterus, and it is torn and bleeds at parturition-placenta previa. It is considered that endometritis is a predisposin factor in the occurrence of placenta previa.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Among vascular changes, it may be said that pressure upon the cord by knotting, torsion or other means may make the placenta anemic or, more probably, hyperemic, the veins being more compressed than the more resistant arteries. Thrombosis may result in placental infarct, a brown or yellow area with altered blood clothat ultimately may undergo organization. Hemorrhage is the most important of these circulatory changes, because effused blood may separate the placenta from the uterine wall, and so cause abortion Cedema of the placenta occurs as the result of extreme congestion, and in hydramnios and cases of general anasarca.

Inflammation.—Tuberculosis.—Occasionally in a woman the subject of widespread tuberculosis the placenta may be infected from the blood and the rare event happens of a civild born with tuberculosis; such tuberculosis is congenital, not hereditary.

Syphilis.—Syphilis leads to cellular infiltration of the placenta; the arteries may also be the seat of syphilitic endarteritis.

Regressive Tissue Changes.—Hyaline and fatty degeneration, and necrosis, followed at times by calcification are all known as results o circulatory disturbances.

Progressive Tissue Changes. — We have already (p. 211) called attention to the results of retention of the placenta in the production of different forms of placental mole—fleshy mole, hydatidiform mole, and the chorio-epithelioms malignum. For the placental tissue to take on other forms of new growth is singularly rare; nevertheless, fibroms and fibromyoms have been described. The angioms, also recorded, is presumably a condition of hemangiectsis. As regards cysts, these may be either necrotic, secondary to localized infarct, or occasionally in an otherwise normal placenta, the villi of a restricted area may show cedema and the production of a condition simulating the hydatidiform mole.

The Umbilical Cord

The cord varies greatly in length, both extremes being troublesome at parturition; if the omphalo-meseraic duct does not properly close, the intestines may protrude into it (hernia of the cord).

chief interest in diseases or pathological change seen in the cord attaches to the bearing which these have on parturition or the state of the fœtus. Thus it may be twisted or looped about the fœtus or some part of it, so as to cause even amputation of a limb in early fœtal life, or strangulation at birth. Sometimes deep grooves are made upon the body surface by pressure of the cord.

Various degenerations of the usual kinds may be wrought in the cord by disturbance of its circulation, and septic infection of the cut end may lead to infection of the infant by way of the arteries and veins, which become inflamed.

Syphilis of the cord is seen as a smallcelled infiltration around the vessels; myxoma, angioma, and cysts are occasionally found.

The Amnion and the Amniotic Fluid

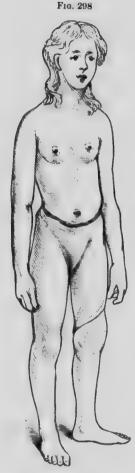
The amnion may press upon the feetus, so that development of a part or parts may be hindered; actual adhesions may occur. If the outflow of blood and lymph be obstructed, giantism of a part may ensue. The amniotic fluid may be excessive in amount (hydramnios, polyhydramnios) or it may be diminished (oligohydramnics). It may be contaminated by fœtal excretions so as to be dirty and foul, and may undergo infection and putrefaction.

The Fœtus

The death of the feetus may be followed by its expulsion, but if not expelled, it mar macerate and disintegrate, coming away gradually in pieces; or a drying-up process (mummification) may ensue, or even calcifica-

tion lithopedion). Death of the fœtus in utero is often due to syphilis,

cupied by the cord. (Hawthorne.)



Girl, aged ten years, showing cicatricial grooves due to constriction of umbilical cord. At birth, according to the mother, the grooves in the abdominal wall and left thigh were oc-

stood, and ts size and rith that of one foetus: are often le moment erfere with rturition—

edisposing

ay be said neans may veins being bosis may blood clot the most olood may abortion. estion, and

he subject the blood. losis; such

ation, and results of

centa; the

called production mole, and o take on oroma and ed, is prese may be ally in an nay show latidiform and various forms of acute or chronic disease in the mother, produing toxemia, may suffice to kill it.

Ectopic gestation may take place in any part of the tube, but is mo common at the entrance of the tube to the uterus (interstitial gest tion) and in the mid part of the tube. It is not likely that abdomin gestation ever occurs, the fœtus that is found in the abdomen havin been extruded from the tube (tubal abortion). To this we have alread referred on p. 652.

The chief danger in ectopic gestation lies in the liability to seven hemorrhage at the time of rupture, and the necessity for operative delivery, for as will be easily imagined, there are but few cases the admit of expulsion by the natural channels. The causes of ectop gestation are inflammatory, such as the existence of gonorrhæa, or some obstruction, either by bending or folding of the tube or by the present of a tumor or other obstacle to the passage of the ovum.

THE MAMMARY GLAND

The diseases of the breast belong alike to both sexes, but by reaso of its function in lactation, the female breast becomes of prime importance; in the male, a consideration of its diseases would be a very simple and brief matter. The mammary gland is branched, and at the onse of pregnancy the single lobes become compound and many new acir are formed, while the vascularization and stroma advance equally it their development; at the time of delivery, the first expression bring from the gland colostrum, in which the "colostrum corpuscles" are cells that have wandered into the acini and have engorged themselve with the fat corpuscles that lie therein; after their dislodgement, the globules are, in the regular way, the product of the mammary cells When the function of lactation is finished, the breast, as a whole becomes smaller and once more simplified.

Congenital Anomalies.—Amazia or amastia, absence of the breast often bilateral, is generally associated with lack of ovarian development, and hypoplasia, the infantile breast, accompanies an infantile state of the sexual organs in general. Microthelia, an abnormal smallness of the nipple, may lead to difficulty in suckling. Abnormal development of the breast in the male (gynecomastia), reduplication of the nipple (polythelia) or of the breast itself (polymastia) are observed. Accessor, breasts may be seen in such a situation as the axillæ, from pinched of lobules (aberrant mammæ), and such, as well as the ordinary super

numerary breasts, can produce milk.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Swelling of the breast sometimes characterizes the premenstrual period, and occasionally vicarious menstruation is exhibited by discharge of blood from the nipple. Hemorrhage and the formation of hemorrhagic cysts may result from trauma either primarily or by bleeding into a preëxistent cyst.

er, produc-

but is most titial gestaabdominal nen having ave already

y to severe r operative cases that of ectopic ea, or some he presence

by reason me importvery simple t the onset new acini equally in sion brings iscles" are themselves ement, the mary cells. It is a whole,

the breast, in developmentile state mallness of evelopment the nipple Accessory binched off ary super-

nes characs menstrufemorrhage uma either

Inflammation.—Inflammation may arise in the breast at any period of life, even in infancy, but it is most often found during lactation, where infection gains entrance through the nipple canal, or more frequently by way of small fissures or cracks in the nipple. Rarely the breast suffers by extension of inflammation, as where the infection from a carious rib or a ruptured empyema reaches its tissues. Thelitis, inflammation of the nipple, and areolitis, of the areola, occur, with the formation of abscess, the so-called antemammary abscess. Inflammation of the breast tissue itself (mastitis) is the most common form; the breast is enlarged, tender, and sometimes reddened; it may be possible to press pus from the nipple (galactophoritis purulenta), or there may merely be evidence of a deep abscess or of several such; more rarely, the entire breast is in a state of purulent infiltration (mastitis phlegmonosa). However the infection may have reached the breast, the interstitial tissue is seen microscopically to be infiltrated, while the glands contain a semipurulent material in which are abundant desquamated degenerate. I gland cells and leukocytes. If the disease be not relieved, the abscesses may coalesce, and the entire breast be riddled, and the pus may travel far for an outlet, may break through the skin or even into the thorax. An opening into the skin may establish a fistula through which milk, mixed with inflammatory products, may escape. A nonsuppurative mastitis may quickly resolve; abscesses if evacuated may heal with scarring, and it not evacuated, the pus may inspissate, and calcareous deposit occur; in a much scarred breast, the onset of a new pregnancy may be attended by the development of retention cysts. The so-called retention mastitis is nothing more than infection of a breast in which there is already an irritation caused by the presence of stagnant gland secretion.

Tuberculosis.—Tuberculosis occurs with fair frequency in the breast, occasionally as diffuse miliary tuberculosis, but oftener as caseous areas, and as cavities, from which fistulæ may open. The edges of the fistulæ are covered by granulation tissue and the discharge is thin pus. The axillary lymph nodes also show caseation, and may even break down and discharge. In the case of both these forms of tuberculosis the infection is hematogenic. Syphilis may occur on the nipple as the primary lesion, and diffuse and gummatous infiltrations may arise in the breast in the later stages, while the skin of the breast may exhibit

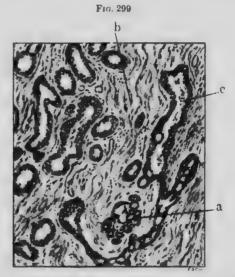
specific changes, as the skin elsewhere.

Regressive Tissue Changes.—Atrophy of the mammary fland occurs at the menopause and sometimes after removal of the ovaries, although the loss may be compensated or overcompensated in bulk by fat, without which the breast becomes small and flabby. Microscopically, thickening and hyaline degeneration of the walls of the ducts occur, so that they appear as yellowich-white lines in the tissue.

Progressive Tissue C: Regeneration of destroyed tissue occurs only to a slight expensatory hypertrophy of the rest of the gland is a more frequent happening, and is not confined to preg-

nancy but may happen in cases of new growth of the uterus and ovarie Rare cases are observed, usually in the young, of a kind of neoplast overgrowth (giantism of the breast) in which a breast has attained weight of sixty-four pounds. There is also diffuse overgrowth that som times is of the nature of fibromatosis, at others of adenomatosis, or oboth together. The nipple does not share in the general enlargement

Tumors.—These are of considerable complexity and of great practic importance because of the preponderance of malignant forms of growt because they are readily accessible to surgical removal, the patholegist's opinion is frequently asked, and the decision is often very difficut to make. Because of the liability to error, and the frequency of malignant tumors in this site, it has become a surgical rule to advise the

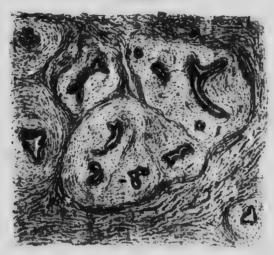


Fibro-adenoma of breast affording indications of overgrowth and aberrant growth of the glandul elements: a, compressed acini; b, fibrous overgrowth; c, a somewhat dilated duct, with epitheli proliferation.

removal of any growth whose nature is at all doubtful. Although the male breast is able to show examples of all the tumors to which the female breast is liable, it does so relatively infrequently; the latter is in a state of physiological and anatomical instability throughout the years of sexual activity, and is liable now to progression, now to recession of vegetative activity, which is precisely the state of affairs in which we have indicated a "habit of growth" as likely to arise. Because of it exposed position, a history of trauma frequently precedes the development of a tumor, and the association has been accorded, especially by the laity, an importance that is probably undeserved. Among primary growths, the epithelial are most important, and consist of fibroadenomas adenomas, cysts, and carcinomas.

Fibro-adenomas.—These are growths from the size of a cherry stone to that of a walnut, hard, sometimes nodular on the surface, readily

Fra 300



Pericanalicular fibroma of the mammary gland. The glandular acini and ducts are prominent and show some irregular overgrowths of the epithelium, but the main feature is the development of connective tissue both periacinous and interstitial, the latter not sharply defined. (Ribbert.)

Fig. 301



Intracanalicular fibroma or intracystic papilloma of breast. (Orth.)

shelled out from the surrounding tissue, which on section have a very definite fibrous structure; between the fibrous bands, the glandular

of the glandular with epithelial

ind ovaries. Ineoplastic attained a a that somestosis, or of alargement. at practical of growth; ne pathologry difficult by of maligadvise the

though the the female in a state is years of recession of a which we cause of its ne developpedially by ng primary padenomas,

tissue protrudes. It will be at once evident that the term fibroadenon implies that not only is there overgrowth of the fibrous tissue, but also of the gland tissue, and it requires considerable experience to be sur of this on microscopic examination. Pure fibroma of the breast rare; nearly every fibromatous growth includes in it some glandula structures which necessarily become distorted, pressed, and lose some what of their orderly arrangement; there will be all grades seen between a very fibrous growth containing few acini and a slightly fibrous growth showing many acini, yet all alike may be classed as adenofibroma. It is customary to divide these growths into pericanalicular and intra canalicular adenofibromas. In the pericanalicular form, single glan acini are surrounded by a thick layer of cellular fibrous tissue, whilin the intracanalicular form there are papilloma-like projections of proliferated stroma covered by proliferated gland epithelium extendin into the lumen of the ducts.

Degenerative or other changes in the structure of the tissues formin these tumors give origin to various modifications such as adenomyzo

fibromas, adenolipofibromas, and adenofibrosarcomas.

Pure Adenomas.—These are comparatively rare, and are solid, of cystic. The solid forms approximate somewhat to the fibro-adenomas but are distinguished by the extreme increase of glandular tissue. The cystic form (cystadenoma papilliferum) is characterized by the presence of cysts on the inner walls of which there are small papillo matous or polypoid projections.

Cysts.—If all sorts of cysts are here considered, it is needful to mention milk cysts (galactocele) which arise by blocking of a duct during the time when secretion is active. These are true retention cysts Of another kind are the involution cysts found in advanced years; they appear as usually multiple, bilateral, hard small masses, not capable of being shelled out and on section cystic, with variously colored fluid the state in which these cysts develop is called chronic cystic mastitis.

Carcinomas.—1. Gland Carcinoma.—This arises most commonly in the fourth and fifth decades as a firm, ill-defined mass in the breast not easily movable apart from the rest of the gland. Frequently, there is a relatively early indrawing of the nipple. The growth becomes more superficial, and as it does so, the skin until now freely movable over the tumor, becomes fixed to it, and carcinomatous masses appear as knobs in the skin. Without complete removal by operation, the carcinoma may spread diffusely through the skin and subcutaneous tissue forming a dense, board-like mass (cancer "en cuirasse"). Sometimes the growth breaks through the skin in a fungous mass. Necrosis and ulceration are prone to occur. The lymph nodes nearby are early infiltrated, not only the axillary but the supra- and infraclavicular groups, as well as the pleura, the other breast and the underlying muscle; the secondaries exhibit a tendency to attack the bones.

Microscopically, one may distinguish a soft rapidly growing (medulary) form and a hard, slowly growing (scirrhous) form, between which

roadenoma ie, but also to be sure e breast is e glandular lose someen between ous growth nofibromas. and intrangle gland ssue, while jections of extending

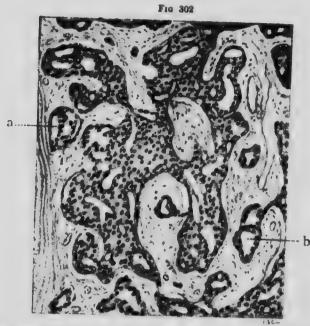
es forming denomyxo-

e **solid**, or adenomas, lar tissue. ed by the all papillo-

ul to menuct during zion cysts, cears; they ot capable ored fluid; nastitis.

nastus.
only in the
oreast not
otly, there
of becomes
of movable
ses appear
on, the carous tissue
cometimes
crosis and
early infilar groups,
uscle; the

g (medulen which



Adenocarcinoma of mammary gland a, b, cancer acini with multiple lumen formation.





ma of breast infiltrating into surrounding fatty tissue of breast; a, fatty tissue of breast; b, small-colled infiltration at outer limit of the advancing growth; c, carcinoma.

are all degrees of variation. When neither very soft nor obvious fibrous, the growth is usually denominated carcinoma simplex. The soft tumors are whitish, and exude milky juice, while the scirrhout ones are fibrous, scar-like, and, if in the region of the larger duct tend to retract the nipple. Microscopically in a medullary carcinomathe carcinoma cells may be diffuse or arranged in an alveolar or a tubular manner; in scirrhous tumors often in mere lines. The new growth mainvade the larger ducts and infiltrates among the fatty tissues; secondaring inflammatory reaction is often seen (p. 265). The scirrhous form modified only in this particular that there is a parallel, strongly progressing process of healing by fibrosis going on, so that in a field the carcinomatous alveoli or tubules may be surprisingly scanty. Psan momatous bodies and colloid change are rare modifications.

2. Squamous Carcinoma of the Nipple and Areola (Paget's disease the breast).—These terms are not exactly synonymous, but Paget disease includes most of the cases; here it seems as if a squamous carcinoma arose from the lining of the larger duct mouths, tending the same of the larger duct mouths.

ulcerate and spread superficially.

Other Growths.—Growths other than epithelial are rather uncommon Fibroma has been referred to; sarcomas of the various kinds are seen as well as endo- and peritheliomas, chondromas, and osteomas. Melanom arises occasionally in the nipple or areola.

r obviously
plex. The
e scirrhous
rger ducts,
r carcinoma
or a tubular
growth may
; secondary
ous form is
rongly proa field the
ty. Psam-

disease of out Paget's squamous tending to

ncommon.
s are seen,
Melanoma

CHAPTER XII

THE MOTOR AND TEGUMENTARY SYSTEMS

THE MUSCLES

THE anatomical muscle is made up of numerous bundles, each of which, in turn, is made of individual muscle cells; the bundles are heid to one another by a fibrous tissue network, lodging fat, vessels, and nerves, the perimysium; the individual fibres or cells are similarly held together by the endomysium. The individual fibre cell is differentiated into the fibrils, which carry the transverse striations, the sarcoplasm or cement substance, and the sarcolemma. The fibre is polynuclear, the oval nuclei arranged in rows close to the inner surface of the sarcolemma. The size of muscle fibres differs enormously. The muscle spindles are structures distinguished from the other fibres by small size and a thick perimysium; innervated from the sympathetic system, it is thought that they may be the organ of "muscular sense." After death, as soon as a couple of hours in the young, the myoalbumins coagulate, so that in a short time, the muscles are firm and rigid (rigor mortis), a condition which passes off after a day or so. The muscle fibre is rigid and shortened.

The muscles are much exposed to trauma and to infection, but they are well protected by the tissue juices and the free circulation. The muscle whose innervation is interfered with is by no means so immune.

Congenital Anomalies.—These are so numerous as to forbid detailed description. Absence of a whole muscle or a part, reduplication, abnormal origin, insertion, or size include most of the modifications found; muscles may appear in man which are normally found only in some other species. The one muscle whose importance entitles it to special mention is the diaphragm; defect of this muscle may vary from a small opening to a lack of almost an entire half, so that the thoracic and abdominal cavities are freely communicative. We have seen at autopsy a huge congenital defect, with many abdominal organs in the thorax, in a man of prore than fifty years who had some reputation as an athlete in his younger days; to so much can the body become accustomed.

Circulatory Disturbances. Anemia of the muscles of more than temporary duration rarely curs apart from generalized anemic states of the body; if there be an obliterative endarteritis of many vessels, the blood supply may be continuously restricted.

Hyperemia occurs in and about areas of inflammation, and in states of passive congestion.

Hemorrhage is usually of traumatic origin; if a large amount of blue extravasated, a hematoma results; this may be absorbed, and part heal with fibrosis, or may be infected with abscess formation, of cyst may develop. Smaller hemorrhages (petechiae) are of other originary are found in cases of great hyperemia and of great anemia very severe toxemias, and bacteriemias, but are less readily seen muscles than in whiter tissues. Infarct is infrequent, because muscles have a good collateral blood supply; in cases of widespread thrombosis or a general selerosis of many vessels, infarct may devel and may even lead to gangrene.

Inflammation.—Myositis.—The changes which characterize a sli myositis are those of the connective tissue, the muscle entering into process only by showing a cloudy or other degeneration. In supportive myositis, abscesses occur by extension from periosteal or cellul infections or as a part of a general bacteri-mic process, but in this the muscles escape better than do other solic organs, perhaps because their activity arousing hyperemia. The abscesses are circumscribed or there is a diffuse necrosis produced. The process of healing

Chronic myositis is exemplified by such an inflammation as is so in arthritis deformans, where there is a progressive thickening of perimysium and an inflammation of the endomysium with degenerat of the fibres; it may be seen, too, in the neighborhood of any proc of a low degree of acuity. Here may be mentioned those pecul cases of myositis which result in the growth of bone in a mus such as the adductor (rider's bone), and the strange disease cal myositis ossificans. These it will be remembered are rather examp of metaplasia than of true inflammation, even if in the former cannot be adducted to the control of the control of the cannot be adducted to the control of the cannot be adducted to the cannot be added to the cannot be a

there is a continued irritant at work.

Acute Polymyositis.—This is an ill understood and rare disease, chacterized by spontaneous multiple swellings of the muscles of maparts of the body, with loss of motor power, accompanied by urtical swelling of the skin. There is a marked cedema of the muscles we round-celled infiltration and petechial hemorrhages, and vacuolat of the individual fibres.

Trichiniasis.—This is a widespread inflammation of the muscles of to the presence of a systemic infection by *Trichina spiralis*. The wor obtain entry to the muscles and there encapsulate themselves, appear as tiny white or gray dots; microscopically the coiled-up worm can seen in its capsule, which is thick and chitinous; in the muscles around especially when the parasites are numerous, there is a great celluinfiltration, accompanied by degeneration of the muscle fibres, some which are degenerated even if not directly attacked by the parasite nuclei of the muscle fibres are ordinarily multiplied.

Tuberculosis.—Tuberculosis of hematogenic origin is not very commo but may be part of a generalized infection; the muscles, however, even here seem to be fairly self-protective. Generally the disease is secondary.

ount of blood bed, and the mation, or a other origin. t anemia, in idily seen in because the f widespread nay develop.

rize a slight ring into the

In suppural or cellulitic at in this last ps because of reumscribed, of healing is

n as is seen ening of the degeneration any process lose peculiar in a muscle isease called her examples former case

lisease, charles of many by urticarial nuscles with vacuolation

muscles due
The worms
es, appearing
worm can be
scles around,
reat cellular
ores, some of
the parasite.

ery common, owever, even is secondary to and in the neighborhood of tuberculosis of the bones and joints, where it takes the form of small or large, caseous area. The resulting area of suppuration is called a "cold" abscess, the pus from which may burrow for long distances between the muscle bundles, infecting fresh areas as it goes.

Syphilis.—The form usually assumed by syphilis in the muscle is the gumma, although a diffuse inflammatory form is also seen. Gumma in the muscles reaches its greatest dimensions, and its progress and healing are marked by great fibrous proliferation, atrophy of surrounding and involved muscles often occurring.

Glanders and Actinomycosis.—These occasionally give rise to slowly forming abscesses.

Parasites. — Apart from trichina, cysticercus and echinococcus are seen occasionally in the muscles.

Regressive Tissue Changes.—Atrophy.—Atrophy of muscles as a whole occurs in old age, or in cases of inanition, excellently exemplified in the marasmus of infants. Not only is there loss of size, but if the process continue long or be extreme, other degenerative changes are brought about. Atrophy from disuse is seen in cases of long-continued fixation of joints. Equally familiar is the atrophy wrought in infections or cachexias.

Neuropathic atrophy is the form brought about by lesion of the central or peripheral nervous system. Such an atrophy partakes partly of the nature of that from disuse, but there is even more, for the muscle in health is kept in a state of tonus (that is, incomplete relaxation) by continuous rhythmical stimuli of slight force. Somewhat allied to a neuropathic atrophy is that seen in myopathy (progressive muscular atrophy), in which the lesion in the nervous system is not apparent; it is thought that this may be an example of abiotrophy in which the muscle starts life with a less than proper amount of molecular energy. It has little bearing on the pathological condition that the disease in its early stages shows hypertrophy, for this is only apparent, occasioned by intermuscular fatty deposit.

In atrophy from any of these causes there are certain fundamental features to be seen; the fibres are shrunken by loss of contractile substance and one may often observe, laid down in the neighborhood of the nuclei, yellowish or brown granules of pigment (lipochrome) possibly derived from myohemoglobin. The sarcolemma and the nuclei remain unchanged. In simple as opposed to degenerative atrophy, no such granules are to be seen. The deposit of increased fat in the perimysium is a frequent accompaniment of all forms.

Cloudy Sweding.—As a result of infections and intoxications, there appear in the muscle cell dully refractile granules which veil the striation these are soluble in acetic acid; such a state often progresses apparent to fatty degeneration, in which the fat droplets may be seen in ross as they coalesce, the striations disappear and the cellular structure and even the nuclei are destroyed.

Waxy Degeneration (Zenker's Degeneration).—This is observed espet ally in the rectus abdominis and adductors in typhoid fever, less oft in other infections and in trauma. The muscle is parboiled looking, pand waxy in appearance. Microscopically, entire fibres or parts of fibrare seen to be ill-stained and of a uniformly waxy appearance, to contractile substance appearing to have undergone a coagulatine necrosis. Transverse rupture of the fibrillae appears to occur, althous some hold that this is an artefact. The occurrence of small hematoms however, is strongly against this supposition.

Progressive Tissue Changes.—The regenerative processes of muschave been discussed elsewhere (p. 197). Hypertrophy of a muscle from increased work in the presence of adequate nutrition, consists in broadening and lengthening of the individual cell. Debate still exists

as to whether or not a numerical increase of fibres occurs.

Tumors.—Primary tumors of muscle are not very common, and the fibromas, myxomas, and angiomas that are observed, as well as the lipomarise from the connective-tissue structures, the peri- and endomysiu etc. Rhabdomyomas originating from the muscle cells are singular rare. Sarcomas of various kinds may be found, and while we hat found rhabdomyosarcoma in the trout, its occurrence in man is litt known. Secondary sarcomas and carcinomas are not common, save extension.

THE TENDONS AND TENDON SHEATHS

The tendons are relatively avascular bundles of strongly united pa allel fibres, held together by a small amount of connective tissue which carries the blood vessels, the interfascicular tissue, and which for an external covering, the perifascicular tissue. The tendon is enclose in a dense fibrous capsule, between which and the tendon is a space fille by synovial fluid which serves as a lubricant. The tendon shear cavity is thus one of the synovial spaces, and as such is very like the joint cavities and the bursæ. By reason of their little vascularing they are not prone to infections of a primary nature.

Inflammation. — Tendinitis and Tenosynovitis (Tendovaginitis).— Despite the name tendinitis the tissue of the tendon practically play no part in inflammatory processes, which concern chiefly the inte

fascicular tissue and the sheath.

Acute Tendinitis and Tenosynovitis.—This is an exudative inflammatic with fibrinous, serofibrinous, or purulent exudate. The less seve forms may evidently arise as primary diseased states in rheumatist and from trauma, while the purulent forms are usually by extension or by infection from penetrating wounds, rarely hematogenously. With a fibrinous exudate, "dry tenosynovitis," the fibrin forms a thickness between the moving surfaces, and motion gives rise to crepit tion. It is quite often seen in the extensors of the thumb and hand. The serofibrinous form, in which there is some fluid exudate in the sheat is oftenest seen in the flexor tendons of the hand; when absorption of the

rved especier, less often ooking, pale arts of fibres earance, the coagulation ir, although hematomas,

s of muscle muscle from onsists in a e still exists

on, and the the lipomas, ndomysium, e singularly ile we have nan is little non, save by

united partissue which which forms a is enclosed a space filled don sheath ery like the vascularity

eaginitis).—
ically plays
the inter-

flammation less severe heumatism, rextension, togenously. orms a thin to crepitate and hand the sheath, ption of the

fluid occurs, the healing process, as in the pleura, may be accompanied by the formation of adhesions between tendon and sheath. These may greatly limit movement, until in time by the continuance of movement they become lengthened, thinned, and they may finally disappear. Purulent tenosynovitis is character and by a purulent exudate, and its danger lies in the fact that there may be necrosis and digestion of the interfascicular substance with separation of the $t\epsilon$ iden into its component parts and necrosis even of these.

Chronic Tenosynovitis may result in much thickening of the wall and secretion of fluid exudate which distends the sac (hygroma of the tendon sheath). The organizing process and the overproduction of tissue in such a case may lead to the formation of polypoid and papillate bodies which become separated off from the surfaces, and, being free in the sac, are called "rice bodies." These are merely hyaline masses of degenerated cells. Calcareous deposit may occur as a result of a long-continued inflammation.

Tuberculosis.—Tuberculosis of the tendon sheaths can be primary, but is usually secondary to disease of a joint or bone nearby. It may consist of a diffuse inflammation with rapid growth of granulation tissue which fills the cavity and covers the tendon; the interfascicular tissue of the tendon may become infected and the tendon increase in size. The soft granulation tissue readily caseates and a suppurative process may ensue and finally burst through the superficial structures. More rarely tuberculosis may show itself as circumscribed overgrowths of slow progression and accompanied by much fibrosis. Finally, the "rice bodies," spoken of above, may be the product of a tuberculous process.

Syphilis.—Syphilis may appear as a more or less acute tenosynovitis in the earlier stages of the infection; later, gummas occur on the wall of the sheath.

Gout.—A deposit of urates occurs in the tendons and the sheaths, with sometimes a necrotic process leading to disintegration, while again there may be a proliferation of connective tissue and a corresponding increase in size of the tendon.

Progressive Tissue Changes.—Tumors.—Sarcomas of the tendon and of the tendon sheath have been seen; lipomas occasionally arise in the sheath.

Ganglion.—The so-called ganglion" arises from tendon sheaths, as from joints, as a cyst with a fibrous wall, containing thick, gelatinous synovial fluid; it is frequently seen on the back of the wrist, carpal ganglion, and consists of a hernial pouch whose wall is made of the distended tendon sheath.

THE BURSA

These are fibrous sacs containing synovial fluid, and while some are constant and preformed, others arise where tissues are subjected to

pressure, such as is caused by the play of a tendon on a bone. The become lined by a definite endothelium, and being perfectly analogous to the tendon sheaths, they are subject to much the same processes disease. Fibrinous, serofibrinous, and purulent exudates occur inflammation of the bursæ, under conditions similar to those under which tenosynovitis occurs, with the difference that the bursæ are more exposed to trauma than are the tendon sheaths. Chronic bursitis characterized by much thickening of the walls and a considerable amout of exudate, so that a large swelling may be produced at the site of the bursæ (hygroma). "Housemaid's knee," "miner's elbow," and "weaver bottom" are all well-known forms of bursitis. Tuberculosis affect the bursæ usually as a diffuse granulomatous affection of the lining membrane.

Sarcoma, endothelioma, fibroma, and myxoma of a bursa have beef found, but none of these are common.

THE BONES

It is worth stating, that rigid as is its nature and apparently fixe bone is throughout life undergoing a steady constant process of absor tion and reformation according to the needs of the economy. The is, indeed, no more excellent example of the economical use of materi than is afforded by the normal structure of bones, particularly the lor bones. Just as the engineer has determined that the hollow ste cylinder is capable of standing greater weight and greater strain than solid column formed of the same amount of material, so the long bon are formed not as solid masses of calcareous matter, but as cylinder and what is more, they expand at their extremities; instead of being solid we find that the bone is laid down as a lattice-work of "strut whose arrangement is finely adapted to bear stresses upon the bone particular directions. Now these stresses may vary with the changing weight of the individual and with the growth of the different parts, as as a consequence we find that these "struts" undergo alteration adapt them to the altered stress. On one aspect we may find remov of the bony substance through the agency of osteoclasts; on the oth side of the same lamella there may be a simultaneous new formation layers of bone through the agency of the osteoblasts. In an exagge ated condition we may find these simultaneous processes of absorption and new formation occurring in diverse pathological disturbances.

Abnormalities.—In true dwarfism, as again in true giantism, the bones share the general abnormality of development of the tissue. There are, however, other dwarfs in whem the bony development is not proportioned. One group, for example, exhibits a marked shortening of the limbs; such dwarfs are examples of chondrodystrophia fortal (achondroplasia, micromelia). There has been much debate as the underlying process in this condition, but the disease may be

one. They
y analogous
orocesses of
s occur in
hose under
ae are more
c bursitis is
ble amount
site of the
d "weaver's
osis affects
the lining

have been

ently fixed, s of absorpmy. There of material rly the long ollow steel rain than a long bones s cylinders, ad of being of "struts" the bone in he changing t parts, and lteration to ind removal n the other ormation of an exaggerabsorption

the tissues.

ment is not shortening phia feetalis bate as to ase may be

regarded as a foetal rachitis. It is found that the periosteal formation of bone proceeds in a normal manner, but at the junctions of epiphyses and diaphyses the chondriform development is imperfect, and as a result the bones do not grow adequately in length. A similar process, involving the skull, is to be seen in those bones which are of chondriform origin, that is, in the bones of the 'ase. As a result of their imperfect development the base becomes have kedly shortened and the bridge of the nose sunken in; and as the nasal bones themselves also are of chondriform origin the nose is short, flattened, and of negroid type.

A somewhat similar arrest of development of bony growth is seen in cretins (cretinism), there associated with congenital inadequacy of the thyroid; the bony skeleton in this condition shows more particularly a shortening of the limbs, something of the type seen in chondrodystrophia but not so extreme, while there is the same indication of arrested development of the chondriform bone formation of the skull base presented by the nose. With this, however, there is more marked general arrest of mental and sexual development than is presented in chondrodystrophia.

Yet another type of congenital bone disease is seen in what is termed osteogenesis imperfecta, although many other names have been given, as fragilitas ossium, osteopsathyrosis, or myeloplastic malacia. In this condition during early life and, indeed, during intra-uterine life the bones show an abnormal liability to fracture. In a case in our collection, reported by Klotz, the body of the newly born infant showed over a hundred such fractures. Associated with this there is marked deformity and shortening of individual bones and of the skeleton in general. This is, strictly speaking, more closely allied to rickets than is chondrodystrophia; there is, namely, abundant preparation for the formation of hone, in the shape of well-developed cartilage formation, only there is a failure both in the periosteal and chondriform metamorphosis into true bony tissue. Even in the shafts, the periosteum may give origin to fibrous tissue rather than bony lamellæ. This defective formation may be so extreme that large areas of the calvarium may remain purely membranous.

Circulatory Disturbance.—The very rigidity of the channels within the bone substance prevents extreme alterations in the blood supply. The periosteum, however, is liable to exhibit more pronounced changes, active hyperemia, passive hyperemia, etc. More important, there may be extensive periosteal hemorrhages, either traumatic or as a result of disease. Closely allied to the traumatic must be mentioned a most striking form of periosteal hemorrhage, viz., the cephalhematoma of the newborn. Here as a consequence of unduly prolonged presentation of the head in the cervical portion of the uterus, and of the great compression exerted upon the body of the infant by the contracting uterus, the extreme congestion of the vessels of the calvarium leads to rupture of the same as they pass into the overlying perioranium, with hemor-

rhage between the two layers, and an accumulation of blood the of half an orange may result. This hematoma may undergo absorbion, but if the process of removal is slow, a ring of bony growth n

occur at the periphery.

Infarct.—The predisposition shown by young children to osteom litis originating at the ends of the long bones is usually ascribed the active vascularity with new vessel formation presenting itself in neighborhood of the epiphyseal line, the new vessels here become the seats of bacterial emboli. We have stated elsewhere that doubt whether such emboli are truly primary; rather we imag that individual bacteria arrested by the endothelial cells multi and set up a focus of inflammation with thrombosis. Whet actual infarcts occur is a matter of controversy. The appearance s in many cases of tuberculosis of the ends of the long bones stron suggests infarct formation; wedge-like areas of necrotic bone may detected having their bases immediately beneath the cartilage, but h it may well be that there is not primary embolism but obliteration the nutrient artery in consequence of perivascular tubercle format and the associated endarteritic changes. Extensive i ecrosis may oc where, either through trauma or through accumulation of inflammate products, or of blood, the periosteum becomes separated from the und lying bone and the nutrition of the latter cut off.

Inflammation.—According as the inflammation involves the periteum and the surfaces of the bone, or the substance of the bone and medullary cavities, so do we distinguish between a periostitis, an ost myelitis or, inasmuch as one process, if severe, inevitably leads to

other, a general osteitis or panostitis.

The study of these conditions is complicated by the fact that where an infective agent, acting intensely, leads to necrosis and absorpt of the bone substance, in the areas of surrounding hyperemia there set up coincidently a productive process leading in the deeper parts the bone to increased thickness of the lamellæ and greater density the tissue, and on the surface to the formation of new bone layers of osteophytes, irregular processes of new bone. In extreme ca the intensity of the inflammatory process and the presence of tensi may lead to the necrosis of relatively large masses of bone, wh undergo a very slow process of absorption while simultaneously periosteum gives origin to new bony layers. As a result we obtain sequestrum surrounded by an involucrum, with associated thicken and deformity. Usually in these cases the purulent fluid surround the sequestrum makes its way along the line of least resistance, throu some area of weakened periosteum, into the subcutaneous tissues a so to the surface, giving rise to one or more sinuses.

Periostitis.—Acute periostitis may be of two forms, simple and supurative. The former shows itself in non-infective traumatic infections and in infections of low virulence, and is characterized by a mild acute course with infiltration and subsequent thickening of the pe

ood the size ergo absorpgrowth may

o osteomyeascribed to itself in the re becoming ere that we we imagine lls multiply Whether . earance seen nes strongly one may be age, but here oliteration of le formation is may occur nflammatory m the under-

the perioscone and the tis, an osteoleads to the

that whereas I absorption mia there is eper parts of redensity of one layers or streme cases see of tension bone, which aneously the we obtain a I thickening surrounding nee, through tissues and

ple and supmatic infector by a mildly of the peri-

osteum, stimulation of the genetic layer to active bone production resulting in a local increased production of bone in the form of osteophytes or nodular thickening. Suppurative periostitis is much more acute, and involves a larger area and shows itself as an accumulation of pus cells within the periosteum and then between the periosteum and the bone. This accumulation of pus tends to extend around the shaft of the bone laterally in all directions, inasmuch as the density of both periosteum and bone prevents extension either outward or inward. There is thus great tendency for the nutrition of the bone through the periosteum to be cut off, as also for the process to extend to the joint setting up a suppurative arthritis. With the continuance of the disease, the periosteum at one or other point may undergo atrophy and erosion, the pus thus extending into the surrounding tissues and setting up a periosteal suppurative process. So also in some cases the process extends along the vessels into the marrow, inducing a panostitis. suppurative periostitis may be brought about in two ways, either as the result of an infective traumatism or, as happens not infrequently in young children, as a hematogenous or cryptogenetic process. The organisms associated with the process are most frequently the pyogenic cocci, and such bacilli as B. coli and B. typhosus. The latter is especially apt to set up a somewhat restricted and localized suppurative periostitis, sometimes showing itself long after the acute infection has passed. In the young, there is a peculiar liability for this suppurative form of disease to extend along the epiphyseal lines and lead to separation of the epiphysis from the shaft of the bone.

Osteomyelitis.—In this condition the primary infection occurs in the marrow of the bones, and may be set up by the same organisms as induce in other cases periostitis. Like periostitis, the condition is most common in the young and during adolescence, while the long hones are those most frequently affected. As already indicated, not

infrequently the disease begins as an infective epiphysitis. The ordinary course of infection is modified in the case of the bony substance by the unyielding nature of the framework; the congested vessels cannot throw out much exudate or, more correctly, the exudate and infiltration of leukocytes react upon the vessels themselves favoring thrombosis and the rapid production of relatively large areas of necrosis. Thus caries or necrotic softening with absorption and more extensive necroses of bony tissue is a common accompaniment. We have already referred to the results of these processes in the production of sequestra; so, again, the inflammation is very apt to extend to the periosteum inducing suppurative periostitis, periosteal perforation and the formation of fixtulæ The process, if very ac ite, gives rise to a generalized bacteriemia or pyemia resulting in deat: if less acute, is followed by various stages of reactive development of new bone, although often from the enclosed nature of the foci of suppuration the acute stage passes on to the chronic or latent form of osteomyelitis, with tendency toward acute exacerbations from time to time, over, it may be, years.

Chronic Periostitis.—Various forms are described. As already in cated, continued mild inflammation of the periosteum leads to be overgrowth, and the formation of osteophytes—periostitis ossification. The periosteal overgrowth of bone after fractures is of this nature so, also, the bony overgrowths through irritation induced by neighbing tumors or inflammation of overlying structures, as is well show in the nodular overgrowth of the tibia under a chronic ulcer. To commonest form of chronic periostitis, viz., the syphilitic, refere will be made later. A remarkable type of periosteal inflammation the periostitis albuminosa, has been described by Ollier in which a the serous fluid containing albumin, and a few pus corpuscles and so fibrin, collects between the periosteum and bone; it appears to be mildly infective origin, and differs merely in degree from the meacute suppurative periostitis.

Chronic Osteomyelitis.—According to the virulence or concentration of the infective agents, so do we find two processes manifesting the selves in cases of long-continued inflammation of the bone substantiz., rarefaction, or osteoporosis and condensation, or sclerosis. Rarefyi osteitis is evidenced by the progressive absorption of the bony lamel. The marrow becomes increasingly vascular, and through increase osteoclastic activity the compact bony tissue undergoes reductionable in the second of the bone spongy appearance. According to Ribbe and others, in these inflammatory processes the presence of osteoclastic not essential, but ordinary leukocytes possess the capacity of causing absorption of the bone, as clearly happens when the bone has already

undergone necrosis, as in a sequestrum.

Condensing osteitis occurs, as already stated, where the irritation is no intense. One of two events may occur; either there is evidence increased osteoblastic activity so that the lamellæ undergo progressive thickening and the marrow spaces become correspondingly reduce or the marrow first becomes less cellular, shows an increased fibrosis and the cells of this fibroid tissue undergo metaplasia, becoming bor corpuscles. In this way, save for a small space around the centre vessels, the whole of the marrow may become converted into dense bone. If at the same time there is progressive periosteal new development the shaft may become thickened to twice its normal diameter and the central marrow may be completely replaced by solid bone. It is this secondarily formed compact bone which, from its extreme density and likeness to ivory, has been described as eburnated bone.

We shall discuss the so-called osteitis deformans among the regressive

changes.

Specific Inflammations.—The bone is peculiarly liable to be infected in both tuberculosis and syphilis, and to present characteristic modifications.

Tuberculosis.—Tuberculosis may show itself either as (1) of primary periosteal origin, or as (2) a form of specific osteomyelitis, or (3) a generalized miliary tuberculosis. The last is relatively unimportant

already indieads to bony tis ossificans. this nature; by neighbors well shown cer. To the cic, reference offammation, which a thick es and some ears to be of m the more

esting themes substance,
Rarefying ony lamellæ. The increased is reduction to Ribbert fosteoclasts y of causing has already

tation is not evidence of progressive ly reduced, sed fibrosis, oming bone the central into dense ew developl diameter, solid bone. its extreme ed bone.

be infected stic modifi-

of primary s, or (3) a important,

inasmuch as death occurs before any grave change has ensued in the bones. Periostitis, also, is apparently not of first importance; it is seen particularly in the ribs. By far the most important form is tuberculous osteomyelitis. Certain bones are particularly apt to be affected, notably the ends of the long bones, the femur and the tibia, and the vertebræ. Less frequently the calvarium and the phalanges may be involved. Tuberculosis of the spine and the long bones is practically of the very greatest importance, and this fact is due, to a large extent, to the function of the parts concerned, namely, that the weight-bearing of the body is vested in them; thus, the tuberculous disease is assisted by pressure at all times during which the upright position is maintained, and the lesion begun by the disease is increased by the pressure. This osteomyelitic process in the long bones originates with great rarity in the shaft, save in connection with the phalanges of children (spina ventosa), but almost always in the epiphyseal ends, and this in children and adolescents. The process begins by the formation of a conglomerate tuberculoma, with surrounding development of granulation tissue in the medullary spaces and absorption of the bone substance. Two orders of change may appear; either the tubercles may show little tendency to caseation and granulation tissue formation may predominate or, more frequently, the mass of tubercles caseates while simultaneously new tubercles form in the surrounding medullary spaces with, as a result, a progressive and spreading caseous change, and accompanying destruction and rarefaction of the bone tissue. We have already pointed out how economically the normal bony substance is laid down in relation to the strain it is called upon to bear, and, therefore, if there be any considerable area of rarefaction and destruction without corresponding overgrowth in the neighborhood, the inevitable result is that the bone gives way and becomes distorted. This distortion is peculiarly well seen when the head of the femur is the part involved. At this process advances, it is apt to extend to the cartilaginous joint surface and with erosion of the cartilage through lack of nutrition, the joint now becomes infected and tuberculous arthritis is set up. A similar osteomyelitis involving the vertebræ begins within the substance of the bodies, often as scattered foci, which as they enlarge by formation of new tubercles at their peripheries, tend to fuse and give origin to large areas of caseation and caries, the latter so soon as the area reaches the periosteum and interferes with nutrition. When the process extends to the intervertebral disk it causes a rapid destruction of the same with extension of the tuberculous process into the neighboring body. Here the inevitable result is that the softened vertebral bodies become compressed under the weight to which they are subjected and kyphosis or angular backward curvature results. Whether as a result of this compressing force or from the comparatively thin periosteum covering the vertebral bodies, there is a pronounced tendency for the softened caseous matter formed within the vertebral body to escape into the immediately overlying tissues,

in which it may travel great distances by unexpected courses, induce what is called a **cold abscess**. The abundant contents of such are constituted of true pus but of diluted cheesy matter with a small propertion of leukocytes and lymphocytes unless a secondary infect has occurred, when there is a greater predominance of leukocytes elements. The term *cold* doubtless refers to the lack of surround inflammatory manifestations, such as the active hyperemia of the slack of abscess is usually lined by a layer of necrosing or caseat tuberculous tissue. Similar periosteal extension of the process may shitself where the upper end of the femur is involved ("hip-joint diseas")

or when the knee is affected ("white swelling"). Syphilis.—The bones are almost always involved to a greater or I extent in cases of congenital syphilis and are frequently the seat lesions in the acquired disease. As with other organs we can distingu diffuse and circumscribed lesions. The circumscribed lesions or gumn may develop as a comparatively late manifestation and then either the periosteum or in the medulla. They are slowly progressive a cause little destruction as compared with the tuberculous; rather, general, they induce a surrounding, almost compensatory sclerosis, a in the case of the periosteum, active new bone formation, the res of which is, very frequently, a localized nodular thickening and ov growth in their immediate neighborhood. But mere particularly in calvarium, the obliteration of the vessels leads to necrosis and extens localized destruction (caries). Unlike the tubercle bacillus the spiroch has no special seat of election in the bones; the gummas may be fusely scattered through both the diaphysis and the epiphyseal regi

The diffuse form of syphilis is characterized by increased bone p duction (periosteal) and sclerosis, so that the long bones, for example become greatly thickened and condensed. With this, there is a liabil to the formation of exostoses, which may be seen in the long bones I more particularly on the inner aspect of the calvarium. As a result the vault of the skull is found greatly thickened, so dense as to sawn with difficulty, and on its inner aspect there may be a massidevelopment of close set nodular osteophytes.

The characteristic disturbance of congenital syphilis is what may termed **osteochondritis**, affecting the layer between epiphysis and diphysis of the long bones and the osteochondral junction of the ri We find, either that there is an undue formation of the cartilage, which undergoes calcification without proper bone formation, or this calcification the cartilage is accompanied by an excessive granulation tissue sends processes into the epiphysis. In either case the fine line of demarcation between epiphysis and diaphysis is replaced by a broad yellow band, often irregular, which consists of cartilage which has not go on to proper bone formation. As a result there is to be observed distinct liability to separation of the epiphysis under very slight provided.

cation. The condition shows itself in the first few weeks of life a recovery may follow. At a later period in these congenital cases, the

ses, inducing such are not a small proary infection f leukocytic surrounding to of the skin. or caseating ess may show wint disease")

cater or less the seat of n distinguish is or gummas nen either in gressive and s: rather. in clerosis, and. n, the result ng and overularly in the nd extensive he spirochete may be difyseal region. ed bone profor example, is a liability ig bones but As a result, ise as to be

what may be sis and diaof the ribs.
tilage, which calcification issue sending demarcation id yellowish as not gone a observed a slight provos of life and cases, there

e a massive

may develop a syphilitic periostitis of the same order as that seen in the acquired disease. Gummas are rarely seen in the newborn but soon after birth the gummatous process affecting the septum nasi may lead to its destruction with the development of a "saddle-back" nose. This process may lead in addition to perforation of the hard palate or be accompanied by atrophic rhinitis and ozena.

Other Infective Granulomas.—Of the other infective granulomas, attention may be called to the involvement of the bones, especially the lower jaw, in a primary actinomycotic process. Unlike what is seen in cattle, the condition in man is rarely primary in the bone itself. In connection with leprosy of the anesthetic variety it must be recalled that the phalanges are apt to undergo a rarefying osteitis and absorption. Harbitz considers this to be due to a trophoneurosis.

Regressive Changes.—Atrophy.—We have already referred to senile changes in the bone marrow; in addition, with old age, the bony substance undergoes progressive absorption and regression so that the bones become light and very brittle. Such senile atrophy is especially seen in the flat bones, including the lower jaw, but affects also the long bones and exhibits a combination of two processes, viz., (1) superficial absorption, the so-called concentric atrophy, whereby the diameter undergoes reduction and (2) osteoporosis or Haversian atrophy or lacunar resorption, the Haversian canal becoming distinctly enlarged by absorption of the superficial layers of the lamellæ. The above-mentioned atrophy seen in anesthetic leprosy is an extreme example of this order of change; closely allied is the atrophic change in bones, encountered in syringomyelia and tabes dorsalis. Other examples are seen in disuse atrophy, and the atrophy and absorption secondary o pressure (though here also there is inflammatory absorption of the tissue whose nutrition has been reduced).

Halisteresis.—Such simple atrophy must be distinguished from halisteresis in which the absorption of the bone is preceded by solution and absorption of the bone salts. This latter process is dominant in certain remarkable disorders, notably in **osteomalacia** and in many cases of so-called **osteitis deformans**, between which disorders there are many points of relationship.

Osteomalacia is a condition most frequently described in females and then in association with pregnancy or lactation, but it may show itself also in adults either male or female. It is apt to affect the whole bony framework and may show itself first in particular orders of bones. Notably in the female, the pelvis is apt first to show disturbance, and, through the loss of bone salts and softening, there may be developed striking deformity, the acetabula being pushed upward by the weight of the body, the blades of the ilia pushed outward so as to become more horizontal, and the pelvic outlet correspondingly diminished. With this there may also be great softening of the bodies of the vertebræ with iordosis, kyphosis, and scoliosis, and the long bones may be found so softened that they can be easily cut with a knife. The process

may go on until there is practically complete absence of bone salts individual bones, but in general, along with the absorption, there evidences of attempted adaptation or regeneration so that, for exam in a long bone which has undergone deformity, while on the convey of the curve the bone is rarefied, there is thickening along the concav only here the new bone formation is imperfect. Microscopical the bone presents a very characteristic appearance; the Havers canals and the medullary spaces are enlarged and comparatively poverished in cell contents; the lamellæ may be wholly devoid of be salts, or more frequently the central layers still contain these salts a are surrounded on either side by layers of somewhat hyaline oste substance, devoid of salts, but taking on a differential color with vari stains, being especially strongly stained by carmine. The process n be progressive or may be arrested and once more the lamelle att their due amount of calcareous material. Accompanying the devel ment of the process there is a marked increase in the excretion of careous salts in the urine, the milk, and even the feces. As to the ori of the disease, little is known; its frequent association with gestat suggests that here we may deal with some disturbance of the ovar as organs of internal secretion.

Osteitis Deformans (Paget's Disease of the Bone).—This is a p gressive condition affecting the eny skeleton, most often of elde individuals, not necessarily affecting all the bones but telling m particularly upon the long bones (notably the tibia), the skull, and vertebræ. Cases are on record in which a single tibia or a single fer has been involved: the affected bones show progressive irregular thi ening combined with distortion and exaggeration of the normal cur ture. There appear to be two if not three stages in the process affect the bone. First, there is halisteresis resembling that seen in ost malacia but followed or accompanied by a much more pronoun periosteal and even medullary new growth of osteoid tissue. T new tissue does not gain proper calcification, but on the contrary apt in turn to become the seat of absorption with enlargement of medullary and Haversian canals. Associated with this, as a th stage, the medulla undergoes characteristic and diffuse change. place of being fatty or abundantly cellular, it becomes fibroid. \ Recklinghausen regarded this change as of an inflammatory natu and spoke of the condition as osteomyelitis fibrosa. We can find evidence of this inflammatory stage and regard the process as me plastic. This "Fasermark," or fibroid medulla, is apt to show areas degeneration with cyst formation, but in a certain proportion of ca exhibits a further diffuse metaplastic change, becoming abundan cellular with a tendency to the formation of new osteoid lamellæ what might be termed a blastomatoid formation of new bone-produc tissue, which, in its turn, may again give place to infiltrative locali growth of sarcomatous nature.1

¹ This occurred in a case very thoroughly studied in our own laboratory this year by the Dr. Elsie B. Wilkie.

bone salts in on, there are for example, he convexity ne concavity. croscopically e Haversian ratively imvoid of bone ese salts and aline osteoid with various process may mellæ attain the developetion of calto the origin ith gestation the ovaries

is is a proen of elderly telling more kull, and the single femur egular thickormal curvacess affecting en in osteopronounced tissue. This e contrary is ement of the , as a third change. In ibroid. Von tory nature, can find no ess as metahow areas of tion of cases abundantly lamellæ and ne-producing Close upon 10 per cent. of recorded cases exhibit this eventual local malignancy. With this general osteoid change and softening of the bone there may be extraordinary deformities produced. As to the causation of this disease nothing definite is known, but the diffuse type of the change, the known association between the pituitary, the parathyroids, and the calcium metabolism of the booy, lead us to the belief that here we deal with another of the disturbances associated with want of balance between the organs of internal secretion. A few cases have been recorded in which lesions of the pituitary and thyroid have been associated with the condition.

Rickets (Rachitis).—This is a disease affecting the skeleton in general and manifesting itself after birth, most often in the first and second years, although it may continue as an active process into early childhood. Its effects are shown most characteristically in connection with the long bones, the ribs and costochondral junctions, and the skull. The dominating feature of the disease is an excessive preparation for the formation of cartilaginous bone followed by defective deposit of bony salts whether in chondriform or membraniform bone. This leads to the development of bones which are imperfectly rigid and liable to exhibit irregular and excessive curvature with deformity, along with "green-stick" or partial fractures. The condition, however, is not permanent and the deformed bones eventually gain a normal or more than normal deposit of calcareous salts, although the deformity may persist through life. The process may involve the spinal column leading to curvature, and through the soft condition of the ribs they yield to the forces acting upon them, so that the chest becomes flattened in the anterolateral regions and the sternum forced forward, causing what is known as "pigeon-breast." The rachitic "rosary" is a swelling of successive regions of junction of ribs with sternal cartilages; while this can be felt from without during life, it is most pronounced on the inner aspect. The joints of the limbs appear enlarged relative to the shafts of the bones. The forehead may take on a curiously square appearance, due to what is known as cranio-tabes, with thinning of the cranial bones, most marked in the parietal and occipital bones, and there may appear hyperplastic "bosses" of the frontal and parietal bones. With this there is delayed union of the sutures, so that the anterior fontanelle may remain open until the beginning of the fifth year. Dentition is late and the teeth fall an easy prey to carious change. As to the causation of rickets, little is known with any precision.

As to the causation of rickets, little is known with any precision. It is not of syphilitic origin, although it may occur in the subjects of congenital syphilis; it is most often found in city children; lack of fresh air and sunlight, unsanitary surroundings and deficient nutrition are strong predisposing factors, although of two children subjected alike to these influences one may become rickety, the other not. Recently Morphingo, confirmed by other Italian pathologists, has isolated what he regards as the specific organism inducing the condition. The time has not come to state with certainty that this is an infective disease.

tive localized

If we examine the epiphyseal end of one of the long bones, the long cartilage between epiphysis and diaphysis is found greatly thicker and finger-like processes of new cartilage extend deeply into marrow, giving an irregular line of demarcation. In the deeper price tions these columns of cartilage cells, instead of giving place to the bony lamelle, pass into an area of osteoid tissue, poorly supplied where we have another than the cartilage may become isolated and surrounded by the osteoid tissue. This zone of osteoid tispasses more deeply into the medullated bone than normal, but graduative place to bone proper, although there may be an intermedication in which the central areas of the lamelle contain bone salts with the peripheral portions are devoid of these salts.

Between the osteoid lamellæ are relatively wide channels filled wa marrow, containing sparse marrow cells proper, but showing spin cells and fine fibrils, a more fibrous marrow than normal. This nundergo a direct metaplasia into osteoid tissue. With progressing this osteoid tissue exhibits a more and more complete deposition calcareous salts until the whole of the lamellæ may take on the normal progressing and the bones become of almost ivory hardness, with sullaversian canals. Periosteal bone is not laid down regularly, but whits development is arrested in certain areas it is apt to be excessive

others, osteophytes being produced.

Infantile Scurvy (Barlow's Disease).— This disease is one of recobservation, it having been unrecognized prior to the employm of pasteurized milk and various sterilized milk preparations. It unknown in children fed upon the mother's milk, and presents it first as an exquisite tenderness of the limbs so that the child screen upon being moved. I pon post mortem examination this tenderness found to have its cause in an acute congestion of the perioste with the development of subperiosteal hemorrhages; hemorrhage in medulla may also be present. The nutrition of the bones is gravaffected: they are of lighter build than normal with a tendency fracture and curvature. Hemorrhage may occur in other organs recall those associated with scurvy. As in that disease, so here, exhibition of fruit juices is found to arrest the progress of the condition there is, on the other hand, a certain likeness to rickets, e. g., soften and curvature of the bones.

Progressive Changes.—The important subject of the repair of be with callus formation has been touched upon by us on p. 192; as a we have dwelt to a considerable extension upon the different orders primary tumors of bones in the sections upon myelomas (p. 236) osteomas (p. 235). Here we need only repeat that it is in very meases difficult to draw the line between local hyperplasias and the tumors of bone, and that true primary benign tumors are really in quent, most of the osteomas being hyperostoses.

Tumors.—We thus recognize circumscribed hyperostoses—exosto localized bony formations of periosteal origin projecting from the surface of the

ly thickened ly into the deeper porplace to true upplied with come isolated

steoid tissue out gradually intermediate se salts while

Is filled with owing spindle. This may ogressing age deposition of n the normales, with smallely, but while excessive in

employment titions. It is presents itself child screams is tenderness e periosteum rrhage in the les is gravely tendency to r organs and so here, the the condition; .g., softening

epair of bone . 192; as also ent orders of (p. 236) and in very many and the true e really infre-

es—exostoses, om the surface of the bone, and enostoses, originating from the spongiosa. Of similar nature are the ossifying ecchondroses, nodular overgrowths projecting from the bone in the regions where there had been previous chondriform developments, notably in the region of the epiphyses. These have a superficial layer of cartilage and often a small bursa over their free aspect (exostosis bursata), and may be multiple.

Other benign connective tissue overgrowths of the bone are rare, if we leave out those originating from the periosteum. If we include these, fibromas of the bone are occasionally met (fibrous epulis), as also masopharyngeal polyps of fibromatous nature, originating from the periosteum of the base of the skull or the walls of the nasopharynx. Pure myxomas were very rare, myxo-chondromas and myxo-sarcomas more common.

Tumors originating from the bone marrow may be of the relatively benign type, so-called giant-celled sarcoma, which we regard strictly as

an osteoclastic giant-celled myeloma. Myeloma multiplex may be regarded as a diffuse blastomatoid overgrowth of the marrow, and may be compared of more than one type of marrow cell (see p. 236). Simple angiomas are rare, but there are a few cases of a remarkable hemangio-endothelioma on record, involving particus larly the bones of the calvarium and showing channels filled with blood and lined by an almost cubical endothelium. Intermediate tumors of the nature of osteosarcoma, osteoid sarcoma, chondro-osteo-sarcoma, and chondro-sarcoma are to be found. The most frequent form of bone tumor is malignant and sarcomatous. We distinguish sarcomas of periosteal. and of endosteal origin. The former produce large, oval masses of new growth surrounding or spreading over the surface of the affected bone; they may be round or spindle-celled. What is more, a tumor arising periosteally may invade the shaft of the bone causing its absorption. These are more frequent than the central sarcomas, which, again, excluding the giant-celled myelomas, may be round, spindle, or mixed cell. These central sarcomas are liable by progressive absorption of the surrounding bone to give origin to spontaneous fracture.

These malignant sarcomatous tumors of bone show certain features in common, viz., they are apt to be extremely vascular and may present extensive hemorrhages, or later these hemorrhages may give place to cysts, or, again, may be accompanied by extensive necrosis; the growths may spread into the surrounding soft parts, and the nearby lymphatic nodes, and frequently afford metastases in the lungs.

As to secondary growths, many cases are on record in which thyroid tissue has been found forming circumscribed tumors within the bones. While primary epithelial growths do not exist, it is striking how certain care comes of particular organs show a predilection for extension into the bones. This is notably the case with prostatic, and, to a less extent, with mammary cancers. So, also, is it with the mesothelial hypernephorma which may afford metastases in bones either by extension or at a distance.

A useful distinction between periosteal and endosteal sarcomas that the former, while they may have a framework of radiating be spicules, possess no covering layer of bone; the endosteal sarcoma, the contrary, as it expands and causes the absorption of the bony tiss in its neighborhood is apt for long to remain covered by a layer of periodic posteum which layer, no matter how great the expansion of the turn continues to give origin to bone and thus this form of sarcoma is a to be covered by an imperfect thin bony layer, so thin that on pressit affords an "egg-shell crackle."

Cysts.—Cysts may originate in bone either in connection with a growths or with osteitis deformans as the result of localized necro with or without hemorrhage, and subsequent autolytic absorpt of the necrosed matter. Parasitic cysts are of great variety, connection with the jaw cysts of another order may develop, y the dentigerous cysts, formed around accessory and imperfect to germs; they may be either uni- or multilocular, the latter being of a nature of cystadenoma.

THE JOINTS

Each joint consists of a cavity containing a special fluid—the syr vial fluid—interposed between two or more bones which in this w become capable of moving one against the other. This cavity exter somewhat beyond the apposed surfaces of the bones, and is linear an endothelium composed of one layer of cells, which beyond t apposed surfaces rests upon abundantly vascular tissue. Outside the again, is an outer fibrous layer, which here and there becomes me condensed and reinforced to form the ligaments. Upon the appos surfaces the synovial endothelium is more flattened and rests almo immediately upon the dense thin layer of cartilage covering so mu of the heads of the bones as are liable to move one upon the other At the junction of the synovial membrane covering the joint and t outer, saccular prolongation, the membrane is apt to be developed in a series of small papillate processes, the synovial fringes. The synov fluid is not a simple serous fluid, but contains mucin and albumin as to have a somewhat slimy character appropriate for a lubricati

Abnormalities.—Undue laxity of the joints, brought about by loos ness of the ligaments, and favoring easy dislocation, is occasionally me The condition is generally multiple, affecting several joints. Mo serious conditions are those due to imperfect development of the bon entering into the formation of the joint. This is seen more especial in connection with the hip-joint, where the head of the femur is imperfectly developed and coincidently the acetabulum does not become adequately hollowed out, so that there is no proper seizure of the head within the acetabular cavity, and in the upright posture, the head of the femur is forced upward over the wing of the ilium (congenit

t on pressure

being of the

l—the synoin this way vity extends is lined by beyond the Dutside this, comes more the apposed rests almost ing so much a the other, oint and the veloped into the synovial albumin so

ut by looseionally met.
ints. More
of the bones
re especially
ur is impernot become
of the head
c, the head
(congenital

lubricating

IND JOINTS

691

dislocation of the hip). A similar looseness and imperfect formation may affect the knee and other joints, inducing subluxation.

Circulatory Disturbances.—These are inconsiderable; thus anasarca is not accompanied by any excessive accumulation of fluid in the synovial cavities. Through trauma there may be hemorrhage into the joint and the resultant coagulation may lead to the development of one form of false body therein, often subsequently absorbed.

Inflammation.—A notable feature of inflammation of the joint (arthritis) is the sympathetic inflammation, exudation and swelling of the soft tissues around it. Nor is the extent of this swelling by any means a sure indication of the severity of an arthritis; an acute "strain" of the ligaments may be rapidly followed by intense surrounding swelling, although the actual injury to the joint is of simple nature, slight and localized.

Following contusions there is in addition to this surrounding swelling a rapid increase in the serous contents of the joint cavity so that in the knee, for example, the patella is "floated" or pressed away from the underlying bony surfaces. This serous arthritis is secondary to hyperemia and is the simplest form of exudate, with few leukocytes. It tends to undergo absorption but occasionally the inflammation becomes chronic with thickening of the synovial membrane, vascularization and proliferation of its surface layer. The forms of trauma setting up serous arthritis may be various, either a contusion, a "strain," a loose cartilage or the sudden entrance of the same or other loose body in the joint between the joint surfaces. With more acute irritation there develops the condition of serofibrinous arthritis; the fluid in these cases is no longer clear but turbid, and if the joint be opened there is intense hyperemia of the synovial membrane with slight fibrinous deposits in the recesses of the synovial sac. The turbidity is due to an increased migration of leukocytes into the fluid. More severe and destructive inflammation, due to the presence of pyogenic organisms, results in suppurative arthritis. With this the synovial membrane becomes eroded and more particularly there is apt to be a degeneration and erosion of the joint cartilages, following upon which the process may extend into the bone setting up an osteo-arthritis. Where these erosions take place there is a process of healing if the joint be kept immobile: adlations may occur between the apposed joint surfaces and with organization and formation of dense connective tissue across the joint cavity the movement of the joint is almost entirely arrested. Where the destruction has been very extensive there may indeed be developed a miversal adhesion between the two surfaces and in the process of time bony ankylosis be set up, true bone replacing the fibrous tissue. It is by be noted that where serous and serofibrinous inflammations are any continued, with voluntary immobilization of the joint by the suffer, although the joint surfaces are not involved, nevertheless the this ning, fibrosis, and shortening of the synovial membrane and the liga ats may also lead to rigidity and to a condition of false ankylosis.

Possibly our clinical distinctions of the various forms of acute arthur are at the present day inadequate. Gradually we are coming to rec nize by bacteriological studies that several different microbes are cape of inducing what clinically we term acute rheumatism or rheum This term is employed to designate a condition of obvi infection with high fever, redness, pain and swelling of one or many joints, presenting itself with considerable suddenness. Wherever occurs, we believe that we deal with a bacteriemia. Sometimes condition shows itself as a complication of known infections, e. gonorrhœa, scarlet fever, etc., at other times following acute tor litis, at others with no recognizable source, and when bacteriolog exa ninations are made in one group of cases we encounter the go coccus, in others streptococci, in others the diplo-streptococcus Poynton and Paine, and in yet others, we obtain negative resu The transitory nature of the polyarthritis in scarlet fever, and ag after the administration of sera, suggests that not only bacteria toxins are capable of setting up joint irritation. In these last ca we probably deal with a serous arthritis, but as regards the conditi set up by the actual bacteria, it is evident that according to their vi lence we may have a serous, a serofibrinous, or a suppurative arthri

This purulent arthritis is characterized by two series of events; the one hand, it is apt to originate by extension of the suppurat process either from the surrounding soft tissues or from the bone, again from traumatic entrance of infection, and, on the other ha is apt to extend beyond the limits of the joint either, as above no into the bone itself or into the surrounding soft tissues, or both.

There is a condition which it is usual to include among the chro joint diseases, but which we are convinced should be more prope regarded as an acute disease, as a recurrent acute or subacute arthri we refer to arthritis deformans. Here over long years the patient subjected to a succession of slightly febrile attacks with accompany exacerbations of pain and swelling of the joints and the periarticular tissues. With this the joints show progressively increasing deform and progressive inflammatory thickening of the surrounding soft par The histories given indicate that there has been primarily a pure arthri but with successive inflammations the process extends into the appos ends of the bones leading to a rarefaction of apposed surfaces w flattening, compression even up to the stage of eburnation, and d tortion, while simultaneously the process extending to the perioster in the neighborhood induces there a proliferative overgrowth, often wi "guttering" and subsequent locking of the joint, the whole accompani by great deformity. We have seen such a joint after many year showing purulent contents, though this is probably an unusual ever Worthy of note is the involvement of the spine in this disease (spend litis deformans). Here the inflammation spreads to the perioster and ligaments of the vertebræ, and with the new bony growth th results, there is developed a complete superficial ankylosis better cute arthritis ing to recoges are capable or rheumatic n of obvious one or many herever this metimes the ctions, e. g., acute tonsilacteriological er the gonoptococcus of ative results. r, and again bacteria but se last cases, ne conditions to their viruive arthritis.

of events; on

suppurative

the bone, or

other hand.

above noted oth. the chronic ore properly ute arthritis; e patient is ecompanying periarticular g deformity g soft parts. oure arthritis the apposed urfaces with on, and dise periosteum h, often with rccompanied many years usual event. ase (spendy-

periostrum

growth that

sis between

individual vertebræ, with or without accompanying distortion and curvature.

Chronic Rheumatism.—Apart from the specific forms presently to be considered, there is a certain number of cases which appear to be the result of a latent or continued process such as is seen in acute rheumatism; these are characterized by great thickening and shortening of the synovial membrane, the fibrosis extending to and involving the surrounding ligaments; with this the cartilage of the joints undergoes degeneration and at times replacement by fibrous tissue and either there may be adhesions developed or with atrophy of the heads of the bones the joints may undergo subluxation. Unlike arthritis deformans there is here little or no periosteal activity and new bone formation.

It has been called arthritis pauperum. Tuberculosis.—Two joints stand out as peculiarly liable to be the seat of tuberculous affection, the hip ("hip-joint disease") and the knee ("white swelling"). Less frequently, but still often, the ankle, wrist, and elbow are effected. As to the mode of origin of the disease, this may be said, that the joint disease rarely accompanies generalized tuberculosis; more frequently it is present for months or years before the disease shows signs of generalization. As to the mode of development two main forms are recognized: (1) that in which the bone in the immediate neighborhood has been first involved, and by caseation and necrosis the joint surface has become invaded, so that the joint as a whole becomes infected; this appears to be the more commor; and (2) where the synovial infection is primary, tubercles forming in the inner layer. In either of these cases it is usual to speak of the disease as primary in the one part or the other, but it must be remembered that according to general belief the actually primary focus is in the lungs or elsewhere, even although this focus may in the meantime undergo arrest while the process advances in the neighborhood of the joint. The synovial form occasionally is of acute development inducing an abundant serofib us exudation; more frequently this, like that originating from the same has a chronic course, viz., with the formation of tubercles on tr vial membrane and surrounding inflammation; that membrane er. o proliferation and fungoid overgrowth, becomes notably thickened, and not only is the outer layer involved but the surrounding soft tissues become infiltrated with the tubercular growth and swollen. With caseation and breaking down of the infected tissue there may be final fistula formation. Coincidently with these processes, the bone if not primarily the seat of infection, becomes secondarily involved in a rarefying tuberculous osteitis with necrosis (caries). Here, as in arthritis deformans, there may be a coincident superficial formation of bone by the periosteum in the neighborhood of the inflamed joint in the form of osteophytes.

Syphilis.—In the congenital disease an exudative form has been recorded with disintegration of the cartilages and fibrosis and thickening the capsule. In acquired syphilis, there may be an acute serous

or serofibrinous arthritis in the eruptive stage, or later there may small-celled infiltration or gummatous formation in the synovial me branes, either primary or secondary to a syphilitic osteitis or periostei

Regressive Changes.—Atrophy.—The most important degeneration occur in connection with the joint cartilages. Here we may encour either a fatty degeneration or a necrescent state of the cartilage cand with this a coincident dissolution of the matrix. This is often y characteristic in old age; the matrix becomes more mucoid and fibrillation becomes prominent. The general result is that un pressure the cartilage shows a tendency to ulceration with second sclerosis and eburnation of the exposed underlying bone. In ot areas the degeneration may be followed by some proliferation of remaining cartilage cells, and calcification with opaque whitening these areas may eventually show itself.

The remarkable condition of **ochronosis** is characterized by a debrown or blackish coloration of the cartilage. It is very rare a little definite is known about its causation. It must be remembe that cartilage has an affinity for iron and also for blood pigment at that thus if there be hemorrhages in the neighborhood of the joint, cartilage may become the seat of a hematoidin pigmentation.

Gout.—Another infiltration that is very characteristic, is that s in the gouty joint, especially the metatarso-phalangeal joint of great toe. Here the cartilages either generally or in patches may to on a chalky white opacity, which is found, upon microscopic examition, to be due to a dense infiltration of the matrix with fine acid crystals of sodium biurate (see p. 107). The same deposit may be s in the synovial membrane and its underlying soft tissues and ligamer. In the surrounding tissues, there deposits may occur as tophi or so localized nodules. In general, if the crystals be dissolved out, it found that the cartilage is necrosed, whether as a preceding of sequent process is yet debated.

Neuropathic Atrophy.—In the course of some cases of locomotor ata and syringomyelia it may happen that with complete absence of pan individual joint, such as the knee-joint, may a dergo a relative rapid, non-inflammatory effusion of fluid into the joint cavity we coincident atrophy of synovial membrane, cartilages and bone, where in a very short period there is developed a greatly disorganized jocavity with a flail-like motion of the limb in all directions. This known as a "Charcot's joint." We are still unable to ascribe any cat to this, but conclude vaguely that here we deal with atrophic disord due to the destruction of the sensory portion of the reflex arc. To does not satisfactorily explain why only a single joint is involved, may be recalled that a singular rapid atrophy of bone is seen in so cases of anesthetic leprosy.

Foreign Bodies.—Foreign bodies in joints may be of more than order. The corpora orygoidea, often found in the tuberculous joint are little, translucent rice-grain-like bodies, sometimes concentrated by the content of the corporation of the c

here may be

novial mem-

r periosteitis.

legenerations

ay encounter

artilage cells

is often very oid and the

that under

h secondary

e. In other cation of the

whitening of

d by a deep

formed of hyaline material with occasional indications of cells. These are regarded either as masses of hyaline fibrin or as dissociated portions of necrosed granulation tissue. As already noted, fibrinous masses from old blood clots may form soft foreign bodies; pieces of the synovial fringes may be nipped off and become free in the joint cavity. In addition there may be firmer loose bodies formed of snared-off projections of the synovial membrane which have previously undergone cartilaginous or bony metapl '3.

Progressive Changes.—Metaplasia, as already noted, is not infrequent in connection with the joint cartilage. This may become converted from the hyaline to the fibrous form and again may become converted into simple connective tissue, which, in its turn, may undergo ossification. So, on the other hand, the synovial fringes may either become so fatty as to be lipomatoid or, on the other hand, may show cartilaginous change, while in arthritis deformans bony plates may form in the synovial membrane.

Tumors.—The synovial fringes may show a diffuse fibromatous or lipomatous change. The so-called lipoma arborescens originating in these fringes has been recorded in several cases of tuberculous arthritis and arthritis deformans. Sarcoma of the synovial membrane is very rare.

THE SKIN

Since most of the diseases that affect the skin produce effects that are superficial and visible, it is obvious that the pathological effects and the clinical signs of these diseases will be largely identical; we will therefore deal with all these in the most brief way. The circulatory activity in the skin, the secretion and excretion performed by it, its function as a sense organ—all these, as well as its exposed situation—render it the seat of changes more active and more numerous than might be at first thought.

Abnormalities.—The skin may be locally unpigmented in areas that are irregular in size and shape, and pure white (leukoderma). A general absence of pigment in the skin and other pigment-containing areas constitutes albinism. Excess of pigment is found in pigmented moles, which are usually brown or brown-black. An interesting congenital state is ichthyosis in which there is great keratinization following upon hypertrophy of the skin; large fissures appear in the surface, and the skin becomes like that of a fish or an alligator. There may be much atrophy of the active layers underlying this superficial hypertrophy.

The nails may be absent or hypertrophied, and the hair absent, space, or abundant. Hypertrichosis, hirsuties or hairness may be general, the entire surface except the palms and some being affected, a condition which is responsible for the "dog-faced-man" of museums. Leadized hypertrichosis is seen on moles and over occult spina bifida.

Circulatory Disturbances.—Anemia is manifested by the skin in stars of general bodily anemia, and locally and temporarily from

ry rare and remembered pigment and the joint, the tion. is that seen joint of the

joint of the nes may take pic examinafine acicular may be seen ad ligaments. ophi or small ed out, it is eceding or a

motor ataxia sence of pain a relatively cavity with one, whereby ganized joint ons. This is be any cause ohic disorder, ex arc. This nvolved. It seen in some

ore than one culous joint, concentric,

cold, pressure, and emotion or other purely nervous influences; facial pallor in a fainting attack will appeal to all as a familiar exam Acute hyperemia consists of a temporary dilatation of the superficapillaries, the skin becoming pink or red; this may be the response different kinds of stimuli, such as heat, cold, emotion, e. g., blushif friction, a chemical irritant or may be the early stage of inflammati Passive hyperemia is seen in conditions of general venous correstias in suffocative attacks or severe fits of coughing, in overfilling of heart, and impeded respiration from any cause. The skin then assure a dusky tint, and the mucous membranes may be bluish or lead colo

ranosis, lividity). In cases of severe long-continued passive hyperinia, ordema or anasarca may supervene, with the result that the tis becomes smooth, tense, and shiny, the skin and the underlying lo

tissue being "waterlogged."

Hemorrhage into the skin may occur from trauma, from extreme infections in which petechiæ are seen, or from the "hemorrhage diseases, especially scurvy. In the last-named the extent of the hemorrhagic patch may be considerable, and in marked contrast to the extent may be the superficiality on section. The various tints assumed the skin after hemorrhage, due to chemical changes in the pigment, familiar. The occurrence of hemorrhage in the skin is usually demated by the term purpura (see p. 355), and is due to a more or less range degeneration of capillary walls. Finally in circulatory disturbant of the skin, it must be remembered that many states appearing through the skin do not actually concern the skin at all, and are connected wounderlying tissues.

Inflammation.—There are numerous causes, direct and indirect, which the skin can become inflamed; of the former, wounds of all so friction, chemical irritants, heat and cold, bacterial and other parasit are the most important; the latter comprise noxious agents carried the skin by the blood, as well as those disturbances of nutrition a of nerve connection which, while perhaps not effective of themselves.

are yet strongly predisposing forces.

While the main feature of inflammation of the skin is the exudation this appears in a great variety of forms, the macule, the papule, the vesicle, the pustule, the bulla, the node, the wheal, all of which apply called primary efflorescences to distinguish them from crust scabs, erosions, ulcers, furrows, and scales which are the secondaresults of such efflorescence. To apply the term dermatitis to all suppearances would be misleading because that term has become graually restricted to particular forms of inflammation of the skin. A attempt at classification made here will be elementary, merely subdivide a too bulky list of diseased conditions.

I. Inflammations of the skin due to systemic disturbance.

Measles.—In measles the skin shows round, discrete, flat or slight raised red or bluish-red spots, 2 to 10 mm. in diameter, fading to yello on pressure, which under exceptional circumstances may be hemorrhage fluences; the liar example, he superficial e response to g., blushing, inflammation, as convestion, filling of the then assumes lead colored assive hyper-

at the tissue

erlying loose

rom extreme temorrhagie" of the hemorto the extent assumed by pigment, are sually desigor less rapid disturbances aring through nnected with

indirect, by s of all sorts, her parasites, ts carried to autrition and themselves,

e exudation, papule, the of which are from crusts, ie secondary is to all such ecome grades skin. Any, merely to

t or slightly ng to yellow hemorrhagic or confluent. The exciting organism is not known, and the skin rash is distinctive only in connection with the systemic signs and symptoms.

Scarlet Fever.—In scarlet fever (scarlatina) there is an eruption of pin-head-sized or smaller red areas (punctæ), with which is usually combined a diffuse reddening of the otherwise unaltered skin, both disappearing on pressure; the scarlet tint of the skin is characteristic.

Erythems.—A great many forms of hyperemia of the skin are grouped under the term erythema—often called erythema multiforme because of the impossibility of distinguishing these from one another in their morphology or eticlogy. There is nothing distinctive about the red areas of the skin, which fade under pressure; they may become changed by hemorrhage, or by the formation of papules, vesicles, or other modifications. We have to recognize a large number of agents which can cause erythema, such as the local exhibition of heat, cold, chemicals or mechanical irritants; the invasion of the body by some toxin, as after the ingestion of certain drugs, quinine, turpentine, salicylates, mercury, or of certain foods (this often an idiosyncrasy), shell fish, fish, strawberries, etc.; as a result of certain infections, as seen in the "roseola" of typhoid fever, the bacterial agent being present in the lesion; as an accompaniment of sapremia in many different infections, and after surgical operations. Finally, many cases of erythema occur in which no cause can be assigned, and, accompanied as these often are by gastrointestinal disturbance, we suppose that toxins elaborated in the alimentary canal or elsewhere possess the ; ower of causing this manifestation.

Erythema of a diffuse type or localized and nodular (nodosum) may, of course, occur in specific infections, as in syphilis, rheumatism, and other states. In designating such, we are accustomed to lay more stress upon the disease that we know to be the cause than upon the non-distinctive erythema—thus in speaking of srythema syphiliticum we mentally underline the latter rather than the former word.

Urticaria.—Here we deal with not only a hyperemia but also with an ordeme of the tissues, showing itself as slightly raised, pink or yellowish-red areas (wheals) of any size and shape, with a slight surrounding zone of hyperemia, which appear quickly and may as quickly disappear. Familiar to most people as the homely "hives," they may be caused by nettles or a like external irritant, by the injection of the various sera, and by any of the drugs or foods or toxins mentioned above; they have some obscure relation to the nervous system, for they arise in some persons as a result of a finger-nail drawn across the skin, and in others without apparent irritation as the condition of angioneurotic ordema. As a result of toxins from certain foods, urticaria is a more common phenomenon than is erythema.

11. Inflammation of the Skin from Heat and Cold.

Burning.—The dermatitis set up by heat varies according to the ree of the heat and the length of time in which it acts; burns are anally classified by us in every-day hospital life in a similar way. In lightest grade of burn, such as sometimes follows bright sunlight,

there is active, followed by passive hyperemia, and a moderate amound of swelling, followed later by a brownish color of the skin. More seven degrees are attended by lifting of the damaged epithelium by the exudate—the bulla or blister. The covering of the bulla may degend ate, or the contents become infected the corium is almost certain suffer in such a case, but unless severely infected, scarring is not like to ensue. More severe degrees of burning are followed by destruction of any light of the parts concerned, leading to gangrene or to dry charing of the tissues. Here may be mentioned the parallel cases of burning by x-rays and other forms of radiant heat; the burn is not at once even dent; but degeneration and cell death may follow, with the production of ulcers which are hard to heal, and whose healing processes seem readily pass on to new growth.

Freezing.—The injury in slight cases of frostbite is perhaps as mu due to the overaction of repair as to the severity of the original lesion in a slight frostbite, as soon as reaction has occurred, the picture the same as in a slight burn; in severer cases blebs occur, and in t severest, gangrene, there being various degrees of degeneration evidence or even necrosis, as a result of the freezing process.

III. Miliaria, Herpes, Eczema, etc.

Miliaria. —Miliaria is an eruption of tiny droplet-like areas of endium lifted by secretion, which seems to occur in connection espetially with the mouths of sweat glands. Its causes are obscure, by probably inflammatory.

Herpes.—This is an inflammatory disease of the skin occurring connection with the peripheral nerve trunks (see p. 122), appeari as small papules, which quickly become vesicles, containing clear turbid serum; with the drying-up process, crusts form under which tepithelium is renewed. According to distribution there are ma varieties; herpes zoster (intercostal nerves), herpes facialis, and herperputialis, are common forms.

Pemphigus.—This name groups together many diseases of variorigins, which are alike in this, that there are produced on the slivesicles at first compartmented, but later single-chambered, attainilarge size, sometimes that of a goose-egg. The contents, at first clemay become either turbid from fibrin, epithelial debris and leukocyt or purulent or hemorrhagic. The surrounding inflammation often slight, out of proportion to the size and appearance of the bulla. Sometimes pemphigus seems to be of an acute infective nature and leads a fatal result; it is seen in the newborn as a result of syphilis and times seems to be dependent largely upon the nervous system for origin.

Ecsema.—This term is employed to indicate an ill-defined inflamm tory disturbance showing a basis of diffuse reddening and swelling, up which there are foci of more productive or more destructive disturbance. If these foci take the form of papules, we speak of eczema papulosus a very common form is that in which small lenticular vesicles developed.

More severe um by the ay degenert certai to is not likely destruction to dry chars of burning at once eviproduction uses seem to

ps as much ginal lesion; e picture is and in the ion evident,

reas of epiction especibscure, but

occurring in), appearing ing clear or er which the e are many , and herpes

on the skin od, attaining at first clear, leukocytes, ion often is alla. Someand leads to ohilis and at estem for its

d inflammavelling, upon disturbance, papulosum; icles develop

(eczema vesiculosum). These are particularly apt to rupture under irritation and lead to oozing (ecsema madidans); where more chronic, the weepi g surface is apt to give rise to the formation of scattered crusts, or the vesicles may become pustules (ecsema pustulesum). As a result of the chronic condition, pigmentation and thickening of the skin are apt to be seen. In attempting to define eczema it may be said that a discrete eruption does not constitute an eczema; there must be an underlying inflamed basis. If there be simple inflammation without foci of further disturbance we speak of erythema; if these foci of further change occur, of eczema; if these foci develop to such an extent as to overshadow the background of diffuse inflammation. we are apt to speak of the focal disturbance and neglect the diffuse dermatitis; to speak, for example, of impetigo, intertrigo, etc. From the pathologist's point of view it appears as if eczema were a term used by clinicians for convenience in designating many forms of ill-defined dermatitis.

Impetigo.—This is an infective disease oftenest of the face and hands (frequently by transference) in which small pustules arise, with subsequent crusts. The common form is designated impetigo contagiosa, but from the nature of the contents one would judge that under favorable circumstances most of the cases, if not all, would prove communicable. We recall that, during our college days, an epidemic occurred in the football team, the eruption appearing in som cases behind the car, where the skin frequently was broken by the auricle being pulled forcibly forward in the pressure of the scrimmage; after a certain match members of the opposing team developed a similar condition, similarly located, the result of head-and-head contact.

IV. Inflammation of the Skin Characterised by Pocks.

Variola.—As a result of hematogenous infection, a coagulation necrosis occurs in the cells of the rete Malpighii, with a cellular exudation from the vessels of the papillæ; by the action of pyococci the contents of the many-chambered pock become infected and, finally, a single-chambered pustule results, which forms a crust and ultimately may leave a sear. Of the same general order are the pocks of varicella, and of vaccinia.

V. Psoriasis, Lichen, etc.—Psoriasis is an inflammation of the skin in which an infiltration of the epidermis and corium occurs; there are punctate heaps of broad plates of dry epidermis on a background of sharply defined reddened skin that bleeds easily. The epidermal cells of the stratum corneum dry and are separated into large plates or flakes between which air finds its way, giving the characteristic silvery appearance to the scales.

Lupus erythematosus, in no way connected with true lupus, is an indimmation that shows itself as small round, raised spots with a decression in the centre; these become covered by dry, yellow scales.

Lachen is a chronic form of inflammation with papules which remain ur hanged save for an increase in size; they may form scales, but not ver less or pustules, although in lichen scrofulosum there may excep-

tionally be tiny pustules on the summits of the papules. The more of the hair follicle is the part affected, a perifollicular inflammat and hyperkeratosis resulting.

VI. Erysipelas and Other Inflammations of Known Bacterial Origin. Erysipelas.—This is an infection of the skin, sometimes by way of unrecognized lesion, sometimes by increase of virulence of the coce hair follicles, which may be accompanied by great or by slight system disturbance; often the latter is out of proportion to the amount of sinvolvement. Formerly considered dangerously infectious, the dise is now placed on a par, in this regard, with other forms of sepsis, y danger exists chiefly in the presence of wounds or great bodily weakn. The lymph spaces of the connective tissue lodge the bacteria, usus streptococci, and there is marked hyperemia, cellular and serous edate, which progresses with the existence externally of a well-defining of demarcation. The skin is swollen, shiny, and red. Vesicand pustules may form and even severe necroses may follow.

Abscess or Phlegmon.—Abscess or phlegmon does not differ greafrom the above in its mode of origin; fluid exudation and the distens of the tissues are more evident. The result of infection of the smay be a diffuse cellulitis on the one hand, or a localization—absces on the other. By reason of concentration and bacterial activity, abscess may attack the deeper structures, and attain considered depth before the pressure becomes sufficient to break through the sor before surgical intervention is secured.

Acne.—This is a small inflammatory mass originally formed in vicinity of a hair follicle or a sebaceous gland, breaking down to for a small quantity of pus. Acne rosacea has a different origin; here found, in the simplest forms, a prominence of capillaries over the surf of the cheek or nose, while in severe forms there is a marked increase in the connective tissue and the glands, which latter become closed, a great deformity—a kind of elephantiasis of the nose—results.

Furuncle, Carbuncle, etc.—The furuncle is, pathologically speaking an acne pustule upon a larger scale; and a carbuncle upon a yet great scale. In the last, by reason of the virulence of the organism, usual in all these cases the staphylococcus, there is apt to be a widesprene necrosis of tissue and a marked systemic disturbance. When infection is not staphylococcic or streptococcic but due to the bacil of anthrax, the lesion is designated malignant pustule. In necrosis a gangrene the skin is but one of the tissues involved; these have be dealt with elsewhere (p. 328).

Ulcers.—Ulcers of the skin arise in many different ways, and n follow many causes; the essential condition is a loss of tissue broug about in other than a sudden way. Normally the process of representation and its speed, coupled with the quality and amount of exudes the ulcer takes certain characters, indicated by names such as healing spreading, indolent, or phagedenic. The tendency of new growths

The mouth

al Origin.

y way of an the cocci in ght systemic count of skin , the disease f sepsis, viz., ily weakness. eria, usually serous exuwell-defined ed. Vesicles

he distension of the skin abscessactivity, the considerable ugh the skin

ormed in the own to form rigin; here is er the surface eked increase e closed, and sults.

lly speaking, a yet greater nism, usually a widespread When the the bacillus necrosis and

e have been

ys, and may ssue brought ess of repair eness of this t of exudate, h as healing, growths of the skin to ulceration is very great, by reason of their poorly-controlled blood supply and of the readiness with which interference with the circulation of the skin is produced.

VII. Infective Granulomas.

Tuberculosis.—Lupus appears as a nodular eruption, which consists of an agglomeration of miliary tubercles surrounded by an inflammatory infiltration, seen most often upon the face. The nodules may be at times hardly visible, but may be felt, and if a moderate degree of absorption occurs, the area may be ultimately scarred, but in some part of its course ulcerative destruction of some part of the surface is almost the rule. Scarring may be extensive, and there is a tendency for the disease to recur in the scar tissue. Histologically, the characters of the tuberculoma are seen amid inflammatory infiltration by leukocytes and plasma cells. Tubercle bacilli are present usually in small numbers.

The so-called scrofuloderma or subcutaneous tuberculosis consists of a subcuticular infection often in the neighborhood of tuberculous glands or fistulæ. The infiltration by small tuberculous masses, with subsequent infiltration of the skin itself, shows itself as an apparent adhesion of the thinned layers of the skin to the underlying tissues, the whole being bluish-red with a considerable tendency to caseation and necrosis. Miliary tubercles of the skin may be seen in some cases of generalized tuberculosis, and localized tuberculous warty growths may occur on the hands as a result of a "post-mortem wound."

Syphilis .- The chance is found most frequently upon the genitals but may occur in many other regions, and is usually single. After an incubation period suited to the relatively low grade of virulence of the spirochete, a sharply defined, painless, small, hard nodule is found, with a deeply lying base of firm tissue which extends outward on all sides beyond the actual nodule. Microscopically the infiltration of leukocytes and plasma cells in the perivascular regions is very marked, as is the proliferation of the fixed tissues which gives hardness to the mass. The manifestations of syphilis in the form of efflorescences on the skin are very various; the simplest is the erythema syphilitica or macular syphilide, which is seen as red, ill-defined areas of varying size tending to appear on the trunk and the lexor surfaces. They may remain for a considerable time and fade, leaving a temporary brownish pigmentation. The papular syphilide may show itself in the midst of an area of the erythema as well-defined brownish-red papules, on the skin dry and on moist areas such as mucous surfaces, exuberant, moist, and tending to ulceration. The mucous plaques of the mucosæ belong to this order, but the rapidity with which they break down leds to their appearing as flattish ulcers covered by grey debris. The possiles may become infected and give origin to pustules, which again in ome scabbed. A combination of considerable proliferation with el ration and scabbing gives rise to the peculiar structure of concentric er - called rupis. Actual gummas may occur in the skin, but more

often belong originally to the underlying tissue and involve the later. The true gummas of the skip show as flat, hard areas, like base of a chance, tending to ulcerate and form "punched-out" ul In all these ulcerative lesions, the healing is attended by a madegree of scarring.

Lepra (Leprosy).—This is seen in the skin as nodules of prolifer tissue containing the causative bacilli, or as yellowish-red or be spots on the skin or nucosæ, with an inflammatory infiltration. A scarification yields a fluid in which the characteristic bacilli are restound. (Wyatt Johnston.)

Other Granulomas, Blastomycosis, Dermalomycoses, Etc.—Glasoccurs in the skin as an acute inflammation due to infection of a woor other solution of continuity and actinomycosis usually as a secon process, appearing as a chronic ulceration and as overgrowth; a lesie like nature is Madura foot, of which the causative agent is Mycoepedis. Among the proliferative (and secondarily ulcerative) lesion this nature, must be considered that formed by blastomyces, blast cosis. Here a general infection of the body may occur, but more quently a distinctly hypertrophic, sharply defined, warty, crusted greis found. Beginning as a papule, the mass is distinctly of inflammatype, and in the later, larger lesions minute abscesses occur in substance; in these abscesses, as elsewhere, the yeast-like organism be found.

Favus is due to Achorion Schönleinii, which succeeds in obtain footing in the hair follieles and setting up a low-grade inflamm with the formation of a yellowish cupped disk composed of disk which lies upon a slightly inflamed area of skin. Ring worm man caused by more than one mould, most commonly by the Trichopand is known as tines. It may affect the scalp (T. tonsurans), the less skin (T. circinata), the beard (T. sycosis, often acute by reason coccic infection), and the covered parts of the skin (T. versicolor). Latter is often called pityriasis, and is relatively unimportant.

VIII. Inflammations of the Skin Caused by Animal Parasites.

The lesions caused by animal parasites are often of themselves of inconsiderable but are nearly always complicated by the fact the itching set up leads to scratching and thus to secondary infimation of various types. Most important of these parasitic les is scabies, set up by the Acarus scabies, which burrows into the in a direction somewhat parallel to the surface, and deposits egg the burrow thus made. The constant and long continued irrits by scratching as well as by the insect, may lead to a general thicker and pigmentation of the skin (vagabond's disease). Pediculosis is term applied to the lesions caused by the presence of lice of lifts kinds; fleas and bedbugs also cause lesions that are usually sampor Mylasis is the term applied to the deposit of the eggs of (Diptera) in the neighborhood of the various orifices of the to the ensuing inflammation.

volve the skin areas, like the ad-out" ulcers, by a marked

of proliferated red or brown ation. A light illi are readily

on of a wound as a secondary th; a lesion of t is Mycetoma ive) lesions of ces, blastomy-but more frequested growth inflammatory occur in the organism may

in obtained inflammationsed of debris worm may be Trichophaton, ans), the mained by reason of sicolor). The int.

emselves quite the fact that ndary inflamrasitic lesions into the skin posits eggs in ued irritation ral thickening iculosis is the ce ifferent by amporar of smaire files

he in

Molluscum contagionum, referred to elsewhere tp. 258—sa blastomatoid ate, inaugurated, according to some authors, by a loccidium. The guinea-worm (Filaria medicans), and the chigos are also examples of parasites that burrow in the skin.

Regressive Changes Atrophy trop f the skin occurs in the old, a general process of thems ig, the sis becoming narrower, the epidermis dry, and the subcultateous at so greatly absorbed as to show the skin to wrinkle. A local process of at ophy is noticeable in as the so-called lines albacantes, yield tre whitish a silvery lines, the result of a previous distension of the skin. They are seen most commonly in the breasts, the belomes and the first and frequently follow pregnancy, though stretching of the skin trom any other cause will suffice for their production.

Necrosis.—Nerosis of the skin occurs are pansing necrosis of eper tissues in bedsores, and ulcers of other kinds, well as in cangrene and circulatory disturbances such as in case.

Pigmentation.—Variations in the pigmentatio are be considered in this class. These consist (1) to a rease the normal pigment of the early at the corium. The pearance of beat and bile pigments, and (3) the deposit of an etechning reference has been made elsewhere.

the normal pownt, seem the dare the normal pownt, seem the dare which irregular as as of his skin, on appear in various parts of he body. It normal pigment is seen a result of the lair also is unpigmented, austis unknown. Increase of the ection of sunlight in the freckles of childhood, as also in pigment to connected with the genital furchabete after sunburn, after tion of physical counteriritants, hem bromatosis, and in jaunthee. Most, if not all, of these have referred to elsewhere, as has the general subject of pigmentation the clid.

Programme also be accorded as the result of chronic irritation to case of the familiar calles on the palm or sole, and the m. Here as the result of case of keratinized epiciem. Such may be local, as in the above-mentioned cases, or may note gereralized as in the marked thickening that occurs involving whole so. of those accustomed to walk barefoot. A condition that the be regarded as of congenital origin is the development at a trans, which in some cases have been reported as attaining ary size, a foot or more in length. The horn is generally dexhibits a base showing active growth of the deeper layers

of the epidermis and overlying this is a succession of closely pace adherent layers of keratinized cells. Diffuse local thickening of skin may further result from chronic inflammation, e. g., eczema, sypitic lesions, etc. Warts or verucæ are localized hyperplasias of epidermis, and when of large size show a coincident overgrowth of underlying cutis, presenting a definite stalk, and sometimes become definitely papillomatous. The remarkable point regarding them that after being present for years they may spontaneously undertophy and disappear. There is some indication that they are infective origin, it having been observed that they may be converged.

by contact.

A condition or group of conditions in which apparently the prin disturbance involves the dermis and subdermal tissues with second epidermal hyperplasia is seen in elephantiasis. As already indicated there are several forms of this; one group is congenital, and is com able with macroglossia and macrocheilia. The most common form encountered in tropical regions and is filarial in origin (elephant arabum). Other causes, as lymphatic obstruction, lead to very sin appearances; such are obliteration of the main lymph channels of extremity through new growth or chronic fibroid lymphadenitis lymphangitis; while lastly, syphilitic and other chronic inflammat of the skin by causing a chronic ordema, favor the setting-up of a orders of this condition. In all these states, it appears that we with a relative or actual lymph stasis, leading in the first place enlargement of the part, and secondarily to a diffuse connective ti Due to the distension, of moderate grade, of underlying tissues, the epidermis tends to hypertrophy, forming i into folds and sometimes more warty and nodular overgrowths. condition most frequently presents itself in one or both of the le extremities or in the scrotum, the latter being apt to attain a cole size, extending below the knees.

A milder type of thickening of the skin with primary involven of the dermis may affect considerable areas of the limbs or trunk is seen in the group of conditions known as sclerodema, sclerode and sclerema. Of these the first manifests itself in long-contin anasarca; it is allied to the condition seen in myxœdema, there bei brawny hardness of the affected part, with, however, little chang the overlying epidermis. In scleroderma a similar induration, continued, is followed by distinct hypertrophy involving not only dermis but also the epidermis. An associated state is seen in derm myositis in which the underlying muscles become intensely harde and rigid, and the skin above them appears as though adherent an capable of curtailed movement. Little is known regarding the capable of curtailed movement. of either of these conditions. Neurosis has been suggested, a condiparallel to that of angioneurotic cedema. In dermatomyositis muscle at first shows little change beyond congestion and add in both the apparent primary hypertrophy is apt to be followed osely packed ening of the zema, syphillasias of the growth of the nes becoming ling them is usly undergo they are of be conveyed

the primary th secondary dy indicated nd is comparnmon form is (elephantiasis very similar nannels of an phadenitis or nflammations ng-up of mild that we deal first place to nective tissue rade, of the forming itself rowths. The of the lower ain a colossal

involvement or trunk and , scleroderma, ong-continued there being a tle change in uration, long not only the en in dermateselv hardened lherent and is ing the cause d, a condition omyositis the and ordems; e followed by atrophic changes. Sclerems is a congenital condition or develops in infancy, and is characterized by a diffuse thickening and induration of the cutaneous tissues without recognizable anatomical changes. German authorities have called attention to the fact that there is here a modification in the composition of the fat, in the direction of increased percentage of the less soluble palmitin and stearin fats whereby, in place of being fluid, the fat within the fat cells is solid.

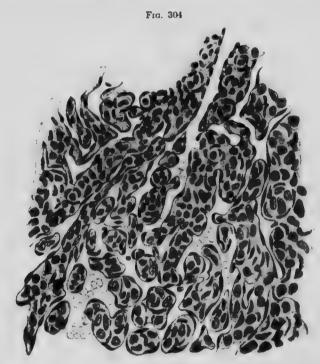
Tumors and Tumor-like Growths.—We have already referred (p. 259) to the development of cutaneous horns, which are not strictly tumors, but undischarged keratinized cells: to keloid (p. 231), in which we have a striking overgrowth of the subcutaneous connective tissue secondary to irritation, but at the same time due to congenital hyperplastic tendency on the part of these tissues: to multiple cutaneous fibromas (neurinomatosis) (p. 247), due to overgrowth primarily of cells of the sheath of Schwann around filaments of the cutaneous nerves: to diffuse lipomatosis, or blastomatoid hyperplasia of the subcutaneous fat: to the allied condition of adiposis dolorosa and also to Xanthoma (p. 233). remain certain overgrowths which deserve more particular notice.

True fibroma may be present, most often in the form of solitary tumors which may attain considerable size and may be either hard or soft. Myxoma, chondroma, and osteoma are rare. We have encountered a multiple cutaneous formation of small chondromatous plaques in the skin of the legs, evidently metaplastic. The skin is, however, a favorite seat for the development of lipomas, more especially in the shoulder region. These solitary lipomas have a lobulated structure and may attain considerable size. Several cases of multiple small myomas are on record, and some of solitary myomas, of small size, originating evidently from the arrectores pilorum, and from the muscles of the sweat

glands.

Under the heading of nevi (or birthmarks) and moles are to be grouped a number of different conditions. The hairy mole is a patch of normal skin giving origin to large, coarse hairs in a region normally hairless. Frequently associated with this there is marked pigmentation and some hypertrophy of the skin. A section through such a mole shows frequently a more vascular condition than normal, with, in addition, a pronounced collection of chromatophores or pigment cells around the ves els. The nevus is of larger size and comprises a variety of conditions, from the soft, warty masses, showing abundant cells, to states of enormous and widespread cavernous dilatation of the superficial ve sels, which may involve the whole of one side of the face, or, as we ha e seen, the whole head, or, again, a large portion of the trunk. so, Her, cellular forms, like certain moles, show masses of somewhat cubical or polygonal cells surrounding somewhat enlarged vessels. In the larger, the dilated vessels predominate and cause a striking bl h or reddish coloration of the affected area ("strawberry mark"). To condition is most often what has been termed cavernoma, or cavernor angioma, but occasionally we meet with not merely this dilated

condition but a true blastomatous proliferating angioma with progress growth into the surrounding tissue. So, also, at times we encour conditions of lymphangiectasis which may weep, and true cutane lymphangiomas, or lymphangio-endotheliomas. Any of the above of nective-tissue tumors may give rise to sarcoma or to sarcomate developments. At the same time primary sorcoma does occur, rous spindle-, or mixed-celled together with a remarkable form of difference sarcomatosis of the skin which may involve large areas (mycosis goides). The character of this growth, however, makes one strong suspect that here we may deal with a spreading inflammatory conditions.



Section from a case of hemangioms simplex, exhibiting progressive enlargement and extensi (Borrmann.)

A not uncommon form of malignant tumor is the melanoma or chrotophoroma. We hesitate to give this its usual name of melanotic coma, inasmuch as there is still considerable discussion as to whe this be of epithelial or perithelial origin. These tumors originate usus from a pigmented nevus or mole, and in these from the large polyg cells or chromatophores situated immediately around the vessels, have repeatedly called attention to the abundant metastases withey are liable to set up.

Carcinoma.—The malignant epithelial tumor of the skin is natur the squamous-ceiled carcinoma (epithelioma), but of this two forms h progressive we encounter as cutaneous e above consarcomatous ccur, round-, em of diffuse (mycosis funone strongly ory condition.

recognizable: the one, the squamous epithelioma proper, such as is seen on the lip, scrotum, or penis, is characterized by large, moderately coarse, finger-like processes dipping down into the underlying tissues, presenting well-marked epithelial pearls, and with its deep infiltrative powers, manifesting a marked tendency to develop metastases in the neighboring lymph nodes. This may originate either from the cutis proper or from the hair follicles or sebaceous glands and shows a marked tendency toward ulceration. The other form, the rodent ulcer, presents itself most commonly on the upper part of the face, where it is characterized by slow growth, extending sometimes over years, shallow and dry ulceration, fibrosis and cicatrization in certain parts with slow extension and eating away of the superficial tissues, and often a superficial wrinkling by reason of the contraction of the fibrous tissue. A remarkable fact is that only late in its course, when there has been much erosion, does this show deep infiltration and the formation of metastases. Microscopically the cell columns are small, irregular, with absence of epithelial pearls. The simpler type of cell seen in this form with its departure from the typical prickle-celled type, led Krompecher to include this among the basal-celled carcinomas, on the unfounded supposition that it originates from the deeper Malpighian layer rather than from the fully formed epithelial cells. There is no evidence for this assumption, but by analogy we must say that it is composed of cells that have undergone a greater anaplasia and have lost the capacity to develop the more differentiated cell The observations of Wolbach upon the closely allied x-ray cancer of the extremities and other regions, affords, it seems to us, a possible explanation for the absence of metastases in this form, viz., in the latter form it is evident that a fibrosis with condensation of the dermis precedes the cancerous change in the epithelium, and in this way, by the density of the underlying connective tissue, affords a barrier against the easy penetration of the cells into the deeper lymphatics,

Secondary carcinoma of the skin is not very common; it is seen most often in connection with mammary cancer, one form of which shows a peculiar tendency to spread along the cutaneous lymphatics, giving rise to the so-called cancer on cuirasso.

Cysts. Retention cysts may show themselves in connection with the schaecons glands, often secondary to a condition of seborrhose or hypersecretion, resulting in the production of wens on the scalp or sebaceous cysts elsewhere. Retention cysts may also affect the sudoriparous gland again following hypersecretion, resulting in miliaria, minute, clear tense vesicles immediate underneath the upper layers of the skin. In this connection we may mention the allied condition of comedones ("blackheads"), a condition due to the blocking of the ducts of scheecous glands by plugs of sebum and desquamated cells. They are these commonly seen upon the nose and chin. Yet another form of cyst deserves mention, the implantation cyst, brought about by the terminatic forcing of cells from the deeper epidermal layers into the

and extension.

ma or chromamelanotic saras to whether ginate usually urge polygonal e vessels. We astases which

n is naturally two forms are dermis (see p. 293), and the rarer true cutaneous dermoid due to a embryonic inclusion of epithelial tissues in the deeper layers during the process of closure of various fissures.

THE HAIR

Certain diseased states of the hair call for notice. There may excessive production of hair (hypertrichosis) either over the great part of the body or in particular regions, notably over the site of occult spina bifida or, in the female, on the chin and lips. Absence hair from regions where normally it should exist is spoken of as alopec This may be congenital, and then either universal, or as on the more in the axillæ, and on the face, associated with a lack of developme of the secondary sexual characters; or a senile change, or prematu supposedly a trophoneurosis. Apart from this, it may be a manifest tion of a distinctly local trophoneurosis, round or oval areas of the sec being affected (alopecia areata). Similar local loss of hair may follow the growth of sundry moulds, e.g., trichophyton, or in localized infla mations or after infective fevers. Nutritional changes in the hair little understood; premature whitening (canities) may be found of to arrested development of pigment, without of necessity any of sign of defective growth, and may also follow severe nervous shock, continued nervous irritation as in migraine and neuralgia; sometin local patches of canities constitute a family trait. Other disturban due to defective nutrition are splitting of the hair, clubbing of the of the hair, uneven caliber of the hair, or beading. In certain of above-mentioned parasitic diseases, the defective nutrition of the l is manifest in its brittleness.

THE NAILS

Abnormalities of the nails are rare. Hemorrhages may occur in bed of the nail in cases of malnutrition combined with sudden chan of temperature. Inflammation may attack the tissues at the root of nail (onychia) or at the edges (paronychia) leading to suppuration a sometimes exfoliation. With paronychia the relation of nail and spart may be altered so that the nail penetrates the deeper tissues (ingring toe-nail), while flecks due to the presence of air between the lay of the nail may appear in the body of the nail (leukopathia), or a traverse furrow may mark on the surface the date of a past acute illustration both of these being evidences of temporary malnutrition. The may grow to an enormous extent (onychogryphosis) with great deform in shape, in this comparable to the development of cutaneous ho Parasitic diseases of the skin (favus, ring-worm) may affect the nail substance.

due to an

ere may be the greater e site of an Absence of as alopecia. n the mons, levelopment premature, a manifestaof the scalp may follow lized inflamthe hair are e found due y any other ous shock, or ; sometimes disturbances g of the end

ertain of the

n of the hair

occur in the dden changes he root of the puration and nail and soft ssues (ingrowen the layers a), or a transacute illness, a. The nails eat deformity aneous horns. ect the nails, ow within the

INDEX

ABDOMINAL epigastric hernia, 569 fissure, 72 Aberrant mammary gland, 666 prostate, 633 Abiotrophy, 57, 299 of nerves, 478 Abnormalities, 61 of defect, 70 in excess, 61, 62 inheritance of, 57 Abortion, tubal, 666 Abrin, immunity against, 154, 155 Abscess, 126 antemammary, 667 of brain, 488 cold, 684 of liver, 575 of orbit, 517 perinephric, 617 peritonsillar, 437 pylephlebetic, 574 repair of, 126 retropharyngeal, 438 retro-uterine, 661 of skin, 700 "stitch-hole," 89 of thymus, 472 tubo-ovarian, 655 Absolute immunity, 152 Acapnia, 179 Acardiac monstrosities, 63 Acetone bodies, 109 Acetonuria, 109 Achondroplasia, 678 Acidosis, 104, 106, 109 of blood plasma, 359 Acne of skin, 700 rosacea, 700 Acquired characters, inheritance of, 53 diseases, 55 mmunity, 115, 116 modifications, 43 Acruia, 72, 485 Ac megaly, 101 pituitary body and, 493 Act nomycosis of bone, 685

I brain, 490

i kidney, 619 i larynx, 443 Actinomycosis of liver, 583 of lungs, 465 of mouth, 525 of muscles, 675 of peritoneum, 566 of skin, 702 of spleen, 418 of stomach, 536 Active hyperemia, 337
Activity, lack of, as cause of disease, 115
Adaptation, 36, 40
of human body to temperature, 77 Adaptive hypertrophy, 187 Addison's anemia, 360 disease, 102, 422, 703 Adenase, 107 Adenin, 27, 107 Adenocarcinoma of stomach, 539 of thyroid gland, 425 of uterus, 651 Adenofibroma of ovary, 659 Adenofibrosarcoma of mammary gland, Adenoids, 428, 440, 460 Adenolipofibroma of mammary gland, Adenoma, 261 of adrenals, 422 of bladder, 627 of bronchi, 446 of kidney, 621 of larynx, 443 of liver, 589 of lungs, 465 of mammary gland, 670 of nose, 436 of pancreas, 597 of parathyroids, 426 of stomach, 539 of thyroid gland, 425 of uterine ligaments, 662 of uterus, 651 Adenomatosis, 262, 264 of mammary gland, 668 Adenomyoma of uterus, 243, 650 Adenomyxosarcoma of mammary gland, Adherent pericardium, 383 Adhesive otitis media, 520 Adiposis dolorosa, 233, 705 Adrenalin, 102

	All invoice about topical 602
Adrenals, 421	Albuminuria, physiological, 603
abnormalities of, 421	toxic, 603 Albuminuric neuroretinitis, 513
accessory, 421	Albumoses in urine, 25, 603
adenomas of, 422 anemia of, 422	Albumosuria, autolysis and, 106
atrophy of, 422	Alcoholic neuritis, 507, 508
carcinoma of, 423	Alcohols in cell, 33
cavitation of, 422	Aleppo button, 95
cortex of, overgrowth of, 102	Alexin, 164
cysts of, 423	Alimentary leukocytosis, 364
degenerations of, 422	Alkaptonuria, 108
diseases related to, 102	Allergy. S. Anaphy.xis.
hemorrhage of, 422	Alloxuric bodies, 107
horseshoe, 421	Alopecia, areata, 708
hyperemia of, 422	Altmann's granules, 301, 365
hypernephroma of, 423	Aluminosis, 325
hyperplasia of, 422	Amastia, 666
hypoplasia of, 421	Amazia, 666
infarcts of, 422	Amboceptor, 164
hemorrhagic, 344	Amino-acids, 25
inflammation of, 422	Amitosis, 38
lymphangiectases of, 423	Amitotic cell division, 38
necrosis of, 422	Amnion, 665
neuromas of, 422	Amniotic fluid, 665
sarcomas of, 423	Amoebic abscess of liver, 575
secretion of, 102	colitis, 558
syphilis of, 422	Amphimixis, 46
	Amphoterism of amino-acid, 25
tumors of, 275, 422	Amputation neuroma, 198, 245, 5
Adrenin, 100, 102	Amygdalitis, 437
Aërobes, 84	Amyloid, 34
Aërobic bacteria, 84	bodies of prostate, 321, 633
Aërogenic pneumonia, 451	degeneration, 306, 307 of adrenals, 422
tuberculosis, 460	of lymph nodes, 413
Agglutination, 162	of myocardium, 390
Agglutinins, 162	of heart, 390
Aggressins, 169 Agonal invagination of intestines, 546	infiltration of arteries, 401
	of kidney, 620
oedema of lungs, 447	of liver, 585
Agyria, 486 Air embolism, 352	of pancreas, 597
passages, 427	reactions, 308
sacs, 431	Amyloidosis, 308
changes in walls of, hindering	Amyotrophic lateral sclerosis, 499
aëration, 432	Anadidymus, 67
collapse of, 431	Anaërobes, 84
distention of, 431	Anakatadidymus, 67
interstitial deposits in, 433	Anaphase of mitosis, 40
obstruction of, 431	Anaphylaxis, 117, 170
transmission of bacteria by, 90	Anaplasia, 203
Albinism, 47, 509, 695	in tumors, 285
Albumin, 25	Anasarca, 336, 339, 366, 368, 696
Bence-Jones, 603	Anemia, 339
egg, 25	Addisonian, 360
serum, 25	of adrenais, 422
in urine, 602	aplastic, 361, 419
Albuminoid vegetable poisons, immunity	of bone marrow, 419
against, 154	of brain, 486
Albuminous degeneration. See Cloudy	collateral, 339
swelling.	of intestines, 546
Albuminuria, 603	of kidney, 608
cyclical, 603	of larynx, 441
febrile, 151	of liver, 570
infectious, 603	of mouth, 523

Anemia of muscles, 673 neurotonic, 339 of pericardium, 382 of peritoneum, 562 pernicious, 360 of pia-arachnoid, 564 of placenta, 664 of retina, 510 secondary, 360 of skin, 695 of spinal cord, 495 splenic, 241, 415 of stomach, 533 Anemic infarct, 344 Anencephaly, 72, 485, 493 Anesthesia, 479 Aneurysm, 278, 298, 407 arteriovenous, 408 in brain, 488 cirsoid, 278, 407 dilatation, 407 dissecting, 407 false, 408 fusiform, 298, 407 miliary, 408 myeotic, 408 saccular, 298, 407 traction, 408 varicose, 408 Anguerysmal varix, 408 Anguertases, 278 Angina, 437 ludovici, 528 pectoris, 376 Vincent's, 439 Angioma, 277 of bladder, 627 of bones, 689 of brain, 491 of ear, 521 of kidney, 621 of mouth, 526 of muscles, 676 of orbit, 517 of peritoneum, 567 of placenta, 664 of pleura, 470 of skin. 705 of umbilical cord, 665 of vulva, 641 Angioneurotic œdema, 373 Anions, 32 Aukylosis of joints, 691 Ankylostomum, destruction of tissue by, Anlagen, 65 Anomalies. See Abnormalities. Inopheles mosquito, malaria and, 97 Anophthalmia, 509 Anorchidism, 637 Anteflexion of uterus, 644, 645 Antemammary abscess, 667 Antenatal disease, 55 Ante-uterine hematoma, 661

603

513

106

245, 509

633

0

401

is, 499

Anthracosis, 325, 412, 459 Antibodies, 155, 172 Antidiastatic enzyme, 156 Anti-enzymes, 155, 156 Antiferment, 156 Antigen, 163, 172 Antipepsin, 156 Antipeptic ferment, 156 Antiprecipitins, 162 Antirennin, 156 Antiricin, 155 Antispecific" qualities, inheritance and, Antitoxin, 155, 156 Antitoxins, production of, 157-160 toxins and, 156 Antivenins, 168 Anuria, 602 Anus uterinus, 644 Aorta, coarctation of, 387 Aortic endocarditis, 394 Aphthæ, 524 Aphthous stomatitis, 524 Apical pneumonia, 455 Aplastic anemia, 361, 419 Apneumatosis, 449 Apoplexy, 354, 487 Appendical concrements, 315 constipation, 543 Appendicitis, 548, 555 catarrhal, simple, 557 diffuse, 557 gangrenous, 558 perforative, 557 Appendix epiploica, 566 vermiformis, function of, 541 Apposition, metastasis and, 219 Aqueous humor, 516 Arachnidæ, 98, 100 Arcus senilis, 514 Areola, carcinoma of, 672 Areolitis, 667 Argyria, 325 Arrhincephaly, 522 Arrhythmia, 379 Arsenic eaters, 153 neuritis, 508 Arterial thrombus, 349 Arteries, 399 abnormalities of, 400 anastomosing, 340 arteriosclerosis of, 401 atrophy of, 400 degeneration of, 401 hypertrophy of, 409 hypoplasia of, 400 infiltration of, 401 inflammation of, 400 occlusion of, 340 syphilis of, 400 terminal, 340 thrembosis of. 400 tumors of, 409 Arteritis, 400

Arteriosclerosis, 298, 402 nodose, 402 syphilitic, 403 Arteriovenous aneurysm, 408 Arthritis, 691 deformans, 692 pauperum, 693 purulent, 692 serofibrofibrinous, 691 serous, 691 suppurative, 691 Ascaris lumbricoides in liver, 590 Ascites, 339, 366 chyliform, 370 chylous, 370 pseudochylous, 370 Aspergillus of lungs, 465 Aspermia, 637 Asphyxia, 109, 430 Aspiration pneumonia, 455 Aster, 40 Asthenic fever, 150 Asthma, 429 Atavism, 48, 50 Ataxia, Friedreich's, 498, 501 locomotor, 500 Atelectasis, 431, 449 impression, 450 Atheromatous embolus, 352 ulcer, 402 Atherosclerosis. See Arteriosclerosis. Atherosis. See Arteriosclerosis. Atmospheric pressure as cause of disease, Atonic constipation, 542 Atresia ani, 74, 545 of gall duct, 591 of intestines, 544 of larynx, 440, 444 recti, 545 of vagina, 642 Atrophic gastritis, 536 pharyngitis, 439 rhinitis, 435 Atrophy, 297 of adrenals, 422 of arteries, 400 of bladder, 626 of bone, 685 of brain, 490 brown, of heart, 388 of liver, 586 of drum membrane of ear, 520 of joints, 694 of kidney, 619 of larynx, 443 of liver, 574, 583 of lymph nodes, 413 of mammary gland, 667 from malnutrition, 297 of muscles, 675 of myocardium, 388 of nerves, 478 of ovary, 656

Atrophy from overwork, 297 of pericardium, 384 progressive muscular, 499, 675 of prostate, 634 reversionary, 203 senile, 297 serous, 306 of fat, 298 of pericardium, 384 of skin, 703 of spleen, 418 of testes, 639 of thymus, 472 of thyroid gland, 424 of uterus, 649 of vulva, 641 Auditory meatus, external. external. See Ear Aural polyps in otitis media, 520 Auricle of ear. See Ear. of heart, 371 Auriculoventricular node, 377 valves of heart, 373 Autochthonous blastomas, 223 Auto-intoxication, 79 Autolysin, 163 Autolysis, 105 Autonomic nervous system, 475 Autonomous tumors, 207 Autoplastic transplantation, 199 Auxetics, 201 Axone, 473 abiotrophy of, 478 degeneration of, 478 disuse atrophy of, 478 pathological changes in, 477 regeneration of, 478

12

BACILLARY colitis, epidemic, 558, 559 Bacilli, 84 Bacillus coli, constipation and, 111 diphtheriæ, 85, 438 fusiformis, 439 typhosus, 90, 121 "Bacoi spleen, 308, 418 Bacteria, action of gastric suice on, 86 of leukocytes on, 87 of surface washing on, 86 aërobic, 84 in bladder, 626 as cause of disease, 84 damage of cells by, grades of, 126 development of ptomaines and, 110 ectotoxic, 85 endotoxic, 85 entrance of, into body, 90 physical hindrance to, in resp ratory tract, 87 through genital passages, 90

intestinal tract, 90

lymph nodes, 87, 91

Bacteria, entrance of, through placenta, Bladder, atrophy of, 626 respiratory tract, 90 9, 675 skin, 90 to tissues, 86 enzymes of, 84 exaltation of virulence of, 170 intestinal, 85 passage of, through body, 91 pathogenic, 85 phagocytosis and, 124 putrefactive, 85 saprophytic, 85 temperature limits of, 84 toxins of, 84, 85 transmission of, by air, 90 by direct contact, 90 See Ear. by fomites, 90 by insects, 90 520 virulence of, 91 Bacterial embolus, 353 intoxication, 85 Bactericmia, 145, 629 Bactericidal power of blood, 88 of mucus, 86 Bacteriolysis, 165, 166 Bacteriolysis, 165, 166 Balanitis, 630 475 Balantidium coli, 97 Balanoposthitis, 630 Ball thrombus, 348 Banti's disease, 241, 579 Barlow's disease, 688 Basal-celled carcinoma, 264, 270 Basedow's disease. See Exophthalmic 477 goitre. Bedsore, 76 Bence-Jones' albumin, 603 B-oxybutyric acid, 109 Bicornuate uterus, 644 Bile cysts of liver, 590 ducts, 591 tuberculosis of, 582 gravel, 319 in peritoneum, 566 Bilharzia hematobium, 260, 626 Bilharziasis, 260 Biliary calculi, 318 cirrhosis, 579 Bilirubin, 318 Biliverdin, 318 Bionecrosis, 326 inphore, 24 phoric molecule of cell, 24, 27 oplasia, 35 hmarks, 278 birth palsies, 61 Births, multiple, 64 Bladder, 624 abnormal contents in, 626 disence of, 624 idenoma of, 627 asages, 90 ingioma of, 627 nomalies of, 624

bacteria in, 626 bilharsia hematobium in, 626 carcinoma of, 627 ectopia of, 625 extrophy of, 624 fibroma of, 627 hyperemia of, 625 hypertrophy of, 626 inflammation of, 625 myoma of, 627 papilloma of, 261, 627 parasites in, 626 sarcoma of, 627 septa of, 624 syphilis of, 626 tuberculosis of, 626 tumors of, 627 Blastomas, 213 atypical, 237 autochthonous, 223 heterochthonous, 223 multicentric, 219 pleuricentric, 219 teratogenous, 211, 223 typical, 237 unicentric, 219 Blastomatoid, 228 Blastomatous papillomas, 260 Blastomycetes. See Yeasts. Blastomycosis of skin, 702 Blended character, 48 inheritance, 48
"Blighted ovum," 58 Blood, 334 bactericidal power of, 88 cells in inflammation, 128 coagulation of, 346, 347 corpuscles, poisons acting on, 81 red. See Erythrocytes. white. See Leukocytes. distribution of, alteration in, 336 dust bodies of, 366 "laking" of, 360 plasma, 357 acidosis of, 358 hydremia of, 357 hyperinosis of, 358 hypinosis of, 358 lipemia of, 358 platelets, 366 in thrombosis, 347 qualitative changes in, 357 quantitative alteration of, 334 stasis of, 339 sterility of, 88 stream, metastasis and, 218 supply, alterations of, 337 Blood-clot, 346 Blood-forming organs, 411 Blood-vascular tissue, regeneration of, 194 tumors, 278 Bloodvessels, 371

199

558, 559 nd, 111

uice on, 86 on, 86

des of, 126 nes and, 110

90 to, in respi-

t, 90 87, 91

Bloodvessels, endothelium of, inflamma- Bones, transplantation of, 201 tion and, 127 in neoplasms, 221 Blue line in lead poisoning, 325 Bodies, Nissl, 19 tigroid, 19 Bodily states as causes of disease, 111 Body cell, 44 mechanism, disturbances of, autolysis and, 106 surface, imperfect closure of, 72 Bones, 678 abnormalities of, 678 actinomycosis of, 685 angioma of, 689 atrophy of, 685 caries of, 681, 684 cephalhematoma cf. 679 chondrosarcoma of, 689 cold abscess of, 684 condensation of, 682 cysts of, 690 eburnated, 682 enostoses of, 689 exostoses of, 688 bursata of, 689 granulomas of, 685 gumnas of, 684, 685 hemangio-endothelioma of, 689 hemorrhages of, 679 hyperemia of, 679 hyperplasia of, 236, 688 infarct of, 680 inflammation of, 680, 682 involucrum of, 680 leprosy of, 685 marrow, 419 anemia of, 419 chondromas of, 420 endotheliomas of, 420 fibromas of, 420 hyperemia of, 419 hyperplasia of, 419 inflammations of, 419 myelomatosis of, 420 myxomas of, 420 sarcomas of, 420 tumors of, 230, 420 metastases in, 689 myeloma of, 689 myxo-chondromas of, 689 myxomas of, 689 myxo-sarcoma of, 689 necrosis of, 681 ossifying ecchondroses of, 689 osteoporosis of, 682, 685 Paget's disease of, 686 rachitis of, 687 regeneration of, 192 682 rickets of, 687 sarcoma of, 689 sclerosis of, 682 sequestrum of, 680 syphilis of, 684

tuberculosis of, 682 tumors of, 688 Bradycardia, 336 Brain, 485 abscess of, 488 actinomycosis of, 490 anemia of, 486 aneurysm in, 488 angioma of, 491 anomalies of, 485 atrophy of, 490 carcinoma of, 492 chorioepithelioma of, 492 cysticercus of, 99, 492 cysts of, 492 echinococcus of, 492 embolism in, 487 endothelioma of, 491 ependymoma of, 492 fibroma of, 491 glioma of, 491 gliosarcomas of, 492 glanders of, 490 gumma of, 489 hemorrhage of, 486 hydrocephalus of, 486 hyperemia of, 486 hypernephroma of, 492 inflammation of, 488 leprosy of, 490 malformations of, 485 myxoma of, 491 osteoma of, 491 porencephaly of, 492 sarcoma of, 492 softening of, 487 syphilis of, 489 syphiloma of, 489 thrombosis in, 487, 488 tuberculosis of, 489 tumors of, 491 Branchial clefts, imperfect closure of, 7 cysts, 289 Breast. See Mammary gland. Paget's disease of, 672 "pigeon," 687
Bridges, cell, 19, 20
Bright's disease. See Nephritis. Bordet-Gengou phenomenon, 168 reaction, 167 Bronchi, 429, 444 adenoma of, 446 carcinoma of, 446 chondroma of, 446 foreign bodies in, 445 hemorrhages into, 444 inflammation of, 444 lipoma of, 446 lumen of, alteration in, 446

myxoma of, 446 occlusion of, 446

osteoma of, 446

passive congestion of, 444

Bronchi, perforation of, 446 sarcoma of, 446 tumors of, 446 Bronchiectasis, 433, 446 cylindrical, 446 fusiform, 446 saccular, 446 varicose, 446 Bronchitis, 444 acute, 444 catarrhal, 444 chronic, 445 fibrinous, 445 gangrenous, 445 purulent, 444 putrid, 445 Broncholiths, 446 Bronchopneumonia, 452 tuberculous, 461 Bronsed diabetes, 579, 703 Brown atrophy of liver, 583, 586 induration of lungs, 448, 458 Bubo, 412, 631, 632 Bulbar paralysis, 499 Bullous emphysema, 456 "Bundle of His," 377 Burning of skin, 697 Burse, 677 endothelioma of, 678 fibroma of, 678 hydroma of, 678 inflammation of, 678 myxoma of, 678 sarcoma of, 678 tuberculosis of, 678 tumors of, 678 Bursal cysts, 292 Bursitis, 678

0

losure of, 74

itis. , 168

446

Calcium car oxalate Calculi, 315 biliary.

CACHEXIA, 216 thyreopriva, 100 Caisson disease, 77, 353 Calcareous deposits, 313 in stomach, 536 in tendon sheaths, 677 of thyroid gland, 424 embolus, 352 incrustations, 315 Calcification, 313 of auricle of ear, 520 of endocardium, 399 in infarction, 346 of liver, 586 of lymph nodes, 413 in myocardium, 391 of placenta, 664 of veins, 410 Calcium carbonate calculi, 319 oxalate calculi, 318 Cdeuli, 315. See also Concrements. biliary, 318

Calculi, calcium bilirubin, 319 cholesterin, 319 cystin, 318 guanin, 318 mulberry, 318 oxalate, 318 phosphatic, 318 prostatic, 321, 633 in ureters, 623 uric acid, 316 urinary, 316 xanthin, 318 Calculous pyonephrosis, 618 Callus, formation of, 193, 703 Calor, 125 Calories, 148 Cancer. See also Carcinoma. "bodies, 266 cells, irregular mitosis in, 222 "en cuirasse" of mammary gland, 670 of skin, 707 "parasites," 19 Canities, 708 Capillaries, 409 degeneration of, 410 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 410 hemangiomas of, 410 hemorrhages of, 410 hyperemia, 338 infiltration of, 410 thrombus, 350 tumors of, 410 Capsular cataract, 515 Carbohydrates, 33 Carbon dioxid, asphyxia and, 109 dyspnæa and, 109 Carbonic acid, muscular fatigue and, 114 Carbuncle of skin, 700 Carcinoma, 264 of adrenals, 423 basal-celled, 228, 264, 270 of bladder, 627 of brain, 492 of bronchi, 446 "cancer bodies" and, 266 of conjunctiva, 515 degeneration in, 266, 272 of dura mater, 504 of ear, 521 of Fallopian tubes, 654 of gall-bladder, 592, 593 -duct, 592, 593 gland-celled, 272 of intestines, 560 keratinization in, 270 of kidney, 621 of larynx, 443 of liver, 589 of lungs, 465 of mammary gland, 670 medullary, 266, 273, 670 of nose, 436 of cesophagus, 531

Carcinoma of orbit, 517 of ovary, 659 of pancreas, 597 of penis, 633 of prostate, 636 Russel's bodies and, 267 sarcomatodes, 227, 266, 425 scirrhous, 266, 273, 670 of scrotum, 640 simplex, 227, 266, 273, 672 site of, origin of, 267 of skin, 706 of spleen, 419 squamous-celled, 269, 672 of stomach, 539 stroma of, 265 of testes, 639 tumor cells of, 265 of ureters, 624 of urethra, 629 of uterus, 651, 663 of vagina, 643 of vulva, 642 Cardiac thrombus, 348 vegetation, 349, 351 Cardiovascular system, 333 Caries of bone, 681, 684 of joints, 693 of teeth, 526 Carnified lungs, 450 Carotid gland, tumors of, 285 Carrel's experimenta, 202 Cartilage, regeneration of, 192
Caruncles of urethra, 629
Casts, cellular, 312
colloid, 312
epithelial, 312 granular, 312 hyaline, 312 waxy, 312 Catalysis, 28 Catarrh, 435 Catarrhal, appendicitis, simple, 557 bronchits, 444 cholecystitis, 591 colitis, 558 cystitis, 625 enteritis, 548 inflammation, 133 jaundice, 323, 591 laryngitis, 441 Cavenitis, 630 Cavernoma, 278, 705 of pia-arachnoid, 506 of skin, 705 Cavernous lymphangiectasis, 281 Cecitis, 548 Cell, abnormal states of, 18 activities of, bioplastic, 35 compensatory, 37 excessive, 38 functional, 38 katabiotic, 35

Cell, activities of, relation of growth subnormal, 37 vegetative, 38 alcohols of, 33 biophoric molecule of, 24 blood, 128 body, 18, 44 bridges, 29, 20 carbohydrates in 33 centrosome of, 19 chemistry of, 24 chromatin of, 18 connections, 19 connective-tissue, 126, 128 constituents of, 18 crystals of, 19 cytoplasm of, 19 damage of, by bacteria, 126 differentiation, 41 division, amitotic, 38 aster in, 40 attraction sphere in, 40 direct, 38 karyokinetic, 38 mantle fibers in, 40 mitotic, 38 dynamics of, 35 ectoplasm of, 19 ectosarc of, 32 embolus, 352 embryonic, 38 endoplasm of, 19 endothefial, 127, 128, 138 epithelioid, 138 fats of, 33 germ, 44 giant, 139 histology of, 17 hyaline, 363 hyperactivity of, within limit o reserve force, 38 lining of, 18 lipoids of, 24 "mast," 133, 363 molecule, Ehrlich's conception of mononuclear hyaline, 132 multiplication. 38 non-protein constituents of, 31 nucleolus of, 18 nucleotus of, 18
olein in, 33
palmitin in, 33
paraplasm of, 19
physiology of, 21
plasma, 132, 363
polymorphonuclear, 128
'prezymogens' of, 23
poliferente, 201 proliferants, 201
proliferation, inflammation and, 119
proteins of, 24 regeneration of, 21 salts in, 32

of growth to,
24
128
126
1, 40

in limit of

ception of,

of, 31

on and, 119

Cell, sap. 19 significance of, 20 size of, 20 soaps of, 33 somatic, 44 stearin in, 33 totipotent, 208 totipotential, 45 vacuoles of, 18 varying powers of resistance of, 123 vegetative, 44, 216, 217 wandering, inflammation and, 119 water in, 31 Cellular casts, 312 Cellulitis, 412 of orbit, 517 of skin, 400 Central pneumonia, 455 Centrilobular pancreatitis, 595 Centrosome, 19, 39 Cephalhematoma, 294, 502, 679 Cephalotheracopagus disymmetros, 68 monosymmetros, 69 Cerebral apoplexy, 354 hemorrhage, 498 thrombosis, 498 Cerebrosides, 27 Cervical endometritis, 647 hydrocele, 281 Cervicitia, 647 Chalicosis, 325, 459 Chancre, 524, 630, 701 hard, 630 of mouth, 524 of skin, 701 soft, 631 Chancroid, 631 Charcot-Leyden crystals, 445 Charcot's joint," 694 Cheilitis, 523 Cherlognathopalatoschisis, 522 Cheilognathoprosoposchisis, 522 Cheilognathoschisis, 522 Cheiloschisis, 522 Cheioid, 231 Chemical causes of disease, 75, 78 of inflammation, 122 Chemiotaxis, inflammation and, 119 Chemosis, 366 Cheyne-Stokes' respiration, 431 Chickenfat clot, 346 Chigoë in skin, 703 Chills, fever and, 149 Chloasma, 703 Chloroform poisoning, necrosis of liver Cirrhosis, 141 Chlorosis, 238 Chlorosis, 261 Choked disk, 507, 510, 516 Cholangitis, 591 Cholecystitis, 591 Cholelithiasis, 318 Cholesteatoma, 284, 312, 506, 519

Cholesterins, 27, 319

Cholin, 106, 110 Chondrin, 34 Chondrodystrophis fortalis, 678 Chondroid degeneration of myocardium, 390 spleen, 309 Chondroma, 234 of bone marrow, 420 of bronchi, 446 of dura mater, 503 of lungs, 465 of mammary gland, 672 of mouth, 526 of pleura 470 of vul. ... 142 Chondro-osteo-sarcoma, 689 Chondrosarcoma, 256 of bones, 689 Chorde tendinee, aberrations of, 393 Chordee, 629 Chordoma, 249 Choreiform movements, 484 Chorio-epithelioma, 212, 663, 664 of brain, 492 of lungs, 466 of placenta, 664 of testes, 639 of vagina, 643 Choroid, hemorrhages of, 510 hyperemia of, 510 inflammation of, 513 sarcoma (1, melanotic, 515 tumors of, 515 Choroiditis, 513 Choroidoretinitis, 513 Chromaffin cell, multiplication of, '22 System, diseases reconstruction, 18 Chromatophoroma, 283 . . . Chromidia, 22 Chromophilic bodies, 473 Chromosomes, 39, 45 Chyliformascites, 370 Chylous ascites, 370 hydrothorax, 370, 467 Chyluria, 370 Cicatrization in gangrene, 339 in infarction, 345 Ciliary body, inflammation of, 512 Ciliate infusoria, 97 Circulation, collateral, development of, 343 coronary, 376 organs of, poisons acting on, 82 of liver, 575 biliary, 579 Hanot's, 579, 580 hypertrophic, 579 Lænnec's, 575 monolobular, 580 multilobular. 576 obstructive 579 portal, 575

Cirrhosis of liver, syphilitic, 581 Cirsoid aneurysm, 278, 407 Cladothrix of lungs, 465 Clasmatocytes, 133 Cleft palate, 74, 437, 522 Clitoris, 640 absence of, 640 hyperplasia of, 640 Cloaca, persistent, 74 Clonus, 482 Clot, blood-, 346 chickenfat, 346 Cloudy degeneration, 123 swelling, 123, 301 of kidney, 619 of liver, 584 of muscles, 675 of myocardium, 388 Coagulation necrosis, 328, 344 Coaguline, 347 Coarctation of aorta, 387 Cocci, 84 Coccidia of sporozoa, 97 Coccidiosis, 259, 590 Cold abscess of bone, 684 Colic, ureteral, 323 Colitis, 558 amœbic, 558 bacillary, epidemic, 558, 559 catarrhal, 558 follicular, 558 membranous, 558 mucous, 558 ulcerative, 558 tuberculous, 560 Collapse, 178 of air sacs, 431 Collateral anemia, 339 circulation, development of, 343 hyperemia, 337 Colliquative necrosis, 328 Colloid carcinoma of stomach, 540 cast, 312 degeneration, 306, 307 in carcinoma, 272 deposit, 306, 307 properties of, 32 Coloboma, 509 Color blindness, 47 Colostrum, 666 Coma, 480 Combined proteins, 25 sclerosis, subacute, 501 Comedones, 707 Compensatory cell activity, 37 hypertrophy, 188, 639 Complement, 164 Complementoid, 165 Compression, 76, 450 Conception, products of, 664 Concrements, 315 Concretions in prostate, 633 Concussion, 75 Condyloma, 258, 629

Condensation of bones, 682 Condensing osteitis, 682 Congenital cystic kidney, 289 cysts of pancreas, 598 disease, 55 porencephaly, 498 sacral teratoma, 208, 209 spastic paraplegia, 498 Congestion, passive, 338 of liver, 570 of peritoneum, 562 of spinal cord, 495 of vagina, 642 in pneumonia, 452 of spleen, 415 of thyroid gland, 424 Congestive adema of lungs, 369, 447 Conjunctiva, 509, 510 carcinoma of, 515 fibroma of, 515 hemorrhages of, 509 hyperemia of, 509 infective granuloma of, 511 inflammation of, 510 leprosy of, 511 lipoma of, 515 cedema of, 509 osteoma of, 515 papilloma of, 515 sarcoma of, 515 syphilis of, 511 tuberculosis of, 511 tumors of, 515 Conjunctivitis, 510 Parinaud's, 511 Connective-tissue cells, 127, 128 new-formed, vascularization of, 136 pelvic, 661 regeneration of, 191 Constipation, 111, 542 Bacillus coli and, 111 "Consumption, galloping," 462, 463
"Contagious," distinction of, from "infectious," 90 Continued fever, 149 Contracture, 484 Contusion, 76 Convulsions, 480 focal, 482 Jacksonian, 482 Cor, biatriatum triloculare, 386 biventriculare triloculare, 386 Cord, spinal, 493 Corn, 703 Cornea, fibroma of, 515 herpes of, 512 infective granuloma of, 512 inflammation of, 511 myxoma of, 515 papilloma of, 515 sarcoma of, 515 syphilis of, 512 tuberculosis of, 512

tumors of, 515

Cornea, ulcer of, 511, 512 Coronary circulation, 376 Corpora amylacea, 321 of brain, 496 in prostate, 633 in spinal cord, 496 oryzoidea in joints, 694 ('orporeal endometritis, 647 ('orpuseles, red. See Erythrocytes. white. See Leukocytes. ('oryza, 435 Coughing, 430 Cowper's glands, 636 cysts of, 636 inflammation of, 636 Cranial meninges, 501 Cranio-tabes, 687 Creatinin in urine, 602 Creeping pneumonia, 453 Cretinism, 100, 678 Crisis in infection, 149 Cryoscopy in nephritis, 606 Cryptogenic abscess of brain, 488 infection, 89 Cryptorchidism, 637 Crystals of cell, 19 Cumulative inheritance, 50 Cupped optic disk, 516 Curschmann's spirals, 445 Cutaneous concrements, 315 Cutaneous horns, 259, 312, 703, 705 Cyanosis, 339, 696 Cyanotic induration of kidney, 609 of liver, 572 of lungs, 448 of spleen, 416 Cyclical albuminuria, 603 Cyclitis, 512 Cyclops, 70, 71 Cylindrical bronchiectasis, 446 Cylindroma, 283, 311, 528 of salivary glands, 528 Cylindromatous hyaline degeneration. Cynauche, 528. Cyst formation in infarction, 345 Cystadenoma, 262, 291 of ovary, 656, 659 of pancreas, 597 papilliferum of mammary gland, 670 of peritoneum, 567 Cy tie careinoma of ovary, 659 hygroma, 281 kidney, congenital, 291 lymphangiectasis, 281 mastitis, chronic, 670 teratoma of ovary, 660 Cysticercus of brain, 99, 492 of muscles, 675 of pericardium, 385 of ureters, 624

4m, 108

rdeuli, 318

nuria, 108

Cystitia, 625 catarrhal, 625 phlegmonous, 625 Cystocele, 642 Cystoma of ovary, 656, 658 Cysts, 287 of adrenals, 423 of antenatal origin, 289 of bones, 690 of brain, 487, 492 branchial, 289 of breast, 670 bursal, 292 of canal of Nuck, 291 composite, 293 congenital, 289 of Cowper's glands, 636 dermoid, of mediastinum, 471 distinction of, from tumors, 287 dentigerous, 293 endothelial, 291 ependymal, 292 of Gärtner's duct, 289 of glands of Bartholin, 642 hemorrhagic, 237, 293 hydatid, 295 of intestines, 544 of kidney, 622 of larynx, 443 of liver, 590 lymph, 292 of mammary gland, 667, 670 mucous, 290 necrotic, 287, 294 of neoplastic origin, 291 of ovary, 656 of pancreas, 598 parasitic, 288, 295 of penis, 633 of peritoneum, 567, 568 of placenta, 664 of postnatal origin, 290 of primordial genito-urinary ducts, of prostate, 633 retention, 287, 288 salivary, 290 sebaceous, of ear, 521 secretory, 288 sequestration, 293 of skin, 707 squamous epithelial, 292 of tænia echinoroccus, 295 of teeth, 528 of testes, 639 of thyroid gland, 291, 424 thyrolingual, 289 of Trichina spiralis, 295 of umbilical cord, 665 urachal, 289, 625 of ureters, 624 of uterine ligaments, 661, 662 of uterus, 652 vitello-intestinal, 289

69, 447

11

128 ion of, 136

62, 463 , from "in-

86 , 386

12

Cysts of vulva, 642 of Wolffian body, 289 Cytolysins, 163 Cytolysis, 296 mechanism of, 164 Cytoplasm, 18, 19 Cytotoxins, 163

D

DACRYOPS, 290 Deaf-mutism, 520 Death, 330 somatic, 331 Deciduoma malignum puerperal uterus, 663 Defect of special regions, 70 Defences, normal, of organism, 86 Defervescence in infection, 144 Degenerates, 50 Degenerations, 300 of adrenals, 422 albuminous. See Cloudy swelling. amyloid, 306, 307, 308 of arteries, 401 of axone, 478 of capillaries, 460 in carcinoma, 272 chondroid, 309 cloudy. 123 colloid, 272, 306, 307 cystic, of ovary, 656 clastoid, 309 familial, 50 "fatty," 123, 303 granular, 123 hematohyaloid, 311 hyaline, 123, 306, 309 hydropic, 306 of kidney, 620 lipoid, 305 of liver, 584 of lymph nodes, 413 mucoid, 306, 307 of muscle, 676 of myocardium, 389, 390 in neoplasms, 222 of pancreas, 597 of placenta, 664 of prostate, 634 of retina, 514 of spinal cord, 496, 497 of spleen, 118 of thyroid gland, 424 of tumors, acute red, 650 of umbilical cord, 365 vacuolar, 306 Wallerian, 198 waxy, 328, 676 Zenker's, 328, 676 Delhi boil, 95 Delirium, 480 cordis, 380

Delirium tremens, 480 Dementia paralytica, 489, 490 Dendrites, pathological changes in, Dental hyperostoses, 527 Dentigerous cysts, 293 of bones, 690 Deposits, calcareous, 313 Dermatitis, blastomycetic, 92 of penis, 630 Dermatomycosis, 702 Dermatomyositis, 704 Dermoid cysts of mediastinum, 471 of uterine ligaments, 662 inclusion of pia-arachnoid, 506 ovarian, 209 of skin, 707 Determinants, 42 Diabetes, bronzed, 579 predisposition toward, 115 D'abetic coma, 109 Diacetic addi, 109 Diapedesis, 124 Diaphragmatic hernia, 569 Diarrhœa, 543 Diastatic enzymes of bacteria, 84 Diastole of heart, 375 Diathesis, 56, 57 Dichorial twins, 62 Dichotomy, polar, 66 Diffuse parenchymatous goitre, 424 Digestive system, 522 fever and, 151 poisons acting on, 82 Dilatation sneurysm, 407 of intestines, 545 of myocardium, 392 of uterus, 646 of veins, 410 of ventricles of heart, 375 Dimethylamin, 110 Diphtheria, 438 of external ear, 518 of cesophagus, 531 Diphtheritic membrane, 438 Diplogenesis, causes of, 64 Direct cell division, 38 inguinal hernia, 569 Disease, acquired, 55 causes of, 55 chemical, 75 intra-uterine, 58 mechanical, 75 parasitic, 75 parturient, 58, 61 physical, 75 predisposing, 55 functional, 58 of nerves, 470 inherited, 55, 56 postnatal acquirement of, 74 Disintegrative intoxications, 80, 105

Disk, choked, 507

Dislocation, congenital, of hip, 690.

490 anges în, 473, 92 num, 471 nts, 662 toid, 506

375

38

t of, 74 ns, 80, 105

f hip, 690, 691

Dislocation of lens, 509 Dissecting aneurysm, 407 Disymmetrical janiceps, 68 Distention, a cause of disease, 76 Distomum in liver, 590 Westermanii of lungs, 465 Disuse as cause of disease, 115 Diversion of complement, 166 Diverticula of Fallopian tubes, 653 of intestines, 545 Meckel's, 544 of œsophagus, 530 Diverticulitis, 545 Dolar, 125 Dominant properties, 47 Dorsal groove, imperfect closure of, 71 Double cleft palate, 74 monsters, 64 penis, 630 Dourine, 95 Dry gangrene, 330 "Dry" pleurisy, 468 tenosynovitis, 676 Ductus arteriosus, patent, 386 Botalli, patent, 386 Dumdum fever, Leishman-Donovan bodies and, 95 Duodenitis, 548 Duodenum, 541 Duplication, fusional, 68 of myocardium, 385 of cesophagus, 529 of organs, 70 of pancreas, 594 of vagina, 642 Dura mater, 501 carcinoma of, 504 chondroma of, 503 endothelioma of, 503 fibroma of, 503 hemorrhages of, 501, 502 inflammation of, 502 osteoma of, 503 psammoma of, 503 sarcoma of, 504 syphilis of, 503 thrombosis of, 501 tuberculosis of, 503 tumors of, 503 Dast bodies of blood, 366 13 $_{3}msm$, 70, 678 titery, 543, 559 astinction of, from diarrhoa, 543 Desplasia of uterus, 644

W.

517 donormalities of, 517 arricle of, 517

Dysphera, 109, 430

D stopia of testis, 637

4 uterus, 644

Ear, auricle of, calcification of, 520 hemorrhage of, 517 hyperemia of, 517 inflammation of, 518 drum membranes of, 517 absence of, 517 atrophy of, 520 hemorrhage of, 518 hyperemia of, 517 inflammation of, 518 Eustachian tube of, 517 external, absence of, 517 absence of, 517 angioma of, 521 carcinoma of, 521 diphtheria of, 518 duplication of, 517 eczema of, 518 exostoses of, 520 inflammation of, 518 fibroma of, 521 furuncle of, 518 granulomas of, infective, 518 lipoma of, 521 mycosis of, 518 osteoma of, 521 periostitis of, 518 sarcoma of, 521 sebaceous cyst of, 521 stenosis of, 517 syphilis of, 518 tuberculosis of, 518 internal, absence of, 517 hemorrhage of, 518 hyperemia of, 518 inflammation of, 520 middle, adenoma of, 521 angioma of, 521 carcinoma of, 521 fibroma of, 521 hemorrhage of, 518 hyperemia of, 518 inflammation of, 518 sarcoma of, 521 tuberculosis of, 520 Eburnated bone, 682 Ecchymoses, 355 Echinococcus of brain, 492 cysts of pancreas, 598 of uterus, 649 hyda' 1, 294 of lungs, 465 of muscles, 675 of pericardium, 385 of ureters, 624 Eclampsia, 110 Ectopia of bladder, 624 cordis, 72 of myocardium, 385 vesing, 73

Ectopic gestation, 666

Ectotoxic bacteria, 85

Ectoplasm 19

Ectosare, 32

Ectotoxins, 156	Endocarditis, malignant, 396
Eczema, 698	mitral incompetence in, 397
of auditory meatus, 518	stenosis in, 397
madidans, 699	simple, 395
papulosum, 698	ulcerative, 396
pustulosum, 699	vegetative, 394, 396
vesiculosum, 699	verrucose, 394, 395
Efferent nervous system, 475	Endocardium, 393
Effusion, pleural, 434	abnormalities of, 393
Egg albumin, 25	atheroma of, 399
Ehrlich's orders of receptors, 173	enleification of, 399
side-chain theory, 172	degenerative changes in, 399
theory of immunity, 157-160, 172	hematomas of, 393
Elastin, 34	hemoglobin imbibition in, 393
Elastoid changes in ovary, 656	hemorrhages into, 393
degeneration, 309, 401	inflammation of, 393
Electricity as cause of disease, 78	necrosis of, 399
Eleidin, 312	Endogenous intoxications, 79, 100
Elephantiasis, 61, 281, 411, 704	pigmentation, 321
neuromatosa, 509	Endometritis, 647
of penis, 632	cervical, 647
of scrotum, 640	corporeal, 647
of vulva, 641	general, 647
Elevation of uterus, 645	glandular, 648
Embolic pneumonia, 457	hemorrhagic, 647
Embolism, 346, 351	interstitial, 648
in brain, 487	Endoplasm, 19
of kidney, 609	Endosmosis, 32
of liver, 573	Endosteal osteoma, 235
in lungs, 449	Endothelial cells, 127, 138
of lymph nodes, 412	cysts, 291
of peritoneum, 563	neoplasms, 226
of spleen, 416	splenomegaly, 241
in retina, 510	tissues, 226
stomach and, 534	Endothelioma, 227, 274, 277
Embolus, air, 352	of bone marrow, 420
atheromatous, 352	of brain, 491
bacterial, 353	of bursæ, 678
calcareous, 352	of dura mater, 503
cell, 352	of lungs, 465
4	of lymph nodes, 414
fat, 352 foreign body, 353	of maminary gland, 672
-3 H - 3	of nose, 436
gas, 353 megacaryocyte, 352	of ovary, 659, 660
	of penis, 633
parasitic, 353 pigment, 353	of peritoneum, 567
"riding," 351	of pia-arachnoid, 506
Embryomas, sporadic, 209	of pleura, 470
	of salivary gland, 528
Embryonic cell, 38 malignancy of neoplasms ar	
	Endothelium, 225
216	of bloodvessels in inflammation
tumors, 226	regeneration of, 196
Emphysema, 298, 432, 450, 469	Endotoxic bacteria, 85
Empyema, 469	Endatosina 186
Encephalitis, 488, 489	Endotoxins, 156 Engorgement in pneumonia, 452
Encephalomalacia, 487	Engorgement in pheumoma, 102
Enchondroma, 234	Enostosis, 236, 689
of larynx, 443	Entamæba coli, 93
Encysted hydrocele, 289	hystolytica, 93, 94
Endarteritis obliterans, 405	Enteritis, 548
Endemic infection, 143	catarrhal, 548
	follicular, 549
Endocarditis, 393	
Endocarditis, 393 aortic, 394 gonorrhœal urethritis and, 623	membranous, 549 phlegmonous, 549

Enterocele, 642 Enterokinase, activation of trypsinogen by, 174 Enuresis, nocturnal, 605 Enzoötic infection, 143 Enzyme action, 27 growth and, 30 hydrolysis and, 32 katalysis and, 28 reversibility of, 30 antidiastatic, 156 n. 399 antipeptic, 156 of bacteria, 84 in, 393 distinction of, from ferments, 28 extracellular, 28 immunity against, 155 intracellular, 28 79, 100 of leukocytes, 106 resemblance of, to toxins, 85 Eosinophiles, in inflammation, 128, 129, Eosinophilia, 99, 364 Ependymal cysts, 292, 492 Ependymoma, 247, 492 Epiblast, 223 Epiblastic neoplasms, 225, 226 Epidemie bacillary colitis, 558, 559 infection, 143 parotitis, 528 Epididymis, 637 Epignathus, 65, 209, 437, 525 Epinephrin, 102 Epiphysis cerebri. See Pineal gland Epiphysitis, 681 Epispadias, 73, 628 Epistaxis, 434 Epithelial casts, 312 cysts, squamous, 292 metaplasia, 204 pearls, 269 Epithelioid cells, 138 Epsthelioma, 269. See also Carcinoma, squamous-celled. of mouth, 525 of cesophagus, 531 of skin, 706 of stomach, 539 of uterus, 651 thelium, regeneration of, 194 zootic infection, 143 Lpalis, 230, 525 ammation, 127 fibrous, 689 sions, hemorrhagic, of stomach, 534 ipelas, 700 Listhema, 697 ia, 452 throcytes, 358 hemoglobin content of, 359

hemolysis of, 359 stippling" of, 359 criblée in typhoid fever, 550

rongylus gigas in ureters, 624

to, 105

Exencephaly, 72, 485 Exercise, hypertrophy due to, 187 Exogenous intoxications, 79 pigmentation, 324 Exophthalmic goitre, 101, 424 Exosmosis, 32 Exostosis, 236, 688 of bones, 688 bursata of bones, 689 of external ear, 520 Extrophy of bladder, 624 "Exuberant" granulations, 138 Exudate, 134 Exudative choroiditis, 513 pleurisy, 467 Eye, 509 anomalies of, 509 inflammation of, 510 Eyestrain, 509 Facultative anaërobes, 84

FACIAL clefts, imperfect closure of, 73 Fallopian tubes, 652 abnormalities of, 653 absence of, 653 carcinoma of, 654 diverticula of, 653 double orifice of, 653 fibroma of, 654 gonorrheeal infection of, 654 hemorrhage of, 653 hyperemia of, 653 inflammation of, 653 lipoma of, 654 myoma of, 654 papilloma of, 654 syphilis of, 654 tumors of, 654 tuberculous infection of, 654 False hermaphroditism, 74 neuromas, 509 Familial characters, 47 degeneration, 50 inheritance, 47 immunity, 115 Family type of lateral sclerosis, 499 Fastigium in infection, 144 Fat in cell, 33, 302 embolism, 352 formation of, in fat cells, 23 necrosis, 328 of pancreas, 595, 597 serous atrophy of, 298 -forming ferment, 34 -splitting ferment, 33 Fatigue, 111 muscular, 113, 114 of nerve cell, 114 of kidney, 620

themata, predisposition toward, 115 Fatty degeneration, 123, 303 tions, resorption of, intoxications of liver, 584

Fatty degeneration of muscles, 675	Fibroma of liver, 589
of myocardium, 389	of lungs, 465
of pancreas, 597	of mammary gland, 672
of prostate, 634	of mouth, 525, 526
infiltration, 302	of muscles, 676
of liver, 584	of myocardium, 393
of myocardium, 388	of nose, 436
of pancreas, 597	of ovary, 659
tissue, regeneration of, 191	of penis, 633
Fauces of tonsils, 436	of peritoneum, 567
Favus, 702, 708	of pia-arachnoid, 506
Febrile albuminuria, 151	of placenta, 664
Femoral hernia, 569	of pleura, 470 of skin, 705
Fenestration of semilunar valves, 393	of stomach, 539
Ferments, distinction of, from enzymes,	of urethra, 629
28	of uterine ligaments, 662
fat-forming, 34	of vulva, 641
fat-splitting, 33	Fibromatoid growths, 230
lipolytic 34	Fibromatosis, 247
Fertilization, 44	of mammary gland, 668
Fervescence in infection, 144	of optic nerve, 517
Fever, 149	of peripheral nerves, 509
asthenic, 150	Fibromyoma of placenta, 664
chills and, 149	of uterus, 650
continued, 149 disturbances, associated with, 149	Fibrosarcoma, 256
in blood and, 150	Fibrosis, 125, 141
in circulatory system and, 150	in arteriosclerosis, 142
in digestive system and, 151	due to strain, 143
in nervous system and, 149, 150	of heart valves, 398
in respiration and, 151	innammatory, 142
in urinary system and, _51	of lung, interstitial, 465
intermittent, 149	of myocardium, 387, 391
relapsing, 98	neoplastic, 143
recurrent, 149	non-inflammatory, 143
remittent, 149	post-fibrinous, 143
rigor and, 150	proliferative, 142
sthenic, 150	replacement, 142
typhoid, 549–553	of veins, 410
Fibrillary twitching of muscles, 484	Filaria nocturna, 99
Fibrillation of heart, 380	sanguinis in ureters, 624
of vitreous humor, 516	Filariasis, 411 Filtrable viruses, 92
Fibrinogen, 25	Fission of os uteri, 644
Fibrinous bronchitis, 445	Fissure, abdominal, 72
inflammation, 134	sternal, 72
pleurisy, 468	vesico-vaginal, 73
vegetations, 135	Fissured larynx, 440
Fibro-adenoma of mammary gland, 669	Fistula in ano, 555
Fibroblasts, 125, 131, 132	of larynx, 440
Fibro-enchondroma, 234	rectovaginal, 643
"Fibroid phthisis," 462, 463	uterorectal, 644
uterine, 241, 650	uterovesical, 644
Fibroma, 229 of bone marrow, 420	vesico-umbilical, 625
of brain, 491	vesico-vaginal, 045
of bladder, 627	Fixation of complement, 10/
of burse, 678	Fixed tissues in inflammation, 131
of conjunctiva, 515	Flagellata, 94
of cornea, 515	Flat worms, 98
of ear, 521	Fleshy mole, 212, 664
of Fallopian tubes, 654	Planton of utoms 645
of intestines, 560	Focal change in nervous system, in-
of kidney, 621	
of larynx, 443	Fœtal adenoma of thyroid gland, 4

Fœtal inclusions, 208 Gall-bladder, tumors of, 592 lobulation of kidney, 608 duct, abnormalities of, 591 Feetus, 665 atresia of, 591 carcinoma of, 592, 593 acardiacus anceps, 63 acephalus, 62 granulomas of, 592 acormus, 63 hemorrhages of, 591 inflammation of, 591 amorphus, 62 death of, 665 obliteration of, 591 effect of, upon mammary gland, 103 ordema of, 591 of placental disease upon, 60 sarcoma of, 593 mummification of, 665 tumors of, 592 secretions of, 103 "Galloping consumption," 462, 463 Gallstones, 318. See also Calculi, biliary. syphilis of, 665 Follicular colitis, 558 in peritoneum, 566 Ganglion of tendon sheaths, 677 Gangrene, 328, 346 cysts of ovary, 656 enteritis, 549 gastritis, 535 dry, 330 tonsillitis, chronic, 440 moist, 330 Fomites, transmission of bacteria by, 90 of skin, 700 symmetrical, 326, 339 Foot-drop, 508 Foramen cæcum, 423 Gangrenous appendicitis, 558 bronchitis, 445 Force, reserve, 37 Foreign bodies in bronchi, 445 intussusception of intestines, 546 embolus, 353 stomatitis, 524 in joints, 694 Gärtner's duct, cysts of, 289 in prostate, 633 Gas embolus, 352 in ureters, 623 Gastric juice, action of bacteria on, 86 Gastritis, 535 in urethra, 629 in uterus, 649 acute, 535 atrophic, 536 Fractures, healing of, 193 of penis, 633 chronic, 535 Fragilitas ossium, 679 follicular, 535 Fragmentation of myocardium, 391 membranous, 535 Frambosia, 98 phlegmonous, 535 polyposa, 535 Gastro-intestinal intoxications, 111 Freckles, 703 Free proteins, 25 Freezing of skin, 698 Gastrothoracopagus parasiticus, 70 Friedreich's ataxia, 498, 501 Gelatin, 34 Fuchsin bodies, Russel's, 312 Genital glands, teratoma of, 209 L'ulminating infection, 145 passages, entrance of bacteria ædema of lungs, 447 through, 90 Function, growth and, relationship be- Genitalia, female, external, 640 ween, 36 Geographical tongue, 524 Functional cell activity, 38 Geotropism, 190 diseases, inheritance of, 58 Germ cell, 44 Furuncle of auditory meatus, 518 Germplasm, fusion of, 46 of skin, 700 molecules of, 46 Fusiform aneurysm, 298, 407 Gestation, ectopic, 666 bronchiectasis, 446 interstitial, 666 tubal, 652 Giant cells, 139 embolus, 352 in infective granulomas, 140 Galactocele, 290, 670 Giant-celled myeloma, 237, 689 sarcoma, 237, 689 Giantism, 61, 678 Galactophoritis purulenta, 667 Gall-bladder, 591 abnormalities of, 591 of breast, 668 absence of, 591 Gin-drinker's liver, 575 carcinoma of, 592, 593 granulomas of, 592 Gingivitis, 523 Gland-celled carcinoma, 272 hemorrhages of, 591 Gland-eysts of brain, 492 inflammation of, 591 Glanders of kidney, 619 ædema of, 591 of larynx, 443 sarcoma, 593 of lungs, 465

2

662

509 664

368

465 391

13

2

624

167 ation, 131

system, 482 old gland, 425

Clandon t	
Glanders of muscles, 675	Granulomas, infective, of gall-bladd
of nose, 436	of duct, 592
of skin, 702 of spleen, 418	of iris, 512
of stomach, 536	of pancreas, 595
Glands of Bartholm and of an	of peripheral nerves, 508
Glands of Bartholin, cysts of, 642 Cowper's, 636	of skin, 702
hypertrophy of comments to occ	of spinal cord, 498, 499
hypertrophy of, congenital, 263 regeneration of, 196	of testes, 638
salivary, 528	of vulva 641
Glandular endometritis, 648	Gravei, bile, 319
hypertruphy concentral occ	in ureters, 623
hypertrophy, congenital, 263 Glaucoma, 516	urinary, 317
Gleet, 628	Graves' disease, 424
Glia, 473	Gravidic neuroretinitis, 514
Glioma, 246	1 rewing-point theory, 64
of brain, 491	THOWING DOINES, branching of RE
of peripheral nerves, 509	virowin, 34
of retina, 515	enzyme action and, 30
of spinal cord, 501	runction and, relationship bety
Gliomatosis, 246, 491	•90
Gliosarcoma, 257, 492	habit of, 285
Gliosis, 246, 491	limits of, 36
Cillsson's capsule, inflammation of the	relation to cell activities, 35
(100)H1, 24	Cruanase, 107
Globular thrombus, 349	Guanin, 27, 107
Globulins, 25	calculi, 318
serum, 25	Guinea-worm in skin, 703
Glossina morsitans, 96	Gumma, 138
palpalis, 96	of bone, 684, 685
Glossitis, 523	of brain, 489
Glottis, ædema of, 441	of iris, 512
Gluge's corpuscles, 489	of lungs, 465
Cilycogenic activity of liver colle 21	of mouth, 525
Chycogenous infiltration, 306	of muscles, 675
Chycolytic enzymes of bacteria &4	of myocardium, 388
Chycoproteins, 25, 34	of pia-arachnoid, 506
Cilycosuria, pancreas in 504	of skin, 701
Crottre, diffuse parenchymatons 494	of spinal cord, 496, 500
exobituatinic, 101	Gynecomastia, 666
thyroid, 291	
Gonorrhea, predisposition toward, 115	107
rodorracear infection of Fallobian tubes	H
UiFE .	Навіт, 36
ophthalmia, 61	of growth, 285
urethritis, 628	Hair, 708
Gout, 107, 677, 694	regeneration of, 195
faulty metabolism and, 107	Hairiness, 695
predisposition toward, 115	Hairy tongue, 312
tophi in, 694	Holisteresis, 685
Grafting, 199. See also Transplantation.	Halteridium, 95
**************************************	Hanot's cirrhosis, 579, 580
degeneration, 123	Haptines, 174
kidney, small, 614, 615	Haptophore, 157
pharyngitis, 439	Hard chancre, 630
Granulation, "exuberant," 138	Harelip, 73, 522
Granules, Alternation	Hay fever, 117, 435
Granules, Altmann's, 301	Healing of neoplasms, 223
of nucleus, 22	ulcers, 700
Secretory, 22	Heart, 371
Granulomas, infective, 138	arrhythmia of, 379
of conjunctiva, 511	auricles of, 371
of cornea, 512	auriculoventricular valves of, 373
of ear, 518	block, 378

zall-bladder, 592 ves, 508 98, 499 of, 66

ship between,

es, 35

Heart, diastole of, 375 endocardium of, 393. See Endocardium. fibrillation of, 380 interauricular septum of, double origin of, 385 intraventricular septum of, defects of, 386 muscle, disease of, alteration in distribution of blood and, 336 myocardium of. See Myocardium. nervous mechanism of, 377 pericardium of, 380. Pericardium. poisons acting on, 82 rupture of, 391 semilunar cusps of, rupture of, 399 valves of, 376 septum of, accessory imperfect, 386 deviation of, 386 systole of, 375 "thrush-breast," 390 valves of, abnormalities of, 393 fibrosis of, 398 vegetations in, 349 ventricles of, 373 Heat discharge, 148 production, 148 regulation, 148 stroke, 78 Hemachromatosis of liver, 579 Hemangio-endothelioma, 277, 281 of bones, 689 of capillaries, 410 of liver, 589 of pia-arachnoid, 506 Hemangiomas, 278 blastomatous, true, 280 of capillaries, 410 of intestines, 560 Hemangiosarcoma, 414 Hematemesis, 354 Hematidrosis, 354 Hematin, 25, 34 lematoblasts, 194 Hematocele, 354, 661 Hematogenic pneumonia, 451 tuberculosis, 464 Hematogenous hyaline degeneration, 311 Hematohyaline degeneration, 311 Hematoidin, 356 pigmentation due to, 322 Hematoma, 354 ante-uterine, 661 auris, 517 of endocardium, 393 intraligamentous, 661 of muscles, 674 post-uterine, 661 of vulva, 641 Hematometra, 646 Hematopericardium, 354, 382 Hematoporphyrin, pigmentation due to,

Hematosalpinx, 653 also Hematosporidia, 97 Hematothorax, 354, 466 Hematozoön malariæ, 97 Hematuria, 354, 603 Hemicephaly, 72 Hemochromatosis, 322, 418, 579, 703 Hemoclastics, 81 Hemoconia, 366 Hemofuchsin in liver, 322, 586 Hemoglobin, composition of. 24, 25 imbibition, 322, 356 in endocardium, 393 pigmentation due to, 321, 322 variations in, 359 Hemoglobinuria, 322, 604 Hemohepatogenous jaundice, 324 Hemolymph nodes, 414 Hemolysis, 164, 359 Hemolytic splenomegaly, 241, 579 Hemolytics, 81 Hemophilia, 47, 356 Hemoptysis, 354 Hemorrhage, 354 cerebral, 498 effects of, 355 in lung, 448 per diapedesin, 339, 354 per rhexin, 339, 354 retinal, 510 in typhoid fever, 553 Hemorrhagic cysts, 287, 293, 356 of brain, 492 of mammary gland, 667 encephalitis, 488 endometritis, 647 erosions of stomach, 534 infarct, 344 of intestines, 547 inflammation, 134 mole, 212 nephritis, 612 otitis media, 518 pancreatitis, 595 peritonitis, 563 pleurisy, 469 retinitis, 514 septicemia, 91 Hemorrhoid, 278, 547 Hemosiderin, 356 in liver, 586 pigmentation due to, 322 Hepar lobatum, 583 Hepatitis, 573 acute, 573 suppurative, 574 Hepatization of lung, 452 Hepatolysin, 163 Heredity, 46 variation and, 47 Hermaphroditism, 74 Hernia, 568 abdominal, 569 epigastric, 569

of, 373

Hernia, diaphragmatic, 569 Hyaline deposit, 306 external, 568 hemate genous, 311 femoral, 569 infiltration of capillaries, 410 incarceration of, 568 mononuclear cell, 131, 132 inguinal, 568 thrombus, 347 direct, 569 Hyalo-enchondroma, 234 incomplete, 569 Hyaloserositis of liver, 581 oblique, 568 in peritonitis, 565 internal, 568, 569 in pleurisy, 469 Hydatid cysts, 295 obturator, 569 perineal, 569 of liver, 590 reducible, 568 echinococcus, 294 sciatic, 569 of Morgagni, 289, 653 scrotal, 569 mole, 212 umbilical, 72, 569, 665 Hydatidiform mole of placenta, 60% vaginal, 569 Hydramnios, 61, 665 Herpes, 698 Hydremia, 335, 357 of cornea, 512 of blood plasma, 357 facialis, 698 plethora, 335 labialis, 523 Hylic tissues, 225 preputialis, 690 Hydrocele, 366, 636 progenitalis, 630 cervical, 281 encysted, 289 of skin, 698 zoster, 122, 370, 698 of fourth ventricle, 292 Heterochthonous blastomas, 223 scrotal, 291 Heterolysin, 163 of tunica vaginalis testis, 636 Heterolysis, 106 Hydrocephalus, 61, 292, 366, 486, 495 Heteroophal twins, 62 Hydrolysis, enzyme action and, 32 Heteroplasia, 203 Hydrometra, 291, 646 Heteroplastic osteoma, 235 Hydromyelia, 495 transplantation, 199 Hydronephrosis, 77, 293 from kinks in ureters, 623 Heterotopia, 203, 486 Heterotopic hypernephromas, 277 Hydropericardium, 366, 381 Hip, congenital dislocation of, 690, 691 "Hip-joint disease," 684, o93 Hydropic degeneration, 306 Hydropneumothorax, 467 Hirschsprung's disease, 544, 562 Hydrops cystidis felleæ, 592 Hirsuties, 695 ex vacuo, 299, 304, 371 His, bundle of, 377 vesica fellea, 290 Histolysis, normal, 296 Hydrosalpinx, 290, 654 Hydrothorax, 339, 366, 370, 466 Hobnail liver, 575 Hodgkin's disease, 239, 413 chylous, 467 Hog-back kidney, 613 Hygroma, 292 Homoplastic esteoma, 235 of bursæ, 678 colli, 292, 411 Homotropism, 201 Hormones, 100 cystic, 281 Horns, cutaneous, 259, 703, 705 of neck, 367 Horseshoe adrenals, 421 of orbit, 517 kidney, 608 of tendon sheath, 677 Hottentot apron, 640 Hylic neoplasms, 225, 226 Hourglass stomach, 533 tumors, typical, of origin, 243 mesothelia "Housemaid's knee," 678 Hutchinson's teeth, 57, 523 Hylomas, 226 Hyaline casts, 312 Hymen, 641 cells, 363 absent, 641 mononuclear, 132 imperforate, 641 change in myocardium, 391 Hypamnios, 61 in ovary, 656 degeneration, 123, 306, 309 Hyphomycetes of lungs, 465 pathogenic, 92 of arteries, 401 Hypisotonic solutions, osmosis and, 33 of capillaries, 410 Hyperemia, 337 of kidney, 620 active, 337 of lymph nodes, 413 of adrenals, 422 of prostate, 634 of bladder, 625 of thyroid gland, 424 of bone marrow, 419

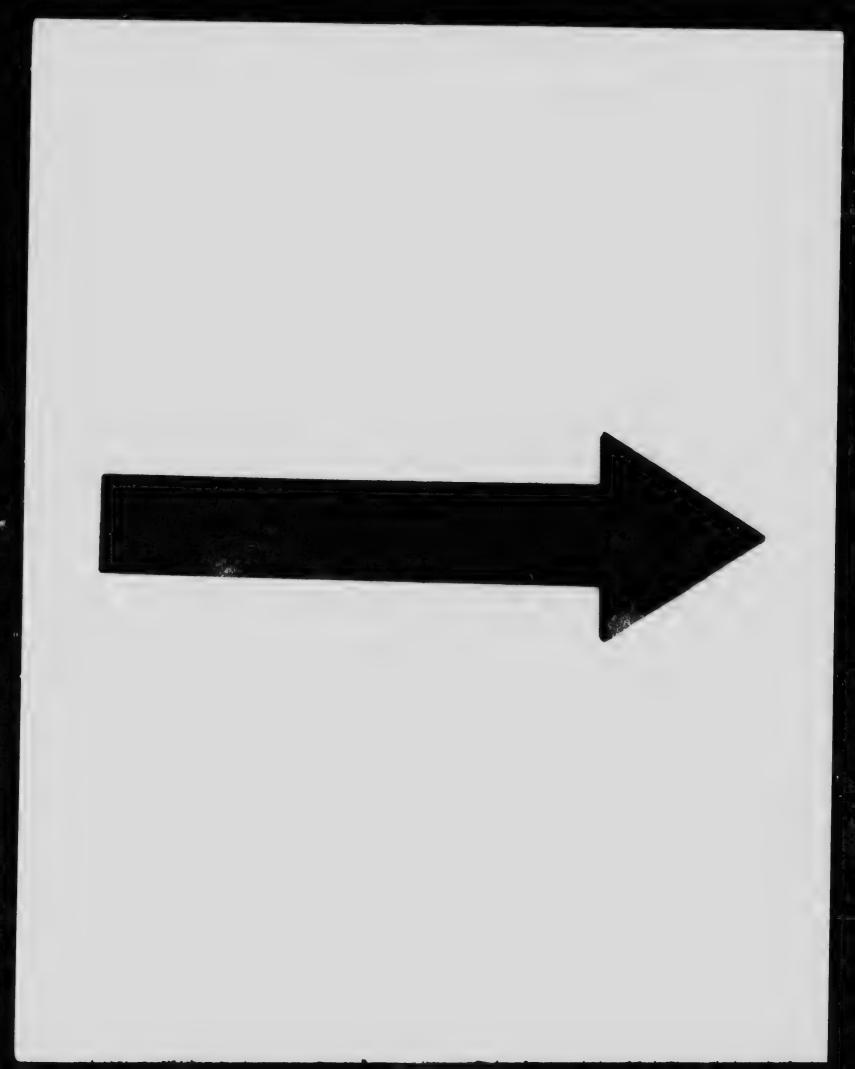
Hyperemia of bones, 679 of brain, 486 ies, 410 capillary, 338 132 of choroid, 510 collateral, 337 of heart, 391 of conjunctiva, 509 ·limet. 337 irritative, 188 ... Fallopian tubes, 653 of kidney, 620 of tris, 510. of liver, 589 of kidney, 609 of intestines, 546 of larynx, 441 of liver, 570 of lungs, 447 enta, 60% of lymph nodes, 412 simulated, 189 of mouth, 523 of muscles, 673 neuroparalytic, 338 of uterus, 650 neurotonic, 338 of nose, 434 of pancreas, 595 Hypoblast, 223 of peritoneum, 562 of pharynx, 437 of pia-arachnoid, 504 of placenta, 664 is, 636 of pleurar, 466 3, 486, 495 of prostate, 633 of arteries, 400 and, 32 of retina, 510 of larynx, 440 of skin, 696 of spleen, 415 of stomach, 533 of ovaries, 655 623 of tonsils, 437 of uterus, 646 of testis, 637 venous, 338 Hyperesthesia, 479 of uterus, 643 Hyperinosis, 348, 358 Hyperisotonic solutions, osmosis and, 33 Hyperkeratosis, 259, 312 Hypopyon, 512 Hypernephromas, 276, 277 466 of adrenals, 423 of brain, 492 of kidney, 621 of liver, 589 Hyperostoses, dental, 527 Hyperplasia, 186 Hysterocele, 644 of adrenals, 422 of bone marrow, 419 of bones, 236, 688 of clitoris, 640 mesothelial irritative, 263 of lymph nodes, 413 Icing liver, 565, 581 of parathyroids, 426 of spleen, 418 Idiosyncrasy, 117 of testes, 639 of thymus, 472 Immune body, 164 Hyperthyroidism, 424 serum, 164 Immunity, 152 Hypertonus, 483 Hypertrichosis, 62, 695, 708 absolute, 152 is and, 33 Hypertrophic cirrhosis, 579 rhinitis, 435 Hypertrophy, 38, 186 acromegaly and, 189

adaptive 137

of arteries, 409

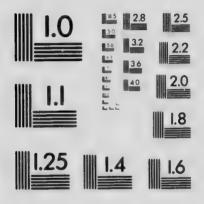
Hypertrophy of bladder, 626 compensatory, 188 of testes, 639 congenital glandular, 263 of intestines, 560 of muscles, 676 of myocardium, 385, 391 nutritional, 188 physiological, 187 of prostate, 634 sympathetic, 189 of uterine ligaments, 662 vicarious, 188 Hypinosis, 347, 358 Hypoblastic neoplasms, 225, 226 Hypogenesis, polar, 70, 71 Hypophysis cerebri. See Pituitary body. Hypoplasia, 70, 298 of adrenals, 421 of mammary gland, 666 of myocardium, 385 of pancreas, 594 of thyroid gland, 424 Hypoplastic penis, 630 unilateral, prostate, 633 Hypospadias, 57, 628 Hypostatic congestion of lungs, 447 pneumonia, 452, 457 Hypothyroidism, 424 Hypoxanthin, 27, 107 Hysterical paralysis, 483

ICHTHYOSIS, 312, 695 Icterus. See Jaundice. Imbibition, hemoglobin, 322 acquired, 115, 116 against abrin, 154, 155 albuminoid vegetable poisons, 154 enzymes, 155 phytotoxin, 154



MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)





APPLIED IMAGE Inc

1653 East Main 1 treet Rochester, New York 14609 USA (716) 482 - 0300 - Phone

(716) 288 5989 Fax

730 INDEX

Immunity against ricin, 154, 155	Infections, acute, 146
robin, 154, 155	chronic, 146
substances of known constitu-	complications of, 144
tion, 153 of unknown constitution,	continued febrile, 149 course of, 143
155.	crisis in, 140
anaphylaxis and, 170	"cryptogenic," 89
Ehrlich's theory of, 157-160, 172	defervescence in, 144, 149
familial, 115	endemic, 143
non-specific, 152	enzoötic, 143
passive, 154	epidemic, 143
relative, 152	epizoötic, 143
side-chain theory of, 157-160, 172	exacerbation of, 146
theory of, 172	fastigium in, 144
Imperfect closure of anterior body sur-	febrile state in, 144
face, 72	fervescence in, 144, 149 fever in, continued, 144
of branchial clefts, 74	fulminating, 145
of dorsal groove, 71 of facial clefts, 73	grades of, 115
Imperforate hymen, 641	incubation period of, 144
Impetigo, 699	latent, 121, 146
Implantation, 199	localized, 145
cysts, 293, 707	lysis in, 149
Inactivated serum, 164	metastases in, 145
Incarceration of hernia, 568	modes of, 88
Inclusions, abdominal, 209	persisting, 146
dermoids of pia-arachnoid, 506	premonitory symptoms in, 14
fœtal, 208	prodromal symptoms in, 144
Incompetence of heart valves, 397	pyrogenetic, 149
Incomplete inguinal hernia, 569	remittent, 146
Incontinence of urine, 605	sequelæ of, 144
Incrustations, calcareous, 315	of spinal cord, 496
Incubation period of infection, 144	sporadic, 143
Individual inheritance, 48	stages of, 146 terminal, 121, 147
Indol, constipation and, 111	wound, 89
Indolent bubo, 631	Infectious albuminuria, 603
ulcers, 700 Induration, "brown," of lungs, 448	Infective granulomas, 138
in pneumonia, 458	thrombosis of dura mater, 50
cyanotic, of kidney, 609	Infiltrations, 300
of lungs, 448	of arteries, 401
mediastinopericarditi:, 384	of capillaries, 410
Indurative pneumonia, secondary, 457	"fatty," 302
Inertia, physiological, 36	glycogenous, 306
Infantile scurvy, 688	lipoid, 305
Infarct, 328, 341, 343	of liver, 584
of adrenals, 422	of lymph nodes, 413
anemic, 344	of myocardium, 388
of bones, 679	of pancreas, 597
formation of, 343, 346	of spieen, 418 Inflammation, 118
hemorrhagic, 344 of intestines, 547	of adrenals, 422
of liver, 572	Bacillus typhosus and, 12i
in lungs, 448	of bladder, 625
of muscles, 674	blood cells in, 128
necrosis and, 328	of bone marrow, 419
of placenta, 664	of bones, 680
red, 344	of brain, 488
results of, 345	of bronchi, 444
uric acid, 317	of bursæ, 678
white, 344	causes of, 120
of liver, 572	catarrhal, 133
Infarction, 343	cell proliferation and, 119
Infections, 59, 85, 143.	chemiotaxis and, 119

INI	DEX 731
Inflammation of choroid, 513	Inflammation of spinal cord, 495
chronic, 135	of spleen, 417
of ciliary body, 512	Staphylococcus pyogenes and, 121
of conjunctiva, 510	of stomach, 535
of cornea, 511	of teeth, 526, 527
of Cowper's glands, 636	of tendon sheaths, 676
diffuse, 141	of tendons, 676
of drum membrane, 518	of testes, 638
of dura mater, 502	of thyroid giand, 424
of ear, 518	of tonsils, 437
endothelium of bloodvessels and, 127	of tunion variable testic 696
eosmophiles in, 129	of tunica vaginalis testis, 636 ulcerative, 134
exudate in, 134	of ureters, 623
of eye, 510	of urethra, 628
of Fallopian tubes, 653	
fibrinopurulent, 134	of uterine ligaments, 661
fibrinous, 134	of uterus, 647
fibrosis and, 142	of vagina, 642
fixed tissues and, 131	of vas deferens, 640
of gall-bladder, 591	in vascular area, 123
	of vulva, 641
-duct, 591 hemorrhagic, 134	of veins, 410
	wandering cells and, 119
of intestines, 548	Inflammatory fibrosis, 142
of iris, 512	œdema, 370, 447
of joints, 691 of kidney, 609	tumors, 207
	Infusoria, ciliate, 97
of larynx, 441 of liver, 575	Ingrowing toe-na l, 708
	Inguinal hernia, 568
of lungs, 450	Inhalation pneumonia, 456
of lymph nodes, 412 of lymphatic vesseis, 411	Inhibitive poisons acting on muscular
lymphocytes in, 128	system, 81
	Inheritance, 46. See also Heredity.
of mammary gland, 60° of mediastinum, 470	of abnormalities from previous gen-
membrane in, 134	erations, 57
of middle ear, 518, 520	of acquired characters, 53
of month, 523	"antispecific" characters and, 57
mucopurulent, 134	atavistic, 48, 50 blended, 48
of mucous surface, 133	cumulative, 50
of muscles, 674	familial, 47
of nails, 708	forms of, 47
necrotic, 134	of functional diseases, 58
of non-vascular area, 134	of hypospadias, 57
of nose, 435	individual, 48
of cesophagus, 531	Mendel's law of, 48
of optic nerve, 517	normal, 51
of orbit, 517	non-, 51
of ovary, 655	"paraspecific" qualities and, 57
of pancreas, 595	parental, 48
of penis, 630	particulate, 48
of peripheral nerves, 507	of polydactylism, 57
of peritoneum, 563	progressive, 51
of pharynx, 437	racial, 17
phlegmonous, 134	retrogressive, 51
of pia-arachnoid, 504	reversionary, 50, 51
of placenta, 664	theory of, 51
of pleuræ, 467	Inherited disease, 55
polynuclear leukocytes in, 128	pathological states, 56
purulent, 134	predisposition, 115
of retina, 513	Iniencephaly, 72
serofibrinous, 134	Inoculation, cells of tumors and, 287
seropurulent, 134	Insecta, 98, 100
of skin, 696	Insects, transmission of bacteria by, 90
of spermatic cord, 640	of sporozoa by, 97

9

4

in, 144 , 144

er, 501

12 i

119

Inspissation in gangrene, 330	Intoxication due to non-climinated prod-
uratic, in infancy, 317	ucts of katabolism, 104
Intention tremor, 484	to resorption of excretions, 105
Interauricular septum of hear' double	endogenous, 79, 100
origin of, 385	exogenous, 79, 84
Intercurrent relapse, 146	gastro-intestinal, 111
Intermediate body, 164	internal secretory, 79
Intermittent fever, 149	intra-uterine, as cause of disease, 59
Internal secretions, 100, 216	metabolic, 80
Interstitial emphysema, 450	non-parasitic, 79, 80
endometritis, 648	parasitic, 79, 84
fibrosis of lungs, 465	sapremic, 145
myocarditis, 387	saprophytic, 79
nephritis, 606, 614, 616	Intracanalicular fibro-adenoma of mam-
ædema, 366	mary gland, 670
	Intracellular enzymes, 28
Intertrigo, 699 Interventricular septum of heart, defects	fat accumulations, 302
	Intracystic papillomas, 261
of, 386	Intraligamentous hematoma, 661
Intestinal bacteria, 85	
tract, entrance of bacteria through,	myoma of uterus, 650
90	Intramural myoma of uterus, 650
secretions of, 103	Intra-uterine causes of disease, 58
Intestines, abnormalities of, 544	Intussusception, 545
atresia of, 544	Invagination of intestines, 545, 546
anemia of, 546	Inversion of uterus, 645
carcinoma of, 560	Involucrum of bone, 680
cysts of, 544	Involution cysts of mammary gland, 670
dilatation of, 545	Ionization, water and, 32
diseases related to secretions of, 103	Iodothyrin, 100
diverticula of, 545	Iridocyclitis, 512
fibroma of, 560	Iris, absence of, 509
hemangioma of, 560	gumma of, 512
hemo: rhage of, 547	hyperemia of, 510
occult, 547	infective granuloma of, 512
hemorrhagic infarcts of, 547	inflammation of, 512
hyperemia of, 546	pigment of, absence of, 509
	sarcoma of, 515
hypertrophy of, 560	syphilis of, 512
inflammation of, 548	tubercle of, 512
intussusception of, 545	tumors of, 515
gangrenous, 546	Irritation, definition of, 118
invagination of, 545	
large, 541	grades of, 122
lipoma of, 560	local reaction to, 118
lymphangioma of, 560	Irritative hypertrophy, 188 poisons acting on muscular system.
lymphosarcoma of, 561	
myoma of, 560	81
papilloma of, 560	Ischemia, 335
poisons acting on, 82	Isolysin, 163
sarcoma of, 561	Isoplastic transplantation, 199, 201
small, 541	
stenosis of, 544	_
strangulation of, 545	3
syphilis of, 555	
tuberculosis of, 553–555	Jacksonian convulsions, 482
tumors of, 560	Janiceps, 68
typhoid fever and, 549	Jaundice, 343, 703
ulcer of, 548	catarrhal, 323, 591
varices of, 547	hemohepatogeneus, 324
volvulus of, 545	obstructive, 105, 323
Intoxication, 59, 79, 145	skin in, 703
	Jeiunum, 541
bacterial, 85 distinction of from infection,	
	abnormalities of, 690
S5	ankylosis of, 691
disintegrative, 80, 105	tiling tools on

ted prod-104 ions, 105

isease, 59

of mam-

50 58 546

51

gland, 670

ır system,

201

Joints, atrophy of, 694
caries of, 693
"Charcot's," 694
corpora oryzoidea of, 694
foreign bodies in, 694
hemorrhage of, 691
inflammation of, 691
lipoma arborescens of, 695
metaplasia of, 695
ochronosis of, 694
osteo-arthritis of, 691
sarcoma of, 695
subluxation of, 691
syphilis of, 693
tuberculosis of, 693
tumors of, 695

ĸ

Kala azar, Le'shman-Donovan bodies and, 95 Karvokinetic cell division, 138 Karyolysis, 23 Karyorrhexis, 23 Katabiosis, 35 Katabiotic activities of cell, 35 Katabolism, effects of products of, 104 non-eliminated products of, intoxications due to, 104 Katadidymus, 67 Katalysis, action of enzymes by, 28 Kataplasia, 299 Kathions, 32 Keloid of skin, 705 Kephalin, 27 Keratin, 312 Keratinization in carcinoma, 270 pathological, 312 Keratitis, 511 parenchymatous, diffuse, 511 phlyctenular, 512 suppurative, 512 Keratohyaline, 312 Keratosis of penis, 632 Kidney, 608 abnormalities of, 608 absence of, 608 actinomycosis of, 619 adenoma of, 621 amyloid of, 620 anemia of, 608 angioma of, 621 anomalies in shape of, 608 atrophy of, 617 bacteria in, 88 carcinoma of, 621 cloudy swelling of, 620 congenital cystic, 289 cysts of, 622 degeneration of, 620 embolism of, 609 fibromas of, 621 fœtal lobulation of, 608

Kidney, glanders of, 619 granular, small, 614, 615 hog-back, 613 horse-shoe, 608 hyperemia, 609 hypernephroma of, 621 hypertrophy of, 620 induration of, cyanotic, 609 inflammation of, 609 large mottled, 612 red, 612 white, 612 leprosy of, 619 lipomas of, 621 mobility of, 608 myomas of, 621 myxemas of, 621 nerve supply of, 600 pelvis, disturbances of, 622 pigments in, 620 poisons acting on, 84 regeneration of, 191, 196 sarcoma of, 621 "surgical," 617 syphilis of, 619 telangiectasis of, 621 teratoblastoma of, 621 thrombosis of, 609 tuberculosis of; 618 tumors of, 275, 621 unilateral, 608 uric acid in, 620 vascular supply of, 600 Kink of ureter, 623 Knee, "white swelling" of, 684, 693 Koplik's sign, 523 Kraurosis vulvæ, 641 Kupffer's star cells, 586 Kyphosis, 683

ĸ.

Labia, 640 abnormalities of, 640 ædema of, 641 Labor, premature, causes of, 60 Labyrinthitis, 519 Lacrimal concrements, 315 Lænnec's cirrhosis of liver, 575 Lacing-lobe in liver, 584 "Laking" of blood, 360 Laryngitis, 440 acute, 441 catarrhal, 441 chronic, 442 membranous, 441 phlegmonous, 442 syphilitic, 443 tuberculous, 442 , Larynx, 428, 440 abnormalities of, 440 absence of, 440 actinomycosis of, 443

Larynx, adenoma of, 443	Leukocytes, granular, 362
alteration in size and shape of, 444	neutrophile, 362
anemia of, 441	polymorphonuclear, 362
atresia of, 440, 444	polynuclear, 362 in inflammation, 128
atrophy of, 443	regeneration of, 194
carcinoma of, 443	Leukocytosis, 364
cysts of, 443 enchondroma of, 443	alimentary, 364
fibroma of, 443	polynuclear, 364
fissured, 440	terminal, 364
fistula of, 440	Leukoderma, 695, 703
glanders of, 443	Leukolysin, 163
hypoplasia of, 440	Leukolytics, 81
inflammation of, 441	Leukopathia, 708
hyperemia of, 441	Leukoplakia, 312, 524
leprosy of, 443	of nails, 708
lipoma of, 443	of œsophagus, 531
lumen of, obstruction of, 444	Leukoproteases, 106
ly mphangioma of, 443	Lichen, 699
myxoma of, 443	scrofulosum, 699
papilloma of, 443	Liebermeister's grooves of liver, 570, 58
rhinoscleroma of, 443	Life-cycles in sporozoa, 96
sarcoma of, 444	Ligaments, uterine, 661
tumors of, 443	Light as cause of disease, 77
Latent infection, 121, 146	Lineæ albicantes, 703
Lateral sclerosis, amyotrophic, 499	Linin, 18
family type of, 499	Lip, median cleft of, 522
Lathyrism, 501	Lipases, 34
"Laudable pus," 138	Lipemia, 358
Lead neuritis, 508	of blood plasma, 358
poisoning, blue line in, 325	Lipochondroma of peritoneum, 567
peripheral nerves and, 508	pigmentation due to, 324
pigmentation and, 325	Lipoid degeneration, 305
Lecithin, 27, 34	infiltration, 305
Leiomyoma, 241	Lipoids, 24, 26
of vagina, 643 Leishman-Donovan bodies, 95	Lipolytic ferment, 34
Lens, 515	Lipoma, 233
dislocation of, 509	arborescens of joints, 695
opacity of, 509, 515	of bronchi, 446
Lepidic tumors, 226, 257	of conjunctiva, 515
Lepidomas, 226, 257	of ear, 521
transitional, 274	of intestines, 560
Lepra, 701, 702	of kidney, 621
Leprosy, 508	of larynx, 443
of bone, 685	of lungs, 465
of brain, 490	of mouth, 525, 526
of conjunctiva, 511	myxomatodes, 232, 233
of kidney, 619	of peritoneum, 567
of larynx, 443	of œsophagus, 531
of nose, 436	of penis, 633
of peripheral nerves, 508	of peripheral nerves, 509
of pleura, 407	of peritoneum, 567
of skin, 701	of pia-arachnoid, 506
of spleen, 418	of pleura, 470
Leprous nodules of mouth, 525	of stomach, 539
Leptomeningitis, 504	of tendon sheaths, 677 of uterine ligaments, 662
Leucorrhea, 643, 647	
Leukemia, 364	of uterus, 650 of vulva, 642
lymphatic, 240, 365, 414	Lipomatoid growth, 233
myelogenous, 238, 365	Lipomatosis, 62, 233, 705
Leukocytes, 362 action of, on bacteria, 87	Liposarcoma, 256
enzymes of, 106	Liquefaction of vitreous humor, 516
thay invoor, 100	and the state of t

Lithiasis, urinary, 316 Lithopædion, 314, 566, 665 Liver, 569, 570 abnormalities of, 570 accessory lobes of, 570 actinomycosis of, 583 adenoma of, 589 amœbic abscess of, 575 amyloid of, 585 anemia of, 570 Ascaris lumbricoides in, 590 atrophy of, 583 brown, 583, 586 red, acute, 574, 589 yellow, acute, 574 autolysis of, 106 calcification of, 586 carcinoma of, 589 cardiac depression in, 584 cavernoma of, 589 cell embolus, 352 glycogenic activity of, 31 cirrhosis of, 575 cloudy swelling of, 584 coccidiosis, 590 congestion of, passive, 570 cyanotic induration of, 572 cysts of, 590 degenerations of, 584 distomum in, 590 emboli of, 573 fibroma of, 589 focal necrosis of, 573 gin-drinker's, 575 Glisson's capsule of, inflammation of, hemangio-endothelioma of, 589 hemofuchsin in, 586 hemorrhage of, 573 hemosiderin in, 586 hobnail, 575 hya¹oserositis of, 581 hyperemia of, 570 hypernephroma of, 589 hypertrophy of, 589 ic ng, 581 in icterus, 586 infarct of, 572 infiltrations of, 584 inflammation of, 573, 575 lacing-lobe in, 584 Liebermeister's grooves of, 570, 584 in malaria, 586 mesothelioma of, 589 necrosis of, 586 nutmeg, 572 cedema of, 573 pigmental infiltration of, 585 poisons acting on, 83 pressure grooves in, 584 regeneration of, 190, 196, 589 sa oma of, 589 shape of, variations in, 570 syphilis of, 382

Liver, syphilis of, hepar lobatum in, 583 syphilomas of, 582 thrombosis of, 573 tuberculomas of, 382 tuberculosis of, miliary, 581 tumors of, 589 Lividity, 696 Lobar pneumonia, 452, 453 Localized infection, 145 Locomotor ataxia, 500 Looped umbilical cord, 665 Ludwig's angina, 528 Lungs, 447 abnormalities of, 447 actinomycosis of, 465 adenoma of, 465 apneumatosis of, 449 aspergillus of, 465 atelectasis of, 449 brown induration of, 448 carcinoma of, 465 carnified, 450 chondroma of, 465 chorio-epithelioma of, 466 cladothrix of, 465 cyanotic induration of, 448 disease of, due to disturbance of respiratory function, 449 distomum Westermanii of, 465 echinococcus of, 465 embolism in, 449 emphysema of, 450 endothelioma of, 465 fibroma of, 465 fibrosis of, interstitial, 465 glanders of, 465 gummas of, 465 hemorrhage into, 448 hyperemia of, 447 hyphomycetes of, 465 hypostatic congestion of, 447 infarct in, 448 inflammation of, 450 infrequent infections of, 465 lipoma of, 465 lymphosarcoma of, 465 cedema of, 447 osteoma of, 465 sarcoma of, 465 streptothrix of, 465 strongylus of, 465 syphilis of, 464 teratoma of, 465 tuberculosis of, 459 tumors of, 465 Lupus, 699, 701 of vulva, 641 Luxation of penis, 633 Lymph cysts, 292 of peritoneum, 568 nodes, 411 abnormalities of, 411 anthracotic, 412 atrophy of, 413

or, 516

er, 570, 584

n, 567

Lymph nodes, calcification of, 413	Macrodactyly, 61
	Macroglossia, 61, 281, 367, 411, 523
degeneration of, 413	Magrophages 363
embolism of, 412	Macrophages, 363
endothelioma of, 414	Madura foot, 702
entrance of bacteria and, 87, 91	Mal de Caderas, 95
hyperemia of, 412	de cott, 95
	Malacia, myeloplastic, 679
infiltrations of, 413	Malaria, anopheles reosquito and, 97
inflammation of, 412	
necrosis of, 413	parasite of, 97
ædema of, 412	types of, 97
syphilis of, 412	Male sexual organs, 630
thrombosis of, 412	Malformations, local, 71
tuberculosis of, 412	rectal, 74
	Malignancy, 215
tumors of, 414	Malignant adenoma of uterus, 651
varices of, 412	andonarditis 206
stream, metastasis and, 217	endocarditis, 396
Lymphadenitis, 412	neoplasms, 214
Lymphangiectasis, 280, 281, 367, 411	pustule, 700
of adrenals, 423	dnutrition, 59
	atrophy from, 297
of skin, 706	intra-uterine, as cause of disease,
Lymphangio-endothelioma, 277, 282	predisposition and, 116
of pia-arachnoid, 506	
of skin, 706	Maltase, 30
Lymphangioma, 280	Mammary gland, 666
cavernosum, 281	aberrant, 666
of intestines, 560	absence of, 666
0.1 0.440	accessory, 666
of larynx, 443	adenofibrosarcoma of, 670
of skin, 706	adenolipofibroma of, 670
Lymphangiosarcoma, 414	adenous of pure 670
Lymphatic leukemia, 240, 365, 414	adenoma of, pure, 670
obstruction, adden from, 369	adenomatosis of, 668
system, 366	adenomyxosarcoma of, 670
vessels, 371, 410	anomalies of, 666
abnormalities of 410	atrophy of, 667
abnormalities of, 410	cancer "en cuirasse" of, 670
inflammation of, 411	pareinome of 670
tumors of, 411	carcinoma of, 670
Lymphatism, 472	chondroma of, 672
Lymphocytes in inflammation, 128, 363	cystadenoma papilliform of,
Lymphocythemia, 240	cysts of, 666, 670
Lymphocytosis, 364	endothelioma of, 672
Lymphogonia proumonia 451	fibro-adenomas of, 669, 670
Lymphogenic pneumonia, 451	fibroma of, 672
tuberculosis, 464	fibromatosis of, 668
Lymphoid tissue, regeneration of, 193	hamannhaga into fiffi
Lymphoma, 238, 240	hemorrhage into, 666
Lymphomatoid conditions affecting th	e hypoplasia of, 666
spleen, 241	innammation of, our
Lymphomatosis, 238	melanoma of, 672
Lymphorrhagia, 411	osteoma of, 672
Lymphorrhea, 281	perithelioma of, 672
	sarcoma of, 672
Lymphosarcoma, 240, 414	
of intestines, 561	secretions of, 103
of lungs, 465	syphilis of, 667
of mediastinum, 472	transplantation of, 200
of pericardium, 385	tuberculosis of, 667
of mouth, 526	tumors of, 668
of thymus, 472	vicarious menstruation in, 6
Lymphosarcomatosis, 241, 414	Marantic thrombosis of dura mater.
	"Masked" iron, 27
Lysis, 146, 149	
	"Mast cells," 133, 363
	Mastitis, 667
M	chronic cystic, 670
	phlegmonosa, 667
Macrocephaly, 485	retention, 667
Macrocheilia, 281, 367, 411	Mastoiditis, 519
Matter delication, west, 1997, 111	

411, 523

to and, 97

rus, 651

of disease, 59

a of, 670 of, 670 , 670 668 na of, 670

se" of, 670 illiform of, 670

672 f, 669, 670

68 666 6

667 2 672

if, 200 67

uation in, 666 ura mater, 501 Measles, organism of, 93 skin in, 696, 697 Meckel's diverticulum, 544 Median cleft palate, 74 Mediastinitis, 470 Mediastinopericarditis, indurative, 384 Mediastinum, 470 dermoid cysts of, 471

inflammation of, 470 lymphosarcoma of 472 sarcoma of, 472 teratomas of, 471 tumors of, 471

Medullary carcinoma, 266, 273 of mammary gland, 672 of stomach, 539

Megacolon, 544, 562 Megaloblasts, 359 Megalocytes, 359 Megastoma, 96 Melanin, 34 Melanoma, 283 of mammary gland, 672

of skin, 706 Melanosis, 324

Melanotic pigmentation, 324 sarcoma of choroid, 515 of liver, 589 of vulva, 642

Melena, 354 Membrane, 134 diphtheritic, 438 Membranous colitis, 558 enteritis, 549 gastritis, 535 laryngitis, 441

pharyngitis, 438 Mendel's law, 48 Meninges, cranial and spinal, 501 ngismus, 488

agitis, 504 angocele, 494 revingo-encephalitis, 505 Menorrhagia, 354, 646

fibroid of uterus and, 242 Menstruation, vicarious, in mammary gland, 666

Mesenchymatous tissues, 226 Mesenchyme, 225 Mesaortitis, syphilitic, 408 Mesoblast, 223

Mesoblastic metaplasia, 204 Mesodidymus, 68

Mesothelial neoplasms, 225, 226 Mesotheliomas, 274, 277

of liver, 589 of testes, 639 lesothelium, 225

letabolic intoxications, 80 letabolism, faulty, gout and, 107 impaired, as a cause of disease, 107 part played by nucleus in, 22

letabolites, 33 letamorphosis, reversionary, 299 Metaphase of mitosis, 40 Metaplasia, 202

distinction of, from anaplasia, 203 epithelial, 204 of joints, 695

mesoblastic, 204 osseous, 205, 206

Metaplastic ossification, 236 Metastases of benign tumors, 220 by blood stream, 218

in bones, 689 in infection, 145 by lymph stream, 217 of neoplasms, 217 patency of, 221 retrograde, 219 sarcoma and, 250

tissue of predilection for, 220 by transplantation, 218

Metastasis, 215 by apposition, 219 Metastatic abscess of brain, 488 pneumonia, 452, 457

Metazoa as causes of disease, 98 excretion of toxins by, 99 Metazoan parasites, 98 Methemoglobinuria, 322 Methylamin, 110 Metritis, 647, 649, 663

Metrorrhagia, 354, 647 fibroid of uterus and, 242 Microcephaly, 485

Micrococcus ureæ, 625 Microcytes, 359 Micromelia, 678

Microörganisms, ultramicroscopic, 93

Microphthalmia, 509 Microthelia, 666 Miliaria, 698

Miliary aneurysm, 408, 488 pneumonia, 452 tuberculosis of liver, 581 "Milk spots" in pericarditis, 384 "Miner's elbow," 678

Mitosis, 39

anaphase of, 40 irregular, in cancer cells, 222 metaphase of, 40

prophase of, 39 telophase of, 40 Mitotic cell division, 38

Mitral valve, double orifice of, 393 Mixed tumors, 210

Mobility of kidney, 608 Modification, 46 acquired, 43, 44 Moist gangrene, 330 Mole, fleshy, 212

hemorrhagic, 212 hydatid, 212 pigmented, 278, 695 placental, 211, 664 putrefactive, 212 of skin, 705

Multilocular cysts of ovary, 656

Molecule, biophoric, 27 of cell, 24 of protein, 24 Molluscum contagiosum, 258, 703 fibrosum, 247 Mönckeberg's selerosis, 404 Monochorial twins, 62 Monolobular cirrhosis of liver, 580 Mononuclear hyaline cells, 132 Monoophal twins, 62 Monorchidism, 637 Monosymmetrical janiceps, 68 Monsters, double, 64 apicopolar fusion in, 68, 69 parasitic, 69 Monstrosities, 61 Morbus eceruleus, 386 Morgagni, hydatid of, 289 Mortification, 328, 343, 346 Morula, 223 Motility of kidney, 608 Motor system, 673 Mottled kidney, large, 612 Moulds, 92 Mouth, 522 abnormalities of, 522 actinomycosis of, 525 anemia of, 523 angioma of, 526 chancre of, 524 chondroma of, 526 epithelioma of, 525 fibroma of, 525, 526 gummas of, 525 hyperemia of, 523 inflammation of, 523 leprous nodules of, 525 lipoma of, 525, 526 lymphosarcoma of, 526 mucous plaques in, 524 myeloma of, giant-celled, 525 myxoma of, 525 poisons acting on, 82 syphilis of, 524 teratoma of, 525, 526 tuberculosis of, 525 tumors of, 525 Mucin, 25, 34 formation, 307 Mucinogen, 34 Mucoid degeneration, 306, 307 deposits, 307 polyps in ceophagus, 531 Mucopurulent aflammation, 134 Mucous colit., 558 cysts, 290 membrane, regeneration of, 195 transplantation of, 201 plaques, 524, 701 surface, inflammation of, 133 Mucus, bactericidal power of, 86 Mulberry calculi, 318 Multilobular liver, 576 Multilocular cysts of liver, 590

Multiple births, 64 neurofibroma, 509 sclerosis, 498, 499, 500, 501 Mummification, 330, 665 Mumps, 528 Munich beer heart, 336 Muscarin, 110 Muscles, 673 abnormal insertion of, 673 origin of, 673 size of, 673 absence of, 673 actinomycosis of, 675 anemia of, 673 angioma of, 676 atrophy of, 675 cloudy swelling of, 675 contractions of, 481 cysticercus of, 675 defect of, 673 degeneration of, 675 echinococcus of, 675 fibrillary twitching of, 484 fibroma of, 676 glanders of, 675 gumma of, 675 hematoma of, 674 hemorrhage of, 674 hyperemia of, 673 hypertrophy of, 676 infarct of, 674 inflammation of, 674 myxoma of, 676 parasites of, 675 petechiæ oi, 674 reduplication of, 673 regeneration of, 190, 196 rhabdomyosarcoma of, 676 sarcoma of, 676 spindles, 673 syphilis of, 675 tonus of, 481 trichiniasis of, 674 tuberculosis of, 674 tumers of, 676 Zenker's degeneration of, 676 Muscular atrophy, progressive, 499, 675 mechanism of respiration, 429 system, poisons acting on, 81 Mutation, 50 Mycosis of auditory meatus, 518 fungoides of skin, 706 Mycotic aneurysm, 408 Myelitis, 495, 498, 500 Myelocystocele, 494 Myelocytes, origin of leukocytes from Myelogenous leukemia, 238, 365 Myelomas, 236 giant-celled, 237 of bones, 689 of mouth, 525 multiplex, 237, 239, 420

Myclomas, multiplex, of bone marrow, Myxædema, thyroid extract and, 101 Myxo-enchondroma, 235 of bones, 689 Myxolipoma, 232 Myelomatoid, 238 Myxoma, 232 Myelomatosis, 237, 420 of bone marrow, 420 Myelomeningocele, 494 of bones, 689 Myeloplastic malacia, 679 of brain, 491 Myiasis, 702 of bronchi, 446 Myocarditis, 388 of bursæ, 678 acute, 388 of cornea, 515 interstitial, 387 of kidney, 621 Myocardium, 385 of larynx, 443 abnormalities of, 385 of mouth, 525 atrophy of, 388 of muscles, 676 calcification of, 391 of myocardium, 393 cloudy swelling of, 388 of skin, 705 degeneration of, 389, 390 of umbilical cord, 665 dilatation of, 392 Myxomyoma of uterus, 650 displacements of, 385 Myxosarcoma, 256 duplication of, 385 of bones, 689 ectopia of, 385 fibroma of, 393 fibrosis of, 387, 391 of peripheral nerves, 509 fragmentation of, 391 gumma of, 388 hyaline change in, 391 Nævi, 705 hypertrophy of, 385, 391 blue, 278 hypoplasia of, 385 pigmented, 703 infiltration of, 388 of skin, 705 inflammation of, 388 telangiectatic, 278 lipoma of, 393 of vulva, 641 Nails, 708 malnutrition of, 387 myxoma of, 393 sarcoma of, 393 abnormalities of, 708 favus of, 708 segmentation of, 391 hemorrhages of, 708 syphiloma of, 388 inflammation of, 708 transposition of, 385 ingrowing, 708 tuberculosis of, 388 leukopathia of, 708 ringworm of, 708 tumors of, 393 Myofibroma of ovary, 659 Nasal polyps, 436 Myoma, 241 Nasopharynx, 428 of bladder, 627 Necrobiosis, 326 of Fallopian tubes, 654 Necrosis, 326, 328 of intestines, 560 of adrenals, 422 of kidney, 621 of bone, 681 of esophagus, 531 coagulation, 328, 344 of orbit, 517 colliquative, 328 of skin, 705 focal, 328 of stomach, 539 of individual cells, 328 of uterine ligaments, 662 of liver, 573, 586 of uterus, 241-243, 650 of lymph nodes, 413 of vulva, 642 of pancreas, 595, 597 Myomalacia, 387 of peritoneum, 567 Myomatosis with "andular inclusion in putrefactive, 328 of skin, 700, 703 uterus, 651 Myopathy, 675 in typhoid fever, 550 Myositis, 674 Necrotic cysts, 287, 294 ossificans, 206, 674 of brain, 492 suppurative, 674 inflammation, 134 Myotomes, 225 ulcer of intestines, 548 Myringitis, 518 Needles in peritoneum, 566 Myxo-chondroma of bones, 689 Nemathelminthes, 98 Myxœdema, 100 Neoplasia, 207 hypertrophy and, 189 Neoplasms, 206

1

3

4

76

f, 676 ve, 499, 675 n, 429 n, 81

ocytes from,

365

518

Neoplasms of adrenals, 275, 422 anaplasia in, 285 anemia from, 216 of arteries, 409 atypical, 214 autonomous, 207 benign, 214 of bile ducts, 592 of bladder, 627 blood vascular, 278 of bone marrow, 236, 420 of bones, 688 of brain, 491 of breast, 668 of bronchi, 446 of burse, 678 of capillaries, 410 of carotid gland, 285 cells of, destruction of, 287 inoculation and, 287 radium and, 287 selenium and, 287 tellurium and, 287 x-rays and, 287 of choroid, 515 of conjunctiva, 515 of cord, 501 of cornea, 515 degenerative changes in, 222 distinction of, from cysts, 287 of doubtful relationship, 284 of dura mater, 503 of ear, 520 embryonic, 226 endothelial, 226 epiblastic, 225, 226 of eye, 515 of Famopian tubes, 654 of gall-bladder, 592 -duct, 592 healing of, 223 of heart, 393 hylic, 225, 226 atypical, 250 typical, 228 hypoblastic, 225, 249 inflammatory, 207 inflammatory confirmation of 266 of intestines, 550 of iris, 515 of iris, 515 of joints, C95 of kidney, 275, 621 of larynx, 443 lepidic, 226, 257 atypical, 264 typical, 257 of liver, 589 of lungs, 465 of lymph nodes, 414 of lymphatic vessels, 411 malignant, 214 of mammary gland, 668 of mediastinum, 471 mesenchymatous, 226

Neoplasms, mesothelial, 225, 226 metastases of, 215 mixed, 210 of mouth, 525 multicentric, 219 of muscles, 676 of myocardium, 393 of nerves, 509 of nose, 436 nuclear changes in, 222 of asophagus, 531 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 275, 656 of pancreas, 597 of pelvic structures, 662 of penis, 633 of pericardium, 385 of peritoneum, 567 of pia-arachnoid, 506 of placenta, 664 of pleura, 470 of prostate, 636 of puerperal uterus, 663 of retina, 515 retrogression of, 223 of salivary glands, 528 secondary, 215 of skin, 705 of spinal cord, 496, 498, 499, 500 of spleen, 418 of stomach, 538 stroma in, 221 of teeth, 527 of tendons, 677 terminology of, 207 of testis, 275, 639 theory of, 285 of thyroid gland, 425 transitional, 226 of tunica vaginalis testis, 637 typical, 214 undifferentiation in, 285 unicentric, 219 of ureters, 624 of urethra, 629 urogenital ducts, 275 of uterine ligaments, 662 of uterus, 650 of vagina, 643 of vulva, 641 Neoplastic fibrosis, 143 Nephritis, 606, 609 cryoscopy in, 606 hemorrhagic, 612 interstitial, acute, 616 chronic, 606, 614-616 parenchymatous, acute, 606, 61 chronic, 612 scarlatinal, 616 suppurative, 617 Nephrolithiasis, 623 Nephrolysin, 163 Nerve-cell body, 473 pathological changes in, 47

Nerve-cell, fatigue of, 114 N'gana, 95 Nipple, carcinoma of, 172 226 regeneration of, 198 Nissl bodies, 19, 473 Nerve mechanism of heart, 377 optic, 516 octurnal enuresis, 605 tissue, autolysis of, cholin and, 106 Node, auriculoventricular, 377 regeneration of, 198 sino-auricular, 377 Nerves, motor, focal symptoms in, 482 Nodose arteriosclerosis, 402 in treoplasms, 221 Nodule, 138 peripheral, 507 Noma, 524 regeneration of, after section, 199 Non-parasitic intoxications, 79, 80 Nervous causes of inflammation, 122 Non-protein constituents of cell, 31 diathesis, 58 Non-specific immunity, 152 mechanism of respiration, 429 Non-va ular area, inflammation system, 473 134 afferent, 474 Norm inheritance, 51 autonomic, 475 ım, 164 efferent, 475 Normanilante, 359 focal changes in results of, 482 Nose, 434 general disturbances of, 479 adenoma of, 436 local changes in, results of, 482 anomalies of, 434 carcinoma of, 436 poisons acting on, 80 pyrexia and 152 catarrh of, 435 sympathet: 75 endothelioma of, 436 tetanus toxii: and, 157 fibroma of, 436 glanders of, 436 Neurin, 110 Neurinoma, 247, 248 hemorrhage of, 434 of stomach, 539 hyperemin f, 434 Neurinomatosis, 247, 509, 705 inflammation of, 435 Neuritis, 507 leprosy of, 436 alcoholic, 507, 508 arsenic, 508 polyps of, 436 "saddle-back," 685 sarcoma of, 436 lead, 508 optic, 507, 517 syphilis of, 436 toxic forms of, 508 tuberculosis of, 436 Neuroblastomas, 244 tumors of, 436 Nuck, canal of, cysts of, 291 Neurocytoma, 244, 245, 422 Neurofibromas, multiple, 509 Nuclear changes in neoplasms, 222 Neurofibromatosis, 230 fluid, 18 Neuroglia, regeneration of, 198 Nuclease, 108 Neuromas, 244 Nucleic acid, of adrenals, 422 Nuclein, 25, 2, amputation, 198, 245, 509 bases, 25 "false," 509 Parivation of purin bases from, 107 of optic nerve, 517 Nucleinic acid, 27 Neurone, 20, 473 Nucle das. 18 connections between, 113, 114 Nucleus, 18 correlation of, 474 alterations in, 23 groups of, 474 lesions of, 478 chemistry of, 27 chromidia of, 22 depressive manifestations of, composition of, 27 484 cytoplasm and, interaction between. irritative manifestations of, 484 20, 21 upper motor, diseases of, 498 interrelation between, 21 Neuroparalytic hyperemia, 338 disintegration of, 23 Neuropathic atrophy of joints, 694 dominance of, 20, 21 of muscles, 675 granules of, 22 cedema, 370 histology of, 18 Neuroses, predisposition toward, 115 importance of, 20 Neuroretinitis, albuminuric, 513 karyolysis and karyorrhexis, 23 "masked" iron in, 27 gravidic, 514 Veurotonic anemia, 339 in metabolism, 22 hyperemia, 338 , hosphorus in, 27 Neutrophile leukocytes, 362 proteins of, 27 New growths, 214 relation to cell, 21

, 499, 500

is, 637

362

-616te, 606, 611

inges in, 476

Nucleus relation to metabolism, 22 Numerical hyperplasia, 186 Nutritional hypertrophy, 188

0

Oat-shape celled sarcoma, 254 Obesity, 108 Obligatory anaërobes, 84 Obliteration of gall duct, 591 Obstruction to air in respiration, 431 of ureters, 623 Obstructive cirrhosis of liver, 579 constipation, 542 jaundice, 105, 323 telangiectasis, 278 Obturator hernia, 569 Occlusion of arteries, 340 of bronchi, 446 of resophagus, 529 Occult hemorrhage of intestines, 547 Ochronosis of joints, 694 Odontoma, 236, 527 Œdema, 366, 696 agonal, 447 angioneurotic, 370 congestive, 369 of conjunctiva, 509 of gall-bladder, 591 duct, 591 of glottis, 441 inflammatory, 370 interstitial, 366 of labia, 641 of liver, 573 of lungs, 447 of lymph nodes, 412 from lymphatic obstruction, 369 neuropathic, 370 of pharynx, 437 of pia, 299 of pia-arachnoid, 504 of placenta, 664 pulmonary, 367 of scrotum, 640 of skin, 696 of tonsils, 437 toxic, 370 types of, 369 of vulva, 641 Œsophagitis, 531 Œsophagus, 529 carcinoma of, 531 diphtheria of, 531 diverticula of, 530 duplication of, 529 epithelioma of, 531 hemorrhage into, 531 inflammation of, 531 leukoplakia of, 531 lipomas of, 531 malformations of, 529

mucoid polyps in, 531

Œsophagus, myomas of, 531 occlusion of, 529 perforation of, 530 rupture of, 530 stenosis of, 529 syphilis of, 531 tuberculosis of, 531 Old age, 55 Olein, 33 Oligemia, 335 Oligohydramnio, 665 Oliguria, 602 Onychia, 708 Onychogryphosis, 708 Occyte, primary, 46 Occophoritis, 655 Opacity of lens, 509, 51 Ophthalmia, gonorrhœat. 61 sympathetic, 512 Opsonic index, 169 Opsonins, 168 phagocytosis and, 168 Optic disk, cupped, 516 nerve, 517 neuritis, 507, 517 Orbit, 517 abscess of, 517 angioma of, 517 carcinoma of, 517 cellulitis of, 517 hygroma of, 517 inflammation of, 517 myoma of, 517 osteoma of, 517 sarcoma of, 517 teratoma of, 517 Orchitis, 528, 638 Organism, normal defences of, 86 Organs, defects in, 70 Osmosis, 32 hyperisotonic solutions and, 33 hypisotonic solutions and, 33 Osseous metaplasia, 205, 206 Ossification, metaplastic, 236 Ossifying ecchondroses of bones, 689 Osteitis, 680 condensing, 682 deformans, 419, 682, 685, 686 rarefying, 682 Osteo-arthritis of joints, 691 Osteochondritis, 684 Osteochondrosarcoma, 256 Osteo-enchondroma, 234 Osteogenesis imperfecta, 679 Osteoid sarcoma, 256 Osteoma, 235 of brain, 491 of bronchi, 446 of conjunctiva, 515 of dura mater, 503 of ear, 521 of lungs, 465 of mammary gland, 672 of orbit, 517

Osteoma of pleura, 470 of skin, 705 Osteomalacia, 419, 685 Osteomatoid, 236 Osteomyelitis, 680, 681 chronic, 682 fibrosa, 686 tuberculosis and, 683 Osteoporosis of bones, 682, 685 Osteopsathyrosis, 679 Osteosarcoma, 256, 689 Otitis media, 518–520 acute, 519 hemorrhagic, 518 suppurative, 519 sclerosing, 520 Otosclerosis, 520 "Ovarian dermoid," 209 teratoma, 209 Ovariocele, 642 Ovary, 654 abnormalities of, 655 accessory, 655 adenofibroma of, 659 atrophy of, 656 carcinoma of, 659 cystadenoma of, 656 cystoma of, 656 cysts of, 656 degeneration of, cystic, 656 diseases related to secretion of, 102 elastoid changes in, 656 endothelioma of, 659, 660 fibroma of, 659 hyaline changes in, 656 hypoplasia of, 655 inflammation of, 655 myofibroma of, 659 perithelioma of, 659 psammocarcinoma of, 659 regeneration of, 196 sarcoma of, 659 secretions of, 102 syphilis of, 655 teratoma of, 660 transplantation of, 200 tuberculosis of, 655 tumors of, 275, 656 connective tissue, 659 Overgrowth, 186. See also Hypertrophy. Pancreatic concrements, 315 compensatory, 188 irritative, 188 simulated, 189 vicarious, 188 Overnutrition, fatty infiltration due to, 303 Overstrain, 111 distinction of, from overstress, 112 muscular fatigue and, 113

Overstress, 112

a cause of disease, 112

Overwork, atrophy from, 297

Ovula Nabothi. 290, 648 Ovum, "blighted," 58

86

d, 33

s, 689

686

33

Ovum, maturation of, 46 polar bodies of, 46 Oxidase, 107 Oxidation, diminished, 303 Ozena, 435

Pachydermatocele, 509 Pachydermia, 312, 411 laryngis verrucosa, 442 Pachymeningitis, 502 Paget's disease of bone, 686 of nipple, 672 Pain, 179 collapse and, 178 distribution of, segmental, 182 localization of, 183, 184 referred, 181 shock and, 178 Palmitin, 33 Palsies, birth, 61 Pancreas, 593 abnormalities of, 594 absence of, 594 acini of, accessory, 594 adenomas of, 597 amyloid of, 597 carcinoma of, 597 cystadenoma of, 597 cysts of, 598 duplication of, 594 fat necrosis of, 595, 597 fatty degeneration of, 597 infiltration of, 597 glycosuria and, 594 granulomas of, 595 hemorrhage of, 595 hyperemia of, 595 hypoplasia of, 594 inflammation of, 595 internal secretion of, 103 passive congestion of, 595 regeneration of, 196 sarcoma of, 598 self-digestion of, 596 tuberculosis of, 595 tumors of, 597 Pancreatitis, centrilobular, 595 chronic, 595 hemorrhagic, acute, 595 perilobular, 595 purulent, 595 sporadic, 595 Pannus, 511 Panophthalmitis, 512 Panoslitis, 680, 681 Papillary cystoma of ovary, 658 Papilloma, 257

of bladder, 261, 627

blastomatous, 260 of conjunctiva, 515

Papilloma of cornea, 515	Patent ductus Botalli, 386
of Fallopian tubes, 654	Pathogenic bacteria, 85
of intestines, 560	Pathological states, inherited, 56
intracystic, 261	Pediculosis, 702
of irritative origin, 257	Pellagra, 501
of larynx, 443	Pelvic mass, inflammatory, 661
soft, 260	peritonitis, productive, 662
	structures, 661
of ureters, 624 Papular syphilide of skin, 701	Pemphigus, 698
	Penis 630
Paralysis, 479	absent, 630
bulbar, 499 hysterical, 483	anomalies of, 630
lesions of neurones and, 479	carcinoma of, 633
	chancroid of, 631
Parametritis, 647, 661	cysts of, 633
Parametrum, 601	dermatitis of, 630
Paraphimosis, 630	double, 630
Paraplasm, 19 Paraplegia, congenital spastic, 498	clephantiasis of, 632
Darapiegia, congentiar spastic, 470	endothelioma of, 633
Parasites in bladder, 626	fibroma of, 633
"cancer," 19	fracture of, 633
of malaria, 97	hypoplestic, 630
metazoan, as causes of disease, 98	inflammation of, 630
of muscles, 675	injuries of, 633
of pleure, 470	keratosis of, 632
"sarcoma," 251	lipoma of, 633
of skin, 702	luxation of, 633
of ureters, 624	5 1 3 (24)4)
of uterus, 649	phimosed, 630 sarcoma of, 633
Parasitic causes of disease, 75, 84	soft chancre of, 631
cysts, 288, 295	sore, 652
of bones, 690	syphilis of, 630
of brain, 492	tuberculosis of, 632
of liver, 590	tumors of, 633
of peritoneum, 508	venereal wart of, 632
embolus, 353	Peptic ulcer of intestines, 548
intoxications, 79	of stomach, 536
monsters, 69	
"Paraspecifie" qualities, inheritance and,	Perforation of bronchi, 446
57	of intestine, 558
Parasyphilitic lesions, 57	of œsophagus, 530
Paratuberculous lesions, 57	in otitis media, 519
Parathyroids, 426	of stomach, 537
adenoma of, 426	in typhoid fever, 553
diseases related to, 101	of uterus, 646
hyperplasia of, 426	Perforative appendicitis, 557
secretion of, 101	Pernicious anemia, 360
Parenchymatous goitre, diffuse, 424	Periarteritis, chronic, 406
keratitis, diffuse, 511	of lung, 465
nephritis, 606, 611, 612	Peribronchitis, 465
Parental inheritance, 48	Pericanalicular fibro-adenema of m
Paresthesia, 479, 482	mary gland, 670
Parinaud's conjunctivitis, 511	Pericarditis, 382
Paronychia, 708	adhesions in, 383
Parotitis, epidemic, 528	chronie, 383
Parovarian cysts of uterine ligaments, 662	"milk spots" in, 384
Paroxysmal hemoglobinuria, 322	purulent, 383
Particulate inheritance, 48	recurrent, 383
Parturient causes of disease, 58	serofibrinous, 382, 383
disease, 55	
Parturition, pathological states acquired	serous, 383 syphilitic, 384
during, 61	Pericardium, 380
Passive congestion, 338	abnormalities of, 381
immunity, 154	adherent, 383
Patent ductus arteriosus, 386	auncient, orn

Peritoneum, passive congestion of, 562 Pericardium, aremia of, 382 pigmentation of, 567 atrophy of, a 34 eysticercus of, 385 sarcoma of, 567 d, 56 sponges in, 566 syphilis of, 566 echinococcus of, 35. inflammation of, 382 teratoma of, 567 lymphosarcoma of, 385 661 thrombosis of, 563 new growths of, 385 662 tuberculosis of, 565 petechial spots on, 381 Pericholecystitis, purulent, 592 Perichondritis, 518 sicca of, 566 tumors of, 567 Perichondrium, transplantation of, 201 worms in, 566 Peritonitis, 563 Perilobular pancreatitis, 595 Perilymphadenitis, 412 Perimetritis, 647, 649, 661, 662 chronic, 565 hemorrhagic, 563 hyaloserositis in, 565 Perimetrium, 601 local circumscribed, 563 Perineal hernia, 569 diffuse, 563 Perinephric abscess, 617 Periorchitis, 637 productive pelvic, 662 Periosteal regeneration of bone, 193 purulent, 563 serofibrinous, 563 Periostitis, 680 albuminosa, 682 serous, 563 universal, 563 of ear, 518 ossificans, 682 Peritonsillar abscess, 437 suppurative, 681 Pernicious anemia, 360 Persistent cloaca, 74 truncus arteriosus, 386 Periosteum, transplantation of, 201 Peripheral nerves, 507 degeneration of, 508 Petechiæ, 354, 674 fibromatosis of, 509 Pfeiffer's reaction, 166 gliomas of, 509 Phagedenic ulcers, 700 Phagocytosis, bacteria and, 124 infective granulomas of, 508 inflammation of, 507 opsonins and, 168 lead poisoning and, 508 Pharyngitis, 437 leprosy of, 508 lipomas of, 509 acute catarrhal, 437 atrophic, chronic, 439 myxosarcomas of, 509 chronic, 439 neuroma of, 509 granular, 439 regeneration of, 198 membranous, 438 rhabdomyoma of, 509 phlegmonous, 438 syphilis of, 508 Pharynx, 428, 436 abnormalities of, 437 tuberculosis of, 508 Perithelioma, 282 hyperemia of, 437 inflammation of, 437 of mammary gland, 672 of ovary, 659 of salivary glands, 528 cedema of, 437 Phimosis, 630 Peritoneum, 561 Phlebectasia laryngea, 441 Phlebectasis, 410 abnormal contents in, 566 abnormalities of, 562 Phlebitis, 410 Phleboliths, 315, 351 actinomycosis of, 566 anemia of, 562 angioma of, 567 of pelvic veins, 661 of prostatic veins, 633 ema of mambile in, 566 in uterine ligaments, 661 cystadenoma of, 567 Phlebosclerosis, 410 cysts of, 567 embolism of, 563 Phlegmon of skin, 700 Phlegmonous cystitis, 625 endothelioma of, 567 enteritis, 549 fibroma of, 567 gastritis, 535 gallstones in, 566 inflammation, 134 hemorrhages of, 562 laryngitis, 442 hyperemia of, 562 pharyngitis, 438 Phlyctenular keratitis, 512 inflammation of, 563

lipochondroma of, 567

lipoma of, 567

necrosis of, 567

needles in, 566

Phosphatic calculi, 318

Phosphorus in nucleus, 27

Phosphatides, 27

Phthisis, 462

Pflacenta, marce of, 604 memoric, acute, 463 pneumonic, acute, 463 physical causes of disease, 75, 77 Physiological albuminuria, 603 hypertrophy, 187 inertia, 36 Phytotoxi 3, 154 Pia-arachnoid, 504 a remia of, 504 cavernomas of, 506 cholesteatomas of, 506 dibromas of, 506 fibromas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 lipomas of, 50		71
pneumonic, acute, 463 Physicological albuminuria, 603 hypertrophy, 187 inertia, 36 Phytotoxii 5, 154 Pha-arachnoid, 504 a remia of, 504 cavernomas of, 506 cholesteatomas of, 506 endotheliomas of, 506 fibromas of, 506 fibromas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 inflammation of, 504 lipomas of, 506	Phthisis bulbi, 513	Placenta, infarct of, 664
Physical causes of disease, 75, 77 Physiological albumiuria, 603 hypertrophy, 187 inertia, 36 Phytotoxii s, 154 Pia-arachnoid, 504 a remis of, 504 cavernomas of, 506 eholesteatomas of, 506 eholesteatomas of, 506 emotrhings of, 506 gibromas of, 506 gimmas of, 506 gimmas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 lipomas of, 506 syphilis of, 506 diderived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 calcification of, 664 calcification of, 664 degeneration of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664		
Physiological albuminuria, 603 hypertrophy, 187 inertia, 36 Phytotoxii 5, 154 Pha-arachnoid, 504 a remia of, 504 cavernomas of, 506 cholesteatomas of, 506 endotheliomas of, 506 fibromas of, 506 fibromas of, 506 fibromas of, 506 demangio-endotheliomas of, 506 inflammation of, 504 lipomas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 inflammation of, 504 lipomas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 5		
hypertrophy, 187 inertia, 36 Phytotoxii 3, 154 Pia-arachnoid, 504 a remia of, 504 cavernomas of, 506 cholesteatomas of, 506 endotheliomas of, 506 infibromas of, 506 gummas of, 506 gummas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 inflammation of, 504 lipomas of, 506 lipomas		
inertia, 36 Phytotoxi 3, 154 Pia-arachnoid, 504 a remia of, 504 cavernomas of, 506 cholesteatomas of, 506 endotheliomas of, 506 gummas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 hymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 lymphangiomas of, 506 lymphangiomas of, 506 tuberculosis of, 604 lipomas of, 508 Pietot cattle disease, 506 Pietou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 enbolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 647 chemorrhagie into, 466 hyperemia of, 466 inflammation of, 477 libroma of, 470 contents in, -468 angioma of, 470 contents in, -468 angioma of, 470 contents in, -468 angioma of, 470 fibroma of, 470 liproma of, 470 syphilis of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 leprosy of, 470 liproma of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 leprosy of, 470 liproma of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 leprosy of, 470 liproma of, 470 syphilis of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 leprosy of, 470 liproma of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 syphilis of, 470 extended, and the planton, 486 hemorrhage of, 684 hemorrhage of, 684 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydational frame of the flat open of,		
Pia-arachnoid, 504 a remia of, 504 cavernomas of, 506 cholesteatomas of, 506 endotheliomas of, 506 endotheliomas of, 506 fibromas of, 506 gummas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 higher of, 504 hipperemia of, 504 lipomas of, 506 inflammation of, 504 lipomas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 gummas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 gummas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 lymphangios of, 506 syphilis of, 506 syphilis of, 506 syphilis of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 402 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 664 caleification of, 664 caleification of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hemorrhage, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664		tuberculosis of, 664
a nemia of, 504 cavernomas of, 506 cholesteatomas of, 506 endotheliomas of, 506 gibromas of, 508 gummas of, 508 gummas of, 508 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 inflammation of, 504 lipomas of, 508 lipomas of, 508 lipomas of, 506 difference of, 504 lipomas of, 506 synphilis of, 299, 504 passive congestion of, 504 sarcomas of, 506 synphilis of, 506 tumors of, 506 synphilis of, 506 tumors of, 506 fireducattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 enbolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 402 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 604 ealefication of, 664 ealefication of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664		Plain muscle, regeneration of, 196
cavernomas of, 506 cholesteatomas of, 506 endotheliomas of, 506 fibromas of, 506 fibromas of, 506 emmangio-endotheliomas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 inclusion dermoids of, 506 inglammation of, 504 lipomas of, 506 lymphangiomas of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 exogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 604 calcification of, 664 calcification of, 664 degeneration of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664		
cholesteatomas of, 506 endotheliomas of, 506 fibromas of, 506 inclusion dermoids of, 506 inflammation of, 504 lipomas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 dedema of, 299, 504 passive congestion of, 504 sarcomas of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 Pietou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 exogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 uroblin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 disease of, 664 cile embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 calcification of, 664 disease of, effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664		
endotheliomas of, 506 fibromas of, 506 gummas of, 506 gummas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 hipperemia of, 504 hipperemia of, 504 lipomas of, 506 liminamation of, 504 lipomas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 470 lemona of, 470 lemoral of, 470		
fibromas of, 506 gummas of, 506 hemorrhage of, 504 hyperemia of, 504 hyperemia of, 504 lipomas of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pitutary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 604 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 calcification of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 flormyoma of, 664 flormyoma of, 664 flormyona of, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664		
gummas of, 506 hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 nemorrhage of, 504 hyperemia of, 504 inclusion dermoids of, 506 inflammation of, 504 lipomas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 lymphangiomas of, 506 cudema of, 299, 504 passive congestion of, 504 sarcomas of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 664 angioma of, 470 chondroma of, 470 ehondroma of, 470 fibroma of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 466 inflammation of, 470 lipoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 suphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 suphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 suphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 Pleural cavities, 433 effusion, 434 Pleuricentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisy, 467 "dry," 468 endothelioma of, 470 fibroma of, 470 suphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 parasites of, 470 suphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 suphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 parasites of, 470 suphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 parasites of, 470 suphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 parasites of, 470 suphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 parasites of, 470 suphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 parasites of, 470 suphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 parasites of, 470 suphilis of, 470 t		
hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506 nemorrhage of, 504 hyperemia of, 504 hyperemia of, 504 inclusion dermoids of, 506 inflammation of, 504 lipomas of, 506 lymphangiomas of, 506 oxdema of, 299, 504 passive congestion of, 504 sarcomas of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 fictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 604 calcification of, 664 calcification of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 fibromyoms of, 664 fibromyoms of, 664 fibromyoms of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 506 llphoma of, 470 contents in, +66 endothelioma of, 470 endothelioma of, 470 hydremic, 335 hydremic, 36 angioma of, 470 contents in, +66 endothelioma of, 470 fibroma of, 470 stromorous, 470 osteoma of, 470 osteoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 parasites of, 470 tumors of, 470 parasites of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 parasites of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 parasites of, 470 p		
nemorrhage of, 504 hyperemia of, 504 inclusion dermoids of, 506 inflammation of, 506 lipomas of, 506 lymphangionas of, 506 lymphangionas of, 506 sectema of, 299, 504 passive congestion of, 504 sarcomas of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 endogenous, 321 exogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pleminthes, 98 Plethora, 335 hydremic, 366 endothelioma of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 467 hydroliumation of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 467 hydroliumation of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 467 hydroliumation of, 470 hemorrhage into, 467 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 467 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 467 hyp	hemangio-endotheliomas of, 506	Platelets, blood, 366
hyperemia of, 504 inclusion dermoids of, 506 inflammation of, 504 lipomas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 oxdema of, 299, 504 passive congestion of, 504 sarcomas of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 robilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 402 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 anemia of, 664 calcification of, 664 calcification of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 hyperemia of, 470 contents in, #66 endothelioma of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 contents in, #66 endothelioma of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 contents in, #66 endothelioma of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 contents in, #66 endothelioma of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 470 bemotrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 470 bemotrhage into, 470 bemotrhage into, 470 vosteoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 tumors of, 470 tumors of, 470 tumors of, 470 parasites of, 470 tumors of, 470 purulent: blastoma, 219 Pleurisentic blastoma, 219 Pleurisentic blastoma, 219 Pleurisentic blastoma, 219 Pleurisentic blastoma, 457 Pleural cavities, 433 effusion, 434 Pleuricentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisentic blastoma, 450 hemorrhage into, 466 inflammation of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 tumors of, 470 productive, 467		Platyhelminthes, 98
inclusion dermoids of, 506 inflammation of, 504 lipomas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 dedema of, 299, 504 passive congestion of, 504 sarcomas of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 endogenous, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 calcification of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664		
inflammation of, 504 lipomas of, 506 lymphangiomas of, 506 lymphangiomas of, 506 udema of, 299, 504 passive congestion of, 504 sarcomas of, 506 tuberculosis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 664 angioma of, 470 contents in, ±66 endothelioma of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 inflammation of, 466 inflammation of, 470 parasites of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 parasites of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 pleprosy of, 470 parasites of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 parasites of, 470 parasites of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 parasites of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 parasites of, 470 pa		
lymphangio-endotheliomas of, 506 lymphangiomas of, 506 codema of, 299, 504 passive congestion of, 504 sarcomas of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 604 calcification of, 664 calcification of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 inflammation of, 470 liproma of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 osteoma of, 470 surcoma of, 470 surcoma of, 470 surcoma of, 470 parasites of, 470 surcoma of, 470 surcoma of, 470 surcoma of, 470 liproma of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 466 inflammation of, 467 liproma of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 surcoma of, 47		Pleura, 466
lymphangiomas of, 506 cdema of, 299, 504 passive congestion of, 504 sarcomas of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hymphangiomas of, 506 endothelioma of, 470 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 466 inflammation of, 467 leprosy of, 470 lipoma of, 470 osteoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 parasites of, 470 starcoma of, 470 votemacion, 470 votema of, 470 parasites of, 470 starcoma of, 470 parasites of, 470 starcoma of, 470 votemacion, 470 votemacion, 470 pleural cavities, 433 effusion, 434 Pleurisentrie blastoma, 219 Pleurisy, 467 diffusion, 468 hemorrhage, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 470 tumors of, 470 tumors of, 470 starcoma of, 470 starcoma of, 470 parasites of, 470 starcoma of, 470 parasites of, 470 tumors of, 470 productive, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 fibrinou		
endothelioma of, 470 passive congestion of, 504 sarcomas of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 anemia of, 664 calcification of, 664 cell embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of, effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 hyperemia of, 466 hyperemia of, 466 hyperemia of, 467 lippma of, 470 osteoma of, 470 parasites of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 voteoma of, 470 voteoma of, 470 voteoma of, 470 voteoma of, 470 surcoma of, 470 surcoma of, 470 voteoma		
passive congestion of, 504 sarcomas of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 exogenous, 321 exogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 664 anemia of, 664 anemia of, 664 anemia of, 664 degeneration of, 664 cysts of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fectus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 osteoma of, 470 surcoma of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 effusion, 434 Pleuricentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisy, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhage into, 466 hyperemia of, 470 osteoma of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 posteoma of, 4		
sarcomas of, 506 syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 anemia of, 664 calcification of, 664 cell embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of, effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 hyperemia of, 466 hyperemia of, 467 leprosy of, 470 osteoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 surcoma, 470 Pleural cavities, 433 effusion, 434 Pleuricentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisy, 467 d'dry, "468 exudative, 467 fibrinous, 468 hypermia of, 466 hyperemia of, 468 hyperemia of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 hyphilis of, 470 tuberculosis of, 470 extudency of, 468 Pleuricentric blastoma, 219 Pleuricentr		
syphilis of, 506 tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 exogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 calcification of, 664 disease of effect of, upon foctus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664		1 1 1 100
tuberculosis of, 505 tumors of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 anemia of, 664 calcification of, 664 calcification of, 664 cell embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 cysts of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 iinflammation of, 467 leprosy of, 470 osteoma of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 endors extremely all pleural cavities, 433 effusion, 434 Pleuricentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisy, 467 "dry," 468 exudative, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 with effusion, 468 Pleuritis. See Pleurisy Pleurogenetic pneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		
tumors of, 506 Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 exogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 402 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 604 angioma of, 664 angioma of, 664 cell embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664		a first the second second
Pictou cattle disease, 581 "Pigeon-breast," 687 Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 anemia of, 664 angioma of, 470 sarcoma of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tuberculosis of, 470 tuberculosis of, 470 tuberculosis of, 470 Pleural cavities, 433 effusion, 434 Pleuricentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisy, 467 "dry," 468 exudative, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 with effusion, 468 Pleuritis. See Pleurisy Pleurogenetic pneumonia, 457 Pleusopneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		5 # 450
Pigments, 321 derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 exogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 calcification of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon feetus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 an leave of, 470 surdents of, 470 tuberculosis of, 470 tuberculosis of, 470 tumors of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 surdents of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 444 Pleuriscarities, 467 foration, 456 hemorrhagic, 469 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 with effusion, 468 hemorrhagic, 467 foration, 467 foration, 470 foration, 470 foration, 470 for	Pictou cattle disease, 581	
derived from hemoglobin, 321 embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 rurobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 calcification of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fileshy mole of, 211, 664 hemorrhage of, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 enbolus, 353 endogeneration of, 470 syphilis of, 470 tumors of, 470 Pleural cavities, 433 effusion, 434 Pleuricentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisy, 467 'dry," 468 exudative, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Empyema serofibrinous, 468 with effusion, 468 Pleuritis. See Pleurisy Pleurogenetic pneumonia, 457 Pleuropneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		
embolus, 353 in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 endogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 sexudative, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hydascositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 with effusion, 468 Pleuritis. See Pleurisy Pleurogenetic pneumonia, 457 Pleucopneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		d 4mas
in kidney, 620 in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 exogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 anemia of, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 calcification of, 664 coll embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 exudative, 467 fleuricentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisy, 468 exudative, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 with effusion, 468 Pleuritis. See Pleurisy Pleurogenetic pneumonia, 457 Pleuropneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 appical, 455 aspiration, 344 coll discounce of, 664 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455	1 1 0 10	
in liver, 585 Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 exogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 cysts of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 endogenous, 321 effusion, 434 Pleuricentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisy, 467 "dry," 468 exudative, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 with effusion, 468 Pleurisy, 467 Pleuropeneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		
Pigmentation, 321 endogenous, 321 exogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 664 angioma of, 664 cysts of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 Pleurise, 433 effusion, 434 Pleuricentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisy, 467 "dry," 468 exudative, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 Pleuritis. See Pleurisy Pleurogenetic pneumonia, 457 Pleuropneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		
endogenous, 321 exogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 664 angioma of, 664 cysts of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 effusion, 434 Pleuricentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisy, 467 "dry," 468 exudative, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 with effusion, 468 Pleurisy. Pleurogenetic pneumonia, 457 Pleuropneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		
exogenous, 324 melanotic, 324 urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 anemia of, 664 anemia of, 664 coll embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 cysts of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 Pleurisentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisy, 467 "dry," 468 exudative, 467 fibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 with effusion, 468 Pleurisentric blastoma, 219 Pleurisentric blastomanus and proposition, 468 Pleurisentric blastoma, 219		
urobilin, 324 Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492		Pleuricentric blastoma, 219
Pigmented moles, 278, 695, 703 Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 angioma of, 664 angioma of, 664 cysts of, 664 degeneration of, 664 degeneration of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fileshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 Pituitary body, 492 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467 467 productiv	melanotic, 324	Pleurisy, 467
Piles, 547 Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 anemia of, 664 angioma of, 664 collembolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fectus, 60 cntrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 Pituitary body, 492 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 hemorrhagic, 469 hyaloserositis in, 469 plastic, 467 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Pleurisy. Pleurogenetic pneumonia, 457 Pleuropneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		
Pineal gland, 493 Pituitary body, 492		
Pituitary body, 492 acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 anemia of, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 cell embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 cysts of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fectus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibromy ona of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664		
acromegaly and, 493 diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 anemia of, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 cysts of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 gecretions of, 101 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 with effusion, 468 Pleuritis. See Pleurisy Pleurogenetic pneumonia, 457 Pleuropneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		
diseases related to, 101 secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 anemia of, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 661 cell embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 productive, 467, 469 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 Pleuritis. See Pleurisy Pleurogenetic pneumonia, 457 Pleuropneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		
secretions of, 101 Placenta, 664 anemia of, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 661 cell embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fectus, 60 cntrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 purulent. See Empyema. serofibrinous, 468 Pleuritis. See Pleurisy Pleurogenetic pneumonia, 457 Pleuropneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		
Placenta, 664 anemia of, 664 angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 cell embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 serofibrinous, 468 with effusion, 468 pleuritis. See Pleurisy Pleuropeneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		purulent. See Empyema.
angioma of, 664 calcification of, 664 cell embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 cysts of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 Pleuritis. See Pleurisy Pleurogenetic pneumonia, 457 Pleuropneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		
calcification of, 664 cell embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 cysts of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 Pleurogenetic pneumonia, 457 Pleuropneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455	anemia of, 664	
cell embolus, 352 chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 cysts of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 Pleuropneumonia of cattle, organism 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		
chorio-epithelioma malignum of, 664 cysts of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 cntrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 93 Pneumonia, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		Pleurogenetic pneumonia, 457
cysts of, 664 degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 freemonna, 450 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455	cell embolus, 352	Pieuropheumonia of cattle, organism
degeneration of, 664 disease of effect of, upon fœtus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 aërogenic, 451 apical, 455 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455	ovets of 664	
disease of effect of, upon feetus, 60 entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 entral, 455 chronic, 457 hemorrhage of, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 ereeping, 455		
entrance of bacteria through, 90 fibroma of, 664 fibromyoma of, 664 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 entrance of bacteria through, 90 aspiration, 456 brown induration in, 458 central, 455 chronic, 457 chronic, 457 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		
fibroma of, 664 brown induration in, 458 fibromyoma of, 664 central, 455 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 chronic, 457 hemorrhage of, 664 congestion in, 452 creeping, 455		aspiration, 456
fibromyoma of, 664 central, 455 fleshy mole of, 211, 664 chronic, 457 hemorrhage of, 664 congestion in, 452 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 creeping, 455		brown induration in, 458
fleshy mole of, 211, 664 chronic, 457 hemorrhage of, 664 congestion in, 452 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 creeping, 455	fibromyoma of, 664	
hemorrhage of, 664 congestion in, 452 hydatidiform mole, 211, 664 creeping, 455	fleshy mole of, 211, 664	
hyperemia of, 664 creeping, 455 embolic, 457	hemorrhage of, 664	
nyperemia or, 004 embone, 457	hydatidiform mole, 211, 664	
	nyperemia or, 004	enidone, 407

Pneumonia, engorgement in, 452 hematogenic, 451 hepatization in, gray, 454 hypostatic, 452, 457 indurative, secondary, 457 inhalation, 456 lobar, 452, 453 lobular, acute, 455 lymphogenic, 451 metastatic, 452, 457 miliary, 452 pleurogenetic, 457 resolution in, 454 septic, 452 splenization in, 456 terminal, 452 tuberculous, 461 "unresolved," 4 "white," 465 457 Pneumonic phthisis, acute, 463 Pneumonitis. See Pneumonia. Pneumonokoniosis, 325, 457, 458 Pneumothorax, 434, 467 Poikilocytes, 359 Poikilothermic animals, 148 Poison, 78 acting on blood corpuscles, 81 on digestive system, 82 on heart, 82 on intestine, 82 on kidneys, 84 on liver, 83 on mouth, 2 on muscular system, 81 on nervous system, 80 on organs of circulation, 82 on stomach, 82 on vessels, 82 endogenous, 79 exogenous, 79 Polar bodies, 46 dichotomy, 66 hypogenesis, 70, 71 Poliomyelitis, 495, 499 Polyblast, 133, 191 Polychromatophilia, 359 Polycythemia, 358 Polydactyly, 70 Polydactylism, inheritance and, 57 Polyhydramnios, 665 Polymastia, 70, 666 Polymorphonuclear cells, 128 leukocytes, 362 Polymyositis, 674 Polynuclear cells, 128 leukocytes, 362 Polyorchidism, 637 Polyp, aural, 520 Polypeptids, 26 Polypi, destructive placental, 212 Polyps of nose, 436 Polythelia, 666 Polyuria, 601

Porencephaly, 486, 492, 498

Portal cirrhosis of liver, 575 Post-fibrinous fibrosis, 143 Posthitis, 630 Post-natal acquirement of disease, 74 disease, 55 Post-uterine hematoma, 661 Precipi ins, 161 Precipitoids, 162 Predilection, tissue of, in metastasis, 220 Predisposition, 115 age and, 116 habit of life and, 116 inherited, 115 malnutrition and, 116 previous infection and, 116 sex and, 116 Premature labor, causes of, 60 Preputial concrements, 315 Pressure, atmospheric, as cause of disease. diverticula of œsoznagus, 550 grooves of liver, 584 "Prezymogens" of cell, 23 Priapism, 630 Processus pyramidalis, 423 Procidentia of uterus, 645 Proctitis, 548 Productive pelvic peritonitis, 662 pleurisy, 467, 469 Progressive cataract, 515 muscular atrophy, 499, 675 inheritance, 51 tissue changes, 185 Prolapse of uterus, 645 Proliferants, cell, 201 Proliferative fibrosis, 142 Prophase of mitosis, 39 Prostate, 633 aberrant, 633 absence of, 633 amyloid bodies of, 321, 633 anomalies of, 633 atroply of, 634 carcinoma of, 636 concretions in, 633 corpora amylacia, 633 cysts of, 633 degeneration of, 634 foreign bodies in, 633 hyperemia of, 633 hypertrophy of, 634 multiple caseous nodules of, 633 phleboliths in, 633 sarcoma of, 636 tuberculosis of, 633 tumors of, 636 unilateral hypoplastic, 633 Prostatic calculi, 321, 633 sand, 321, 633 Prostatitis, 633 Protagon, 27 Proteins, 24 combined, 25

, 196

a.

organism of,

Proteins, constitution of, 24 enzymes of bacteria, 84 free, 25 molecule of, 24 of nucleus, 27 Protozoa as cause of disease, 93 development of toxins in, 93 RACHISCHISIS, 493 "Proud flesh," 126 Psammocarcinoma of ovary, 659 Psammoma, 282 bodies, 503 Pseudochylous ascites, 370 Pseudohermaphrodismus musculinus, 74 Pseudohypertrophy, 186 Pseudomelanosis, 322 Pseudomyxoma peritone: 658 Psoriasis, 699 Pterygium, 511 Ptomaines as cause of disease, 110 development of, bacteria and, 110 Puerperal uterus, 662 Pulmonary ædema, 367 Pulp tissues, primitive, 226 Pulpitis, 526 Pulse, venons, 372 Puncture, 76 Purin bases, 27, 108 bodies, 107 Purulent arthritis, 692 bronchitis, 444 choroiditis, 513 evelitis, 512 encephalitis. See Brain, abscess of. inflammation, 134 pancreatitis, 595 pericarditis, 383 pericholecystitis, 592 periorchitis, 637 peritonitis, 563 pleurisy. See Empyema. tenosynovitis, 676 Purpura, 355, 696 Pus, 125 "laudable," 138 Pustule, malignant, 700 Putrefaction in infarction, 345 Putrefactive bacteria, 85 necrosis, 328 Putrid bronchitis, 445 Pyclitis, 617, 623 cystica, 624 Pyelonephritis, 606, 617, 624 tuberculous, 619, 624 Pylephlebetic abscess, 575 Pyloric stenosis, 533 Pyometra, 646 Pyonephrosis, 617 calculous, 618 tuberculous, 619 Pyopneumothorax, 467 Pyorrhœa alveolaris, 361, 527 Pyosalpinx, 653, 654 Pyrexia, 147, 149 causes of, 151

Quinsy, 437

"Rachitic rosary," 687 Rachitis, 687 Racial characters, 47 diathesis, 58 inheritance, 47 inherited predisposition, 115 Radiant energy as cause of disease, 77 Radium as cause of disease, 78 cells of tumors and, 287 "Railway spine," 495 Ranula, 290, 525 Rarefaction of bones, 682 Rarefying osteitis, 682 Raynaud's disease, 326, 339 Receptors, 158, 165 orders of, Ehrlich's, 173 Recessive properties, 48 Rectocele, 642 Rectovaginal fistula, 643 Recurrent fever, 149 pericarditis, 383 splenitis, 417 Red atrophy, acute, of liver, 574 blood corpuscles. See Erythrocyte infarct, 344 of li er, 572 kidney, large, 62 softening of brain, 487 thrombus, 347, 350 Reducible hernia, 568 Reduplication of muscles, 673 Referred injury, 122 pains, 181

> of bone, 192 of cartilage, 192 of connective tissue, 191 of endothelium, 196 of epithelium, 194 of fatty tissue, 191 of glands, 196 of hair, 195 of hematoblasts, 194 of kidney, 191, 196 of leukocytes, 194 of liver, 190, 196 of lymphoid tissue, 193 of mother cells of red blood of puscles, 194 of mucous membrane, 195

of axone, 478 of blood-vascular tissue, 194

Regeneration, 189

of muscles, 190, 196 of nerve cells, 198

tissue, 198 of nerves, 478

Regeneration of neuroglia, 198 of ovary, 196 of pancreas, 196 of peripheral nerves, 198 of sebaceous glands, 195 of spleen, 196 of sweat glands, 195 of testis, 196 of thyroid, 196 Regions, special, defects in, 70 Relapse, 146 Relapsing fever, 98 Relative immunity, 152 , 115 Remittent fever, 149 disease, 77 infection, 146 78 Repair, 122 "Replacement dropsy," 371 fibrosis, 142 Reproductive system, 630 Reserve force, 37 Resistance, lowered, 56 Resolution, complete, in infarction, 345 of lung, 454 Respiration, Cheyne-Stokes, 431 disturbances of, 429 asphyxia, 430 coughing, 430 dyspnæa, 430 sneezing, 429 mechanism of, 429 574 Respiratory system, 427 Erythrocytes tract, entrance of bacteria through. 90 physical hindrance in, to entrance of bacteria, 87 Retention cysts, 287, 288 of liver, 590 of pancreas, 598 of skin, 707 73 mastitis, 667 of urine, 605 Reticulated enchondroma, 234 Retina, 510 , 194 anemia of, 510 choked disk in, 510 degeneration of, 514 1 embolism in, 510 glioma of, 515 hemorrhages in, 510 hyperemia of, 510 inflammation of, 513 thrombosis in, 510 tumors of, 515 Retinal glioma, 246 Retinitis, 513 hemorrhagic, 514 pigmentosa, 514 d blood cor-Retroflexion of uterus, 645 Retrograde metastasis, 219 Retrogression of neoplasms, 223

Retrogressive inheritance, 51

Retropharyngeal abscess, 438 Retro-uterine abscess, 661

Reversibility of enzyme action, 30

Reversion, 50 Reversionary atrophy, 203 inheritance, 50, 51 metamorphosis, 299 Rhabdomyoma, 243 of peripheral nerves, 509 Rhabdomyosarcoma, 257, 676 Rheumatic fever, 692 Rheumatism, 692, 693 Rhinitis, 435 Rhinoliths, 315 Rhinoscleroma of larynx, 443 Rice bodies, 677, 694 Ricin, immunity against, 154, 155 Rickets, 687 "Riders' bone," 206, 236 "Riding" embolus, 351 Rigor mortis, 331, 673 Ring-worm, 702, 708 Robin, immunity again. 1, 154, 155 Rodent ulcer, 264, 707 Rosary, rachitic, 687 Roseola, 697 Round-celled sarcoma, 253, 254 ulcer of stomach, 536, 537 worms, 98 Rubor, 125 Rupia of skin, 701 Rupture of heart, 391 of heart valves, 399 of lymphatic vessels, 411 of asophagus, 530 of urethra, 629 of uterus, 646
"Russel's bodies," 267, 312

SACCULAR aneurysm, 298, 407 bronchiectasis, 446 Sacral teratoma, congenital, 65 "Saddle-back" rose, 685 "Sago" spleen, 308, 418 Salivary concrements, 315 cysts, 290 glands, 528 cylindromas of, 528 endotheliomas of, 528 inflammation of, 528 peritheliomas of, 528 tuberculosis of, 528 tumors of, 528 Salpingitis, 653 Salts, simple, of cell, 32 Salvarsan, spirochetes and, 98 Sand, prostatic, 321, 633 Sap, cell, 19 Sapremia, 145 Sapremic intoxication, 145 Saprophytic lanteria, 85 intoxications, 79 Sarcoblasts, 244, 299 Sarcodiniæ, 93

195

* 1717	*********
Sarcoma, 237, 250	Sclerosing otitis media, 520
of adrenals, 423	Sclerosis, 496
of bladder, 627	of bones, 682
of bone marrow, 420	combined, subacute, 501
of bones, 689	lateral, amyotrophic, 499
of brain, 492	family type of, 499
of bronchi, 446	Mönckeberg's, 404
of bursa, 678	multiple, 498, 499, 500, 501
of conjunctiva, 515	in spinal cord, 496
of dura mater, 504	Scrofuloderma, 701
of ear, 521	Scrotal hernia, 569
of gall-bladder, 592	hydrocele, 291
of gall-duct, 592	Scrotum, 639
giant-celled, 237	carcinoma of, 640
intermediate, 252	elephantiasis of, 640
of intestines, 561	hemorrhage of, 640
of iris, 515	ædema of, 640 Scurvy, infantile, 688
of joints, 695	
of kidney, 210, 621	Sebaceous cyst of car, 521 of skin, 707
of larynx, 444	glands, regeneration of, 195
of liver, 589 of lungs, 465	Seborrhœa, 707
of mammary gland, 672	Secretin, 103
of mediastinum, 472	Secretions, internal, as causes of dis
of muscles, 676	100
of myocardium, 393	Secretory cysts, 288
of nose, 436	granules, 22
oat-shape celled, 254	Section, a cause of disease, 76
of orbit, 517	Self-digestion of pancreas, 595
osteoid, 256, 689	Semilunar valves, accessory, 393
of ovary, 659	fenestration of, 393
of pancreas, 598	Senile atrophy, 297
"parasites," 251	Sensory and motor neurones, dis
of penis, 633	affecting, 500
of peritoneum, 567	neurones, diseases affecting, 500
of pia-arachnoid, 506	Septa, imperfect, of heart, 386
of pleura, 470	Septic infection of umbilical cord, 6
of prostate, 636	pneumonia, 452
round-celled, 253, 254	Sequestration cysts, 293
of skin, 706	Sequestrum of bone, 680
spindle-celled, 252, 255	Serofibrinous arthritis, 691
of spicen, 418	inflammation, 134 pericarditis, 382, 383
of stomach, 540	peritonitis, 563
of tendons, 677	pleurisy, 468
of testes, 639 of ureters, 624	Seropurulent inflammation, 134
of urethra, 629	Serous arthritis, 691
of uterine ligaments, 662	atrophy, 298, 306, 419
of uterus, 652	cavities, accumulation in, 367
of vagina, 643	leptomeningitis, 504
Sarcomatosis of skin, 706	membrane, transplantation of,
Scabies, 702	pericarditis, 383
Scar, 126	peritonitis, 563
Scarlatinal nephritis, 616	Serpiginous ulcer of cornea, 512
Scarlet fever, organism of, 93	Serum albumin, 25
skin in, 697	"death," 170
Schizomycetes. See Bacteria.	globulin, 25
Sciatic hernia, 569	immune, 164
Scirrhous carcinoma, 266, 273	inactivated, 164
of mammary gland, 672	"sickness," 117, 170
of stomach, 539	Sessile hydatid, 289
Sclerema, 704, 705	Sexual organs, male, 630
Scleroderma, 704	female, 640
Sclercedema, 704	Shock, 178

19 501 , 195 ses of disease, 595 , 393 3 ones, diseases rting, 500 al cord, 665 134 in, 367 ation of, 20i

512

Sialoliths, 528 Siamese twins," 68 Side-chain theory of immunity, 157-160 Siderosis, 325, 459 Silicosis, 325 Sino-auricular node, 377 Sinus of bone, 680 Sirenomelus, 71 Skatol, constipation and, 111 Skin, 695 abnormalities of, 695 abscess of, 700 acne of, 700 actinomycosis of, 702 adiposis dolorosa of, 705 anasarca of, 696 anemia of, 695 angioma of, 706 atrophy of, 703 blastomycosis of, 702 hurning of, 697 callus of, 703 cancer "en cuirasse" of, 707 carbuncle of, 700 carcinoma of, 706 cavernoma of, 705 cellulitis of, 700 chancre of, 701 chigoë in, 703 chromatophoroma of, 706 comedones of, 707 corn of, 703 cyanosis of, 696 cysts of, 707 dermatomycosis of, 702 dermoid of, 707 eczema of, 698 elephantiasis of, 704 entrance of bacteria through, 90 epithelioma of, 706 erysipelas of, 700 crythema of, 697 favus of, 702 fibroma of, 705 freekles of, 703 freezing of, 698 furuncle of, 700 gangrene of, 700 glanders of, 702 grafting, 200 granulomas of, 702 guinea-worm in, 703 gummas of, 701 hairiness of, 695 hardening of, 704 hemorrhage of, 696 herpes of, 698 hyperemia of, 696 in betigo of, 699 inflammation of, 696 intertrigo of, 699 keloid of, 705 lepra of, 702 leukoderma of, 703

Skin, lichen of, 699 lineæ albicantes of, 703 lipomatosis of, 705 lividity of, 696 lupus of, 701 erythematosus of, 699 lymphangiectasis of, 706 lymphangio-endothelioma of, 706 lymphangioma of, 706 malignant pustule of, 700 melanoma of, 706 miliaria of, 698 moles of, 705 molluseum contagiosum of, 703 mucous plaques of, 701 mycosis fungoides of, 702 myiasis of, 706 myoma of, 705 myxoma of, 705 nevi of, 705 necrosis of, 700, 703 neurinomatosis of, 705 ædema of, 696 osteoma of, 705 papular syphilide of, 701 parasites of, 702 pediculosis of, 702 pemphigus of, 698 phlegmon of, 700 pigmentation of, 703 psoriasis of, 699 purpura of, 696 ringworm of, 702 rodent ulcer of, 707 reseela of, 697 rupia of, 701 sarcoma of, 706 sarcomatosis of, 706 scabies of, 702 scrofuloderma of, 701 "strawberry mark" of, 705 syphilis of, 701 thickening of, 704 tinea of, 702 tuberculosis of, 701 tumors of, 705 ulcers of, 700 urticaria of, 697 variola of, 699 verrucæ of, 704 vitiligo of, 703 warts of, 703, 704 xanthelasma of, 703 xanthoma of, 705 Sneezing, 429 "Snuffles," 436 Soaps, 33 Soft chancre of penis, 631 sore of penis, 632 Softening of brain, 487 Somatic cell, 44 Sordes, 523 Sore, soft, of penis, 632 Spasm, 480, 483

Spastic paraplegia, congenital, 498 Specific inherited predisposition, 115	Spleen, lymphomatoid conditions at ing, 241
Spectral rays as cause of disease, 78	regeneration of, 196
Spermatic cord, 640	"sago," 308, 418
varicocele of, 640	sarcoma of, 418 syphilis of, 418
inflammation of, 640 tuberculosis of, 640	thrombosis of, 416
Spermatocele of testes, 639	tuberculosis of, 418
Spermatocytes, 45	tumors of, 418
Spermatogonium, 45, 46	waxy, 308
Spermatozoa, maturation of, 45	Splenic anemia, 241
Sphacelus, 330	Splenitis, 417 Splenization of lung, 456
Sphingomyelin, 27 Spina bifida, 72, 485, 493	Splenomegaly, endothelial, 241
occulta, 494	hemolytic, 241, 579
ventosa, 683	Spondylitis deformans, 692
Spinal cord, 493	Spontaneous variation, 50
abnormalities of, 493	Sporadic embryoma, 209
anemia of, 495	infection, 143 pancreatitis, 595
anomalies of, 493 congestion of, 495	teratoma, 209
corpora amylacea in, 496	Sporozoa, 96
degeneration of, 496, 497	life-cycles in, 96
gliomas of, 501	spore formation in, 96
granulomas of, infective, 498,	transmission of, 97
499	Squamous-celled carcinoma, 269 of mammary gland, 672
gummas of, 496, 500 hemorrhage into, 495, 496	of skin, 706
infection of, 496	of stomach, 539
inflammation of, 495	of vulva, 642
sclerosis in, 496	epithelial cysts, 292
trauma of, 496	Stalked hydatid, 289
tuberculosis of, 490, 500	Staphylococcus pyogenes, inflamn and, 121
tumors of, 496, 498, 492, 500 meninges, 501	Stasis of blood, 339
Spine, "railway," 495	Status lymphaticus, 411, 472
Spindle-celled sarcoma, 252	Steapsin, 33
Spirilla, 84	Stearin, 33
Spirillosis, 98	Steatoliths, 318
Spirillum choleræ, multiplica fon of, 90 Spirocheta pallida. See Freponema	Steatopygy, 233 Stenosis, congenital pulmonary,
Spirocheta pallida. See /reponema pallidum.	atresia, 386
Spirochetes, 98	of heart valves, 397
Splanchnoptosis, 415	of intestines, 544
Spieen, 415	of cesophagus, 529
abnormalities of, 415	pyloric, 533 of ureters, 625
accessory, 415	of uterus, 644, 645
actinomycosis of, 418 anemia of, 415	Sterility of blood, 88
atrophy of, 418	of healthy tissue, 88
"bacon," 308, 418	Sternal fissure, 72
bacteria in, 88	Sthenic fever, 150
carcinoma of, 419	Stillbirth, causes of, 60 Stimuli, ideogenous, 482
congestion of, 415 eyanotic induration of, 416	"Stippling" of crythrocytes, 359
degenerations of, 418	"Stitch-hole," abscess, 89
embolism of, 416	Stokes-Adams syndrome, 379
glanders of, 418	Stomach, 533
hemorrhage of, 416	abnormalities of, 533
hyperemia of, 415	absence of, 533 actinomycosis of, 536
hyperplasia of, 418	actinomycosis of, 550 adenocarcinoma of, 539
infiltrations of, 418 inflammation of, 417	adenoma of, 539
leprosy of, 418	anemia of, 533
reprose of the	

iditions affect-, 241 6 ia, 269 1d,672, inflammation 472 dmonary, with tes, 359 9 379

539

Stomach, calcareous deposits in, 536 earcinoma of, 539 embolism and, 534 epithelioma of, 539 erosions of, hemorrhagic, 534 fibroma of, 539 glanders of, 536 hemorrhages of, 533 hourglass, 533 hyperemia of, 533 inflammation of, 535 lipoma of, 539 myoma of, 539 neurinoma of, 539 poisons acting on, 82 sarcoma of, 540 syphilis of, 536 thrombosis and, 534 tuberculosis of, 536 tumors of, 538 ulcer of, 536 Stomatitis, 523, 524 aphthous, 524 gangrenous, 524 suppurative, 524 ulcerative, 524 Strangulation of intestines, 545 "Strawberry mark" of skin, 705 tongue, 523 Streptothrix of lungs, 465 Strinted muscle, regeneration of, 197 Stricture of urethra, 628 Stridor, 429 Stroma in neoplasms, 221 Strongylus of lungs, 465 Struma vasculosa, 425 Subinfection, 147, 162 Subluxation of joints, 691 Submucous hemorrhage of stomach, 534 myoma of uterus, 650 Subnormal cell activity, 37 Subserous myoma of uterus, 650 Subsultus tendinum, 480 Suggillations, 355 Sunburn, skin in, 703 Sunstroke, 78, 152 Superfectation, 62 Suppurative arthritis, 691 cholecystitis, 591 hepatitis, 574 keratitis, 512 leptomeningitis, 505 myositis, 674 nephritis, 617 otitis media, 519 periostitis, 681 splenitis, 417

Sympathetic nervous system, 475 ophthalmia, 512 Sympus apus, 71 Synapse, 113, 474 Syncope, 177 Syncytial carcinoma of puerperal uterus, 6666 Syndactyly, 71 Synechia, 383, 512 Synorchidism, 637 Syphilis, 98 of adrenals, 422 of arteries, 400 of bladder, 626 of bone, 684 of brain, 489 of conjunctiva, 511 of cornea, 512 of dura mater, 503 of ear, 518 of Fallopian tubes, 654 of fætus, 665 of intestines, 555 of iris, 512 of joints, 693 of kidney, 619 of liver, 582 of lungs, 464 of lymph nodes, 412 of mammary gland, 667 of mouth, 524 of muscles, 675 of nose, 436 of æsophagus, 531 of ovary, 655 of penis, 630 of peripheral nerves, 508 of peritoneum, 566 of pia-arachnoid, 506 of placenta, 60, 664 of pleurae, 470 of skin, 701 of spleen, 418 of stomach, 536 of tendon sheaths, 677 of testes, 638, 639 of thymus, 472 of tonsils, 440 of tunica vaginalis testis, 637 of umbilical cord, 665 of urethra, 629 of uterus, 649 of vulva, 641 Wassermann reaction in, 167, 168 Syphilitic arteriosclerosis, 403 cirrhosis of liver, 581 larvngitis, 443 mesoarteritis, 408 pericarditis, 384 Syphiloma of brain, 489 of liver, 582 of myocardium, 388 Syringomyelocele, 292, 495 Systole of heart, 375

surra, 95

stomatitis, 524

Susceptibility, 115

Surgical" kidney, 617

Swelling, cloudy, 123, 301 vmpathetic hypertrophy, 189

weat glands, regeneration of, 195

Talve dorsalis, 500 Tachycardin, 336 Tariar of teeth, 315, 527 Tattooing, 413 Teeth, 526 caries of, 526 caries of, 528 defects of, 529 Hutchinson's, 57, 523 inflammation of, 526, 527 tartar of (, 315, 527 Trans' '	T	Teratomatous cysts of uterus, 652 Terminal infection, 121, 147
Tabes dorsalls, 5000 Tachycardin, 336 Tarchia echinococcus, 90, 295 Tartar of teeth, 315, 527 Tattooing, 413 Teeth, 326 caries of, 526 cysts of, 528 defects of, 522 Hutchinson's, 57, 523 inflammation of, 526, 527 tartar of, 315, 527 Trans' ', ion of, 201 tumors s, 527 Telurium, cells of tumors and, 287 Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to, 77 as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Ilipoma of, 677 ''ganglion'' of, 677 ''ganglion'' of, 677 ''rice bodies' in, 677 syphilis of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendous, 676 Tendons, 677 Tendollastomas, 210 of kidney, 691 Teratoids, 69 Teratoids, 69 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 692 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands,	Tanacosta 325	leukoeytosis, 304
Tachin celinecoscus, 99, 295 Tartar of teeth, 315, 527 Tactoring, 413 Tactoring, 413 Teeth, 326 cavies of, 526 cysts of, 528 defects of, 522 Hutchinson's, 527 tartar of, 315, 527 tartar of, 315, 527 tartar of, 325, 523 inflammation of, 526, 527 tartar of, 315, 527 tartar of, 325, 527 tartar of, 326 cysts of, 528 defects of, 529 defects of, 529 tartar of, 325, 527 tartar of, 325, 527 tartar of, 325, 527 tartar of, 326 tartoning, 326 Teraminal of, 326 of kidney, 621 Tendammation of, 676 cysts of, 639 dystopia of, 637 hyperplasa in, 639 hypertrophy of, compensatory, bypoplasia of, 639 regeneration of, 638 inflammation of, 638 inflammation of, 638 inflammation of, 639 secretions of, 99 seprematored of, 339 secretions of, 99 seprematored of, 639 secretions of, 639 serctions of, 638 inflammation of, 639 serctions of, 638 inflammation of, 639 serctions of, 638 inflammation of, 639 serctions of, 638 inflammation of, 638 inflammation of, 639 serctions of, 639 serctions of, 639 serctions of, 639 regeneration of, 638 inflammation of, 638 inflammation of, 638 inflammation of, 638 serctions of, 639 regeneration of, 638 treations of, 639 regeneration of, 638 treations of, 637 Telophase of mitosity of, 677 Tendons, 676 lipom of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 tendons, 676 teratinities, 676 Teratons, 676 tumors of, 677 tendons, 676 teratinities, 676 Teratons, 676 teratinities, 676 teratinities, 676 teratinities, 676 teratinities, 676 ter	Takan dagadis 500	pneumonia, 452
Tactor of teeth, 315, 527 Tattooing, 413 Teeth, 526 caries of, 526 cysts of, 528 defects of, 522 Hutchinson's, 57, 523 inflammation of, 526, 527 tartar of, 315, 527 trans' ' 'ion of, 201 tumors ', 527 Tegumentary gystem, 673 Telumientary gystem, 673 Telumentary gystem, 676 Telumentary gystem, 676 Telumentary gystem, 677 as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tembinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcarcons deposits in, 677 'ganghion' of, 677 hygroma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendoxaginitis, 676 Tendoxaginitis, 676 Terosynovitis,	Tanhyanglia, 336	Testes, 637
Tartsoing, 413 Teeth, 526 caries of, 526 cysts of, 528 defects of, 527 defects of, 527 tartar of, 315, 527 tartar of, 315, 528 defects of, 528 defects of, 527 tartar of, 315, 527 tartar of, 315, 528 inflammation of, 526, 527 tartar of, 315, 527 tartar of, 315, 528 inflammation of, 526, 527 tartar of, 315, 527 tartar of, 315, 528 inflammation of, 526, 527 tartar of, 315, 528 of kidney, 621 Tellurion, cells of tumors and, 287 Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to the content of, 577 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcareous deposits in, 677 calcareous deposits in, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendons, 676 of inflammation of, 676 sireoma, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous, 665 Tendon sheaths, 676 Teratoma, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous, 676 Teratoma, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of peritoneum, 567 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 2	Paria achimeneus, 99, 295	abnormalities or, 607
Tattooing, 413 Teeth, 526 caries of, 528 defects of, 528 defects of, 528 defects of, 528 Hytchinson's, 57, 523 inflammation of, 526, 527 tartar of, 315, 673 tartar of, 315, 639 tratar of, 329 tratar of, 329 tratar of, 329 tratar of, 329 tartar of, 329 tratar of, 329 tratar of, 329 tratar of, 327 tratar of, 329 tratar of, 329 tratar of, 329 tratar of, 327 tratar of	Tastar of tooth 315, 527	atrophy of, 639
Teeth, 526 earies of, 528 defects of, 528 defects of, 522 Hatchinson's, 57, 523 inflammation of, 526, 527 tertar of, 315, 527 tertar of, 315, 527 Tegumentary system, 673 Telangicertases, 578 of kidney, 621 Tellurium, cells of tumors and, 287 Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to, 77 es cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animab, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcarcous deposits in, 677 ''ganglion'' of, 677 hyperoma of, 677 ''rice bodies'' in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendows, 676 Tendows, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendows, 676 Teratoids, 69 Teratoids, 69 Teratorids, 69 Teratorids, 69 Teratoma, 207 rengeniral sacral, 65, 208, 209 eystic, 209 of lungs, 465 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 200 of test		carcinoma of, 939
caries of, 528		chorio-epithelioma of, 659
eysts of, 528 defects of, 529 defects of, 522 Hatchinson's, 57, 523 inflammation of, 526, 527 textar of, 315, 527 textar of, 315, 527 Tegumentary system, 673 Telangicetases, 578 of kidney, 621 Tellurium, cells of tumors and, 287 Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to, 77 as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 inflammation of, 677 hygroma of, 677 rice bodies" in, 677 surcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenatous, 676 Teratous, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Teratous, 676 Teratous, 676 Teratous, 676 Teratous, 676 Teratous, 677 to of coary, 209 of lungs, 465 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 200 of testis, 200 of testis, 200 of testis, 2	anging of 32h	cysts of, 639
defects of, 522 Hatchinson's, 57, 523 inflammation of, 526, 527 tratus' ', jon of, 201 tumors ', 527 Tegumentary system, 673 Telangicetases, .78 of kidney, 621 Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to, 77 as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 inflammation of, 677 'rice bodies' in, 677 syrbilis of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendous, 676 Tendons, 676 Tendons, 676 Tendons, 677 Tendous, 676 Tendons, 677 Tendous, 676 Tendons, 677 Tendous, 676 Tendons, 677 Tendous, 676 Terata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Tranguentary system, 673 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 677 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 677 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 677 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 677 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 677 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 677 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 677 Tendous, 676		dystopia of, 637
inflammation of, 526, 527 transe? Jion of, 201 tumors of, 527 Tegumentary system, 673 Telangicetases, 278 of kidney, 621 Tellurium, cells of tumors and, 287 Telophose of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body (o, 77 os cause of disease, 77 os cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tenslinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 inflammation of, 677 hygroma of, 677 hygroma of, 677 rice bodies in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 rumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 inflammation of, 676 inflammation of, 676 rendovagimitis, 676 Tendovagimitis, 676 Tendovagimitis, 676 Tendovagimitis, 676 Teratollastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratodia, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of cestis, 209 of ottests, 209 of cestis, 209 of ottests, 209 of cestis, 209 of ottests, 209 of ottests, 209 of ottests, 209 of cestis, 209 of ottests, 209 of cestis, 209 of ottests, 209 of cestis, 209 of ottests, 209 of cestis, 209 of ottests, 209 of cestis, 200 of cestis, 200 of cestis, 200 of cestis	defeats of 500	hyperplasia in, 639
inflammation of, 525, 527 transe (, 315, 527 transe (, 315, 527 transe (, 316, 527 Tegumentary (system, 673 Telangicetases, 778 of kidney, 621 Tellurium, cells of tumors and, 287 Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to, 77 as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendimits, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcareons deposits in, 677 ''ganglion'' of, 677 hygroma of, 677 hygroma of, 677 rice bodies'' in, 677 syrbilis of, 6877 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 s recoma of, 677 Tendovaginits, 676 Teratol, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratomor, 6839 secretions of, 639 teratoma of, 299 tuberculosis of, 638 tumors of, 275, 639 Tetanic contractions of muscle, 48 Tetanic tonin, 157 Tetany, 101, 426 Thenibosia, 400 Thrombosia, 410 T	Harabingan's 57, 523	hypertrophy of, compensatory,
tartar of, 315, 527 franst* fron of, 201 tumors s., 527 Tegumentary system, 673 Telargiac fasts, 578 of kidney, 621 Tellurium, cells of tumors and, 287 Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to, 77 as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendimitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcarcous deposits in, 677 "ganglion" of, 677 hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 rice bodies" in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 tuberculosis of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 sarcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovagimitis, 676 Terato, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of operitoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of congenital, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of ortests, 624	5.4. marting of 526, 527	hypoplasia of, 637
transe ' Jion of, 201 tumors s, 527 Tegumentary system, 673 Telangicerases, 778 of kidney, 621 Tellurium, cells of tumors and, 287 Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to, 77 as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcarrous deposits in, 677 'rice bodies' in, 677 'rice bodies' in, 677 'rice bodies' in, 677 'rice bodies' in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 sarcoma of, 676 rerata, 207 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 210 of population of, 676 sarcoma of, 676 Terato, 307 Tendovaginitis, 676 Terato, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous, 5676 Teratog	turtur of 315 527	infective granulomas of, 638
tumors \$\(\), 527 Telungiacetases, 278 of kidney, 621 Telurium, cells of tumors and, 287 Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to, 77 as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 inflammation of, 677 inflammation of, 677 syrbilis of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 Tendons, 676 Tendons, 677 Tendons, 678 Signal algorithm of human body teratoma of, 639 Teratoma, 07, 275, 639 Teratoma of, 677 Thrombon, 346 Thromboangeitis obliterans, 400 Thrombosis, 346 Thrombosis, 346 Thrombokinase, 346 Thrombokinase, 346 Thrombokinase, 346 Thrombosis, 410 Thrombosis, 346 Thro	Amaza tion of, 201	inflammation of, 638
Tegumentary system, 673 Telangicetases, 278 of kidney, 621 Tellurium, cells of tumors and, 287 Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to, 77 as cause of disease, 77 econstancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcarcous deposits in, 677 hygroma of, 677 hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 syphilis of, 677 syphilis of, 677 tumors of, 677 tolobels, 696 fromboangeitis obliterans, 400 blood platelets in, 347 in brain, 487, 488 causes of, 348 of dura mater, 501 forms of, 348 hemolysis and, 348 of kidney, 699 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 cystic, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 201 of testic, 667 theriomos, 639 secretions of, 309 teratoma of, 639 secretions of, 309 teratoma of, 637 Tetany, 101, 426 Thrombon, 346 Thrombon, 346 of Thrombon, 346 of Thrombosis, 346 of arteries, 400 blood platelets in, 347 in brain, 477 of testic, 667 of testic, 677 testany, 101, 426 Thrombon, 348	11811/2	mesothelioma of, 639
Telangiectases, 278 of kidney, 621 Telurium, cells of tumors and, 287 Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to, 77 as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcarcous deposits in, 677 'ganglion' of, 677 hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 syrphilis of, 677 Tendons, 676 Tendons, 676 Tendons of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 Tendons, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratolistomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratodos, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of of mediastimum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 200 of testis, 200 of testis, 200 of	Tumora system 673	regeneration of, 196
of kidney, 621 Telupinm, cells of tumors and, 287 Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to, 77 as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcarcous deposits in, 677 hygroma of, 677 hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 rice bodies' in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Terata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 cystic, 209 of genital glands, 209 of lungs, 465 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of restis, 209 of testis, 200 of t	Tegumentary system, was	sarcoma of, 639
Tellurium, cells of tumors and, 287 Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to, 77 as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcarcous deposits in, 677 'ganglion' of, 677 hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 syphilis of, 677 ruberculosis of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 s recoma of, 677 Tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Teronogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 67 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Teronogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 67 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 67 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 67 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 67 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratodos, 69 Teratod	Character 421	secretions of, 102
Telophase of mitosis, 40 Temperature, adaptation of human body to, 77 as cause of disease, 77 as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcareous deposits in, 677 ''ganglion'' of, 677 hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 ''rice bodies'' in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratodis, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 eystic, 209 of genital glands, 209 of lungs, 465 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of testic, 674 Terany, 101, 426 Thetitis, 667 Thermogenesis, 147 Thermogenesis, 147 Thermogenesis, 147 Thermogenesis, 147 Thermogenesis, 147 Thermopholibitis, 351, 410 Thrombosinase, 346 Thrombokinase, 346 Thrombokinase, 346 Thrombokinase, 346 Thrombokinase, 346 Thrombosinase, 346 Thrombosinate, 347 cerel, 4, 488 cause of, 344 t	m north of tumors and 287	spermatocele of, 639
Temporature, adaptation of human body to. 77 as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcareous deposits in, 677 hygroma of, 677 hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 sarcoma of, 677 tubereulosis of, 677 tubereulosis of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 renosynovitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Teratolds dastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratolds, 69 Teratoids, 69 Teratoids, 69 Teratoids, 69 Teratona, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of lungs, 465 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of t	relations of mitosis 40	syphilis of, 638, 639
tuberculosis of, 638 tumors of, 275, 639 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon of, 676 inflammation of, 677 inflammation of, 677 syrbhilis of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of lungs, 465 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of testis, 209 of testis, 200 of test	Telophase of mitosis, to	teratoma of, 209
as cause of disease, 77 constancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcareous deposits in, 677 "ganglion" of, 677 hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 "rice bodies" in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 tuberculosis of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 s arcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of contactions of muscle, 48 Tetanus toxin, 157 Tetany, 101, 426 Thelitis, 667 Thendies, 667 Thrombonin, 346 Thrombosis, 346 Thrombosinase, 348 Tetanus, 101, 426 Thrombosinase, 3		tuberculosis of, 638
reconstancy of, in warm-blooded animals, 148 Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcareous deposits in, 677 hygroma of, 677 hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 syrbhilis of, 677 tuberculosis of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendous, 676 Tendous, 676 inflammation of, 676 inflammation of, 676 inflammation of, 676 inflammation of, 676 s recoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendous, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratodids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 eystic, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of conganization of, 350	10. 64	tumors of, 275, 639
recollimitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 calcareous deposits in, 677 hygroma of, 677 hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 inflammation of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendous; 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenatoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratoblastomas, 210 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of conganization of, 350 organization of, 350	as cause of in surm-blooded	Tetanic contractions of muscle, 481
Tendinitis, 676 Tendon sheaths, 676 Calcarcons deposits in, 677 Cangnion of, 678 Cangnion of, 677 Cangnion of, 677 Cangnion of, 678 Cangnion of, 677 Cangnion of, 677 Cangnion of, 678 Cangnion of, 677 Cangnion o	constancy of, in warming	Tetanus toxin, 157
Tendon sheaths, 676 calcarcous deposits in, 677 "ganglion" of, 677 hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 "rice bodies" in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 tuberculosis of, 677 tuberculosis of, 677 tuberculosis of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 inflammation of, 676 s arcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Teratolosaginitis, 676 Teratolosaginitis, 676 Teratodosaginitis, 676 Thromboin, 346 Thrombosis, 346 Thr		Tetany, 101, 426
rendon scealars, or calcarrous deposits in, 677 calcarrous deposits in, 677 hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 rice bodies" in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 sreoma of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Teratolastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of testis, 209 of testis, 209 of testis, 209 of urgetres, 624	Tendinus, 979	
"ganglion" of, 677 hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 "rice bodies" in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 tuberculosis of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 inflammation of, 676 sarcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Terata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 eongenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 cystic, 209 of genital glands, 209 of ungs, 465 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of testis, 209 of testis, 200 of testis, 200 of testis,	Tendon sheaths, 000	Thermogenesis, 147
hygroma of, 677 inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 "rice bodies" in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 tuberculosis of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 s arcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratodids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of lungs, 465 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of tersis, 346 Thromboangeitis obliterans, 400 Thrombosinase, 346 of arteries, 400 blood platelets in, 347 in brain, 487, 488 causes of, 347 cereL.al, 498 of dura mater, 501 forms of, 348 hemolysis and, 348 of kidney, 609 of lymph nodes, 412 of peritoneum, 563 results of, 350 in r.ctina, 510 of spleen, 416 stomach and, 534 of veins, 410 Thrombosinase, 346 of arteries, 400 of arteries, 400 of spleading, 409 of lymph nodes, 412 of peritoneum, 563 results of, 350 in r.ctina, 510 of sp	enterprise terms to the control of t	Thrombin, 346
inflammation of, 676 lipoma of, 677 "rice boddies" in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 syphilis of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 s arcoma of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoma, 207 eongenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of lungs, 405 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 301 Thromboskinase, 346 Thromboskinase, 346 Thromboshiase, 346 Thromboskinase, 346 of arteries, 400 blood platelets in, 347 in brain, 487 cereLal, 498 of dura mat	gangion of 477	Thromboangeitis obliterans, 400
lipoma of, 677 "rice bodies" in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 syphilis of, 677 tuberculosis of, 677 tumors of, 676 inflammation of, 676 s arcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenadovaginitis, 676 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratoblastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of turters, 624	hygroma or, or a 676	
"rice bodies" in, 677 sarcoma of, 677 syphilis of, 677 tuberculosis of, 677 tumors of, 676 inflammation of, 676 inflammation of, 676 s arcoma of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Teratoplastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratoplastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of testis, 209 of urgenters, 624	innammation of the	Thrombokinase, 346
sarcoma of, 677 syphilis of, 677 tuberculosis of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 s arcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Terata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of testis, 209 of testi	11point of, 077	Thrombophlebitis, 351, 410
syphilis of, 677 tuberculosis of, 677 tumors of, 676 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 s arcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Tenata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of testis, 209 of testis	"Ree podies in, we	Thrombosis, 346
tumors of, 677 tumors of, 676 inflammation of, 676 s areoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenato, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of lungs, 465 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of testis, 209 of testis, 200 of testi	Surcomme of the	of arteries, 400
tumors of, 677 Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 s areoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Terata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of orbit, 517 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of te	syphins or, or 4	blood platelets in, 347
Tendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 s areoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tendovaginitis, 676 Terata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 cystic, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of tysters, 624 eauses of, 347 ceret.al, 498 of dura mater, 501 forms of, 348 hemolysis and, 348 of kidney, 609 of liver, 573 of peritoneum, 563 results of, 350 in r.tina, 510 of spleen, 416 stomach and, 534 of veins, 410 Thrombus, 346, 347 absorption of, 350 arterial, 349 ball, 348 capillary, 350 cardiac, 348 clobular, 349 hyaline, 347 liberated, 351 organization of, 350	Tupercauses of our	in brain, 487, 488
rendons, 676 inflammation of, 676 s areoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Terata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 cystic, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of testi		causes of, 347
s arcoma of, 677 tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Terata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209	Tendons, 070	ceret, al. 498
tumors of, 677 Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Terata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of testis, 209 of testis, 20		of dura mater, 501
Tendovaginitis, 676 Tenosynovitis, 676 Terata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209	reoma of, 974	forms of, 348
Tenosynovitis, 676 Terata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of testi	tumors of, 977	hemolysis and, 348
Terata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 eongenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of lungs, 405 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of testis, 209 of ungerers, 624	Tendovagimus, 900	of kidney, 609
Terata, 207 Teratoblastomas, 210 of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 eongenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of lungs, 465 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of testis, 209 of testis, 209 of urgerers, 624	Tenosynovitis, 070	of liver, 573
of kidney, 621 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207	Terata, 207	of lymph nodes, 412
Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratogenous blastomas, 211, 223 Teratodes, 69 Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of lungs, 465 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 350 of testis, 350 of spleen, 410 of spleen, 410 of veins, 410 Thrombus, 346, 347 absorption of, 350 arterial, 349 ball, 348 capillary, 350 cardiac, 348 iberated, 351 organization of, 350	Teratoblastomas, 210	of peritoneum, 563
Teratoids, 69 Teratoids, 69 Teratoma, 207 eongenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of ureters, 624	01 kidney, 921	results of, 350
Teratoma, 207 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 cystic, 209 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of testis, 209 of ureters, 624		in retina, 510
remtona, 201 congenital sacral, 65, 208, 209 cystic, 209 of genital glands, 209 of lungs, 465 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of urgerers, 624 stomach and, 534 of veins, 410 Thrombus, 346, 347 absorption of, 350 arterial, 349 ball, 348 capillary, 350 cardiac, 348 globular, 349 hyaline, 347 liberated, 351 organization of, 350		
congenital state, 309 of genital glands, 209 of genital glands, 209 of lungs, 465 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of testis, 209 of ureters, 624 of veins, 410 Thrombus, 346, 347 absorption of, 350 arterial, 349 ball, 348 capillary, 350 cardiac, 348 globular, 349 hyaline, 347 liberated, 351 organization of, 350	Teratoma, 207	stomach and, 534
of genital glands, 209 of lungs, 465 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of testis, 209 of uncertage of the sporadic of the sporadic of testis, 209 of testis, 209 of uncertage of the sporadic of testis, 209 of uncertage of uncertage of testis, 209 of uncertage of		
of lungs, 465 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of ureters, 624 absorption of, 350 arterial, 349 ball, 348 capillary, 350 cardiac, 348 globular, 349 hyaline, 347 liberated, 351 organization of, 350	eystic, 205	Thrombus, 346, 347
of mediastinum, 471 of mediastinum, 471 of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of weters, 624 arterial, 349 ball, 348 capillary, 350 cardiac, 348 globular, 349 hyaline, 347 liberated, 351 organization of, 350	of genital giands, 200	absorption of, 350
of mouth, 525, 526 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of wreters, 624 ball, 348 capillary, 350 cardiac, 348 globular, 349 hyaline, 347 liberated, 351 organization of, 350	of lungs, 400	arterial, 349
of mouth, 517 of orbit, 517 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 o	of mediastmum, 471	ball, 348
of ovary, 209, 660 of ovary, 209, 660 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of weters, 624 cardiac, 348 globular, 349 hyaline, 347 liberated, 351 organization of, 350	of mouth, 525, 520	capillary, 350
of ovary, 263, 349 of peritoneum, 567 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of weters, 624 globular, 349 hyaline, 347 liberated, 351 organization of, 350	of orbit, ale	eardiac, 348
of peritoneum, 564 sporadic, 209 of testis, 209 of weters, 624	of ovary, 209, 000	
of testis, 209 of weters, 624 liberated, 351 organization of, 350	of peritoneum, abs	hyaline, 347
of testis, 209 of weters, 624 organization of, 350	sporadic, 209	Discreted, 251
	of testis, 209	organization of, 350
	of ureters, 624	red. acute, 350
of Come uganients, oo	of extine ligan.ents, 662	1000

400

Thrombus, red, mixed, 347 softening of, 351 venous, 350 Thrush, 524 "Thrush-breast" heart, 390 Thymus, 472 abscesses of, 472 atrophy of, 472 hyperplasia of, 472 lymphosarcoma of, 472 syphilis of, 472 tuberculosis of, 472 Thyroid cysts, 291 extract, cretinism and, 101 myxœdema and, 101 gland, 423 abnormalities of, 423 absence of, 424 accessory, 423 adenocarcinoma of, 425 adenomas of, 425 atrophy of, 424 calcareous deposits of, 124 carcinoma, sarcomatodes of, 425 congestion of, 424 eysts of, 424 degeneration of, 424 hyperplasia of, 424 hypoplasia of, 424 inflammation of, 424 regeneration of, 196 transplantation of, 200 tumors of, 425 goitre, 291 reaction, disturbance of, 100 tumors of larynx, 443 Thyroidectomy, 101 Thyrolingual cysts, 289 Tigroid bodies, 19, 473 Tinea, 702 circinata, 702 sycosis, 702 tonsurans, 702 versicolor, 702 Tissue cell embolus, 352 changes, 185, 186 development of, 223 endothelial, 226 entrance of bacteria to, 86 epiblastie, 225, 226 heatthy, sterility of, 88 hylic, 225, 226 hypoblastic, 225, 226 lepidic, 225 mesenchymatous, 226 mesothelial, 225, 226 of predilection, 220 pulp, primitive, 226 Toe-nail, ingrowing, 708 Tonic contractions of muscle, 481 Tongue, defects of, 523 geographical, 524 strawberry, 523

tie, 522, 523

Tonsillar concrements, 315 Tonsillitis, chronic follicular, 440 Tonsils, 436 abnormalities of, 437 amygdalitis of, 437 fauces of, 436 hyperemia of, 437 inflammation of, 437 cedema of, 437 syphilis of, 440 tuberculosis of, 440 Tonus of muscle, 481 Tophi in gout, 694 Tophus, 520 Totipotential cell, 45, 208 Toxemia, 145 Toxic albuminuria, 603 ordema, 370 Toxins, 85, 156 action of, 85 antitoxins and, 156 of Bacillus diphtheriæ, 85 of bacteria, 84, 85 definition of, 156 development of, in protozoa, 93 excretion of, by metazoa, 99 resemblance of, to enzymes, 85 tetanus, 157 Toxoid, 155, 157 Toxophore, 157 Trachea, 429, 440 Trachoma, 511 Traction ancurysm, 408 diverticula of asophagus, 530 Transitional lepidomas, 274 neoplasms, 226 Transplantation, 199 autoplastic, 199 of bone, 201 heteroplast¹ isoplastic, 150, 201 of mammary gland, 200 of mucous membranes, 201 of ovary, 200 of perichondrium, 201 of periosteum, 201 of serous membranes, 201 of teeth, 201 of thyroid, 200 of vessels, 202 Traumatic causes of inflammation, 122 thrombosis of dura mater, 501 Tremor, 484 Treponema pallidum, 93, 98 Trichina spiralis, cysts of, 295 Trichinæ, 99 Trichiniasis of muscles, 674 Trichocephalus destruction of tissue by, Trichomonas, 96 Trimethylam'n, 110 Triplets, 64 Tropical abscess of liver, 575 Truncus arteriosus, persistent, 386

Trypanosoma brucei, 95	Tuberculous bronchopneumonia, 459
evansi, 95	461
gambiense, 95	colitis, 560
Trypanosomes, 94, 95	laryngitis, 442
Trypsinogen, activation of, by entero-	pneumonia, 461
kinase, 174	pyelonephrosis, 624
Tse-tse fly disease, 95	pyonephrosis, 619
Tubal abortion, 666	Tubo-ovarian abscess, 655
gestation, 653	Tumefaction in typhoid fever, 550
Tube, Fallopian, 653	Tumors, 206. See also Neoplasms.
Tubercle, 138	nomenclature of, 226
of iris, 512	ordinary. See Blastomas.
Tuberculomas of liver, 582	in tumore, 209, 660
Tuberculosis of adrenals, 422	Tunica vaginalis testis, 636
aërogenie, 460	abnormalities of, 636
of bile duct, 582	inflammation of, 636
of bladder, 626	hydrocele of, 636
of bone, 683	syphilis of, 637
of brain, 489	tuberculosis of, 637
of bursæ, 678	tumors of, 637
of conjunctiva, 511	Twins, 62
of cornea, 512	dichorial, 62
of dura mater, 503	heteroöphal, 62
of ear, 518, 520	monochorial, 62
of Fallopian tubes, 654	monoöphal, 62
hematogenic, 464	unequal, 62
of intestines, 553–555	Typhlitis, 548
of joints, 693	"Typhoid carriers," 147
of kidneys, 618	fever, 549-553
of liver, 581	état cribleé in, 550
of lungs, 459	hemorrhage in, 553
of lymph nodes, 412	intestines in, 549
lymphogenic, 464	necrosis in, 550
of mammary gland, 667	perforation in, 553
miliary, 464	predisposition toward, 115
of mouth, 525	relapses in, 553
of muscles, 674	skin in, 697
of myocardium, 388	stomach in, 536
of nose, 436	tumefaction in, 550
of œsophagus, 531	ulcer in, 552
of ovary, 655	
of parcreas, 595	-
of penis, 632	U
of peripheral nerves, 508	
of peritoneum, 565	ULCER, 700
of pia-arachnoid, 505	atheromatous, 402
of placenta, 664	of cornea, 511, 512
of pieuræ, 470	healing, 700
of prostate, 633	indolent, 700
of salivary glands, 528	of intestine, 548
of skin, 701	phagedenic, 700
of spermatic cord, 640	rodent, 264
of spinal cord, 496, 500	serpiginous, 512
of spleen, 418	of skin, 700
of stomach, 536	spreading, 700
of tendon sheaths, 677	of stomach, 536
of testes, 638	in typhoid fever, 552
of thymus, 472	Ulceration of peritoneum, 564
of tonsils, 440	Ulcerative colitis, 558
of tunica vaginalis testis, 637	endocarditis, 396
of ureters, 624	inflammation, 134
of urethra, 629	stomatitis, 524
of uterus, 649	tuberculosis, 462

onia, 459, , 550 lasms. f. 636 , 636 6 637

d, 115

sms, 93

Ultraviolet rays as cause of disease, Urethritis, gonorrhoal, 628 78 Uric acid, 27, 107 Umbilical cord, 665 angioma of, 665 cysts of, 665 degeneration of, 665 hernia of, 72, 665 looped, 665 myxoma of, 665 septic infection of, 665 syphilis of, 665 twisted, 665 hernia, 569 Unconsciousness, 480 "Undifferentiation, Unequal twins, 62 Unicentric blastoma, 217 Unilateral kidney, 608 Universal peritonitis, 563 "Unresolved" pneumonia, 457 Urachal cysts, 289, 290, 625 Uratic calculi, 316 inspissation in infancy, 317 Urea in urine, 602 Uremia, 607 causes of, 105 Ureteral colic, 623 Ureteritis, 623 Ureters, 622 abnormalities of, 622 calculi in, 623 carcinoma of, 624 cysticercus of, 624 cysts of, 624 echinococcus of, 624 eustrongylus gigas of, 624 filaria sanguinis of, 624 foreign bodies in, 623 gravel in, 623 kinks in, 623 inflammation of, 623 obstruction of, 623 papilloma of, 624 parasites of, 624 sarcoma of, 624 stenosis of, 623 teratoma of, 624 tuberculosis of, 624 tumors of, 624 Urethra, 628 absence of, 628 anomalies of, 628 carcinoma of, 629 caruncles of, 629 condylomas of, 629 fibroma of, 629 foreign bodies in, 629 inflammation of, 628 sarcoma of, 629 stricture of, 629 syphilis of, 629 tuberculosis of, 629 tumors of, 629

Urethritis, 628

calculi, 316 infarct, 317 in kidney, 620 in urine, 602 Urinary calculi, 316 function, 599 gravel, 317 Urination, disturbances of, 604 Urine, albumin in, 602 albumoses in, 603 creatinin in, 602 excretion of, decreased, 602 increased, 601 incontinence of, 605 retention of, 605 solids in, 602 urea in, 602 uric acid in, 602 Urobilin, pigmentation due to, 324 Urobilinuria, 322 Urochrome, 322 Urogenital duct, tumors of, 275 Urtica, hybrids of, showing Mendel's law, 49 Urticaria, 697 Uterine fibroid, 241 Uterocele, 644 Uterorectal fistula, 644 Uterovesical fistula, 644 Uterus, 643 abnormalities of, 643 absence of, 643 adenocarcinoma of, 651 adenoma of, 651 adenomyoma of, 243, 650 anomalies of, 644 anteflexion of, 644, 645 atrophy of, 649 bicornis, 644 bicornuate, 644 bruising of, 646 carcinoma of, 651 cysts of, 649, 652 didelphys, 643 dilatation of, 646 dysplasias of, 644 dystrophies of, 644 elevation of, 645 endothelioma of, 652 epithelioma of, 651 fibroid of, 241, 650 fibromyoma of, 650 fission of os of, 644 flexion of, 645 fœtalis, 644 foreign bodies in, 649 hemorrhage of, 646, 647 hyperemia of, 646 hypertrophy of, 650 hypoplasia of, 643 infantile, 644 inflammation of, 647

Uterus, inversion of, 645 ligaments of, 661 absence of, 661 adenoma of, 662 anomalies of, 661 cysts of, 661, 662 fibroma of, 662 hemorrhage in, 661 hypertrophy of, 662 inflammation of, 661 lipoma of, 662 myoma of, 662 phlebolith in, 661 sarcoma of, 662 teratoma of, 662 tumors of, 662 lipoma of, 650 myoma of, 241-243, 650 myxomyoma of, 650 parasites of, 649 perforation of, 646 procidentia of, 645 prolapse of, 645 puerperal, 662 chorio-epithelioma of, 663 deciduoma malignum of, 663 syncytial carcinoma of, 663 tumors of, 663 retroflexion of, 644, 645 retroverted, 644 rupture of, 646 sarcoma of, 652 septus, 644 stenosis of, 644, 645 syphilis of, 649 tuberculosis of, 649 tumors of, 650 unicornis, "44 Uvulitis, 437

v

VACCINIA, organism of, 93 Vacuolar degeneration, 306, 620 Vacuoles, 18 Vagabond's disease, 702 Vagina, 642 abnormalities of, 642 absence of, 642 atresia of, 642 carcinoma of, squamous-celled, 643 chorio-epithelioma of, 643 duplication of, 642 hemorrhage of, 642 inflammation of, 642 leiomyoma of, 643 passive congestion of, 642 sarcoma of, 643 tumors of, 643 Vaginal hernia, 569 Vaginitis, 642 Valves, auriculoventricular, 373 semilunar, 376

Valvular pneumotl.orax, 467 Valvulitis, 393 Variation, heredity and, 47 spontaneous, 50 Varices of intestines, 597 of lymph nodes, 412 Varicocele of spermatic cord, 640 Varicose aneurysm, 408 bronchiectasis, 446 veins, 278, 410 Variola, 699 Várix, aneurysmal, 408 Vas deferens, 640 inflammation of, 640 Vascular area, inflammation in, 123 Vascularization of new formed connectiv tissue, 136 Vegetable forms, pathogenic, other than bacteria, 92 Vegetations, 135, 394 cardiac, 349, 351 fibrinous, 135 Vegetative cell, 44 activity, 38 endocarditis, 396 Veins, 410 calcification of, 410 dilatation of, 410 fibrosis of, 410 inflammations of, 410 thrombosis of, 410 varicose, 410 Venereal wart, 258, 652 Venoms, animal, 168 Venous hyperemia, 338 pulse, 372 thrombus, 350 Ventricle, fourth, hydrocele of, 292 hydrocephalus of, 486 of heart, 373 dilatation of, pathological, 375 distention of, 374 Vernal conjunctivitis, 511 Verrucæ, 704 Verrucose endocarditis, 394, 395 Version of uterus, 644 Vesico-umbilical fistula, 625 Vesicovaginal fissure, 73, 643 Vesiculæ seminales, 640 Vessels, poisons acting on, 82 transplantation of, 202 Vicarious cell activity, 37 hypertrophy, 188 menstruation in mammary gland 666 Vincent's angina, 439 Virulent bubo, 632

Virus, filterable, 92

390

humor, 516

Vitello-intestinal cysts, 289, 567

Vitreous degeneration of myocardium

Vitellins, 25

Vitiligo, 703

Volvulus of intestines, 545 Von Recklinghausen's disease, 230, 247 Vulva, 640 abnormalities of, 640 angioma of, 641 atrophy of, 641 carcinoma of, squamous-celled, 642 chondroma of, 642 cutaneous disturbances of, 641 cysts of, 642 elephantiasis of, 641 fibroma of, 641 hematoma of, 641 hemorrhage of, 641 infective granulomas of, 641 inflammation of, 641 lipoma of, 642 lupus of, 641 myoma of, 642 nævi of, 641 ædema of, 641 passive congestion of, 641 sarcoma of, melanotic, 642 syphilis of, 641 tuberculosis of, 641 tumors of, 641

w

Vulvitis, acute, 641

Vulvovaginitis, 642

Wallerian degeneration, 198
Warts, 257, 703, 704
venereal, 258
Wassermann reaction in syphilis, 167, 168
Water of cell, 31
ionization and, 32
Waxy cast, 312
degeneration, 328, 676
spleen, 308

Weaver's bottom, 678
Wens, 290, 707
White infarct of liver, 344, 572
kidney, large, 612
pneumonia, 465
soften.ng of brain, 487
swelling of knee, 684, 693
Widal reaction, 162.
Wolffian body, cysts of, 289
Worms in peritoneum, 566
Wrist-drop, 508

x

Xanthin, 27, 107 ealculi, 318 Xanthelasma, 703 Xanthoma, 233, 705 X-rays as cause of disease, 78 cells of tumors and, 287

¥

Yaws, 98 Yeasts, 92 Yellow atrophy of liver, acute, 574 fever, organism of, 92, 93 predisposition toward, 115

Z

Zenker's degeneration of muscles, 328, 676 of myocardium, 390 Zona fasciculata, 421 glomerulosa, 421 reticularis, 421 Zymophore, 173

of, 292

640

n, 123

connective

other than

logical, 375

395

nary gland,

567 myocardium,